

A RIBBON SERIES NOVEL



THE
LION AND HIS
EMANCIPATED MATE
VOLUME 2

FROM BESTSELLING AUTHOR

AMANDA K.

**The Lion and His
Emancipated Mate Volume 2**

By Amanda K

**Book 2.5 in the Ribbon
Series**

Cover art by: Allison Richardson

Copyright © 2022 Amanda K
Creations LLC

All Rights Reserved

Dedication

For my husband who encourages me to pursue my dreams.

To my two boys whom I love dearly.

To my best friend and incognito who has always told me to write. Everyone can thank her for the last outtake in the book. There were originally three, but she thought it was necessary for everyone to read.

To my loyal editor you have become so much more than an editor. You are my friend and I cherish our conversations.

To my Patrons, you make this possible. Thank you is not enough. I appreciate you more than I can say. I could not do this without you.

To my BAGG, you have been with me
encouraging me to take all these steps.
Letting me know how excited you are.
Thank you from the bottom of my heart.

The Lion and his Emancipated Mate –
Part Two

Table of Contents

Badass Girl Gang Day.

Breathe

Hard Conversations

Learning

Water Ritual

Walk a Hard Line

Burden

Cold War

Date Night

Betrayed

Projections

Making Plans

Mates Day.

Halloween Reception

Extra Fun Fairy.

Spun Up

Game On

Protect Her

Lashing Out

Idiotese

A Dylan State of Mind

Idiotese Continued

Birthday Traditions

Thorn in Our Side

Maze

Fairy Prophecy.

Unexpected Visitors

Life Isn't Fair

For You

Goblins are Coming

I'm Yours

Epilogue

Sneak Peak: The Married Alpha and His Arrow

Outtake: Her Thor Eric POV

Outtake: A Beta Text Chat: Punch Drunk Fairy

Outtake: Coming Home Lacy POV

Outtake: Zombie Attack Dylan POV

Bad Ass Girl Gang Day

Haley smiled at all of us girls. “Alright, so first we have our wonderful hostess letting us use her home. This is Emmaline, my cousin.” I waved. Haley continued, “This is my other cousin Bexley, call her Bex if you so choose. This is Miley, my cousin on the Hackura side. These are my sisters in law, Molly, Shana, and Jessica Connors, who will be ignoring the links from their mates about being here. Worrying Walters...”

I laughed and told her “It’s worry warts.” Haley frowned, “Warts can’t worry. That’s ridiculous, this damn realm and it’s sayings. I used alliteration and everything. Anyway...” We were all exchanging smirks. The Black Arrow was trying not to laugh. Haley kept the introductions going, “Over here we have Lacy, Sam, Chelsea, Aubree, and Valerie from Red Run and Blue Moon packs, respectively. My brother’s mates, Astrid, Torvi, Gemma, Calista, Heather, Nakita, Ariel, and Katie.” They all waved.

Lacy linked me, “All her brothers’ mates came. The entire line of future princesses and the freaking queen of the Hackura are in our home.” I replied, “It does sound crazy when you say it that way.” I couldn’t stop smiling though. Haley added, “And lastly but not any less important, we have my good friend, and apparently sister from another mother, the Black Arrow. I got that saying right BA, didn’t I? I swear that’s what you said yesterday.” The Black Arrow laughed, “You did. That’s what I said.”

Haley clapped, “I knew it! We have two healing requests from the group. I’ll need Aubree and Lacy to come over here with me. The rest of you.” She snapped and a buffet of food appeared. “Breakfast is served. Prego’s your drink table is on the right with sparkling Rosé from Faerie. Hey, that rhymes, look at me go. Well, anyone who doesn’t want to have the alcoholic beverages, mimosas or cranmosa, can drink from

that table too. Bex requested Bloody Mary's so we have those too. Eat up and mingle!"

I went with Lacy and Aubree because Lacy had a vice grip on my hand. I linked her, "Her healing won't hurt, Lacy." Lacy replied, "I just feel like I let Dylan down." Tears filled her eyes. I assured her, "Hey, none of that. You didn't let Dylan down. He would never be disappointed in you. Not getting pregnant is NOT your fault." Lacy sighed. Haley raised an eyebrow at her as she walked over. I looked at the other girls who were all mingling. Chelsea had broken the ice by making a beeline for the food with Sam on her heels.

Haley asked, "What's wrong, Lacy?" Lacy sighed, "I'm..." Tears filled her eyes as she whispered, "I feel like a failure. I didn't even want to get pregnant yet, but so many did in our pack. Even my mom, and I just feel like I failed Dylan. You know you always think when your heat hits, you'll get pregnant. Everyone always makes it seem like that's how it goes."

Haley frowned, "There is no shame in not being ready for a baby yet. There is also no shame in your road to conceiving. Humans have specialists that help them. I think women, no matter their journey, are warriors. Those IVF treatments human women go through, no one will convince me they aren't bad asses! They give themselves shots and jump through so many hurdles to have a baby. Being a mom is hard, and if that means you adopt or whatever your road is there's no shame. Wipe those tears away, Lacy Lyons. You are an amazing person; you are a survivor. You hid from very powerful Alpha's trying to save your brother. That's impressive. You gave up years of your life thinking it would keep him and this pack safe. One day, when it's your time you'll be an amazing mother." I smiled.

Lacy snorted, "I had help." Haley rolled her eyes, "Claudzilla and Chriscovetous don't count as help." I busted up laughing at her nicknames for Christy and Claudia. Haley continued, "They may have told you when Eric or Lucas got close, but you wouldn't have stayed long anyway. You knew they were looking for you." Lacy conceded her point.

Aubree grabbed Lacy's hand, "I understand how you feel. I've always wanted kids, and I knew before I met Dustin that it wasn't possible. Dustin doesn't care, but it just hurts your heart to hear you can't have kids. We are supposed to be designed for this crap as women. It's supposed to be our choice."

Haley laughed, "Pregnancy is certainly not easy, let me tell you. Men couldn't handle it. Aubree, Emmaline says you have PCOS." Aubree nodded, "Can you really fix it?" Haley smiled, "I can." Torvi shouted, "She really can!" Haley laughed then her face turned serious.

She yelled, "TORVI, STOP!" Everyone turned in surprise as Torvi lowered her mimosa from her mouth. Torvi asked, "Are you kidding me?" Astrid laughed. Haley winced, "I thought you knew. You're glowing, congratulations." Torvi giggled, "Marcus is going to flip out about me being in this realm while pregnant." Everyone smiled and congratulated her.

Haley turned back and said, "One second. I'm tugging on my connection with Marcus." She barely paused, "Ok, you two hold hands, we are doing a two for one special. I'm not sensing anything with Lacy though." Katie came over and held Aubree's hand. I had Lacy's hand since she never dropped it from earlier. My eyes closed as a wonderful, calming euphoria enveloped us when Haley began to heal them.

All our eyes snapped open at the same time. Haley smiled, "Lacy, we will have to heal my friend Dylan. There's nothing wrong with you, though there could be nothing wrong with him either. Aubree you're good to go. Let's eat!" Haley turned and walked away.

I said, "She's just something." Aubree went to hug Haley and I popped in her path. She hugged me instead. I whispered, "She doesn't do hugs unless she initiates it." Aubree was crying, "Sorry, I just... I never thought I could have this. She has no idea what she just gave me." I smiled, "It's who she is."

We joined the group. Sam whispered, "That was so cool! What did it feel like?" I answered, "It was the most calming

wonderful feeling I've ever felt."

I sat down after I got my food and felt the couch move beside me as someone sat next to me. Lacy linked me, "HOLY SHIT!" I looked up into the eyes of the Black Arrow. I stammered, "Hhhi." She smiled, "Hello yourself. Haley tells me you are quite impressive with your fairy skills." I deflected, "Everyone says you're impressive with a bow." She laughed, "I am quite good."

I asked, "Do you have your mate yet?" The Black Arrow smiled sadly, "No. Haley says you can figure that out for me. I'd appreciate it if you didn't try to figure out mine just yet. I want to see how the universe brings us together. We call them strings in the hood. I grew up with a boy... He's my brother's best friend. Everyone was convinced we would be each other's strings. I loved him, and he loved me... or I thought he did, once upon a time."

She looked away, continuing, "When I turned eighteen, you can guess I figured out we were not strings. Another girl in the hood was. That entire evening was like a knife to the heart. Anyway, I've focused on missions, and I don't really think I'm ready for my string yet. Maybe soon though." I nodded and looked away trying not to think of her mate.

I told her, "I'm sorry that happened to you. It does hurt my soul to feel your hurt." She smiled, "One day, I'll meet my string and it will all be worth it. That boy was my first everything though, you know? It all feels like a lie now. Haley says it was. She hates him."

Then he probably sucked. I asked, "Do you date?" The Black Arrow answered, "I don't as the Black Arrow, but as myself and my alias, yes. Sometimes, I have to cultivate relationships with marks." I nodded, "Do you enjoy what you do?" She smiled, "I do. I'm quite good at it, and it makes my brother proud of me." I was certain he was proud anyway. I asked, "What about your parents? No one talks about them."

She smiled sadly, "They were killed when my brother and I were kids. It's always just been us since. Well, when he met his string, she joined our little family, briefly. She was sick,

and she didn't make it. Though thick and thin, it's me and my brother. Always." I smiled, "That's beautiful. I'm glad you guys have that relationship." She smiled, "He drives me crazy sometimes. He always has my back though, and I have his." I agreed, "Siblings. I just got mine back."

I looked away. The Black Arrow asked, "What was that?" I sighed. It only seemed fair to share my feelings. I told her, "My oldest brother, he's not really happy about my relationship with Lucas. I don't know what to do about it. He's always been protective of me, and at times he seems fine with us. Then after my concupiscence he was ready to be angry if I was pregnant. When he found out Katie was though, he was thrilled for her. It just sucks he wouldn't be happy for me."

The Black Arrow took my hand, "Tell him. Tell him he hurt you. In my experience, older brothers don't see how their actions can be hurtful when they are trying to be protective." I smiled, "Thanks Black Arrow." She patted my hand, "Call me BA." I smiled, "Alright, BA."

Haley cleared her throat garnering the rooms attention. She addressed everyone, "Ok now that we've all talked a little. Bex, if you would." Bexley smiled and spoke in Fealish. I grumbled, "I have GOT to read that book she gave me and start learning Fealish." Several of the Hackura princes' mates laughed. Bexley nodded to Haley once she was done.

Haley announced, "When this comes up with your mates, you can tell them no one can see into the house." I raised an eyebrow. Haley snapped her fingers. I gasped as a runway appeared with a pink backdrop.

Katie sat down beside me. She asked, "Are we having a fashion show? I thought we would eat food and get manicures or something." Astrid smiled, "Haley doesn't know that's what girls' days are normally like. Logan had Gunner block her searches on Google to see what she came up with."

Haley snapped again and giant, sparkly pink duffle bags appeared next to us. Then there were racks of lingerie in the back of the room. She clapped, "Everyone pick out things you

feel sexy in. Everyone in this room has a powerful, special someone who WILL appreciate it.”

I glanced at BA who smirked at Haley, then winked at her. I whispered, “Who are you dating?” BA laughed, “He’s an Angel. I corrupted him. We both know our time will be short, but for now it’s what we both need.” I grinned and searched her soul, she was happy. She was not serious about the angel at all though.

Haley kept talking, “Sometimes, we need to remind our powerful men we can bring them to their knees. Most importantly and specifically, in the bedroom.” Sam and Chelsea snickered. Chelsea admitted, “I just don’t really feel sexy right now.” Haley smiled, “That’s what the racks and racks of lingerie is for. If Eric is any indicator, seeing me growing our children somehow made that man hornier. I’d imagine your wolf is the same, Chelsea. Find something you like, and I promise it will be worth it when he sees it tonight.” Chelsea smiled and stood, rubbing her little bump.

Katie grabbed me and we headed to the racks. Haley joined us. I asked, “Are we showing off the lingerie we pick?” Haley smiled, “Of course! That’s what the runway is for. I even have angel wings for everyone. It will be like our own little fashion show!” I asked, “So we are Victoria’s Secret angels?” Haley asked, “The who? We are Fairy’s Emmaline, not angels.”

I laughed, “It’s a fashion show. They wear angel wings.” Haley shrugged, “Miley said we needed wings when I told her we were doing this.” I smirked. Because Miley knew what the fashion was. Katie picked out a lingerie set and said, “Oh... this will drive Logan crazy.” Haley looked over agreeing, “It will.” It was a see-through white baby doll slip with a white thong. Katie grabbed some more things, and I kept looking.

Haley handed me a costume and winked, “I had this one picked special for you, cousin.” I looked at it and laughed, “You’re scarily evil with so much nice.” She smiled, “Pick out some other stuff too!” She winked and left to go to a different rack. I looked down at the sexy Tinkerbell costume she’d gotten for me. It was a corset sequin dress and green mesh wings.

Lacy squealed, "I love her. This is so fun!" Haley came back, "Lacy, I forgot to tell you if you want me to send you into heat. I can." Lacy shook her head no, "For now let's wait. If it happens naturally, it happens naturally." Haley nodded, "The offer is always there."

Lacy turned, "You know, Lucas would DIE if you wore that princess Leia bikini." I smirked and grabbed the one I'd just found, then laughed, "Is this a pokeball lingerie costume? Gosh, I love my cousin." I snagged it. We were all laughing, and I even grabbed myself a cranmosa.

Everyone was laughing and having a great time. Haley came over saying, "Ok everyone, pick your first outfit. Just grab a fairy when you need to change." We were puzzled, but we picked our outfits. Haley came over to me, "Snap yours and Lacy's on." I understood her earlier statement now. I snapped, then squealed. I got both of us in our outfits without missing anything.

I asked Lacy, "Sexy snow white?" She smirked, "It's Dylan's favorite *Disney* movie. Your cousin is amazing." I laughed again. The next time Haley snapped music started playing. It was like being in a club. The lights were going off, and the music had a beat.

Haley started us all off confidently strutting down the runway as a sexy butterfly. She had on a green push up bra with green cut out underwear. She a winged pattern on her outfit and green butterfly wings behind her. Bexley went next, their excitement was contagious. Everyone started getting into the fashion show. We were all laughing and cheering as the girls walked.

Chelsea had picked out a flesh toned robe that went to the floor with a black flower pattern and a slip that pushed her boobs up. She looked great. The Black Arrow had massive black angel wings with a halter top and a cut out black teddy. Her angel was a lucky man, she was toned. Whatever workout plan she had; it was working. Lacy walked next, strutting down the runway in her snow-white outfit. We all cheered and hollered for her. I walked after Lacy in my Tinkerbelle costume. Everyone was dying laughing.

Gemma came in as the music lowered for outfit changes. She told me, “Emmaline, we all need a picture of the Alpha’s face when he sees that one! Fairy’s do things differently, don’t they? Lucas said we were hosting girl’s day. He did not mention there would be a runway in the living room.” I told her, “It’s how my cousin does things.” She laughed.

Haley snapped everyone into different outfits. We were all having a great time. I could tell Chelsea was feeling more confident in herself, and so were Haley’s heavily pregnant sisters in law. There was no judgement here, only catcalls. Every woman was cheering on the others, telling them how hot they were.

Once we were done Haley snapped our lunch with more beverages for, as she said the Prego’s and non-Prego’s. We all had pizza from Haley’s favorite place in Chicago. Astrid made Bjourn bring it. She disappeared to meet him outside because Haley said this was a no male allowed space. Google told her so.

After we all finished Haley said, “Next, we have a special fun fairy time for you girls. It will feel better for those with fairy blood, but everyone can enjoy it all the same. I cast a privacy spell around the lake since we have to go out there. I can practically already hear my mate growling about my outfit and other men seeing it. So, no one will see what we are wearing but us.”

She snapped and instantaneously we were all in short dresses. Mine was green and purple with fairy wings. I looked at Haley who was in a beaded pink dress with a dip showing off her boobs with pink tulle. We all looked good. Haley grabbed some of the girl’s hands. She nodded to Bexley and me as we grabbed our groups, popping them to the lake.

Haley showed us some simple dance moves that we easily copied. She began to move around with us, and a soft song began to play with a flute. She was speaking in fealish again, and the ground began to feel alive like it did in Faerie. The she wolves were howling in delight. I began to get more into the moves, feeling rejuvenated. I let myself go, repeating the movements.

After twenty minutes the flute faded. I opened my eyes. All the girls' eyes were dancing with a light in them. I sensed everyone's souls were very peaceful. I looked around taking in everything. My eyes landed on a beautiful building. I yelled, "HOLY CRAP! Did you guys conjure that for Lacy's wedding?" Haley and Bexley turned and smiled. Haley said, "Yes, do you guys want to go the inside?" I answered for the group, "Heck yes we do!"

I led the way not caring if anyone was following. It was a white barn style building with several floors. I walked in immediately exclaiming, "Oh my gosh, this is perfect!" The inside had two staircases lining both sides to the floor. There were chandeliers hanging from the ceiling, a bar area and a beautiful window at the top of the stairs.

Lacy explained, "We are going to have our ceremony out on the deck, and the reception inside. If you like it Emmaline, you could just have them at the tables for the Ceremony. I just nodded as Katie came and wrapped her arms around me.

She whispered, "It's the staircase you always talked about." Tears filled my eyes. I could just see it with snow falling behind Lucas and me. I barely managed to squeak out, "I love it." Haley said, "If you want something different, we can do that too." I shook my head, "No, I love it. This is perfect."

Sam and Chelsea were gaping. Sam told her, "This place is amazing." Astrid said, "Damn it, Haley. Now I don't know where I want to get married. I might just have you do your fairy thing in our realm. I don't know if Bjourn would agree to get married in this realm." Haley smiled, "You know whatever you want, wherever you want; I've got you Astrid." Astrid smiled and hugged Haley. She told her, "The world truly does not deserve you." Sam and Chelsea asked what the chapel in Black Mountain looked like and Astrid whipped out her phone to show them pictures.

Haley nodded to me. I gathered my group and popped us back to the house. I started inhaling food and noticed Haley and Bexley doing the same. Once I had my fill, I looked over at Haley. I told her, "I need to see Lucas." Haley smiled, "Go on! Get you some." I laughed, "I just need a hug." Haley said,

“In that outfit you’re getting a hell of a lot more than a hug.” I looked down, “I could snap into a different outfit.” Haley slapped my arm, “Don’t you dare, rile your Alpha up.”

Logan materialized by my side, “They are done with their meeting. You don’t need to knock, just walk in.” Haley laughed, “There you have it. Now you must rile Lucas up because I will do the same to Eric. Lucas will kick him out of the office when he gets a look at you,” She winked at me.

I headed up the stairs. The girls all started catcalling and saying, “Get your man!” Logan looked at Haley asking, “What have you done now?” He didn’t get an answer because Katie jumped on him, attacking his lips. The catcalls got louder as the girls cheered on Katie. I was smiling when I opened the door.

Haley was right. Everyone was kicked out, and I got more than a hug. When he took me back, he met BA. Once he was gone Haley said, “You riled him up good, didn’t you?” I blushed, “Maybe.” Haley smirked, “Moving onto our next agenda item. Let’s all look in our treasure bags!”

Astrid said, “Haley these are giant duffle bags. Also, it’s called a goodie bag in this realm.” Haley shrugged, “I wanted a bigger luggage case for everyone, but Bex said that was overkill. Miley agreed. Traitors.”

All of us laughed. I pulled out a pink crop top that said *bad ass bitch*. Sam choked, “Are you trying to get our mates to claim us? Are you actually going to walk around in a crop top?” Haley smiled, “The claiming is a happy by product of having mates who are sexist. Plus, aren’t they cute? I’ve run in a sports bra before, what’s the difference?” No one had a response to that. We just laughed.

I pulled out a pink and grey letterman’s jacket. It had my first name along with the word’s *member of the bad ass girl gang* in sparkly letters. I looked around, noticing she had put everyone’s name on their jacket. I smiled and tears filled my eyes. My cousin really was something.

I had several pairs of yoga pants, and an open-back cutout lace one piece swimsuit. Sam, Chelsea, Katie, Molly, Jessica,

and Shana had some cute maternity clothes in their bags. We all had nail polish that matched an outfit in our bags. I laughed as I took out the sneakers with pink sequins. When I finally reached the bottom I pulled out a water bottle that said *bad ass bitch*.

I stood and hugged Haley, “You are... something cousin. Thank you!” Haley smiled, “We aren’t done. BA has brought some special hood shit.” The Black Arrow laughed, “Alcohol. We have special alcohol.” Haley smiled, “Like I said, special hood shit. Prego’s, I have a special drink from Faerie for you ladies. It’s pretty good.” She snapped and we all had drinks in our hands.

She raised a glass, “To the first of MANY bad ass girl gang days!” We all laughed and clinked glasses. I commented, “We should make it a monthly thing. We could move it from person/pack to be the host house.” Haley smiled asking, “Can I plan them?” We all laughed.

Torvi said, “You have to plan them because then none of your brothers can say shit about us coming. We’d get to tell them you planned it, and it would hurt your feelings if we didn’t come.” Haley wrinkled her nose, “You think Marcus is going to put you on lockdown?” Torvi laughed, “If you hadn’t done your space unheard thing, I’m one hundred percent positive Katie’s guards would’ve called Marcus who would’ve dragged me home by now.” Haley rolled her eyes, “That does sound like my brother. He is here, he just doesn’t know why. I pulled him so he can’t say shit.” He was probably going to say something since no one clued him into why he was here.

We all ate dinner with our hood drinks. I could feel my cheeks starting to flush as everyone started laughing. I asked, “BA, what is this stuff? It’s amazing!” She smirked, “It’s a secret.” Haley laughed, “Just drink the deliciousness and do not ask questions.” BA laughed, “You say that because you asked, and I told you.” Haley winced, “True, but I still love this stuff.”

There was a knock on the door. I got up to answer it, hoping Grayson didn’t call the cops. I was intoxicated, and I was certain that wouldn’t go over well. I bit my lip when I saw

Bjourn and Marcus standing there. I greeted, “Umm... hi guys.” Bjourn raised an eyebrow, “My brother is feeling some type of way about Haley pulling him here, then not explaining why she did that. He’s now nervous for Torvi. So, here we are to save her from a pink explosion, I’m guessing.”

Marcus pushed in the house and spotted Torvi. He quickly went to her side. Haley called out, “Predictable, Marcus. You are predictable.” Bjourn laughed and looked around. He asked, “A runaway?” I smiled, “Astrid will tell you, I’m sure. I think you guys will enjoy our girl’s days.” Bjourn grinned, “What did my sister do?”

Astrid walked up, “Something you will enjoy, my love. You will thank your little sister; of that I am certain.” She kissed him, breaking apart when Marcus yelled excitedly and spun Torvi around. Bjourn laughed, “So Torvi is glowing I take it?” Astrid laughed, “She is. Haley was seconds away from calling the wind to knock the alcohol out of her hand. She thought Torvi knew.” Bjourn chuckled. Marcus had stopped hugging Torvi and moved her to a corner of the room behind him as he assessed the room.

Haley assured him, “Big brother, there’s nothing here that’s not supposed to be. I’ve been scanning with my fairy senses.” Marcus turned to Torvi, “You should’ve called me.” Torvi raised an eyebrow, “Marcus Cambridge, I can take care of myself. I’m not injured, I’m pregnant. That was our goal with all the trying we have been doing.”

Marcus grinned and spun her around again. He put her down and looked at Haley, “Sorry to break up your party little sister, but we need to go home.” Haley rolled her eyes, “My fairy senses are calling bullshit, Marcus. You just don’t want her in this realm.” Marcus winked at her, “And you’ve had her all day. She’s my mate, it’s my turn.” Haley stuck her tongue out at him, “You are making me regret the nice things I did for you today, brother.”

Bjourn laughed at their exchange. Marcus turned to Torvi with a raised eyebrow. She smiled, “Be a dear and grab my bag. If I can’t protect myself in this realm; I wouldn’t want to

bend down and pick up a heavy duffle bag.” Marcus looked down then asked, “Which one is yours? They are identical.”

Bjourn added, “And Pink. So very pink.” Haley put her fingertips together, tilted her head and put her head on her fingers while smiling at her brothers. Both laughed as Torvi pointed to her bag. Bjourn opened a portal, “All of you except Katie should probably come back with us. Logan’s still here, so he’s got her.” The girls grumbled but stood and grabbed their bags. Marcus and Bjourn took the job of pack mule, taking all their things as we all hugged and said goodbye.

Haley pointedly looked at her brothers when she said, “I’ll see you all at our second bad ass girl gang next month sisters of mine.” Marcus asked, “Next month?” Haley smiled, “Yes, we agreed to have them monthly, and I’m planning it. Which means everyone is coming!” Marcus cringed while they walked through the portal, and it closed.

I bumped Lacy with my shoulder, “That’s still so freaking cool. Portals opening and closing.” Lacy said, “I can’t believe we know them! Seriously, who would’ve thought my brother’s mate would be a fairy duchess? Or that Eric’s mate would be the fairy/Hackura princess? AND SHE KNOWS THE BLACK ARROW! I feel like that kid that finally made it to the cool table.” I laughed then agreed, “I know. I can’t believe this is our life. I never thought I would have friends when I was running from place to place, hiding.”

BA said, “Now, now, ladies, you know me now too.” I squealed, “That’s surreal on so many levels. I mean I used to talk to the fairy princess at night when I was lonely. Not only did I meet her, but she’s also my cousin. I’m a duchess, and now we know the black arrow. Let’s not forget my sister is a Hackura Prince’s mate, she’s having their first child, I’ve met all the future princesses of the Hackura, and their Future Queen. WHAT IS LIFE?”

Sam, Chelsea, and Valerie laughed, but Aubree and Lacy agreed with me. I stood, “Let’s go find our men so we can try out some of this lingerie.” Haley said, “That’s the spirit. BA, are you going to corrupt your angel man tonight?” BA

laughed, "I'll try. I even kept the black wings, but he's not always available."

Katie asked, "Is he your string?" BA smiled, "No, I haven't met my string yet. My Angel is a friend with benefits thing until he goes back to his realm." Katie nodded, "My sister can tell you if she knows your mate." BA quickly said, "I asked her not to. If I haven't found him in a few years, I'll ask. I'm curious to see how fate brings him to me without interference." Katie nodded. I smiled at her, quickly looking away as I started to realize my power was searching for her mate. I skipped outside, leading the way to the gym.

We were all laughing and giggling, not even remotely walking in a straight line. Haley yelled, "WAIT!" She grabbed us all and popped us outside a window of the gym and snapped a scaffolding for us to stand on.

I asked, "What are we doing?" Haley smirked, "Watching our men. Look at Eric. GOD, he's so sexy." I looked to see Eric fighting Logan in the ring. Katie licked her lips. "Gosh, look at Logan. He's so sexy even when he's dripping sweat. I'm riding the fuck out of him tonight in one of my outfits." I giggled, "That's his sister!" Haley shrugged, "I have heard worse about my brothers. Far worse. I've also seen them have sex. It's not weird to me. Go get you some Katie! I don't even mind if you want to talk about it later. We have orgies outside in our realm. It doesn't faze us." Katie laughed, "Deal!"

My gaze turned to Lucas and BA's special alcohol broke my filter because I asked, "Why is he so damn lickable?" Katie howled with laughter. Lacy cringed, "Ew, I was not raised in a different realm. That IS my brother, and I don't want to hear about his sex life."

I replied, "He's your lickable brother. I mean seriously. I have actually licked him a few times. His ABS!" Lacy put her fingers in her ears, "LA LA LA LA LA LA I CAN'T HEAR YOU LA LA LA LA." Sam and Chelsea laughed.

Valerie sighed asking, "How is Ryan sexy in the water?" I looked through the window again noticing both my brothers swimming. Katie said, "They are both good swimmers. Not

Emmaline good, but they are good.” Aubree spoke, “Graceful. Dustin moves through the water as if he belongs there. I am SO HORNY.” Haley giggled.

I raised an eyebrow, “What did you do?” Haley asked, “Who? Me?” Katie said, “Uh yeah, you.” Haley said, “Well, the fairy ritual makes you amorous when you have a mate or lover after a few hours. I’d imagine it’s hitting the witch first.” Aubree said, “We need to get down there so I can drag Dustin to our room here. We are not making it to our house. I must have him, now.”

Haley snapped her fingers then winked, “I snapped your outfit on so you’re ready to go, Aubree.” Aubree laughed, “Dustin needs to get ready. I am beyond ready.” We all laughed, then Haley popped us down to the doors of the gym.

We walked in laughing. Haley bumped my hip, “Watch this.” She popped to Eric and booped him on the nose. Lacy choked, “She just booped the most powerful Alpha in the country, possibly the world, on the nose. I love her.” I did too.

Haley shot me a wink. I realized she hadn’t just changed Aubree’s outfit. She had changed all of ours. I was now wearing yoga pants, and Lucas’ shirt. I was betting the other women were in their guys shirt. Haley riled Eric up. Katie tried to follow her lead, which amused Logan to no end. He was fast.

Sam was talking about mating ceremony locations. I searched Drake’s soul and decided I’d talk to Sam and Haley later. They needed a venue in Red Run. Drake really wanted their mating ceremony there, but he wanted Sam to be happy. I was getting the hang of this soul-searching thing.

When we got back to our room, I conjured my duffle bag and picked out the outfits in the bathroom. Part of me wanted to wear the Tinkerbelle outfit, but I was going to wait for the perfect moment on that one. I picked up the Princess Leia outfit and put it on. I googled how her hair and makeup looked in that scene and thought really hard and snapped. I had mostly nailed it. I took a deep breath and tried to dial back my

need for Lucas. I could practically taste it. I stepped out of the bathroom.

Lucas sat straight up in bed like a rocket, his jaw dropped when he saw me. He gulped, “I have something I need to tell you.” I smirked, “Not right now, you don’t. There’s fairy things involved. I need you.” Lucas drank me in with his eyes. He nodded, “If that’s what you want.” I smirked and tried to immolate a sexy walk as his eyes raked over my outfit.

Lucas’ tone was tight when he asked, “This is from your girl’s day?” I nodded, “One of the many things I got. We had basically had our own Victoria Secret Fashion show.” He growled. I smiled, “Bexley performed a charm so no one could see in the house.”

I straddled Lucas and his hands went to my hips. He asked, “Do you know what this outfit is from?” I laughed, “My brothers like *Star Wars* too, Lucas. Katie and I have seen the original *Star Wars* movie’s countless times.” He flipped us, “You have no idea what this is doing to me.” I smiled and rubbed my hips against him, bit his ear and whispered, “I’ve got a pretty good idea, Alpha.” Lucas growled and attacked my lips.

He pulled back, “Snap me a chain with cuffs, baby girl.” I nodded and snapped what he wanted to his hands. He kissed me, “Good girl.” He strapped me to our headboard and bit my ear, “Fuck. You guys needs to do this weekly.” I laughed and his hands ran gently over my body.

I teased, “I’m your prisoner, Alpha.” Lucas stiffened, “Are you now?” I nodded and bit my lip. He growled and flipped up the front of my outfit and I heard my under snap. His tongue was on me in seconds. I screamed his name. He didn’t stop. He inserted a finger into me, and I bucked into his hands. His chuckle sent me over the edge again. He loosened the chain and put me on the floor on my knees.

He stood commanding, “Take off my pants.” I nodded and unzipped his jeans and pulled them off of him. I looked back into his eyes waiting for instructions. He smirked, “Now my

underwear.” I did as he said, and he sprang free from his underwear hard as a rock.

He asked, “Do you see what you do to me, baby girl?” I nodded. He ordered, “Open your mouth.” I did, then moaned when he put his dick inside my mouth. He rubbed my cheek, “Tell me if it’s too much, alright?” I looked up at him with a question in my eyes. He began to move his hips. I relaxed my throat as he fucked my mouth. He gripped my hair and rocked himself to completion. He roared, “FUCK, EMMALINE!” I swallowed everything he had.

He yanked me up to him and kissed me, “You’re amazing.” He pushed me to the bed and had my hips hitting the bed as he pushed me onto my stomach. He lifted the back part of the costume and slowly slid into me.

I whimpered, “Please, Lucas I need more.” He spanked me and pulled my hair back, so I was flush against him. He growled, “You will take what I give you.” I nodded remembering we were role playing. I was the prisoner, Princess Leia. I whimpered, “Yes, Alpha.”

He growled laying me back onto the bed. He slowly slid in and out of me. He gripped my hips and began thrusting harder. I gripped the sheets as my body sang in pleasure from finally getting what it wanted. I screamed his name, clutching the sheets and he howled my name.

He threw me onto the bed and jumped on me. I rolled us so I was on top and slid right back on him. He moved the front of my costume so he could rub my clit. I took what I needed for what felt like hours and gave control back to him. I barely held my eyes open after my last orgasm as Lucas whispered, “Sleep, baby girl.”

When I woke up the next morning Lucas was stroking my hair. I smiled, “That was fun.” He nodded, “Yes, it was.” I studied him then asked, “What’s wrong?” He sighed, “Nick called last night before you came out in that costume.” I frowned, “Ok, doesn’t he call a lot?” Lucas nodded, “He does. Do you remember the boy you told us about at the lake?” I nodded, “Of course. We helped each other when we could.”

Lucas winced, “There was a family in Red Run that was going to adopt him. In the process, they found some of his distant family members. They wanted to take him in, and so they came down and met him. They took him home.” I smiled, “I’m glad he’s with family.”

Lucas cringed, “They were caught in a mud slide on the way home.” I gasped, “But... they got out right? They are supernatural’s.” Lucas frowned, “It seems it came out of nowhere. They didn’t have time to react.” Tears filled my eyes, “He’s dead? Is that what you’re saying to me right now?” Lucas nodded. I cried, “I should’ve just left it alone. He’d be fine if not for me.” Lucas said, “That’s not true. He was not safe out there alone. It’s likely he was only surviving because you were there. Without you, he wouldn’t have made it.” He held me while I cried for the boy who felt like a kindred spirit and friend when I had none. I didn’t even know his name.

The rest of the weekend flew by. I went out to Red Run, where I used to camp. Where I would watch over the boy and he would watch over me. I put a cross up for my friend. I sat there for hours. Ry, Dusty, Katie, and Lucas all came. I just needed this time to remember him. He understood me in a way most could never. We were surviving alone, but for a moment we had each other. We had each other’s backs.

On Sunday night I needed a change. I needed to not think about my kindred spirit friend. I decided to do a personal fashion show for Lucas. He wanted to see all the things I’d taken from girl’s day Victoria’s Secret fashion show. I showed him everything except the pokeball and Tinkerbelle costumes. Those were going to be special occasions. He had attacked me in each piece and said we could have girls’ days every weekend in our territory if we wanted.

Monday rolled around before I even realized it. I went through training in the morning, and kissed Lucas goodbye before school. I walked out to our SUV and spotted my brother. He looked tired. I asked, “Ry, you ok?” Ryan smirked, “You guys got my girl all riled up. We all had ourselves quite a day yesterday when we got back from your.... umm. thing. It

was a nice thing for that shifter boy that you did.” I nodded. Our group jumped into the car. We walked into school together.

Drake and Peter were practically wafting smugness into the air. I raised an eyebrow at Sam and Chelsea who winked at me. I said, “I’m guessing everyone had a successful weekend after our girl’s day.” Chelsea winked, “Did we ever.” Drake commented, “We have friends who want their mates to join your girls’ days. Sharon was out of town this weekend but wants to join your next one.” I laughed, “Of course she can.”

I turned and saw Tessa eyeing our group. She hesitated then took a deep breath and walked over. She spoke softly, “Alpha Peter, I’d like to apologize for the disrespect I showed you several weeks ago. It was not becoming of me, or a good representation of our pack. We are allies and I would never want my actions to cause you to question that.” Peter nodded to her.

She turned to Lacy. “Lacy, I am truly sorry for what I said to you. I never had a problem with you to be honest. I had turned eighteen recently, and I thought Dylan was my mate.” My eyebrows raised. Lacy predictably growled. I put a hand on her arm. Tessa continued, “I was jealous when I heard you’d come back and found out Dylan was your mate not mine. It was petty and jealous. I’m sorry.”

Lacy’s eyes were going back and forth. She finally said, “Dylan is MINE!” Tessa nodded, “I know. I just wanted to explain why I said what I did.” Lacy finally nodded and she turned to walk away. I linked her, “Are you ok?” Lacy replied, “Yes, my wolf is feeling really possessive and I need to get away from her before I bitch slap her into tomorrow for wanting my man.” I said, “Understood. Dylan is yours.” Lacy snarled, “Damn right he’s mine!” I smiled.

Tessa sucked in a breath, “Luna Emmaline, I owe you an apology too. I will always protect you as you are my Luna. I’m sorry I spoke back to you.” I shrugged, “I’m sorry I dropped water and a bucket on you. I hadn’t started working on my control yet. I’m not even remotely sorry I punched you though.”

Tessa smiled, “You shouldn’t be sorry. I never should’ve attacked you.” I nodded, “Apology accepted. I want you to feel at home in our pack. You messed up, but you’re owning it and apologizing. Everyone messes up. I appreciate what you taking ownership, that’s never easy.” She nodded.

I turned to get a book out of my locker as it hit me who Tessa’s mate was. I yelled, “FUDGE ON A FUDGE CRACKER! TESSA!” Tessa turned around looking worried. I said, “Your mate is in my cousin and Eric’s pack. I don’t know his name; I’ve just seen him guarding our fairy training lessons.” Tessa gasped, “Really? Alpha Eric’s pack?” I nodded. She shot out of the school like she was on fire. I asked, “Where is she going? First period is in like five minutes.” Sam laughed, “She’s going to Alpha Eric’s territory to find her mate.” I groaned, “I have to call Haley, so she doesn’t kill her.”

I stepped away from the group. I noticed Brad and Travis followed me. I took out my phone and called Haley. She answered immediately, “Hello, Emmaline. Did you have a good Sunday?” I laughed, “It was mostly good. I lost someone I considered a friend, but this isn’t about that.” Haley said, “I am very sorry about that. I hadn’t heard anything.”

I told her, “I don’t really want to talk about it. Tessa is on her way to your territory.” Haley hissed, “Why?” I bit my lip, “Her mate is in your pack. I don’t know his name, but I’ve seen him guarding our fairy lessons.” Haley was silent then groaned, “Fine, let’s go greet Tessa and find who her damn mate is, Eric.” I laughed realizing Eric must have heard me.

I heard Eric say, “She might join our pack if her mate is here.” I could hear Haley’s teething grinding, “I don’t have time for another petty, jealous she wolf. I have enough of those.” Huh? I told her, “She just apologized to us all. I searched her soul and she meant it. I think she just liked Dylan and hoped she was his mate.”

Haley sighed, “Alright. I’m using my truth-seeking power on her though.” Eric chuckled. I said, “I’ll talk to you later, cousin.” Haley said, “You are a good person, Emmaline. I’m glad you’re coming right along as the soul seeker. If you want

to discuss that other thing, I am here for you.” I told her, “Thanks.” I didn’t want to talk about it though.

I hung up as the warning bell rang. I ran to my class. Travis called, “Literally none of the teachers will do anything if you’re late. You’re the Luna, slow down.” I stuck my tongue out at him and walked into my class, taking me seat next to Drake.

My day flew by. After lunch, a note floated to my feet when I opened my locker. I smiled as I read it:

Meet me at your tree.

Lucas

I smiled and walked to the doors, waving to my friends. Lacy linked me, “Where are you going?” I answered, “Lucas came to surprise me.” Lacy smiled and I took off outside. I walked over to my tree looking around. I frowned as I didn’t see Lucas there. Where was he?

I heard Lacy shout, “EMMALINE, COME BACK!” I turned to see Brad running full speed at me. I touched the tree and felt myself transported from the school. I hit the ground and threw up.

I heard someone say, “That’s just gross.” I glanced up, “Who the hell are you?” The man smiled, “I’m a warlock. My name’s not important. I was paid to get you here, and here you are.” I raised an eyebrow, “Paid by who?” The warlock smiled, “Alpha Hammond. He will be here soon to collect you.” I asked, “Will he now?”

I linked Lucas, “Lucas.” Lucas replied, “WHAT THE HELL? WHERE ARE YOU?” I cringed, “I don’t know. Alpha Hammond paid a warlock to abduct me. I thought the note in my locker was from you. It was your handwriting and everything.” Lucas growled, “I’m coming for you, Emmaline. He won’t touch you.”

The warlock came towards me with a syringe. I nervously asked, "What's that?" He taunted, "Iron." My eyes widened, "Hell, no that stuff hurts." He laughed, "You don't get a choice." He took another step; I fought him using the techniques I'd learned.

He must have called for backup because two more men ran into the room and pinned me down. One punched me in the face. I was too panicked to pop, but I wondered if I could turn the iron to water. When the syringe punctured my skin, I thought about turning it water. I waited for the pain and quite proudly hid my smirk realizing I'd done it.

I curled into a ball crying. I wanted them to believe I was in pain from the iron. Really, I was upset with myself for falling into this trap. What would Haley do? This was the new question I was going to ask myself in these situations. I knew the answer. She would mess with them, and then kill everyone when Alpha Hammond showed up. I was our best shot at getting him. I could do this.

Lucas linked me, "Emmaline, can you pop away?" I replied, "This is our chance, Lucas. I could get him." Lucas growled, "I understand you are capable, but we need a plan. A plan that we come up with together. GET OUT OF THERE!" I compromised, "What if I call on Haley's protection?"

Lucas pleaded, "Baby girl, please. I need you. We don't even know where you are yet. Please pop to me." I frowned. I hated how upset he sounded. I was right though. We could end this all right here and now.

Lacy linked me, "Emmaline, I know what you're thinking. I have a compromise." I sighed, "What?" Lacy responded, "Bring your kidnappers back with you. Lucas can get information from them. You don't have any backup, and we don't have a plan." I reasoned, "Haley could do this. She could finish this for all of us."

Lacy countered, "Haley trained with Hackura for seven years. We will get Alpha Hammond, but it's not worth you getting hurt because we don't have a proper plan. They will

come for you again, and we will be better prepared.” I sighed, internally admitting she was right.

I used my fairy senses to figure out where in the room the warlock was. His friends were outside, but he was two feet from me. I linked Lucas, “I’m coming to you with the warlock who set the trap.” Lucas sounded relieved, “Just get out of there, baby girl. We don’t need him.” I disagreed, “Yes, we do.”

I popped behind the warlock, he yelled in surprise. The door burst open, the other two rushed in, but we were already gone.

For some reason, Lucas was outside Red Run’s old school that burned down. I greeted them, “Hi, Guys. Here’s a warlock whose name is not important, according to him.” Ry’s hands glowed and he hit the warlock with a paralytic’s spell before he could utter a word.

Lucas was on me in a second. He whispered, “Don’t scare me like that again.” I frowned, “I was just minding my own business at school. I literally didn’t do anything. Well, except turn iron to water. That was bad ass if I do say so myself.” I heard a pop. Haley smiled at me, “It is bad ass. The ribbon has really infuckingconvient timing.”

Alpha Kyle asked, “Inconvenient? What the hell is the ribbon?” Haley laughed, “That’s all yours to explain, mate of mine.” Eric snorted, “Mine? It’s your fairy side that causes this.” Haley raised an eyebrow, “It’s because we are eternal soulmates, and I love you so much and shit. Which is your fucking fault.” Eric laughed, “My fault, huh?”

She walked over and gave him a kiss, “Yes, it’s your fault you’re such an amazing man. Who has the body of god. That’s totally all your fault. You built that gym on your territory. It’s your fault, you explain it.” Eric roared with laughter.

Haley walked over to me and gave me a hug. I asked, “How did Eric get here if you were in the ribbon?” Eric answered, “I had Bexley pop us in.” I didn’t see Bexley with them. Another man said, “I made her go home. She’s pissed at

me.” Haley laughed. I asked her, “Is that Liam?” Haley nodded.

I realized Eric’s brothers were there with Drake, Peter, and Dylan. I heard a car door slam. I looked up as Lacy ran toward us and slammed into me. She rambled, “I was so worried. I just happened to link Dylan telling him Lucas was being romantic. I was teasing him that I couldn’t believe he didn’t come with him to surprise me. He freaked out saying he was with Lucas. I tried to get to you, but...” I patted her back interrupting, “You did what you could.”

The second she let go, Dusty grabbed me and pulled me into a hug. He informed me, “We were checking bodies of water. Why the HELL didn’t you turn to water?” Haley bit her lip but said nothing. She gave me a knowing look. I sighed, “I was able to turn the iron they were going to inject me with to water. I was fine.”

Ry ripped me out of Dusty’s arms. He chided, “Don’t do that to us, Evie. We’ve already lost you once. God, I was a wreck.” A portal opened and Katie ran out crying. She yelled, “EVIE!” Marcus stepped through behind her, nodding to someone behind me. Which meant Logan was already with the group I’d popped to. Katie held onto me and Ry.

I assured her, “I’m fine, Katie Cat.” Katie was sobbing, “Logan wouldn’t let me come help.” I whispered, “Don’t be too upset with him, he’s just worried about your little one cooking in there.” Katie sniffled, “I could handle it.” I smiled, “You can handle anything. He’s new to this having a mate business. You know about his hang-ups.” Katie wiped her eyes, “Don’t be all logical right now.” I laughed, “His soul is at peace now, but everyone here was conflicted and troubled before I popped in. There are so many emotions in this group.”

I looked at Haley and mouthed, “Can you do your calming thing for Katie?” Haley nodded and whispered her chant. Katie instantly calmed down. Logan said, “If you could keep your phone on you like Haley does now, that would be great Emmaline.” I asked, “You can track my phone?” Logan corrected, “Gunner can track any phone.” Haley coughed, “Harper’s boytoy lover.” Marcus laughed.

Lucas took me back, holding me in his arms. He buried his head in my neck. I linked him, "I'm fine." He nodded but didn't say anything. After a few minutes he spoke out loud, "What happened? You have a black eye." I winced, "The warlock said he was going to hit me with iron. On instinct, I fought him like I'd learned."

Lucas asked, "Did you use your fairy powers?" I winced, "No. He couldn't beat me fighting, so he called in his two friends. I couldn't take all three of them. One held me down while the other punched me in the face. They held me down to inject me, he mentioned Alpha Hammond was on the way."

Lucas nodded, "I'll take care of it. Could you see where you were?" I shook my head, "No, I have no idea. The trip was horrible though." The warlock hissed, "She vomited. It was gross." Dustin kicked him, "You holoported a non-witch unknowingly. If you didn't know she would throw up, you're a terrible warlock." The warlock hissed, still in pain.

Haley grabbed my hand, "I'm glad you fought. I'll work on a new plan where you interact with multiple people fighting. If you have your fairy powers available, you should use them." I nodded, "It's just not an instinct for me yet, I guess." Haley smiled, "It is. Your light just knew you could fight. It's a process, working with your light. That's really cool about the iron to water thing. I'm jealous." She held her hand up to my eye. I felt completely calm as she healed it. I smiled at her. She grabbed Eric's hands. Several people grabbed onto each other. I followed her lead and grabbed Lucas, everyone followed suit.

Eric asked, "Do you need us to pop to your home, Lucas?" Lucas said, "No, I'll call everyone later." Eric nodded and Haley popped them away. I noticed Marcus had gone with them. Lucas cleared his throat, "Nick, do you guys need a fairy ride home?" Alpha Kyle snorted, "No, we can run. It's not that far after all." Drake said, "Emmaline, can you call Chelsea and Sam later? They were really worried." I nodded, "Of course."

Lucas linked me, "Pop us home." I noticed Brad was there with a hand on me, but several of our pack members were

heading to an SUV. I recognized the one we often drive to school in. I popped us to Lucas' office. He looked at Dylan then linked, "Take us to our room." I smiled and waved at Debbie and Dale who both looked relieved to see me.

I popped Lucas to our room. He dragged me to the shower and turned on the water. I laughed teasing him, "Lucas, we have clothes on." He growled, "I don't care. You smell like them. They took you from me. I need you. You. Are. Mine!" He crashed his lips into mine. I kissed him back, trying to calm the desperation in his soul. I snapped our clothes off since they were soaking wet. Lucas' eyes flickered.

I said, "I'm ok, Dominic." He kissed me and slid into me. He claimed me for hours, but his soul was still unsettled. He washed me as if I was made of glass that would break if he put any pressure on his movements.

He took me to bed, we didn't stop until he asked me a question, "You were going to take on Alpha Hammond alone, weren't you?" I sighed, "So were you." Lucas sighed, "I had Eric with me." I countered, "I offered to call Haley to me." Lucas said, "We didn't know how that would even go since she wasn't in this reality." I said, "I can call my father to me as well. I know it wasn't well thought out. I just... I wanted this to be done."

Lucas put his forehead on mine, "I love you, baby girl." I said, "I love you too." Lucas said, "Brad is going to stick closer to you for now. He was a few steps too far away. According to your brothers, the holoport was designed to only call you. Brad tried to follow you but couldn't."

I said, "Don't be mad at him please. I know what a holoport is. I grew up in a warlock's house thinking I was part witch. I didn't even see anything out of place, so despite what Dustin said to the warlock, he's not bad at his craft."

Lucas stood, "I'm not mad at him." I raised an eyebrow, "Brad has a black eye." Lucas said, "I wasn't entirely rational. You were taken from me." I kissed him, "I'm right here." Lucas shook, "I have never felt more scared or helpless." I

rubbed his arm, "Let me call Sam and Chelsea really quick." Both were relieved to hear from me and were glad I was ok.

I sighed and looked at Lucas' nightstand and grabbed his clue. I bit my lip, "Lucas..." He glanced down, "It's not the time for that." I laughed, "On the contrary, it's the perfect time. You do realize this says Bjourn's FATHER has five children then lists four names."

Lucas stared at me then said, "Son of a bitch! Bjourn has my fucking clue." I laughed, "Yes he does." Lucas swore, "She threw in an easy one after making them all so complicated that I would totally glaze over the obvious. I've been on the lookout for a fucking clown." I laughed, "Bobo? I guess that is logical."

He nodded and kissed me hard again, "Please pop out of situations like that." I winced, "I want to say it occurred to me at first, but it didn't. I don't know why sometimes my powers happen without trying, and other times they don't." Lucas sighed, "Develop a better sense of self preservation." I hit his arm, "I knew I wasn't going to die." Lucas said, "Bexley disfigured Alpha Hammond's face as you. He will hurt you if he gets his hands on you. He could..."

Lucas' voice broke, "Rape you, baby girl." I caressed his face, "He didn't touch me. I'll work on it, but I want to help you as much as you want to save me. He's coming for you. This isn't just about me. Also, you should thank Lacy."

Lucas' brow furrowed, "Why?" I smiled, "She's the one who convinced me to pop out with the warlock." Lucas yanked me into a hug and took a deep breath, steadying himself. I told him, "Come back and lay here with me."

Lucas frowned, "I need to question the warlock." I assured him, "No one will kill him without you. Come here and calm down. Your soul is still not centered or settled. Come here and hold me. Know that I'm ok." He nodded. I fought sleep until I knew he was ok. I faintly heard the click of our door shutting as he went to go question the warlock.

Breathe

Lucas asked, “What’s wrong Nick?” Nick sighed, “That shifter boy, we found some of his family. We had a couple that was going to adopt him, but his family wanted to take custody. They came to meet him, and they took him home.” I said, “That does not sound bad.” Nick sighed, “They got caught in a freak land slide.” I winced, “Don’t tell me.” Nick told me, “I’m sorry, Lucas. None of them made it.” I groaned, “Thanks for telling me. I’ll talk to you later.” I hung up the phone. Shit. Emmaline was going to be upset.

My mind went completely blank for several seconds when Emmaline came out of the bathroom. What kind of girls day was this? Dominic snickered, “The blessed kind.” Agreed. I tried to tell her about her friend, but she didn’t want to know. I could feel her need mounting in my chest. I’ll have to tell her tomorrow.

My dick was straining in my pants. She was wearing the Princess Leia slave costume. She walked towards me like a seductress and my mouth went dry. I couldn’t stop my eyes from taking in every inch of her. Dominic growled, “If you don’t take mate I will.” I retorted, “This outfit is for me, Dominic.” Dominic said, “Then move.” I moved quickly so my wolf wouldn’t come out and take my outfit moment.

She thought she knew what she was doing to me, but she had no idea. This was a teenage fantasy of mine that had never been acted out. I was going to take my damn time with her in this. They needed to have these girls’ days every Saturday. I was positive all their mates would agree. They could just do an afternoon thing. It didn’t need to be the whole day.

I wasn’t expecting her to be able to let me fuck her mouth to completion, but she took everything. She didn’t gag and there were no tears running down her face. For the first time in

my life, I was able to come after fucking a girl's mouth. Moon goddess my mate is perfect. I couldn't take it anymore. I needed to be inside her. We were insatiable for hours; she even took over and rode me. Eventually, her eyes fluttered closed. I was right behind her.

When we woke up, I told her about her friend. She was very emotional about it. She wanted to go do something for him at their spot. I linked Nick, "We will briefly be in your territory. Emmaline wants to put up a cross to honor the boy." Nick replied, "That's not a problem." I linked Dylan, "Get the Bishop siblings to Red Run." Dylan grunted, "Already done." I winced, not wanting to ask why he was grunting.

When we got back from Red Run, I linked Dylan, "Do not link me the rest of today unless something is literally one fire." Dylan replied, "Copy that, boss man. I feel the same way. I'm sending Haley a gift basket. She doesn't understand what a girl's day is, and I will END anyone who tells her how they do it in this realm."

I snorted, "I'm sure Eric has put out the word if he's managed to pull himself away from her." Dylan said, "Seriously, their bad ass girl gang day is my new religion." I shivered, "I understand, but that's my sister." Dylan snickered, "Who wore sexy snow-white lingerie last night, Lucas. Sexy snow white. I died. RIP ME. I died, dead." I winced, "Again, that's my sister. Emmaline wore the Princess Leia slave costume." Dylan laughed, "So you died too then. The poor leaderless pack we have. Who cares? Not Dylan, that's who. They literally acted out teenage fantasies for us." I said, "Yes, and now I'm closing my link so you can stop talking about my sister in sexy lingerie."

Emmaline took a little nap. I nuzzled her when she started to wake up. Dominic purred, "Mate is so cute. She makes the cutest noises when she wakes up." I agreed, "She does." Dominic was practically jumping up and down, "Ask what else she got yesterday. Mate said she got lots of stuff. I want to see it."

Emmaline's eyes fluttered open. I smiled at her, "Would you care to show off your other fashion show items?" She

smiled, "I could be persuaded, it would be a nice distraction. Except for two of the outfits. Those are going to be saved for special occasions." I said, "As long as there are more than two other outfits, I can live with that." Emmaline laughed, "Our living room was FULL of racks and racks of lingerie. Haley was determined everyone would take home lots of stuff. I don't need to buy sexy things for a very long time." I kissed her and scooted her away, "Off you go, it's fashion show time."

She giggled and shot off to the bathroom. I heard her snap her fingers and she called out, "Are you ready?" I sat up in anticipation, "Am I ever." I was not. She had gotten twenty different outfits. I couldn't stop myself from fucking her in each one. Dylan was right, their bad ass girl gang day was my new religion. I would rip out the tongue of anyone who told Haley Connors what girl's days were in this realm. I was positive between Eric, his brothers, Haley's brothers, Dylan, and myself, that we could make this happen. Emmaline already told me Astrid said she didn't know what they were. It didn't appear that any of the girls had told her.

Thankfully for everyone, nothing caught on fire in our pack for me to be linked about. I didn't have to murder anyone who took me away from Emmaline's perfect body and her sexy lingerie. I did decide weekends needed to be longer. Monday came too quickly. Emmaline kissed me before she left for school, waking me up. I wanted her to stay because the two outfits I didn't see were plaguing my mind. I wanted to see them. I needed to know how sexy and perfect she looked in them.

I begrudgingly got up and showered after Emmaline left. I walked into my office to find a beaming Dylan. I put my hands up, "I don't even want to know." Dylan smiled, "I love the fashion show they did. I love the bad ass girl gang days. Let's make them a national holiday." I laughed, "If anyone could, it would be you." Dylan put his hand over his heart, "I'm so glad you know that."

The office phone rang. I answered, "Hello." Eric replied, "Lucas." I greeted, "Hello, Eric. How was your Sunday?"

Jackson snorted. Eric answered, "It was amazing." I laughed, "Dylan has said we need to keep Haley from finding out what a girl's day in this realm is actually like." Eric assured me, "That's already taken care of. All her brothers are on alert. We ALL enjoyed Haley's version of a girl's day."

I asked, "So, is Darrin ready to thank me for telling him to chill out?" I heard a growl. Eric said, "No. He did thank Haley for taking Shana." I questioned, "What has you calling me first thing then?" Eric sighed, "We have news on Alpha Hammond's movements. He passed through Alpha Nathan McDermont's territory. They weren't able to apprehend them, and their pack took some injuries. He appears to be heading towards Red Run territory." I said, "I'll call Nick and alert him."

I heard a pop. Haley was practically hissing about Tessa coming to their territory. I linked Dylan, "Why would Tessa go to Eric's territory?" I didn't need an answer because Eric reminded her that her mate was here. I smiled mouthing, "Emmaline." to Dylan.

I realized he wasn't looking at me, he was holding his head. I linked him, "Dylan?" He didn't answer. I yelled, "DYLAN!" Dylan winced, "Apparently Tessa apologized to Lacy, and told her why she was so rude to her that morning." I raised an eyebrow, "And you're clutching your head because?" Dylan gloated "Because your sister is growling, yelling, and snarling in our link that I'm hers, among other sexy things that are happening later." I groaned, "That's too much information." He shrugged, "You shouted."

I linked Lacy, "Lacy Loo, I need my Beta to be able to work today. Please stop shouting in your link." Lacy replied, "Did you know? Did you know that's why that wannabe man stealing she wolf was so mean to me?" I replied honestly, "I did. Haley found out about the interaction with Emmaline, and Tessa came to apologize to Dylan and me. She knows he's yours, Lacy Loo." Lacy hissed, "Don't you Lacy Loo me! I had every right to know! After all the crap you gave Emmaline for not telling you stuff about Grayson, you two hide this from me? Haley is right. Male wolves are sexist shits. I'm done"

talking to both of you.” She slammed our link shut. I groaned. That was going to be a headache.

Eric asked, “Are you guys back to this conversation? Or are you still in trouble?” I answered, “We are back. Did you convince Haley not to kill Tessa?” Eric said, “I convinced Haley to take a nap because we were up very late, into the morning. She’s testy. What’s going on with you? I’m guessing it’s Lacy, Emmaline, or both.” I sighed, “Lacy just found out that Tessa was holding onto some love for Dylan, and that Dylan and I knew about it. Care to share why your mate spreads it around that male wolves are, and I quote ‘sexist shits?’”

Eric laughed, “I don’t know that Haley says sexist shits, but she does say we are sexist. I believe your mate says that as well.” I sighed, “Lacy is a she wolf. She was raised in a pack where our relationships are the norm. Haley and Emmaline were not raised in a pack, so I give them both a pass at not understanding how we are.”

Jackson chimed in, “Haley understands how we are. We are sexist, but it’s in our nature. We are possessive, but not of ourselves. Our nakedness doesn’t bother us, but theirs does. Your mates are not wrong. We are sexist, it’s just not going to change. It’s in our blood.”

I sighed, “I suppose you’re right.” Eric agreed, “Sadly, he is right. As much as I like to argue with my mate about it...” Eric trailed off then yelled, “OH FUCK!” I tensed, “What?” Eric said, “I have a wolf that watches Haley and reports to me. She just fell asleep and disappeared from this realm. For god’s sake, she just needed a nap.”

I said, “She’ll be ok. I’m going to call Nick. I’ll make sure he knows to watch out for Hammond.” Eric said, “Call if you need us. We can be there.” Dylan asked, “How? Your fun sized fairy is in a different reality.” Eric growled, “Bexley is not in a different reality though, she’s here. I will come if you need me, Lucas.” Dylan mocked, “I’m Eric. I have everything. Two fairies. I have two whole fairies. He’s a fairy hoarder, Lucas.” I hung up.

I dialed Nick. He immediately answered, “Lucas, I have to know how to get my wife an invitation to this bad ass girl gang girl’s day. The entire pack could hear Chelsea and Sam going at it with Drake and Peter for the entire day yesterday. My son looked like a cat that ate the canary today. He had all, and I do mean ALL, the mated males asking him how to get their mate invited. Garrett is quite smug because Sharon’s invite will be the easiest to get.”

I laughed, “I’m surprised she wasn’t invited in the first place.” Nick said, “She was invited, but she was visiting her mom’s pack. I think it’s still strange for her that she’s part of our pack now. She never thought she’d have a wolf until she met Haley Connors. She also learned she was a partial fairy. As a whole, the group of partial fairies are adjusting to a lot of changes. Plus, popping makes traveling and visiting much simpler.”

I agreed, “It does. Eric got word Alpha Hammond seems to be making his way to your territory. He mowed through Alpha Nathan McDermont’s pack. No casualties but they took some damage.” Nick sighed, “Yes, well unlike Nathan McDermont I have a witch I can call to counteract Alpha Hammond’s apparent allies. I’ll call Dustin and Aubree. I’m sure they will help us since it’s Emmaline that Hammond is after.”

Dustin walked in. Dylan commented, “Speak of the devil and he appears.” Nick asked, “He’s there? He lives here.” Dustin said, “The uhh girl gang day fun lasted all day yesterday. We didn’t make it to the car, so we stayed in the room Lucas has for us here.”

Nick snorted, “Of course you did. I seriously have got to get my mate an invitation.” Dustin laughed, “You could always ask Princess Haley Connors to plan a girl’s day for your mate and her friends. From what Aubree said Princess Haley seemed delighted about planning everything. She spoke with the Princesses cousin Bexley, who said she does in fact adores planning parties.”

Nick paused then agreed, “That is a fantastic idea. I’ll reach out to Alpha Eric about that. Then us older Alpha’s can get in on your young folks’ fun.” Beta McAlister said, “As long as

my mate gets to go too, this is a great plan.” Nick laughed, “As if my mate would have a party without yours. Thick as thieves those two. Anyway, Dustin I need your help. It seems Alpha Hammond is working his way back to Red Run.”

Dustin stood, “Is he still working with a coven?” I said, “It appears so. They worked their way through one of our ally’s territories with witches.” Dustin announced, “I’m on the way.” he walked out the door yelling, “AUBREE WE HAVE TO GO!” I heard the front door slam and hurried steps. Aubree muttered, “It’s like he didn’t get laid for twenty-four hours straight. What could possibly have upset him? Slamming doors, it’s not even our house.” I laughed as Aubree mumbled the rest of the way out of the door.

I told Nick, “Dylan and I will head to our border with you with some warriors.” Nick said, “Ben and I will be heading out into our territory as well. Be safe, Lucas.” I replied, “You as well.” I hung up.

Dylan and I got into an SUV. I linked several warriors, “Follow our car, we are going to secure our border with Red Run. Alpha Hammond appears to be heading this way.” There were growls, but fifteen men got into cars to follow us.

I linked Brad, “Alpha Hammond appears to be heading this way. Be on alert.” Brad answered, “We are on alert, Alpha.” I closed the link and kept driving. Dylan broke the silence, “She’ll be fine, you worrying sleep tyrant.” I sighed, “Alpha Hammond is smart. I don’t like the man, and never have. This is sloppy though. Letting us know he’s coming and the direction he’s coming from? It’s not like him. What if this is a misdirect?”

Dylan countered, “He might be losing his mind. If he’s trying to draw us away from Emmaline, we’d be closer to her if we are at the border than at home.” I sighed, “Something is off. I should go pull her out of school.”

Dylan disagreed, “She’s safer in school. Alpha Hammond isn’t going to attack there because there are humans.” I pointed out, “Don’t you think he’s beyond caring about that? The werewolf council will already kill him for what he’s done.

There's nothing more dangerous than a person with nothing to lose." Dylan agreed, "I know. Your dad, and mine, drilled that into our heads for years." I debated going against Dylan's advice but ultimately decided not to pull her out of school. It was almost lunch time, and Brad was updating me that nothing was amiss. The principal and all the teachers were on alert.

I asked Dylan, "Is Travis on alert?" Dylan nodded, "He is. I think it's a fairy thing how protective some of us are of Emmaline. The mates she's brought together feel a loyalty to her. I feel a strong loyalty to her that feels far beyond her being my Luna and best friends' mate. I want her to be safe, to protect her at all costs. Travis feels the same way."

I considered, "That does sound like something a fairy power would do. Not that she would abuse it." Dylan said, "A full blooded fairy would though, and that was the last known Soul Searcher." I nodded, "That's true." We reached the border and parked our cars. We went into the woods and shifted and started to run and smell the grounds.

After thirty minutes I linked Dylan, "I've got nothing. Not a hint of a scent that shouldn't belong or magic." Dylan grumbled, "I've got nothing either." We shifted back and grabbed our clothes. Dylan had just pulled his shirt on when he paled.

I asked, "What's wrong?" Dylan said, "Lacy just linked me. She was pissed that you were being romantic, coming to surprise Emmaline at school." I growled, "WHAT? WHERE IS SHE?" Dylan's eyes glazed over before he told me, "Lacy is running after her. She's heading to some tree she always goes to."

I linked Brad, "GET TO EMMALINE NOW!" Brad answered, "I was only... a few steps from her, and she just disappeared." I growled, "To water or she popped?" Brad said, "Neither. She was here then she wasn't. I smell witch magic." I growled, "Check the area behind the school where we found her in the first place."

I called Nick. He answered, "Lucas..." I cut him off, "Nick, is Dustin with you?" Nick replied cautiously, "He is.

I'm assuming this is what my son is frantically linking me about." I answered, "Yes. Dustin, can you hear me?"

Dustin replied, "Yes, Ryan is outside the school, and he just texted me that your pack and Alpha Kyle's are running around like crazy people. What happened to Evie?" I sighed, "We don't know. They don't think she turned to water or popped, but she thought she was meeting me, and she disappeared.

Dustin swore, "Mother fucker! I'll tell Ryan to check the area. It sounds like someone holoported her, but she could turn to water once she gets where they want her. She's clearly not in a safe place." I agreed, "Dylan and I will start checking the bodies of water closest to the border and work our way to you."

I hung up and gunned it to the place I'd taken Emmaline to unlock her water fairy powers. We searched but there was nothing. We'd worked our way to the ruined remains of the Red Run school. I had so many feelings seeing it, this had brought me my mate.

I linked my dad, "Be on alert." My dad assured me, "I have men checking the water in our area." I replied tersely, "Thank you, dad." I took out my phone to call Eric. He greeted, "Lucas, long time no talk." My voice shook, "Eric..." Eric instantly asked, "What's wrong?" Words wouldn't come to me.

Dylan took the phone from me, "Emmaline's gone. Some weird witch voodoo went down. We are checking bodies of water, but we haven't found her." I heard Katie scream, "WHAT? WHAT DO YOU MEAN WITCH VOODOO?! LOGAN, TAKE ME TO THEM NOW!"

I heard Logan reply, "Brother, take her home. Katie, I swear I will your sister, but I can't have you here right now." Katie was screaming at him until suddenly it stopped. Dylan linked me, "I guess one of his brothers dragged her through a portal. That will end oh so well for our creepy ninja assassin. It's a good thing he's an assassin or I may fear he might die." I shot him a look.

A pop sounded and a furious Bexley was before me. She grumbled, "I'm with Haley on team witches suck." A car engine roared over the hill and screeched as it slammed on the breaks. Lacy, Valerie, Drake, Peter, Travis, Ryan, and Emmaline's guards ran over to our group.

Ryan screamed, "WHERE IS SHE, DUSTIN?" Dustin answered, "I don't know. Aubree is scrying at home. We will find her, Ryan." Ryan punched a charred wall in the school and yelled, "We JUST got her back! We can't lose her!" Ryan scoffed, "We will find her, you say. How? Just like we found her last time? We found her because she told MY MATE about me. We didn't find shit!" Dustin sighed, "That's not entirely accurate."

Dylan linked, "What did he just say?" I rubbed my head, "I don't know. I don't care." Dylan grumbled, "Ye of alpha blood, I have questions." Before he could continue Ryan went to his knees, "I can't lose her, not my baby sister. Not again." Valerie ran to comfort Ryan. I went numb. I barely saw Liam and Bexley arguing away from the group. She stomped her foot then popped away.

Eric grabbed my shoulders, "Have you linked her?" I said, "It feels like it's blocked in my head." Dominic was pacing in my mind, begging to be let free. Strategies were being talked around me, but I couldn't focus. I don't know how Eric did this. I couldn't take a full breath of air. Emmaline was my air; she was my everything. Alpha Hammond was going to hurt her. Dominic was growling that we wouldn't let that happen. I felt weak.

Suddenly, the world tilted back onto its axis as her sweet voice filtered into our link. I jolted up and Eric and Dylan glanced sharply at me. When she said there was a note in her locker I lost it. I turned to Brad, "HOW THE FUCK did someone get into the school to her locker without ANY of you noticing?" Brad said, "What? No one outside of personnel and students were there today." I punched him, "OBVIOUSLY THERE WAS A WITCH!"

Dylan pushed me back. Eric touched my shoulder, "Lucas, she linked you. Keep her talking, we need clues on how to find

her.” I stared at Eric, “She’s scared. I can feel it, and it’s tearing me apart.” Eric looked me in the eye, “I know. I know exactly how you feel.” I growled as I felt her pain, “THEY ARE HURTING HER!” Everyone was dead silent.

Eric commanded, “Lucas, TALK to her. Ask what’s happening. If she hasn’t been hit with iron, she can get away. It’s new to her, it’s not a natural instinct. She might not have thought of it.” My eyes clouded and I felt a hand on my back.

Dylan said, “Focus on Emmaline. How she looked this morning. Stay calm and mind blown her.” I laughed. Eric commented, “You’re making less sense than usual, Dylan.” Dylan snorted, “I’m being adorable and brilliant at the same time. Emmaline calls linking mind blown. Now, my adorable little sleep tyrant is calmer. I am oh so very smart. I know. I’ll be accepting compliments when my Luna is back.”

I tried to reason with Emmaline, but she wasn’t cooperating. I growled, then yelled “FUCK! She wants to take Alpha Hammond down. She has her fairy powers. She’s evading when she answers my question.” Ryan stood, “You tell her to get her ASS back here now!” Dylan said, “Uhh you do realize he is doing that right? That’s a thing you realize in your warlock fairy keeping secrets about things mind.”

I asked Eric, “Is Haley back? I don’t know if Emmaline’s going to pop out, and she wants to call on her protection.” Eric shook his head, “She’s not back, and I don’t know what would happen if she was called upon while in the ribbon. I don’t even know if it would call to her.” Of course not.

I was not above begging her to come back. Aubree wasn’t having any luck scrying for her, and we had no clues to her whereabouts. It was as if Alpha Hammond’s group disappeared between Alpha McDermont’s pack and here.

I swore, “I knew it was a fucking misdirect. I fucking knew it!” I saw Lacy walk away from our group, but I couldn’t focus on what she was doing. I asked Ryan and Dustin, “Do you have some sibling code I can say to her to get her back here?” They both looked at me like I was crazy.

Dustin answered, “Sibling code? No, just tell her to pop her happy little self here.” I explained, “Lacy and I have a code word. If one of us ever uses it the other does what the one who used the code says no questions asked.” Ryan stated, “When we get her back you bet your ass will have a fucking sibling code word.”

Logan spoke, “Gunner just tracked her phone, it’s at school. Did you happen to put a GPS tracker in her ring like my brother in law did to my sister?” I turned to Eric, shocked, “You put a GPS in Haley’s wedding ring?” Eric nodded.

Ryan asked incredulously, “And you got mad she chipped you for a few hours?” Eric growled, “It’s different. She knows I had it put in after Arion attacked her. I didn’t have it done before I gave it to her.” I sighed, “I might need your guy. I could get Emmaline to agree while we have this threat going.” Eric snorted, “Gunner. The guy is Gunner.” Maybe if I paid him, he’d help me too.

I heard a car door shut. Lacy had gotten back into an SUV. She was focusing really hard on something. Emmaline told me she was coming back. Relief hit me. I told the group, “Get ready. Emmaline’s bringing the warlock that took her to us.” Ryan said, “Fucking finally. She sees sense.”

When I heard a pop, I took what felt like my first real breath of air. I took her in my arms. Dominic needed out to smell her, so I agreed. I told him, “Only for a minute. I need to be in control to handle everything.” Dominic said, “I could handle it but fine. Let me out. I want to smell mate when I’m in control.”

Haley popped in and Emmaline talked about her newly discovered power. Dylan linked me, “Is she the fairy version of Jesus now? Iron to water. Can I get some iron to whiskey? Hell, we are by a lake, turn the water to whiskey. Dylan needs a drink. A stiff one, on the rocks.” I snorted and took back over from Dominic now that he had calmed down.

Dylan said, “Of course King Alpha Prick has to explain the Ribbon. Because his ego needs to be larger. Hopefully, they

pop home. None of us with fit in the car with his oversized head.” I rolled my eyes.

Eric explained in hushed tones, “We are twice light bound, and we are mates in any and every reality. We can go to alternate realities and help other versions of ourselves. I’ve gone with Haley, and she goes without me. I’ve never gone alone so far, but Marcious believes I will go alone at some point. We just disappear from this plane, and then reappear once we accomplish what the thread wants us to.”

Nick gaped, “If that’s just not the weirdest shit I’ve ever heard. Have you met another version of me?” Eric laughed, “I haven’t but Haley might have now that she knows you. If she went to a reality where Emmaline was in your territory, she would’ve involved you and Lucas.”

Nick’s eyes were wide as saucers, “That’s... well.... fairy’s... who knew?” Eric retorted, “None of us. Because it’s partial fairies, and we didn’t feel it was our place to tell them about being supernatural’s. Fairies fucked themselves by ignoring them.” Nick snorted, “No shit. Their loss is our gain I suppose.” Everyone nodded.

I linked Lacy, “This wasn’t your fault. Brad was right there with her. We would’ve known, but you did a good job alerting us. We were several moments ahead because of you.” Lacy didn’t answer me. I linked Dylan, “She did everything right. She shouldn’t feel bad.” Dylan said, “She thinks she should’ve gone with her.” I sighed, shaking my head.

I was resisting every atom in my body demanding I pull Emmaline back into my arms as the others hugged her. Logan took out his phone speaking softly, “Marcus, we’ve got her. Send Katie to Red Run’s high school.” I couldn’t hear Marcus’ response. I linked Eric, “Did Haley do that thing to Logan’s phone too? Because I can’t hear the answers on this side. Eric nodded, “She’s done it to all their phones.” I said, “I need her to do it to mine.” Eric said, “I’m sure she would.”

Nick linked me, “Why couldn’t we hear Prince Logan’s brother’s answering him?” I said, “Haley did some fairy thing to it for privacy from supe hearing.” Nick said, “I would like

to put in a request with the Princess.” I smirked, “Ask Eric. I just did.” He laughed.

Katie came through a portal. I linked Eric, “Something tells me Katie will in fact be hard on him.” Eric shrugged, “Who knows? You know how it goes with mates. My in laws all have a hair trigger about their mates being pregnant in this realm. I’m sure they will be a wreck when Haley is pregnant again.” I raised an eyebrow asking, “Will that be any time soon?” Eric shrugged, “Depends on your definition. We’ve discussed trying in a year or two. We did just have three.” I inclined my head, conceding his point.

Haley whispered in Fealish. Katie calmed down. I linked Eric, “What did she say?” Eric replied, “She asked the earth to grant Katie calm and peace.” I said, “That’s handy. Can we just have Haley on retainer for all your allies?” Eric said, “No, I’d never see her, and then I would be grumpy. No one wants to see that version of me again. Emmaline can do that. I’ll have Haley teach Emmaline at her next fairy training session.”

I raised an eyebrow, “You are calling your attitude when Haley was taken, grumpy?” Eric nodded. I reminded him, “Dylan REFUSED to be within a fifty-mile radius of you until we rescued Haley from Damon.” Eric retorted, “Dylan is a weenie.” I disagreed, “He’s not. You were... I get it, but you were murderously enraged.” He defiantly didn’t seem weak like I’d just felt with Emmaline gone.

I really studied Emmaline from head to toe. Rage seeped into me. She was already getting a black eye. Dylan linked me, “Take a deep breath.” I growled, “Do you know how hard she had to be hit to have a bruise less than an hour after it happened? I will FUCKING KILL THEM!” Dylan nodded, “That seems fair. Some might say it’s an overreaction to yell at me in our link when I didn’t do it. Not Dylan though.”

Haley’s lips twitched throughout Emmaline’s recounting of the events. Eric linked me, “She’s thinking of training plans.” I sighed, “Those are words I never thought I’d feel relief hearing, that’s my only emotion right now.”

I linked Dylan, “Her story makes it clear we don’t have the one that punched her. I want a name.” Dylan said, “And you will have it Alpha Rational. We have this warlock; he will give us answers. I will not rest until I have an answer. I say this because I like having answers and I know you won’t let me sleep without answers. It seems we are just letting Dustin’s comment about finding Emmaline go so getting a warlock’s name is happening.” This warlock had no idea the hell he was about to go through.

Dominic growled, “He made mate sick. He had someone hurt her. I will kill him.” I said, “No one disagrees, Dominic. We will get answers, and he will die by our hands.” Dominic agreed, “She smells like them Lucas. I hate it.” I said, “I know.” She was going to have to shower.

I linked my dad, “We have Emmaline back. We are bringing the warlock who took her home for questioning.” He replied, “Thank god. Your mother and I have been so worried. I’ll call the men back from searching bodies of water. We will get you answers, and this will stop. We will stop Alpha Hammond; I promise you that no one comes for our family and get away with it.” I replied, “Thanks, Dad.”

Everyone started to disperse. I linked Nick, “It’s going to be awhile before she calls her friends.” Nick responded, “I think we all know that.” I linked Brad and her other guards, “Brad, you come with us. The rest of you drive the vehicles back to our territory.” They answered together, “Yes, Alpha.”

When Emmaline popped us back home I linked Brad, “Stay at the house for now. When you need it, grab a guest room. I don’t want anyone far from her for now. Your mate is welcome to come up here with you.” Brad responded, “Yes, Alpha.” I sighed. I was going to have to apologize to him later.

We went upstairs together, talked, showered, and both Dominic and I claimed her. We were calmer, but our anger for those warlocks was simmering beneath the surface. I was attending her needs before I dealt with them, but that was coming. I held her until she fell asleep. I slipped out of bed and stood at the door staring at her for a moment before stepping outside.

I linked my mom and Lacy, “Meet me in the Luna rooms.” Both replied, “Coming.” It only took them a few minutes. I explained, “I need you to watch over Emmaline. I have to deal with this, and I need to know that she’s ok. I can’t leave her alone right now, guarded or not.” Lacy nodded.

Katie appeared, “I’ll watch her too. I can’t promise there will be room in your bed for you when you get done though.” I smiled, “I don’t know that I’ll be making it to bed, but I appreciate the warning.” I nodded to them.

I grabbed Lacy before she continued through the adjoining door to my bedroom. I whispered, “Thank you. Emmaline told me you were the one who convinced her to get out of there. I can’t...” Tears filled my eyes, “I can’t thank you enough, Lacy Loo.” Lacy hugged me, “I love her too, Luc. I would do anything for you, you know that. I reasoned with her in a way you were not capable of in the moment. Dylan wouldn’t have been able to do it with me if the situation was reversed. He’s in the dungeons with Logan, Dad, Ryan, and Dustin by the way. I think they have some answers, but they have been waiting for you.” I nodded and gave her one last hug. My mom smiled at us from the door. I saw Katie had already opened the adjoining door and climbed into bed, holding her sister.

I let my anger fill me as I stalked away. The closer I got to the dungeons the angrier I got. I opened the door and heard my enemies screams. I walked closer to see Dustin and Ryan’s hands glowing. The warlock was screaming, “I didn’t know she was your sister! No one knows that man!” Ryan said, “Do we look like we give a shit?” The warlock threatened, “I’ll get out of here and tell David Forrester myself. He’ll kill her.”

I slammed the door open and ripped him off the table Dylan had him tied down to. I didn’t even register anyone speaking to me. I snarled, “No one will kill my mate. Do you hear me?” The warlock’s eyes rounded, and he nodded. I dropped him in a heap. I grabbed a knife from Dylan.

He panicked, “What the hell is with this girl? She’s got warlock’s, witches, werewolves, and the damn Hackura defending her.” I heard a pop. Haley commented, “You forgot fairies.”

I turned and raised my eyebrow. She explained, “I wanted to help you get the truth, my lion. Then you can torture and kill him, while we go find the other warlocks involved. As I have heard Eric say this is a win, win. I agree with that saying. It makes sense.”

Dustin gaped at her. Ryan said, “Right on.” I asked, “Does anyone know his name yet?” Dylan said, “Our very own Queen Elsa, because I heard about that her ability to freeze things for SHAME no one announced it to me properly, said his name wasn’t important because that’s what he told her. He has not given up his name. Fang says I should shift and bite him. We’ve been quibbling back and forth about it. I keep trying to tell him this guy is not a bunny. Ryan said he could turn him into a bunny. Fang is onboard with that plan. We could set him loose in the dungeons and I could shift to chase him. I bet he’d give up his name, and all would be entertained. I feel like everyone would be. Seems like a good time for all but the nameless warlock we don’t care about. So, that doesn’t really count.”

I cut him across his stomach, “Tell me your name.” The warlock whimpered, “Jaron.” Dylan scoffed, “Hours of planning and telling my wolf he could rabbit hunt down the drain. I give and give and no one appreciates me.” I growled, punched Jaron, and rephrased, “What’s your full name?” The warlock said, “Jaron Humphries.”

Ryan interjected, “Then that would make the two others with you Parker and Alex Humphries.” Jaron answered, “It would.” I raised an eyebrow. Dustin clued me in, “They are his brothers.” Dylan cleared his throat, “I did know that, for the record. Just like I know he answered you because my fun sized fairy goddess is here. It’s not fair, it’s actually cheating. Poor Fang.”

I said, “How quaint. A family affair to abduct and kidnap my mate. Which one punched Emmaline?” Jaron scoffed, “Emmaline, Evelyn, Luna, the girl’s got a lot of names. Alex punched her. Bitch wouldn’t sit still.” Haley muttered, “Duchess. You forgot Duchess, you dumbass.” I growled and broke his arm. He screamed in agony. I questioned, “Why

would you three agree to take my mate? Who agrees to come against me, all my allies, and Dustin Bishop?”

Jaron laughed, “It all makes sense now. It’s not just the bounty their dad put out. They actually found their little sister, and that made you guys change your name.” Dustin didn’t answer. I cleared my throat. Jaron sighed, “I took the job because Alpha Hammond offered a lot of money and protection. He’s going to use your little fairy to take over.”

Haley scoffed, “By going to war with the fairies? How incredibly short sighted.” Jaron frowned, “The fairies wouldn’t go to war.” Haley said, “Yes, we most certainly would.” I added, “So would I.” Jaron said, “You were going to be dead, so...” Everyone glanced at him. Dylan growled, “Dead warlock laying down said what about my bestie?”

I snorted, “Who was going to kill me?” Jaron shrugged, “I don’t know. Someone you weren’t going to suspect. Just kill me but leave my brothers alone.” I growled, “Your brothers put their hands on what’s mine. They will die, but don’t you worry. You can have a family reunion before I kill all of you. Where are your brothers?”

Jaron tried not to answer. I turned and watched Haley flick dirt out from under her nails. Jaron cried, trying not to say the words. Eventually he was unable to keep silent, “A safe house in Red Run.” I nodded, “Thank you, Jaron. Where was Alpha Hammond meeting you?”

Jaron admitted, “A house on the border of Red Run and Alpha McDermont’s territory. It’s where I holoported the fairy to.” I asked, “How did you set that up?” Jaron answered, “I did it on Sunday. Alpha Hammond gave me your patrol times. I slipped in and out without anyone noticing.” I gritted my teeth, “How did he get my patrol times?” Jaron asked, “Do I look like a magic eight ball? I don’t fucking know, man!” I growled and threw him against the wall.

I complemented Haley, “It’s significantly easier to get answers with you here.” Dylan grumbled, “Turned to rabbit, fang hunts would get answers to.” Haley smiled, “I am very happy to be of service. Do you need me to pop you to Red

Run?” I asked, “Will you get in trouble with Eric?” Haley said, “That would make it more fun. Did you know spoiling a fairy’s fun is dangerous?” Dylan chastised me, “Don’t spoil her fun! Her version of fun saves me HOURS of my life. Plllleeeasse! Think of my pillow.”

I rolled my eyes, “A minute ago you were upset about bunny chases. If you wouldn’t mind Haley, your help would be appreciated.” Haley grabbed Logan’s hand. He winked then grabbed mine. The rest of us quickly linked arms, then Haley popped us to a house. Logan asked, “Are we going stealthy or shock and awe?” Haley called the wind and threw the door off the house. Logan smirked, “Shock and awe it is.”

We all stalked in, and Haley questioned, “Which one of you motherfuckers is Alex?” One raised his hand. She walked up to him and punched him straight on, breaking his nose. Alex yelled, “WHAT THE FUCK, BITCH?” Logan said, “I know I didn’t just hear you call my sister a bitch.” He let his eyes blaze and both brothers stood up.

One stammered, “Jaron ratted us out? He would never!” Haley tapped her temple, “He didn’t have a choice.” They both got ready to charge at her. Logan had Alex by the throat before he’d managed to take a step. I grabbed Parker’s arm and twisted it behind his back, slamming him against the wall.

I glanced back at her, “Haley, pop us home please.” Haley asked, “Logan, can you come back over here and join the group?” Logan carried Alex over by the throat and Haley touched his arm. He put his elbow out and touched me. Dylan, Dustin, and Ryan grabbed my arm and we all popped back.

Jaron was crying, “I’m so sorry guys. I tried to fight it, but the fairy made me tell the truth.” His brothers said, “It’s not your fault. You can’t fight the Truth Seeker, Jaron. We knew the risks of this job.” Haley commented, “You three are morons. Does NO ONE remember I’m not JUST a fairy? Or THE fairy? I’m the goddamn fucking princess. I’m also a Hackura. Why does literally no one EVER remember that fact? It’s insulting, that’s what it is.”

Logan laughed, "I remember, little sister." She kissed his forehead then said, "I'll leave you to it, my lion. Call or text Eric should you require my services. Or Logan could call me. I always answer my brother's calls." Logan said, "Provided you haven't been kidnapped, or you're not off fucking your wolf." Haley said, "I call you back when I'm done fucking my husband." With that she popped away.

Logan dropped Alex, who was sputtering and clutching his throat. I picked up a crowbar. "Alex, I hear you punched my mate." Alex said, "I was just trying to subdue her. She was fighting back." Dustin said, "Yes, because typically kidnap victims just accept their fate. Especially those who are supernatural."

I swung the crowbar and hit Alex in the stomach. He went down in a heap. I followed through with a hit on his kneecap. I let Dominic out. He snarled, "You hit MY MATE! MY MATE! I'll fucking kill you!" He attacked. Neither of us wanted to stop. Eventually Dylan said, "Dominic, my buddy and pal, he's dead. Deader than dead dead. Be a lamb and give Lucas back control." Dominic just kept hitting Alex. Logically I knew Alex had to be dead. I'd been beating him for far too long for him to be alive.

I felt a hand on my back, "Son, he's dead." I slowed down and someone caught my hand before I could bring it down again. My dad said, "Come on, Lucas." I nodded and stood. The other two brothers were wailing over their brothers death.

I addressed them, "You both know you're going to die. Do you have any information to pass along about Alpha Hammond?" Parker looked up at me, "Someone you don't see coming is going to kill you. We will be avenged." I said, "It would take a lot to kill me, and besides Alpha Hammond wants me to see Emmaline as his first."

Jaron asked, "His? She can't be his, she's yours. He wants to kill you both." Dustin spat out, "Aww, did the big bad Alpha who's trying to kidnap a teenager lie to you?" Jaron surmised, "He knew we would die."

Dylan shrugged, “He had to know it was a strong possibility. He probably wanted to see our response. If you succeeded yay for him, but now he knows a bit more about what he’s up against. So, we thank you deeply for that. You don’t suck at all. Please note my sarcasm. King Alpha Prick should’ve come with us. He’d have crushed your skulls by now. Or ripped out your heart. One can never tell which way King Alpha Prick will kill someone.”

Parker ignored him and looked at Logan, “You’re a Hackura, right? Your eyes glowed at the house.” Logan nodded. Dylan muttered, “Called the princess his sister too. You are SO UNOBSERVANT! Can we kill him on my beta blood principle now? I’m insulted for our creepy ninja assassin. Is he a Hackura? He’s the prince creepy ninja assassin. Some people. What can you do? Oh, wait...KILL THEM.”

Parker stammered, “In my wallet is the routing number for the bank we used to for the fee. Take the money out before Alpha Hammond does. We may have decided to take the risk to take Alpha Lucas’ mate, but he double crossed us and always planned for us to die. If Lucas wasn’t dying today, then we were never meant to live.” Logan pulled Parker’s wallet out, “I’ll see to it.”

I asked, “Who decided to take the job?” Jaron sighed, “I did.” I moved quickly to Parker and snapped his neck. I instructed, “Dylan, strap Jaron here down to the table. Let him see what his grandiose plan got him.” Jaron pleaded, “No, no, no just kill me.” I growled, “Well if that’s what you want then I might as well give it you.” I stalked off.

My dad caught me at the top of the steps, “Shower in our room, son.” I looked down, realizing I was covered in blood. I nodded and headed off to their wing. I stood in the shower for a really long time before I turned the water off. My dad had left some shorts in the bathroom.

I found my dad sitting on the couch in their room. He gestured, “Have a seat.” I nodded, “I’m sorry I lost control of myself and Dominic. You taught me better.” My dad snorted, “He hurt your mate. He was going to hand her over to Alpha

Hammond. None of them were going to live. Ryan is still down there with Jaron. He wants to kill him.”

I asked, “Then what’s with the couch chat? Feel free to tell Ryan to kill Jaron after a few hours of looking at his dead brothers.” My dad said, “Alpha Hammond has a plan. How was he when you saw him?” I frowned, “What do you mean?”

My dad sighed, “Sometimes when an Alpha loses their mate, when they have nothing else to hold onto; they go crazy.” I frowned, “Alpha Hammond never met his mate.” My dad pursed his lips, “That we know of. Were his eyes a little crazy? I mean he’s working with witches and warlocks for god’s sake! We don’t dislike them by any means, but we don’t go out of our way to work with them. He seems to be with them more than wolves.” I said, “We’ve been working with Dustin and Ryan.” My dad raised an eyebrow, “If I have to tell you why that’s different... or tell you why it proves my point... his mate could’ve been a witch.”

I thought about it, “He’s always said he wanted to choose his mate himself. I guess he could’ve met his mate or he took a chosen mate.” My dad shook his head, “Losing a chosen mate doesn’t do the same thing to you. When your fated mate dies it rips a piece of your soul away. I’m just saying, he changed his mind about Emmaline without warning. Suddenly, he wanted her to be his. He’s never wanted anyone to be his. He wanted to fall in love organically. He changed his lifelong goal after hearing her name in diner? It just doesn’t make sense.”

I agreed, “You’re right. We need to look into it. I’ll see if Dustin and Ryan have figured out what coven he has working with him. He had to know those guys would die, and he didn’t want to offer up the ones he’s running with.” My dad nodded, “We’ll keep Emmy safe.”

I asked, “How? How can we keep her safe? Fairies are popping up; Alpha Hammond got our patrol schedule down. We need to change it. I’m going to have to have a rotating schedule of patrols so no one can catch the pattern. Emmaline said the note was in my handwriting.”

My dad put his hand on my back, “Now, we are aware. They messed up. This was sloppy and not well planned. He trusted warlocks to get iron into her. If she’d been more alert, she could’ve popped away the second she’d regained her senses. We keep her safe by adjusting. Haley is going to change up their training. We will change our approach. We WILL get him because no one messes with our family. We are the Lyons and we have run this territory for centuries. This is our home, and no one comes into our home and tries to take what is our and lives.” I nodded, “I agree.”

My dad smiled, “On a separate note, when are you getting that amazing girl down the aisle?” I smiled, “I can’t believe you haven’t heard yet. We are getting married on Christmas Eve.” My dad smiled, “Halloween and Christmas Eve. I like it. That suits both my pups. Go, get some sleep.” I nodded and left his room.

I found Brad in the hallway outside my room. He stood straighter when he saw me. He reported, “Alpha, the girls are still in there. Prince Logan came and picked up Princess Katie and took her back to their realm.” I nodded, “I’m sorry I punched you. This wasn’t your fault. There was nothing you could’ve done. I shouldn’t have hit you.” Brad disagreed, “I should’ve been close to her. She’s gotten notes from her friends before. I didn’t think to double check it with you.”

I frowned, “You did nothing wrong. Stick closer to her now. If she gets a note from me you don’t know about, get her out of there. I’ll link you if I decide to surprise her.” Brad nodded, “I won’t let you down again.” I sighed, “I let you down today, not the other way around. I let my temper control me, and I shouldn’t have.” Brad shrugged, “I’d go crazy if my mate vanished too.” I put my hand on his shoulder, “Go get some sleep. I’m sure your mate is waiting up.” Brad nodded again then left.

I opened the door to my room. Lacy and my mom groggily waved. I linked Dylan, “Are you coming to get Lacy?” Dylan said, “If you’d told me she was up there I’d have already had her. You’re slipping, Lucas. I’m just down here about to risk your mom’s ire to shift into Fang to follow her scent to find

her. I thought we were playing a sexy game. You are no fun.” I groaned, “Just come get her, she’s dead on her feet.”

I linked my dad, “Can you come get mom?” My dad answered, “I’m at the door. Ryan is going to kill Jaron in three hours. He’s being very literal about the couple of hours part.” I turned and smiled as he carried my mom back to their room.

Dylan walked and picked up Lacy, “I was about to call out the national Beta guard. I was ready to activate my Beta group chat at this time of night.” Lacy smiled lazily, “Didn’t I tell you I was up here?” Dylan said, “You definitely didn’t.” Lacy mumbled, “Sorry.”

Dylan picked her up, “Sure you are, my naughty little Alpha.” I closed the door as they left and climbed into bed, pulling Emmaline to me. She whispered, “I love you, Lucas.” I said, “I love you too, baby girl.” I’d keep her safe. I have to.

Hard Conversations

Emmaline groggily opened her eyes and reached for Lucas. I felt a small hand already on me. I opened my eyes wide, jerking away, only to see Katie in bed with me. She smiled. I asked, “Where’s Lucas?” Katie told me, “He’s dealing with things.” I frowned, “I thought I calmed him down.”

Debbie chimed in, “You did. Now he has to deal with the threat and get answers. Someone hit you. He will find them, and they will pay.” I grumbled sleepily, “I hit all of them. Are those two other guys coming for me like Lucas is for them?” I didn’t want to panic, but I was a little.

I heard a pop and relaxed completely; the presence was so comforting. My dad spoke, “No one will come for you and live. I may have failed you when I hid you from other fairies, specifically Fabian; however, I will not do so again.”

I turned, stunned to see him and Haley. She smiled at me. I sputtered, “Dad? What are you doing here?” My dad smiled, “Haley called and told me what happened. I wanted to see for my own eyes that you were alright. It’s an added bonus that my presence will comfort you. Haley assures me your wolf will handle the situation appropriately.” I nodded, “He will.”

My dad nodded and came forward and spoke in Fealish to me. His hands glowed a greenish blue and I felt at peace. I looked up at him with a question in my eyes. He said, “I can’t grant you calm like Haley and Bexley can. That is up to the earth which I have no elemental power in anymore. I can grant you the peacefulness of water. It is quite comforting to water fairies, you especially as the soul seeker.”

I nodded. I asked, “How are we related to Haley then?” Marcious laughed, “I was fighting with my family when the Holloran’s Rosé to power. We are their cousins, we used to have sky and earth blood. I was raised in the water territories,

having mostly water blood. When the throne was seized, our family was named the royal house of the water fae.” Still confused.

My dad continued, “Unlike the ruling family, and its King or Queen, we cannot have more than the blood of the ruling element. When a family is declared the royal house of its element, they agree to forego any blood in them that links them to these other elements. There can be no option to attempt to claim the rights of royalty to another house. There is a ceremony to name you royal, and a ritual is performed to forego your other lineage. Our family completed the ritual, and we were rid of the earth and sky, becoming a full water fairy. But a fairy’s soul will always recognize a relative. Family is a bond deeper than blood alone,” he smiled, “Besides, I did not have many talents in the sky or earth elements anyway.”

Haley snorted, “Pure blood asshats.” I mean, she might have a point. I asked, “Did it hurt?” My dad shrugged, “For a time, it was long ago.” Haley rolled her eyes. My dad’s version of granting peace was different than Haley’s to me. This seemed to be a part of me. With Haley’s, I knew it wasn’t my peace. I wondered if that was because I was mostly a water fairy.

I got up and hugged him, “Thank you, dad.” He kissed my cheek, “I must go.” He turned to Haley, “Cousin, you are going to work your wolf into a tizzy again. It’s marvelous and such good fun.” Haley rolled her eyes and my dad popped away.

I asked, “Why would Eric be in a tizzy?” Haley sighed, “Eric is dramatic when it comes to me, that’s why.” I bit my lip, “What did you do?” Haley pointed out, “The questioning process will go faster for Lucas if I’m here to help. That’s just a fact.” I laughed, “Did you tell Eric you were coming?” Haley replied, “Technically, yes I did.”

Lacy pointed out, “Technically? Evasive, little fairy.” Haley sighed, “UGH! Just because everyone is taller than me, doesn’t mean they should call me little. It’s so unfair it’s Fabian’s fault I’m short. GOD, I hope I get to see the version of myself I brought to my dad as a baby again. Then everyone

can know how fucking tall I was supposed to be. I left Eric a note on his pillow explaining where I was going. I might even get back before he reads it.”

I smirked, “Is that the reality you went to this time? You found the baby you?” Haley said, “No, that was the last one. This one... I had to explain to myself who Marcus was, and why she should stop running from him. She didn’t try to escape at thirteen because Aiden came looking for her before she left. He took care of her. He took her to the doctors, ones not on my uncle’s payroll. He found out what my uncle was doing to me and punished him. She wasn’t raped anymore, but Uncle Fabian promised her to Axel Price in marriage. She ran a week before her sixteenth birthday. When she entered this realm, she ended up in Eric’s territory driving his wolf insane. Then she ripped off her bracelet that suppressed her sorrow and connections to our Hackura family. Marcus and Bjourn was the closest to her. She was being chased by Fabian, Axel, Marcus, Bjourn, and Benjamin. My brothers were actually impressed that she managed it with no training. They are not easy to run from.”

Haley continued, waving her hand, “They were observing her patterns and were about to break down her door. I opened it to explain everything to them. It was... Interesting.” I blew out a breath, “I don’t even know how you deal with all the decisions people make. It’s so strange to think that one decision sparks a new reality.”

Haley smiled, agreeing, “It is. I’m glad I can help myself in them. I’m also glad to know Aiden would’ve helped me. I never thought he would, even if he knew before he took the throne. I will be giving my brother a hug the next time I see him. I think it will comfort him to know that I know for a fact he would’ve helped me. He told me he would’ve, but I didn’t believe him. Or Arion.”

She looked sad when she said Arion’s name. I searched her soul, finding anguish and sorrow. I grabbed her arm and squeezed it reassuringly. She smiled sadly at me. “Anyway, I found you in that reality too. We are both in better places. I’d

better get to helping Lucas, before Eric loses his shit.” With that statement Haley popped away.

I sighed, “I’m going to have to warn Lucas that Eric didn’t exactly know she was coming.” Lacy laughed, “Eric won’t be upset with him.” Katie added, “She’ll be with Logan too, she’s guarded. I told him he had to do horrible things to the warlock since he had me carted off to the Hackura realm when we found out what was happening.”

I kissed her forehead, “He loves you. He agreed to let you come see me, so you don’t have to sneak away.” Katie sent me a scathing look. I rolled my eyes, “Don’t you give me that look. You’d have the shadows bring you to our realm, and we both know it.” Katie nodded slowly, “I just... Evie, don’t do that again.” She crushed me to her, “We just got you back and I...” Her voice broke, “I love you so damn much. I missed out on almost four years. I won’t let anyone take you from me. I can’t.”

I smiled, running my hands through her hair. I assured her, “I’m here, Katie. I promise to work on my fairy instincts. Next time, I’ll pop out and bring someone back with me, or something like that. I’ll come up with a better plan.” Katie said, “Just keep yourself safe. Ryan, Dustin, Aubree, me, and Lucas would be devastated if anything happened to you.” I smiled, “I want to keep you all safe too.”

Katie sighed, “You’re my baby sister. Keeping you safe is my job. I’ve already failed, just help me keep you safe, please.” I pulled her close, “I won’t be reckless, I’m sorry you worried.” Katie smiled as her eyes drooped. I said, “Sleep, Katie Cat.” She nodded and closed her eyes.

Lacy said, “You could try to sleep too.” I smiled, “Pot meet kettle. I can’t sleep without Lucas.” Debbie said, “At least rest your eyes. You’ve had a trying day.” I sighed, “Didn’t we all?” Lacy agreed, “No joke.” I looked at her, searching her soul, “Don’t feel guilty about this, Lacy.”

Lacy looked away, “I should’ve gone with you.” I snorted, “I would’ve disappeared from your side. The holoport was

only meant for me. It couldn't have brought you, whether we'd been two steps apart or holding hands."

Lacy rolled her eyes, "I'm joining Haley on team witches suck." I teased, "It was a warlock." Lacy raised an eyebrow, "Your cousin hates them too." I said, "She doesn't hate Ry or Dusty." Debbie laughed, "She doesn't like them yet either." I shrugged, "She came around on Katie pretty fast."

Lacy pointed out, "As her brother's mate, Haley was automatically feeling Katie could be trusted. Katie proved herself, too. Haley has bigger trust issues with the male gender than female." I said, "I would too. Actually, I would never trust anyone ever again."

Lacy changed the subject, "Alternate realities. That's pretty cool." I said, "Unless she goes to one and sees Eric with Claudia or as she calls her Claudzilla." Debbie laughed, "Then that horrid bitch will die far quicker than she deserves. Our Haley did that right, Claudzilla is quite the apt name."

Lacy gasped, "MOM!" Debbie raised an eyebrow, "I would've helped Haley rip her to pieces if I'd known what she'd done to you, Lacy. You have no idea the hell your father and I went through. We couldn't move on. Everyone told us to accept you'd left. The Connors family and Lucas were the only ones who told your father and I to keep going. Eric even helped us."

Lacy was quiet, "I was trying to save everyone." Debbie nodded, "I know that sweetheart. It doesn't mean we didn't go through hell. We tracked you all over the damn country. It destroyed Lucas wondering why you were running from him, from us. Your father was a mess. You are his little girl." Lacy looked away with tears in her eyes.

I offered, "At least Haley knows about you now. Other realities won't suffer that problem." Lacy looked back, "You think Haley would do that?" I nodded, "Haley always finds a way to save everyone she can. She will involve Lucas because of me." Debbie said, "She'd probably let Marcious know what happened as well."

I glanced at Katie, “I think she’d tell him and get my siblings in on the plan. I think she’d bring us all away from California to Tennessee. She told me fairies can sense their mates their whole life. Lucas would protect me because he would know I’m his mate, as long as he was at least eighteen.”

Lacy smiled, “That’s a lovely thought to be honest. I’d love to be here when I turned eighteen. I’d find out Dylan was my mate at midnight on my birthday. He always hated those guys that found out that way, and he’d be one of them.” I agreed, “That would be nice. I bet it happens in some reality. Even if Haley just places me with a family in Tennessee and not with Lucas. She’d kill Christy and Claudia before leaving.”

Lacy grinned, “She would, wouldn’t she?” I nodded and laid my head on the pillow. “You guys should try to get some rest too. We don’t know how long the guys will be off doing what they are doing.” Debbie laughed as she laid her head down, “Not as long as they would be if your cousin wasn’t with them, that’s for sure.”

I closed my eyes, resting them, “She’s going to get in trouble with Eric. That’s what’s for sure.” Debbie chuckled, “Sometimes getting in trouble is fun. Fairy’s just risk it more often than us she wolves. I might take a page out of her book. She has herself a grand old time.” I sleepily replied, “Her book is fun.” Lacy mumbled, “Is it ever.”

A pop sounded. Haley whispered her space unheard chant, “The wolves are out I see.” I asked, “Shouldn’t you get back so that Eric doesn’t notice you’re not there?” Haley bit her lip, “He found my note about a half hour ago.” I snickered, “How mad is he?” Haley said, “Not as mad as he will be when he finds out I popped the guys to the warlocks and back.”

I opened my eyes and sat up, “They have them all?” Haley nodded, “It’s handled. I need you to talk to Lacy about training Thursday. I have a different program ready, but you two need to learn to fight together. I have absolute faith in all the Beta females, but especially in Eric’s pack. Miley and I fight with precision and trust in all situations. Luce has been training with me, and we are learning each other’s styles. You and Lacy need to have that too.”

I asked, "You want Lacy to join our training sessions?" Haley nodded, "I do. Miley, Astrid, and one other person to be determined will be joining as well so you both can work on fighting multiple assailants." I gulped, "You want Lacy and I to fight the future Queen of the Hackura?" Haley nodded, "She doesn't have an easy mode either. I'm throwing you both to the assassins, but threats are forcing my hand."

I laughed, "It's wolves, or the deep end." Haley tilted her head, "What?" I smiled, "The saying is throwing you into the deep end, or to the wolves." Haley said, "Neither of the people I mentioned fighting you are wolves. They are assassins." I nearly laughed, "True."

Haley smiled, "I've got to get back. Eric is getting quite upset." I teased, "Wasn't that your goal?" Haley shrugged, "No, my goal was to resolve the threat, and possibly get back before he noticed. Eric is upset I didn't take anyone from his pack or family with me."

I questioned, "Why didn't you?" Haley said, "Logan is here. I thought that would count." I considered then said, "That's fair. I'm sure Eric will understand." Haley snorted, "The man is not understanding, especially about me." I gave her a look, "Mates, I guess." She nodded, "Werewolf mates. I love that man with everything in me, but He has GOT to find himself some chill. I am perfectly capable of handling my damn myself." She leaned forward and gave me a kiss. I told her seriously, "You know he won't ever find any, right?" Haley nodded, "Probably not. I'll see you Wednesday." I waved as she popped away.

I closed my eyes to rest them again, waiting to hear Lucas come through the door. I heard the sheet rustling by the bed and rolled, startled. I barely opened my eyes to see Logan. I smiled at him, "She's been out for some time." Logan nodded, "Thank you for telling Katie not to be too upset with me."

I responded, "I've searched your soul many times since we met. Your concern, above all, is Katie. I understand why you are worried about her being here. Here's a word of warning though, if she doesn't want to stay where you have her, she'll call on the shadows. I think the only reason she didn't today is

because as much as she wanted to help me; she wants your child to be safe too. Katie has always wanted to be a mom. I know your people are always several steps ahead of everyone. Just don't forget about the shadows. They are powerful, and they allow my siblings to use them. They would probably give Katie anything she asked since they agreed to kill for her."

Logan considered me before asking, "Why would you tell me that?" I raised an eyebrow, "You already knew, but I'm telling you for her." I kissed her forehead, "I could never live with myself if anything happened to Katie because of me."

Logan started negotiating, "She feels the same about you. Will you fairy promise, as my sister has, to keep your phone on you at all times." I sighed, "I promise to do my absolute best to keep my phone on me." Logan smirked like he'd won something, "In that case, I'd like to have Gunner put a GPS tracker in your ring. I've never seen you without it."

My jaw dropped, "You have GOT to be kidding me. Who's Gunner?" Logan rolled his eyes, "I'm sure you know him as Harper's boytoy lover. I do not kid about security measures." I laughed, "Gunner... That somehow fits. Haley wouldn't let you do that to her." Logan smiled, "Is that your only reservation?" Now I smiled, "Tell you what, you convince Haley to let Gunner put a GPS in her ring; I'll let him do it to mine too."

Logan looked far too happy with that response, "Perfect. Gunner will be here tomorrow to have your ring fitted with a tracker." I whisper yelled, "You didn't even ASK Haley yet!" Logan winked, "Haley's is already done." My eyes widened, "Does she know?" Logan nodded, "She does."

Haley and I were going to have a chat about that. I couldn't go back on my word now, but my independent streak was getting riled up. I grumbled, "Fine, Gunner can do this tomorrow, but for the record the phone PLUS the GPS is overkill."

Logan shrugged, "You can never be too careful. As good and as prepared as she was; Haley was still kidnapped. As prepared and as careful as we were; you were able to be

abducted by Christy, then warlocks. No one is perfect, but we have backup plans for a reason. You having your phone, and a tracker in your ring is a backup plan.”

I gritted my teeth, “Gunner can remove the tracker once Alpha Hammond is apprehended, right?” Logan nodded, “He could, yes.” I raised an eyebrow, “Will he?” Logan shrugged, “I’ll consider it after Katie has given birth. I can’t have her being worried about you being kidnapped with us having no way to find you. Don’t get me wrong, I would’ve found you when the warlocks took you, nothing can stay hidden from my brothers or I for long. But I will do everything in my power to give her peace of mind.”

I wanted to slap him. He smirked as if he could sense that. I searched his soul and replied, “I can tell you want to manipulate me, but that you’re also concerned about Katie.” Logan shrugged, “I won’t deny either of those things. I am who I am, and I get what I want.” I scoffed, “I see that. Just for the record, your manipulation wouldn’t work if you weren’t right... Katie’s safety and happiness matter to me though.”

Logan pointed out, “That’s the only way manipulation works. Making the person you are manipulating care for someone or something else.” I said, “I can’t decide if I want to slap you or give you a hug for caring about my sister so freaking much.” Logan moved and gave me a hug, “I love her, Emmaline. I already told you, but because of her you are my family now too. I’ll always help Lucas seek justice for you or find you if need be. Your safety is important to me. Not just because of Katie, or my sister. Family is the most important thing, above all.”

I patted his back, “Alright. I’ll help you in the ways I can for her as well. Maybe you, me, Lucas, and Katie could all go on a double date sometime.” Logan tensed, “In the Hackura realm, sure.” I said, “Why not here?”

Logan brushed that off, “Ask Haley. I’m sure she will tell you. I need to get Katie to our place so we can both rest.” I nodded, “Thank you for taking such good care of her. You may be a feared Prince of the Hackura, but you’re gentle with her in a way I’d never expected to see of your people.”

Logan shared, “Such interactions are reserved for our family, our people, and our mates. No one else deserves it.” I nodded to him. He picked Katie up, shivering as he walked away. Logan Cambridge was just as scary as his brothers. I was glad he was on my side.

I closed my eyes waiting for Lucas again. I heard the door open this time as opposed to when Logan came in. I realized I didn’t even hear him until he was next to me. That was moderately terrifying. I’m pretty sure I only heard him because he wanted me to. He wanted to discuss my ring getting chipped with a GPS.

Dale was a few steps behind Lucas, he picked up Debbie. I felt a little bad. I hadn’t asked her how she felt about being pregnant yet. Dylan walked in a few moments later and grabbed Lacy whispering something to her. She mumbled a few replies to him, but mostly stayed asleep.

Lucas walked over to the bed stripping down, and as soon as everyone was out of our room, he cuddled in next to me. I felt his soul and managed to utter my love for him before I was out.

I woke to my alarm. I stretched, surprised I didn’t feel sore at all from fighting yesterday. Haley’s healing power certainly packed a punch. I popped to the gym and several warriors blinked in surprise at my appearance.

Alex came over, “Emmaline, you should rest. You fought three warlocks yesterday.” I smiled, “I took one punch, and my cousin healed me. I’m ready to go.” Alex observed me, “Fine, you’ll be training with another warrior on the equipment today. You won’t actually have an opponent.”

I wanted to argue with him, but Lucas trusted him to train the pack. I decided to do what he said. I headed over to the heavy bag, and an instructor handed me gloves. He quietly told me, “It’s not a comment on your abilities. You are our Luna, and our Alpha cannot be himself without you. We do not want to contribute to his concern for you.”

I sighed, “I understand. I worry about Lucas too.” The man nodded and he put me through drills. Once class ended, I

spotted Lacy fighting, and waited for her to get done. Once she finished, I smiled and waved her over to me.

I told her, “Haley asked me to ask you about training on Thursdays with us. She wants us to start working together as a team.” I heard Alex groan. Lacy’s jaw dropped, “EXCUSE ME?! Haley, the Hackura and fairy princess, Alpha Eric’s mate, and Luna, wants to TRAIN ME?”

Lacy started jumping up and down. I laughed, “Yes, and since you appear to be having an extreme reaction to that piece of information, brace yourself. Astrid and Miley will be fighting with her to train us.” Lacy stopped then screamed, “THE FUTURE QUEEN OF THE HACKURA?! You’re messing with me, right?”

I noticed several warriors and Alex had stopped and were staring at us. I told her, “I’m not messing with you. Haley thinks as the Luna and Beta females we need to learn each other’s fighting styles. She says we need to fight seamlessly side by side.” Lacy yelled, “YES! YES! YES! I AM SO IN!” She gave me a hug, “I love that you are my brothers mate!” She ran off screaming for Dylan, “DYLAN FROST WAKE UP! THIS IS GOING TO BE SUCH A GOOD DAY!”

I laughed and popped to Lucas. He was already up, “Dylan is... conflicted over Lacy training with you on Thursdays.” I frowned, “Sorry. Haley told me to ask her, and Lacy got really excited.” Lucas looked at me with worried eyes, “Astrid is joining your training?” I nodded.

Lucas said, “She’s just as fierce of a fighter as Bjourn, and she’s his mate.” I nodded, “I’ve heard those rumors about her skills too. It’s good practice for us, and Haley pointed out Lacy and I need to be a team. Just like you and Dylan are.”

Lucas closed his eyes, “I REALLY hate that Haley makes such damn good points.” I kissed him, “It will be fine. They wouldn’t seriously hurt us, and we clearly need to be more prepared.” Lucas groaned, “Don’t you start making valid points too.” I laughed, “When did I make a bad point?” Lucas said, “When you wanted to take Alpha Hammond on alone because Haley would.”

I disagreed, “That wasn’t a bad point, as much as it was a bad idea.” Lucas said, “To each their own. Get yourself into the shower.” I popped us both there, snapped us naked, and then tried to snap the shower on. Lucas and I both gasped when I did it. I screamed as the cold water hit me. Lucas laughed, “Next time, go for warm water.” I stepped out of the stream, shivering.

Lucas turned the shower nozzle to warm. We gave it a second and I stepped back under, still shaking. Lucas whispered in my ear, “Let’s get you warmed up, baby girl.” I shivered, this time in anticipation, as Lucas kissed me. I felt his finger on my clit for a moment before he entered me. I gasped at the suddenness of his moves.

I traced my hands over his body. I grabbed his dick and moved my hand in rhythm with his own. I sped up with his hand, he gritted his teeth, “FUCK! I’m close.” I managed, “Me too.” We screamed each other’s names moments later, breathing heavily.

We completed our tradition of washing each other before we hopped out. I snapped both of us into clothes and popped us down for breakfast. Gemma startled, “I’m still not used to that. Good morning Lucas, Luna.” I frowned, “I told you to call me Emmaline.” Gemma smiled, “Of course, Emmaline.”

Lucas kissed me on the forehead as Dylan and Lacy walked in. Dylan looked like he’d eaten something sour. I asked, “Are you alright there, Dylan?” He glared at me, “I’m peachy. Perfect even. What could possibly be wrong? Could it be that the fairy’s want the Duchess and Queen of the Hackura to fight my mate? Why would that be a problem? It’s hanging out with King Alpha Prick. He’s trying to RUIN my fun sized fairy for me. I SHANT ALLOW IT!”

I laughed, “I don’t know why that would be a problem. Lacy will receive excellent training from the literal best fighters besides the King and Prince’s of the Hackura. Isn’t that what you would call a good thing?” Dylan kept glaring at Lacy.

She snorted, “I love you, Emmaline.” Dylan complained, “I hate fairy’s and their logic.” I smirked, “You love the fairy show, Dylan.” Dylan said, “Most of the time. Lacy doesn’t get hurt, alright?” I stuck out my tongue, “I’ll have her back.” Lacy smirked, “As I’ll have yours. Let’s get going and hope the sour patch kid can get into a better mood before we get home.” Dylan grumbled some more as we grabbed something to eat on the road and left.

I commented, “I’ve never seen him in such a bad mood.” Lacy said, “He’s pouting. He will get over it.” I wasn’t so sure that he would. Lacy continued, “He expects me to accept that he will fight, but he can’t accept that I want to fight too. I was raised in a pack, and you weren’t. Changes are coming and male wolves need to get on board.” I laughed, “They could be just a little less sexist.”

I drove myself, Lacy, Valerie, Ry, and Brad to school. When we got there, I handed Ry the keys. He gave me a quick hug, “We are having a sibling meeting after you get home.” I was confused but shrugged, “Alright.”

I walked into school and was immediately mobbed by Sam and Chelsea, who pulled me into their hugs. Sam was crying, “This is my fault. I left you a note asking to meet me, and then you just blindly went to meet Lucas.” I pointed out, “It was Lucas’ handwriting. I would’ve gone to meet him even if you hadn’t slipped me a note to meet you earlier.”

Sam tried to brush off the tears from her face. Drake gave me a grateful smile. I continued, “There was nothing abnormal about the situation, and nothing anyone could have done. Besides, you sent your mate to help find me, you did everything you could to help me. You too, Chelsea.” Both had tears in their eyes, but their souls accepted my explanation, their guilt began to ease.

Drake walked me to class, “You may not be an empath, but that soul seeker thing is a bigger deal than I thought.” I shrugged, “Haley says I can sense people’s emotions from their soul. She says I’ll know when people are lying, which I’m getting the hang of. I can’t make them tell the truth like she can, but I’ll know if they are being honest. I can sense

their feelings. Sam and Chelsea both felt guilty, but they realized what I said was true. Their guilt was receding when we left them.”

Drake said, “I did not know you could do that. It makes sense though. When Peter and I followed you to ask about Ryan that day, you sensed we were worried. I thought you just figured it out.” I shook my head, “I was starting to work on understanding my power. Haley sent me a text of how to work on it.” Drake just nodded.

The rest of the day flew by. Chelsea and I stayed an hour past the last period bell catching up on everything I’d missed. We did a few labs together and turned our work into the teacher. Peter was waiting outside the classroom, and he texted someone. When we got outside Drake pulled into the parking lot with Sam. Ry, Valerie, and Lacy pulled in behind them.

I realized Brad was missing so I turned around and found him, two steps behind me. I rolled my eyes, “You don’t have to walk behind me, Brad. Lucas told me you’d be closer than normal.” Brad said, “If that’s what you’d prefer.” I amended, “Well, not in the hallways because there are lots of people, but everywhere else I’d prefer you beside me.” Brad nodded, “Alright.” Brad and I jumped in our SUV while Peter and Drake swapped out driving.

Once we got home, I asked Ry, “Where’s the meeting?” Ry said, “We set up some chairs on the other side of the lake.” I nodded, “Ok, wait here. I’m going to say hi to Lucas. I’ll pop us over to the meeting afterwards.” Ry nodded his agreement.

I popped to Lucas. I blushed realizing he was on a call. I linked him, “Sorry.” He shrugged, “It’s not a big deal.” Out loud he said, “Eric, Emmaline just got home.” Eric said, “I figured since I heard the pop.” I winced, “I forgot to tell you Eric didn’t exactly know Haley came to help last night.” Lucas smirked, “Don’t worry. We found that out.” I asked, “He’s not too mad, is he?” Lucas said, “No, he wasn’t mad at me at all.” Dylan muted the phone.

Lucas asked, “How was your day?” I smiled, “It was pretty good. Uneventful, but I feel after yesterday I was due.” Lucas

laughed, “If you could keep having uneventful days, I would be grateful.” Dylan shrieked, “You would be grateful? I am underappreciated and forgotten!” I sighed, “Well, I have to go have a chat with my siblings about something.”

Lucas asked, “You really don’t know what it’s about?” I said, “Well, I have a few things to say. I don’t exactly know what they want to talk about, but I assume it has to do with yesterday.” Lucas nodded, “What do you have to say?” I sighed, “I’m going to tell Dusty to get over the fact that you and I are in a relationship.” Dylan spit out his water.

I frowned, “What?” Dylan said, “Just like that. You’re going to tell him to get over it just like that? Using those exact words?” I nodded, “Yes, just like that. He can accept it, or he can stick it where the sun doesn’t shine.” Dylan smirked, “And my regularly scheduled fairy show is back on track. There was a minor disruption this morning, but my normal show has returned.”

Lucas rolled his eyes, and I gave him a kiss. I pulled back, “See you later.” Lucas pulled me back against him, deepening our kiss. When he pulled back he said, “You’d better walk away, baby girl. Don’t pop or I’ll chase you.” I smirked before walking to the door.

Once outside I popped to Ry. I grabbed his hand and popped us to Dusty and Katie. Ry sat down immediately, and I wondered if since he had fairy blood popping wasn’t hard on him. Dusty gestured to a chair for me to sit in.

Katie said, “Do your unheard chant, Evie.” I laughed, “You can do it, Katie Cat.” Katie smiled and spoke the words. I nodded to her, and she smiled. Dusty chimed in, “We want to come up with a code word.” I raised an eyebrow questioning, “A code word for what?” Ry explained, “Lacy and Lucas have a code word. When they use it, the other does what the other one says. No questions asked.”

Katie and I had one, but the group as a whole didn’t. I frowned, “I’m fine with a code word with some ground rules.” Dusty’s eyes narrowed, “What ground rules?” I said, “You can’t use the code word just to keep Katie or I out of what you

feel is a dangerous situation.” Ry stood, “We needed one yesterday. It was not a good idea to try to take Alpha Hammond on alone.”

I nodded, “I agree. Using it yesterday is a perfect example of an acceptable use of the word. But you both have tried to exclude Katie, Aubree, and me already. With the same Alpha even. We can handle ourselves. If you want a code word, you have to trust us in certain circumstances.”

Katie smiled, “I agree.” I pointed out, “I’m not a little kid anymore.” Dusty said, “You’re our baby sister.” I said, “Yes, but I’m not naive, and you seem to be hell bent on remembering me as the little girl you knew. I’m not her anymore. I grew up. I’ve hidden from adults, run from them even. I kept my head down to survive. I’ve fought for my life, and I’ve killed others in that pursuit. You want a code word, then recognize that I am powerful too.” Dusty’s jaw ticked and he looked away.

Ry admitted, “We never wanted that for you, Evie.” I sighed, “Neither did I. Do you think I wanted to be away from any of you? I saved for months birthday presents for you guys some of those years. I didn’t buy new clothes from Walmart sometimes so I could purchase something. I always wanted you to know I cared.”

Dusty looked back, “I understand why you did it, but it didn’t feel that way. We were worried sick about you. We fell apart after seeing countless dead little girls looking for you. I know it’s not your fault, but it hurt getting cards and presents from you, because you still knew where we were. You were hiding from us too.” I replied, “I didn’t have a choice.”

Ry asked, “Were you ever in those places you sent presents from?” I nodded, “I was in Oregon when I sent Dusty’s. It’s when I found out about the bounty. I was more careful after that. I sent them from places I didn’t stay. Look, I know this situation wasn’t fair to any of us. I know you went through hell, and you saw mom and David fall apart. But I wasn’t exactly living the cushy, picnic life over here.”

I pinned my brother with a look, “Dusty, you have to stop this. You can’t be ok with Lucas and I one second, and ready to kill him the next. I love him, he’s my mate. Accept it so we can all move on.”

Dusty looked pained, “You’re my little sister.” I glared at him, “So is Katie, and you have NO problem with Logan whatsoever.” Dusty looked at me, “It’s different.” I stood, “Why? Because she’s older than me?”

Dusty stood up too, “Katie has always been more independent than you, Evie. You are all of our baby sister. You’re just a kid, and we just got you back. Now you’ve got your mate.” I stared at him, “You got me back because of my mate. Even before he knew my story, he offered to reach out to you guys quietly. He wanted us to all get in touch because he knew how you felt. Lacy was running from him, and he was always your advocate.” They all made a face like they knew something I didn’t.

Dusty asked, “Then why? Why didn’t you want Ryan to know how Valerie found him?” I looked at him like he had two heads, “Are you kidding? Your dad wants to KILL me. I didn’t know what your relationship was with him now! I had just found Lucas. I finally felt like I belonged somewhere again. I can’t lose him, he’s my home. You and I both know David would hurt him to hurt me. Or he’d try. I saw David at his worst.” I stopped talking.

Ry asked, “What do you mean?” Katie stood, “FINALLY! Tell us what happened that day dad took you out when you were ten. You didn’t talk to him for two months after that day. You were constantly skittish around him. What happened?” I looked away.

Ry encouraged, “Evie, please let’s not do this. I want no more secrets, not with us.” I sighed and put my head in my hands, “He killed four people.” Dusty asked, “The Malvern meeting? Dad killed those coven members?” I knew I had tears streaming down my face.

I whispered, “Yes, he told me to stay in the car but he’d been in there so long I snuck in. David was arguing with their

leader about something. He killed the leader, his wife, and their children. He appointed a new leader who agreed to David's terms. I don't know what else happened. I ran back to the car. The little boy's screams still haunt me. He was so little."

Dusty hissed, "Five. He was five and their nephew. Motherfucker!" He stood and paced, "He's a monster." Katie pulled me into a hug, "I'm sorry you saw that." I admitted, "David confronted me after I stopped speaking to him. I begged him not to kill me like he'd killed that little boy. He was surprised and chanted something. Then I wasn't afraid anymore, and my memory was fuzzy. I couldn't remember what really happened that day, until..."

Ry said, "Until you left the state. OF COURSE, dad didn't totally repress the memory. He didn't think you'd ever be leaving California for good." I shrugged. Ry and Dusty appeared to have a silent conversation.

Ryan grunted, "We can't do anything. If we did, dad would know you'd told us. He'd start to grow suspicious, and he could find you." Dusty glanced at me, "And you're not ready for that yet. Are you?" I shook my head. Dusty let a big breath go, "One day, we will right that wrong." I got us back on track, "This situation doesn't deflect from you being a jerk about me and Lucas. Stop being so mean to him."

Dusty said, "I'm not mean to him." I disagreed, "Sometimes you are. Like when we came home after my concupiscence. You were ready to rip him to shreds because you thought I was pregnant. You were excited for Katie though. Do you even realize how hurtful that is?" Dusty sounded sad, "Evie, you're sixteen... I mean seventeen. You're a little young to have a baby."

I angrily spat out, "That's not your choice! My body, my decision. I'll even take it a step farther and say no uterus, no opinion. If Katie wants to talk to me about that, then fine. She can at least be respectful of how I feel. You haven't even asked me what I want. You don't care if I'm happy or disappointed I'm not pregnant. You just care about YOUR feelings about MY life."

Ry's eyes were misting over. Dusty disagreed, "That's not true. I just want what's best for you." I glared at him, "According to who? You? Lucas is what's best for me. Get used to it." Dusty clenched his fist, "I'm trying, but it's hard."

I cried, "Why? Why is it hard? I gave Ry his wick even though it terrified me that your dad could find me; I wanted Ry to be happy. I brought Katie to Logan because I wanted her to be happy. I've accepted Aubree, and I'm trying to be closer to her for you. Why can't you just stop acting like such a jerk to Lucas sometimes?"

Dusty yelled, "Because I'm your big brother!" I turned to Katie, "Were you aware Dusty wasn't your big brother?" Katie bit her lip, but a chuckle escaped her. I saw Logan appear at the tree line with a grim expression.

Dusty waved his hands, "That's different. Katie is older." I said, "Katie didn't live on her own, forced to run from those she loved most. Katie wasn't abandoned by our mother, and the man she thought was her father that raised her. Katie didn't find a way to survive with little to no money. Katie didn't shuffle from state to state, glancing over her shoulder at every shadow. Katie didn't kill five rogue werewolves on her own using powers she didn't know she had. Logan didn't have to hunt Katie down to keep her safe."

Dusty's face was going through conflicting emotions. I pressed on, "Lucas found me, and I didn't make it easy. He could've given up, but he didn't. I know when I'm being followed. From the moment we met, he had me shadowed. He refused to let me leave his home to go back to the woods. He brought me to his home, made his Luna, and showed me love. He's a good man, Dustin."

Dusty glanced up quickly, "You never call me Dustin." I rolled my eyes, "It's your name. Accept that Lucas and I are a package deal. I just got you all back, and you're hurting my feelings. It's killing me. I'm getting married on Christmas Eve."

Dusty's jaw tensed, "I know." I snapped, "THAT! That right there, you stop that!" Dusty said, "I can't help it! You're

my little sister.” I snarked, “So you’d prefer I just keep having sex with him, and not marry him. Maybe pop out a kid or two first?”

Dusty admitted, “I’d rather you waited until you were out of high school to have a kid.” I said, “Yet again it’s about you, and what you’d prefer.” Dusty hissed, “You asked me!” I gritted my teeth, “He’s my mate. If I want to have kids with him, I will. Not that it’s your business, but I’m on birth control. I want to be married before we have kids. I couldn’t control anything in my life for over three years. I need something to be in my control. My life has been flipped upside down for years.”

I started to cry, “I found out David wasn’t my dad, and mom chose to stay with him instead of protect me. I found out David wanted me dead. I killed a rogue by turning him to water. I knew I was a fairy, but after that I was terrified if I touched someone I would accidentally turn them to water. Lucas is my calm in the storm that has been my life. You guys had each other to lean on. I was alone, until Lucas. I missed you guys as if a piece of my soul had been ripped away. Lucas started putting me back together.”

I wiped my tears “We can have a freaking code word when you guys come to terms with that. I won’t let you have some word to manipulate me, or hide me because you are testosterone filled, masochistic hypocrites. Lucas doesn’t keep Lacy out of fights. I’m sure if he’d talked to her before she called me, he’d have used it to get her home. In a fight though, he has faith in her. Let me know when you can accept that.” I conjured my phone to me and popped away.

I didn’t even think about it. I gasped as I realized I was at the healing waters in Faerie. I tried to pop back out, but it didn’t work. I yelled, “CRAP!” I called Haley. She answered, “Emmaline?” I heard pops and gulped. I whispered, “Haley, I accidentally popped to the healing waters in Faerie. A lot of fairy’s just popped to me.” Haley instantly replied, “I’m coming.”

I heard a pop. Then Eric asked, “Haley, what the...” He finished his sentence in Faerie, “Hell?” He whirled around,

growling, shifting into his wolf in seconds. Haley spoke to the fairies, “Leave, NOW!” One fairy said, “She came here on her own. She couldn’t leave because she was upset. If the wolf upsets her, we should get to play with her.”

Eric’s wolf’s roar shook the trees. Haley put her hand on Eric. She stood and started speaking Fealish. Lucas linked me, “Baby girl, where did you go? Gunner can’t get a location.” I winced, “I didn’t mean to.” Lucas asked, “Didn’t mean to what?” I evaded, “I’ll be back soon.”

Haley flung her hands, and fifteen fairies flew at least twenty feet away from us. Haley grabbed me and Eric’s wolf. She popped us to Lucas’ office. Lucas was on his feet. He asked, “Thor? What happened?” I nearly laughed. Eric’s wolf’s name was Thor. Because... of course it was.

Eric shifted back and Haley snapped him some clothes. She didn’t speak. Eventually Eric said, “I don’t know what the hell just happened. Haley popped to me in the middle of the meeting and popped us to Faerie, where fifteen fairies were advancing on Emmaline. I shifted to protect them, and after some fairy exchange Haley popped us here.”

Lucas’ eyes went wide, “Why would you pop to Faerie, Emmaline?” I said, “I didn’t mean to. I just wanted to be far away from Dusty.” Lucas sighed, “Dustin is a wreck. You should go talk to him.” I locked my jaw, “No.”

Lucas was surprised, whereas Logan evaluated me. He put out his hand. I instantly knew what he wanted, finally noticing the man next to him. He was handsome with dark hair and light facial hair. This must be Gunner. I sighed and took off my engagement ring and handed it to Logan.

Haley asked, “You agreed to let Harper’s boytoy lover put a GPS in your ring?” Gunner sighed, “For the millionth time, my name is Gunner.” Haley said, “For the zillionth time your name is Harper’s boytoy lover and you love it.” He rolled his eyes at her, but when he turned, I saw his smirk. I searched his soul and discovered she was right; he liked her nickname.

I spoke, “Logan tricked me into it.” Logan snorted, “I did no such thing. She agreed to let Gunner put a GPS in her ring

so long as you agreed to have it done to yours sister. You had already agreed.” I asked, “Why is that Haley?”

Haley sighed, “Our children can pop. It eased the minds of Eric and my brothers after Arion attacked and they were gone. Eric can say what he wants, it was about being taken by Arion and given to Damon. They all know I can handle myself, but for now this helps them all breathe easier. I don’t actually try to make the lives of anyone I love difficult.”

Eric snorted then teased, “Fairy’s love drama.” Haley raised an eyebrow, “It’s not my fault drama finds me. It’s clear that I don’t love drama, it loves me.” I laughed as Gunner handed my ring back. He told me, “We are all good to go. Don’t worry, just like with Haley I won’t keep track of where you are constantly. I would only check her location if she was missing. She’s just missing... a lot.”

Haley stuck her tongue out him. I took a deep breath, “I suppose that’s something. At least you’re not going to ping my location every hour.” Gunner laughed, “I do have other things to do.” Haley nudged him, “Yeah, like my brother and Cali.” Gunner teased, “That is at the top of my list, Hales.” Haley said, “I know. Emmaline and I will be right back.”

Both Eric and Lucas started to tell her no, but she’d popped anyway. We were in the same field Lucas claimed me in after my Luna ceremony. Haley asked me, “What happened?” I cried and explained everything to her.

Haley sighed, “Ok, then. When popping, always have a destination in mind. Somewhere in this realm. Fairy’s will always take advantage of a situation. I’m glad you called me though. Don’t be afraid to hit them with some snowballs or hail next time. Try to talk to Dustin tomorrow.”

I snorted, “I thought you’d be thrilled if I didn’t want to talk to him.” Haley frowned, “No, I would never want that because you truly don’t want that. I don’t trust your brothers, but that’s my issue. You love Dustin. I know the bond that’s possible between you and your brothers because of the ones I share with mine. You always had that with Ryan and Dustin. You grew up with them, and they treated you how brothers

should. You had every right to say what you did. Dustin has every right to his feelings, but he needs to accept your life. He needs to remember you aren't his thirteen, well fourteen really, but he thought you were thirteen."

She paused for a minute then continued, "God that's fucking confusing. Let's say thirteen. You aren't thirteen anymore. I think you are frozen in his mind at that age, and he needs to let that go. You have to give him a chance though, and now he knows how you feel. He can talk it through with your other siblings and Aubree tonight. He deserves the chance to adjust. It would hurt you to cut him out, and I think you would miss him dearly." She was right.

She hugged me, "From what I've gathered, you two were very close before you had to leave. I think it's close to how I am with Marcus. I think Dustin would have been fine with you and Lucas finding each other if you'd never left home. I think he's struggling because he feels like he didn't protect you. He feels like he failed, and for dominant males that's hard to grasp. That doesn't mean he gets to dominate your life though. I seriously doubt it will take longer than until tomorrow for him to seek you out and apologize. If I have overestimated him, then I'll kick his ass until he sees reason." I laughed. That sounded more like her.

Lucas linked me, "Can you and Haley come back now?" I laughed and wiped my tears, "Lucas wants us back." Haley rolled her eyes, "Worrying Walters, the both of them. They aren't even very far from us." I questioned, "What?" Haley smirked, "I can feel Eric with our Hackura bond, and I can feel Logan too. If Eric is close, then so is Lucas. We can freak them out."

I asked, "How?" Haley smiled mischievously, "We are going to pop to them. It's what they want after all." She grabbed my hand and we popped into a tree above Eric, Logan, and Lucas. Haley put a finger to her mouth, and we listened.

Lucas asked, "Are you sure they are in that field?" Eric raised an eyebrow. Logan groaned, "For the love of god, yes. Do you want me to have Gunner ping Emmaline's ring? Will

that make you stop? We are close to them, they are fine. If I had any doubt, I'd go in there with my swords drawn."

I bit my lip while Haley rolled her eyes. Lucas paced, "I don't want her fighting with her siblings over me. They are important to her." Eric pointed out, "That should be singular, sibling. Just the one." Lucas sighed, "She loves Dustin."

Logan commented, "Dustin needed a wakeup call, even Ryan and Katie agreed. He's not going to walk away from Emmaline. He will think it over and apologize. He already apologized to you. He was a nervous wreck wondering where she'd popped off to."

I felt a little bad about that. Haley sent me an 'I told you so' look. Maybe they were right. I could talk to Dusty after fairy lessons tomorrow night. Eric said, "I've never seen a man more upset about someone calling them by their given name." Logan snorted.

Lucas said, "She always calls him Dusty. She had to be pissed to say his actual name." Haley shook with silent laughter. She grabbed my hand once Lucas and Eric were side by side. She started doing charades. I finally caught on that she wanted us to jump onto Lucas and Eric's back, like we were doing a piggyback ride. This would be fun.

Logan must have felt his connection with Haley. He looked at Eric and Lucas to see if they were watching him. Realizing they weren't, he looked up into the tree that Haley and I were in. Haley waved and he shook his head, smiling at her.

She counted to three with her hands and we both jumped onto our mates back. Both their wolves took over. Haley laughed. "I feel like I'm riding a spritle! Don't you, Emmaline?" We both hung on. I laughed, "What the heck is a spritle? In this realm, I think you mean we rode a bull. We are bull riders."

Haley explained, "A spritle is an untamed animal in Faerie. As kids, fairy's go with their friends to try to find one and ride it. What's a bull rider?" Eric said, "Not what you did. You'd have had to hang on for eight seconds." Haley smirked, "I bet I could." Eric chuckled, "Of that I have no doubt."

Lucas pulled me from his back to his front. He asked, "Are you ok?" I nodded, "I will be." Logan said, "Hales, pop us all back to the house, so I can get Katie home please." Haley sighed, "You all worry too much. It's going to give you grey hair according to Google. Possibly even make your life spans shorter." Logan chided, "And yet we are all in perfect health. Try a different argument."

Haley snorted, "Why waste my breath?" Logan smirked, "You're beginning to understand." Haley said, "I understand. I'm just saying you all need to calm down. Just because we have vaginas doesn't mean we can't handle our own shit." Logan rolled his eyes, "Just because you can handle it doesn't mean we don't have to worry."

Lucas said, "Don't pop us back, we can walk." I nodded. Haley popped away with Eric and Logan. I apologized, "I'm so sorry. I didn't mean to pop to Faerie, I was just so upset with Dusty." Lucas smiled, "So he's already Dusty again." I shrugged, "He's always Dusty."

Lucas rubbed my back, "He apologized to me already. It was an apology I didn't need." I disagreed, "We both do." Lucas said, "No, he's being a big brother. He's annoying on occasion, but he's tried to help in every way he can to keep you safe." I sighed, "Don't be on his side about disrespecting our relationship."

Lucas kissed me, "I'm not on his side. I'm proud of you for standing up for us. I just get where he's coming from. If Lacy had been mated to someone outside my pack, I really don't know how I would've reacted. Especially, when I just got her back. I empathize with him, but I understand he needs to respect our lives."

I pushed back from Lucas, "He doesn't get a say in when we have children, or when we get married. He can be happy for me like he is for Katie, or he can be silent. It's not fair." Lucas sighed, "None of what's happened between you and your siblings is fair." I counted to ten in my head, "Stop being on his side." Lucas frowned, "I'm not on his side. I'm just presenting his case to you."

I pointed out, “I wasn’t unreasonable. I’ve given him plenty of passes. He wants some code word to control me because you and Lacy have one.” Lucas’ eyebrows raised, “The code word Lacy and I have isn’t about control.” I somewhat agreed, “For you two, yes. My brothers would use it to keep me out of any situation they deem dangerous. They see me as a child, and I’m not.”

Lucas sighed, “I don’t want you to fight with your brother because of me.” I was getting angry, “To flipping bad, Lucas Lyons! You are my everything, and Dusty needs to accept that. Katie does. Even Ry came around pretty quickly. Dusty is the one who has hang ups.” Lucas said, “I know that. I just see both sides of this.” I stopped by the lake and glared at him.

Lacy and Dylan walked up. Dylan skipped over when he saw us, “Hey guys...” Dylan trailed off looking from Lucas to me. Lacy asked, “Uhhh... what happened?” I turned to Lacy and grabbed her hand, “My mate thinks my brother is right. I defend our relationship to my brother, and then Lucas turned around and defends my brother to me.”

I turned and shot him a look, “It’s good to know that when push comes to shove, I’ll be standing up for our relationship alone. Lacy and I are going to have some girl time. Have fun with Dylan, you prick.” I popped Lacy and I back to the field Haley and I had been in.

I paced for several minutes Lacy commented, “That’s going to upset Lucas.” I turned, “Lucas can shove it, and go commiserate with my brother. I defended him, and he didn’t even say thanks for defending our relationship. CRAP!”

I took out my phone and called Haley. She answered with a laugh, “Go for fairy godmother.” I said, “I need you to do your treehouse thing for me. I’m where we had our chat.” Haley squealed, “I’ll be right back, husband of mine.” Eric growled.

He must have taken out his phone because I heard him growl Lucas’ name before Haley popped back to me. She looked at me, “I sense we don’t have the time to teach you this. What do you want your treehouse to look like?” I took

out my phone and showed her the picture I'd looked at in school.

She held out her hands, and in minutes she had brought the picture to life. She grabbed my hand and Lacy's, then popped us into the treehouse. Lacey and I gaped. I told her, "You are good." Haley smiled, "Damn it... I forgot to say Bibbidi Bobbidi boo. One of these days I'll time that right. Are you ok?"

I sighed, "Lucas was a jerk." Haley frowned, "If only we got a notification when it was going to be asshole week in this realm. It seems to come around more often than once a year. Apparently, it's an every few months thing. I'm not mentally prepared for that. We will have to take a vacation to the Hackura realm now that we seem to have the schedule down." Lacy snorted.

I looked outside to see Lucas and Dylan staring up into the tree. I asked, "Can they not see us? Because they aren't looking where we are." Haley laughed, "You did not promise to include any of my brothers in a treehouse for you, and neither did I. They can't see us."

I bit my lip, "Who can find my treehouse?" Haley said, "Me, you, Katie, and Lacy." I laughed. Lacy laughed, "That's it?" Haley nodded, "Until Emmaline brings them inside, they can't hear or find us." Lacy said, "Damn, fairy's just go to a whole other level of needing space. That's not fair. We all need that, and fairies can actually get it done. You guys need to resource that service out. You'd made a lot of money with mated couples."

Haley glanced sharply at Lacy, "What do you mean?" Lacy laughed, "Anyone with a supernatural mate who can easily find them, would LOVE a space where no one can find them. Their mates wouldn't like it until there was a threat and they could just go to a treehouse where no one can find them." Haley considered it, "I'll speak to Aiden about that. I don't know if he would do it, but it could help with everyone hating full blooded fairies."

I commented, “I’m surprised you care about that.” Haley shrugged, “I don’t. I care about Aiden. He wants to harbor better relationships with other supernatural groups. Do you need anything else?” I groaned, “Advice?”

Haley sat down and gestured for me to go on. I gasped, “Oh gosh, I’m keeping you from your kids.” Haley disagreed, “They are down for the night. What do you need?” I complained, “Why wasn’t Lucas on my side?”

Haley rolled her eyes, “Because men like to fix things.” Both Lacy and I looked at each other. Lacy shrugged. I asked, “What?” Haley said, “Men have this innate need to fix things. You were upset, and Lucas didn’t like that. You wanted to talk about the problem and have him say you were right. Which, in case anyone is wondering, you are. Lucas heard a problem, and he wanted to fix it. You have to tell them you just need them to listen. Eric still doesn’t totally get it, but he’s getting better. In general, men just try to fix things. Astrid has many years of practice at this. She helped me with my relationship guidebook. I could give you a copy. When I make additions they are updated via charm.”

I groaned, “I don’t need him to fix it.” Haley smiled, “I know.” Lacy interjected, “I so want the relationship guidebook.” I laughed, “Me too.” Haley nodded and conjured a book for each of us. She said, “Just keep them hidden. We can’t have our significant others finding out about this book.” Lacy opened hers and started snickering. This was going to be good.

I turned my head realizing Lucas and Dylan were yelling at someone on the phone. I asked, “Do you know who they are talking to?” Haley shrugged, “He was talking to Eric when I left. Hold on.” Haley laughed, “They are talking to Eric.”

I asked, “Why is that funny?” Haley said, “They are mad I didn’t include them in the privacy spell. Well, they is a strong word.” Lacy corrected, “Lucas is mad.” Haley shrugged, “I told Eric I didn’t include him in mine at first, and no one said to include anyone in Emmaline’s treehouse.” Now I was laughing.

Haley conjured us ice cream. We sat and talked and laughed for a few hours. I asked, "Why doesn't Logan want to double date with Lucas and me in this realm?" Haley winced, "Because Claudzilla tried to kill Torvi when Marcus brought her here for a date."

Lacy and I looked at each other shock. When I recovered, I said, "I'm going to pop Lacy to her room, and then go to mine." Haley looked outside, "Your mates are still down there." Lacy crossed her arms, "Serves them right." I laughed, "Dylan didn't do anything." Lacy said, "Dylan is always on Lucas' side. Besides, he's been linking me begging me to let them in." I laughed.

Haley gave me a hug. I told her, "Thanks for including Katie." She smiled and winked at me, "It's something you would've done if you'd done this on your own." I nodded, "Sharon wants in on our next badass girl gang day." Haley laughed, "Who doesn't? It's quite popular. Marissa Kyle asked me to plan one for her friends..." She trailed off. She was worried about something. She waved her hand, "If you want Sharon there, she can come. She was invited in the first place." I nodded, "I'll tell Garrett. Thanks, Haley." With that she popped away.

I grabbed Lacy and popped her to her room. She winked at me, "Can you snap me into one of my outfits from the fashion show?" I nodded and snapped. She told me, "I'm linking Dylan." She wiggled her eyebrows.

I laughed and popped to my room. I turned on the tub and poured some bubble bath into it. I had just stepped in when the door to our room bang open. Somehow, I didn't think the locked bathroom door was going to stop Lucas.

Lucas spoke after trying to turn the knob, "You have two seconds to open this door." I rolled my eyes, "I'm in the tub." He broke the door down. I gaped at him, "What did you do that for?" Lucas' eyes were pitch black, "NEVER do that again." He wasn't asking, he was demanding.

I raised an eyebrow, "I'm going to need you to be more specific." Lucas said, "You walked away in the middle of a

conversation and sat in some treehouse I couldn't get in; FOR HOURS!" I shrugged, "Don't be a jerk, and I won't do that." Lucas growled.

I said, "I suppose that's not fair to you, Dominic. You didn't do anything, Lucas did. So, I'm sorry you were worried because Lucas was a jerk. Next time, maybe you should come forward and we can talk instead." That stopped Dominic for several moments.

I snapped and fixed the door to the bathroom. Dominic got in the bathtub fully dressed. I laughed, squealing, "Dominic! What are you doing?" He leaned over and kissed me, "I was worried." I sighed, "You knew I was fine. I even took Lacy with me."

Dominic admitted, "Monday is still weighing on me. Lucas doesn't agree with Dustin, he just understands him." I shrugged, "You guys are supposed to be on my side. I don't need you to fix my problems. I need you to have my back."

Lucas took back over, "I have your back! I was offering his side so you could see where he was coming from." I said, "I didn't need his side. I needed you to comfort me and tell me it would be ok. You wanted to fix it without giving me any time to get over the fact that he hurt me. I defended us to my brother. You could've at least pretended to be on my side for that fact alone."

Lucas took a deep breath, "I am glad you defended us. Dustin needed a come to Jesus meeting. I had planned to speak to him. I just didn't want you to fight with him after you only just got him back." I shrugged, "You can't protect me from life, and you wouldn't want me to get involved in something that was between you and Lacy."

Lucas said, "Alright fine. Just please don't do that because you're upset." I asked teasingly, "Do what?" Lucas said, "Run and lock me out." I countered, "It's a habit to lock the bathroom door." Lucas said, "Of our mind link. Don't lock me out of mind link."

I gaped at him, "What?" Lucas nodded, "There was a block I couldn't get through to talk to you." I looked away from him,

“I’m sorry. I didn’t know I could do that, but I’ll talk to Haley about how to control it. I didn’t mean to shut you out like that.”

Lucas let that go, “I want you to show me the treehouse.” I nodded, “I will.” Mentally, I added eventually. He nodded and we got out. I snapped him a dry outfit and we climbed into bed holding each other.

Learning

Lucas woke up with Dylan yelling in his head, “HOW are you still sleeping?! Wake up because the sky is FALLING. You tell your sister she can’t train with Emmaline and the future queen of the Hackura! You tell her that right now, or I’ll take a file you need and file it away where you will NEVER find it. I’ll laugh as you try in vain. You mark my words, I’ll do it.!”

I winced, “What is happening right now?” Dylan snarled, “Your mate, King Alpha Prick’s, and mine want to train together so they can fight better together. That has credence, but Haley is bringing Miley AND ASTRID. As in the creepy crown prince ninja assassin’s MATE, and another to be determined ninja is coming too. TO BE DETERMINED. I think NOT. Do you know how they train? No? Me either. What does Dylan know? Dylan knows they are SILENT NINJA ASSASSINS! Lacy could get hurt.”

I sighed, “I’m guessing Lacy already agreed.” Dylan replied, “She was shouting all the way from the gym. The future ninja queen! Lacy will get hurt. Does she care? NO! We NEED to call King Alpha Prick. He will pay... OHH the King Alpha Prick WILL PAY! He can talk Haley out of it, right? You and he used to make the beast with two backs together. I’m going to need you to cash in that chip for your sister, who happens to be my mate. Future queen ninja is deadly. Haley is deadly enough, but Astrid is like one hundred levels above Haley in terms of fierceness. She’s full blooded Hackura and the daughter of the commander of their armies. Well former... but still! Haley has a fun fairy side. ASTRID HAS NO FUN FAIRY SIDE.”

I held my head and heard a pop. I linked Dylan, “Emmaline’s here. We will figure this out. Please just calm down. No more yelling unless we are being attacked.

Definitely not until I've had coffee. So much coffee." Dylan growled but said nothing else.

I explained to Emmaline that Dylan was not sold on the idea of Lacy training with their group. Hell, now that I was more awake, I was not so sure about Emmaline training with Astrid. Training with Haley was one thing. Emmaline is her cousin, and I am good friends with Eric. Haley would never take things too far. Miley and Astrid, especially Astrid, had no such qualms. Emmaline seemed just as excited as Lacy about the prospect of training with Astrid.

I tried to explain how Astrid was JUST as fierce as Bjourn. Astrid was the daughter of the Commander of the Hackura army. Once she found out she was Bjourn's mate, she trained harder than she had before, which is saying something for the commander's daughter. The rumor was she trained with Bjourn, Titus, and even Veronica to be as fierce as possible. Couldn't Torvi help out? Torvi had a soft side, not a large one it was larger than Astrid's. Or Calista. She was a teacher.

Eric was going to get an earful from me about his smart ass mate. Dominic said, "Stop thinking to yourself and focus on what mate is saying. You haven't even explained to her yet that it was at least twenty people she'd be taking on when she decided to take them on alone. You HAVE to tell her. You need to explain Hammond was coming prepared."

I rolled my eyes at him, "I will but not now." Now, there were shower plans. Dominic asked me, "How does someone who never gave a hand job until us, give the best hand jobs?" I replied, "She's just a natural. We are lucky bastards." Dominic chuffed in agreement. We enjoyed our time together.

Gemma was startled by our appearance in the kitchen. She linked me, "I guess I'll get used to you just appearing. It's startling to the senses." I smirked, "I can imagine that is it. With our sense and hearing we are used to hearing people in the pack come up to us." She nodded.

Dylan stormed in glaring at me. He linked me, "This is your fault." I raised an eyebrow, "How's that? You wanted more fairies to join the pack." Dylan snarled at me, "This is

not fairy fun. There is serious injury potential here.” I said, “You know Haley wouldn’t let that happen.” Dylan said, “If you’re going to make perfectly valid points when I am worried, I just don’t know what to say you to. As my bestie, I need you to get on my level. You’re all the way down there on ten and I’m up on ninety. Get to my level!”

I bit my lip. When the girls left, I asked Dylan, “So what did you say to Lacy this morning?” Dylan said, “I wasn’t in the right frame of mind. I was barely awake! That can’t be held against me. It’s like when your brain has no filter! My filter was still waking up! I had NO coffee. I was unprepared.” I repeated, “What did you say?”

Dylan sighed, “I might have said something along the lines of that’s crazy talk, who fights the crown prince ninja assassins mate? People who want to get messed up. You are not those people.” I snorted, “You are in so much trouble.” Dylan said, “Gee, thank you for pointing that out oh wise one.”

Our phone rang. I teased, “I’ll get it since your filter isn’t working.” Dylan growled, “My filter is fine now. I’ve had copious amounts of coffee. One should not be held responsible for the things they say right when they wake up. It’s sleepese, mumblese nonsensical garbage.”

I greeted, “Blue Moon Pack.” Eric replied, “Lucas.” I smiled, “Hey Eric. Thanks for sending us Haley to help out last night. Everything went smoothly.” Eric growled while Jackson laughed. Eric told me, “I didn’t send her, she sent herself.”

Dylan started smiling, “Maybe you aren’t awake. She basically told us she sent herself last night.” I asked, “She didn’t tell you?” Eric said, “She left a note after we put the triplets down.” Dylan started laughing.

I shot him a warning look, “I’m sorry, Eric. I didn’t know.” Eric replied, “I know. That’s beside the point, I have news.” A knock sounded on our door and Dylan said, “That’s our first meeting, it’s Al.” Eric said, “Call me later, Lucas.” I agreed, “I will.” I nodded to Dylan and hung up the phone. Dylan opened the door and Al came in.

Al was clearly nervous. I questioned, “Did you notice Alpha Hammond was having lunch daily in my territory? In YOUR diner?” Al’s jaw dropped, “What? No... I always work on the books for thirty minutes around lunch time. Then Liz takes her break, and we eat together.”

I asked, “Who’s on the floor when the school is at lunch?” Al paled and didn’t look up when he answered, “Liz is.” I requested, “Call her, please.” He called and she immediately answered, “Hey babe, are you already out of your meeting with Emmaline’s beau?” Al said, “No, baby. Do you know the customer who’s been coming in for lunch on the weekdays?”

I interjected, “He’s tall, has dark hair...” Dylan cut in, “Comes in a tinted SUV. Generally speaking, he exudes creepy dick energy.” I looked at him. He linked me, “What? He does.” I replied, “SUV?” He shrugged, “I mean that HAD to be him.”

Liz laughed, “Elias? Yeah, he hasn’t been there for a week now, but he was a regular for about two months. He’s definitely creepy, but I stayed far away from him. He’s got a powerful energy around him too. He actually seemed to be getting crazier eyes as time went on.”

I asked, “Who does he eat with?” Liz snorted, “Eat with? No, he orders to go. Always two orders. He always wants a burger and a ham and cheese sandwich. Odd combination if you ask me. Normally, I’d try to suggest something else, but I never wanted to be around him longer than to take his order.”

I internally groaned, “Did he ever mention anyone special to him? Anything more than just hey how are you?” Liz thought about it, “You know, one time he mentioned his soul mate. I didn’t get the impression she was still alive. He was pretty sad about it. He has some family here... Well, someone he considers family. His cousin married this girl, that means something to someone around here. Honestly, sometimes I act like I’m paying attention to get tips. That’s right before my break, and I get to eat with Al. This other girl, Wendy, comes on shift when I take my break.”

I told her, “This is great. Thank you, Liz.” I looked at Al, “I expect that had you known who was in my territory, you’d have told me.” Al nodded. I asked, “How did Frank not notice?” Al paled again, “When it’s not busy he steps out to smoke. If no one’s hassling the girls he’s not paying attention.”

I stood, “That brings me to another point, why didn’t you tell me how those truckers were behaving? I would’ve dealt with Ralph long before I saw him accost Emmaline if I knew he was harassing your waitresses.” Al hung his head, “I can protect my waitresses. He hadn’t done too much to warrant you getting involved.” I sighed, “He was planning on marking Emmaline forcefully.”

Al stood and slammed his hands on the table, “NO! I wouldn’t have let that happen. I can handle scum like Ralph. I always followed Emmaline to the border of Red Run when Ralph was in town. Frank followed Ralph to make sure he wasn’t following her. That NEVER would’ve happened. I would never let anyone hurt Emmaline. You have to believe me, Alpha. Even before I knew she was the Luna; I felt protective of her.”

I nodded, “Just keep a closer eye out, especially on Liz. Alpha Hammond is unstable, and she’s had encounters with him. I will assign a warrior to her until we have him in hand.” Al stood and offered his hand, “Thank you, Alpha. I can’t imagine anything happening to her.” I nodded, “We protect our own. When you get back will it impact you to cut Frank loose to come talk to me for a little bit?” Al said, “No, I’ll run the kitchen until he gets back. I’m sorry about this. You have to know we all love Emmaline.” I nodded my head, “She loves you guys too.”

Ryan and Dustin entered my office at Al left. Dustin said, “We are going to have a sibling meeting when Emmaline gets home from work.” I looked at Dylan then turned back, “Ok?” Dustin said, “We just wanted you to know.” I said, “Emmaline would’ve told me later.” Dustin shrugged, “She’s coming directly back with Ryan after school.”

Dylan laughed. I said, “If you think she’s not going to stop or pop to say hi to me... You don’t understand her that well.”

Dustin stiffened, “I understand my sister.” I raised an eyebrow, “Do you?” Dustin said, “Look, we don’t know if we like each other yet, and that’s fine. She’s still my sister.”

I said, “I know. I’m the one who offered to try to get you all in contact multiple times. I have been in your shoes Dustin. I truly I can’t imagine how I would’ve reacted if I got Lacy back only to find her mate was in a different pack.”

Dylan growled. I linked him, “Man you are serious Dylan’ing it up today. I’m just proving a point here.” Dylan growled, “Lacy is MINE!” I rolled my eyes. We really were possessive assholes. I tried to calm him down, “I know she’s yours.”

Out loud I said, “You are hurting Emmaline’s feelings. She’s a fairy. They are all about what’s fair, and to her the difference in your feelings towards Logan and me aren’t fair. You accept him, where you only tolerate me sometimes. I’m in Emmaline’s life to stay.” Dylan said, “Now, now, he’s a fairy too. Being fair should matter to him as well.”

Dustin threw his bag, “Her NAME IS EVELYN!” Ryan sighed, “I wish Aubree wasn’t working.” I replied, “Her legal name is Emmaline. She cringes and cowers in fear when anyone but you, Ryan, or Katie calls her Evelyn. Even when she says her birth name herself, it hurts her.”

Dustin ran a hand through his hair, “You’re just... she’s just a kid.” Dylan spoke with a hard voice, “She hasn’t been a kid in the eyes of the law for coming up on four years. You want to piss in someone’s coffee, let it be your fathers. This is his fault, not Lucas’. I am in a MOOD today. Don’t mess with me. Serious Dylan has decided this is a twenty-four deal fairy warlock man.”

Dustin said, “I know it’s not his fault. I just want her to be a kid and have fun.” I shrugged, “She has fun. The day she mailed the twins presents, she had so much fun with Haley. Blade, Haley’s Hackura guard, is evidently not a fan of the house of mirrors, but the girls had fun. Do you really think she was having fun before I met her?”

Dustin said, "If we'd found her first, she could have normal teenage years." I snorted, "Could she? Or would you have dragged her back to your house for David to kill without hearing her side? I had to slam your brother against a wall by his throat for him to hear me say there was more to the story. Haley made you swear as a fairy and in blood before you saw Emmaline for that very reason." Dylan linked, "Among others." True.

Dustin looked out the window, and I continued "You didn't find her first, and that's a bitter pill. Believe me I know, but I'm not the bad guy here." Ryan interjected, "You're not." Dustin said, "I don't think you're the bad guy. I think you're great with her. Is it so wrong that I wanted more time with her? I wanted to see who she'd grow up to be without this shit going on. I wanted her to go to college on a swimming scholarship. Hell, she could be an Olympian with her times she's that good. Now there's you. You are who I used to be, her savior. Where do we fit in her life now?"

Dylan asked, "Seriously? Dylan is here to help and point out the obvious. You fit as her brothers. She loves you both. Ryan's head isn't up his ass, so she gravitates more towards him. She's been using her soul seeking powers more. Your feelings probably hurt her feelings. No, actually I lied. It's not probably, you DID hurt her feelings."

I sighed, "She loves you. She kept that hoodie of yours with her, and that shirt of Ryan's that's in tatters. She told me about you both. She wore your hoodie when it was ninety degrees outside to feel closer to you. She used more money than she should've to get bleach and sat at a laundromat for HOURS to get the blood out of Ryan's t-shirt so she could keep it for comfort. You guys mean the world to her. Yes, I am in her life, but I'm not going anywhere. Ever. You've adapted fine to Logan, and he takes Katie between realms."

Ryan said, "Katie is an independent thing, and I'm her twin." Dustin agreed, "Emmaline always needed us when Katie didn't. We were her rocks in times of emotional turmoil. I can't believe I missed this ordeal with my dad. It never even occurred to me because I never considered he could do

something like this. My baby sister was homeless. Evie lost that wide eyed, childlike innocence because I was too selfish to use my brain.”

I disagreed, “You weren’t selfish, none of you were. How do you even suspect your own father of something like that?” Ryan snorted, “Because your father isn’t like ours. He’s always been off. It should’ve occurred to us.”

Dylan exclaimed, “For the love god. Serious Dylan is exhausted. Stop acting guilty and focus on the fact you have her back. With the frequency that girl turns to water, you NEED to get over this, or the waterworks that will follow will be epic. I’ll sue you both for emotional distress if I have to deal with it. I CANNOT stand Emmaline crying.”

Ryan laughed while Dustin nodded. He told me, “I’m trying. It’s just hard not to see her as my little Evie. I missed those years where she grew up.” I nodded, “I didn’t miss as many years with Lacy, but it’s weird that my little sister has a mate. I’m lucky because I love the guy, and he’s my Beta.”

Dylan interjected, “Aww shucks, Lucas. I’m feeling all twitterpated.” I rolled my eyes, “But one of the last times I saw Lacy was after her first shift. She left two weeks later, it’s strange in my mind, she’d just shifted. Now she’s mated to my best friend.”

Dustin nodded, “It felt like I was accepting things. Then when we found out Emmaline’s actually a year older, and we missed out on her firsts as a baby? It’s stupid, but we all were old enough to remember those firsts. I’m so fucking pissed at my mother for taking her from us. We could’ve all gone to Faerie, or she could’ve taken us on day trips. Evie’s dad could have brought us to see her, but she just took her from us. Twice.”

Ryan muttered, “Bitch.” Dylan said, “Normally, I’d throw in a respect your mother comment because mine raised me that way; however, your mom is a nasty piece of work. Mine is missing in action on a vacation that never ends. So, what do they know really?”

Dustin put his head into his hands, “Is it bad I’m hoping David has her bewitched in some way? I know the girls won’t understand based on Katie’s reaction in Faerie. I just... it will make me feel like she’s less of a monster. Not fully in control.” I said, “I’d hope for the same in your place. Never tell Haley that though.” Ryan snorted, “It would make SO MUCH sense if her mother and ours were related.”

I shrugged, “It’s not the case.” Ryan groaned, “We know. It would just make sense; they were cut from the same cloth.” I actually agreed with him there. They stayed for a while and after lunch since Al called letting me know he needed Frank to stay. They were slammed at the diner.

I looked up when Logan came through a portal with Katie and another man. Dylan linked me, “I’m not warm for the male form, but that’s a pretty dude. Seriously, are they all hot in that realm? They should stay there. I’m a catch here, but there I fear I’m a four. A four, Lucas. I’m a solid eight here. They must stay away.” I shook my head.

I greeted, “Prince Logan, Katie... who’s your friend?” Logan smiled, “This is Gunner.” Dylan said, “Ahh, the boytoy lover of Prince Harper.” Gunner smirked, “One in the same.” Dylan said, “Ah ha! I knew it. You like Haley’s nickname.” Gunner laughed, “Don’t tell her. It’s our thing that we argue about.” Dylan said, “She probably knows, but nary a word will cross these lips. That would ruin Haley’s fun. No one can ruin her fun, she’s the star of my favorite show.”

Logan raised an eyebrow, “Excuse me?” Dylan linked me, “ABORT! SAVE ME!” I teased, “At least you don’t look as scared as you sound.” Out loud Dylan said, “The fairy show. It’s entertaining. Your sister brought it into our lives. I’m moderately obsessed with it.”

I snorted, “Moderately, my ass.” Logan said, “Haley does dance to the beat of her own drum.” Katie laughed, “How come you guys get sayings right, but she has no clue? Ever.” Logan grimaced, “Because she wasn’t raised with us. We had to immerse ourselves into the human realm so we would blend when we came here. Fairies don’t feel the same need. Even if they did Fabian would’ve never let her come here. If he had,

someone would've seen her eventually that was a Hackura. We'd have taken her by force from the fairies if we'd had an inkling. Any of our people would've talked to her if they'd seen her, because they would've known who she is. Not that Fabian would've known who any of us were because he was just a sadistic asshole."

I cleared my throat asking, "Why is Gunner here?" Dylan said, "Point of reference here, Lucas his name is Prince Harper's boytoy lover. None of this Gunner nonsense." Gunner laughed, "I like this wolf." Logan muttered, "You would. Gunner is here because Emmaline agreed to have a GPS put in her ring after school. I told her I'd bring Gunner with me."

Ryan interjected, "We are having a sibling meeting after school." Dylan said, "We know. You told us already." Ryan snorted, "He didn't know." Gunner smiled, "Open that portal back up. I can get me some Harper and Cali time before I chip the fairy; again." Logan sighed and opened a portal that Gunner stepped back through.

Dylan was smiling widely. He told me, "I love the fairy show." I pointed out, "Logan isn't a fairy, and you were NOT happy with the fairy show this morning." Dylan responded, "It's still the greatest show of ALL time. They had a bad episode; everyone has a flaw." I rolled my eyes.

When Katie, Logan, Ryan, and Dustin left the office. I told Dylan, "Call Eric back." Dylan perked up, "Right, I have a bone to pick with King Alpha Prick." I said, "Great. How could this possibly end any other way except badly?" Eric picked up, "Lucas, I feel like we just talked. Are you having a busy day?" I snorted, "You have no idea. Dylan has things to say to you."

Dylan jumped in, "Yes, King Alpha Prick I do. What in the actual HELL is your mate thinking having the future QUEEN of the Hackura train with my mate? Astrid is just as deadly as Bjourn." Marcus spoke, "Do you not think Haley is deadly?" Dylan said, "Of course she is, but Haley has a fairy side. Astrid doesn't have a fairy side. There's no fun there. There's

a commander's daughter and future ninja queen ready to destroy all things in her path."

Bjourn spoke, "Thank god Astrid has no fairy side. After what those assholes did to my sister, I would've had a time accepting any type of fairy mate. There's no need to worry, Astrid won't seriously hurt them. It's training."

Dylan was practically frothing at the mouth. He sarcastically said, "Because no one gets hurt in Hackura training. That is the word on the street." Everyone was silent. Bjourn asked, "You think my mate, my future queen, will harm your mate intentionally? That she would hurt my sister in that way, to burn the trust she's spent seven years building?"

Dylan sat straight up in his chair and gave me wild eyes knowing what he'd just said. I spoke, "No one thinks that. Dylan is worried about how excited Lacy is. He'd prefer she didn't fight the future queen of the Hackura due to skill difference. Could Torvi help out instead?"

Bjourn laughed, "Why would he prefer that? When I fight with Astrid I only have half the work to do. Having a mate who can fight and protect your children at all costs if need be is a good thing. Wolves man."

Marcus agreed with him, "Wolves. Torvi is pregnant and therefore unavailable for training in this realm. Change the venue and she can help." I said, "Congratulations, Marcus. Speaking of wolves. Bjourn you have a clue for me." Bjourn laughed, "It took you long enough."

Dylan started laughing, finding the humor in the situation again. I yelled, "Haley did that on purpose! She threw in an easy brain teaser after having me do morse code and using a keypad on my phone. I was ready to do mental gymnastics, not think logically about a clue."

Eric chimed in, "She absolutely did it on purpose." I sighed, "What's my clue, Bjourn?" Bjourn said, "I can't give it to you over the phone. Haley's rules were very clear." I sighed, "I'll get it Wednesday then." Dylan linked, "He can open a portal, Lucas. Why do you deny me the fun things in life?"

Before I could say anything else, I heard a pop. Emmaline was now in my lap. Dominic was a little smug, “Did we not tell her brother that mate would come see us? I think we did.” I said, “We already knew we were right.” Dominic purred, “Mate loves us.”

I caught up with Emmaline. I was surprised she didn't seem to get what her siblings wanted to discuss with her. Dylan linked, “This is not good.” I shrugged, “It will be fine.” Dylan looked at me like I was missing something. Emmaline left after I told her not to pop away.

Once Emmaline left and Dylan un-muted Eric, “King Alpha Pricks, please tell Lucas how badly this sibling meeting is going to go. He does not believe me. I know she's going to tell Dustin to get over his issues with her relationship. He won't. Then he's going to try to get her to admit she messed up in her thinking trying to take on Alpha Hammond. He's going to offend her. I'm going to go ahead and station men at bodies of water.”

I bit the inside of my cheek and then spoke, “The nearest body of water is the lake. They are on the other side of it.” I pointed out the window where I could see Emmaline sitting with her siblings. Eric groaned, “Unfortunately, I have to agree with Dylan. Dustin is a dominant male, and he views Emmaline as a little girl. She has every right to be upset with how he has been acting.”

Jackson cleared his throat, “Eric, we have a meeting with Alpha Theo's Beta in five minutes.” Eric responded, “Right.” Dylan called, “Be a dear and tell my good buddy Beta James hello for me.” Eric said, “I'm not your messenger, Dylan. Text him that yourself.” I chuckled, “Let me know how your meeting goes. Maybe his Alpha hates me less today.” We hung up.

I looked out the window to the sibling conversation. I didn't like what I was feeling from Emmaline. No one looked happy. Lacy came into the room and looked to where our attention was. She groaned, “Great. What has that JERK done now? I know he's her brother, but will one of you just let me take him down a peg?”

Dylan asked, "What are you talking about?" Lacy threw her hands out, "Dustin. Gosh he's worse than you ever were Lucas." Dylan grimaced. I admitted, "I get it. He still sees her at the age she was forced to leave. Emmaline's just more sensitive because she's the soul seeker." Lacy rolled her eyes, "More like he's used to being her everything, and now she has you. He can't deal with that, and he's being a tool."

I disagreed, "You don't get it, Lacy Loo. It's hard to be a big brother, and to find the balance." Dylan raised an eyebrow. Lacy sarcastically spat out, "Yes, because it's been so hard for you since I got back." I looked away, "If your mate wasn't my Beta and best friend, I would probably act like an ass. That guy would be taking you away from me when I just got you back."

Lacy yelled, "Seriously Lucas? You let Dustin stay here whenever he wants. He has as much access to Emmaline as he wants. He consistently hurts her feelings. Doesn't that bother you?" I growled, "Of course it does!"

Dylan rubbed her back, "He's just empathizing with Dustin, babe." Lacy pinned him with a look, "I know you're his Beta, but you don't always have to take his side. We aren't in public, it's just the three of us here. Dustin is being an overprotective jerk, whose only thinking about himself. Ryan wasn't thrilled about you and Emmaline at first, but he's watched you with her. He accepts how good you are for her, and he even told Valerie she radiates happiness with you. Dustin needs to be nice about you or he's going to lose Emmaline."

I was stunned, "She wouldn't cut her brother out of her life for being a little rude to me." Lacy rolled her eyes, "Sometimes I swear you don't have the brains you were born with. You're her mate. She's lived without them for years. She didn't want to, but if he keeps hurting her feelings he will drive her away. She looks pretty pissed off to me right now."

I looked out the window to see Emmaline standing up yelling at Dustin. Her face was flushed with anger, and she was talking with her hands. I growled when Dustin started yelling back at her. Dylan said, "Oh boy, I would say who

could've seen this coming, but it was me. I saw it coming from miles away."

I linked my warriors, "Can anyone hear what they are arguing about?" Alex answered, "Katie did the space unheard chant. Do you want us to intervene?" I sighed, "No, let Emmaline deal with her siblings. I will step in if need be."

I spoke aloud, "She will link me if she needs me." Dylan pointed out the window, "That's such a good sign." Dustin looked as if he'd been slapped by whatever Emmaline had said. The pain on his face was unmistakable. I watched Logan materialize from the tree line.

A portal opened in my office and Prince Harper and Gunner walked into the room. Prince Harper kissed him then said, "I brought Gunner back to chip your mate. Don't keep him too long. Cali has a teacher conference she had to get to, then we have more sexy plans when she's done." He ran his hand down and gripped Gunner's butt. I nodded, "Of course, Prince Harper."

Harper looked around the room then asked, "Where is my brother?" I pointed to the tree line. Harper's eyes narrowed on Katie. He spoke in a dangerous tone, "Why is my brother's mate upset?" Lacy snorted, "Her oldest brother is being a tool." Prince Harper frowned, "How?" Lacy replied, "He's not happy with Emmaline and my brother's relationship. He's happy for Katie and Logan, but not Emmaline. It hurts her feelings."

Prince Harper questioned, "Why is Dustin unhappy? Logan said Emmaline was happy here." Dylan linked me, "I feel like they would be plotting your murder if she wasn't." Suddenly I felt a tug in my chest and looked to see Emmaline had popped away. Her siblings panicked. Logan had Katie in his arms in a flash. All of them were heading towards my office.

Prince Harper said, "That's my cue to leave. I don't want to be involved in their sibling drama. The poor bastards. We have enough drama from one sister, those guys have two." Gunner laughed, "Your sister is hardly dramatic, lover." Harper rolled

his eyes, “Her life is.” Gunner agreed and Harper left through a portal.

Gunner sighed dreamily, “That man’s ass is perfection.” Lacy agreed, “It’s not bad.” Dylan growled. Lacy ignored him asked, “Are you going to be around often, Gunner?” Gunner shrugged, “I go where the royal family requests. I’m now the only tech allowed near Haley, so the odds are high I’ll be around.”

Lacy questioned, “Why are you the only one allowed near Haley?” Gunner said, “Because of the three idiots who tried to hurt her. One of them was a tech person and now she doesn’t trust any of them. I consider her a sister and she knows I’m not harboring any feelings towards her. Nor would I let anything happen to her because I love her brother.” He didn’t get a chance to expand on that as the siblings burst into the room.

Ryan immediately asked me, “Where did Emmaline pop to?” I theorized, “She likely went to Haley since she’s not with me. I’ll link her.” Gunner pulled out a device at Logan’s nod then frowned, “Her phone is not pinging off a single tower. You are sure she popped with it, Logan?” Katie nodded, “She conjured it to her.”

Gunner shared a look with Logan that I didn’t care for. Emmaline was panicked in our link. I frowned, “She said she will be back soon. What happened?” To mine and Dylan’s astonishment, Dustin started to cry. Dylan linked, “What? Tears? No, Dylan does not do tears. Why are the fairy blooded people in this pack so prone to tears?! What did I do to deserve such a lot in life? He’s not a water fairy. Why moon goddess? Why me?”

Dustin cried, “She called my Dustin.” Ryan and Katie both winced. Dylan said, “You are aware that’s your name, right?” Aubree burst into the room. She took one look at Dustin and crossed the room to hold him. She rocked him back and forth.

Eventually, she asked, “What happened Dustin?” He said, “Evie called me Dustin. She never calls me Dustin; she was so upset.” Ryan looked at me, “They disagreed over your

relationship.” Aubree sighed, “Dustin, we talked about this. You have to let it go, she’s not a little girl anymore.”

Dustin wiped his tears, “She’s little Evie.” Katie pointed out, “She’s not. She’s seventeen. We missed out on little Evie time because our parents are jackasses. You have to stop this; you saw how much it hurts her.” Ryan reasoned, “You know he’s good for her, Dustin. You said so yourself. Valerie told you everything he did for her once they found out about her. Even before he knew they were mates he was trying to help her. He’s a good man.”

Dustin looked at me. I admitted, “I get it, you know I do. I’ll talk to Emmaline. Hopefully, you guys can straighten this out tonight. Let me talk to her when she come back. You all are welcome to stay in the guest rooms.” Dustin straightened, “I am sorry, Lucas. It’s just so hard to see her all grown up. I feel like I missed everything.” They left.

Logan nodded to two men who followed Katie out of the room. Logan spoke, “I don’t think it would be wise for Emmaline to talk to Dustin tonight.” I asked, “Why?” Gunner said, “Because it would be a bad idea if Haley did it when she got that upset. When the Claudia situation happened with Marcus, he tried to talk to her, and she blew up because he didn’t listen to her. Actually, they fought constantly.”

Logan nodded, “That and fairies don’t do well with things that aren’t fair. I’m guessing that’s doubled for the Soul Searcher. She’s not an empath, but she still feels her brother’s feelings to a degree. It adds to the situation being unfair because she can tell the difference in his happiness between Katie and herself.” I sighed sitting as a pop sounded in my office. I jumped to my feet as I recognized the wolf that came with Haley and Emmaline.

I linked Eric when he shifted back, “What the hell?” Eric replied, “I’m not exactly sure what the hell just happened.” It turned out in her distress, Emmaline popped to Faerie. Eric linked me, “Haley said in her emotional state she didn’t have a specific destination in mind. If a fairy doesn’t have a destination in mind their light pulls them to Faerie.” I

sarcastically answered, “Well that’s just great.” Eric seemingly agreed.

Emmaline had no interest in talking to Dustin. Eric linked me, “What happened?” Before I could answer Emmaline was handing over her ring to be chipped. I linked Dylan “I forgot to ask Logan when she agreed to that. Do you know?” Dylan answered, “I’ve been with you this entire time, you would’ve heard me ask him. I have no idea. Maybe he materialized out of thin air and asked her. He does that.”

I linked Eric, “So, Gunner really is like a brother to Haley. Their banter is just like siblings.” Eric smiled, “Yes, they are.” We listened to them all talk. I linked Dylan, “I’m not even remotely upset about that Logan tricked her into a GPS in her ring.”

I linked Eric, “Haley let you chip her ring?” Eric answered, “I can’t go through losing her again. Not knowing where she was for a few days was hell.” I winced then looked at Emmaline replying, “I can understand that.”

I agreed with Haley linking Eric, “Drama really does love her, but Haley’s not dramatic,” He replied, “Our lives are dramatic in general.” I responded, “Yeah, but she doesn’t *try* to be dramatic.” Eric said, “No, she doesn’t. She gets annoyed that sometimes our lives are so crazy.”

Gunner explained how everything worked. I linked Dylan, “I’m good with the pinging her ring every hour plan.” Dylan said, “Careful now. If your life is in danger, she’ll be all about putting a tracker on you. That would be fair and all.” I rolled my eyes.

Haley popped away with Emmaline as I said, “Haley wait...” Eric growled, “I despise when she does that.” A pack member walked in with popcorn giving it to Dylan. He took a handful and popped it into his mouth. He spoke, “I, for one, am a fan of when she does that.”

Eric said, “Dylan, one of these days I’m going to punch you.” Dylan smirked, “But then your perfect mate would be upset with you.” Eric spat out, “Lacy, be a dear and kick your

mate's ass for constantly talking about how perfect my mate is." Lacy shrugged, "She is though."

Eric smirked evilly, "I suppose we do have something in common, Dylan. Our mates are both pretty damn near perfect. Mine has only kissed me though." Dylan spoke with eating popcorn, "Uhh, I was Lacy's first kiss. I know she didn't kiss anyone else in the pack. If they thought about it, I made them run laps. I'm positive Lacy has only kissed me."

Lacy's face turned red. I linked her, "Did you...?" Dylan growled, "Don't you tell me someone went around me in the pack. It was that troglodyte who used to flirt with you at the baseball field, wasn't it? I'll kill him." I pointed out, "Dylan, you can't kill him." Dylan frowned, "He will RUE the day. His trainings will be hell. HELL, I SAY."

Lacy said, "It wasn't him. You don't know any of them." Eric didn't even bother to hide his laugh. Dylan yelled, "THEM?" Eric said, "As fun as this is, I'm going to get closer to where our mates are having their pow pow. Have fun Dylan. Remember you make my life hell, and I will eventually give it back to you tenfold." Dylan yelled, "Of course you will, your nickname is King Alpha Prick. You couldn't be their king if you weren't a prick every so often." Logan opened a portal and sent Gunner back through it, while he stayed behind.

The three of us left. We heard Dylan asking how many 'them' meant. Lacy was snarling in reply, asking for the number of girls he'd screwed because she'd only had sex with him. I looked at Eric, "You did that on purpose. You knew she'd kissed someone else."

Eric smirked, "Yes, I did. The last time I tracked her to California I questioned pack members there. There was a certain wolf very distraught over her departure. Don't worry, I kicked his ass because it became apparent he took advantage of the fact that she felt lonely." I growled.

Eric assured me, "If he'd had sex with her, I'd have killed him." I said, "You'd better have brought him back here." Eric said, "Of course I would've. He was the Gamma's son. He found his mate when he turned nineteen, he's no threat to her

now.” We got close to the field I claimed Emmaline in after her Luna ceremony, and they both stopped walking.

I admitted, “I wish I could feel Emmaline like you do in your Hackura bond with Haley. How close are we to them?” Eric said, “They aren’t far. Maybe a mile and half out from us at most.” Logan thought about it, “I’d put them at just a mile. I’ve had longer to figure out distances with the bond. That’s impressive through Eric.” Eric shrugged.

I began to pace. “I need to fix this. I can’t have her fighting with her family because of me.” Eric shrugged again. Logan said, “They will figure it out, just as you would if it was Lacy. Dustin isn’t going to be willing to lose her again. They are all very sensitive about that particular topic.”

I nodded, “That’s the hard part. I understand them. Hell, I *was* them with Lacy being gone. Emmaline just can’t see it.” Eric disagreed, “Emmaline sees a double standard. She also sees that she grew up to be an independent woman who is a survivor. Dustin needs to see that too. She’s not a weak little thing, she’s a strong person.”

I kept pacing, “You are sure they are there? Why can’t we hear them?” Eric raised an eyebrow, “How would we not be able to hear them? That is odd. Hmmm, Logan any ideas?” I growled at him. Logan teased, “As he already seems to know the answer, I’ll just say, fairy’s.” We were silent for a while.

Logan seemed like he was ready to punch me when I kept asking where they were. The more we talked I realized there was a side conversation happening with the Bishop twins and Logan, which made sense. Katie was his mate. I wanted to fix this for both Emmaline and Dustin. I’d felt Emmaline’s pain in my chest, and I didn’t want that.

I was about to link Emmaline again when pops sounded and something was on my back. Dominic took over at first ready to fight. Then I felt the tingles realizing Emmaline had popped onto my back. I stilled as Haley said she felt like she was riding some sort of fairy animal.

Eric linked me, “Something tells me this is yet another fairy childhood thing my wife was left out of.” I answered,

“She could’ve gone on her own.” Eric said, “The point seems to be doing it with friends.” True.

We went our separate ways. I tried to explain Dustin’s position to Emmaline. It’s a hard minefield to navigate sometimes with a little sister. I felt Emmaline’s anger mounting in my chest. I agreed with her wholeheartedly that Dustin had no say in our relationship. I voiced that the situation she and her siblings in wasn’t fair to any of them.

She stepped back from me and got angry. I was surprised by the vehemence in her tone. I was just trying to explain his side of things to her. Emmaline pointed out she gave Dustin time to adjust and he hadn’t yet. She was upset they wanted a code word. I told her the code word wasn’t about control, and she agreed it wasn’t for me. She thought her siblings wanted to control her with it. I frowned. They were just worried after yesterday.

I tried to explain, but she still didn’t seem to grasp how many people she was thinking of taking on. Dominic growled, “Maybe because someone STILL hasn’t explained that to her. How can she learn and adapt if you just think it and never tell her.” I rolled my eyes at him.

Dylan walked up slowly. He linked me, “Dude... what did you do?” I growled, “I didn’t yell at her for kissing anyone.” Dylan frowned, “I got possessive. We talked, it’s fine. What happened here?” Emmaline spoke angrily at me before popping away with Lacy.

I yelled, “FUCK!” Dylan asked, “What the hell? I know you didn’t do serious relationships but why would you tell her Dustin was right?” I growled, “I didn’t. I told her that I understood where he was coming from. I understand he feels like he failed her because I failed Lacy too.”

Dylan stopped me, “You didn’t fail Lacy.” I disagreed, “I did. I let her be lied to and cut off from her friends. She ran from us. You would’ve had your mate the moment she turned eighteen.” Dylan said, “So I waited a few months past her birthday. Lacy is fine, I am fine. The pressing issue is you

have GOT to work on your communication skills. They are seriously lacking.”

I growled, “Let’s go find them. My bet is Emmaline popped back to the place she was talking to Haley in.” My phone rang. One glance showed it was Eric, the second I picked up he growled, “Lucas.” I responded quickly, “What is it Eric? I need to find Emmaline.”

Eric questioned, “What did you do? Your mate called mine to make her a treehouse in that field we were JUST in. I was literally minutes away from sex with my mate. What the fuck, man?” I sighed.

I started walking in that direction and Dylan followed. I told Eric, “I’ll just get into the treehouse when we get there and send Haley back to you.” Eric asked me, “You do remember not seeing the treehouse Haley made, right? You thought I was crazy for a split second.” I agreed, “Yes, but you saw it. I’m Emmaline’s mate. I can see her treehouse, can’t I?” Eric laughed, “Not until Emmaline takes you to it.” I growled, “COME ON! Dylan, we need to run.”

Eric said, “That’s not going to help. Tell me what you did that cockblocked me.” We made it to the correct spot. Both Dylan and I felt our mates above us in the mate bond, but it was just a tree. Eric said, “Seriously. Haley just linked me about it being asshole week again, and no one telling her. What did you do?”

I tried to link Emmaline, but it was as if there was a block in my mind to her. I panicked “I was just trying to fix the problem between her and Dustin. I explained his side. Now, I can’t even get through to her in mind link. I feel like she’s totally cut off from me.”

Eric sighed, “She probably just wanted you to listen to the problem. Haley doesn’t want me to fix things sometimes, or so she tells me. You have to try to fix it without letting them know you’re fixing it. For god’s sake whatever you do, never tell them how to fix it. Fairy’s go apeshit about that. Try knocking on your link. I can tug on mine with Haley when she cuts it off.”

I tried but felt like I was hitting a wall. Dylan snorted, “You two clueless Alpha’s were never in a relationship before your mates. No woman likes to be told how to fix a problem. Especially when they know how to fix it. They just want you to listen. That’s female 101.”

I glared at him, “Then WHY would they tell us about the problem? I feel like I’m hitting a wall. I can’t get through to Emmaline.” Dylan rolled his eyes, “It’s like talking to a five year old sometimes. They vent and talk about their issues; it’s what women do. At least Eric doesn’t have a sister. Didn’t Lacy ever talk to you about a problem?”

I nodded, “Yes, and I would fix it.” Dylan raised an eyebrow, “Does she know you fixed it?” I sighed, “No.” Dylan said, “There you go. All you had to do was listen and we could all be getting sex right now. I’m with King Alpha Prick here, and that means it’s the END of the world.”

I yelled, “I’m new to relationships! She was in pain. How am I supposed to do nothing knowing she’s in pain!” Dylan shrugged, “You could’ve at least said nothing. Nod your head and say nothing. That was a choice.” Eric said, “Or plan for her and Dustin to be in the same location to talk out their issues.”

I stared at my phone, “Why do I feel like you speak from personal experience?” Eric responded, “Because I do. Haley wasn’t only mad at me after the summit. When we got home, I texted Marcus that Haley was in our room. He went and talked to her, and they worked it out.”

Eric paused then said, “The girls can see you. They had Haley ask who you were on the phone with.” I said, “Well, tell Haley to let us in.” Dylan said, “You’re brilliant. Except I already tried that with Lacy. Essentially she said no, but meaner. So much meaner.”

Eric laughed then said, “Haley said they needed girl time, and that you need to chill the fuck out. This is your fault, and now she has to fix it.” I sighed, “I was TRYING to help.” Eric said, “I know that. Relationships are hard to figure out, and you and I avoided them most of our lives. We fucked instead.

Dylan has more experience than we do with relationships. God, that actually burned my throat. I ask my brothers for advice. Unfortunately for you, you have Dylan.”

Dylan stood taller, “And he is ever so lucky to have me. I could’ve helped us all avoid this if he’d just asked.” I sighed then apologized, “I’m sorry I ruined your evening, Eric.” Dylan said, “I am but a forgotten Beta whose evening does not matter to my Alpha. I see how it is.” I shot him a look.

Eric snorted, “Out of the three of us I can guarantee I’m getting sex tonight.” Dylan said, “Why wouldn’t I get sex?” Eric said, “Haley linked me that Lacy said you were on Lucas’ side.” Dylan groaned, “This is what I get for trying to help. I should’ve taken my own advice. Why am I such a good friend? I bear such a heavy burden.”

Eric laughed, “Tell your mate you were just being a good friend, maybe it will help you.” I heard a pop and Eric didn’t hang up fast enough. We heard Haley say, “Now, where were we? I do believe the big bad wolf was about to eat me up.” I ended the call.

Dylan said, “You’d think you’d never seen the man naked or eating a girl out, but you have. Literally that man.” I sighed, “It’s different with Haley.” Dylan conceded my point.

We both felt Lacy and Emmaline get farther away. I groaned, “They couldn’t just come down?” Dylan said, “Lacy linked me, she’s in our room. Emmaline’s probably in yours.” I parted ways with Dylan at the pack house. I sprinted the rest of the way to the house.

Dominic pushed forward, having enough of Emmaline not being near us. He grumbled, “Mate needs to understand, and you suck at explaining. I’m going to tell her not to do this to us again.” I growled, “To us? I’ve been feeling you practically pace silently for HOURS!” Dominic growled at me and stormed into our room.

I smelled her in the bathroom and went to open the door. Dominic lost it when we discovered she’d locked it. He warned her then knocked the door down. Emmaline was clearly astonished. They talked and Dominic haughtily linked

me, "Mate is right. This IS your fault." Dominic jumped into the bathtub. I rolled my eyes, "One does not wear clothes into the bathtub." He ignored me.

He started the conversation. I eventually took back over. Dominic linked me, "Maybe I should take over in these types of situations to keep us from saying dumb shit." I sighed; he might have a point. Dominic teased, "I have a fabulous point."

Dominic grumbled while Emmaline pointed out the flaws of protecting her from everything, "We can protect mate from life. We will protect our mate from everything possible. Nothing will hurt her, Lucas. We waited for her for so long, and she's so perfect."

I assured him, "I know. We will learn and do better, but I agree. We will protect her from everything in our power to protect her from." She climbed into bed, and I pulled her closer to me. I didn't dare make a move tonight. Emmaline was out as soon as her head hit the pillow.

Dylan linked me, "We are good men, I know this... so WHAT did we do to deserve this HELL?" I asked, "What happened?" Dylan said, "My mate is in sexy lingerie, and she won't let me touch her. She's sauntering all over the room, but because I took your stupid side, I can't have sex." I cringed, "Nope. I'm not touching that." Dylan yelled, "Oh NO YOU don't. You're my best friend, and this is your fault! The day we signed up as besties, you agreed to listen to ALL my problems! Well, problem!"

I sighed, "Alright, fine. Just apologize and tell her I'm new to relationships. That I didn't listen to yours or Logan's advice. That being my Beta and being on my side is literally in your blood." Dylan was quiet, "That's actually good. Thank you. I will take the Beta crown back from you tomorrow. You're not supposed to take it without telling me, but just this once I'll forgive you."

I said, "I do have good ideas from time to time." He replied with swagger, "You are a genius, and I now remember why we are best friends. Dylan is going to get himself some..." I shut

our link off before he could continue that thought shivering. That was still my sister.

When Emmaline's alarm went off Dominic demanded, "Go to train with mate. We can work out with her and have hot sex after." I groaned, "Do you have to have good ideas like that this early in the morning? Not even the sun is awake." Dominic ordered, "Do it human! She'll get all hot and bothered when we pin her to the ground. Lightly of course, not like we pin other people."

I sat straight up in bed. Emmaline shot me a glance asking, "Do you have an early meeting?" I shook my head no. She frowned, "I'm sorry, I didn't mean to wake you." I kissed her. "I'm training with you today." Emmaline smiled, "Are you fighting Dylan again?" I smirked, "No, my little Luna. I want to see your progress. You are going to fight me." She faltered, "I don't want to fight you." I smiled, "We won't hurt each other, I promise." She frowned, "Like play fighting?" I shrugged, "Kind of." She sighed, "Alright." She held out her hand and popped us to the gym.

My warriors bowed their heads to us. I linked Alex, "Emmaline is going to show me what she's learned." His eyes widened but he nodded. Lacy came in, staring at me with her eyes wide. She shot Emmaline a look who shrugged. They were obviously mind linking each other.

Five minutes after Lacy came in, Dylan came in with his hair all messed up and his shorts on backwards. I told him, "Your shorts are on backwards and inside out." He tried to smooth his hair down, "Lacy linked me you were here. I'm here to fight whatever steam you need to let off. What happened with you two last night?"

I smirked assuring him, "There's no need for that. Emmaline's going to fight me. I want to see what she's learned." Dylan stared at me then smiled broadly, "You want to rile her up. You want her to get all hot and bothered. That's brilliant. I'm fighting Lacy too. I must get my Beta blood crown back from you. If you keep having these genius moments you won't need me." I smiled, "I told you. I have good ideas sometimes too."

The warrior split everyone up. Lacy was clearly confused about being paired with Dylan. I led Emmaline to the mats. I took my shirt off, and watched her eyes narrow on my abs. I ordered, "Show me your moves, mate." She came at me. I couldn't hide my grin as I touched her every way I could. I pinned her and caressed her face, grinding into her with my hips.

I instructed, "That's good. Use your legs to flip me." Her lust was rising. She sputtered, "What?" I leaned down and whispered in her ear, "Wrap your legs around me and flip me on my back." She immediately followed my directions and was off me quickly, breathing heavily.

Alex linked, "Are you really using training to get your mate all hot and bothered?" I snorted, "I've seen you do it." Alex replied, "Touché, Lucas."

I motioned for her to continue. We did that the whole lesson. We heard them call it for the day. Alex had barely gotten the words out of his mouth when Emmaline popped me to our room. She attacked me. I laughed, "Whoa, little fairy," I said kissing her back. She hissed at me, "You started this and you will finish it, Lucas Lyons." I smirked, "Whatever do you mean, baby girl?"

She had wrapped herself around me and was pulsing up and down. She snapped us both naked, "You wanted me all riled up. I'm riled. Make me come, Alpha. Please, before I explode." I growled and had her against the door entering her in one move.

I stayed inside her until Lacy knocked on the door yelling, "You've missed school a lot lately. We have to go, Emmaline." I growled, "You NEED to get a GED." Emmaline laughed and snapped herself ready. "I love you, Lucas. I'll see you tonight for fairy lessons." She walked out with Lacy.

I got in the shower, then walked into my office, where I found a whistling Dylan. He handed me my coffee, bowing to me multiple times, "I bow to your genius." I laughed at him, "Let's get to work." The day flew by. Dustin came to visit me with Ryan. Dustin looked like he hadn't slept all night.

He told me, “I want to talk to Evie.” I said, “I don’t control when you talk to your sister. She has fairy lessons tonight. You can either try before or after.” Dustin nodded, “I know you don’t control her. No one does. No one ever could or did.” Ryan sighed, “I’ve got to go pick them all up from school.” With that he left the room.

I offered, “If Emmaline doesn’t pop back, and she usually doesn’t, she will come in the front door. Wait for her in the living room.” Dustin asked, “Why are you helping me? I’ve been a dick to you.” I sighed, “Because I want Emmaline to be happy. She won’t be happy without you in her life, and her happiness means everything to me.”

Dustin regarded me then held out his hand, “I’m trying to adjust to her being older. It does help that I can see how much you care about her. It really does. I’ll do better.” I shrugged, “It’s an adjustment. I’m sure in a few years, you and I will be great friends. That doesn’t have to be tomorrow though. Just be honest with Emmaline.” Dustin nodded and walked out of the room.

A few minutes later a pop sounded. I was about to let Dominic take control, so I didn’t do something stupid like tell Emmaline to talk to Dustin. Then Emmaline spoke first, “I just wanted to say hi. I’m going to hash things out with Dusty.” I smiled, “Hi, baby girl.” She kissed me then sighed, “I’m going to pop away back downstairs now.” I said, “That....” She popped away.

I stood immediately, running to the door, feeling the chase in my blood. Dylan grabbed me and wrestled me down, “She’s not popping away from you.” I reversed us breathing heavily. “Ever since we played catch the fairy... I’ll just have to explain it to her.” Dylan got up, “You ok now?” I nodded, “Go see Lacy.” He nodded and left. I did some more work.

I looked up when Logan opened a portal into my office. Katie came through with him. Emmaline popped to me moments later. She’d been crying. Katie regarded her worriedly. Emmaline grabbed Katie’s hand and mine, popping us to Haley’s. She started to walk away.

I linked her pulling her back to me, “Baby girl, is everything ok?” She replied, “Yes, we got it sorted out it was just a hard conversation. Everything’s fine now.” I nodded and gave her a hug and whispered, “I almost came after you when you popped away.” She laughed, “But you knew where I was going.” I shrugged, “Apparently, it doesn’t matter.” This time I nudged her toward Haley and she walked over to their group.

Eric offered, “Catch the fairy makes you feel like it’s always a chase.” I snorted, “You’re telling me.” My eyes narrowed on Bjourn. I asked, “Where’s my clue?” Bjourn smirked and handed me a piece of paper. I groaned, “I don’t get a piece of my collection back?” Bjourn shook his head, and I opened my clue.

Clue 7

Your next clue is hiding

In an eoepelvn

At the otbmot fo het akle

In the hscet

I groaned, “What the fuck? Eric, Is this Fealish?” Eric said, “Emmaline does have a dictionary of Fealish. It would be fair to give you that as a clue.” I groaned. Logan tensed beside me instantly putting me on alert. I relaxed when I saw that Katie had managed to pop a couple inches from Haley.

Logan groaned, “Fuck me.” Eric laughed, “With as little earth blood as she has, other students have only managed to get to the other side of the lake.” Logan said, “I still hate it... No, I loathe it.” Eric said, “Suck it the fuck up, man. Our mate’s can pop realms.”

Logan considered then conceded, “That would be much worse.” Emmaline had managed to freeze half of the lake today. I was surprised that her other sister Idel was teaching the water fairy’s instead of Hexxi. I asked, “Doesn’t Hexxi

normally teach?” Eric nodded, “Apparently Idel said she was hogging their sisters.”

I noticed Sharon was here too. I asked, “Where’s Garrett?” Eric smirked, “Alpha Kyle called me with Garrett growling in the background. He’s worried since they don’t know if she will have a heat, he didn’t want her to come today. He actually locked her in their room forgetting she could pop away.”

I bit my lip, “At least I didn’t do that.” Eric said, “I haven’t done that either. Look at us go. We have one win in the relationship department.” I asked, “Is Garrett on the way?” Eric said, “No, I promised Alpha Kyle that Haley would see to Sharon’s safety. None of the fairies would agree to go get him.” I snorted. Duly noted.

After the lesson ended, Idel was animatedly talking to Emmaline and Sharon, practically pleading with them while Haley laughed. Emmaline looked at me then smirked and nodded her head to whatever Sharon was saying. Sharon got a wicked gleam in her eye and agreed as well. Haley turned to Katie saying something. Katie glanced back at Logan.

Logan snorted, “This is trouble if I ever saw it.” Katie nodded and grabbed Haley’s hand as Emmaline reached for Idel’s and Sharon’s. I yelled, “Don’t you dare!” She winked at me. They all popped away. Logan groaned, “Come on!”

Bjourn said, “She’s with our sister. You know she would not let anything hurt Katie.” Logan agreed, “I do know that.” Emmaline linked me, “Prepare for payback, my Alpha. Idel is going to show Sharon and me the water fairy ritual.” I was instantly rock hard.

I told the group, “They are doing the water fairy ritual. I’m guessing Haley is doing the earth one with Katie.” Eric smirked “Happy Wednesday to us all, especially Lucas. Why couldn’t Katie be a sky fairy?” We all chuckled. Eric continued, “Logan, I’d head to the room you and Katie have stayed in here.”

Logan smiled, “I do love my little sister, I love her so damn much.” He practically skipped away from us. I pulled out my phone to call Alpha Kyle. He answered immediately, “Lucas.

Is anything wrong at fairy practice?" I heard a snarl that I assumed was Garrett. I assured him, "Nothing is wrong. I'm calling to warn Garrett. Our mate's fairy sister is showing them some water fairy ritual." Peter's voice came through the phone "And? Why does Garrett need a warning about that?"

I laughed, "When Emmaline did the earth ritual with Haley a couple weeks ago they were, and I quote Haley here, 'A crazed sex fairy' afterwards. Since Emmaline and Sharon are mostly water fairy's you and I are in for a crazy night. Get to your room. Sharon will be popping to you with a need you will practically be able to taste." Garrett laughed, "I am practically there, Alpha Lucas. Thank you."

Eric led us back to the house and said, "Beta James said Theo doesn't hate you like he used to, but he's not ready to be in alliance with you again. I don't know if he ever will be." I sighed, "I figured," It still stung, but I did figure that would be the case.

I walked with the group inside Eric's home. We both saw Alpha Chase pacing the front hallway. Darrin told us, "He's refusing to leave." Alpha Chase finally noticed we were here. He turned to me, "Your mate... Alpha Lucas... she knows who someone's mate is, right?" I nodded, "She does."

Alpha Chase looked at me with tortured eyes, "Does she know mine?" I stared at him, "She hasn't said she does, and according to Haley she'd have to if she knew." Eric cautiously asked, "What's going on, Alpha Chase?" Alpha Chase paced, "I... my wolf... he said our mate was near last weekend. He's inconsolable because now he says she's not. I just... I don't even know why I came here."

Eric winced, "Haley had a fairy event Sunday evening." Alpha Chase's eyes widened, "You think my mate could be a partial fairy?" I pointed out, "Ours are." Alpha Chase continued to pace, "What do I do? What have I even done? I'm married. My mate will reject me. My wolf is pissed at me, growling all the damn time. I never have a moment's peace."

I said, "You haven't met her yet, you don't that she'd reject you." Alpha Chase didn't even look at us, "And your mates

would be on mine's side. The Princess could keep her from me if she's a fairy." He finally looked at Eric, "Your mate hates me, I can tell."

Eric disagreed, "My mate doesn't hate that many people unfortunately. She doesn't know the whole situation you have going on like I do. She hates what you've done because she can't imagine it if I was married to someone else. Specifically, Claudia Harden."

Alpha Chase said, "FUCK! Even Lucas' mate hates me. Does it help that I didn't not Claudia either?" I disagreed, "Emmaline doesn't hate you. It hurts her soul to see you with someone who isn't your mate." Alpha Chase asked, "WHY do you have the faintest smell of my mother's cinnamon bread in this house? Did Mrs. Blanch get the recipe out of her before she died?" Eric answered, "No...."

I linked Eric, "His mate really was here." Eric nodded. Alpha Chase growled, "She was here." Eric agreed, "It does seem that way." Alpha Chase paced, "Can I come to the next fairy training session?" Eric looked torn.

Alpha Chase pleaded, "Please... I know an Alpha's not supposed to say please... but I want to see her. My wolf NEEDS to see her. I can barely keep him contained right now." Eric sighed, "Yes, but you stay back. IF you find her just know my wife might kill us both, but we will figure it out. Alright?"

He nodded frantically, "Thank you... thank you Alpha Eric. I... what was I thinking? I was a stupid eighteen year old kid. I just wanted to help my friend. Sophia is a good leader and she deserved to lead her pack." I contemplated offering to ask Emmaline to see if she knew his mate, but I didn't want to do that to her. Alpha Chase left looking haggard, but more at peace.

Marcus' voice startled me, "That wolf is fucked. Fairy's hate unfair shit." Dylan was right, they needed to stop doing that, it was unsettling. Eric said, "If it's a fairy. We had staff here for catering, and an event planner. I believe the caterer used some humans with knowledge of the supernatural world.

His mate's definitely not a wolf though. No one had an eighteenth birthday last weekend." Marcus clearly felt a certain way about someone Eric listed off, but I didn't comment on it.

Eric and I parted ways. I walked into the room Emmaline and I had been in last time. I was lost in thought wondering what Alpha Chase would do. What his mate would do. He was my ally and I was bound to help him, as was Eric. I knew our mates would not like this at all. I started to pace going over options. Emmaline's sisters weren't at the event that I knew of so the fairy couldn't be related to her at least. If it was a human caterer or event planner that would be even easier. You can't tell them right away, so Alpha Chase could figure his situation out before explaining the supernatural world. If they didn't know about it, which Eric mentioned some had. That didn't mean all of them did. That could work in his favor.

I had no idea how to help Alpha Chase if it was a fairy. Haley would kick his ass, and I didn't know what the fuck Eric would do. The problem was if Haley was against it, Emmaline would be too. Especially as the Soul Searcher. This situation was so fucked up. I heard a pop and turned. I gasped, barely recognizing the look in my own mates eyes. I didn't even get to say anything before she attacked me.

Water Rituals

Emmaline woke up to her alarm. I was surprised when Lucas wanted to come to training. I racked my brain, but I couldn't think of any reason he'd be coming. Was something going on I didn't know about again? Last time he was there because he was afraid that I'd leave him. I recoiled at the thought of us fighting. He eased my fears immediately. We were basically wrestling, but not seriously? What the heck?

The warriors seemed just as surprised about Lucas' attendance. He must have linked them because a few were smirking now. At least nothing was wrong. Lacy linked me when she walked in, "What the hell?" I shrugged, "I don't know. He just said he was coming to see my progress. I can't think of any reason he would be worked up about letting me out of his sight. Do you think there's another Alpha Hammond situation?"

Lacy frowned, "There better not be, but Dylan is on the way." I replied, "He said he's not fighting Dylan." Lacy eyebrows raised, "Then who does he want to fight? Is he really just going to watch you?" I looked away, "He said he wants to fight me." Lacy inhaled, "Are you serious?" I nodded. She asked, "What the actual heck?" I shook my head in response.

I looked at Dylan when he came in, and barely withheld my laugh. I linked Lacy, "I've never seen Dylan look more unkempt than in this moment." Lacy looked over and rolled her eyes, "I realize he had a rushed wake up call, but he could've at least gotten his shorts on correctly." I bit my lip, "He's a good friend and mate." Lacy smiled, "That he is."

Lacy linked me after everyone was paired up, "I'm fighting Dylan?" I shrugged and snapped Dylan's outfit on correctly. I speculated, "Maybe they want us to get ready for Astrid?" Lacy agreed, "That could be it."

Lucas was making it hard to focus. He took off his shirt. How was this fair? His abs had abs. I desperately wanted to lick him again. Why would he do this to me? Couldn't he fight me with his darn shirt on? I didn't know if I could fight him in the first place but feeling him against me with no shirt definitely told me I couldn't.

It became painfully clear within minutes why Lucas was here. To work me up. I linked Lacy, "They are messing with us by getting us all hot and bothered." Lacy growled, "The most obnoxious part of their plan is that it's working." I snorted, "It really is." Lacy said, "Ew, that's my brother." I chuckled in our link.

Lucas used every touch to his advantage. If he ground his hips into mine one more time, I'd pop us out of here and pounce on him. Thankfully, the class ended because I was about to spontaneously combust. Lucas acted surprised by my aggression once I popped us to the bedroom. He could take his surprise and shove it. He riled me up and now he had to pay the piper. We went at it like animals until Lacy knocked on the door.

I walked out of our room once I was ready. I linked arms with Lacy. I popped us to the car. Brad got in without a word. Valerie slid in with Ry. Valerie teased, "I didn't think you guys were going to make it today." I shrugged, "Why wouldn't we?" Valerie smirked, "I heard some things..." Ry said, "Please for the love of god, don't have this conversation." Valerie giggled.

I drove us to school in silence. Sam and Chelsea were waiting by my locker. I had another note. I considered not reading it, but my curiosity got the best of me.

Emmaline,

I know things got messed up, but I have your best interests at heart. Meet me by the locker rooms during first period.

Grayson

I stared at the note in shock. Did he honestly think I would meet him? I discreetly crumbled the note in my hand. Drake and I walked to class together. I threw it away in Mr. Blaze's trash with no one the wiser. One crisis averted for today. I refused to meet Grayson's gaze in second period. Travis growled at him when he tried to pass me a note. Travis, of course, took the note and read it. I couldn't help but notice he didn't look happy.

After class Travis pulled me back giving the teacher a look. She cleared the room pretty quick, with a sympathetic look in my direction. Brad had been in class with us and clearly would be for the foreseeable future. Travis growled, "Care to explain?" I frowned, "How can I explain? I don't know what the note said. What am I explaining?"

Travis raised an eyebrow and read the note, "Emmaline, I missed you at the lockers. Meet me in the gym in the next period." I rolled my eyes, "Because ignoring him the first time was too subtle?" Brad asked, "When did he ask you to meet?" I shrugged, "He left a note in my locker. Evidently, it was actually him and not a fake person like last time. One can't be too careful though since someone is a secret handwriting impersonator. I don't want to meet with him anyway. I threw the note away in Mr. Blaze's trashcan."

Brad groaned, "Emmaline, I need to know about the notes. Particularly given what has happened with the fake note from the Alpha." I sighed agreeing, "Fine. I just didn't think it mattered because I obviously wasn't going to go. I don't want to talk to him." Brad nodded. Both men accepted I would tell them about the next note.

The rest of the day went smoothly. I drove us all back home. Ry was really quiet the whole way home. Once everyone got out of the car, I caught his eyes in the rearview mirror. I didn't move, catching his silent message to hang back.

After everyone else got out I asked, "What's wrong, Ry?" Ry sighed, "Dustin is really messed up about your fight." I sighed, "I'm not great either, but I can't fight him every step of the way anymore. It's exhausting and hurtful. In any other

situation, he would like Lucas.” Ry agreed, “I know. It is hard for us all. We know Dustin is wrong though.” We both got out of the car. Ry advised, “Just don’t be too hard on him for too long.” I nodded in acknowledgement.

We walked inside side by side. Dusty was waiting. I wanted to sigh. The only thing that stopped me was the look on his face. He looked horrible. His eyes were rimmed red, he looked like he hadn’t slept all night. He brokenly stated, “We need to talk, Evie.” I searched his soul, and found his remorse, regret, self-loathing to be too much for me. I ran in for a hug.

I pulled back from him and agreed, “I’ll pop to say hi to Lucas and be right back.” I popped away. I couldn’t help but smile at Lucas. Seeing him really did just make the whole day feel right. I popped back downstairs to Dusty, surprised to see Ry was still there.

I raised an eyebrow at him. He smirked, “I’m keeping the peace, and making sure the ground rules are followed.” I nodded instantly understanding. Anytime we fought our mom would have a peacekeeper who basically served as a moderator. They set ground rules for the conversation that had to be followed. You got grounded if you broke them.

I asked, “What are the ground rules, Ry?” Ry smiled, “No popping, walking, or running away. No raised voices, and no cheap shots to significant others. We talk this out how we were raised. No one leaves this room until it’s resolved.”

I teased, “Then we’d better talk fast, I have fairy lessons tonight.” Ry considered, “If we don’t have it resolved before fairy lessons, then you will have to pop right back here afterwards.” I crossed my arms, “I agree if Dusty does.” Dusty nodded so I sat down.

Dusty spoke first, “I’m sorry, Evie. There’s really not much else I can say. I’ll be better about you and Lucas. I just had this idea in my mind of how everything would be when we found you. Obviously, that was before I knew about mom and dad. I thought bringing you home would fix the fractures in our family that began forming when you left. I thought everything

would be just how it was, you know? In my mind, you've been frozen in time that last day I saw you."

I admitted, "Before I met Lucas. I wished I was that little girl too. I've learned a lot though. I know that I can survive on my own." Dusty winced, "I didn't want you to have to do that. I know Lucas is a good man, and he's good with you. It just feels like he took something from me. Nothing about how you came back into our lives is what I thought it would be."

I already had tears flowing down my cheeks. I took his hand, "I'm sorry, Dusty. I didn't want to stay away from you guys. I was just scared." Dusty said, "I know. I just wish you could've told us where you were. Or told us what happened in a note, we could've found you sooner." I shrugged, "I wish I could've."

Dusty started to cry, "I hate that. I hate that when we came here you were afraid of us." I interrupted, "I was never afraid of either of you." Dusty disagreed, "That's semantics. You were afraid of what would happen if we found you. You had to know once Ryan saw you that we'd find you." I sighed, "I did."

Dusty ground out, "You were going to run again." I nodded, "If I hadn't met Lucas; I would've. I can't leave him though. I was a wreck because I didn't know what to do. I knew Ry would eventually convince you he actually saw me." Dusty said, "I just... I'm so damn mad all the time. I can't believe they did this to us. How are you not mad?"

I raised an eyebrow, "I AM mad. I hate mom a lot. I thought I was over it, but Haley pointed out I'm not. I don't think I will ever stop hating her. I don't care what her side is, she didn't pick me. She didn't even lift a finger to help me. She could've emailed, called, texted, or sent a freaking smoke signal to my dad. He would've helped me."

My voice shook with anger as I added, "She could've told you, Dusty. Katie and Ry were always closer to David than you were. YOU would've helped me. I'm so mad she took that from me. Any help I could've had she slammed the door shut and sealed all the windows. It hurts."

Dusty whispered, “You have no idea how many girls I’ve seen battered and broken trying to find you. It’s hard to put that all aside because as much as I don’t want to be, I’m angry with everyone. Even you, Evie.”

I was surprised, “Me? What the heck did I do?” Dusty stood and paced, “Nothing! That’s the ridiculous part. I know you didn’t run away now, but I’ve been angry for years thinking you did. I’m simultaneously angry and grateful to Lucas that he’s the reason you didn’t run after saving Ryan. I’m angry that you ever felt the need to be scared of me, Ry, or Katie.”

I sighed, “Anger isn’t always rational. I wouldn’t have left you guys if I’d had a choice. I couldn’t even leave you completely.” Dusty grimaced, “We couldn’t ever track you down. We went to every place the presents came from. The closest we ever got to you was in Texas. We actually got a hold of you boarding a bus to Louisiana. You never arrived there though.”

I winced, “The bus route stopped for snacks, and I took a cab back to Oklahoma.” Dusty sighed, “I just need to let go of how I thought all this was going to go. I’m not handling my anger well, especially for our parents. I’m mad at myself for not even suspecting my dad in your disappearance. I know who he is, I have for a long time, but I just never thought...”

He trailed off. I put my hand on his, “Why would you have? You didn’t know he wasn’t my dad.” Dusty turned, “But I SHOULD have. I should have investigated the stones turning to water. If I’d bothered to do that one thing, I could’ve saved ALL my sibling’s pain. Katie... hell Katie became a P.I. for Christ’s sake. Ry and I had to pick her up from the hospital a few times.” I said, “I know. If it makes you feel better, Logan killed those people. Well, he had some in the Hackura realm still.”

Dusty laughed, “Of course he did. We couldn’t find them, they went underground.” I nodded, “I figured. There’s no way you guys would let anyone get away with hurting Katie.” Dusty said, “Or you.” I nodded, “I know that too.”

Dusty assured me, “I will stop getting upset about you and Lucas. I just want you to be happy. If he’s it, then he’s it. I won’t ask about kids, and I’ll do my best to be happy when that time comes.” I smiled, “Thank you, Dusty. I’m not going to spring a kid on you the rest of this year so you’re safe.” Dusty smiled, “I appreciate that.”

I pointed to Ry, “He can’t say the same, nor can you.” Both laughed. Dusty admitted, “That’s true. I’ve just had a hard time moving you from that last night we all ate together. I see that little girl who ran to her room crying about mom and dad fighting.”

I nodded, “I know. I should’ve talked to guys, I’m sorry.” Dusty hugged me, “Let’s all put it behind us. Mostly me. I’ll figure out how to channel my anger at our mom and my dad.” I nodded, “I love you, big brother. I love that you all never gave up on finding me. It means so much to me that you guys did everything you did. I know you guys made sacrifices. Did you and Aubree even go on a honeymoon?” Dusty cringed, “No, Aubree understood though. We were using the money for leads on you, and the trips to track things down.”

I nodded. I was going to talk to Lucas about that. I wanted to give them both a trip. I didn’t know what to do for Katie, but I’d figure that out. I could give Dusty and Aubree a honeymoon. I could also give Ry and Valerie the trip to Europe Ry always wanted. Lucas would help me; I knew he would.

I asked, “Are you guys going to train on your fairy powers?” They both shrugged. Ry rubbed the back of his head, “We are thinking about it. Especially with what Katie can do, but we haven’t decided.” I nodded, we all hugged. I told them, “I’ll see you guys later.” They squeezed me a little tighter than normal.

I popped to Lucas, grabbed Katie and Logan, then popped us to Haley’s yard. I assured Lucas everything was ok, then went to go over to practice. I walked away only to have Katie grab me. She asked worriedly, “Are you alright? I’ve been worried about you and Dustin all day. He’ll get his head out of his ass, I just know it.”

I smiled, “We talked. He’s just really angry about everything.” She nodded, “Yeah, well he can join the club. He doesn’t need to be a jerk about it though.” I laughed, “I think he’s done now.” Katie nodded and Haley came over, smiling at us.

Haley said, “Idel says you’re hers the whole lesson.” Idel popped to me, “Yes, Hexxi is hogging all our half-sisters. I told her wasn’t fair, so here I am to teach you guys.” Haley laughed, “You were at my partial fairy event Sunday.” Idel snorted, “I couldn’t find a sibling there. My mom would know if she had another child, and dad is upfront about his children.” Haley shrugged, “Whoopsies happen? That’s the saying, yes?”

Katie and I laughed. I said, “It’s accidents, but whoopsies works too; I suppose.” Haley shrugged, “Whoopsies is more to say than accidents. Seriously, someone needs to put me in charge of your realm’s sayings. They need my help.” I bit my lip, “That would be something.”

Idel chimed in, “Yes, yes, yes. Haley is delightfully entertaining now. My sister, my turn!” Haley put her hands up. She turned to my sister, “Let’s leave them to their water fairy lessons, Katie. Today, you and I are going to try popping.” Katie laughed.

I looked at Idel as they walked away. I asked, “Do you think she can pop?” Idel nodded, “Yes, she will be able to.” I started laughing. Idel frowned, “What is funny about that?” I replied, “Logan will shit a brick.” Idel smiled, “Won’t that be fun? Let’s watch him lose it.”

We both laughed when Logan’s entire body literally jerked when Katie managed to pop a few inches away from Haley. We gathered ourselves after several moments, before Idel said, “Hexxi said you were working on freezing the lake. She told me you got a fourth of it covered. That’s quite impressive for your first try.”

I snorted, “Hexxi didn’t think so.” Idel rolled her eyes, “For as much time as she spends with the partial fairy’s that girl has her head in the clouds. You weren’t training on these powers

until recently, your progress is fantastic.” I smiled tentatively at her.

Idel continued, “Haley told me she gave you more instructions on how to freeze the water. Trusting your light is a good start. I want you to do that, but I want to expand on that. Focus on the molecules that make up the water. Imagine it as a skeleton, something smaller that you can visualize. Water is made of particles and atoms among other things. Use your thoughts to will the lake turn to water using your light and encouraging the atoms that make up the water itself.”

I smiled, “That’s a really good way to put it.” Idel smiled, “I bet you can get half of the lake frozen today. Trust yourself and the water. That’s part of being a fairy. We have to trust in the element that gives us powers.”

Sharon came up to us greeting, “Hey guys!” I smiled, “Hey! How have you been?” She wrinkled her nose, “Garrett locked me in our room because he didn’t want me to come tonight.” My jaw dropped. Idel laughed, “Silly wolf, he forgot who he was dealing with.” Sharon rolled her eyes, “He did.”

I asked, “Why didn’t he want you to come?” Sharon sighed, “He’s worried about my heat hitting without him around. I swear, it happened to one girl in their pack and now all the men have lost their shit.”

I frowned, “But I brought Chelsea to Peter.” Sharon clapped, “SEE? Thank you! It was fine.” Idel laughed, “Well, while we wait for a wolf to break the land speed record getting to you...” Sharon smiled smugly, “Haley took care of it. He’s not coming.”

Idel teased, “Then you’re in for it when you get home. I’ll think of something to help you while we work today. For lesson purposes, you get a bowl of water. I want you to control the water in it. Make multiple drops out of the bowl.” Sharon asked, “I can do that?” Idel said, “Of course you can. Emmaline, get to work.” I smiled. I felt a little bad, but I already liked Idel better than Hexxi. She was much more relatable and sister-like.

I got to work and realized Idel was right. I'd managed to get half the lake frozen today. It took me most of our lesson, and I was exhausted, but I was really proud of myself.

Idel squealed, "Look at you go! Half the lake! Did you see that, Haley? She already froze half the lake! We will be having our ice-skating lesson in no time!" Haley laughed, "I think that will be a fun break for everyone." Idel clapped her hands, "I've thought of a way to help my sister out with her wolf problem."

Sharon started laughing. I asked, "Problem?" Idel said, "Don't you pretend like he won't go all wolf on her the second she gets back." I smiled, "He will. How can you help her?" Idel smirked, "We little sister, WE help her by doing the water fairy ritual."

Haley started laughing. I asked, "How will that help her?" Idel rolled her eyes, "Haley, you said you did the earth ritual with her." Haley nodded, "I did." Idel turned to me, "Then do I have to explain that her wolf won't be doing any yelling or talking of the non-carnal nature for the entire night?" I blushed.

Sharon asked, "What's going on? Why will Garrett be having sex with me all night? Not that I'm complaining." Idel said, "After we do the water ritual your water side will basically demand you screw your wolf into oblivion. Since we have three of us here, and we are sisters, it will intensify the need."

Sharon gaped, "He locked me in a room, why would I want to reward that behavior?" Idel tilted her head, "It's for you sister. YOU will be in control unless you give it over to him. Besides, having sex is fun. It's not just for men, and it will get you out of trouble. That wolf won't be able to remember his name when you are done."

Sharon looked at me with a questioning stare. I shrugged, "I have no problem with being a crazed sex fairy tonight with Lucas." Idel clapped her hands, "That's the spirit! Come on Sharon, it's sister bonding time." Sharon seemed to be debating but laughed when Idel started bouncing up and down

like a little kid, “Please, please, please, please! Hexxi gets to do everything with you guys! She’ll convince you to do it when I’m not here. Please sister, let me bond with you both this way.”

I searched her soul then said, “She truly doesn’t want to miss out on more time with us.” Idel smiled at me. Sharon exasperatedly sighed, “Fine, but we’re ALL do it together. Emmaline has to come.” I smirked and looked at Lucas. I winked at him saying, “I was already in. He got me all kinds of up this morning at training.”

Haley asked, “He did what?” I told her, “He joined training this morning to get me all hot and bothered.” Haley laughed, “And now I know what I’m doing tomorrow morning after Eric and his brothers go running.” I laughed.

Sharon wickedly stated, “Garret won’t know what hit him.” I laughed, “He really won’t.” Haley asked, “Katie, do you want to give my brother a time and a half tonight?” Katie tilted her head, “The earth ritual?” Haley nodded, “Why not? They are going to do the water ritual.”

Katie looked back at Logan with mischief in her eyes. Haley laughed, “They for sure know something is up now. You guys need to work on being covert.” Katie shrugged, “I don’t need to be covert. Let’s do it.” We all grabbed hands as Lucas yelled at me not to go. Idel laughed at him.

Haley popped us to the little pond where we’d done our earth fairy ritual. She commented, “Someone should tell my lion you never dare a fairy.” I laughed, “I would’ve gone anyway.” Haley snorted, “Have you ever turned down a dare, Emmaline?” I thought about it, “Actually, no.” Haley smiled, “Fairy side. Dares can be mischievous or bring out mischievous fun.” I nodded, “Noted.”

Idel popped to the middle of the pond. She snapped and we both looked down. Sharon and I were now in white halter top leotards with a see through short white skirt that faded to blue above our knees. I smiled, “I love fairy things.” Sharon smiled, “Me too.”

Idel called, "Come on slow pokes!" Haley laughed, "Yeah, you pokey pokes! Get out there!" Katie laughed. Sharon asked me, "She knows it's a pokey puppy, right? I mean it's a children's book, and she has kids." I replied, "She has absolutely no idea it's a pokey puppy. I am very confident in that answer." Sharon laughed and grabbed my hand. We both popped to Idel and Haley and Katie moved off to do the earth ritual a little further away from the pond.

Idel clapped, "I'm going to show you guys the moves. Before you say ask if I expect you to be a synchronized swimmer the answer is yes I do, BUT it will come naturally to you. I promise." We both nodded.

She was right, and luckily this pond was somehow clear enough for us to see into. I wondered if Haley enchanted it or something for water fairy rituals. A soft hydraulophone started playing. I looked around and spotted one playing itself in the middle of our group. Idel winked at me, "Fairy magic is fun." I nodded and we copied the moves she showed us.

We were practically a small, synchronized swim team. We moved with precision around each other for the whole song. It felt like a few moments, but I knew it was longer. Idel spoke softly, "Take my hands sisters, we will float on our backs until we feel our need and pop to our men." I smiled asking, "You have a man?" Idel winked, "I have a lover. I have not found my mate yet."

We all took each other's hands. Our heads were in the center next to each other and we just floated. I felt much closer to Idel and Sharon than I had before. I was glad Idel had shown us this ritual. I wondered where Maribella was. Something told me her wolf was going a little crazy about her pregnancy. I couldn't help but smile realizing that's exactly what had happened.

I let myself listen to the sounds coming from the hydraulophone. It was a beautiful instrument. Few people knew of it, but something told me water fairies were drawn to it. Out of nowhere a need hit me, almost pulling me under the water.

Sharon and I jolted up, looking around wild eyed. Idel instructed gently, "Go to your wolves, sisters. Thank you for joining in this ritual with me. I look forward to doing it again. It's special with family." I barely managed to say, "Thanks, Idel. It was great!" Then I popped away, thinking only of Lucas.

He was pacing in the same room we'd been in last time. I wanted to growl at him for not being naked. I was on him after snapping his clothes away; like he should've been all along. I attacked his lips because I needed him. I was certain if he wasn't inside me soon, I'd stop breathing. Lucas said something to me, but I pulled his face to mine.

I popped us to the couch and lowered myself down onto him. He growled, "Damn, baby girl." I smirked and popped off him. He snarled. I winked and grabbed his hands and popped so now he was bent over the couch. I conjured a whip and spanked him with it.

He gripped the armrest, growling. I turned him, pushed him over the armrest, and jumped on him. I slid myself back onto him moaning. I couldn't stop. I put one of his hands on my breast, and the other in between my legs. He pinched me and I screamed his name. I yanked him up to a seated position gripping his hair. I turned his head to the side, then bit his mark hard imagining, sharp teeth like his re-marking him.

I possessively growled, "MINE!" Lucas' eyes went black as he answered, "Yours." I kept riding him, "Only mine! Swear it!" Lucas answered, "I swear it, baby girl. I'm yours, only ever yours. As you are mine." I smirked, "Then prove it, Alpha."

Dominic growled and had me under him in seconds. He grinned wickedly, "Prove it, you say?" I nodded and jerked my hips, needing friction. He caught my hips, "Oh no, no, my naughty fairy. I have something to prove." He pulled out of me, and I whimpered. I pouted, "That's not what I meant."

I was flipped around, and his hand came down hard on my butt three times. He carried me to the bed, tossing me onto it as if I was as light as a feather. His face was in between my

legs and his tongue was on me. I was screaming his name soon enough. My legs were shaking from pleasure.

After four orgasms, I clamped my legs so hard around his head he laughed, “Don’t try to kill me down here, baby girl.” I was still screaming but tried to send a message to my legs to relax. They weren’t responding though; I was too far gone. Lucas pulled me off the bed and turned me around, so my arms were on the mattress. I grew wet in the anticipation of him entering me.

He commanded, “Conjure me a butt plug.” I immediately did as he said and heard him spit into his hand. He placed the plug in my butt and entered me at the same time. I felt so full. He whispered, “Are you ok?” I nodded, “More. Please, Lucas.”

He lightly put his hand on the nape of my neck, and the other went to my hip, gripping much harder. He slammed into me, “You are so wet, Emmaline. FUCK!” I gripped the sheets and when Lucas put a little pressure onto my neck, I lost it. I came so hard I couldn’t stand anymore. Lucas put me on the bed. I begged, “More, please! I need it so badly.” Lucas made a startled sound of surprise.

His eyes flicked back again and I knew I’d brought Dominic out again. He entered me, and we stayed like that for hours. I was barely awake when we finished. Lucas gently spoke, “Maybe you pop us home in the morning.” I mumbled, “Sounds good.” I was out like a light after that.

My alarm going off startled me awake. I bolted out of bed not recognizing the room. Lucas’ arm snaked around me, “It’s alright, we are still at Eric and Haley’s.” I gaped at the room that was in complete disarray around us. We’d been kind to it last time in our destruction, this was chaos.

I commented, “It looks like a tornado hit the room.” Lucas smirked, “Hurricane Emmaline hit. I’m a fan.” I snorted, “I don’t think I did this by myself, mister.” Lucas grinned, “Guilty as charged, baby girl.” I rolled my eyes, “And smug. You forgot smug.”

Lucas started tickling me on the bed. I managed to say, “Hey, I need to pop us back! I’ll be late for training.” Lucas shook his head, “Nope, Dylan and I talked about this. You and Lacy won’t be training with the pack Thursday’s. You have your Haley training.”

I pouted, “But I like training.” Lucas said, “I understand, but you’re going to be taking on multiple assailants on Thursday nights now. I want you to be fresh. It was the only way to calm Dylan down after you fell asleep.”

I frowned asking, “Why is he so worried?” Lucas smiled, “It’s hard for us. You are training, and we realize you are strong and capable. but you are our mates and it’s in our nature to want to protect you. In training, you will be in danger. Add to that he’s grappling a little bit with Lacy having been gone for two years. It’s hard for him, which is VERY hard for him to admit. He’s the funny guy, but she’s his mate.”

I sighed. I felt bad for Dylan. He was being weird, but I’m sure it was hard knowing his mate was out there on the run when he actually knew her. Lucas struggled and he didn’t know me. Dylan probably feels like he didn’t protect her. To get my mind of how much that must hurt Dylan’s soul, I initiated another round of sex. We showered afterwards. I tried to snap the room back together and I was pleased I was only missing little things like broken lamps.

I popped us back to our home and got ready for school. Gemma had our breakfast ready and waiting for us the second I popped us into the kitchen. She smiled, “I’m getting used to that. Alyssa told me it gets better with time.” Lucas choked on a pancake, “I don’t think I’ve heard anyone, outside of Cassandra, call Mrs. Blanch Alyssa.” Gemma laughed, “Of course people call her by her name, Lucas.” He nodded, “Of course. Still weird to hear.”

I handed him a glass of water. He linked me, “Thanks.” I nodded and asked, “So, since Chelsea is moving packs, who will be the next Gamma?” Gemma smiled, “She was training to be the Gamma. Lucas is such a forward thinker.” Huh?

Lucas said, "Chelsea has a little brother." I gasped, "What?!" Gemma laughed, "He's three. A bit of an oops on our part. I thought I was past my prime." Lucas sat back and seemed to be contemplating something.

Gemma asked, "What's that look Alpha?" Lucas said, "You got in that accident right before you got pregnant with him." I asked, "What? Where?" Gemma answered, "We were on vacation in Ireland. Driving there was not for us. Well, Alex did fine. The accident was my fault. I turned, forgetting we drive on the opposite side of the road. I overcorrected and put us in a ditch."

Lucas pressed, "Afterwards, what happened?" Gemma laughed, "You know, Alex has such a different version. I had this euphoric feeling. My poor mate was in pain, and it was my fault. He does say he had a euphoric feeling too. He swears he heard voices. A modulated one and a normal one, crazy man."

I gasped. Gemma asked, "What?" I looked at Lucas, "You think Haley healed her?" Lucas nodded, "I do. Alex probably did hear a modulated voice." I frowned, "Who...? BA! You think Haley and BA were there." He nodded.

Gemma gasped, "Lucas, please ask Alpha Eric to ask her for us. That was so kind of her, and we all adore Bray." That was a place I'd always wanted to visit. I asked, "Is that the name of the town you got in your accident in?" Gemma nodded, "I went into heat that night, and when we got back, we found out I was pregnant. We thought it was a magical place." Lucas snorted, "She definitely healed you, but I'll talk to Eric though." My cousin was the best.

Lacy linked me, "Is Lucas coming to the dance on Saturday?" I winced, "I didn't ask him." Lacy sighed, "Ask him so I can tell Dylan he's coming." I sighed, "Lucas..." He turned towards me, "Yes?" He was smiling, almost as if he knew what I was about to ask.

I took a deep breath, "There's a dance on Saturday at school... and well... will you go with me?" Lucas kissed me, "Of course, baby girl." I smiled and he asked, "What color is

your dress?" I winced, "I'll tell you later." Lucas laughed, "You don't have a dress, do you?" He was right.

I stood and grabbed my backpack, "I'll have one tonight after I ask Haley about it." Lucas said, "Fairy godmother duties again? She'll be thrilled."

I smiled and ran to the car. I got in and Lacy immediately asked, "Well?" I nodded, "He's coming." Lacy whooped, "I KNEW IT! This is going to be such fun. Do you have a dress?" I shrugged, "I'm going to ask Haley if she can do her thing." Lacy smiled, "Perfect!"

I asked, "Do you need her to get you a dress?" Lacy shook her head, "No, I have a dress. I bought it in Ireland. I've just needed an occasion to wear it." I smiled, "Well, then Saturday it is."

School flew by for me. Lacy and I linked back and forth all day about our training lesson. We were really excited. A little nervous, but mostly excited. Time started to move at the pace of snails when we got home.

Lacy groaned, "Could time go ANY slower?" Dylan practically squeaked, "Slow? Time is practically going warp speed. I'm sensing fairy hijinks afoot." Lucas laughed, "Dylan, it's going to be fine." Dylan growled at him.

I raised an eyebrow. I teased, "Can't you find some chill like Lucas?" Dylan whirled, "Chill? Is that what you sense from him?" I sighed and searched Lucas' soul. He was in fact not calm. He was worried, a little panicked, and feeling protective. I admitted, "No."

Dylan shrieked, "AH HA! I KNEW IT!" Lucas rolled his eyes, "Some of us have composure." Dylan said, "Composure is for Alpha's. Us Beta's lose all composure at the things you all as Alpha's put us through sometimes. We have support groups for all the CRAP we have to do." Lucas laughed, "I'm sure you do." Dylan was muttering quietly.

I hated it when they did that. I chided him, "Dylan if you don't want everyone to hear you, link them. I'm the only non-wolf here who can't hear you. I don't have super hearing."

Dylan smirked, “I am deeply sorry you are missing my commentary; it’s duly noted that you like hearing it. It’s an adjustment having someone who can’t hear me so far away. I’ll correct that immediately, have no fair pretty little Luna. I said this is madness.”

I shrugged, “I think madness would be me never training with Lacy when we seem to be facing multiple threats. It’s a good idea and you know it.” Dylan imitated my words in a mocking tone, “It’s a good idea and you know it.” Lucas spoke in a warning tone, “Dylan.” Dylan grumbled, “What? Don’t you Dylan me. This is insane.”

Bjourn appeared behind Dylan. I tried not to laugh when he winked at me. Bjourn asked Dylan, “What is insane?” Dylan actually jumped several inches into the air. I couldn’t stop my laugh. Dylan whirled around yelling, “You must CEASE doing that immediately! WHY? Why MUST you walk around like a NINJA! MAKE SOME DAMN NOISE!”

Bjourn laughed, “I am afraid I cannot.” Bjourn smiled at Lacy and me, “My mate and sister in law are very excited for your lesson. Actually, my sister and cousin are too.” Another one of Haley’s brothers stepped up behind Bjourn. At least I was pretty sure he was her brother. He looked related to the others I’d met.

He nodded to us, “It’s a pleasure to meet you Lacy and Emmaline. I saw you when we came for my sister when she got shot, but introductions weren’t made.” I nodded and held out my hand, “Emmaline.” He smiled, “Prince Benjamin.” Lacy spoke, “I’m Lacy. You’re Ariel’s mate, right? So, she’s fighting with us too?” Prince Benjamin smiled, “Against you actually, but more or less.”

Dylan grabbed Lacy and stormed off towards the gym. He grumbled, “Perfect. This is just PERFECT!” I bit my lip. Prince Benjamin said, “Strange man your Beta, Alpha Lucas. I heard he was funny.” Lucas smirked, “He’s one of a kind.” Prince Benjamin shrugged, “Logan quite likes him.” I had noticed that.

We all walked towards the gym. Once we got there, Lucas dropped my hand and walked over to Dylan. He was pinned underneath Haley. She teased, "See? Don't you want them to be good like me, my friend Dylan?" He sighed, "Of course I do, you are an amazing fun sized special ninja fairy." He winked at Eric who growled at him.

Dylan gracefully jumped up when Haley moved off him. Eric yanked her into his arms and growled at Dylan. Eric's soul was both amused, annoyed, and possessive. Dylan's soul was worried, but now a larger part was smug.

I jumped in, "Ok, I don't know what that was. You all go solve your man problems while we women folk fight each other." Haley laughed. Lucas gave me a hard kiss. When he pulled back all the men stalked off.

Astrid nudged me, "I like you, Emmaline." I smiled at her, blushing a little. Haley instructed, "Miley and Astrid are going to fight Emmaline while Ariel and I fight Lacy." I winced, "I hoped I'd be fighting you." Haley smiled, "You will, but we've been training together. I want you to see different styles."

I quickly told her before I forgot, "After we are done, I need your help with something. There's a dance on Saturday that I completely forgot about. I need a dress." Haley smiled, "Your fairy godmother will get you to the dance in a beautiful dress." Astrid laughed but looked at me appreciatively.

Haley clapped, "And now we fight." Lacy and I stood back to back. I linked her, "Do you think they have an easy setting?" She took a punch from Ariel and snorted, "No, they do not." We fought back working together. It was a little awkward at first, but we were learning each other's styles quickly.

Astrid definitely didn't have an easy setting. We reset multiple times. It was like fighting a bear, a lion, and a cheetah simultaneously. Haley's team was switching around who was fighting who. It was kind of incredible to watch them fight together as a team.

Astrid and Ariel swapped places. Ariel was now fighting me, and Astrid was fighting Lacy. Haley even switched with Miley at one point. Haley smiled, “Good job guys! Next time we are going to take this outside.”

Dylan half screamed, “OUTSIDE? LUCAS! Chill does NOT LIVE HERE ANYMORE! I was not designed to have such feelings!” I laughed, “So we can hide and use the terrain?” Haley nodded, “Yes, and you will pop away.”

I pointed out, “I’d take Lacy with me.” Haley smiled, “And I’ll bring my team with me. You never pop leaving your teammate unless you know they are fine.” Haley held out her hand and healed my face from the bruising I’d gotten. She healed Lacy, Miley, and Ariel. We’d managed to get some shots on those two. Astrid and Haley were just fine since we never managed to land a hit on either one.

Dylan was beside Lacy in a second. He told her, “I, for one, hated everything about that.” Lacy smirked, “You would. It was fun though. I see why you like fighting.” Dylan shrieked, “FUN? Oh, dear lord. LUCAS! Did you hear what you have done?” Lucas responded, “She has Alpha blood. What do you want me to do?”

Dylan grumbled and started to take Lacy away. She gave me a signal. I popped to her and popped us back behind Haley. Dylan growled clearly annoyed. Lacy smiled, “I want to see the dress Emmaline gets for the dance Saturday.” Dylan sighed, “Fine.”

Haley called, “Eric.” Eric laughed, “Let’s go, Lucas.” Lucas complained, “You have GOT to be kidding me.” Haley waved her hands, “Out. I’m saying it nicely. I won’t if I have to say it again, my lion.”

Lucas said, “That wasn’t saying it nicely. I refuse to leave until you say it nicely.” Haley smirked, “Challenge accepted.” Bjourn gleefully yelled, “YES! Finally! Someone understands the challenge was issued.” Haley called the wind, and it pushed Lucas outside. Dylan was howling in laughter while Lucas tried to fight air. Eric simply walked out after him.

Haley spoke in fealish. I asked, “What did you say?” Haley smiled, “I temporarily barred Lucas from entering the gym. Let’s get you your dress. We have fifteen minutes.” I laughed then turned to Lacy asking, “What kind of dress are we talking about? I’ve found the dress code differs from school to school.” Lacy smiled, “All of the ones at our school are formal, you need a long dress.” I smiled, “You’re going to love this Haley, because the dress I want is pink.”

Astrid, Miley, and Ariel snorted. Haley clapped with glee, “REALLY?” I nodded, “Yup.” I took out my phone and showed her a picture. Haley loved the dress. She conjured a wand stating, “Bibbidi Bobbidi boo.

The dress I wanted appeared on me. Lacy gasped, “It’s gorgeous!” It had a beaded top that was see through until you got to the sweetheart neckline. There was a beaded belt at my waist then it flowed out from there.

I twirled squealing, “I love it!” Haley smiled, “Let me know if you like the shoes.” I lifted my dress to find silver shoes with little jewels on them. I smiled whispering, “They are perfect.” I looked up and hugged her. I sincerely told her, “Thank you.” She smiled and snapped me back into my work out clothes.

Lucas threw the door open glaring at Haley. She smiled and waved at him, “Welcome back, my lion. Emmaline’s dress and shoes are perfect in case you were wondering.” Lucas gritted his teeth, “I’m sure it is.”

Eric wrapped his arms around Haley, nipping at her ear, “Let’s get out of here.” Haley agreed, “Hop on board the fairy express. Back to the territory where people appreciate the things I do for them. Honestly, my lion. It’s beginning to hurt my feelings.” Haley popped away. I frowned. Her soul told me it was true.

Dylan said, “I love the fairy show. I love it so much. We have GOT to get them a reality show. Don’t you dare hurt her feelings anymore, you sleep tyrant Alpha you. I’ll never forgive you if my show gets cancelled.” Lucas rolled his eyes and took me back to our room. I texted Haley.

Me: Where did the dress go?

Haley: The Luna closet. Molly told me there were Luna rooms. I never used ours. I don't understand why the fuck they have them, but that's just me. I turned ours into the triplet's nurse.

Me: Thank you again! I love it.

Haley: Anytime. I love fashion, and my Fairy Godmother tasks.

Lucas told me, "You did really well tonight." I disagreed, "We didn't win once." Lucas pointed out, "Those women have been fighting together since Haley was brought to the Hackura realm eight years ago now. You and Lacy did a good job." His soul told me he was serious. He was also very proud of me and of Lacy. I smiled, "We did, didn't we?" Lucas nodded and we went to sleep.

Friday actually flew by. I was really excited about this dance. I woke up on Saturday and did my training with Lacy and Valerie in tow. Valerie commented, "I bet a lot of the girls will be here. This is the easiest one to get in with the dance tonight." She was right. Almost all the girls were here this morning. Which Alex seemed prepared for.

Afterwards, I popped back into my room finding an envelope on the bed. I looked around, but I couldn't find Lucas. He must have gotten up early. I pouted but opened my letter to read it.

Baby Girl,

Today you are going to be relaxing. I'm going to make sure you're pampered. Haley snapped the Luna room into a spa for today. Chelsea, Sam, Valerie, and Lacy will all be getting ready with you. Katie is joining as well, but just for fun. I've scheduled massages, manicures, pedicures, and someone

will be doing all your hair and makeup for all of you. Enjoy being pampered. I love you.

Lucas

I smiled and wiped a few happy tears away. I linked Lucas, “Don’t we have time for shower sex this morning?” He growled in our link. I popped into the shower. I turned on the water and found myself pinned against the wall.

I smirked, “Good morning, Lucas.” He managed to say, “Good morning” against my neck before we were buried inside each other. We separated when a knock came from the adjoining door. Lacy yelled, “I’ll send Dylan in there! It’s pampering time!”

Lucas laughed, “We should make her come in here, you got me all riled up.” Lacy must have heard him because she replied, “As I said, I’d send in Dylan. I’m not risking having to gouge my own eyes out. No thank you.” I laughed and stepped out of the shower, snapping us dry.

I snapped myself into a zip up jacket and some yoga pants. Lucas groaned, “That’s not helping, baby girl.” Dylan came through the door with his eyes covered. He started talking, “I was informed I must come here. So here I am, a poor cog to my makes wishes. Is everyone decent?” I laughed, “Yes.”

Dylan removed his hands from his eyes, “I have been ordered to drag you from the room, Lucas. Lacy is saying if I don’t there will be no sex tonight. Get your wonderful Alpha self out of this room or I’ll cockblock you back. Don’t do it to me, man. I’ve been serious so much lately; my mind is practically revolting at the thought. We must leave and I must tell jokes. I was thinking of messing with King Alpha Prick just to settle myself.” I laughed while Lucas shivered, throwing up in hands in defeat. They left the room together.

I walked into the Luna rooms and laughed. I commented, “Haley just goes all out.” Valerie and Lacy simultaneously said, “Yes, she does.” They yelled, “JINX!” The room was completely transformed. It was now a salon and spa. I smiled

when I spotted my sister. I ran to hug Katie. I added, "I'm surprised Haley didn't join us."

Katie admitted, "Logan said this isn't her thing. It's something to do with being touched by too many people." I straightened, "That makes sense and it's people she doesn't know." Katie nodded. We both took in the room as Chelsea and Sam arrived.

There was a table with sparkling Rosé and regular, clearly labeled Peggos and non-peggos drinks. The girls and I laughed the entire time we got ready. The massage was heavenly. I asked, "Do only girls work at the salon Lucas hired?" Chelsea snorted, "Are you kidding? Our mates would NEVER hire men to do this. They'd all be in here in a second to drag the poor unsuspecting man out for doing his job. It would cause a stir too. It's considered quite taboo for a she wolf to smell of another male. Particularly date night."

Katie's eyes narrowed and she frowned. I asked, "What's wrong?" She shrugged. I took her in the bathroom. She spoke the space unheard chant. She said, "Miley told me the morning of Eric and Haley's wedding she took a massage meant for Haley." I frowned, "Ok, given she doesn't like being touch, that makes sense." Katie frowned, "No, it doesn't. The masseur was a male. Why would they do that if it's so common that she wolves know it would cause a problem?" I frowned, "I'm not sure." We didn't dwell on it, and quickly walked back out.

It was the most relaxing day I'd ever had. I thought I'd never get to have this kind of day with my friends let alone with my sister. I walked over to Katie and squeezed her hand, "I'm so glad you joined." Katie snorted, "Nothing would keep me away from getting you ready for your dance. You helped me get ready for all of mine."

I smiled as the memories filled me. Katie and I would make a day of getting her ready for dances. I was always better at doing her nail polish than she was. I told her, "I loved those days." Katie smiled, "So did I." She helped me carefully into my dress once my hair and makeup were done. She even

insisted on helping me with my shoes. She stood back, “Evie, you look beautiful.” I smiled, “Thank you Katie.”

I walked out, and the other girls were all dressed too. I said, “Gosh, we are one hot looking bad ass girl gang.” Chelsea insisted that we raise a sparkling Rosé glass to that. We toasted and ate some of the pizza Lucas had gotten for us.

Chelsea asked, “How should we do our entrance for the guys?” I smirked, “The fairy way. Pop in and startle them all, except Logan. I think it’s impossible to startle him.” I snapped Katie into a sexy dress black dress. She laughed, “Nice, little sister.” Everyone laughed as we all grabbed hands.

I popped us to the middle of the living room yelling, “Ta-da!” The guys all whirled, except Logan who just smirked. Dylan rolled his eyes, “Not even that gets you? A pop out of nowhere is just an everyday event to you.”

Logan smirked, “For the past eight years it has been an everyday thing to me. It takes a lot to surprise me.” Dylan smiled, “Challenge issued and accepted!” Lucas groaned, “Dylan?” He asked, “What? The creepy silent ninja’s are always talking about challenges. I am taking a page from my fun sized ninja fairy’s book. I SHALL surprise him. Somehow.” I snickered.

Lucas whispered in my ear, “You look beautiful, baby girl.” I replied, “You look quite handsome yourself.” He had on a light pink tie and a black button-down shirt with black pants. I asked, “Where did you get the tie to match my dress?”

Lucas lightly squeezed my waist, “Your fairy godmother, of course. We couldn’t possibly end up with two different shades of pink. Apparently, that would be catastrophic.” I shrugged, “Pink is her favorite color.”

Dylan squealed, “We know. You should see pictures of their reception. It was like pink galore. Guess who hated pink previously?” I snickered, “Eric?” He clapped, “Ding-Ding-Ding! We have a winner. It was glorious. Someone might have sent Claudzilla pictures after her reappearance at the summit of said wedding. She liked pink, but King Alpha Prick changed and removed every pink thing she had decorated in

their territory. I just imagine she shrieked and threw things. It sparks such joy for me.” Good to know fun Dylan was back.

Lucas took my hand and led me outside. I gaped at the sight before my eyes. I turned to him, “You have an Aston martin?!” Lucas laughed, “I have a red one.” I laughed as he held the door open for me. I commented, “I thought we were all riding together.” Lucas shrugged.

Ry came up at a jog, “You look beautiful, Evie.” I smiled, “You look dashing yourself, Ry.” He smiled and gave me a hug. I wished Dusty had come. I guess this was still too much for him, and he didn’t want to ruin my night. It still stung. Ry whispered in my ear, “Look to your right.”

I stepped back and turned to see Dusty. I smiled and ran over to him. He picked me up and spun me around. He told me, “You look beautiful, Evie, all grown up.” Aubree said, “Land sakes alive, Dustin, She IS grown up. We have been over this time and time again.” I turned to Aubree and gasped, she was glowing. She asked, “What? We have talked about it, a lot.”

I looked back at Dusty and winked, “I’m just realizing I’m going to be an aunt twice over now.” Aubree stood stock still for a moment, then started bawling. Dusty picked her up spinning her around. Aubree asked, “Really?” I nodded, “You are without a doubt glowing.” Dusty shouted, “I’M GOING TO BE A DAD!”

Ry and Katie both ran over congratulating them and we had a sibling family hug. I said, “Ok, we officially have to go.” Katie said, “Being late is all the rage.” I laughed and gave her a hug. She told me, “Have so much fun tonight!” Logan wrapped his arms around her and her little bump in her sexy black dress.

I asked her, “Do we know if I’m getting a niece or nephew yet?” Katie smiled at Logan. He kissed the side of her forehead, “Go on, tell them.” Katie smiled happily, “It’s a boy.” I squealed and hugged her. Lucas had joined us by this point and shook Dusty’s hand along with Logan’s.

Eventually we separated, and our group headed off for the dance. I happily chatted away, “That’s so exciting about Aubree and Dusty.” Lucas smiled, agreeing, “It is.” I asked, “Why wasn’t Dusty with you guys today?” Lucas gripped the wheel. I frowned, “He promised me he’d do better with you.” Lucas said, “It wasn’t about me. He had some things to deal with warlock wise.”

I could tell Lucas’ soul was worried, but it made me happy it wasn’t about Dusty. I smiled, “Good. He’s still trying like he promised.” Lucas smiled, “He really is.” I changed the subject, “I’d like your help with something. Aubree and Dusty didn’t go on a honeymoon because they were spending the money to fund the find Emmaline campaign they were spearheading. Ry always wanted to go to Europe, I know he spent his trip money too. I thought maybe if it’s not too much trouble we could... Well, I don’t have enough money...”

Lucas interrupted me, “My money is your money, married or not. You are my mate. You and I can look up places and book a honeymoon for Dustin and Aubree. We have several homes throughout the world. We can send Ryan and Valerie to Europe after graduation.” I smiled, “You are good to me, Lucas Lyons.”

He smiled and we pulled into the parking lot. Everyone was waiting in our group to walk in together. It was your typical high school dance. Someone spiked the punch, the decorations were stars hanging above the group, and some streamers and everyone looked really good.

We’d been dancing in our group for a half hour straight. I turned to Lucas, “I’m going to the bathroom.” Lucas nodded smiling, “I’ll get us some water.” I laughed, “Aww, you’re not going to get the punch?” Lucas snorted, “It was spiked, so that’s a no.” I laughed as he headed towards the refreshments table. I watched him go for a minute before heading to the bathroom.

I did my business then freshened up my lipstick before heading back. It was only a few minutes, but those few minutes mattered more than I could’ve imagined. I walked back in the gym and looked around. I couldn’t find a single

person from our group. Lucas wasn't by the refreshments, and no one from our group was on the dance floor.

I saw a guy in my first period. I asked, "Hey, did you see where Lucas or my friends went?" He shrugged, "Nope. I didn't even know they were here." I stared at him astonished, "You didn't know your Alpha and Beta were here?" He looked confused.

I asked, "What about the guy from school that's always with me, Brad? Have you seen him?" I actually hadn't, but I knew he was here. The guys shrugged, "No, but there's the Alpha now." I turned to see Lucas heading out the back door.

I was relieved for a whole second before I saw his hand flicker on the door when he turned. I could see his pink tie. I stalled for a second. For once, I was glad that I was raised by a warlock, because it meant that right now, in this moment, I was prepared. I knew this was an illusion now.

I honestly considered not following the fake Lucas, but the worry for my friends and him literally propelled my feet forward. I wound my way down the hallways quickly. We finally reached the front office where the fake Lucas walked inside.

I waited a beat then opened the door. It was like a dagger stabbed me in the heart. Lucas was making out with a girl I'd never seen before. His hand was sliding under her dress. I gasped grabbing my chest. I felt like knives were repeatedly stabbing me. I mentally repeated, "It's not real. It's not real," but the pain was all consuming.

Grayson's voice pulled me out of my spiral saying my name, "Emmaline, is that you?" I took a deep breath mentally telling myself, "It's not real, Emmaline. You knew this wasn't Lucas when you followed him." I didn't dare say it out loud. Witches didn't have supernatural hearing, but I didn't want to let on that I knew this was a game.

Grayson joined me. He yelled, "Holy shit! Let me get you out of here. Let's get you some fresh air." Grayson's arm gripped mine, but I yanked away from him. I ran away from

him towards the women's locker room and bolted the lock just in case.

I told myself, "Think Emmaline...." That's when I knew exactly who I needed. I popped and opened my eyes. Dusty looked surprising, worriedly asking, "Evie? What's going on? Are you crying?" I ran into my brothers' arms.

I told him, "I need you, Dusty. Something weird happened. There's probably several warlocks and witches at the dance casting an illusion. I don't know what happened to Ry or my friends or..." My voice broke, "Lucas... I went to the bathroom. When I came back no one remembered my friends or Lucas were there. The illusion casters wanted me to think Lucas cheated on me. I saw the flicker of his hand before I followed him. I don't know where he is. What do we do?"

Dusty rocked me back and forth for a minute then wiped the tears from my face. He told me, "You are going to snap and fix your makeup." I nodded and did as he said. He continued, "You are going to pop me with you back to the school. I'll come in and find you. Where did you pop from?"

I told him, "The girls locker room on the east side." Dusty nodded, "I'll come get you, and we will figure this out, alright?" Aubree snorted, "We, meaning the three of us." Dusty disagreed, "We, meaning the two of us who are not pregnant." Aubree snorted, "You're hilarious, husband of mine. I'm coming. I'll either be following by car or popping with you and your sister, you decide."

Dusty groaned, "If there's a fight..." I cut him off, "I'll pop her out if she's in danger. Directly to Haley's healing hands if need be." Aubree smiled, realizing I didn't say I wouldn't let her fight. Dusty sighed, "Alright, let's do this."

I nodded, grabbing each of their hands, then I popped them beside the SUV that Ry had driven tonight. Aubree gagged, "God, the magic is so thick I can barely stand it." Dusty said, "Throw up on a bad warlock or witch if need be." Aubree snorted teasing, "How wonderful. Our baby has powers... powers of smell to make me vomit." I couldn't stop my laugh,

which managed to calm me down a little. I squeezed Aubree's hand quickly in gratitude.

Dusty grabbed my hands, "Do not open that locker room door for anyone but me." I nodded and hugged him, "Please be careful, Dusty." He nodded and I popped myself back into the girl's locker room. It was creepy in the dark, but I didn't sense anyone near me.

After twenty minutes, Dusty banged on the door, "It's me. Open the door." I opened it slowly and Dusty yanked me out as he traded spells with a warlock. Dusty yelled, "I warned you!" He called on the shadows. The warlock was gaping as Dusty had the shadows rip his heart out.

Aubree said, "Nice. Messy, but heart out of the chest is classic." I asked, "Have you found Ry?" Aubree said, "Did we ever. Well, he found us. He's been fighting warlocks while looking for you and Valerie. He knew it was an illusion like you and fought it. We just need to find the wolves."

Tears filled my eyes, "What if they make Lucas think I cheated like they tried to trick me?" Dusty said, "Don't cry. He would know it wasn't you, he would feel your bond. He loves you, and he knows you love him. Besides, he knows I'd kick his ass if he didn't believe you."

I laughed and we made our way through the school. Ry was up front standing over a dead body. He was furious. He spotted me and relief colored his expression. He exhaled, "Thank GOD you are ok! We need to find Valerie!" I nodded. Aubree whispered, "They don't want to say your name because of what they call you. They don't want someone to overhear." I nodded.

Dustin rubbed his temples, "We need to take down the illusion. It's the only way to Valerie, Ryan." I said, "Follow me." I took them to my science class. I pointed to the closet, "All the supplies you need are here. You three work on it, and I'll cover you." Aubree got to work. Dusty closed his eyes for a minute or two then nodded. Ry gave me a wink. I smiled knowing Dusty really was trying.

They had just started when two witches came in. They didn't see me until I'd pelted them with hail. I willed it to hit them in their head and they went down quickly. I checked on them and did a happy dance. I'd knocked them unconscious.

I texted Katie what was happening. A second later a portal opened. Logan and Benjamin stepped through. Logan asked, "So, the dance got dramatic?" Benjamin snorted, "Fairies are here. Of COURSE, it got dramatic, brother." I rolled my eyes, "I had nothing to do with this drama, I'm even trying to fix it."

Benjamin asked, "Why didn't you call Haley?" I said, "Well, this was a witch problem. My brother is a warlock, it seemed natural to go to him." Logan said, "Haley would have killed all the witches and warlocks by now."

Benjamin agreed, "She does hate them. Hate makes you such a good fighter." I snorted, "Then my mom should be worried should I ever fight her." Logan commanded, "Duck." I immediately hit the floor as Logan threw two knives.

I heard two bodies hit the floor. I stood up, "Thanks." Logan nodded, "Of course." I smoothed out my dress. I bit my lip, "You guys can go clear the school... I guess?" Logan snorted, "Katie will have my balls if I leave you." Benjamin agreed, "She was very convincing on that point. I'm also not leaving you either, I like my balls where they are." They did managed to make me laugh.

Aubree, Ry and Dusty started chanting louder. I knew that meant the illusion was about to come down. I told the guys, "Get ready. They are about to take it down." Both looked completely ready, anticipating the fight coming our way.

A green light shot through the school. I heard screaming that I recognized. I yelled, "LACY!" I dropped my phone and took off like a shot to the gym. I almost fell when I saw why Lacy had screamed. Valerie had been stabbed.

Sam sobbed, "Why did you do that, Val? Why would you jump in front of me?" Ry's strangled scream hit the air. I saw the shadows kill everyone left, except the one Lucas had been fighting. He and Dylan took him down.

Lucas' relieved eyes met mine for a second. I ran to Valerie, but Ry beat me to her. He cradled her as he cried, "Don't... don't you dare leave me." Valerie whispered, "I love you..." She started coughing up blood, "So much Ryan." Ry was crying while Dusty was working on Valerie.

I knew it was in vain. She wasn't going to make it. I ran out of the gym heading towards my phone. I stopped realizing I could conjure it to me. I called Haley. She answered, "Hello, Emmaline. How's the dance? Damn, I just got popular Logan, Lucas, and you are calling me."

I screamed, "WE NEED YOU! VALERIE IS DYING!" A pop sounded. Haley stood next to me with Jackson. I grabbed her hand and started to run. She simply popped us beside Valerie. Ry cried, "Save her! You can save her, can't you? I'll give you anything you want, please just save her! You have to! Please!"

Jackson came running into the gym. He stared wide eyed going over to Lucas taking out his phone, probably to call Eric. Haley put a hand on Ryan, "Of course I can and will save her. I want nothing in return. Hold her hand if you want but do it quickly, she only has minutes left."

Ry kissed her then moved back. Haley looked at me, "Emmaline, I'm going to pass out when I'm done. Eric will be Eric. Sorry... kind of. No, actually not really. I'm going on a witch and warlock killing spree after this one, brothers."

Benjamin laughed but Logan was staring at Valerie and Ryan with intensity. Valerie's breathing was growing labored. Dusty looked at me, a silent question of whether Haley could do this. I nodded and felt Lucas' arms around me. He cradled me to him, "You're ok. You're ok." I gripped his arm, "I'm fine, Lucas."

He cried into my neck, "I'm so glad you're alright. They... I saw you die." I turned to him, "I saw you kiss a skank." I kissed him hard and tapped his nose whispering, "You're mine. There are no skanks allowed." Lucas whispered back, "You're not allowed to die. No dying." I shrugged, "If you say so."

A pop sounded. Bexley arrived with Eric. She sighed, “Oh ratsenfratsen.” I raised an eyebrow, “What?” Bexley said, “Liam is on a no cursing around our babies kick. I make-up curse words for him, and I’ve started using them too. This is my life now. Mom life, who knew? Healing your brother’s wolf is going to knock Haley out. Her light seems exhausted for some reason. Alexander is down for the night, which means Haley will probably be out until morning. Kujo is going to growl about it.”

Logan said, “That’s better than what it used to be for her to heal something like this. She’s gotten much better though. This shouldn’t knock her out at all.” Bexley shrugged, “She eats more often now, and she’s stronger in her fairy powers. She unlocked her powers, and she uses them regularly. She’s no longer denying her fairy side, she’s found a purpose with the partial fairy’s. I’m not sure what’s going on. Like I said, her light is exhausted for some reason, but I don’t know why. I wish you luck with Kujo.” She popped away.

We all waited practically holding our breath while Haley healed Valerie. I left Lucas’ arms to grab onto Ry. I assured him, “She’s going to be ok.” Ry turned and starting sobbing, “I wanted to hold her hand, but I didn’t want to mess anything up. I can’t lose her. I just found her.”

Dusty came over holding Ry from behind. He spoke confidently, “She’s going to be fine. Haley is the best. She won’t let you lose Valerie.” Sam sobbed as Drake held her. It was an hour and half before Haley’s hands stopped glowing. Haley almost hit her head on the ground before Eric scooped her up in his arms, cradling her to him. We all waited for Valerie to open her eyes.

Walk a Hard Line

All thoughts of Alpha Chase's and his problems flew out of Lucas' head when Emmaline jumped on him. I could practically taste her desperate need and lust on my tongue it was so intense. I pulled away from her kiss, "Baby girl, take what you need." Emmaline didn't bother responding.

She was crazed. She even spanked me at one point. I'd never liked being dominated, but with Emmaline I found I didn't mind. Dominic growled, "This is hot. Mate is SO hot." I understood slightly what Eric meant by using his and Haley's connection to fuel himself with Haley's need. Our souls being bound made me practically as lustful as Emmaline.

I could hear Haley and Katie's screams echoing the halls with Emmaline's. No one in this territory would doubt who they belonged to. Once she was satisfied, I cleaned us both off before getting into bed with her.

I linked Dylan, "We aren't going to make it back tonight. Emmaline's sister, Idel, did the water fairy ritual with her. Emmaline is out like a light." Dylan replied, "Aww you sexed your fairy into a coma... how nice your life must be! I have been PACING THE FLOOR FOR HOURS!"

I sat up quickly, "Why? What's happened? I can borrow a car to get back to you." Dylan snorted, "Borrow a car. BORROW A CAR? What would that help? USELESS! You are USELESS." I growled, "Dylan, what's going on?"

He retorted, "What's going on?! Our mates are fighting the QUEEN of the Hackura, The Princess of the Hackura, the Duchess of the Hackura, and because the UNIVERSE HATES ME probably another Hackura Princess." Dylan was clearly past the point of reason.

I bit my lip, “Technically, she’s the future queen, but I’ll give you the high probability on a future Princess. Haley is the only princess of the Hackura right now. Though I’m certain Haley would call them all princesses since they Hackura consider them married once they meet.”

Dylan yelled so loud I held my head, “REALLY LUCAS? YOU ARE COMING AT ME WITH TECHNICALITIES RIGHT NOW? Lacy could get hurt. Emmaline could get hurt. We HAVE to do something.”

I sighed, “They aren’t defenseless. This is not a real threat; it’s just training.” Dylan snarled, “I keep picturing Lacy that night with the Ducant’s when they split her lip. I can’t get it out of my head. Then I wonder how many fights she was in while she was away. Did someone hurt her while I wasn’t there? What happened during those two years? My mind is literally creating scenarios upon scenarios. She’s planning to be at the early training with Emmaline tomorrow morning.”

I understood now where this was coming from. He felt like he hadn’t protected her when she ran away. I said, “I can help you with the training problem. Our mates won’t train with the pack on Thursdays moving forward.” Dylan calmed down marginally, “That’s a little less than nothing, but only a little Lucas. I will take the mere morsal you are offering my brain for relief though.”

I looked over at Emmaline, “The number of situations Emmaline and Lacy have been getting in lately tell us they need to be more prepared. Do you have a better way of doing that than them fighting the Hackura?”

Dylan was silent for several moments before he replied, “No, you logical sleep tyrant; I don’t.” I said, “I don’t like this either. She’s my little sister who happens to be my best friend’s mate, and the other person involved is MY mate. I do need them to be safe with all this shit coming at us. This training will do that for them. We can’t always be with them, and who knows if a fairy or Hackura will be available to pop us; or open a portal to get to them quickly.”

Dylan sighed, “Keep talking. The voices in my Beta brain are calming down.” I laughed, “If we aren’t in our territory Lacy and Emmaline are in charge. Neither one would go to the safe room even if I ordered the warriors to take them. Emmaline knows she could order them not to. She could also go and then just pop out with Lacy. I’d rather they know how to fight should the situation occur. Hopefully, this is knowledge they have for no reason, but they will have it should they need to.”

Dylan sighed, “Why didn’t you start with that? Information they have but might not need. I can get on board with that. I’ve already alerted Alex to the no training on Thursdays for them. I sent a memo and a text. Normal people are asleep. Not all of us get a crazy ritual sex fairy. Or have an Alpha Sleep tyrant who keeps them awake. Which is hardly fair, he’s the Gamma.”

I snorted, “Normal people aren’t pacing the floors. Your room is going to need to be re-carpeted. We should talk about you and Lacy moving into a wing at the main house eventually.” Dylan stalled, “What?”

I said, “You’re Lacy’s mate and my Beta. I can’t have you move to a cottage when you have pups, or even one of the houses. None of those close enough to the main house are available right now. It’s smarter and more efficient to move you and Lacy into one of the wings in my house. Plus, you’re my best friend and she’s my sister. Let’s not forget, both our mates will love it.”

Dylan squealed, “ROOMIES! I love it. Let’s discuss tomorrow. I’ll send King Alpha Prick a memo post haste about how you want to be my roommate and not his. I win. I feel my joy beginning to spark. I’ll text my Beta group chat too. MUHAHAHA!”

I smirked knowing that for once I had managed to surprise Dylan. He’d always seemed to anticipate my moves especially once we took over the pack. It was good to know that I could catch him off guard on occasion. I finally made it to sleep.

Emmaline's alarm went off too damn early. I barely held in a laugh when I looked around the room. I linked Eric, "Your staff may kill me." Eric grunted in return. We talked a bit before Emmaline snapped the room back together. I was impressed that she only missing little things. The maids should be happier than they were with us last time, given how the room looked moments ago was a miracle.

I linked Eric again, "Emmaline mostly fixed the room, your maids shouldn't be too upset." Eric growled, "Fuck the maids." I asked, "What's up with you?" Eric replied, "Bexley felt left out yesterday so she and Haley are doing the Sky ritual this morning." I asked, "Shouldn't you be happy then?" Eric said, "I was going to wait in my room, but Jackson dragged me out for our run. Now, I'm worried she's going to pop to me out here." I laughed.

Emmaline popped us back home so we could both get ready for our days. Gemma smiled when we popped into the kitchen. I choked when she said Mrs. Blanches real name. I got hit with a roller pin twice when I'd used it.

We got onto the topic of Bray and it hit me. Haley had stumbled upon their accident! How did I not piece that together before? It had to have been her. I needed to ask Eric. I'd have to thank her.

Suddenly, Emmaline's nerves were bouncing around in my chest. She seemed very unsure of herself. Dylan linked me, "Are we really going to a high school dance? I mean, we will take all the focus off the regular students. The poor popular kids won't be the center of attention Whatever will they do?"

I smirked replying, "If my baby girl wants me to go to the school dance then that's what we will do." Dylan teased, "Aye, aye Alpha Sleep Tyrant. When you're crowned king of the dance, I'm going to laugh. I won't help you get out of it at all. I might even spread the word to the pack to ensure it happens." I rolled my eyes.

Emmaline shot out of the room as soon as she'd eaten. I finished my breakfast and Gemma said, "That was so cute. The Luna was so nervous you'd say no. Lacy seemed to think

Dylan was going to say no too, but he never did. He said he'd go if you went. Everyone in the pack knew you'd go if Emmaline asked; including Dylan." I laughed, "He's convinced I'll be named king of the dance."

Gemma winked, "Have fun with that." When I turned to leave she added, "If the princess healed me, I really do want to thank her." I nodded, "I think she did, but I'll link Alex the confirmation." She smiled, "I'll just go see little Bray now and give him an extra squeeze." I smiled and left.

I walked into my office to find a glaring Dylan with a cup of coffee. I asked, "Is that mine?" Dylan snorted, "No... no coffee for you. This is for me, get your own damn coffee." I was confused, "What's wrong now? I thought we sorted your training issues last night." Dylan growled, "Consider me upset about the training thing for the foreseeable future." I laughed, "Alright, get Eric on the phone."

Dylan finally smiled, "But you give me such reasons to be happy. Getting King Alpha Prick on the phone." He picked up a coffee from the ground, "This is for you." I laughed, "You're such a big kid."

Eric answered, "Lucas, I don't know how long I have." Dylan laughed evilly, "No, it's me!" I snorted, "I'm here too." Eric asked, "Dear god, why?" I asked, "Can you ask Haley if she was in Ireland with BA three years ago."

Dylan squealed, "OH MY GOD! You think Bray is the result of fairy magic? I will build a shrine to little future Gamma baby Bray." Eric asked, "What?" I explained, "Now, that we know Haley; I've thought over the details of my Gamma and his wife's accident. Alex thought he heard a modulated voice and a regular one. Gemma never felt pain, only a euphoric feeling. Alex felt pain for several minutes before feeling a euphoric sense. Gemma went into heat unexpectedly that night." Dylan squealed, "She so did it! I love her ninja fairy fun sized self."

Eric asked, "Bjourn? Marcus?" Marcus answered, "She did. She was on a mission with BA. They heard the crash and found them." I interjected, "That was kind of you." Bjourn

laughed, “We didn’t do anything. Haley didn’t know they were werewolves when she found them. BA didn’t mention it, and they were in a rush.” I said, “You should probably expect a gift basket from them.” Marcus snorted, “She won’t see that as necessary.”

Dylan said, “Don’t you worry. I’ll question my fun sized ninja fairy and find out who all she healed. She sees it as no big deal. I’ll get you the answers, have no fear! Memo being sent as we speak. Alex technically met her before you, King Alpha Prick. How delicious that tidbit of information is.” He was tying furiously. Eric growled, “I’ll ask her.” I heard a pop before he hung up.

I snorted, “You push him. Dylan winked, “It sparks such joy in my life. Plus, he won’t ask her the right way. I’ve got this.” I rolled my eyes then linked Alex, “Have you talked to Gemma?” He answered, “Yes, I’m possibly in shock.” I snorted, “Continuing that then, it was Haley. She healed you both.” Alex replied, “Sending her a gift basket.” I laughed.

A knock sounded on the door. Dylan informed me, “It’s Frank. I rescheduled his appointment with us.” I nodded and Frank came in. He sat down, “Al didn’t say what this is about. Is Emmaline alright?” I nodded, “This is about Alpha Hammond coming into the diner and ordering food to go for lunch. Did you ever see him?”

Frank’s eyes widened, “I’ve never met him, but now that you say it... he’s got to be the big fella who tried to chat up Liz. He never made an inappropriate move, or I’d have told Al.” I sighed, “Did you ever see who he was meeting?” Frank shrugged, “No, he drove in an SUV with tinted windows.”

Dylan clapped, “I knew it! Gosh, I need to start betting on these things.” Frank looked away, “You know I took a smoke break as he was leaving once. I heard him on the phone. He was saying he would take the man under his wing because it’s what his brother would’ve wanted.”

Dylan and I exchanged looks. I said, “Alpha Hammond doesn’t have a brother.” Frank shrugged, “He seemed to think he did. He said he would do it for his Millie and his brother.

Hung up after that and left. I went back inside.” I nodded, “Thank you, Frank.”

Frank nodded and got up to leave. He paused and mentioned, “Now, if you ever need anything for Miss Emmaline, you let me know.” I nodded, “I will, thank you for watching out for her.” Frank explained, “Always have felt protective of her even before I knew she was the Luna. We are like a little family at the diner.” He left quickly after that.

Dylan asked, “Could Millie be the foster sister?” I sighed opening a file. “According to the P.I. the foster sister’s name is Harriet. All traces of her disappear after her time with Christy’s family. The private adoption that seems to be sealed and buried. It’s going to take more time. Maybe there’s a connection between Millie and Harriet. My dad thought Hammond found then lost his mate, and that he’s losing his mind because of it.”

Dylan agreed, “That could be. We can get the P.I. on Hammond’s brother.” I nodded and picked up a different file. Dylan asked, “Aren’t you going to call King Alpha Prick with our new information?” I looked at the clock, “I’ll tell him later. He’s having sky fairy ritual sex. Haley popped in at the end of our call.”

Dylan rolled his eyes, “I hate him. His mate is out of high school, and he can have sex any time he wants during the day. Did Haley even go to school?” I laughed, “The Hackura have their own schools. Haley is taking college classes and was when they met.” Dylan rolled his eyes, “Online. He’s the worst.” I rolled my eyes at him. The day flew by. It felt like I blinked, and school was over.

I started to pace. Dylan just raised an eyebrow at me. The girls came home and were bouncing around with energy. They finished their homework at land record speed, complaining about time going slow. Dylan and I did not agree. I had no idea where the day had gone.

Dylan went on a tangent. I linked him, “You all have composure in spades because of us Alpha’s.” He considered

then replied, "Fine, it's mates. Mates make us lose composure. This situation is madness." Lacy stuck her tongue out at him.

Dylan actually jumped then linked me, "Warn a guy when they are around!" I responded, "I didn't see him either." When Benjamin introduced himself, Dylan linked me, "I knew it! Another future Hackura princess is fighting them. Do you know which one is Benjamin's mate?"

I shrugged, "I don't know their mates' names other than Bjourn and Marcus... well and now Logan. I don't know who's with who." Dylan glared at me, "Ariel. It's Ariel. The Fiery redhead whose dad is one of their top warriors in their army!" Lucas said, "Apparently you are right, it is Ariel." Dylan muttered, "Damn Marcus for knocking up Torvi. She at least has experience training, so she works with someone at their pace. Ariel has top speed only. I did something awful in previous life and I'm paying penance in this one."

I sighed, "Torvi is just as deadly as Astrid." Dylan rolled his eyes, "But friendlier and has experience training the little ones. Astrid doesn't train the kids. She gets them once they are shaped into fighting machines. Torvi trains the little kids. I want Torvi or Calista, or Cali as I learned she goes by the other day when we had visitors, she's a teacher." I shrugged again trying not to laugh.

When we got to the gym, I stopped dead in my tracks. Haley had Dylan pinned smirking at him. Eric was glaring daggers at Dylan growling at him. Emmaline practically dismissed us. Bjourn laughed, "That's the most ass backwards thing I've heard all damn day." We all walked away from the girls following Emmaline's instructions.

I asked Dylan, "What the hell happened? How did you end up pinned?" Eric growled, "He wants me to kill him." Dylan lamented, "All I said was this is crazy. That's it. Then my fun sized ninja fairy came at me. I defended myself. It was pure instinct."

I startled, "You hit Haley?" Eric growled, "He tried." Now I was astonished. I knew Haley was good, but Dylan was not

easy to beat. Dylan lamented, “I wasn’t ready.” Eric snorted, “Because the enemy often waits until you are ready to attack.”

I stepped in, “Eric, you’ve fought with Dylan, you know he’s a good fighter.” Eric smirked, “Not better than my wife.” Dylan didn’t even seem upset, “Yes, we all bow to the awesomeness of your fun sized ninja fairy. How are you cool with this? Haley could get hurt. You were my hope, you King of the Pricks you. Of course, you let me down. You live to do so.”

Eric laughed along with Bjourn and Benjamin. Eric answered, “Haley isn’t going to get hurt. Your mates aren’t going to get seriously hurt either. Besides, Haley is going to heal anything that happens when they are done. It’s fine, Dylan.”

Dylan muttered, “Says the King Alpha Prick whose mate is a Hackura Princess who can put a werewolf on the ground in under fifteen seconds.” Bjourn asked, “Fifteen seconds? She’s fighting with me tomorrow. That’s not acceptable.” Eric snorted, “It was more like ten.” Dylan seethed silently.

I told Eric, “It appears Alpha Hammond had a mate named Millie.” I filled him in on the conversation with Frank. He said, “My intel did say he met his mate, but was staying away from her. I didn’t know she died.” Dylan grumbled, “Of course you knew he met his mate. Beta Caleb will be chastised for my lack of memo.”

Bjourn said, “I’ll get Gunner on the sealed documents. That’s child’s play for him. He will insult your P.I. for not being able to get around sealed human information.” Dylan shot to his feet when Ariel punched Lacy and began to pace. He cheered when Lacy got a shot back in on Ariel, “That’s it, babe! GET HER!” Benjamin laughed at him. I rolled my eyes.

I gritted my teeth when Emmaline took a hit. I asked, “How long is your training in the Hackura realm? Don’t you ever take a break?” Bjourn looked at his watch, “They will be done in thirty minutes.” His phone rang and he answered, “Gunner, did you get the information?” He nodded then put the phone on speaker.

Gunner said, “This is actually intriguing, Bjourn. This is not only human court sealed but sealed by magic. By a powerful witch or warlock. It’s going to take me more time, but I WILL rise to the challenge.” I heard Harper say, “Of course you will, lover.” A female voice teased, “Our lover.”

Dylan linked, “Ahhh, the teacher. Cali, she couldn’t come because she was getting busy. Now, I have a plan. Find a way to make sure Harper’s boytoy lover is busy during training days, and the teacher can come play.” I rolled my eyes. Bjourn ended the call.

I looked up at him questioningly. “Unless you wanted to hear them fuck, I had to end the call. I can get them back on the line. They are not shy.” I shook my head, “No, I’m good.” Dylan asked, “How does that work with his mate?” Benjamin said, “Calista is his mate, and it works how we all work. They are kind of unique though. They’ve always been a trio. They all love each other.”

Bjourn nodded “He’s like an uncle to their kids. Their kids love him; it works for them.” Benjamin laughed, “I think Cali loves that Harper never fucks another woman, he just has Gunner. After that disaster with her fake friends, I really think it worried her. Or that’s what Ariel says.”

Dylan linked, “I am beyond intrigued by this whole conversation.” Of course, he was. Dylan asked, “What if Harper’s boytoy lover meets his mate?” Bjourn and Benjamin both looked sad. Bjourn said, “His mate died the day they met.” Benjamin sighed, “Gunner was on an assignment with Harper. He turned in time to see his mate get hit by a drunk driver. He was walking down the sidewalk and never saw the car coming. Harper brought the driver back home, and eventually killed him. Haley got Gunner back to our realm.”

Dylan, of course, had more questions, “Does Harper’s boytoy lover want children? How does that work?” Bjourn answered, “There are women in the Hackura who want children, but do not enjoy men. Gunner has been thinking of doing artificial insemination with one of those couples. All parties want children and have agreed to share custody of any

children that result from their attempts. I'm sure they will proceed with that."

I nodded, "They know that it could take a few tries before it takes, right?" Benjamin snorted, "My sister would not stand for that. She'll use her magic to make it take." I was surprised. Dylan voiced my question, "Why? It will work eventually... Probably. It's highly likely anyway."

Bjourn answered, "Because Gunner would be disappointed. That would upset Harper and Haley wouldn't let that happen. Besides, she and Gunner are like siblings." Eric laughed, "They bicker more than any of you do with her." Benjamin pointed out, "Like siblings." Eric nodded.

I asked, "Won't that get Haley a new gig in your realm? For all couples who decide to go that route?" Bjourn shrugged, "She already does it if people ask. She loves helping people and making them happy." I agreed.

Eric changed the subject, "If Hammond lost his mate, I'll understand his descent into madness. I can't imagine losing Haley. I don't know how Gunner kept it together. I'll help you kill Hammond all the same Lucas, but I'll understand him."

Benjamin said, "Gunner didn't get any time with his mate. Harper and Cali kept him sane. Their relationship grounded him." Eric and I nodded, but I could tell Eric didn't understand. I think it was different for wolves. Plus, Eric has pups with Haley. She was his world, and Gunner never had that chance, it wasn't a deep bond.

Haley called the fight. Dylan sprinted down to Lacy. I winced when Haley said their next session would be outside. Dylan lost it. Eric linked me, "Where the hell did his poker face go?" I replied, "Evidently when Lacy is involved, he has no poker face." Eric said, "It's a smart plan, and he knows it. They are far more likely to be fighting outside than on padded mats." I agreed. I just didn't like it.

I was proud Emmaline and Lacy had gotten shots in on Miley and Ariel, though I knew Miley had let one go past her so she could counter. Evidently, the Hackura were not afraid to

give up shots to their face. The sparkle in my sister's eye told me she'd loved everything about this training.

I linked her, "Did you have to say that you loved it, Lacy Loo? Dylan has been a mess to deal with ALL day." Lacy smirked, "I'm not even sorry." I reminded Dylan that Lacy had Alpha blood. There was nothing we could do about her enjoying a fight. The thrill of fighting was literally pumping through her veins. Dylan started to lead Lacy out of the gym when Emmaline popped Lacy away from him. I gaped at Emmaline.

Dylan linked me, "LUCAS!" Lacy told Dylan she wanted to see the dress that Haley was going to fairy magic Emmaline, so Dylan agreed to stay. I was stunned when I was practically kicked out of my own gym. What? Bjourn and Benjamin were smirking at their sister.

I rounded on Haley. She had to be joking? This was my territory! Bjourn was way too excited about Haley thinking I issued a challenge. That was not good. Dylan linked me, "You've done it now." I growled at him and was suddenly being flung backwards. I couldn't take a step forward no matter how hard I tried.

Dylan's laughter could probably be heard for miles as I was pushed out the gym doors almost to the lake. I growled and tried to get back into the gym. Bjourn casually commented, "It won't work." Eric sighed, "Haley barred you from the gym with fairy magic." I growled, "She can't do that! I train there. This is my territory." Eric nodded, "It's temporary. I'm certain it's less than twenty minutes." I growled, "Haley is both awesome and infuriating." Eric chuckled, "That she is, and all mine. So, you're going to a high school dance?"

I grumbled, "Jackson told me you went to a ball AND you danced." Eric growled at me. Bjourn asked, "So?" I smirked, "Eric hates dancing at balls, or dancing of any kind." Benjamin was confused, "You took Haley dancing a week ago. She wouldn't stop talking about how much fun she had." Eric said, "Haley likes dancing."

I teased, “Does she know that you don’t?” Eric growled, “No, and you won’t tell her.” I was howling with laughter, “I’m going to get Emmaline invited so we can double.” Eric said, “We aren’t taking dance lessons. I just took her dancing.”

I smiled, “Then I’ll have Emmaline tell Haley she wants to go dancing. Haley will want to come with us.” Eric asked, “Why are we even friends?” I smiled and felt the magic dissipate. I stalked back into the gym trying to look angry even though I was doing a happy dance on the inside. Eric truly hated dancing. Claudia had to beg him for months to dance with her at some event. He only agreed so she would shut up. He barely agreed to take her to a club he owned a few times and here he was going to balls and taking Haley dancing just because.

Dylan linked me, “I am not fooled, grit your teeth and fake it all you want so long as you tell me what you’re happy about.” I knew he’d love this. I told him, “Eric took Haley dancing, and danced with her at a ball.” Dylan smiled broadly and stood up straighter.

He clarified, “Mr. King Alpha Prick, who hates dancing with a burning passion all the way down to his pinky toe, voluntarily took Haley dancing?” I nodded. Dylan squealed, “I smell a triple dancing date in the future.” I responded, “Agreed.”

Haley popped her group away saying I didn’t appreciate the things she did. I frowned. I hadn’t meant to give her that impression. Dylan was back on his fairy kick. He linked me, “Tell her you were joking because it won’t be as fun to enjoy Eric’s misery of dancing without an audience.”

I responded, “Then don’t tell Haley; she has no idea he hates dancing.” Dylan’s grin somehow widened, “That makes it so much more fun!” I rolled my eyes at him. I grabbed Emmaline, leading her back to our room. We talked for a bit before we both fell asleep.

The next day, Dylan and I were heads down on our work. Dylan grumbled, “We wouldn’t have had to work so late if you’d just agreed to work tomorrow.” I sighed, “You knew

that wouldn't happen, so let's get it done. We are going to the dance tomorrow." I texted Eric.

Me: I need Haley for a minute, please.

Moments later she popped with one of the triplets. Dylan asked, "Which mini King Alpha Prick is that?" Haley smiled, "Alexander. We just got the invitation to your wedding, my friend Dylan. It's fabulous! A costume wedding! I'm so excited."

I asked, "What are you coming as?" Haley shrugged, "I haven't decided. I have to plan a couple's costume! Google says that's important. I love this Google I was told about. It knows everything about this realm." I linked Dylan, "I love your wedding." Dylan sat up straighter, "I love my mate. This is going to be awesome! All the men who have mates and attend will be in couple costumes. I didn't even think of that."

I spoke aloud, "Haley, I really do appreciate everything you've done for me and my pack, but especially Emmaline. I don't want you to think that I don't." Haley nodded, "Alright." I continued, "I want Emmaline to have a perfect day tomorrow. I was thinking manicures, pedicures, massages, hair, and makeup."

Haley interjected, "Invite her friends and Katie. I have a friend who works in event planning. I'll get the necessary people here that are supernatural's to perform those services. No men of course, because I know not unlike Eric, you'd flip shit. I'll turn the Luna suites into a temporary salon." It would be considered an insult for Emmaline to have a man touching her when we had a planned date. Really ever, but especially then. I smiled, "She'd love it if you were there."

For a split second, Haley faltered and turned white. Then her mask slipped back on, "Well, I don't think so. Besides, I'd miss the triplets all day." I frowned, "You could bring them. The girls would love it."

Dylan linked me, “Dude...” I added, “But of course you don’t have to come.” Haley smiled, “I’ll go snap the room done, and text my friend to get the necessary people.” Dylan laughed, “Is there someone you don’t know?” Haley said, “Of course there are. I don’t know everyone. There are billions of people in this realm alone. Not to mention the other realms.”

Dylan smiled, “But you already made friends with an event planner in this realm.” I thought of Alpha Chase, remembering the event planner was at the event. I casually asked, “Are you making human friends now, Haley? This is the event planner you planned your fairy event with last weekend, correct?” Dylan linked, “Uhh, what’s wrong with you?”

Haley frowned. I said, “Eric mentioned your event at fairy lessons.” Dylan linked, “So what? She made a friend, that I seriously doubt is human if she planned a fairy event. This is why you must confer with me before asking such questions. What are you doing?”

Haley nodded, “It’s the same event planner.” I raised an eyebrow; she didn’t answer the question. Haley hurried, “I’ll go snap the room done. Let me know when you see it later if you want something different. Bye!” She popped away as I gaped.

Dylan smacked me on the arm, “What’s the matter with you? You practically ran our fairy entertainment away.” I ignored him and called Eric. He greeted, “Lucas, did Haley get you what you needed?” I answered, “Yes, that’s not why I called. Did you meet the event planner she had at her event?”

Dylan snorted, “The event planner? Lucas what is your deal with this event planner? You made Haley uncomfortable then wouldn’t let this event planner go.” Eric instantly asked, “Uncomfortable?” I sighed, “I asked her for help making sure Emmaline has the perfect day tomorrow. Being pampered and all. I invited Haley to join the girls and Katie. I’ll have to call Logan later and let him know.”

Logan spoke, “I’ll tell Katie she’s invited. She was planning on helping Emmaline get ready anyway. Haley doesn’t like being touched by strangers. That’s hardly Lucas’

fault, Dylan. Girls usually like spa days. My sister is a rare exception, unfortunately.”

I winced, “I didn’t even think about that.” Dylan linked, “I did. I tried to stop you, but you got on the party planner train.” Eric said, “Don’t worry about it. I didn’t meet the event planner. I saw her talking to Haley a few times, but I never officially met her. Jackson did.”

Dylan grumbled, “For god’s sake, why do we care about the non-human event planner?” We could hear Eric’s chair scuffle as he stood, “Non-human? How would you know that?” That meant Eric knew she wasn’t human either.

Dylan looked at me strangely, replying “I know because Lucas made a comment about Haley making human friends with the event planner. She evaded the question. Plus, said event planner is going to get us supernatural’s for the spa services. Conclusion: The event planner is not human and knows about supernatural’s. I’ll ask again. Why do we give crap? I must know the things.”

I explained, “Alpha Chase showed up last night at Eric’s. His mate had been in Eric and Haley’s home.” Dylan took a beat then started laughing. He gathered himself, “To recap, we now believe Alpha screwed himself over being a nice guy, is mated to a partial fairy or the event planner. Who could very well BE a partial fairy herself.”

I nodded. Eric admitted, “It does seem that way.” Dylan said, “They do say no good deed goes unpunished. I sent Beta Matt this memo after Alpha screwed himself over married his friend so she could be an Alpha. Those kids are so cute. They were too young to know King Alpha Prick wouldn’t have let them oust her from being the Alpha of her pack and got married. I’m coming to fairy lessons this week.”

I frowned, “Why?” Dylan smiled, “Umm because it’s going to be epic.” Eric disagreed, “It won’t be epic.” Dylan laughed, “King Alpha Prick, tell me... did you agree to let Alpha Chase come to fairy lessons? You don’t have to answer, I know you did. He’s your ally, and we can’t keep mates from one another. He’s not another Alpha Max type. He would never physically

hurt his mate; therefore, you will help him find her. Because you like him, and he's your ally. He's looked up to you since he was a toddler. He idolizes you. He's a follower of your prickishness."

Dylan smiled as he continued, "His appearance will have BOTH yours and Lucas' mates losing their precious fairy minds over. Gosh, it's not even my birthday." Eric growled, "Dylan, I already have to be in a damn couple's costume for your damn wedding. Don't make me want to kill you even more than I do on a regular basis. I have to help Alpha Chase."

Dylan said, "I know that. Your fun sized ninja fairy doesn't have to help him though. Nor does my Luna. I'd venture to go as far saying that they'd stand in his way until he deals with his own wife, who's not his mate. Because neither of you have explained their relationship completely to them, have you? No, King Alpha Prick can't do that. Because his fun sized ninja fairy would go full fairy hijinks on the werewolf community at large for being sexist. Then Alpha Chase and Alpha Sophia for coming up with a crazy solution with no thought for the long term. Fairy lessons will be epic indeed."

I sighed, "Emmaline can't not tell who mates are if she knows." Dylan's eyes sparkled, "And if there was anyone who could find a way around that, who would it be?" I winced while Eric groaned. Dylan clapped his hands, "Oh yes, King Alpha Prick's mate would be that person. I personally believe she will find a way. I've seen the way she glares at Alpha Chase and Alpha Sophia. I myself would've told her the truth and watched as she called a bunch of Alpha's sexist jerks. Because she would."

He rubbed his hands together, "GOD! I have to come to fairy lessons. I need Gemma to order more popcorn in bulk! No, Danver! Gemma would shake her head and judge me. Danver will just order my popcorn. He's a gem, and I'm giving him a raise." He raced out of the room.

Marcus chimed in, "He's right you know. If there's a way around Emmaline telling Alpha Chase who his mate is, Haley will find it. Eric sighed, "If she doesn't already know how. Damn it. I already have a headache."

I looked at the picture of Emmaline on my desk, “So do I. How can we deny him what we have though?” Eric answered, “I don’t know.” Bjourn spoke, “Because he has a wife, he made a choice. Choices have consequences.” Eric said, “A choice he regrets. He and Sophia have been friends since they were kids. Actually, they were best friends. He just wanted to help her. It wasn’t supposed to be permanent. That was never his choice. They aren’t married for a reason. They are not the typical man and wife situation.” Bjourn said, “It seems I have someone to learn about. You do realize if there’s a broken promise involved, the funny wolf is right. My sister will go fairy hijinks on people.”

Dylan came skipping back in the room singing, “King Alpha Prick is going to get in so much trouble. I smell T-R-O-U-B-L-E.” I winced as Eric hung up. Dylan looked at me, “In all seriousness, you’re going to get in trouble too. I’m going to prepare myself for the cold war that’s coming to our territory.”

I sighed and stood to pace asking, “What should I do?” Dylan shrugged, “I don’t know. Your mate already hates Alpha Chase’s situation, but he is our ally. While he made a bad call with Alpha Sophia, he’s a good guy. I just don’t know how everyone doesn’t become a loser in this situation. Might I suggest talking to her.”

I ran a hand through my hair, “The moon goddess could’ve given us a break. Maybe his mate isn’t a partial fairy.” Dylan snorted, “Your mate and Haley would still hate the situation. Plus, there is not a mate on the planet who would go ‘Oh, you’re married? That’s cool. I’m not devastated or feeling murderous. Nope I’m chill.’ That’s just not a thing that will happen.” He was right.

The rest of the day passed by without any drama. I called Nick to let him know to tell his son and Drake their mates were welcome for the spa day. He texted later both girls were excited, and he thanked me for including them. I told him Sharon was welcome as well. Garrett and Sharon were attending her school’s dance, so she was getting ready in her mom’s territory with her friends.

I heard Emmaline's alarm go off for training. I wanted to slap myself. I'd meant for her to sleep in along with all the other girls. I'd forgotten to send out a memo all the girls were excused from training because of the dance. I wrote Emmaline a note explaining what I'd set up for the day, then went down to one of the guest rooms to get some more sleep.

I woke up to Emmaline linking me asking for shower sex. I ran back to our room at Dominic's fastest pace. Lacy was threatening to break us up, so I teased her a little we were already finished. Dylan ended up in our room. I linked him, "You could've linked me." Dylan grumbled, "Lacy screamed me awake. I'm barely processing speech right now."

After we left and I told him, "Technically, you already cockblocked me. I'd still be inside her if not for you and my sister." Dylan grumbled, "Coffee. Let's get coffee. Then you can say more words." I laughed, "When did this role reversal happen? I'm fine with the morning, and you are the bear."

Dylan ran to Gemma as she held out coffee. He guzzled it, putting his cup back out for more. I took my cup from Gemma and sat down for breakfast. Dylan said, "It's Saturday, Alpha Sleep Tyrant. I like to sleep until at least ten in the morning on Saturdays." I nodded, "That's true." Dylan continued, "I got woken up through a yelling link. Lacy said that there would be no sex if I didn't get you and Emmaline off each other. I ran the whole way over from the pack house."

I smiled, "So, are you ready to pick out your wing in the house then?" Gemma's jaw dropped. Dylan answered, "Yes, I'll talk to Lacy about it this week. I already have an idea. I'm contemplating getting paint swatches. She'll coo and then I won't have to run as far to tear you apart from your fairy." Gemma commented, "Once the move happens, I will prepare both of yours and Lacy's breakfasts over here." Dylan nodded, "You do the lord's work, Gemma. No one will convince me otherwise."

I looked up when Peter and Drake trickled in. Peter said, "Thank you for doing this, Alpha Lucas. Chelsea and Sam are so excited." Drake said, "I'm excited they are in the girl gang of bad asses. Sam and Chelsea were besides themselves they

couldn't find dresses they didn't feel fat in. They aren't fat, they are pregnant, but DEAR GOD don't say that to them. Somehow that made it worse."

Dylan spoke while eating popcorn, "They called Haley, didn't they?" Peter nodded, "She popped in and saved the day. My dad loves her, possibly more than me and my brothers at this point." I laughed, "She's great." Peter nodded, "Is she joining them upstairs? I thought she would, but for some reason Sam and Chelsea didn't think she was." I shook my head, "No just Katie, Emmaline's sister."

Ryan joined our group. Gemma gave him a plateful of food. He kissed her cheek, "You are a keeper, Gemma." She laughed. Dylan said, "Yes, we are keeping her. She's our Gamma's mate, therefore she's ours." I snorted. Gemma winked at him then asked Peter and Drake what they wanted for breakfast.

I asked Ryan, "Where's Dustin?" Ryan snorted, "Some coven came in saying he took their territory and challenged him. He won, of course, and now they are settling things." I frowned, "He talked to the coven in Red Run." Ryan shrugged, "These guys were from Nashville. It feels like a diversion."

Dylan said, "Ohhh, Dylan does not like that at all. Say other words. Diversion for what?" Ryan shrugged again, "I have no clue. I wonder if they wanted to see what Dustin could do." I frowned, "Do I need to contact Nick and have him station warriors around Dustin and Aubree's house?" Ryan laughed, "No, Dustin took them down without showing a fourth of his strength. The other coven will let this go."

I nodded. Dylan linked, "I already told my buddy Beta McAlister. He's alert. Nothing with happen to Dustin or Aubree." I replied, "Thanks, Dylan." Dylan replied, "But of course, I must see you crowned king of the dance." I nearly laughed out loud.

Ryan added, "Dustin's pissed though. He's going to cut them off if they aren't done by this evening. He wants to see Evie in her dress." I nodded, "That's good. She would want

him to be here.” Ryan smiled, “We know. He wanted to be here all day.” I should’ve invited Aubree for the girl’s day. Damn.

I asked Drake and Peter, “So did Haley kick you out from seeing your mate’s dresses too?” Drake snorted, “Kick us out? I practically ran from the room. Sam was yelling at me while crying, and nothing I said was right.”

I smirked, “I actually know the problem. I just learned that lesson, women don’t want you to fix the problem, they just want you to listen to them.” Drake stared at me. He asked, “How the HELL am I supposed to do that? She was upset. I had to try and fix it.”

I shrugged, “It’s just what I learned, and I’m passing it along.” Drake turned to Peter, “Do you hear this shit?” Peter shrugged, “Women. If it keeps the sobbing tear fest that happened last night from happening again, I’ll try it.” Dominic snickered, “Logan materialized.” I replied, “It’s about damn time you started warning me about that.” Dominic just huffed.

I spotted Logan standing in the kitchen. He moved silently sitting beside Dylan, waiting. I smirked. Dylan turned then yelled, “BAH! STOP THAT!” Logan laughed, “I just couldn’t resist.” We spent the day playing video games, eating, and just hanging out. I showed everyone to the rooms where they could shower and change. I walked into my room and saw a tie on my bed. I walked over and picked up the note that was left on top of it.

My Lion,

This matches Emmaline’s dress perfectly. I looked through your ties, and nothing would’ve gone with her dress. You’re welcome that I helped you avoid this epic catastrophe of clashing pinks.

Fairy Godmother to the rescue (again)

I quickly got dressed while chuckling. We all met back up in the living room. I asked the group, “Does anyone know how

long it will be before they are ready?" No one had time to answer before we heard a pop. I turned, Ta-Da indeed. Haley was a miracle worker. You couldn't even tell Chelsea or Sam were pregnant. Valerie looked great, as did my sister. Emmaline was stunning. It was definitely worth being thrown out of my own gym by the wind.

I led Emmaline outside. I was going to text Dustin to meet us at the school when I saw him pull up before I got Emmaline into my car. Everyone waited for us since the other girls didn't want to go to the dance without each other. It took a little longer with the news Emmaline dropped about Aubree being pregnant.

I went over to congratulate them all when Katie announced she and Logan were having a boy. Dylan linked me, "How did they get Haley in that family? No girls between ALL the brothers so far." I shrugged, "Now they have Cassie." Dylan said, "If King Alpha Prick's DNA messes up how fun our fun sized fairy's DNA is... I'll find a way to get him." I rolled my eyes.

Emmaline was happily chatting on the way to the school. When she asked about Dustin, I gripped the wheel wondering if there was a fight coming for Dustin I needed to prepare for. I wasn't surprised she wanted to do something special for her siblings, and she'd asked me to help her. We could definitely do that.

We pulled into the school parking lot, and I noticed several nervous glances sent towards Dylan and me. I sent out a link as every wolf tensed when Dylan and I walked in. "We aren't here to ruin your fun. Our mates just wanted us to share this with them." Everyone relaxed. A warrior's son even spiked the punch.

Dylan linked me, "Are we going to do something about that?" I said, "Not let our mates drink any." I spoke in a low tone, "Peter, Drake, the punch has been spiked. Stick with water." They both nodded and we all danced. Eventually Emmaline left for the bathroom. I headed over to get us water. The second Emmaline left it all went to hell.

Everyone disappeared except for me, Dylan, Peter, Drake, Sam, Lacy, Chelsea, and Valerie. Valerie screamed, “RYAN! RYAN WHERE ARE YOU?” I heard a strangled voice, “Val, hang on... Illusion.” We heard a scream, a man’s scream.

Valerie frantically looked around, “RYAN? RYAN, ARE YOU OK?” Sam picked her up, “Feel your mate bond, Val.” Valerie stood shakily, “He’s... ok.” The gym doors opened. We all saw Emmaline start to walk towards me with a terrified look on her face. From nowhere a sword pierced through the front of her chest from behind. She screamed. Dylan, Peter, and Drake held me back as she gurgled and died right there in front of me.

Everything moved into slow motion. I howled. Dominic seemed stunned. I started moving towards her, trying to get to her body as the man behind her laughed at me. Dylan punched me in the face. I growled at him. He demanded, “FOCUS. That’s not her. It can’t be.” I had tears streaming down my face, “OF COURSE IT’S HER!”

The man spoke, “I thought you’d avenge your Luna, not let yourself be held back, Alpha.” Dylan got in my face as I broke Drake’s hold on me, leaving only Peter holding me back. He yelled, “THINK LUCAS! You’d be on the ground in pain if she died. She’s marked and mated to you. It’s not her! We need to find the real Emmaline.”

Peter grunted, “Feel your bond.” I registered that Chelsea, Sam, Lacy, and Valerie were all sobbing. I felt in my chest for Emmaline. I couldn’t stop my tears of relief. I straightened, “It’s not her.” Dylan let out a breath of relief.

Lacy growled, “You will die, warlock!” I turned as what seemed to be half of a large coven entered the room. I quickly stated, “I don’t recognize them. Peter? Drake? Dylan?” Peter said, “They aren’t from around here.” One witch laughed, “We are from Missouri.”

Dylan snorted, “Missouri? What the hell are you doing here? Other than ruining my mate’s dream for her first dance with Moi. That’s gonna bring out serious Dylan. No one likes him. I don’t know why people keep doing this. Lucas was

going to be crowned king. I had it all planned. Where's our Luna?"

The witch smiled, "You just saw her die. Surely, you don't need to ask." I growled then linked Dylan, "On my mark we cut through them in teams. Valerie is with Lacy. Chelsea and Sam need to stay behind Peter and Drake." Dylan nodded and linked Lacy.

The witches made a move towards us. I nodded to Dylan. We split out into our groups. Dylan and I were taking down witches and warlocks faster than anyone else. We knew each other's moves like the back of our hands, holding them off with next to no effort.

I worried about my pack members that had disappeared from our view in the gym. It clicked, "Son of a bitch!" Dylan punched a witch asking, "What?" I growled, "Ryan told Valerie it was an Illusion. That's why he's not here with us. He recognized it and fought it. He was trying to get her to fight it too." Dylan said, "We aren't witches, we can't fight an illusion."

I shrugged, "He might have thought she could with his mark. Witch's mates can fight illusions. So can fairies." Dylan taunted a warlock who came at him, "So who did you sacrifice that looked like my Luna?" The warlock laughed, "Your Luna is dead!"

I growled coming apart at the seams. I ripped through the warlocks and witches. Dylan linked me, "They just keep coming." A green mist shot through the gym and several pack members growled seeing us fighting, immediately joining our battle.

My blood ran cold when Lacy screamed. Dylan and I both took shots to the face turning to find my sister. I heard Emmaline scream her name and tears pricked my eyes. My baby girl was really ok. Dylan and I took the warlock fighting us down.

My heart stopped when I figured out why Lacy screamed. It was Valerie. Valerie had been stabbed in the heart. Ryan entered the gym seconds behind Emmaline. The shadows

killed every witch and warlock remaining except the one under me.

Dylan linked, “He just killed twenty people in two seconds.” I couldn’t reply because I was worried about Valerie. I was also almost knocked over with relief at seeing Emmaline. My heart felt like it was sputtering in my chest.

Emmaline was trying to help Dustin check Valerie. Dylan linked me, “That’s a fatal wound. We need Haley.” I nodded trying to think clearly. Brad ran over, bleeding from a head wound, and secured the warlock I had. He told me, “I’ve got him, Alpha.” I asked, “Are you alright, Brad?” Brad shrugged, “It’s nothing. Valerie and Emmaline need you.”

Emmaline sprinted from the room. I remembered what I needed to do right now. I took out my phone. I’d follow Emmaline after I got Haley here to save Valerie. Logan pointed at his phone, and I realized he was calling Haley too. We both frowned when Haley didn’t answer. Dylan was frantic, “Oh no. Now is not the time to not answer one’s phone. She can’t die. You call King Alpha Prick! I’m going to repeatedly call Beta Caleb.” He ran over to hold Lacy on his phone.

Drake rocked Sam back and forth. She cried, “Why would she do that? I... I could’ve gotten out of the way.” Drake winced, “She’s going to be ok.” I could see on his face he knew that wasn’t true. Peter said nothing while holding Chelsea.

The relief I felt hearing a pop and seeing Haley standing beside Emmaline was immense. I almost fell to the ground in relief. Jackson stormed into the room seconds later taking in the situation. He asked me, “Are you guys alright?” He was on his phone. I couldn’t hear Eric pick up, but I knew that’s who it was.

I answered dryly, “Now that I can see my mate isn’t dead, I’m better.” Jackson stared at me and spoke into his phone, “Eric, we need you here now. Haley might pass out from this healing. I smell silver in the wound. It’s bad.” Eric must have hung up because Jackson put his phone back in his pocket.

He studied me, “Lucas, your heartbeat is irregular. You need to take deep breaths.” Dylan said, “He’s right because of course he is. He annoying. Emmaline’s fine. She’s right here and perfectly fine. See how fine she is in her pretty in pink dress. There’s a breath for Dylan, yes there is.” He patted my face. Dominic seemed to be settling himself too.

I vaguely heard Haley talking about going on a witch killing spree. Dylan snorted, “I’m joining her. Let’s just take out all the Missouri covens. They are jerks. Come on! Who’s with me? Let’s wind up King Alpha Prick to do our murderous bidding. It won’t even be hard. He’s already going to be mad.”

Lacy growled, “I’m so fucking in.” Jackson said, “Go to your mate, Lucas. I don’t know what happened but go.” I looked at him, willing my feet to move, but they wouldn’t. Jackson seemed to realize the problem and pushed me forward. That momentum got me over to Emmaline.

I couldn’t stop saying she was ok and taking in her scent. My heart couldn’t process that she’d seen me kissing someone else. I just needed to focus on her being alive. She could be mad about a fake me kissing someone else all she wanted. She could kick my ass later for helping Alpha Chase. None of it mattered as long as she was alive.

Haley had started healing Valerie as Bexley popped in with Eric. Eric linked me as Bexley was talking. “Lucas, Jackson said your heart rate wasn’t good. You are pale. Did you get hurt?” I shook my head, “They... it was an illusion. I saw Emmaline die, Eric. Dylan, Drake, and Peter had to hold me back to realize I’d felt no pain in our bond. I... I saw her die. A sword pierced from her back through her front. I...”

Emmaline left my arms to go to her brother. Lacy came up and held onto me. She whispered, “She’s ok.” I felt a hand on my back that I knew was Eric’s. Peter and Drake had gotten Sam and Chelsea chairs to sit by Valerie. Sam was crying saying this was all her fault.

Peter and Drake walked over to us. I asked, “How did it happen?” Drake said, “Sam and Chelsea wouldn’t stay behind us. A witch was coming up on my back. Sam got in the way

fighting her. She didn't see two other witches coming. Chelsea yelled at her, but she couldn't get there in time. Valerie dove as the knife was coming for..." His voice broke.

Peter put a hand on Drake's back and continued, "Sam's stomach. It would've killed their pup." Drake wiped his eyes, "A boy. It's a boy." I put a hand on his shoulder, "I know how you feel, but Sam's ok and so is your son. Congratulations, Drake."

Jackson asked, "And you Peter? What are you guys having?" Peter smiled, "Our little one is being shy. We can never get a good shot of the goods." I smiled. Eric joined, "Congratulations to you both. What the hell was this?" I shrugged, "Some coven from Missouri."

Dustin came over and explained the story from Emmaline's side. He said, "She came to me. She recognized the signs of the illusion from a flicker of your hand. She thought really quickly. I'm proud of her."

I growled, "A flicker? What the FUCK is a flicker?" Dylan shrugged. Eric replied, "Some witch shit." I said, "We have a warlock left that Ryan didn't kill with the shadows." Dustin snorted, "Then you are lucky, and Lucas must have been in the way. Ryan wouldn't have wanted the shadows to kill anyone on our side."

I nodded, "I probably was." Brad came up, "The humans were compelled to leave by the illusion. None of them saw anything. Pack members were confused, they didn't remember any of you were here." I asked, "What happened to you?" Brad said, "I heard Ryan yell, and came running inside from the back. I couldn't find Emmaline, but I ran into a witch. She held me up for a while." I nodded.

Eric ran to Haley as she passed out cold. It took Valerie a few moments, but everyone breathed a sigh of relief when she opened her eyes. Ryan was holding her sobbing. He told her, "Don't you ever do that to me again."

Valerie took a full breath and then saw Haley in Eric's arms. She asked in an astonished tone, "Haley came to save me?" Eric nodded. He looked angry. I gently commanded,

“Emmaline, pop us back home. We have several pack members in need of medical attention. We need Sam and Chelsea checked up on, as well as the pups.” Emmaline had everyone grab hands.

I linked her feeling her nerves in my chest, “You can do this.” She replied, “This is a big group.” A warrior said, “Let us collect keys, Alpha. Most of us came together. We can get all the cars back home.” I cringed because Brad needed to come with us to get checked out. I did not want these kids driving my Aston. I looked around the room.

My eyes narrowed when I saw Tessa and her mate from Eric’s pack. I linked, “Eric, Tessa’s mate...” Eric answered, “He’s twenty. He can drive your car. He’s actually a bit of a car enthusiast. He’ll treat it with care.” I grimaced but motioned Tessa forward.

She walked over holding his hand. I told them, “You two take my car back please. I don’t want to see a single scratch on it.” Tessa’s eyes widened as her mate reached for my keys. He assured me, “I will return your car without a scratch, Alpha Lucas.” I nodded.

I linked Eric, “Have they decided which pack they are going to live in?” Eric replied, “Yes, Tessa wants to come to our pack with a clean slate after the whole Lacy/Emmaline school confrontation thing.” I asked, “Did Haley agree?” Eric nodded, “She did her truth seeking thing, and admitted clean slates are nice. She’s helping Tessa get the transfer paperwork together so she can come to the school in our district after the holidays. She actually likes her. They’ve become friends.”

Emmaline popped and jumped in excited that she’d managed to get our whole group to the hospital. I grabbed Heather, “Check out Sam and Chelsea as your priority.” I linked her, “Sam was hysterical because Valerie would’ve died without Princess Luna Connors.” Heather nodded.

Sharon popped in with Garrett, Beta McAlister, and Nick. Both men grabbed their sons in for a hug. Sharon checked on Chelsea and Sam. Eric linked me, “Haley linked me before she

started healing Valerie. Sam wasn't in danger, but her blood pressure was high. Chelsea was fine.”

I nodded, relaying the message to Heather. Heather had wheelchairs brought in for them both. Suddenly, we had worried parents storming the hospital, all asking questions and talking loudly over one another.

Emmaline cleared her throat, “Everyone please settle down. We have some injuries, but thanks to our allies from Black Mountain, no casualties. We all need to thank our Alpha who had us all training more frequently to be prepared for such situations. We fought back and we won. Anyone who is not here is uninjured. They are driving the cars back from the dance. They should be arriving in a few moments and you can meet them at the pack house. You can link who you are looking for, but I wanted to ensure you to know that everyone is ok. The casualties were on side of the witches and warlocks only.”

She took her brother's hand, “My brothers, Ryan, and Dustin, along with Dustin's his wife Aubree brought the illusion down. Once it was down our pack fought together, and we contained the threat.”

I linked Dylan, “I've never heard her call them Dustin or Ryan.” Dylan replied, “At least Dustin doesn't seem like he's going to cry this time. No more crying people. I might decree it. Dylan likes laughter not tears.”

I pointed out, “This time was for the pack's benefit out of respect for him. I don't think he'd like it if anyone but Emmaline called him Dusty.” I pulled Emmaline to me, “That was very good. The Luna helps keep everyone calm. The mother of the pack if you will.” I had our group examined by Hector. He had Eric lay Haley down which he did begrudgingly, only relenting after our entire group had been checked.

Nick slipped into our room with Beta McAlister. Beta McAlister spoke to me, “Thank you. Sam is on bedrest for a few days. Hopefully, once she calms down everything will be ok, or it will be a bedrest pregnancy for her. Some female

mumbo jumbo, but our pack doctor hadn't caught it. Heather said without the Princesses observation she wouldn't have either." I nodded, unsurprised.

It was confirmed Valerie was one hundred percent healed. Ryan's tears hadn't stopped. Valerie tried to comfort him, but he just held her tightly to him. I understood how Ryan felt. I'd talk to him later.

Emmaline didn't take a single hit which I shot a grateful look at Dustin for. He'd come to save her, and all of us. Lacy got hit with a spell but was fine. Hector gave her a sedative so she wouldn't feel like her skin was crawling.

Hector turned to Haley, examining her. He frowned asking Eric, "Did she hit her head?" Eric answered, "No, I caught her." Hector's frown deepened. Eric growled, "What?" Hector looked at me and I said, "Just tell him."

Hector sighed, "She's got a bump on her head. I'm going to examine it." He did. After a few tense moments he said, "She had to have taken a hit to her head." Eric frowned, "She didn't." Jackson said, "She popped into the kitchen. I thought she came from your room."

Eric shook his head, "No, she couldn't have. I was with Darrin in our room. I thought she was in the triplet's nursery." Hector sighed, "Let me examine the rest of her then." When he lifted her shirt Logan and Eric growled. Emmaline gasped in shock. Haley had purple and black bruises on her side.

Hector linked me, "She has four broken ribs on this side." I replied, "You might as well tell them before they ask." Logan was on his phone asking someone, "Did Haley have a mission I didn't know about? Because she's got fucking black and purple bruises on her side. There's no way her ribs aren't broken." Logan's eyes glowed gold. Hector stammered, "Four... four on this side." I linked him, "He's not upset with you, Hector." Hector nodded.

Emmaline asked, "How could anyone do this to her? She had her fairy powers, and she's like impossible to hit." Logan responded, "No one is impossible to hit, and we let ourselves take shots on occasion."

A portal opened and Marcus and Bjourn came through it. Bjourn said, “She didn’t have a mission, brother. You would’ve known. I have Gunner pinging her location this evening after the triplets went down.”

Nick linked me, “Is this our life now? Portals just opening all over the place. Witches from a different state attack a high school dance.” I sighed, “Evidently.” Nick said, “I’m damn glad you and Dylan went.” I sighed, “It was probably because we were there.” Nick disagreed, “Sam told us Lacy was coming with or without Dylan. She would’ve got Emmaline to go too. This was about them, and you know it.”

He paused, “It was about Chelsea too, she knows that. She said none of them tried to hurt her. It’s the bounty on them.” I winced, “We have a prisoner.” Nick nodded, “So Peter said. He also mentioned you have an in law who can control the shadows? You make me glad we are allies regularly.” I smirked, “In laws. All three of them can control the shadows.” Nick’s jaw dropped.

Hector stood back wincing, “She has two broken ribs on her other side. She took one hell of a beating. If I had to guess, I’d say she shielded someone.” Eric growled, “Of fucking course she did. I can damn well tell you where she wasn’t. My fucking territory. NO ONE would do this in my territory, and if they did; they do not comprehend what’s coming for them. Jackson, have I not made it clear she takes us when she goes places?”

Jackson said, “That’s what doesn’t make sense. She brought me here with her.” Eric growled, “Marcious said if she got hurt in the Ribbon it would pull her out.” Bjourn looked at his phone. He yelled, “MOTHERFUCKER! I am going to KILL The Hood himself.” Eric asked, “Why do I get the feeling I’m going to want to kill him too?”

Bjourn explained, “BA was on a mission. Something happened and she sent out an SOS alert out. The Hood did... fuck he did what I would do. He sent the person that could get to BA the fastest.”

Eric growled, "I'm going to kill him." Bjourn said, "You'd have to find him. I can kill him though. I know where he is." Eric argued, "Then you can take me with you. Because I know he's in the damn shroud. You know where that is and can get in. So, take me. What the hell happened?"

Bjourn said, "BA got hit with a paralytic somehow. She could see everything but couldn't move. Several demons beat Haley before they stepped back. She unleashed and I quote 'hell on them.' I'm going need a better definition of hell."

Eric growled, "Why didn't she unleash hell first?" Bjourn said, "She probably panicked at seeing BA immobile. She would've wanted to assess what was wrong with her." Eric's chest rumbled. Beta McAlister concluded, "That's why she popped to the kitchen. She was going to eat and heal herself." Eric was not happy, that much was clear.

Dylan linked me, "Maybe we just set King Alpha Prick loose in Red Run to see if a rogue pops up for him to kill." I rolled my eyes, then realized Emmaline was texting someone. I raised an eyebrow, "Do you have the Black Arrow's phone number, baby girl?" She answered, "Yes. I'm making sure she's ok. She said she's fine, and she feels bad about Haley. I explained what happened. She baked Haley some kind of special cake with their special alcohol."

I linked, "How many demons did Haley take on?" Emmaline typed and then answered, "Twenty. Something blew BA's cover; the demons spiked her drink. She recognized it and sent the alert to her brother... You know before she was unable to move." I nodded. I didn't know the Black Arrow had a brother. There was usually one moniker per family, so her brother probably didn't have one.

My dad came running in and he pulled me, Emmaline, Lacy, and Dylan into a hug. He muttered, "Thank GOD you guys are alright. I took your mom out for dinner and a movie. We came back to this mad house. That woman, I swear. She's pregnant and trying to run all over damn place." I laughed, "Where is she?" My dad smiled, "I got Heather to watch her. We found out we are having a little boy." I congratulated him,

“That’s great dad.” We went to my mom to show her we were ok, then we all went to bed.

Emmaline wanted to spend the following day in Red Run with Sam, which Lacy agreed to. I couldn’t let Emmaline out of my sight, so I went with her. Dylan grumbled but came with us. We got some work done and Emmaline popped us back for dinner at our home. Lacy was all excited about moving in, she already had a wing in mind.

My mother was ecstatic about my idea. My dad linked me, “I knew I loved you for a reason.” I rolled my eyes. We held off on interrogating the warlock. I wanted him to wonder when we were coming.

On Wednesday I told Dylan, “Let’s go pay our warlock a visit.” Dylan smiled, “With pleasure.” It was highly disappointing. The warlock started talking the second we entered the room, “Look man, it was my coven leader’s idea. He owed this guy a favor, and..” I cut him off, “What guy?” The warlock shrugged, “I don’t fucking know! Some other warlocks who are working with this messed up wolf.”

I sighed, “Alpha Hammond?” The guy said, “Sure. He wants the fairy chick, Emmaline. He said we could have the bounty on her and collect the other bounty on the pregnant werebitch. You were supposed to go crazy thinking your mate was dead. Your stupid Beta reminded you that it couldn’t have been her. It was fucked from the first moment we began the illusion.”

Dylan said, “Excuse you. I am not stupid; I am a comedic genius. Who has been forced to be so very serious lately.” I complained, “I am deeply upset this went so quickly. I didn’t even invite Haley this time.” The warlock sighed, “I already know I’m dead. Can I at least have a quick death?” I laughed, “That’s not up to me.”

The warlock and Dylan glanced at me sharply. The warlock was apprehensive as he said, “You’re the Alpha, who else would it be up to?” I said, “If you were the one who had killed the girl you made me think was my mate, I would kill you. I already killed him though. Who was the girl?”

The warlock sighed, “Some orphan from Saint Louis, I didn’t get to know her.” I growled at him. He asked, “Who decides my fate if it’s not you?” The door opened and I nodded to Ryan. I told him, “He’s all yours.”

Ryan stepped forward with murder in his eyes as we stepped out. Dylan sighed, “Why did we give this to Ryan?” I said, “He needs it. I thought I saw Emmaline die, but he actually saw Valerie almost die. He needs this, and he will be my brother in law soon. I know how he feels except when the illusion ended it was his reality. If not for Haley, Valerie would be dead.”

Dylan winced, “Has King Alpha Prick lightened up yet?” I shrugged, “I’m sure he was fine when she woke up.” Dylan said, “It’s like you never met the man. I asked and knew the answer was no. He’s still crazy over our fun sized ninja fairy leaving his sight. I just bet Luna disputes are being held with his or he has a camera and warriors on her. I, myself, am excited for the train wreck that will be fairy lessons. Lacy can’t wait to watch.”

I stopped, “You told Lacy?” Dylan said, “Not why we are going with you, just that we were in fact coming with you. A heads up isn’t going to fix this since you didn’t tell Emmaline.” I nodded and texted Dustin before we left for fairy lessons.

Me: You should check on Ryan. My warriors say he’s still in the dungeons dealing with that warlock.

Dustin: Thanks for the heads up. I’m on the way over. I’ll help him.

Emmaline came into my office and grabbed my hands. She happily squealed, “Lacy said she and Dylan are coming today.” I nodded. She laughed, “Nothing is going to happen at fairy lessons, but she’s excited.” Dylan linked me, “Little does she know how very wrong she is.”

Emmaline popped us and grabbed Lacy running over so she could meet everyone. I winced, “She thinks it’s for her safety.” Dylan nudged me, “I bought you a doghouse, don’t you worry.” He shoved a handful of popcorn in his mouth. Eric snorted.

Dylan added, “Yours will be arriving any moment King Alpha Prick. I got it made special. It was expensive but worth EVERY penny.” Eric rolled his eyes. Alpha Chase was standing behind Darrin and Jackson. I linked Dylan, “You put your popcorn in a giant tin?” Dylan replied, “My popcorn rations are proportionate to the situation.”

I asked Eric, “So how’s everything with Haley?” Eric said, “Fine. I reiterated that she had to pop with help. She agreed and admitted she panicked because they didn’t have full details, she only knew that BA was down. She was going to tell me what happened when Emmaline called, so at least she’d planned on communicating with me.”

Jackson added, “And she took me with her to you.” Dylan said, “I’ve noticed my good buddy Jackson keeps pointing that out so that King Alpha Prick’s doesn’t explode. Moving on from that gem, has our fun sized fairy noticed Alpha Chase hiding back there like the big strong Alpha he is.”

Alpha Chase growled, “I am not hiding.” Dylan smiled at him. Eric said, “She hasn’t, but she is focused. Anything, Alpha Chase?” Chase scented the air, “Nothing so far.” Eric sighed, “Hexxi is here today and not Idel.”

I saw Haley’s eyes flicker to Eric, then her gaze zeroed in on Alpha Chase. I warned, “Eric.” He sighed, “I know.” Emmaline turned and gasped. Haley grabbed her, talking rapidly. Katie flicked a worried but angry glance in our direction.

Logan said, “Great... just great.” Dylan sighed, “Alas, I did not get you a doghouse, creepy sneaky ninja prince assassin.” Logan rolled his eyes. Haley and Emmaline were talking back and forth and clearly decided something. Haley grabbed both Emmaline’s hands, and a glow passed between them.

Dylan smirked, “Methinks the princess found a way around Emmaline telling Alpha Chase who his mate is. I should’ve bet on that.” Alpha Chase growled. Haley stalked towards our group with Emmaline, Hexxi, Lacy, and Katie on her heels.

She asked casually, “Eric, why is Alpha Chase here?” Eric sighed. Alpha Chase said, “Please don’t blame him, Princess Luna Conners. When you had your fairy event my wolf told me my mate was near.” Emmaline gasped and covered her mouth. Haley spoke in fealish and Emmaline calmed down.

Alpha Chase pleaded with Emmaline “You know? Please, who is she? I just want to make sure she’s safe.” Emmaline opened her mouth, but nothing came out. Haley stepped up eyes blazing, “You DARE try to get my cousin to tell you that information? You would put her through that kind of pain?”

I asked, “Pain?” I glanced at Emmaline who looked back at me with anger. Haley didn’t stop glaring at Alpha Chase, “Yes, Alpha Lucas. Pain.” I winced then linked Eric, “She called me Alpha Lucas.” Eric was astonished. Dylan shoveled more popcorn in his mouth.

Haley continued, “As the Soul Searcher Emmaline’s happiness in uniting couples is at the core of her very soul. If, for example, some guy who is let’s say married to someone who isn’t his mate because said mate couldn’t put on HER BIG GIRL PANTIES ON and handle her shit... was told who his mate was, and said mate was... unhappy their mate is a married man...”

She sarcastically spat out, “Because you know that’s every little girl’s dream... having a soul mate that’s married to someone else; THAT would hurt Emmaline’s soul. She would be in turmoil until said Alpha took his dick out of his hands and figured his shit out. You want to know who your mate is Alpha Chase? Then fix your damn personal life! Don’t you EVER try to approach any partial fairy with your life as it is. It’s insulting, even to fairies.”

Hexxi snorted, “It’s insulting no matter who you are.” Alpha Chase growled, “Really? A full blooded fairy is insulted? You all have sex with people who aren’t your mates

when you know who your damn mate is.” He had an excellent point.

Hexxi smirked, “But we don’t marry them. Sure, we have lovers but the only person we marry is our mate.” Alpha Chase frowned, “No one knew it would hurt Luna Emmaline. I don’t want that at all. I just want to meet my mate; my wolf is losing his mind. He’s so upset.”

Haley disagreed, “I knew it would hurt her. Someone could’ve mentioned this situation to me. Instead, I had to explain it to my cousin, and she had to decide in the moment. Had we had time to prepare we had other options, but noooo mansplaining happened.” Emmaline laughed, “This isn’t mansplaining.”

Haley hissed, “Whatever. Manasserie then. Get your shit together, Alpha Chase.” Alpha Chase sighed, “What do I do?” Haley asked, “Seriously? Did you just ask that? Get a divorce before your wife meets her mate, and he tries to kill you. Because that’s what all you Alpha males would do if your mates were married to someone who isn’t you. You and Alpha Sophia didn’t think this through. She needs to tell her pack to shove their opinions UP THIER ASS, because the way I hear it you went to Europe for two years for some special Alpha shit, and was Alpha Sophia sitting on her hands that whole damn time? No, she was running her pack. Defending it from threats LIKE A FUCKING BOSS. She doesn’t need you, and I’ll personally fight anyone who says that she does. She’s a bad ass and she needs to fucking own it. Now, if you will excuse me, I have lessons to get to.”

Alpha Chase quickly asked, “What if it’s one of the workers from your event that were human?” Dylan whispered, “You should’ve quit while you were behind.” After freezing for a moment Haley spun around, “They deserve better than a married man too. Do you love your wife in the romantic sense?” Alpha Chase answered, “NO! She’s like my sister. I just wanted to help her.”

Haley encouraged, “Then by all means, help her. Make her realize she’s a bad ass, and she doesn’t need a husband to rule her pack. The negative Noah’s can chill, become rogues, or

join a different fucking pack. Who needs male chauvinist in their pack anyway?” No one bothered to correct her on the negative Noah saying as she stalked off.

A doghouse arrived with a name plate that said King Alpha Prick’s House. Eric growled at Dylan. Emmaline said, “You knew.” I hadn’t realized she hadn’t gone back over with Haley. I told her “He’s our ally. I never would’ve even let him attempt to ask you if I knew it would hurt you.”

Emmaline had tears in her eyes. She wiped at one that fell, “But you didn’t even ask. You knew that it hurts me to see him with Alpha Sophia. You wanted me to subject another woman to his situation. You didn’t even talk to me. We are supposed to be partners and you keep shutting me out! I would’ve understood why you had to help him. Just as you understand why I can’t help. We don’t even know exactly how they work! Do My fairy powers are NOT a party trick, available at a whim to give answers to people I don’t even know have asked a question. They’re certainly not something anyone has a right to offer up besides me. Do people just EXPECT that Haley will heal them? That they can call Eric and tell him they’ll be bringing someone in to be healed because his Luna can do that? No, they don’t and he would NEVER allow her to be used or her powers to be given freely without discussing it with her first. I’m not a child. I’m your Luna, mate, and partner, so when are you going to treat me as such?”

I looked around as the other Alpha’s pretended not to have a front row seat to this conversation. Haley popped back and grabbed Emmaline stating, “I need my student.” then popped away with her. Dylan linked me, “At least everyone here is an ally.” I nodded.

Alpha Chase said, “This was a terrible idea. I upset your mates, and my mate’s not even here.” Marcus and Logan said nothing. Jackson consoled him, “Let’s go get your some of Mrs. Blanches food, Alpha Chase.” We all felt the cloud of darkness appear over our heads.

Burden

Emmaline was relieved for Ry when Valerie opened her eyes. I caught Logan's eyes and he smiled. I'm positive only me, him, Lucas, Eric, Jackson, and Benjamin knew Haley was going to be able to save Valerie. Dusty's face clearly showed his pure relief, while Aubree had tears streaming down her face. I felt a little bad that even now after everything she's done, people doubted Haley's abilities.

On the other hand, I knew Valerie's injury was fatal. Everyone else did too. It's not like everyone knows everything about fairies and our powers. Fairies are secretive, according to David and Haley. Ry was holding Valerie whispering to her.

She seemed surprised Haley saved her. I linked her, "You are in our bad ass girl gang. We can't lose our members!" I shot her a wink, and she gave me a grateful smile. Lucas told me to pop everyone home. I looked around at our group. I'd never done a group this large. Thankfully, one of my classmates and pack members offered to drive the cars back, reducing the numbers.

I searched Lucas' soul and hid my smile. I linked Lacy, "He doesn't want anyone to drive his car." Lacy snorted, "He loves that dumb car." I was surprised he picked Tessa and her mate. Then again, he was probably the oldest one here besides the Alpha's and Brad. Brad needed to come with our group because he was injured.

I linked Brad, "Are you alright?" He smiled, "It's nothing Emmaline, just a bump." I told him, "I'd like you to get checked out anyway." He smiled and I popped us all back home. I couldn't stop myself from jumping on Lucas in excitement when we made it back to our pack hospital.

Lucas started issuing orders to doctors. I felt a large group of anxiety, worry, and desperation coming our way. I saw

parents start flying into the hospital. I needed to ease their souls, so I told them in vague terms what had happened. I gave credit to Haley and Eric's pack because that seemed like something Haley would want done if it were her.

One look at Eric's face confirmed I was right. I smiled, giving Lucas the credit, he was due for having us all in training. It definitely came in handy today. Lastly, I gave credit to my brothers. We'd have been stuck in the illusion without them and Aubree until the witches all died or got what they wanted.

I shuddered to think what would've happened if I hadn't gotten back in touch with my family. It could've been a huge mess. I would've had to call Haley, and we'd have had to wait for a witch. Valerie would've died without ever meeting Ry. I had to physically put a stop to my thoughts as Lucas ushered our group into a giant room to get examined.

I rolled my eyes when Lucas made me get checked over. I literally didn't get hit. No one even attempted to try to hurt me. This was obviously Alpha Hammond's doing. I wondered what I was supposed to do after seeing Lucas kiss some other girl. I shrugged that off while Dr. Gonzalez examined Haley.

I could sense anxiety coming off the poor doctor in spades. I didn't have to wonder why for very long because he asked if Haley hit her head. Eric said no. I linked Lacy, "Crap. I just got her in trouble." Lacy frowned, "How?" I sighed, "She was probably in a fight before I called her, and Eric didn't know about it." Lacy smirked, "You just have to love that she's a bad ass tenacious little fairy. She's like the female spokeswoman for the supernatural women's movement we didn't know we had going on. She's all we don't need a man; we can do what they can." I had to hide my laugh, "She kind of is."

Lacy and I both gasped when Dr. Gonzalez lifted her shirt. I was beyond stunned, "How the hell did she take a shot to the head and shots to the ribs like that?" Lacy winced, "She took a beating. That had to be from several people. Why would she do that?"

Logan's soul told me he was furious. I searched Eric's soul next, then linked Lacy, "Someone needs to come up with an answer because Eric's soul is a swirl of dark angry energy." Lacy said, "Haley has made Eric calm down a lot. He's feared for a reason. Why would anyone come at Haley knowing her Hackura ties and Eric? They are suicidal." I mean she was right. Her Hackura ties were bad enough. Something told me no one wanted to cross Aiden about her either.

Lacy linked me again, "Did you hear what Beta McAlister said about Sam?" I was getting REALLY annoyed I didn't have supernatural hearing, "No... Would it kill all you wolves to SPEAK UP?!" Lacy said, "Probably. He said her blood pressure is high. She's on bedrest." I frowned, "Well we have to go there tomorrow and keep her company." Lacy laughed, "You think Lucas is going to let you out of his sight? That's cute. We all saw you die." I flinched, "You saw someone die, but it wasn't me. Poor girl. Whoever she was, they just used her. Lucas can come, but we are GOING to Red Run to cheer Sam up."

Lacy growled, "Bastards, killing someone for an illusion. Setting that aside, I love having fairy's around. She wolves would've never dream of telling an Alpha we were doing what we wanted after a scare like this." I smiled, "The times they are a changing." Lacy smirked, "That they are."

Bjourn and Marcus joined us. Bjourn had Gunner pinging Haley's locations from this evening. Lacy linked me, "I just bet over half of Gunner's technical skills are spent on things involving Haley." I smiled, "I don't think he'd mind. He seems to really love her brother Harper." Lacy smiled, "He does. They are adorable. I can actually see him, Calista, and Harper together." I nodded; they did seem like they would match really well.

Dr. Gonzalez's soul was radiating fear and trepidation. Someone needed to help the man. He explained his findings. Eric was irate. His soul was definitely murderous now. Lacy linked me, "I didn't need a medical degree for that guess. Do we think a partial fairy was in trouble?"

I thought about it, “She had her fairy powers to heal Valerie. Why didn’t she just fight with those? She even called on Aiden to help her and us when she got shot.” Lacy said, “She wasn’t shot though. She obviously handled whatever it was. She was with Jackson when you called.” Bjourn said BA got hurt. Lacy and I exchanged worried glances. I took out my phone and texted her.

Me: BA are you ok? We got attacked and Haley had to save one of my friends, Valerie. You met her at our girl’s day. Haley passed out from healing her because it was bad. Death bad. She’s being examined by our pack doctor. Eric may go on a killing spree.

BA: You are too sweet. I am fine. Of course, Haley pushed her powers. That girl gives so much of herself. She popped in after I sent an SOS to my brother. My cover was burned. My drink was drugged. I couldn’t move, and I knew the Hood himself couldn’t get anyone to me on time. Even with sending out my SOS. Haley popped in to get me to safety. She covered me as they started to beat me.

Me: Are you ok though? Haley had enough juice to heal Valerie. Was she coming back to you later?

BA: No, I didn’t take a single hit. The paralytic wore off once she left me. I actually just finished baking her a cake with our special alcohol.

Me: Wouldn’t that cook out of the cake?

BA: It would, but it’s in the icing

Me: I so want a piece of this cake

BA: How pissed is Eric? Is he going to come for my brother?

Me: I don’t think he actually will. He is threatening things though. Bjourn is upset with the Hood himself not your brother.

BA: I wouldn’t blame if he wanted to punch him, but he can’t kill him.

Me: His soul is in a bad place now, but he will calm down when Haley wakes up. He's good but I doubt he can find The Hood before she wakes up. The shroud is concealed somewhere.

BA: The Hood isn't hiding. Bjourn knows where we live. It would take Bjourn at least a day to find him if he was trying to avoid him. I'll shoot Haley a text in warning.

Me: Shouldn't you warn the Hood himself?

BA: LOL I'm with him. He's basically waiting for Bjourn. They are actually friends.

Me: If it helps, Bjourn said The Hood did exactly what he would've done. Sending the person that could get to Haley the fastest roles reversed.

BA: That does help I'll pass that along

I was relaying him the information BA gave me. While asking questions myself.

Me: How many demons did Haley kill/how many beat her?

BA: There were twenty of them. I feel bad she covered me trying to figure out how hurt I

was. I asked her why she didn't just pop us away. She said no one hurts the people she cares about and lives.

Me: That is so Haley.

BA: It very much is.

I put my phone away just as Dale ran in gathering our group. The relief in his soul was almost suffocating me. I needed to ask Haley now that I'm more attuned to using my power, how to shut it off sometimes. Everyone's relief had almost choked me in the last few hours.

We found out that Debbie was having a boy. I was really happy for them. We went and saw Debbie, and her anxiety was

released as soon as she saw us in person. I wondered if Dylan knew they really did consider him one of their own children. What staggered me even more was realizing they felt the same way about me.

Lucas dragged me to bed. I fell asleep wondering if I was going to have bruises from the iron grip he had on me. When I woke up, I went to train. Alex spotted me and walked over, "The Alpha cancelled training because of the fights yesterday." I frowned, "I didn't fight. Will you spar with me?" He smiled, "Of course, Emmaline." I smiled, "Thanks, I really appreciate it." He nodded and we fought.

He showed me some new moves, also pointing out that I was not in the correct stances with my feet on a few moves. I thanked him when he called the lesson. It wasn't an hour long like normal, but I appreciated his time.

I popped back to our room to shower. Afterwards, I decided to pop to check on Haley at the hospital. I frowned finding the bed Haley had been in empty. Dr. Gonzalez came in, "They called her cousin Bexley to pop her home." I nodded and stepped out to call her.

She answered on the first ring, "Hello, cousin." I smiled, "Hi, Haley. Are you ok?" Haley said, "I am fine. I just woke up thirty minutes ago." I laughed, "I'm surprised you're not getting a lecture from Eric." Haley said, "When he wakes up, I'm sure there will be one. Which is not entirely fucking fair, but whatever." I laughed, "You're making progress then. I was certain he was going to stay awake until you woke up." Haley told me, "I'm sure he was going to."

I heard a growl, "Where are you, Haley Connors?" Haley said, "You can smell me, and you can sense my location. I'm on the deck. I was letting you sleep." Eric growled, "You went and got hurt without me." Haley sighed, "It wasn't intentional, Thor. Emmaline, I'll let you go. I'm glad you are ok." I laughed, "Good luck with Eric. His soul was a mess of angry emotions last night." Haley clicked her tongue, "I'll just bet they were." I added, "Angry murderous emotions. He's a little scary." Haley laughed, "Not to me, but I appreciate the heads up. Though his face already tells me that."

Eric said, “Angel, you have five seconds to get off that phone.” Haley pouted, “Uh oh, I’m in trouble.” I warned, “It might not be the fun kind.” Haley quickly assured me, “It can always turn into the fun kind, cousin. Talk later.” She abruptly ended the call.

I stared at my phone. I really needed to tap into my fairy side like she could. How could she look at the face Eric was making last night and not wet her pants? It was beyond me. I popped back to my room.

Lucas growled, “Where were you?” I said, “Training then I went to the hospital to check on Haley. She wasn’t there so I called her, then popped back here. Come back to bed. Let’s just sleep a little longer.”

I held out my hand and Lucas took it, climbing back in with me. He kissed my hair, “I love you, baby girl.” I smiled, “I love you too.” When we got up, I told him that Lacy and I were going to Red Run. I linked Lacy, “You were right. He’s not happy about the Red Run plan.” Lacy replied, “I for one am shocked... oh wait... nope knew it. Are we still going?” I channeled my inner Haley, “Hell yes we are.” Lacy snorted, “Dylan and I will head up to the main house.”

I told Lucas in no uncertain terms that Lacy and I were going. He was welcome to join but that was that. He looked furious but agreed to come with us. I smiled and called Sam. She answered, “Hey, Emmaline. Good morning.” Her sadness was in her voice. I said, “Lacy and I want to pop on over and cheer you up. Are you up for us to come today?” Sam immediately brightened, “Yes, that would be great!” I happily told her, “We will be popping to you shortly.” I popped Lucas and I downstairs where Dylan grumbled that he was coming with us too. I grabbed both of them, popping us to Red Run.

Dylan said, “I’m still here under protest, but popping does make it better.” Alpha Kyle came around the corner glancing at Lucas in surprise. Lucas answered his unspoken question, “Lacy and Emmaline insisted they had to come cheer Sam up today.” Alpha Kyle smirked, “Drake will be happy about that and I’m sure Sam will be as well.” He pointed us in the direction of Sam and Drake’s room.

I stopped at Peter and Chelsea's knocking on their door. Peter opened it, clearly surprised to see us. I smiled, "Hey! We are going to sit with Sam and cheer her up. I stopped by to see if Chelsea wants to join us." Chelsea called, "Heck yes I do!" Peter said, "I need a kiss first, sugar baby momma." Chelsea smiled, "As if I would leave without giving my man some sugar." She kissed him and he hugged her for several moments then let her go.

Drake opened the door as we arrived saying, "I'll leave you all to your girl time." He gave Sam a kiss and left. I said, "So, high blood pressure due to stress? It's understandable." Sam sighed, "They think it could be pre-eclampsia." I frowned, "I don't know what that is, but I bet I have a cousin who could solve that for you." Lacy said, "Heck yes she could."

Sam asked, "Would she? Drake is really worried." I googled pre-eclampsia. I clicked my phone off very disturbed with what I'd found. I assured her, "I know she will. We aren't going to let anything happen to you or your little nugget in there." Sam smiled, "Thanks. I really need a distraction." I smiled at Lacy, "What could be better distraction than deciding wedding details?" Sam smiled, "I don't think there is a better one."

Chelsea said, "We could decide our mates' costumes for Lacy's wedding." Lacy snorted, "Your mates costumes? You have to come in a couple's costume." I frowned, "You don't want us in bridesmaid dresses?" Lacy shook her head, "No. Why should you guys miss out on the costume fun? It's not like I dreamed of my wedding color scheme my whole life. I thought I'd have a boring mating ceremony. Let's decide on your couple's costumes."

I got a wicked idea and started cackling. Lacy squealed, "YES! FAIRY FUN! What are you and Lucas coming as?" I snapped myself into the Tinkerbell costume Haley had gotten for me. I stated, "Tinkerbell and Peter Pan." We were all cackling.

Chelsea gathered herself first, "Alpha Lucas... is... going to.... die.... with you... in that outfit..." I laughed and shot Haley a text making sure she wasn't coming as Tinkerbell. She

answered back with a screen full of LOL, saying it was all mine. She'd even snapped the Peter Pan outfit to my room.

We picked out the dresses for my wedding for the bridesmaids. I texted a picture to Haley and Katie. It was a long red lace patterned dress with sleeves. Everyone loved it. I made sure it was loose because I didn't know when Katie or Sam would be having their babies.

I linked Lacy, "We need to throw... like several baby showers. Sam, Chelsea, your mom, and Katie. Holy crap." Lacy smirked, "I happen to know a fairy who LOVES to plan such things." I breathed in relief. "You're right! Thank goodness." We got some more wedding details hammered out.

We left Chelsea with Sam in her room. We ran into Drake and Peter on the way out. I did my space unheard chant. We discussed dates with them for baby showers. Peter said we could throw them together since they were the future Luna and Beta female. They were best friends, and both he and Drake believed they'd love a joint shower.

We decided it would be after Lacy's wedding. Sometime in November, we'd pick an exact date later. Peter was hoping they'd know the gender of their child before we did the invites. Lacy told him they could do gender neutral colors. Peter said he didn't care about that, he just wanted to know if it was a boy or a girl. He had no preference, he just said as an Alpha he likes to be prepared.

We walked away. I linked Lacy, "One hundred percent, they are having a girl." Lacy laughed, "What's your reasoning?" I smiled, "He wants to know the gender and the little one isn't showing. She's already keeping him on his toes." Lacy said, "I'll die laughing if you're right." I smiled, "I just know I am."

We found Lucas and Dylan, and I popped everyone home. Lucas announced that he wanted Dylan and Lacy to move into the house at family dinner. Everyone was excited. Lacy and I were linking about how much fun it would be. We could say meet in the living room instead of me popping to her to pop back here. Or her running over whenever Lucas and Dylan

were busy. Debbie was beyond thrilled all her kids would be under one roof.

Monday Drake came into school with worried eyes. Peter looked strained as well. Chelsea was crying until she saw me. She grabbed my hands, “Emmaline, I don’t have Haley’s number.” Drake’s head shot over to Chelsea. I asked, “What do you need?” Chelsea said, “Sam has pre-eclampsia.” I nodded, “I’ll text her now.” Drake yanked me into the briefest hug I’ve ever been a part of while Peter stared at him in shock. Drake whispered, “Thank you, Emmaline.” I smiled, “It’s not a big deal.” Drake said, “It really is.” I texted Haley.

Me: Sam has pre-eclampsia. Would you mind healing her?

Haley: Of course, I don’t mind. Do I need to pop in and grab Drake from school?

Me: I’ll pop our group to you and Sam.

Haley: See you in a pop.

I laughed, “She’s too much. Ok who’s coming besides Drake and me?” Peter told me, “Just take our whole group.” Valerie came up, “Me too!” I smiled teasing, “Ry let you out of his sight?” Valerie sighed, “Just for school.”

I smiled then linked her, “You should text him where we are going.” She nodded, “Good call.” I led our group to the front office. I smiled at the secretary who was Sam’s aunt. Her eyes were rimmed red, “Hi, I need to borrow a room. I need to pop our group to Red Run for...”

She interrupted me standing grabbing Drake by the arms, “Is Sammy ok? I’m in knots worried about her.” Drake said, “Princess Luna Connors agreed to come heal Sam. Emmaline’s popping us in to be with her.”

The secretary started to cry, “Oh thank the goddess! Sam’s mom is just a mess. I don’t have pups. My husband and I consider Sam our own. Go back to conference room A. I’ll send a note to all your teachers.” I gave her a hug, “Thank

you.” We all filed into the room and held hands. I popped us all to Sam where Haley already was.

Drake moved quickly to Sam’s side. Haley smiled at him, “I was just explaining to Sam my healing will speed up her pregnancy. She will have some discomfort as the baby’s size grows. Your baby will be born either right on track with Peter and Chelsea’s little one or a little before.” Drake nodded, “I’m fine with that.”

Alpha Kyle and Beta McAlister entered the room. Haley said, “Drake you can hold Sam’s hand if you want. You will get a calming sense. This will take around thirty minutes or so.”

Alpha Kyle asked, “Does Alpha Eric know you are here?” Haley smiled, “He does. I’m sure he’ll call you to make sure I got here...” She trailed off as one of her boys popped to her. He smiled at her and she said, “Hey, EJ.” EJ looked around then popped right into Chelsea’s arms.

Haley gasped as Chelsea cooed at him. Haley straightened, “Ummm... right well... wow... Ok... Sam, let’s get you healed.” I cocked an eyebrow at Lacy. I linked her, “Has EJ ever popped to anyone else around you?” Lacy shrugged, “None of them have ever popped to anyone besides Eric or Haley that I’ve seen.” I nodded and shrugged that off.

We all watched Haley heal Sam. Peter laughed when Drake began to purr. Beta McAlister said to me, “You have no idea what this means to us.” I smiled, “Haley likes to help in any way she can. Especially for our bad ass girl gang.”

Alpha Kyle laughed, “She organized a girl’s day for my wife and her friends.” I teased him, “You all best prepare yourselves then.” He just smirked. Eric did in fact call him while Haley was healing Sam. When Haley was done, she sat back.

When Sam opened her eyes Haley smiled at her reminding her, “Like I said you’ll have some discomfort today from the baby growing, but you’re healed now.” She turned “EJ, we need to go home before daddy gets upset.” EJ growled in

response. Haley told him calmly, “Eric Junior, don’t you growl at me. I will pop home and get your dad.”

Chelsea laughed but Peter’s eyes narrowed. He asked, “Why doesn’t he want to go with you? Why did he pop to Chelsea in the first place?” Haley sighed, “I’m not certain.” Alpha Kyle laughed, “Do we need to pop Alpha Eric in? Alpha males are notoriously stubborn. We bow only to our father’s as Alpha males when we’re children.”

Haley frowned, “No, EJ come on. Let’s go.” EJ put his hands on Chelsea’s chest. He legitimately sighed then popped back to Haley. Haley smiled and kissed his forehead. Peter said, “Are you going to tell us what’s going on?” Haley sighed, “If this happens again, I’ll know for sure. Then I’ll tell you.” Peter accepted that.

He turned to me when Haley popped out. He asked, “Do you know what that was?” I shrugged, “Maybe she looks like one of Haley’s brother’s mates or something.” Peter frowned, “I guess.” I grabbed our group besides Drake popping us back to school.

Peter said, “Umm... you forgot Drake.” I snorted, “No I didn’t, Sam needs him today.” Peter laughed and we all went to our classes. The rest of the day flew by. I barely saw Ry or Dusty; they were busy with other things.

Ry couldn’t let Valerie out of his sight. I don’t even know if she realized he sat in the school parking lot all day. I saw him and Dusty eating lunch outside on Tuesday and Wednesday together. I was worried about him. I decided I’d talk to him after fairy lessons.

I was surprised when on the car ride home from school Lacy announced, “I’m excited to see your fairy lesson tonight.” I glanced at her. Brad said, “Eyes on the road, Emmaline.” I rolled my eyes then asked, “You’re coming?” Lacy frowned, “Lucas didn’t tell you? Dylan and I are both coming.”

I thought about it then said, “He’s still worried.” Lacy said quietly, “We did all see you, but not you, die. Lucas lost it.” I

frowned, “I would too.” We got home as a mail carrier was placing a giant doghouse on the front porch.

He smiled when he saw us, “Can you sign for this? Dylan Frost ordered it.” Lacy stepped forward, “I’m his ma...” I cut her off, “Fiancé. She’s his Fiancé.” I linked her, “He doesn’t know what a mate is.” She chuckled and signed for it.

I asked, “Did Dylan get a dog?” Lacy shrugged, “Not that he told me.” We walked around to the front of it. I laughed, “It’s a prank. The nameplate says Lion.” Lacy laughed, “He’s too much. I wonder if this is because Lucas keeps upsetting Haley.” I shrugged, “Probably.”

Lacy turned to Brad, “Can you set this around the back on the deck?” Brad nodded then laughed when he saw the front, “It’s a good thing he’s the Beta. The Alpha might be upset with anyone except you, Dylan, Emmaline, or Princess Luna Conners for this.” He wasn’t wrong.

I ran inside. Lacy and I finished our homework and I went to Lucas’ office to grab him with Lacy slipping in behind me. I felt touched that he wanted Dylan there just in case. I popped us all to Haley and Eric’s territory.

I grabbed Lacy’s hand linking her, “I can’t wait for you to meet everyone!” I rolled my eyes, “I wish Idel was here instead of Hexxi, but you’ll meet her one day.” Haley smiled in greeting, “Well hello, Lacy.” Lacy smiled at her. I explained, “Lucas wanted Dylan here today. Dylan wanted Lacy here. I think they are still reeling from the dance.”

Haley laughed, “Alpha Males, what can you do with them?” Katie grumbled, “Kick them in the balls.” Haley laughed, “If you do that to my brother you have to get video evidence.” Katie asked, “What kind of friend would I be if there was no evidence?” Haley smirked, “Not a badass one.”

Hexxi greeted, “Hello, Lacy, it’s nice to meet you. I’m Emmaline’s half-sister, Hexxi.” Trixie and Farrin even came over to meet her. Haley had everyone sectioned off. She’d turned to smile at Eric when suddenly anger snapped within her soul. I choked a little, it was so intense.

Lacy looked between us worriedly. Haley gritted her teeth, “Alpha Chase is here.” I was surprised. Haley turned me back to face her. She yelled, “Son of a MOTHERFUCKER! That ass hat is here to find his mate. FUCK!”

Katie said, “Just don’t tell him who it is, Emmaline.” I wanted to cry, “I can’t not tell him.” Haley frowned, “That’s not entirely true. FUCKING FUCKERS! Emmaline, I’m so sorry. I didn’t know he was coming. Long story short, you have a decision to make. IF you want to tell Alpha Chase who his mate is... if you even know his mate... It’s likely he thinks it’s a part fairy and has smelled them... you can tell him; however, if you bring them together and his mate is rightfully pissed he’s a fucking married man.... it will hurt you until their issues are resolved.”

I shrieked, “WHAT?” Katie shouted, “Are you fucking kidding me?” Haley sighed, “Did you feel unsettled when you told Dylan who his mate was, but you couldn’t unite them?” I nodded. Haley continued, “Did you feel the same with Ryan and Valerie? You felt the need to tell her and felt bad about their situation, until they started talking and she was happy.”

I thought about it, “Yes.” Haley sighed, “If you brought mates together who were unhappy it would tear at your soul until their issues were resolved. That’s not normally a problem because bringing mates together is a happy thing. In Alpha Chase’s case, I can’t imagine a woman would be happy her mate is married... even... oh shit... Idel... FUCK!”

Hexxi yelled, “NO WAY HALEY! That will hurt her feelings!” Katie raised an eyebrow, “I like Idel, but why?” Haley sighed, “Because fairy’s have lovers, but the only person they would ever marry is their mate. It had to be my fairy event that he caught the scent at. She attended, and... oh shit fuck balls no. I DO NOT like the options of who his mate could be outside of Idel.”

I gulped, “BA stayed with you before our girl’s day.” Haley nodded. I said, “I don’t want to tell him while he’s still in his situation.” Bexley joined us enraged. I continued, “BA didn’t want me to tell her who her mate was. She wanted to meet them organically.”

Haley agreed, “Yes, she wants to see how fate brings her string to her.” I looked at Hexxi, “And I don’t want to hurt Idel. Hexxi knows her best and says it would. Hell, I don’t want to do that to anyone even if it’s not one of them.”

Haley sighed, “If I had known ahead of time, we could’ve had more options. I’m so sorry, Emmaline. You’re going to have to be bound to my decree as a princess to not tell. It won’t hurt, but we will have to go to Faerie to complete the ritual. It will keep you from telling anyone except me who his mate is. You won’t feel burdened to tell him. Then it becomes my problem to solve.”

I sighed, “I don’t want that to be on you.” Haley shrugged, “We have no other options unfortunately. Especially, since you don’t want to tell him. I wouldn’t if I was you either.” Hexxi and Farrin were looking at Haley with both fear and awe. I shook my head.

Haley told me, “I’m not just your cousin. I am also your princess and taking the burdens of my people is part of my job. I would not want you to suffer.” I asked, “Are you going to suffer?” Haley sighed, “Not like you would, no.”

I nodded to Haley. She grabbed my arms. Katie shot a furious look over to the group of guys. Bexley was fuming mad. Lacy linked me, “I’m going to kill them all.” I sighed, “Maybe they didn’t know.” Lacy snorted, “That’s why Dylan bought the doghouse. They knew.” I hoped that wasn’t true.

Haley spoke rapidly in fealish. A golden glow surrounded us both. It came out of me and into her. I looked at her with worried eyes. She sighed, “Let’s go deal with this. The final step will be I will command you as the princess in fealish not to tell them. I will only issue that command if one of those jerks asks you who it is. At least it gives them a chance not to ask and not piss me the fuck off.”

I nodded as she stalked off. We all followed her, even Hexxi, who seemed quite pissed off for Idel’s sake. It was a little ironic since we didn’t know who Alpha Chase’s mate was yet. Haley asked as a formality why Alpha Chase was here.

He actually took ownership. I studied his soul. Frankly, he was a mess. I'm guessing his fear was about rejection. He genuinely wanted his mate. My heart softened towards him; I couldn't help it. Lacy linked me, "They can't keep her from him. He's their ally; they have to help." I replied, "They could've told us." Lacy said, "They should've." I asked, "Why didn't they?" Lacy said, "Probably because they knew you wouldn't like it."

Alpha Chase then asked the question I was dreading. He asked me who his mate was. I tried not to picture it, but like a light turning on, I knew. Haley spoke in rapid fealish, commanding me not to tell.

I opened my mouth; thankful nothing came out. Haley handled the situation. When Lucas questioned me being in pain Lacy linked me, "She is going to snap to hard at him."

Everyone winced when Haley addressed him by his title. Marcus and Logan exchanged looks at the venom in Haley's tone. I focused on feeling betrayed that Lucas didn't tell me about this so I wouldn't laugh during Haley's speech. She was going to have to teach me how to look that calm while angry, because her soul told me she was pissed.

Lacy linked me, "I don't know if that's the right word. Alpha Chase and Alpha Sophia were like siblings when I knew them." I shrugged. I knew something strange was going on with those two. Alpha Chase argued a fairy wouldn't be insulted and Hexxi spoke up.

I linked Lacy, "I'm just saying. You have to know it's bad when a full-blooded fairy is upset with you. Like there's your flashing neon sign. Everyone always talks about how stuck up and flighty they are." Lacy agreed, "Yeah, they tend to let a lot slide right on by them. So, if Hexxi is this offended for her sister.... It's not great. Especially since Alpha Chase is so young. It's not like he waited as long as Lucas or Eric."

I nodded. I linked her, "I know something else is going on. Alpha Chase isn't ok with his marriage or Alpha Sophia. His soul is a mess. Whatever is going on here, I think there's more to it." Lacy shrugged.

Haley told Alpha Chase to divorce his wife if he wanted his mate. Lacy shouted, "PREACH HALEY!" We listened to Haley get more sayings wrong. Lacy linked me, "We should make manasserie catch on. It goes with a lot more situations than mansplaining."

The more Haley talked the more I thought she should become a lawyer with Katie. I glanced back at my sister and shivered. Those two would be sharks in a courtroom. Alpha Chase asked if it could be a human worker. I glanced around as no one seemed to understand Haley's reaction; except Marcus and Logan. They shot each other another glance. My eyes narrowed. Haley must not have used humans. Wouldn't Eric have known that?

Haley and Alpha Chase discussed his marriage. I studied his soul. He was being honest. He was just trying to help her. Why did they jump to... Hey, let's get married? I had to pinch myself not to laugh when I saw a delivery arrive. Dylan hadn't just gotten Lucas a doghouse; he'd ordered one for Eric too.

I linked Lacy, "Some days I'm not convinced Dylan doesn't want Eric to hit him." Lacy gulped, "Eric has killed people for less." I assured her, "He's not focused on Dylan right now. His soul is focused on Haley." His concern for her was pinging all over. Lacy replied, "Thank the goddess for that one."

I couldn't keep the betrayal out of my voice when I confronted Lucas about knowing about this whole ordeal. He tried to explain the ally situation which Lacy had already explained in a single sentence. I understood why they had to help Alpha Chase. I didn't understand why he didn't tell me. AGAIN.

I couldn't believe they were willing to put me in that position in the first place. Let's force Emmaline to share someone's mate because she can't control it. It felt like my rights had been taken away. Like they took my choice and tried to use my powers against me, and we didn't even know how they worked! It hadn't escaped my notice that nobody had bothered to ask before they'd offered me up on a whim.

Lucas and I had words before Haley popped to us, taking me back to fairy lessons. I looked down whispering, “I shouldn’t have yelled at him in front of those other guys. You wouldn’t have...” Haley shrugged, “He deserved it. You can’t do what I would in every situation. You weren’t raised how I was. We all have things that shape us into who we are. If there was someone over there who would use you against Lucas, I wouldn’t have let you stay back. I would’ve popped you with us. None of those guys will use that fight against Lucas, not even Alpha Chase. I looked up what we have on him. He’s... a good person.”

She spoke her space unheard chant. She told me, “Unburden your soul, Emmaline. Tell me as your princess, who is Alpha Chase’s mate?” I started to cry, “You know, don’t you?” She pursed her lips, “I have a very good idea.” I admitted, “It’s BA.” Haley sighed, “That’s what I thought, I’ll handle it.”

I looked at her asking, “What will you do?” Haley said, “I’ll tell her I know who it is. She will tell me she wants to meet him in an organic way. I’ll pester Eric constantly to get Alpha Chase and Alpha Sophia divorced. Or something. I’ll do something. BA deserves to be happy. I may doubt many things, but the mate bond is not one.”

She looked back at Eric and continued, “I love that man more than I thought was possible. He sees past all my scars and emotional damage. I want BA to have what we have. Because even when he makes me mad, he’s the best damn thing that happened to me. Our life, our children, it’s everything I thought I’d never have. BA deserves the best. I can tell you right now after her whole first love fiasco with the troll... Alpha Chase being married will wreck her. So, I’m going to need the goddesses to give me time to fix this clusterfuck so they can meet organically, at which point he will be fucking single.”

I nodded, “I think there’s something about them that we don’t know.” Haley asked, “Why?” I told her, “Alpha Chase’s soul has been upset and annoyed every time he’s around Alpha

Sophia. He's not ok with what's going on." Haley frowned, "Ok, I'll figure that out too."

Haley undid her space unheard chant. Hexxi stroked my back, "Just go center yourself by the water today. The ritual to bind you to the princesses' command will tire you out. I want you to have your full energy." I sighed and went to sit by the water.

Before I knew it, Katie was tapping on my shoulder. I stood with her looking up at the sky. I asked, "When did it get cloudy?" Haley answered, "When I rolled in the clouds to remind my husband and his brothers, along with your mate, that I can start a torrential downpour on their heads."

I laughed, "Could you do that after you pop us to Faerie?" Bexley grumbled, "Not before I get there." Lacy asked, "Can you conjure an umbrella for me then?" Bexley snapped. Lacy said, "They might get the hint though." Bexley spoke a chant smilingly triumphantly, "Now they can't see it. Jerk faces!"

Haley sighed, "Make sure to tell Eric I'm popping Bjourn, Blade, and Jackson with us." Bexley nodded, "Don't you worry, I'll tell Kujo all he needs to know."

Haley nodded and popped us to Blade and Bjourn, then she popped us inside to the kitchen. Jackson and Alpha Chase were there. Haley reached out a hand, "Jackson, we have to go to Faerie where I get to take on the pain my cousin would've endured because of this fucking decision that was made without our input. At the moment, I would chew glass before I took Eric. So, you get to come because Darrin and Harold aren't welcome in Faerie."

Alpha Chase paled, "You have to be in pain, princess?" Haley said, "Yes, and while I know you didn't know that I'm not currently rational. So, I'll just say get your fucking shit together because your mate deserves your best. Be the best. I believe in the mate bond, and I did study you after we met. You're good at being an Alpha. You care about your people and your family. You look up to my husband, which is why I can't figure out for the life of me why you married Alpha

Sophia. He never would've. He told me so, and he meant it. Just...unfuck your personal life."

She grabbed a stunned Jackson and popped us outside the castle in Faerie. I gaped at the beauty before me. I stated, "This is amazing." Katie echoed my thoughts, "It really is. I mean your dad's house is... wow... but this..."

Jackson, Bjourn, and Blade were staring worriedly at Haley. Haley spoke in Latin. Blade literally faded away. Bjourn stood by her side refusing to move, responding back to her in Latin. She was annoyed but nodded to her agreement to whatever he said.

Guards stood there smiling at us. Specifically at Haley. Finally, one spoke, "Princess, you have brought guests." Haley said, "Yes, my cousin the water fairy duchess. Her sister, who is my brother Prince Logan's mate. Katie has earth fairy blood in her. My brother Bjourn, and you remember Alpha Jackson Conners." The guard nodded, but he didn't look happy.

Bexley popped in. The guard greeted her, "Bexley, welcome home." Bexley snorted, "Sure." The guard looked at Haley and started flirting, "Your wolf was unable to come this time, princess? Are you staying the night? I can have your chambers prepared."

Haley said, "Thank you, but we are not staying the night. Jackson is here in my husband's stead. I need to speak to my brother." The guard nodded, "Of course, princess. Let me know of any needs you may have. I will gladly meet them." Jackson growled while Bjourn took out a knife.

Haley didn't appear to notice that he was flirting with her. I bit my lip when Haley replied, "Ok, thank you Reger for the offer. I just need my brother." Reger frowned.

Jackson stepped forward getting in his face, "My brother takes care of her needs just fine." Haley snorted, "He meant anything in Faerie. Not what you think. It's just his job. Good lord, I can't take you guys anydamnwhere without you misunderstanding things. Come Emmaline and Katie."

Bexley was trying not to laugh. Jackson kept growling at the guard. He lowered his voice and I cursed my lack of supernatural hearing. Katie said, "Uhh Haley, that guard likes you." Haley snorted, "He doesn't. No one here liked me until I killed my brother because he betrayed them and Aiden. Which is a shitty reason to start liking someone. They are scared of me now because they know I'm a Hackura Princess too. They think that I'll sic my brothers on them; or kick their asses for how they behaved towards me as a child."

Katie said, "Wow. Ok that one hundred percent has nothing to do with any of that, girlfriend." Haley frowned, "Yes, it does." Aiden popped beside us. He teased, "You are fighting a lost cause, Katie Bishop. Such a lost cause."

Haley questioned, "What's a lost cause?" Aiden smiled and patted her head, "Convincing you, dear sister, that you have admirers." Haley scoffed, "People who don't want me to murder them are not admirers." Aiden smiled, "You see? Lost cause." Haley stuck her tongue out at him.

Aiden seemed to notice Jackson and Bjourn were here with us. He raised an eyebrow, "Are you mad at your wolf, little sister?" Jackson offered, "Eric wasn't available." That was a lie of epic proportions. Aiden laughed, "So, she is mad at him. Everyone in this room knows her wolf wouldn't let her come here without him given how he feels about her being here. He has made that abundantly clear to me, many times."

Jackson growled which only made Aiden grin wider. He asked Haley, "What did your wolf do?" Haley didn't answer, "We are here to perform the end of the ritual for my princess command." Aiden's jaw dropped, "You... are here to WHAT?!"

Jackson was still growling. Haley sighed, "I didn't have a choice, brother." I sighed, "She didn't. It was my choice. There's... It's... a messed-up situation." Aiden sighed, "There is someone's mate you know that would cause them pain to discover then, yes?" Haley answered, "Yes."

Jackson asked, "Haley, how can you know that?" Haley said, "Because I'm a woman. Even if I was wrong, I wouldn't

let Emmaline take that pain on over a chance. It would hurt her soul.” Aiden sighed, “So now it will hurt yours.”

Bjourn interjected, “Excuse me?” Haley sighed, “Aiden, please.” Aiden frowned, “Why did you not just bring her here earlier this week and perform the sacred ritual for the Soul Searcher?” Haley threw her hands in the air, “What a great idea! Why didn’t I do that? Oh yeah, because I didn’t know until it was too late.”

Aiden surmised, “Which is why we are mad at the wolf, he knew.” Bjourn asked, “Can we go back to the part where this will hurt my sister’s soul?” Jackson nodded, “I have to agree with Bjourn. You didn’t say that earlier, Haley.”

Tears filled my eyes, “You said it wouldn’t be as bad for you.” Haley took my hands, “It won’t be. I’m not the Soul Searcher. It would have sent you into a depression. Me, well, it will just piss me the fuck off until I get what I want.” Aiden raised an eyebrow.

Bjourn spoke in a hard tone, “King Aiden.” Aiden turned to him saying, “If our sister says she will be fine, then she will be.” I could see he was worried though. Crap. I walked over to Haley, “I don’t want this to hurt you.” Haley assured me, “I’m protecting two people I care about very much.”

Bjourn, Aiden and Jackson simultaneously yelled, “TWO?” Surely Jackson and Bjourn figured out Haley knew who Alpha Chase’s mate was. How was that surprising information? Haley ignored them. She kissed my forehead then said, “It’s nothing to me. No one can match me in managing emotions. Nothing can hurt me the way I used to be hurt. We already started the process anyway. We can’t stop or we will both be in pain.” Katie gave Haley a hug pulling me into it with her.

Aiden sounded annoyed when he spoke, “So, not only are you taking on her keeping a secret as the Soul Searcher; you took on the burden of knowing the name of the mate in question, little sister.” Haley replied, “Yes, brother.” Aiden’s lips went into a firm line.

Bjourn sounded pissed, “I find that look on your face unsettling. You are always smiling and finding things amusing.

Why doesn't he find this amusing, little sister?" Haley shrugged, "Because it's not amusing, it's annoying and it was avoidable. If you would like this all to be resolved, make it your personal mission to fix Alpha Chase's life choices."

Jackson sighed, "He was trying to help a friend." Haley snorted, "He picked the worst option possible. I mean really, did they even come up with any other fucking ideas? Did anyone advise them?" I added, "Yeah, why did let's get married at eighteen when we aren't even mates come up?"

Jackson sighed, "Her pack gave her the impression they wouldn't let her rule without a male by her side. Her father was sick... He was dying. Her Beta refused the role of Alpha because it was Sophia's. We were out of town when he died, all of us allies were actually." Haley's eyes narrowed, "How fucking convenient." Jackson frowned. It didn't really sound convenient it sounded like bad timing. Could Haley really think someone engineered them being out of town so they couldn't advise them against it?

Haley continued, "I understand Alpha Sophia was in an emotional state. Why did NONE of you think to have her challenge her opposers? She would've won." Jackson was quiet, "We weren't here, but Eric would've advised that. That's not typically how that's done though." I said, "Excuse me? You guys fight about stuff all the time." Jackson said, "Fighting for the Alpha title within a pack, unless the Alpha dies with no heirs, brothers, or a Beta isn't done. If the Alpha dies with a female heir, someone else is usually chosen. Like I said, we were out of town. Eric wouldn't have let them oust her. She was trained to be the Alpha. Allister named her his successor."

Haley grumbled, "Sexist shits, all of you. Whatever. Let's do this Emmaline. Then I'm going to get on my changing shit for she wolves' agenda. Because if MY DAUGHTER wants to run HER FATHER'S pack WITH her brothers then she fucking can. I will personally behead anyone who fucking says otherwise. My little girl can do what she wants to do, and so can with my nieces. If Saied wants to take over your pack, Jackson; I will make sure that fucking happens."

Jackson frowned. Bjourn actually cracked a smile. Haley continued, “Do you know if I would’ve been older than Bjourn the crown would’ve come to me unless I abdicated? Seriously, have none of you ever heard of Queen Elizabeth II? She ruled her country like a fucking boss. Honestly, men! If Aiden and I had an older sister, she would’ve ruled here too. What the actual hell is wrong with you people?”

Aiden was outright laughing now. Haley turned to me, “We ARE changing this shit for our daughters, Emmaline. Future daughters and the only current one in existence, Cassie. NO ONE will EVER tell my baby girl she’s not good enough to do what she wants to fucking do. It’s her FUCKING BIRTHRIGHT! If Eric EVER wants out of that damn doghouse Dylan bought him, which is BRILLIANT by the way, he will make sure that my baby can do whatever she wants.” She pointed at Jackson, “You link him that right now!”

Haley turned to Bjourn. He answered her unspoken question, “Cassie can do whatever she wants. Anyone who stands opposed to that stands against us.” She turned to Aiden whose smile was broad and smug, “Of course my niece may do as she wishes. Aiylee will be queen here. I would kill anyone who told Cassie she could not rule.” Kill? Did he just say kill? Not fairy hijinks? Ok, then.

Now I was as mad as she was, “Who the hell are they to tell she wolves they can’t run packs? Can they be Betas?” Jackson shuffled his feet, “Typically the role goes to the male of the family, or the mate of the daughter. We wouldn’t do that in our pack, but that’s what is usually done.”

Haley said, “Assholes. All of you. Miley’s daughter can be a Beta if she fucking wants to be. You tell my husband that too!” She glanced at Bjourn, “Of course Charity can do as she wishes.” Bexley said, “My daughters can be warriors if they desire to be so. Even the lead warrior, like their father.” Haley nodded.

Aiden spoke “Of course they can, cousin. People would not dare insult you by saying otherwise. No one wants to insult the honor of the King of Faerie.” I was beginning to think that was true. Aiden smiled at Haley, “I do so love it when you take on

the injustices of other supernatural groups, little sister. We will make sure Cassie can do as she wishes, I promise.” Several people gasped. Haley walked over and hugged him. They spoke in Fealish. I needed to crack that book she gave me wide open so I stopped being left in the dark on what was being said around me.

When she stepped back Haley said, “Let’s gather the supplies.” Aiden questioned her, “Are you sure about this, sister?” Haley answered, “I’m always sure.” Aiden sighed. Bjourn grabbed Aiden by the arm, “I’m going to need you to not do that. Smile for fucks sake before I carry our sister out of here over my shoulder.”

Aiden stared at him for several moments before quietly stating, “Maybe you should.” Bjourn let him go, clearly startled. Haley grabbed me and started chanting. Aiden sighed, “Too late, Prince Bjourn.” Bjourn frowned, “You never call me that. Will it really be that bad for her?” Aiden said nothing.

Somehow Haley had surrounded us in a circle of sugar. I couldn’t hear what was discussed by anyone outside of the circle anymore. A pink, blue, and green vortex shot up from around the circle she’d made. I told myself to remember the words Haley was chanting.

I mentally repeated her words, “Simy lims meself point outa lims. Me the dat outa lims simy da. Meself point orto the searcher. Dat to me addto falhing. Meself point burden lim negg dat. Meself taking dat simy meself commanded.” I didn’t like the words I could make out.

Haley and I were lifted from the ground slowly circling the inside of the vortex. A thread of red and blue came out of my chest, harshly piercing Haley’s. She didn’t wince but her soul told me she was in pain. The thread wound into her from me. How could one mated couple have such a long thread? The last of it left my chest and flew into Haley’s. I felt significantly lighter. I didn’t even realize how much the knowledge of Chase and BA had already begun weighing on me.

My eyes filled with tears feeling her soul. I didn’t know what this would do to her, but right now; I knew it hurt her.

The vortex set us back down and disappeared. I swayed on my feet. Bjourn caught Haley, and Jackson caught me. Haley could barely keep her eyes open.

Aiden eyed her worriedly stating, “You are welcome to stay the night.” A little girl and a woman who had to be Aiden’s mate had joined him. She didn’t bother to hide that she was worried as she stared at Haley.

The little girl spoke, “I’ve never seen that ritual. Can Aunt Haley come for more visits? She’s SO COOL!” Lucinda said, “That’s an old and ancient ritual, Aiylee. Mommy had never even seen it done either. Your Aunt Haley is one of a kind.”

I spoke to Aiden, “Cousin, she told me it wouldn’t burden my soul and wouldn’t hurt her that much.” Aiden said, “That remains to be seen. She is correct that it will not cause her as much harm as it would have caused you.”

He turned to Jackson. His eyes flickered ember, that couldn’t be good. He told him, “In the future, wolf, I know it’s not any of your favorite things to do; but I would appreciate it if you don’t wish to speak to my sister about using a fairy power that you call me. I could’ve brought the tools to Emmaline prior to today. This was not necessary. Bexley, should you find my sister requires more comfort than your presence can provide, call me. I will come.” Bexley nodded with tears in her eyes.

I hadn’t noticed Hexxi standing in the background. I marched over to her. I demanded, “What’s the big deal?” Hexxi sighed, “This hasn’t been done in centuries, little sister. The last royal who did it was nowhere near as strong as Haley is. The Soul Searcher was his little sister. Well half-sister. She united a couple; everyone except the Soul Searcher thought they were happy. The little girl became weak. Our healers could not find what was wrong with her. Finally, the female fairy of the couple came to the brother because she couldn’t bear the little girl dying on her behalf.”

My jaw dropped. Dying?! Hexxi continued, “She told the brother, who was a water fairy prince, what had really happened since she was united with her mate. He was cruel to

her, he beat her, he cheated on her, and embarrassed her. The brother researched and found that it was tearing his sister's soul apart. Because she was more sensitive than most fairy's; it was going to kill her."

I gasped. Katie immediately asked, "What happened when he performed the ritual?" Hexxi was silent, "He wasn't as bad as the little girl. He did get depressed." I whispered, "How did it end?" Hexxi sighed, "His father killed the abusive mate. Once their souls were no longer bound everyone was fine. His mate mourned his death, but she moved on."

Jackson stated, "We can't kill Alpha Chase." Bjourn said, "You cannot. I can and will if this hurts my sister." I bit my lip, "You can't. Haley... Haley doesn't want him to die either." Bjourn said, "I don't give a shit. Nothing will happen to my sister because of some Alpha and his problems. Besides, I could also kill the wife. That would solve the problem too from the story I'm hearing." Aiden said, "I concur." Bjourn raised an eyebrow.

Hexxi said, "Haley will most likely be fine, Prince Bjourn." Bjourn said, "It's the most likely part of the sentence I have a problem with." Hexxi admitted, "Haley is far more powerful and has a much more traumatic background than the water fairy prince did. All he knew of life was rainbows, unicorns, and pirls."

Bjourn bared his teeth, but Hexxi held her ground. She trembled slightly stating, "Haley knows the story, Prince Bjourn. Someone tell my sister's wolf to take better care of her. Our family will not bear that burden again. It was not a good time in our families history."

Jackson pointed out, "We had no idea." Hexxi said, "You didn't ask. It wouldn't have occurred to Haley to mention it because you all do not surround yourself with bad people. Alpha Eric is notorious for not allowing women in his pack to be mistreated in any way."

Jackson argued, "Chase would never hurt his mate. He's a good man. Alpha Sophia wouldn't hurt her mate either if that's a factor." Hexxi said, "That's another reason why this will go

better for Haley. It's not physical pain; it's emotional. That does not harm Haley like physical pain."

Bjourn bitinglly replied, "My sister could disagree with you there." Hexxi snorted, "Haley would take emotional pain over the physical atrocities that were done to her. Emotional and physical pain scars the same, but physical pain may never truly leave you. Even as a healer. If they did you wouldn't have shown King Aiden a scan of her skeleton. One may not need a gallbladder to survive, but it does have a purpose. As does a kidney. Haley is going to be ok. I would say your Alpha Chase should get a divorce as soon as possible. If I were him, I would be working on it right now. Alpha Sophia should let the ink dry on the papers with her signature because there are few people I would want on my side more than Princess Haley Conners."

I actually might have to like Hexxi. She gave me a hug, "Tell my cousin I owe her a debt. To have you suffer in that way would've traumatized our family. You have dealt with enough for one so young." She popped away before I could say anything.

I complained, "I have GOT to learn Fealish." Aiden laughed, "You will pick up quickly when you do." He turned to Bexley, "Call me if Haley needs anything. I'll be calling her wolf. Take them to the healing waters; It can't hurt." Bexley nodded.

Jackson asked, "Can we not just leave? Eric is losing his mind." Bexley happily stated, "King's orders." She popped us all to the healing waters and let Haley and I float. Bjourn sat silently for several minutes.

Blade materialized. He looked mad, "Is always trouble. Here trouble, there trouble. Ally wolf not harm Princess. Blade not let." Bjourn spoke in Latin and they started conversing. Jackson hung his head. He whispered, "Eric wouldn't have done this if he knew it could've hurt either of them."

Bexley sighed, "No one questions that. Haley will even tell you this is partly her fault. She gets excited about fairy powers, and she doesn't fully explain them. It's not her fault,

it's a fairy trait. She's better than most of us about it. It's common knowledge here that the Soul Searcher can be harmed if the mated pair is unhappy."

I looked over at Haley whose eyes were closed. I asked, "Can she truly take this on?" Bexley said, "If anyone can, it's her. I will tell you that you could not have handled it. That's why she did it." Katie hissed. I asked, "So if anyone I bring together is bad, I'll die?"

Bexley said, "No. They could both be bad people, but be happy together. If you brought someone their mate, and they beat the mate you brought them to that would hurt you. If Alpha Chase's mate asked you who their mate was; you could tell them because to tell their mate would bring Alpha Chase happiness. The problem here was Alpha Chase's mate could be hurt by his marriage."

Katie questioned, "If Alpha Chase's mate was unhappy after Emmaline told them about him, does the catch not become he would then be unhappy because his mate was?" Bexley considered that, "Not necessarily. Especially since he's a wolf. His wolf half would be ecstatic, and from what I've learned from my Pookie bear, his wolf would be mad at Chase, not the mate. His wolf could take over and spend time with his mate. If Alpha Chase's mate was abusive towards him that would hurt Emmaline." Katie said, "I hate this power. It's horrible."

I disagreed, "I like making people happy. Everyone I've brought together is happy." Bexley smiled, "And protective of you, right?" I shrugged, "I guess." Bexley said, "And if someone was causing you harm, I just bet they would kill for you." Katie gasped, "That's the catch? People are happy because of Emmaline; so, to protect her they would kill someone who was hurting their mate." Bexley nodded, "Yes, yet another reason my cousin took this pain on. She's saving those Alpha's lives."

Bjourn stated, "I would kill for her, as would any Hackura, and the rest of my brothers." Bexley said, "She wouldn't ask you to, though." I stood up in the water, "I wouldn't ask anyone to kill for me." Bexley smiled, "Of course not. They

would research the problem and find a solution. A fairy would know the problem outright.”

I went back to the story, “So the little girl brought her brother his mate?” Bexley nodded, “He did it because she was his little sister, but she did bring him his mate. Who eventually gave us Marcious, who in turn gave us you.” We were all silent.

Bexley spoke with more confidence than she had earlier, “Haley can do this. Besides, I doubt anyone is going to let this fester with Alpha Chase and Alpha Sophia for very long. Least of all my cousin.” Jackson said, “We can’t make them get a divorce.” Bexley said, “Make is a strong word, Alpha Jackson.” I asked, “It’s just Alpha Sophia, isn’t it? Alpha Chase wants a divorce.” Jackson didn’t answer, but I felt that was an answer in and of itself.

Bexley looked at the water. “Let’s get everyone home. I think I’ll pop us inside since until my cousin is feeling better, the rain will continue.” Jackson asked, “It’s going to be pouring buckets of rain until the Alpha Chase situation is handled?” Bexley teased, “Wouldn’t that be amusing and just a little fun? All the water fairies would flock to our territory.” Jackson shook his head, “No, that doesn’t sound like fun at all. Please god, tell me that’s not actually happening.”

Bexley laughed, “Haley could do that, but I imagine the rain will stop when she has more energy. The ritual she performed was impressive and powerful.” Jackson said, “Yes, I noticed a lot of people VERY interested in my sister in law. Eric is not going to like this.”

Bexley shrugged, “She’s not taking on very much pain right now. She has no intention of telling Alpha Chase who his mate is. That’s what would bring her the most pain, bringing them together. Right now, she will feel the burden Emmaline would for not telling, though not as badly as badly as Emmaline would.”

I sighed in relief, “OK, why didn’t anyone say that? For goodness sake, I thought she was on death’s door or

something. So, what Haley said is true?" Bexley tilted her head, "Our cousin cannot lie, nor can you."

Talking to fairies was like pulling teeth sometimes. I clarified, "So she feels the burden of not telling, to a lesser degree than me. She's not going to feel the pain of bringing the mates together because she has no intention of telling Alpha Chase who his mate is." Bexley nodded, "Yes."

Bjourn and Jackson glared at Bexley. Blade said, "Is dramatic. Whole race." Bjourn agreed, "You are correct." Bexley said, "You just can't please people. Give them all the facts they complain about it. Hide the fact they complain. No one is ever happy! This situation isn't exactly a science, it affects people differently. Aiden will look into it more, but the situation between the siblings lasted three days before the water prince was killed. I don't think this will be the same situation."

I sighed in relief and whispered to Katie, "I thought she was going to be in massive amounts of pain." Katie looked relieved, "It's not just you, we all did. They did not explain it very well. We should've just waited for Haley to explain." Jackson snorted, "Agreed."

Bexley smirked, "She wouldn't have told you all of it. She would've said..." Bjourn cut her off, "She would've told me all of it." Bexley pursed her lips before admitting, "That does appear to be true." Blade said, "Is trying. Is better." Bjourn nodded.

Bexley said, "Let's pop into the monsoon." Bjourn waded into the water to pick up Haley. I asked Bexley, "Why is she so out of it when I'm ok?" Bexley said, "You won't be as bad, but you'll be tired when we leave Faerie. She's tired from performing the ritual and taking the burden from you. She will be fine after some sleep." I sighed, "I feel like I take her from her kids a lot." Bexley smiled, "Haley spends most of her time with Kujo and her babies. She will be fine by the time they wake up." I felt a little better.

Bexley looked at Jackson, "Emmaline will probably fall if you don't catch her when we go back." Jackson said, "Great."

Perfect. Lucas was already going to be pissed; she smells like me from when I caught her earlier.” I pointed out, “You could switch with Bjourn.”

Jackson said, “Lucas and I are fairly evenly matched in a fight. My brother can kick my ass. Bjourn is her brother, and his smell won’t bother Eric. If Bjourn wasn’t here I’d do it and my brother would replace his scent with mine.”

Blade laugh, “Is trouble.” Jackson agreed, “She is.” I glared, “This isn’t her fault.” Blade shrugged. Jackson laughed, “You misunderstand me, Emmaline. She is trouble, but she’s worth every second. My brother has never been happier. He smiles and he laughs. I would never let anything happen to her if I could prevent it. Not only because she’s a good person, but because she is my brother’s happiness. I love this side of him. He’s always serious, but with her; he’s just.... lighter and less burdened. I know you didn’t know him before, but I never heard him laugh until she came along.” From what I’d sensed from Eric’s soul, that was accurate.

Bexley popped us all to the main room of Eric’s home. Bexley was right, I almost hit the ground before Jackson caught me. I heard a growl. It annoyed me to no end. I ordered, “Shut it. Would you prefer he let me crack my head open?” Lucas ripped me from Jackson’s arms.

He asked, “What happened?” Katie said, “Haley fixed your screw up and took the burden from Emmaline. Believe me when I say you DO NOT want anyone else to explain this to you. It boils down to Emmaline’s soul is not burdened.”

Eric angrily asked, “And my wife’s is?” Katie said, “To a much less extreme than Emmaline’s would’ve been, but essentially yes.” Jackson added, “She performed some ancient ritual that fairies were coming out of the cracks to watch her do. It hasn’t been done in centuries.”

Eric growled, “Fucking fantastic. The fairy king failed to mention that.” I pointed out “As you all failed to mention to him you wanted to use me like a magic eight ball for your married friend.” Lucas corrected, “Ally.” Lacy snorted.

I frowned, “That’s semantics. I’m not your own personal magic eight ball to use an abuse. Especially when you know I wouldn’t want to hurt someone the way Alpha Chase’s mate would be hurt.” Everyone was quiet.

Eric spoke, “I am sorry, Emmaline. We did not think of it that way. As his ally, I am bound to help Alpha Chase as is Lucas. As a werewolf and an Alpha, I am bound to not keep his mate from him. He is not a bad man; he has just made some bad choices. I do actually consider the man a friend. I can’t imagine keeping a good person’s mate away from them after being with Haley.” I said, “I understand, but it doesn’t make it ok. I appreciate the apology though.”

Bexley said, “If it was just your mates, I’d make them drive home in this storm. Since I like you cousin and I find I quite like Lacy; I will pop you all home.” Lacy said, “You could pop us home and make them drive.” Bexley laughed, “How diabolic this wolf is. Is it any wonder I like her?”

Eric rubbed his head, “Bexley, please pop them all home since the roads are flooded.” I asked, “Can’t Aiden make it stop raining?” Eric snorted, “Can he? Probably. Will he, no.” That did sound like Aiden. Bexley grabbed my arm. Lucas was already holding me. Dylan grabbed Lucas and Lacy grabbed Bexley’s other hand.

She popped us home. She advised, “Drink lots of fluids, cousin.” I nodded and she left. I told Lucas, “Put me down.” Lucas sighed, “Let me help you upstairs.” I waved him off, “Lacy can help me.” Lucas begrudgingly gave me over to Lacy. We managed to get up the stairs with me hanging off of her.

She headed towards mine and Lucas’ room. I feebly told her, “No, in there.” Lacy asked, “The Luna rooms?” I nodded and she put me on the bed. I asked, “Can you go in the closet? I left a book of Fealish in there. I want to look up the words Haley said in the ritual.”

Lacy nodded and came back with the book. I quickly thumbed between the pages to find everything. Tears streamed down my face as I read what Haley had said. Lacy asked,

“What did she say?” I told her, “As her princess, I take this from her soul. Give me the pain and remove it from her as a whole. I take this pain for the Soul Searcher. Give it to me heart and all. I take this burden she shall not bear it. I am taking it as I commanded.”

Lacy winced, “Shit. The guys really stepped in it this time.” I admitted, “I see both sides. They didn’t know. They wouldn’t have let it get where it did if they had. I don’t think Alpha Chase would’ve even asked them. My problem is they had no problem using me.”

Lacy jokingly teased, “Like a magic eight ball?” I nodded then asked, “Are you mad at Dylan?” Lacy snorted, “Was it pouring buckets of rain in Black Mountain territory?” I laughed, “Did your umbrella help?” Lacy smiled, “The looks on their faces was priceless. I waited twenty seconds after Bexley popped away. I pulled out the umbrella and seconds later the floodgates opened. They ran like they heard a shot being fired. To be fair, the lightning that came down sounded like one.”

I smiled, “Will you stay here with me tonight? I don’t want to be alone.” Lacy laid down, “I’ll always be here if you need me. You’re my sister too. Not officially, but one day soon.” The shadows appeared in my room producing Katie. She stated, “And I’m your sister always, so scoot over both of you.”

I asked, “Does Logan know you are here?” Katie said, “He will figure it out, eventually.” She climbed into bed with Lacy and me. We all drifted off to sleep. I woke up to my alarm and got ready for training. Lacy said, “I might as well come with you.” Katie complained, “You all need to sleep in.”

Logan’s voice made us all jump, “I’ll take you home then.” Katie sat up, “What the hell? Have you just been sleeping on the couch?” Logan simply stated, “Yes.” Lacy and I rubbed our faces. Katie sighed, “Fine. Maybe now you realize when I say I need to be with my sister; I mean it.” Logan nodded, “Duly noted.” She got off the bed and hugged me.

When they left, I popped Lacy to the gym. Both of us were startled to see our mates were already there. Lacy linked me, “Are they just going to show up all the time now?” I snorted, “Evidently, when they are in trouble, worried, or horny.” Lacy asked, “Which are they now?” I answered, “All three.” Lacy said, “They can shove the horny side up their butts.” I snorted out loud.

It was a cardio day. Crap I didn’t think I had enough in me to pop away from anyone. Alex came up to me, “It’s a swim day for you.” I nodded, thank god. I swam my laps until Lacy came to get me.

Lucas was waiting at the gym door with Dylan. I waved to him, “Have a good day, Lucas.” I popped us to the Luna rooms, where we both got ready. I sensed someone outside our door. Two someone’s. I linked Lacy, “Dylan and Lucas are outside the door.” Lacy snorted, “Because the hint of waving at them and popping out of the gym was missed.” I nodded, “I’ll pop us to the car.”

I grabbed her hand and popped us into the car. I yelled “Anyone who’s riding with us, get in now. The train is leaving the station.” Everyone jumped in, even Brad who was frowning. I ignored his gaze and drove us to school.

When I got out of the car Ry came over. He ordered, “Get back in the car, Evie.” I sighed, “Ok.” I got back in. Ry asked, “Are you ok?” I shrugged, “I guess. I feel bad that Haley is taking on the side effect of my power because my soul can’t handle it. What kind of crap is that, fairy goddess? You created a Soul Searcher who can’t handle people not being happy with their mates? Oh, but don’t worry, everyone I brought together who is happy will want to kill those people so I can continue on. That’s SO messed up!”

Ry agreed, “That is a messed up power to grant, and not give the ability to handle people not being happy.” I rubbed my temples, “My mate was just going to use my power for his ally. I understand he has to help him, but I am just tired, Ry. I’m tired of fighting with everyone. I thought Lucas and I settled this. We decided we would talk to each other. Dusty and I just figured everything out. I just want everyone to stay

in their lanes for a week. A whole week of no lane changes.” Ry smiled, “I’m sure that will happen.” He gave me a hug, “It will be alright, Evie.” I smiled, “I know.”

I walked into school and got through my day. When I walked outside, I was surprised to find Haley waiting. She had a big SUV. She rolled down the window and I was even more stunned to see Katie in the front seat beside her. Haley waved, “Get in girls. Just so we’re clear I mean, Valerie, Sam, Chelsea, Lacy, and Emmaline.”

Brad interjected, “I’m guarding the Luna.” Haley said, “Yes, well I have my guard with us. Harper and his boytoy lover are coming with us too. I’ve got us covered on so many levels.” Ry asked, “Where are you going?” Haley smiled, “We are going to cheer ourselves up! That’s where.”

Chelsea said, “I’d love to, but we have a meeting we have to sit in on with Peter’s parents.” Sam sighed, “We do too.” Haley waved her hand, “Not a problem! You can join us another time.” The Red Run group left.

Lacy shrugged, “I was just going to avoid Dylan all night. I’m in.” I smiled, “Me too.” Valerie kissed Ry, “Me three.” Ry managed to let her go.

We all jumped into the car. I asked the million-dollar question, “So where are we going to cheer ourselves up?” Haley smiled, “Google said Disney World is a magical place. I booked us all appointments to be dressed up as one of the Disney princesses. We get to pick which ones! Then we are going to go around the park. BA is joining our fun as well!” Trepidation lit through me. I hated that feeling about her. I liked her.

I glanced at her in the mirror, and we turned onto an access road where Blade, Gunner, and the rest of Haley’s guard was waiting. My phone lit up with a text.

Haley: I already talked to BA. She still wants to see how the universe brings them together. There’s time to fix this whole

mess. Before she finds out he's married. I'm going to unfuck that situation. He will make her happy. Like we are.

Me: Thanks Haley.

Haley gathered us all and popped us to Florida. Lacy squealed, "We are legit outside Disney World. I LOVE FAIRIES." Gunner said, "I could open a portal to Florida." Haley countered, "So could I. Popping is cooler." Gunner rolled his eyes, "So you say." Haley smiled, "So I do, Harper's boytoy lover. ASTRID YOU CAME!"

I watched as BA and Astrid walked over to our group. BA was still in all black with a mask of her eyes, but not her Black Arrow gear. She smiled at me, and our group set off for our magical Disney adventure.

Cold War

Lucas was so upset with himself. I asked the group, “What the hell was I thinking? Emmaline feels used.” All our heads whipped to Lacy as she produced an umbrella putting it over her head. Dylan asked, “Where did you get that, beautiful mate of mine?” She didn’t have time to answer before it began to pour buckets of rain. I jumped up and ran for the house as lightning and thunder crackled in the sky.

Lacy followed at a leisurely pace. She even had rain boots on. Marcus said, “It’s safe to say, that Haley is pissed.” Lacy retorted, “It’s safe to say Haley is BEYOND pissed. She has to take the burden from Emmaline with some fairy princess command. Jerks!”

Eric growled, “What does that mean?” Lacy shrugged, “I didn’t really get all the details.” I sighed, “Do you have any other details?” Lacy smiled, “Yes, you guys are assholes.” I frowned and walked into the kitchen.

Alpha Chase said, “Alpha Eric, I didn’t know this would harm yours or Alpha Lucas’ mate.” Eric gritted his teeth, “None of us did.” Alpha Chase said, “Your mates know who mine is. Your wife told me my mate deserves my best.”

I frowned pointing out, “Haley would say that anyway even if she didn’t know who it was.” Lacy informed us, “They both know. Haley took that burden from Emmaline too. She told Katie she was going to handle it.” Logan dryly retorted, “Fabulous.”

Marcus frowned. Eric started to growl. I asked, “Eric?” Eric started to pace. Caleb groaned, “God, why?” I asked, “What?” Eric snarled, “Jackson told me some fucking guard is offering to have sex WITH my mate!”

Marcus raised an eyebrow, “Blade or Bjourn would kill him before he got the chance.” Eric rolled his eyes, “Jackson and Bjourn punched him. Bjourn has pulled a knife and is threatening things. My mate of course thinks he was being polite and not propositioning her.”

Alpha Chase asked, “Can she really misunderstand the difference between the two?” I answered, “I’m going to go with yes. Haley absolutely doesn’t understand. Especially if it was subtle and not stated outright.” Dylan kept eating his popcorn. He offered some to Lacy and she threw it in his face. He shrugged, continuing to eat.

Eric said, “Haley doesn’t do subtle hints, and she doesn’t think she has a strong allure. She believes the fairies are worried she will kill them all now that her lineage has been revealed. Or ask her Hackura brothers to.” I said, “It’s a reasonable assumption. Are you going to pace the whole time they are gone?”

Eric simply stated, “Yes. If they were in water territory, wouldn’t you?” I nodded because I would. I asked, “Why did she take Jackson and not you?”

Alpha Chase looked away. Dylan linked me, “He knows the things that I don’t know. I am remiss I didn’t follow him.” I snorted, “I got that he knew” Eric asked, “Alpha Chase?” He sighed, “Apparently, Darrin and Harold aren’t welcome in Faerie.” Both Conners brothers high fived.

Alpha Chase continued, “And... she would rather chew glass than take Eric with her this time.” Eric growled, “I need a manual for women. I hate that she’s there without me. I hate what I’m feeling from her while she’s there without me.”

Molly Conners came in. She smiled, “Hello, Chase. Where’s my brother?” Alpha Chase winced, “He... isn’t here.” Molly laughed, “So, you didn’t tell him you were coming. Interesting. Someone will have to tell me why later.”

She turned to Eric, “What have you done now? Jackson linked me that he’s in Faerie watching some ritual Haley is performing. He’s freaking out because Aiden told Bjourn he should take Haley out of there. He told him to forcibly remove

her rather than have her do the ritual she's doing. What the hell is going on?"

Eric growled, turning over a table. Caleb took out his phone, probably to order a new table. Logan questioned, "Then why is she performing the ritual? Bjourn would've taken her; especially if Aiden said he should. That's a cry for help if I've ever heard one."

Eric answered, "Haley started the ritual right after Aiden told him. They are surrounded inside a multicolored circle." Molly said, "I repeat... what. Did. You. Do?" Eric surmised the situation and Molly sighed, "Oh boy..."

Alpha Chase said, "I never would've asked if I had known..." Molly put her hands up, "I know. I've told Haley you and Alpha Sophia aren't bad people. I've known you since you were little. I maintained not telling her the truth of the matter would be a problem. You guys have been evasive with her because it's Chase's business. Now, it's blown up in your face. She just sees things as black and white."

Alpha Chase winced, "She hates me." Molly disagreed, "You're not a witch or warlock. She doesn't hate you. She actually believes you aren't a bad person. She just hates that you married Alpha Sophia." Alpha Chase put his head in his hands, "No, she hates me. She'll keep my mate from me forever."

I disagreed, "She won't. Haley would never do that, nor would Emmaline." Logan assured him, "She really won't. She believes in the mate bond. She's insanely happy with Eric, and she wants that for other people."

Alpha Chase ran a hand through his hair, "What can I do? Sophia... she's... it wasn't supposed to be a divorce. The original plan was for us to get married and when I went to Europe we'd quietly get it annulled. She panicked thinking she would lose her pack when I had my Beta send her the papers. I just wanted to help her. Now, I have her pack members bothering me about having an anniversary party celebrating our farce of a marriage."

He laughed humorously, “To celebrate the alliance between our packs. Tensions have literally never been higher. This situation is so fucked. Your mates are right.” Eric clutched his chest as I felt a weight I hadn’t realized I was carrying was lifted from mine.

Eric yelled, “SHIT!” Molly frowned. Darrin moved to Eric’s side, “Brother?” Eric gritted out, “It’s not me.” Alpha Chase stiffened, “I apologize to both of you. If your mates would want to hear my apology, I’ll call them. I didn’t mean to hurt them. I need to go. I have to talk to Sophia.”

Eric said, “Any assistance you or she needs, you’ll have it from us. I can’t say Alpha Sophia is on my good list. She has pulled into her shell ever since she took over. Always renegeing on little things, but I don’t know if I’ll get over promising men to help free my Angel and only sending a much smaller amount. I had people get hurt, but Haley convinced me to give her another chance.” Molly winced.

Eric snorted, “She’ll definitely insist I help her now. Apparently, my wife went on a tangent about how women should be able to be Alpha’s and Beta’s with no argument. She said her nieces could be Alpha’s if they wanted, and her cousin could Be a beta is she wants to be. She said Cassie could run the packs if she wanted. When my wife gets an idea in her head, she tends to make it happen.”

I told him, “It’s just not done.” Eric said, “It should be. Cassie is my daughter. I will deny her nothing. I can’t and I won’t. My sons are very protective of her too. They already do their pusher thing when they don’t like someone being close to her. Alpha Sophia should have been able to take over her pack alone. She was raised to be the Alpha; the former Alpha was her father. He believed in her abilities. She shouldn’t be scared to give Chase a damn annulment because of her own damn pack.”

I pointed out, “That change won’t happen overnight.” Eric shrugged, “I’ll put a proposal together and get other packs to sign it. The process has to start somewhere.” Alpha Chase said, “You’ll have my signature the second I see it. Goodbye everyone. I’m sorry that this has caused a big mess.” He left.

I sighed, “Problems... Did you see how Emmaline looked at me?” Dylan answered, “Betrayed. Her eyes held anger and Betrayal. Dylan will be right back he will. Must go be Yoda for Alpha Chase, I must.” I asked, “What?” He skipped away without answering. We all waited a few minutes for him to return.

He picked up his popcorn bowl and sat down on a barstool. Eric shook his head at him then said, “Haley does know who his mate is. Jackson said she told Emmaline she was protecting two people she cares about by taking this from her.” I groaned, “If it’s Emmaline’s sister...” Eric quickly pointed out, “I don’t think so. Idel was here when Chase said his wolf said his mate wasn’t near.”

I shrugged, “She had popped away for the fairy ritual.” Eric tilted his head, “She was still in my territory.” Dylan shouted with a mouthful of popcorn, “EVENT PLANNER! It’s the event planner!” Eric said, “Maybe. Or one of the partial fairies.” I asked, “Who was the event planner?”

Eric jaw flexed, “I didn’t meet her. Haley handles all the details of her fairy initiative and events. After this mess, I’m not asking her. I don’t want to know the damn event planners name because then I’d have to give it to Alpha Chase. NO ONE will ask for that event planners name. EVER.”

Molly snorted, “Eric, Haley has said her name. They are friends.” Dylan snorted, “Of course they are. Why wouldn’t this situation get more dramatic?” Eric’s phone rang, “Great... just fucking great. Hello, Aiden.” He put it on speaker.

Aiden sounded angry, “Wolf of my sisters, I have just seen a powerful ancient ritual that is quite binding for my sister. I understand you do not know the full details of the Soul Searcher...” Eric interrupted, “We thought we did. She can tell who someone’s mate is, she can sense people’s motives, and their emotions.”

Aiden said, “Yes, unfortunately for us all your reputation caused my sister to leave out a detail.” Eric was confused, “My reputation? What the hell does any of this have to do with

my reputation?” Aiden spat back, “You have a reputation for not allowing anyone to harm a female member of your pack.”

Eric growled, “I do have that reputation, and I don’t let anyone harm ANY member of my pack regardless of their gender.” Aiden said, “There are more than one type of pain. Telling Alpha Chase who his mate is and bringing them together would’ve caused his mate pain. Which in turn would’ve caused Emmaline pain.”

I asked, “What? Why?” Aiden sighed, “Why is not really here nor there. She is the Soul Searcher. Her power is meant to bring happiness, if sadness is what it brings then she will be sad too.” I growled, “Haley didn’t do this because Emmaline would’ve been sad.”

Aiden angrily yelled, “No, she did it because Emmaline would’ve fallen into a deep depression, eventually becoming suicidal. Unless of course the issue was resolved. Jackson says the problem’s names are Alpha Chase and Alpha Sophia. Should circumstances change and his mate was happy then Emmaline would be fine.”

Dylan linked, “I like happy King Fire Hands better than the angry one. The angry one concerns me. His hands turn into fire, and he burns people’s heads off when he’s mad. Let’s bring back the joy.” I agreed with him.

Aiden continued, “In our case with the last Soul Searcher, she brought together a couple like she’s supposed to. The male was abusive to the female after the Soul Searcher told him who she was. The female was understandably not happy, but like many abusers he hid it well. She was ashamed so she kept quiet thinking the mate bond would eventually change him. The little girl grew weak. Our healers couldn’t figure out why. Eventually, the female confided in the water fairy prince who was the Soul Searcher’s brother. He performed the ritual Haley just did and took the pain on himself.”

Eric frowned, “That doesn’t sound like something a fairy would do; even for a sibling.” Aiden snorted, “Yes, we would. We love our families. The Soul Searcher brings couples

together. Those couples feel VERY protective over them in return.”

I rubbed my head, “You’re saying people will do things for Emmaline because she brought them together? She would never ask them to do that.” Dylan joined the conversation, “She wouldn’t have to. I see where this is going, and I’d do it too.” I glanced at him, “Where’s it going?” Dylan said, “I am here for all of you Alpha bloods. I know how this story ends. What’s it like watching a movie in your heads? Do you even try to guess the plot?” I growled at him.

He smiled, “The water fairy prince killed the abusive mate. Right, King Fire Hands?” Aiden snorted, “Close. He couldn’t handle the pain and became depressed, so his father killed the abusive mate, and everyone was fine.” I told Dylan, “You can’t kill Alpha Chase.” Lacy said, “We could though, together. We could even decide. Alpha Chase or Alpha Sophia.”

I yelled, “No, you cannot!” Dylan continued, “I won’t kill him. I’m his Yoda. I like him, and I’ve even changed a diaper of his. This cements that he must do something amazing in life. It was a doozy of a deuce he dropped that I cleaned up. Sometimes I think Frank knew he was going to poop when he dropped little potty training Chase off on me as a teen. I’m just telling you; I could see it. I told you I feel very protective of Emmaline.”

Lacy said, “Again, killing Alpha Sophia solves the problem too.” I groaned, “Stop trying to discuss killing allies.” She shrugged, “I mean if we had to pick one; I’d pick her. Eric would too. From what Emmaline has picked up from their souls she’s the holdup not him. If roles were reversed, he’d be the top choice.”

I was reeling. Eric said, “They won’t feel the need to kill him because Haley took it from Emmaline. Which means you’re saying my wife is going to be depressed.” Aiden snorted, “That remains to be seen. Next time you have an idea about using a fairy for a power you do not fully understand; call me. I do not want to see my sister this way. The only entertaining thing about this situation will be if my sister

suffers the way the water fairy prince did; it will be a race to see who kills whichever Alpha is chosen first.”

Eric growled, “You’re not killing either one of them. A race between whom?” Aiden laughed, “Act like you wouldn’t be in the race yourself. We both know that’s not true. Though I believe the she wolf is right, you would go for Alpha Sophia instead of this Alpha Chase. Even with four legs though, you’re not as fast as a pop or a portal opening. It will be interesting to see who gets to the chosen one first. Me or the Hackura.”

Eric stared at the phone in shock. Logan asked, “Are you fucking joking? You would kill Alpha Chase or Alpha Sophia? YOU? This is that serious?” Aiden said, “I cannot lie. I believe that was Logan. As Bjourn would say, the race will be on if our sister can’t handle the burden she just took on. Had I or Haley known this was coming, there is a sacred ritual for the Soul Searcher we could’ve done. So should you not want to inform Haley what the plan is; I make the offer of being at your services. Had we performed the ritual a few days before fairy lessons, no one would be in pain. Or in danger of being depressed, or otherwise injured in any way.” With that he hung up.

Eric closed his eyes. I stated, “We can’t just kill them.” Marcus said, “You do not have to.” I pulled my hair, “He’s not an enemy. He’s not even a bad guy! He’s actually a good guy.” Marcus said, “I notice no one has said that about her.” I frowned, “She’s got great potential. She always has. It’s just hard with werewolves for her to be the Alpha she was meant to be with how everyone feels about female’s leading as a whole among us.” Lacy spoke, “Haley won’t want him to die.”

Everyone’s gaze went to her. She rolled her eyes, “Come on she said she’s doing this for two people she cares about. Whoever Alpha Chase’s mate is... Haley cares about them.” Logan said, “Fuck it all to hell and back.”

Marcus said, “I believe you are right. I have a pretty solid idea of who it is. My sister does care about that person, but it doesn’t matter to me. If my sister tries to kill herself, or gets sick, and is dying, I will kill Alpha Chase or Alpha Sophia

without hesitation. If my sister has a preference, so be it.” Lacy said, “She wouldn’t make that choice.” Marcus said, “Then I would review our files on them and decide that way. My sister is not dying for this.”

Lacy said, “Give her a little credit. She’s a bad ass. She can do this.” I was worried, “Her brother did not seem to think she could.” Lacy rolled her eyes, “Her brother who did not know a fraction of what she was capable of until recently.”

Eric spoke, “Lacy is right and wrong. It’s not that Aiden doesn’t believe in her. He’s worried. Which I have to say I don’t like at all. Besides, in the story it sounded like the pain came from bringing them together. Haley will have no intention of bringing Alpha Chase his mate until he’s single.”

Marcus shrugged, “Then it’s a moot point.” Eric agreed, “I think it is.” I sighed, “Where the hell are our mates? If the ritual is over, why aren’t they back?” Eric said, “They are in the healing waters in Faerie.” I jumped out of my seat, “They are in water fairy territory?”

Dylan asked, “Are you actually joining the pacing brigade with King Alpha Prick now? I must know who does your floors here. They look remarkable for the pacing that’s been happening. I’ll probably need them on call now that we have our fairy to pace over.” I growled at him.

He smiled continuing, “I did tell you this wasn’t a good idea.” I growled, “What other idea was there?” Molly and Lacy snorted. I asked, “What, Lacy Loo?” Lacy said, “Nuh uh, Lucas. Don’t you Lacy Loo me. The idea was fine in theory. You just left out the part where you talk to... oh gee... I don’t know... your MATES. By the way Dylan, if you think I’m excluding you from that sentence; you’re wrong. Lucas, Emmaline thought you were feeling protective of her because you brought Dylan and I today. Instead, you were using her. Way to go.”

Guilt hit me hard. I couldn’t even look at Lacy anymore because the truth of her words pierced my heart. It wasn’t my intent to use Emmaline that way. She’s always offered up her powers, and I took that choice away from her. I was an ass.

Eric said, "If I knew it would hurt Emmaline or Haley, I wouldn't have allowed it." Marcus offered, "At least you know you are safe if Alpha Chase's mate asks Emmaline to tell her who her mate is." Logan snorted, "If it's who you and I both think it is, that won't happen." I asked, "Why?" They didn't answer.

I asked a different question, "What if you're wrong and his mate asks Emmaline?" Logan said, "According to what the Fairy King said that would be fine. Alpha Chase and his wolf would be happy, not sad. It has to do with which party she tells." I pointed out, "There's no way we can know ahead of time who she should not tell a person who their mate is."

Eric disagreed, "That's not entirely true. There will be situations you guys have where you won't want her to tell. More importantly if she doesn't want to tell; she has options. Apparently." I pointed out, "Emmaline won't be happy that the couples she brought together will kill for her because a mate isn't happy."

Eric raised an eyebrow, "Lucas, either one of us would kill someone's mate for being abusive. We have done that. It's the same thing we'd already do with the added incentive. It's detrimental to Emmaline's life. I will not let you or my mate be in that type of pain."

I couldn't stand the thought of Emmaline's death, so I changed the subject. I said, "So you're going to put a proposal together for the werewolf council to allow she wolves to be Alpha's or Beta's. That could take months." Eric said, "We have to start somewhere. Based on what Alpha Chase said, I don't know that Alpha Sophia will agree to a divorce. I don't think he will file for one because he wants an annulment. You know how us Alpha males are about our plans. Besides, you were already training a female Gamma. Why shouldn't women go to the top?"

Lacy snorted, "Maybe Alpha Sophia will find her mate. I bet your ass she would get a divorce then. It's like reverse sexism on her part. I can't WAIT for Haley to roast her ass. Someone record that for me." I disagreed, "I don't think she will go to Alpha Sophia." Eric admitted, "She will. Hopefully,

she at least takes Molly with her when she does.” I groaned, “She’ll take Emmaline.” Eric said, “And risk her telling Sophia who her mate is? I doubt it.” I snorted, “Guess who’s getting used for the sacred Soul Searcher ritual first?” Eric winced, “Then she probably will take her.” Lacy rolled her eyes, “Emmaline clearly doesn’t know Sophia’s mate. She’s met her.” I pointed out, “She’d met Chase before too.” Lacy shrugged.

We heard a pop. We all ran into the living room. I growled at the sight of Jackson holding my mate. She got mad at me, but I pulled her into my arms glaring at him. Jackson linked me, “I had to catch her, or she would’ve fallen and hurt her head.”

I growled, “She smells like you.” Jackson answered, “This is the second time I had to catch her. I wasn’t going to let her fall.” Dominic was furious she didn’t smell like us. I was putting everything I had into resisting the urge to claim her. She didn’t want that. I didn’t even have to ask her to know that. Katie explained everything tersely. I barely managed not to growl at Jackson.

I linked Eric, “I’m sorry more fairies are interested in Haley now.” Eric replied, “It’s not your fault.” Emmaline was angry, which made Dominic growl furiously at me. Dylan linked me, “Ok, that tone was frigid, I think I got frostbite. I am not fully prepared for the cold war coming.” I winced. Neither was I.

Eric surprised me when he apologized to Emmaline. Dylan linked me, “I have fallen and hit my head very hard. I just hallucinated that King Alpha Prick apologized.” I said, “If you’re hallucinating then so am I.” Dylan said, “Hell just froze over. The demons are so sad. I can hear them crying from here.” I rolled my eyes at him.

Bexley said she was thinking of making Dylan and I drive home. Dylan linked me, “I’ll get a boat from King Alpha Prick’s boat house. Don’t you worry. We’d flood any car engine we borrowed from him right now. Then he’d morph back to his unapologetic prick self. On second thought, maybe we take one of his cars. This version of him freaks me out. I’m

on edge. I don't know what to expect anymore. It's unsettling." I rolled my eyes again.

I told him, "Maybe focus more on Lacy being mad at you. She's pissed." Dylan said, "Thank you, captain obvious. I missed that very clear hint. What would I do without you, oh Alpha my Alpha?" Emmaline asked if Aiden could make it stop raining. Dylan linked me, "He absolutely can, he just won't." That seemed accurate.

Bexley popped us home, flipped Dylan and I the bird then popped out. Emmaline didn't want me touching her, or my help. Dominic growled, "Let me out. I'll take mate upstairs. She's not mad at me." I said, "She would've asked for you, Dominic. I have to let her go with Lacy." I handed her over to my sister.

Dylan and I watched helplessly as they went upstairs. Dylan put a hand on my back and my hand went to my chest in pain when she told Lacy to take her to the Luna rooms instead of ours. Dylan said, "She'll come around." I asked, "When? She's not even planning on being in the same room as me. I fucked up. Again."

My dad came into the room, "That's what happens in relationships, son. You fuck up, you fight, you fix it. If she needs space, give it to her. Women need space sometimes, as do we." I sighed, "Something tells me her version of space is not the same as mine." My dad shrugged, "Probably not. I thought we had this talk once, but women and men are different."

I put up my hands, "I know dad. I just don't know how to fix this." My dad sat down, "What happened?" I told him everything. He sighed, "Lucas, what were you thinking?" I put my head into my hands, "I know, dad."

My dad pulled me into a hug, "You show up. That's what you do. When she's ready to talk to you, you listen. Really listen. Your mate is your partner above all else. Unless you want her to follow in your cowboy ways; I'd change yours."

I pulled back, "Follow my cowboy ways?" My dad laughed, "You do remember we have an Alpha Hammond

threat going on? Emmaline could find a way to steal a page out of your playbook to solve the problem at hand by herself. Then there's the David Forrester issue. He may not be a problem today, tomorrow, or in five years; but he will be one day. Watch yourself son, or that mate of yours will take on those problems without you." He left and I threw a vase.

Logan said, "I hope that wasn't expensive. I don't think a fairy will fix it for you at the moment." Dylan jumped then yelled, "WHY? What the hell are you doing here?" Logan smiled, "My mate demanded I bring her to her sister. I said no. I took her to our home then for a meeting to divvy out missions. I returned to home to discover Kate was gone."

Dylan frowned, "Katie can't open a portal, and my fun sized ninja fairy is down for the count. So dear GODDESS why are you here lurking like a panther ready to pounce?" I sighed, "Katie can control the shadows." Logan nodded, "Exactly." Dylan sat down, "I need sleep. I'm slipping. Don't you worry my creepy silent ninja. I'm express ordering you a special doghouse."

Logan winked, "You'd never get it to where I live." Dylan said, "Ah, but you lurk around here often enough." Logan shrugged, "I'm sure Eric will be mostly forgiven by tomorrow or the day after. I didn't know about your plan for Alpha Chase at fairy practice. Which was likely intentional on Eric's part. I'll be fine when Katie wakes up. She's only upset I didn't bring her here."

Dylan said, "I think you vastly underestimate the length of the cold war between the wolves and their fairy mate's. My fun sized ninja fairy was angry. Not that she looked it, but I could tell. The whole flooding the area with a torrential downpour was my sign."

Logan smirked, "No, I do not. I know my sister quite well. She will be upset with herself because she didn't tell everyone the full extent of Emmaline's power. She'll apologize for that. She and Eric will argue about Alpha Chase which will inevitably turn into fucking. Haley won't want tension in the house because of the triplets. They will figure it out."

I complained, “I don’t have any of that going for me. We don’t have pups yet.” Logan raised an eyebrow, “You can absolutely turn an argument into sex. Katie is a tiger in bed when she’s mad. I bet that’s in their blood. They are fairies after all.” I willed my hard on away, “That won’t fix the problem.” Logan laughed, “Of course it won’t. Listening and adapting to being in a permanent relationship is how it gets resolved.”

I groaned, “Why do you know that?” Logan smirked, “All my brothers have mates. I’ve seen it happen many, many times.” Logan started to head upstairs. I asked him, “Where are you going?” He turned, “Katie just fell asleep. I’ll sleep on the floor until she’s ready to go home.” I told him, “There’s a couch in there, at least sleep on that.” Logan nodded and left.

I turned to my Beta, “Take a guest room. Or one of the rooms in your wing.” Dylan said, “I’m coming with you. If the girls are having a sleepover then so are we. Best friend snuggles! Who’s excited?” I shot him a look.

He elbowed me, “Eh... come on. You are a little excited.” I rolled my eyes, “Come on then. I’m getting up for training so I can see Emmaline.” Dylan grumbled, “Who are you? And where is my friend Lucas? To think I was going to snuggle with you! IMPOSTER! I will avenge you, Lucas! I will!”

I just looked at him. He waved his hands around, “Yeah, yeah, yeah, like you’re the only one with that thought. Get up for training. I HATE senior year. Them being in high school is trying to thwart my road to forgiveness.” I agreed, “Yes, high school is the thorn in your rose bush.”

He crashed onto my bed in a full spread eagle. He grinned, “As long as you agree.” I told him, “That’s my side of the bed.” Dylan snored then said, “Shhhh... I’m already asleep.” I sighed, rolling my eyes for the millionth time tonight.

I walked over to the adjoining door. I opened it, nodding to Logan. I walked over to the bed and lightly kissed Emmaline’s forehead. I whispered, “I’m sorry, baby girl. I love you.” I willed my feet to leave the room.

My alarm went off entirely too early. Dylan groaned “That is like a half hour too early.” I sat up, “I want to get there before they do.” Dylan grumbled, “I hate you. Invasion of the body snatchers was supposed to be a fictional movie. How is this my life?” I listed of the things we had to do, “We have to go get your clothes, and that’s at the pack house. Someone hasn’t moved into the main house yet.”

Dylan grumbled, “Well that’s my bad then. I’ll just fix that. I’ll be linking people awake. Our stuffed will be moved today Are you happy?” I shrugged, “Marginally.” He grumbled as I got dressed. We walked into the pack house for him to change.

After five minutes I went up after him. I walked in his room and found him dressed laying on his bed. I yelled, “DYLAN!” He groaned, “Five more minutes, her pillow smells like her.” I groaned, “You can smell her in person at the gym.” He jumped up, “Can we fight them again today?” I wanted to say yes, but I was giving Emmaline as much space as I could.

I told him, “No, they want space.” Dylan frowned, “We aren’t giving them space. We are ambushing them at practice.” I shrugged, “It’s what I have to give her. I can’t be away from her, and not see her all damn day.” Dylan acknowledged, “You’re right. Let’s go. I need to at least see Lacy. Even if she glares daggers at me from her eyes. She’s beautiful even when she’s mad.” I nodded.

As we left someone handed Dylan coffee. He whispered, “Bless you, Denver. You are too good for this world.” Denver smiled and handed me a cup too. I accepted it, “Thank you, Denver.” He nodded, “Of course, Alpha.” We walked into the gym.

Alex raised an eyebrow. He walked over and asked, “Are you fighting Emmaline again?” I shook my head, “No, I’ll be fighting Dylan today. We just need to get a workout in.” Alex linked, “Bullshit. What happened?” I winced, “I messed up.” Alex nodded, “Ok.” I linked him the rest of the story. He sighed, “Got it.”

He asked Dylan, “Are you already on getting more information on fairies?” Dylan snorted, “Of course I am. I love them. I must know all about them to avoid the hoarders of information keeping things from me. I’m the one who has the knowledge and spits it out at the perfect time. They do not have this skill.” Alex laughed.

Emmaline’s scent reached me just as Dylan hit me in the arm. He linked, “They walked in. God she’s gorgeous.” I growled but he just rolled his eyes continuing, “Lacy... Lacy is gorgeous, you possessive sleep tyrant you.” I turned to see both of our mates clearly shocked to see us here.

Emmaline was in yoga pants and a tight top. My shorts got tighter, “Shit... Did she think we might be here? Because that outfit is...” Dylan agreed, “Same. Maybe they thought we would be here and torturing us would be fun.” I sighed; they were smart like that.

I linked Alex, “Does the Emmaline usually wear outfits like that?” Alex winced, “Yup.” I barely withheld my growl. I told Dylan, “Evidently, they find this to be appropriate workout attire, even if we aren’t here.”

Dylan replied, “Great. We won’t be able to say anything about it for a year minimum because we screwed up. I blame those packs Lacy visited. She was raised here. What did those ruffians teach her? It must have been her stint with fairies. My fun sized ninja fairy wears essentially sports bras. I shan’t feel bad for King Alpha Prick. It won’t work.”

It was cardio day for everyone. I felt Emmaline’s trepidation. I linked Alex, “Emmaline swims today. She had a tiring day yesterday.” He nodded and moved off to tell Emmaline. Dylan and I went to the mats, taking our aggression out on each other. I linked Dylan, “Lacy keeps glancing over here. She’s worried.” He smirked as he went in for a punch, “Good.”

We went at it until my dad walked up. He ordered, “Boys, enough.” We both stopped. I told him, “We are just working out.” My dad raised his eyebrow, “I was born at night, but it wasn’t last night. Lacy linked me, she was worried. Take that

and run with it, Dylan. Had Emmaline been watching she would've been worried too."

I sighed and went to the gym door and waited. Lacy went to go get Emmaline. Dominic was jumping up and down, "She has to walk by us, and we will be able to scent her." I smiled, "It's why I'm standing by the door." Emmaline turned, then waved to me telling me to have a good day before popping away.

Dylan linked, "A wave? We both get a WAVE? She called your dad to stop our fight, and I don't even get a goodbye before school? At minimum, I want a hand squeeze. It's barely touching."

I sighed, "Let's go wait outside the Luna rooms. We can tell them we just wanted to let them know we hope they have a good day too." We went to the room and waited. I heard the pop signaling they'd left. I sighed as I heard the car start outside.

Dylan growled, "Seriously? No goodbye?" I frowned, "It seems that way." Dylan stalked to the office. He pounded on the phone dialing numbers. I asked, "What are you doing?" The phone call was answered, "Beta Caleb of Black Mountain pack speaking."

Dylan growled, "I was looking for King Alpha Prick." Caleb said, "Hi Dylan. Eric is spending time with his family." Dylan growled again, "PRICK! Haley isn't even mad anymore, is she?" Jackson chimed in, "Haley woke up at two this morning. They fought for a long ass time according to Eric. It's not resolved, and he will be busy until further notice. They always have family time on Thursday mornings. Eric said he won't be down like normal when the triplets go down for their nap. He and Haley are going to keep talking."

Dylan sarcastically spat, "How nice for him, they are on speaking terms! I would take talking. Hell, I'd take shouting. Our mates are avoiding us!" Jackson sighed, "I'm sorry guys. I have a situation here that I need to deal with." He hung up.

Dylan asked, "Why are we friends with him again? He's so unfair! His mate is not in high school, she's a double princess,

she wasn't raised in this realm, and she talks to him when she's mad." Dylan's eyes filled with tears. "I want to be yelled at; I just want something." I hugged him, "So do I."

We managed to get some work done. Ryan came into my office, "We already heard. Dustin and I tried to reason with Katie. I talked to Evie; she's just hurt. She'll get over it." I asked dejectedly, "When?" Ryan winced, "The longest she's gone without talking when she's upset was a week and half. She got mad at me and Dustin, for the life of me I can't remember why." I winced.

Dylan slammed his head on the table, "Great. That's great. Lacy would join her in solidarity." Ryan said, "I'll keep talking to her. Dustin said he would too." I nodded, "Thank you both. Are you alright with what happened at the dance?"

Ryan sighed, "Define alright." I snorted, "Is your heart no longer sputtering?" Ryan sat down, "Valerie was going to die, and there was nothing I could do to save her. The shadows said she was too far gone for them to help." I was surprised he'd asked, but I shouldn't have been. I admitted, "I didn't know the shadows could heal."

Ryan nodded, "For a price. It was going to cost me my life." I gaped at him, "Ryan..." He said, "Don't say you wouldn't do that same. They weren't happy about it. The shadows like me, Dustin, and Katie. They were happy Valerie was too far gone for them to save." I sighed, "She's alright though, Haley brought her back to us." Ryan nodded, "I'm getting back to normal. She was dying in my arms. It's just hard." I said, "I know. If you need anything, I'm here." Ryan nodded and left the room.

Eric called at three in the afternoon. He greeted, "I hear I missed you all this morning." Dylan bitterly spat out, "I hear your mate talked to you." Eric told him, "She yelled for quite some time, Dylan." I said, "That's better than not speaking to you, or refusing to look in your general direction."

Dylan added, "I just bet you and our fun sized ninja fairy are all good now." Eric told him, "Not all good, but mostly yes. We disagree on how to handle the situation, but that's not

a deal breaker for either of us. I will have the proposal to allow she wolves to be Alpha's, Beta's, Gamma's, and Lead Warriors to you shortly for your signature, Lucas." I said, "That's fine."

Eric seemed to be weighing his words, "Haley is... taking your mates to Disney World after school." Dylan and I jumped up. I yelled, "SHE'S WHAT?" I heard a pop. Haley stated, "Haley is helping your asses that's what Haley's doing! Ungrateful twirps!" I heard her say, "Bye, Thor." Then I heard her kiss him.

Dylan lost it, "She's even kissing him! OH, CRUEL UNIVERSE! I can't even get yelled at." Haley laughed, "I've more than kissed him today, my friend Dylan. I'll link you later, Eric."

Dylan threw a glass and broke it. He said, "You even had sex?! How does he get yelled at, talked to, and sexed up? I can't even get a glance thrown my way, let alone yelled at. He's getting sex already. This is why schools are evil. Evil Lucas. They teach them things, but they keep them away from us. I'm getting them a tutor. They SHALL be home schooled." He took out his phone. I sighed, "Dylan..." He said, "No need to thank me. I know it's a great idea." I'd stop that later.

Eric said, "My mate was raised differently than both of yours. I have been in my relationship longer; we have ground rules. Haley barely spoke to me the entire summit. We agreed not to let that happen again. We promised that we would put everything, except our pups, on hold to resolve things between us. The first time was angry sex if that makes you feel better."

Dylan turned red with rage, "THE FIRST TIME! I hate him, Lucas. I do." I sighed, "Why is she taking the girls to Disney World?" Eric laughed, "Because google told her it was a magical place." I groaned, "Eric, my mate didn't sleep in our bed and she waved to me before she left. I'm not in a great mood."

Eric changed his tone, "She said they all needed to do something fun and normal. She wants to talk to Emmaline because she feels partly responsible for both of you fighting with your mates. She said she didn't fully explain Emmaline's

powers. She is pissed off at herself because she gets on full blooded fairy's for doing that." Ok, that made sense, but she could've done that here.

Eric continued, "She wants them to have fun too. She scheduled appointments for them to get dressed up as Disney Princesses. They are going to ride rides and have girl time." I asked, "Who is going with them?" Eric answered, "Harper, Gunner, and Haley's entire guard. She invited her brother's mates, but they were busy. Astrid was trying to wrap up her training so she could go. The Black Arrow is also going."

Dylan mumbled, "I want to go. They get to have all the fun. I love Disney World." I pointed out, "It's a girls day thing." Dylan said, "I distinctly heard the names Harper and Gunner. Plus, Blade is in her guard. Can't you imagine him on the rides? I can. It will be glorious and no one will take a picture for the memo. Missed opportunities I tell you." I shrugged, "One is her brother, the other is dating her brother. Blade is guard. Is Haley at least calling me Lucas yet?"

Eric answered, "She called you her lion." I sighed, "At least one woman doesn't hate me." Eric lowered his voice, "Neither Emmaline nor Lacy hate either you." I asked, "Wait didn't Katie go with them?" Eric said, "Katie is there too, yes."

I smiled, "So additional Hackura guards are with them." Eric said, "I'm sure Logan is there as well." Dylan muttered, "Lurking like a horror villain waiting to jump out and murder someone. Seriously can they make a little noise every once in a while?" Eric said, "In my experience, they cannot." With that he hung up.

Dylan said, "Well, maybe when the girls get back, we will get yelled at." I shrugged, "I hope so." I took out my clue. "I saw a book of Fealish on Emmaline's nightstand. At least I can solve my clue." Dylan looked at it then stared at me.

I asked, "What?" He told me, "That isn't Fealish. They're words scrambled around. Honestly, you would be LOST without me." I took it from him, and we unscrambled the

words. I read it out loud. “Your next clue is hiding in an envelope at the bottom of the lake in the chest. What the hell?”

We both ran outside and managed to make out a chest at the bottom of the lake. “Oh, for crying out loud.” Dylan smiled, “I finally have something to smile about today. Don’t ruin this for me. Go get your clue!” I sighed. He was right. At least this was fun.

I started taking off my clothes. I got down to my underwear and dove into the water. I reached the chest thanking the goddess I had supernatural lung capacity. I opened the chest and inside an envelope encased in glass held my next clue. I pulled it out, swam back to the surface and got on the dock. A funk appeared in my hands as soon as I stood up. Dylan squealed, “You just have to love fairy magic. What’s the clue?” I read it out loud:

Clue 8

General Jackson holds your next clue where he floats.

I growled, “Jackson!” Dylan frowned, “That was too easy. I don’t like it.” I pulled out my phone calling Eric again. He answered amused, “Lucas, the girls are fine, and having fun.” I growled, “Jackson has my next clue.” Jackson sounded confused, “No, I don’t.”

I growled, “I dove to the bottom of my lake and opened the chest that now lives there. The clue clearly says General Jackson holds my next clue.” Jackson laughed, “I don’t know what to tell you. I’m not your next clue. I don’t have any of the clues.”

I asked, “Who the hell else would General Jackson be?” Jackson answered, “I don’t know, but I can tell you it’s not me. I have nothing to do with this, so far anyway.” I growled. Eric started laughing.

Dylan frowned, “Do my ears deceive me, King Alpha Prick? You laugh now? It gives me such pause. It’s a terrifying sound. The pups nearby just fled the area.” Eric taunted, “I

fucked for several hours today, Dylan. How's your sex life?" Dylan growled at him.

Eric continued, "I asked Haley about Lucas' clue, and she told me what it means. It's good and Jackson isn't lying. It's not him." I groaned in frustration, "Fine." I hung up the phone.

I asked Dylan, "Any ideas Beta of mine, who I'd be lost without?" He said, "I was certain it was Jackson. Maybe it's the Jackson River." I raised an eyebrow, "In Virginia? I don't think so." We both shrugged and went back inside.

We worked until we heard a pop. We both jumped up like two kids waiting for a prize. I frowned greeting the two people in front of me, "Bexley, Eric, we weren't expecting you." Bexley laughed, "But it's fighting training night." I frowned, "I thought they were at Disney World having fun." Bexley smiled, "Yes, they popped back for fighting lessons."

Dylan asked, "Are you joining them Sunlight Fairy Hands?" Bexley smirked, "Yup." She popped away as I raced outside. Haley was already explaining the training plan. Emmaline and Lacy took off running. Haley and her group waited until we caught up then took off.

I growled when I heard Emmaline grunt in pain. I asked no one in particular, "Is this necessary?" Logan answered, "If you want Emmaline to have the highest chance of survival, yes." I growled, "It's five on two." Logan said, "In real life that could happen. It could be far more than five even. My sister knows what she's doing." I sighed.

Dylan grumbled, "Unless she's not telling us a side effect of Emmaline's power." Dylan was pinned to the outside of the gym before I could blink. Logan squeezed his throat, "Listen very carefully, Dylan." I interrupted him growling, "Logan, let him go."

Logan glanced back then dropped Dylan. He said, "It's not my sister's fault neither of you communicated with your mates. YOU made those choices, not her. She didn't mean to hold back, and she feels bad about it. She just spent several hours making sure both your mates were cheered up. She took them both aside and spoke to them about her part in all this."

Dylan jumped up, “I know that. I love our fun ninja sized fairy.” Logan said, “Good. You best be very sure that nothing you say in future insinuates otherwise. EVER.” Katie took Logan by the hand and led him away.

Eric said, “The Hackura do not abide disrespect, Dylan. When it comes to their sister; they don’t even hear derision or sarcasm in anyone’s tone.” Dylan said, “I got that just now, ever so loud, and clear. Unless of course it’s mommy queenie meanie in your territory. Then they seem to lose all sense of hearing, but that’s just me. Oh, wait no it’s not people talk about it. You know I love our very own fun sized ninja airy.” Eric growled at him.

Dylan continued, “As a friend.” Eric said, “Yes, as much as I loathe that, I do know it. What did you mean about my mother?” Dylan smiled, “I love that you know that’s who I was talking about.” Eric sighed. Dylan said, “Ask your fun sized ninja fairy.” Eric growled, “Fine.”

Eric looked around at our group then smiled, “There could be some fun fairy drama at your wedding, Dylan.” Dylan perked up, “Really? Why?” Eric smirked, “I have promised not to share that information until my wife is positive she’s right. I just thought you would like to know. You will eat it up if she’s right.”

I linked Eric, “You did that to cheer him up.” Eric replied, “I dislike him being sullen. He’s supposed to be an obnoxious big kid. He will also be annoyed if Haley is right.” I laughed, “You like him.”

Dylan squealed, “My day has turned. I think I see the sun peeking through the clouds. I will be entertained and someone else will be annoyed. Now I want to know what fairy fun will ensue.”

Eric rolled his eyes. Dylan said, “October is so far away! Maybe I can convince Lacy to have our wedding sooner.” I snorted, “October starts next week.” Dylan growled, “So we get married October first, it’s a fabulous idea.”

Lacy ran over to us breathing heavily. “The invitations have been sent out, Dylan Frost. We are getting married on

Halloween. I didn't hear why you want to change the date, but it's not happening. DO YOU HEAR ME?"

Dylan grinned like he'd won the lottery, "Ever so clearly. No date changes, Halloween it is." Lacy studied him then nodded, "Good." She yelled, "EMMALINE!" Emmaline popped next to Lacy then popped away.

A shot of sunlight came towards us. Eric hit the ground and I tackled Dylan down. Eric yelled, "Bexley!" We just heard a giggle in reply. Dylan smiled as we stood up, "She yelled at me." Eric raised an eyebrow, "You say that like it's a good thing."

Dylan grin broadened, "I have wanted her to yell at me all day, King Alpha Prick. OF COURSE, I have to thank you for it happening. What's it like having everything go your way twenty-four seven?" I rolled my eyes.

I linked Eric, "I'm actually jealous she yelled at him." Eric said, "Emmaline's unlikely to yell at you. It's not the heat of the moment anymore. Haley said she's more disappointed than anything else." I shrugged, "I'd take eye contact."

Eric looked at me, "I think you'll get that. You know I fucked up with Haley a lot at first. I obviously still step in the deep end from time to time. She has messed up with me. We get through it. We are forever. You and Emmaline are forever too. Admitting you fucked up is always a good place to start."

Haley popped next to me, "When you solve your next clue my lion, call me. I have... well it wasn't planned, but now there's a surprise that goes with it. Ok, bye." Haley popped away. Eric smiled.

My gaze narrowed on him, "You know what her surprise is, don't you?" He just smiled, "Since I know what your clue is, and I know my wife, I'll bet I do. My advice, solve that clue quickly." I asked, "Can you give me a hint? Dylan's best idea was the Jackson river... In Virginia." Dylan snorted, "It was better than your idea." Well, true.

Eric said, "Keep going along the river lines. Just not Virginia." Dylan clapped his hands, "You see? I am a genius,

just admit it. Without me you are lost.” I sighed, “Really, Eric? You couldn’t have just linked me that?”

Dylan put his phone away and said, “Just for that, I won’t tell you what I just discovered. I know your clue, and it’s good.” I growled, “Come on!” Dylan said, “No, no King Alpha Prick gave you a good hint. Figure it out.”

I sighed, “I’d rather figure out how to get my mate to talk to me.” Dylan shrugged, “Suggest a different wedding date. Surprisingly, that worked for me.” I rolled my eyes, “Lacy has supernatural hearing, but Emmaline doesn’t.” Dylan tilted his head in agreement.

Haley finally ended their practice. Emmaline and Lacy came out beaming with pride, covered with dirt from head to toe. Haley complimented, “You guys did good.” She snapped and they were clean again. Haley popped onto Eric’s back.

Dylan muttered, “I hate him, I really do.” Haley shot Dylan a look. She asked, “Why?” She studied him, “You don’t actually mean you hate him.” Dylan shrugged, “It’s guy stuff.” Haley said, “Guy stuff gets you all in enough trouble as it is. I’d let it fucking go.” Dylan said, “Not him, he’s never in trouble.”

Haley frowned, “Eric gets in trouble. Don’t you, Thor?” Eric smiled and rubbed her arm, “All the time, Angel.” Haley asked, “Logan, are you guys coming with us?” Logan shook his head, “No, you guys go on.” Haley smiled, “Bye Lacy and Emmaline. I hope you had fun today! I did.” Emmaline quickly said, “We had a great time. Thank you! Bye, Haley.” Haley popped her and Eric away.

Lacy stalked over to Dylan, “I don’t know what’s gotten into you Dylan Frost! I can’t believe you were trying to change the date of our wedding. I mean really, after the crap you’ve already pulled you try to add this.” Lacy yanked him by the arm heading for the pack house.

I told her, “Your stuff was moved to your wing today, Lacy Loo. You live back in the main house.” I saw her smile before she rounded on Dylan, “Now you move my things without

even asking. It's just insulting, Dylan!" She was berating him the whole way back to the house. Dylan was skipping along behind her grinning from ear to ear.

Emmaline cleared her throat, "She's not really mad about that last part." I spun to face her. My throat felt dry. My tone wasn't steady when I replied, "I know." She held out her hand, and I took it without a second thought.

She popped us to a beautiful place. I looked around, there were flowers, a lake, a rainbow, and the sun was shining. The sun was shining? That wasn't even possible, it was dark outside. I asked her, "Where are we?" Emmaline smiled, "Haley showed me how to create my own special place like this. We are the only ones who can find it because we are soul tied."

I smiled, "You did this?" She nodded, "Haley and I came back a half hour early. She instructed me on how to create it, but I did it all. She didn't say a single enchantment for it. She wrote them down for me." I complimented, "It's truly amazing, baby girl."

I was looking around when I heard a splash. Emmaline seductively asked, "Aren't you coming?" She snapped me into swim trunks and I couldn't help but notice she was in a bikini. I got into the water and swam to her. She told me, "Haley thought this could be a place in our territory I could safely do the water fairy ritual. No one could find me here besides you." I agreed, "I think it's great."

We swam in silence for a few moments. I told her, "I'm so sorry." Emmaline sighed, "I just don't understand. I thought we'd settled this. We agreed we talk to each other. Then you just go and loan out my fairy powers without asking me. For a person you knew I wouldn't want to tell their mate to."

I cringed, "I know. It wasn't my intention I swear to you. I should have stopped him from asking. I should have told him no. As his ally, I can't keep his mate from him, but I don't have to have you bring him to her. It was thoughtless and I'm very sorry. I just understand how he feels. Now that I have you, I can't imagine what he's going through."

She nodded, “I don’t mind using my powers to help you. Or even to bring people together, I love that part. I just want to be part of the conversation. Especially since they are my powers.” I cautioned, “We might have to be more careful about who you bring together.” Emmaline smiled, “Don’t worry, Haley and I talked through that. I had a bit of a meltdown thinking about how that could go bad.”

I asked, “What conclusion did you all come to?” Emmaline smiled, “The mate bond is a powerful thing. Only someone who is malicious could fight against it to hurt their mate. I can sense their intentions. Besides, it’s not like I know everyone’s mate. Just people I’ve met or seen a picture of. For now, anyway.” I nodded, “That’s true.”

Emmaline touched my cheek, “Don’t worry, Lucas.” I said, “I’ll spend the rest of life worrying about you and trying to keep you safe. I love you, baby girl.” She smiled, “I love you too.” I smiled, “I thought you’d yell at me. In fact, I’ve been hoping you’d yell at me all day.” She laughed, “Is that why Dylan is grinning like an idiot, because Lacy yelled at him?” I nodded, “Yup.”

Emmaline sighed, “I don’t want to yell at you. I don’t even want to fight. I’m tired of fighting. I’ve fought with Dusty, you, and Alpha Hammond keeps popping up. I’m tired of fighting. I just want peace.” I pulled her into me. “I will try my best to give you that. I will do better.”

Emmaline admitted, “Being in a relationship is new to me too.” I nodded and she popped us back to our room. I asked her hopefully, “Are you staying with me tonight?” Dominic was growling, “If she won’t stay with you, I’m taking over to ask. I miss her scent.” I agreed, “I’ll give you control if she says no.”

Emmaline nodded, “I missed waking up with you.” I hugged her, “I missed you so damn much baby girl.” Emmaline snorted, “I forgot how dramatic wolves are. You claim fairies are the dramatic ones, but I did see you this morning. I spent one night away from you, and you’re acting like it was a week.”

I sighed, “Ryan told me the longest you’d gone without talking was a week.” Emmaline shrugged, “I might have made it to Saturday. The power of a girl’s day and talking to your friends can’t be overstated.” I rubbed her shoulders, “You feel free to have as many girl days as you want as long as there’s protection there for you all.” Emmaline hit me with a snowball, “I’m all the protection I need, thank you very much.” I smiled and wrapped my arms around her so we could sleep.

Dominic purred, “She’s so cute when she hits us with snowballs.” I rolled my eyes. He’d ripped out throats for far less than that. He was right though, it was cute. I woke up to a kiss on the cheek. Emmaline said, “I’ll see you after school, Lucas.” I nodded. “Have a good day, baby girl.” She skipped off to school while I took a long cold shower. Even thinking of her and jacking myself off wasn’t removing my need to be inside her.

I finally turned the shower off, got dressed and went to my office. Dylan was there already smiling, “I got yelled at all night long. It was fabulous. Then I didn’t even have to go outside to get to work. I swung by the kitchen, picked up both our breakfasts with our coffees. Life is good. I plan for it to be better tonight, but for now life is good.”

I groaned, “I still don’t want to think about you and my sister together.” Dylan shrugged, “You seem better too.” I nodded, “Yes, we talked.” Dylan asked, “Talked? At a normal volume? She didn’t yell at you?” I shook my head, “She’s tired of fighting. With me, her brother, and Alpha Hammond.”

Dylan sighed, “Our PI’s hit another wall with that. Hammond’s mother gave birth after his father died, but the record is...” I groaned finished the sentence, “Sealed by magic.” Dylan nodded. I complained, “Great. Just great. Could we catch a break?”

Dylan happily stated, “We did with our mates. They are speaking to us now, so we have that going for us.” I stood, “We need to stop Hammond. He keeps coming. This last one was more intense. If a warlock hadn’t raised Emmaline, she

would've thought I cheated on her. What's the goal of that? She runs into his arms?"

Dylan straightened. He asked, "What was she supposed to do? She went to Dustin, that obviously wasn't their plan." Simultaneously we said, "Someone was outside waiting to take her." Dylan yelled, "JINX!"

I dialed Al. A female voice greeted, "Al's Diner." I told them, "I need to speak to Al." The voice sighed, "I need a million dollars, Al is busy." I growled, "Who is this?" The voice answered, "Wendy." I linked Dylan, "Couldn't it have been Liz?" Dylan said, "Evidently not."

I politely said, "Just tell Al that Mr. Lyons is on the phone." The voice sighed, "All right. I'll tell Al the guy that owns most of the town is on the phone, but Al's still busy. Prank callers. Jeez." Dylan started laughing.

I heard Liz pick up the phone, "Mr. Lyons, I'm so sorry about that. I'll transfer you back to Al's office." I sighed in relief, "Thank you, Liz." I heard the line pick up after a few moments, "Alpha. Sorry about Wendy." I quickly said, "It's fine. The night of the dance did you see anyone suspicious?"

Al answered, "No, there was a parent that stayed in our parking lot. They had binoculars and everything." We looked at each other. Dylan asked, "Man or woman?" Al answered, "Definitely a mom. Pretty lady according to Frank. He laughed about it when he went out for his cigarette."

I asked, "What kind of car?" Al replied, "An SUV why?" I wanted to groan, "Plates?" Al said, "I... Alpha?" I asked, "You heard about the dance, right?" Al said, "Sure... the illusion... Oh god... Emmaline. That woman was waiting for Emmaline?" I agreed, "We think so. She must have been waiting for Emmaline to come outside. They made her think she saw me kiss someone else."

Al growled, "I'll tell Frank to be on the lookout for her. I'm sorry, Alpha." I reassured him, "You didn't know. It was a reasonable conclusion. It still could've been a mom of one of the Red Run students looking to see who her son or daughter

went to the dance with.” Al said, “I suppose.” We hung up and sat down. I groaned, “Not a single break.”

I took out my clue and googled General Jackson. I yelled, “SON OF A BITCH! The boat in Nashville? I have to go to Nashville?” Dylan laughed, “Do you hear an angel chorus when you solve a clue?” I growled at him.

I called Eric. He picked up immediately, “Lucas.” I asked, “I have to go to Nashville for a clue?” Eric laughed, “It’s better than Virginia. Just avoid the packs down there. I hadn’t told Haley that we don’t like them down there.”

I sighed, “Haley wanted me to call her when I solved this clue.” I heard a pop. Haley said, “My lion, did you solve your clue?” I answered, “Yes, the steamboat in Nashville. How did you even work that out?” Haley said, “A friend, BUT since you are going to Nashville I’ve arranged some things.”

Dylan started laughing. I asked cautiously, “What things?” Haley said, “For you and Emmaline. You have tickets to the dinner show on the General Jackson steamboat. I also got you an Airbnb, it’s a riverfront loft. This google has its advantages. Miley told me about Airbnb’s fascinating site. I’ll have Eric text you the address. Since Emmaline can just pop you to Nashville when she gets home from school; you could go walk around Centennial Park. Whatever you guys want. She’ll have a card with unlimited funds to spend. Have fun, my lion!” I heard a pop.

Tickets for the dinner appeared on my desk, and my phone chimed with the Airbnb instructions. The address and the code to the door. I was stunned, “Eric, she didn’t have to do this.” I heard a pop, as the doorbell rang. Haley giggled, “It’s mostly for your mates. You should get the door, my friend Dylan.”

Dylan stood, “Really? Is it for me? I LOVE MY FAIRY SHOW!” Haley laughed, “Like I would forget about you. I talked to Dale too, letting him know you’d both be busy until tomorrow. Have fun guys. I’m sorry for not explaining everything so you could make your bad decision with the full picture about Emmaline’s powers. Let’s all admit you all would’ve come up with another dumb thing to do, but you

weren't given the choice. For that I'm sorry." With that she popped away. Dylan said, "I like fairy apologies."

Someone knocked on my door before my mom came in. She patted Dylan on the arm, "Your limo driver is here, Dylan." Dylan bounced up and down, "A limo?" My mom laughed, "Yes. Here's the key to your hotel room." Dylan took it gleefully. He squealed, "THE PENTHOUSE! I LOVE FAIRY APOLOGIES!"

He ran downstairs, and I followed him out of curiosity. Sure enough, there was a hummer stretch limo in the driveway. My mom said, "Now you boys fix this with my girls, you hear?" We nodded. She said, "Don't think I don't find out what goes on in this house. I still know everything. Valerie went into heat at school today. Emmaline popped her to Ryan."

Dylan mumbled, "I knew that. I was linked. I did know." I snorted, "Why didn't you tell me?" Dylan said, "Because it was handled." My mom laughed, "See? I know everything, boys." She turned to Dylan, "Like I know my baby will go into heat soon. Be on better terms with her, or I'll have Emmaline pop her somewhere with me. I'll keep her in ice water until her heats over. Don't make me do that young man. You know I want a grandpup. I'll hold it against you for years to come." With that she walked away.

I looked at Dylan, "Lacy being pregnant at her wedding won't be so bad." Dylan was preening with delight, "Moon goddess, I will do anything Lacy wants. I could find the ice bath location. I could. My super sniffer would activate!"

I laughed, "Well, we will get to see if my mom's right." Dylan snorted, "If... IF? Name ONE time that woman has been wrong in our lives. She is scarily accurate." I had to agree. We saw Brad pull in with a smile on his face.

He got out of the car shaking his head. He told us, "You guys have no idea." I looked at Dylan asking, "About what?" The car doors opened and Lacy and Emmaline got out. They were in incredible, sexy dresses. I gulped. Dylan said, "I am

getting a statue made of my fun sized fairy. I will give thanks to it and worship at its feet.”

I agreed, “Use my credit card.” I couldn’t take my eyes off Emmaline as Lacy giggled. I told her, “You look amazing, baby girl.” She turned in a circle, “You like it?” I nodded and she ran over to me. “I can’t wait for our big date!” I caught her in my arms, “Me either, baby girl.”

Date Night

Emmaline couldn't stop her smile walking through the gates of Disney World. Haley was buying fast passes for everyone. We immediately went to the boutique to be dressed up as Disney Princesses. Haley was radiating excitement. Our group couldn't help but catch onto her vibe.

Lacy squealed, "I'm going to tell Chelsea and Sam they SO missed out." I agreed, "They really did. Which princess are you going to be?" Lacy immediately answered, "Cinderella. What about you?" I smiled, "I'm going with Queen Elsa." Lacy laughed, "Since you can throw ice, I like it."

I asked my sister, "Katie, who are you going to be?" Katie rolled her eyes, "Evie, if you can't guess who I'm going to be; I will question our entire childhood." I laughed, "Of course you're going to be Aurora." Katie nodded.

She waved Haley over and asked, "Who are you going to dress up as?" Haley smiled, "Ariel. Our hair matches. Plus, if I can find that seashell bra she wears it will FREAK Eric out that I walked around the park like that. It would serve him right too."

BA started to cackle along with Katie. Lacy said, "I've said it before, and I'll say it again. Brave little fairy, that one." I smiled, "She may be tiny, but she's dangerous." Several people agreed. I asked, "Astrid, BA what are you dressing up as?" Astrid admitted, "Belle is my favorite." BA said, "I LOVE her too! I'm going with Jasmine." She probably had the abs for that costume.

We ended up being sectioned off into groups. I was with Haley and Lacy. Haley picked out her outfit and told the girl doing hair she'd do her own. Lacy said, "I can't believe you didn't pick the dress, Haley." Haley laughed, "Really, Lacy Lyons? When this outfit was an option, can you really not

believe it?" I chimed in, "You look great." Lacy agreed, "You do." She had on a purple seashell bra with a skintight green mermaid tale.

Haley smiled, "We all look amazing. When you're done being upset with your mates, you guys have to wear your outfits for them." Lacy whispered sorrowfully, "Who knows when that will be?" Haley cleared her throat, "Actually, I wanted to talk to you both about that." I frowned, "Why?"

Haley sighed, "Because it's partly my fault." I gasped, "No, it's not!" Haley disagreed, "It is. While our mates made an asshole decision, that I fully believe they would've made in a different asshole way had they had all the information; they didn't have the context needed. Eric's reputation is one of never allowing harm to come to anyone in his pack, especially women. Lucas has the same reputation. I was so excited to meet you Emmaline that I didn't fully explain your powers. They made a bad decision, but they didn't fully understand what they were doing and that's my fault, not theirs."

I was quiet for several moments. I grumbled, "They were still going to use me like a magic eight ball." Haley smiled, "Eric told me you said that. I had to google what it was, but that was hilarious. Yes, they were and that's on them. I'm just telling you; I played a part in them making that bad decision. Dylan wasn't a part of the decision at all really. He told both Eric and Lucas he didn't know what to do, but that none of us would like this."

Lacy sighed, "I'm still mad at him." Haley smiled, "Until you talk to him, I'd be mad too." I asked, "Are you and Eric talking yet?" Haley nodded, "After we attended the summit where Claudzilla made her appearance in our lives, Eric and I agreed we'd talk through our issues. Even if we didn't resolve our issues completely, we discuss our viewpoints to avoid misunderstandings. We also have children who can pick up on when we are upset. I want to give them as much peace as possible in their environment. Eric and I talked through what we could. We disagree on the course of action to take, but we are ok."

I sighed, “I don’t want to fight anymore.” Haley shrugged, “Then don’t. Calmly tell my lion how you feel. Tell him what you want.” I admitted, “I’m worried.” Haley asked, “About what?” I said, “Telling people about their mates. What if someone knows how to use me? For example, a fairy who doesn’t like partial fairies. What if they come to me to find their mate? Then they abuse them to weaken me.”

Haley pointed out, “You don’t know everyone in the world. You don’t know who everyone’s mate is. Only deviants can fight the mate bond. Think about hurting Lucas, really hurting him enough to cause him physical pain.” I clutched my chest, “No, it hurts.”

Haley told me, “That’s the same for all mates. To actually hurt your mate causes you harm. Physically harming your mate causes you emotional and physical harm as well. The mate bond is quite powerful. You can also sense the intentions of those seeking their mate. If there’s someone who’s going to abuse their mate, you’ll be able to tell.”

I cringed, “On that note, I need better control. Sometimes people’s souls are reaching out to me, practically choking me with their emotions.” Haley’s response was instant, “You need to center yourself more. Tell you what, we are going to go back to your territory a little early. We will leave the girls here, and I’ll instruct you through making a sanctuary that’s perfect for you. Only you and Lucas will be able to enter. Lacy could go with you if you brought her, but you’d have to do that every time. It’s a place where you can center yourself and get to know your light better. It just takes practice; you’ll be able to control that.” I reached over and took her hand, “Thanks Haley.”

Lacy said, “So, you really think we should talk to our mates?” Haley shrugged, “That’s up to you. My question to you is, are you really happy not talking to them?” Lacy and I both shared a look. I answered, “No, we aren’t.”

Haley suggested, “Then do it for yourselves. Even if you don’t resolve everything between you, start the conversation. I can tell you from personal experience Eric and I were messed up when I wasn’t explaining to him what was going on in my

head. I let my insecurities and fears get the best of me, and I hurt both of us. He was an ass and hurt us both. Relationships aren't easy, even when it's our destiny. They take work. A lot of hard ass work."

Lacy and I both smiled as the tech's walked in to do our hair and makeup. I noticed the girl who did Haley's make up didn't actually touch her with her hands. Once we were done, we met up with the other girls. I squealed, "We look hot!" Katie laughed, "We do."

Gunner said, "Hales, your wolf is going to flip shit." Haley smiled, "Be a dear and send him a picture please." Blade said, "Is trick, boytoy." Gunner rolled his eyes, "I know it's a trick. I'm taking a picture though. I'll send it to Eric when your training lesson is done." Haley squealed, "That's perfect! I was planning to wear it for him at home anyway. Give me a five-minute head start." Gunner made an ok sign at her. Lacy whispered to me, "She really is the tiny, dangerous one of our group."

We ran all over the park riding rides. Haley insisted since we had Princess Jasmine, we had to go on the magic carpet ride. Lacy squealed over space mountain. I think I saw Blade's soul leave his body when we rode it's a small world.

Haley got our group to take a break for dinner. We all laughed and joked with each other and had a great time. Haley pulled me aside, "Let's get back. Harper is going to bring everyone else back when it's time." I nodded. We gave everyone hugs before we headed back outside the park where we'd popped in.

Haley smiled instructing me, "Pop us to a place in your territory where you want to create your sanctuary. I smiled and popped us to the clearing where my treehouse was. Haley assessed the area, "Perfect, the first thing we do is pick a spot."

I walked a few paces away from my treehouse. I told her, "Here is good." Haley smiled, "Alright." She conjured cards, handed me one, then said, "Say this chant." I nodded and read the card smiling that she'd added the translation to the card.

I spoke, “Point canbe sper orto me, creeit dat unseen. (this space is just for me, make it unseen). I could see a force field surrounding us as I finished the chant. Haley smiled, “Wonderful, you’d be surprised how many don’t get it on their first try. Now, I want you to fill this space with things you love in nature. Make this a space that is for you. Just sit and center yourself and feel your light. Communicate with your light what you’d like to see.”

I sat down and closed my eyes. I searched myself to find my light quickly. I thought at my light which seemed awkward at first. I pictured a pond with a beautiful wooden bridge. I pictured lots of trees with different colored flowers, white, pink, and red.

I opened my eyes and spotted Haley. She clapped. “It’s perfect, Emmaline.” I turned, gasping as tears filled my eyes. It was exactly as I’d envisioned. I squealed and jumped into the pond after snapping myself into a swimsuit.

Haley smiled at me as I swam around. I came back to stand beside her, snapping myself into an outfit for our training later. Haley said, “This is the place you should come to when you need to center yourself. Or should you decide you want or need to perform the water ritual, do so here. Only Lucas can enter without you.” I frowned, “Can he find it?” Haley nodded, “He can find it if you bring him to it, or if you wanted him to find it. So, if you are playing a game and you link him to come find you the force field senses your intent. That will only work with Lucas though.”

I smiled wickedly, “That could be fun.” Haley wiggled her eyebrows, “That’s the spirit.” We sat in silence for a little while. I admitted, “I’m tired. I’m so tired of fighting with people. I’m even more tired of Alpha Hammond popping up.” Haley bumped my shoulder with hers, “I understand that. I get mad at the fairy goddess Azoney, frequently, for the chaos in my life. Alpha Hammond will be dealt with eventually. He can’t run forever.”

I sighed, “It feels like he can. He’s getting bolder. That stunt at the dance... What if he hurts someone else? Without you my brother would’ve lost Valerie.” Haley nudged me

gently, “Without you, not me. You got your brothers and sister in law together to bring down the illusion. I cannot do that. Then you called me to help her. Valerie would’ve died without your quick thinking.” She always had a way of praising other people without taking credit herself. She really was a unique person.

Haley theorized, “I think Alpha Hammond will take a break then try again when he thinks our guard will be down.” I glanced sharply at her, “You know when he’s coming?” Haley shrugged, “I know when I’d come if I were him.” I thought about it then cringed, “Lacy’s wedding.” Haley nodded, “Or yours. As he seems to be rather impatient, I’d bet it’s Lacy and Dylan’s wedding.” I frowned, “I WILL kick his butt if he ruins their wedding.” Haley smiled, “We won’t let that happen.”

I said, “Does Eric know you think that?” Haley shrugged, “Not yet, but I’m sure he thinks the same thing.” I sighed, “Isn’t there a way to get Alpha Hammond before the wedding?” Haley shrugged, “He seems to have gone underground again. I’ve tried to pop to him, but the dark witch bitches have him protected with some kind of magic. I hate them so fucking much. Besides, he thinks he’s smarter than everyone else. We have an advantage. He thinks our guard will be down, but it won’t be.” I agreed, “True.”

Haley stood, “Now, let’s get to your training lesson.” I teased, “Aren’t you going to snap yourself into another outfit?” Haley smiled, “No, you are going to snap me into a new outfit.” I smiled thinking of a Haley workout fit and snapped. She looked down, “Good job. Now pop us outside the gym.”

I grabbed her hands and popped us just as a portal opened with our group, except BA, stepped through. I asked, “How did BA get home?” Haley pointed, “Harper opened a portal for her, I’m sure.” Harper said, “Yeah, yeah, yeah, I’m the gatekeeper for your girl’s days. BA got home just fine.” Haley hugged him, “I never doubted you for one second, big brother.” Harper kissed her forehead, “Gunner and I are heading home. Thank you for the magical, fun filled afternoon.”

Haley poked him in the side, “I sense sarcasm, but you and your boytoy lover are quite welcome.” Gunner said, “One of these days Haley, you’ll use my name.” Haley smiled, “Whatever you say, Harper’s boytoy lover.” Gunner rolled his eyes then blushed when Harper slapped his butt before opening a portal to leave.

Haley quickly changed gears, “Fairy powers and hijinks are fair game. You guys get a head start to run away from us. We will come at you, and you will use all your training to try to win the fight. Do you understand?”

Lacy linked me, “Werewolf speed is coming at them so hard.” I smirked at her. I told Haley, “We are ready.” Haley yelled, “GO!” Lacy and I took off running. As soon as we hit the tree line, Lacy linked me, “Climb the tree we can jump down on them.” I nodded and started to climb. I was thrown down as the wind threw me from the tree. Lacy landed on her feet and pulled me up onto mine.

I popped us away to my special place. Lacy whistled, “This is the place Haley had you create?” I nodded, “Yes, what’s our strategy?” Lacy stated, “Climbing is obviously a no go with fairy hijinks in play.” I rubbed my arms, “Agreed.” Lacy said, “We stick together. If we get separated, I’ll link you and you pop your happy little self to me.” I nodded.

We stepped out of the force field and Lacy dove on me as sunlight hit my force field. I started to throw my snowballs. Haley instructed, “That’s not going to hurt anyone. Come on, Emmaline. Show us what you’ve got.”

I got mad and everyone started having to dodge hail. I saw Ariel grunt in pain when she took an unplanned hit. Haley used the wind to knock one of them back into both Lacy and I. Lacy rubbed her chest as I grabbed my arm in pain.

She told me, “Pop us away.” I grabbed her and popped us to the other side of the tree line. Lacy linked me, “I have a newfound respect for Drake and Peter. Your hail hurts like a bitch to get hit with.” I said, “Agreed. They kept coming after I’d pelted them with hail too...” Lacy laughed, “I’d have yelled out the second I got hit with one. Like EMMALINE

IT'S ME FOR THE LOVE OF PETE STOP IT!" We both laughed.

Astrid tackled Lacy from behind and Miley tackled me before I could react. I quickly popped behind her. She smirked, "Laughing and chatting is a dead giveaway of your position." I frowned at myself, "Noted." I fought her until Lacy linked me, "Pop our asses back over towards the gym. Dylan is having some crazy notion about changing our wedding date."

I grabbed her and popped close to the tree line, but not quite there. She linked me, "I'll link you to pop to me when I straighten him out." I nodded, "Your hearing is insane." She smirked, "Dylan should've known better." I kinda thought that maybe he did. He looked like a wounded puppy this morning when she left without saying bye to him at the gym.

I watched Lacy ran over to Dylan. I laughed because even though I couldn't hear them, he looked delighted. I sighed, knowing I needed to distract the girls before they got to her before they resolved the date of the wedding issue.

I popped behind Astrid and threw hail at her. I was flung backwards by the wind. I hadn't got up when Haley was on top of me. She pinned me down; I struggled but I couldn't move. She smiled gently reminding me, "Fairy Hijinks are allowed, Emmaline."

I heard Lacy yell my name, and I popped to her. She linked me, "Bexley threw sunlight, get us out of here." I popped us to the middle of the clearing so we could sit down covered by the grass. Lacy linked me, "I know what the sound is now. I'll know when Bexley throws sunlight." I nodded then asked, "Did the guys get hit?"

Lacy rolled her eyes, "I wish. I'm sure Eric and Lucas knew what it was. Dylan's fought fairy's too, so he might as well." Ariel jumped out at us. I screamed and put my hands up. Lacy shouted, "WHAT THE HELL? I bow to you, Queen Elsa." I stood and noticed Haley healing Ariel. I'd encased Lacy and I behind a wall of ice which Ariel hit face first. Haley used the wind to bring the wall down. I walked towards Ariel with my hands up. I whispered, "Ariel, I'm so sorry!"

I was hit from behind and I popped up. I blocked the shots coming from Miley before popping back to Lacy to fight behind her. Haley was engaging with Lacy and punched her hard enough she went down onto the ground. I popped us away then watched Haley pop away.

Lacy said, "She popped to Eric for something. She told them she'd be right back." I replied, "Let's use that then." I popped us back behind the girls. I landed a punch on Miley before she got several shots in on me. Haley came back. I quickly popped Lacy and I further away again.

Haley just kept popping to us as I popped us away. I accidentally landed in a puddle. Bexley shot her sunlight at us. We weren't going to get away in time. I threw my hands up and the water from the puddle collided with the sunlight shot making it a light jolt when it hit us. Lacy said, "Well, that would've been nice to know."

Haley laughed, "Oops?" Lacy snorted, "Oops my ass!" Haley smiled, "You guys did good. Do you have anything that needs to be healed?" Lacy said, "The bruises from the hail unless you want Dylan to go apeshit." Haley laughed and healed us both, then her team. She was still fine while Lacy and I were covered in dirt.

I was about to snap us clean when Lacy said, "No, let Dylan sweat about something." I laughed, "You're going to make him pay, aren't you?" Lacy smiled, "Hell yes I am. I'm not sensitive like you. I'm still mad, and I WILL make him understand we are a team too. Not just him and Lucas." I nodded, "Get him, girlfriend." She smiled and smacked my butt, "You go get your man your way." I gave her a thumbs up, "I will."

Astrid smiled at us, "Always be true to who you are, every relationship is different. The point is to get them to work with you. Go with what you feel. Supernatural men will always push for makeup sex, but don't until YOU are ready. If you want to get you some angry or passionate sex, then you do you girls. Don't do it just because they are ready if you aren't. Listen to your instincts."

I laughed then asked, “Did you give that advice to Haley? Because I’m pretty sure she’s already having sex with Eric again.” Astrid laughed. Haley yelled, “Hey! I got me some angry passionate sex, and it was AMAZING! I absolutely wanted to have sex. I don’t have sex with Eric because he wants me to. We both want it.”

I gaped at her, “Other times? You’ve had sex with him more than once today?” Haley laughed, “Yes, I have online classes that I can do whenever I want. You guys have class all day. I also don’t have a super fucking awesome cousin who kidnaps me after school to have fun. I was at home all day. I also told you Eric and I have that rule. He wasn’t working today until a half hour before I got you guys.”

Lacy grumbled, “School ruins everything.” I laughed, “It makes us smart though.” Lacy snorted, “Ehh... debatable. Haley’s smarter than most people I know, and she didn’t go to a traditional high school.” Ariel added, “It also builds anticipation. Your guys are desperate to see you. That works in your favor.” I laughed, “That’s true. I can sense their desperation from here.”

Lacy straightened, “I can work with that. I’m going to give Dylan what for.” Bexley said, “He was smiling like a crazy person after you yelled at him.” Miley teased, “You’re underselling it. He was ecstatic that she yelled at him.”

Haley groaned, “It’s not fair that Emmaline and I are the only ones without super special hearing.” She stared at the sky, “Seriously, Azoney?! Get with the other fucking goddesses and tell them it’s not fair we can’t have supernatural hearing. I mean for fucks sake vampires are fast! It would behoove us to be able to hear them coming. That’s just logical.”

I laughed at her along with the rest of the group. When we all stopped, I said, “Let’s head back.” I was anxious to talk to Lucas. Haley nodded and we all stepped out into view of the gym. Haley reiterated that we’d done well. Then she popped onto Eric’s back. Dylan muttered under his breath. I couldn’t hear him, but he was practically green with envy.

I shot Lacy a questioning look. She linked me, “Dylan is jealous of Eric because Haley is talking to him. Haley is telling Dylan that Eric gets in trouble all the time. Which Eric doesn’t seem upset about.” I searched Eric’s soul, “He feels smug and lustful, he’s absolutely not upset.”

Lacy clapped a hand over her mouth so she didn’t laugh out loud. She linked me, “Of course he does. Good thing he won’t be here when he finds out about her Princess Ariel outfit.” I laughed, “I’d actually like to see that.”

Lacy winked then went at Dylan like a lion. She linked me when Lucas told her their stuff had been moved, “Thank goodness. I did NOT want to pack all our crap and organize a move. We somehow accumulated SO much stuff so quickly.”

Katie winked at me while Lacy yelled at Dylan. Katie gave me a quick hug then whispered in my ear, “It’s ok to handle this with Lucas however you want. You never were the yelling type, not outside of the moment anyway.” I smiled at her as Logan opened a portal taking her home.

Now, it was just Lucas and me. His body language and the look on his face, combined with the tone of his voice, helped me decide how to handle things between us. I held out my hand for his. He placed his hand in mine, and I popped us to my special place.

He seemed in awe of my sanctuary. We swam in silence because I wasn’t going to make the first move here. I wasn’t the one who messed up, so it was his on him. I wasn’t even really mad anymore, just disappointed. We calmly explained everything to each other. I preferred this to yelling, honestly.

I knew we were both new to this, and it was going to take time to figure out. He was supposed to be older and wiser though. I’m pretty sure that’s what “they” say about dating an older man. I smiled thinking about telling Haley that. I could just imagine the rant she’d go on about wondering who “they” were.

I searched Lucas’ soul once we got back to our room. He was hopeful, worried, and possessive. Of course, he was possessive. This man. It did help me decide to stay though. I’d

missed waking up with him. I had another realization. Wolves claim fairies are dramatic, but I'm positive it's male wolves. They are the most dramatic group of people. We were only apart for one night. We weren't even REALLY apart. We were in the same freaking house, on the same freaking floor.

Lucas told me Ry told him the longest I'd gone with silent treatment was a week. I decided not to tell him it was almost two weeks. Ry and Dusty fried my favorite stuffed animal practicing their magic. That reminded me that Roger, my stuffed dog, needed his revenge. I'd have to plan that with Haley. She could come up with something epic.

I wasn't a child anymore though. Plus, Haley convinced me to talk to Lucas. Not just for him and our relationship, but for myself. Not talking to him was hurting me. Lucas said I could have girls' days if I was protected. Just to remind him that I wasn't defenseless I threw a snowball at him. He actually purred out loud. That was not the reaction I thought he'd have to being hit with a snowball, but at least he wasn't upset.

I woke up feeling better, but not quite like things were back to normal. I sighed and went to training. Lacy was there and she bumped me, "All good?" I nodded, "Not quite normal, but better." She nodded, "Same. I got a lot of things off my chest." I smiled, "Good for you."

Lacy and I were put on the equipment today because they were a few trainer's light. Alex told us since we'd trained with Haley last night so we could take a break. I linked Lacy, "I didn't see him around last night." Lacy smirked, "Lots of them were watching our practice." I nodded.

I popped directly to my shower afterwards. I was gross from last night combined with this morning. I got ready for school giving Lucas a quick kiss on the cheek before I left. I drove our group to school, then handed Ry the keys.

He gave me a hug, "You've grown into such a mature young woman. It's weird but nice." I smiled, "Thanks, Ry." I walked into school. Lacy and I were immediately swarmed by Sam and Chelsea. Sam asked, "What did Haley have you guys do?"

Drake pleaded, "Please let it be something silly." Lacy happily informed them, "She popped us to Disney World, where she'd made appointments for us to get dressed up as Disney princesses. Then we rode the rides and ate dinner there. I have pictures." She took out her phone to show them.

Peter covered his face with his hands, "Great... that's just great." Chelsea said, "Next time, the meeting can go on without us! We missed out on fairy fun." I said, "You guys couldn't have ridden a lot of the rides anyway though since... you know, you're pregnant." Drake clapped and pointed at me, "YES! Yes, ok... Thank you Emmaline! I can work with that." Sam said, "We could've gotten dressed up as Disney princesses though." I agreed, "That's true."

Drake walked me to class once Chelsea and Sam had seen the pictures of our escapades. He commented, "Your cousin really is something." I smiled, "She is." Drake said, "She's very different from literally any fairy I've met. Or any fairy I've heard about interacting with wolves. She gives you all a good name in the supernatural community, unlike your full-blooded counterparts. I'm pretty sure everyone is shocked in general by her since she's their princess, but she's the easiest one to deal with."

I shrugged, "It takes one person to start changes." Drake agreed, "That's very true." Everything was normal until every male in second period stiffened. Drake ran to the door, "Nobody is leaving." Grayson sneered, "Because you say so? Or because we are still in class?" I rolled my eyes at him.

I linked Travis, "What's going on?" Travis was looking wide eyed, "Someone's in heat." I frowned, "Aren't you supposed to be ready to fight Drake to leave?" Travis nodded, "Yes, but I feel no compulsion to hunt down the she wolf. Holy crap! It's you!"

I was confused, "Me? I'm not in heat. I can't even go into heat. That's not what the fairy version is called." Travis explained, "You told me who my mate is. My wolf knows it's true, so to us we are mated." I frowned when two guys got up. They looked determined to get past Drake.

I stood announcing, "I have to go to the bathroom." The teacher caught on and linked me, "Please find the student, and get them out of here." I nodded, "I will." Drake let me by while Grayson actually sounded scared there may be a fight.

I whispered, "He's a wiccan, he knows about a she wolves heat, Drake. You can do what you need to." Drake nodded and started issuing commands. I heard someone whimpering. To my shock I heard Chelsea snarling, "GET AWAY FROM HER!" I heard growls in response.

I popped to Chelsea, taking down a guy who was about to hit her. I was stunned, "You can go into heat while pregnant? Where is Peter?" I heard a grunt as Peter threw three guys away from Valerie. I gasped. It wasn't Chelsea in heat; it was Valerie. I yelled, "CRAP! No, I got this! I've totally got this." I grabbed Valerie and thought of Ry.

To my surprise, I ended up at Dusty's house. Ry, Dusty, and Aubree were startled by our appearance. Ry was up on his feet in a second, "Val? Babe, what's wrong?" As soon as he touched her, she moaned, I quickly explained, "She's in heat so... there's that."

Ry picked her up and ran upstairs with her. Aubree said, "Dustin Bishop, you get us a hotel room right now." Dusty had his phone out, "On that." I laughed, giving them both hugs. I asked, "Is the SUV Ry drives outside?"

Aubree nodded and walked over to a bowl by the front door. She handed me the keys, "Here are the keys. Are you driving back to school?" I sighed, "No, we are going to see if I can pop with a car." Dusty frowned, "Call if you need something."

Valerie's screams of pleasure started echoing in their house. Aubree said, "We can buy clothes, let's just go. Our house is a mating hotspot. First Katie, now Ryan. Jesus." Dusty laughed, pushing us all out the door. He locked the front door, and they took off. I got in the SUV and held onto the wheel. I gave myself a short pep talk, "I can do this." I thought of an empty parking space at school in the back.

I opened my eyes squealing, “I DID IT!” I got out. I was in the grass, but who cares? I popped a whole car with me! I walked back inside and found the principal standing there. He nodded his head, “Thank you Luna for taking care of the situation.” I smiled, “Of course.” His eyes looked worried and I reached out to his soul. I was surprised about the amount of turmoil I felt within him. He felt trapped by something. I smiled at him, before heading back to my classroom. Shaking that off I got through the rest of my day.

When my last class ended Lacy was waiting outside my classroom with eyes sparkling. She had a note and garment bag in her hands. She demanded, “Check your locker! I LOVE your cousin.” I questioned, “She got you an outfit?” Lacy nodded, “She did. Go look in your locker!” I held up my hands, “All right, all right.”

Chelsea, Sam, Lacy, and I made it to my locker in record time. I opened it and a note fell out onto the floor. The end of the garment bag that hung from the top of my locker as if by magic. It came trickling out until it touched the floor. Something told me it was in fact magic holding it up in my locker. Brad materialized to read the contents of my note over my shoulder.

Emmaline,

I had a clue for Lucas to solve that will turn out to be a good date night for you two. Go have fun and enjoy yourself.

Inside the envelope is a prepaid card to do whatever you want. By the way, you're heading to Nashville. I've set up everything. I am sorry for the part I played in your fight. I couldn't very well let you go on a date without an outfit.

Have fun on your fairy godmother magicked date.

FGM (fairy god mother)

P.S. I got you shoes too ;) snap yours and Lacy's hair and makeup done however you want.

I snorted, “She didn’t need to do this.” Lacy said, “I know, but I’m really freaking excited.” I smiled before grabbing the garment bag. I asked her, “Did you look at your outfit?” Lacy shook her head, “Not yet.”

Sam squealed, “Let’s go to the girl’s locker room and check.” Peter cleared his throat, “You guys should check your lockers first.” Sam whirled, “What?” Peter held up a note, “It seems the fairy princess felt bad you guys missed out yesterday. I have a note detailing our dates once we make it back home.”

Sam squealed and hugged Drake. She quickly asked, “Did you get a note too?” Drake opened his locker then nodded. We stopped by Sam and Chelsea’s locker grabbing their outfits. I frowned, “I wonder why she didn’t tell me to do your and Sam’s makeup too.”

Chelsea laughed and read her note out loud, “Chelsea, since I was in a planning mode, I thought your wolves might not think you all need date night too. We missed you guys yesterday but have fun with your men tonight. I’m sure Emmaline will snap your hair and makeup however you want.” I laughed, “Of course.”

Lacy gasped as she opened her garment bag. I turned as she took out her dress. She squealed, “This is couture!” I admitted, “It’s stunning Lacy.” It was a burgundy dress. It had a crisscross neckline and a triangle opening right below the chest. An off the shoulder strap, and a fitted mermaid silhouette.

Chelsea opened hers next and slowly touched the material. She whispered, “This is the most beautiful dress I’ve ever looked at.” It was silver and gold with flecks of blue. It had sequins that made small patterns throughout the dress, and a v-neckline. Short sleeves, and an A-line skirt that would hide her baby bump.

Sam couldn’t stand it and opened hers next. She gasped, “This is beautiful!” Her dress was a shimmery gold that was sleeveless with a V-neckline with a low V-back. The skirt was also an A-line silhouette to hide her bump.

Lacy demanded, “Emmaline, open yours!” I smiled and unzipped my bag. Lacy jumped up and down, laughing, “Lucas Lyons eat your heart out! OH MY GOSH!” It was a blue dress covered in white, black, and silver sequins. It had a v-neckline and a fitted silhouette. Starting at what would be my mid-thigh were little feathers, then the bottom was all feathers. There was even a slit where the feathers started.

We all laughed and pulled out our shoes. Sam and Chelsea had flats, but Lacy and I had heels. We all took turns helping get each other into the dresses. Chelsea spun twirling hers around. “I can’t believe she did this.” Lacy agreed, “I can’t either. I feel so glamorous!” I put my dress on, “Glamorous and sexy. I feel *really* sexy.” Sam cat called, “Ow! Ow! You look sexy.” I laughed, “We all do.” Sam said, “I actually feel sexy too. Gosh she’s a freaking miracle worker. I’ve felt so off with my body since I got pregnant. I just feel like me right now.”

I snapped everyone’s hair and makeup. With one final run through we walked out of the locker room. We were laughing as we made it to the front door. Peter and Drake both gulped when they spotted us. They had changed into suits. Haley must have snapped them something too.

Peter took both of Chelsea’s hands, “Wow... Sugar baby momma... just wow.” Drake said, “Sam... you... look amazing.” Sam teased, “I know.” Drake laughed and they headed out. Brad was waiting with the SUV out front. He must have a spare set of keys because I hadn’t given him the ones I had.

He gaped at both of us. Lacy ordered, “Don’t you dare link them to warn them Haley got us glamified!” Brad laughed, “I wouldn’t dream of ruining this moment. Get in Glam squad!” I clapped, “That’s the spirit!” Both of us got into the car.

When we pulled up. Brad linked us, “I’ll set the stage for you. Give me a few seconds before you get out.” We both nodded and gave him a second. Lacy linked me, “Let’s make our grand entrance.” I pointed out, “I could pop us out.” Lacy shook her head, “Nope! By the way do you SEE the limo?” I nodded, “I’d bet that’s for you. I’ll just pop us to Nashville.”

Lacy squealed then opened the door to the car. We both managed to get out without falling. Lacy snickered telling me “They want to get a statue made of Haley and worship it.” I shrugged, “I could probably snap them one.”

Lucas was clearly gob smacked. Haley was the best. I ran to him as best I could. I needed this. We needed this night to be normal, and my cousin delivered. I made a mental note to plan things like this for us all occasionally. I could coordinate with Dale. I could even plan things for them too.

Dylan managed to tell Lacy she looked good. Lacy said, “Evidently the fairy princess doesn’t do things halfway.” Dylan put his hand together in a prayer motion, “May she never change, or I’ll cut someone in half for changing her. Our special fun sized ninja fairy is perfect the way she is. I’ll wind up King Alpha Prick if anyone makes a move. I’ll do it.” I laughed, “I don’t think she’s going to change for anyone.” Dylan snorted, “True. I’ll still wind up King Alpha Prick about it. It’s such fun to set him loose on unsuspecting villagers.” We all laughed.

The limo driver cleared his throat, “Mr. Frost, Miss Lyons, your private movie theater showing is soon. We should get going.” Lacy squealed, “The fancy private theater?” The limo driver nodded. Lacy gave me a hug, “Have so much fun!” I smiled squeezing her hands, “You too.”

When they left, Lucas picked me up bridal style. He put me down once we got inside and his mouth was on mine. His hand ran into my slit, I couldn’t stop my moan. He pulled back, “You should pop us to Nashville before I rip this beautiful dress off you.” I shivered whispering, “I don’t know where to pop us to.”

Lucas took out his phone and showed me an address. He whispered in my ear, “There’s an alley beside this place. Pop us there. We can get a look at the place then decide what we want to do before our dinner on the boat. It’s at five thirty.” I nodded and popped.

Lucas took my hand praising, “Good job, baby girl.” We walked around the corner; and he took me up to the top floor.

He put a code into the door, and we stepped inside. My jaw dropped looking around. I asked, "Is she for real?" Lucas said, "I believe she is this is very nice."

Part of the original brick of the loft was still there. The kitchen had top of the line appliances. The living room was amazing with windows from almost the ceiling to floor. Lucas led me out to the deck that overlooked the river we were having our dinner cruise on. On the lower deck was a hot tub.

I bumped him with my hip, "We should use that tonight." Lucas nodded agreeing, "Whatever you want, baby girl." We walked back inside sitting on the couch. Lucas offered, "Haley suggested walking around the park, but I think we are both a little fancy for it. Growing up in Faerie must have made her think this is park walking attire." We both laughed.

I asked, "What about touring the grand ole opry?" Lucas gave me a kiss. He growled pulling back, "You have no idea how hard this is for me right now." I looked down at the massive bulge in his pants teasing, "I think I can clearly see that."

He took several deep breaths then led me downstairs. Lucas said, "I'll call us a cab." A man asked, "Mr. Lyons?" Lucas turned apprehensively, "Yes?" The man was standing in front of a horse drawn carriage. She didn't. Oh my gosh, she didn't. The man smiled, "This is a weird one, but it's been requested I say 'Bibbidi Bobbidi Boo.' I'm your transportation for the evening." I yelled "No way! A horse drawn carriage?" He smiled, "Mrs. Connors seemed to think you would both enjoy it."

Lucas smiled and guided me into the carriage. The Coachman smiled, "I have blankets for after your dinner should they be necessary." I smiled asking, "Can we do the park now?" Lucas nodded and told the coachmen our plan.

He took off. Several people along the way smiled and waved at us as we went by. The coachman spoke after what felt like minutes, "I'll head towards the General Jackson. You all need to get onboard." Lucas nodded and held me close. I

smiled admitting, "I needed this." Lucas agreed, "We both did."

Once we arrived at the dock he helped me down, and we walked aboard the boat. Several women came over inquiring where I got my dress. I admitted, "My cousin got it for me. I have no idea where it came from." They smiled, "I wish she'd gotten mine; you look stunning." I smiled thanking them.

Eventually, Lucas led us to the deck where our seats were. He reached under his seat and pulled out an envelope. It was a clue. I laughed, "How did you know where it was?" Lucas said, "The captain told me when we got on onboard. I'll open it later."

It was a three-course meal with an orchestra playing and occasionally there were dancers. They had some comedy thrown in there as well. Lucas let me have some wine with dinner, but not too much since we were among humans. It was so much fun.

When we left it was late, but our coachman was waiting. I asked, "Can you take us to the Legendairy Milkshake Bar? I've always wanted to try their milkshakes." The coachman answered tipping his hat, "Your wish is my command, milady." Lucas snuggled with me.

When we arrived, he got out and placed our orders. He came back with them, and we cuddled under the blanket drinking them. Lucas said, "They are really good." I asked, "Have you had them before?" Lucas nodded, "I have. Where to next?" I snuggled into him, "Let's go back to the loft." He nodded and gave the coachman a tip once we'd arrived.

He led me upstairs. I snapped when we walked in smiling as the slow music played. I asked, "Dance with me?" He quickly agreed, "I'll do anything for you, baby girl." He took me into his arms. I wasn't surprised at all that Lucas knew how to dance.

I laughed as he spun and twirled me around the living room. When the song ended, I kissed him. His hands trailed on the outside of the dress. To my surprise, he pulled back instead

of continuing. He whispered, "I can't... I can't stop myself. We need to pause."

I kissed him again, then bit his ear lobe lightly telling him, "I don't want you to stop." He growled and carried me to the bedroom. He threw me on the bed and attacked my lips. I took his suit coat off him then decided that was too much effort. I snapped him naked.

He used the slit in my dress to reach my entrance with his fingers. I moaned when he entered me. He gave me a few pumps with his fingers and pulled them out. His head disappeared under my dress. His mouth was on me in record time. I was writhing against him, so he gripped my hips tightly with his hands to keep me in place. I screamed his name falling apart under his skillful tongue.

I breathless told him, "Lucas, I need you in me now." Lucas came back out from my dress, "Do you?" I was shaking, "Yes." He pulled me off the bed and unzipped my dress. He peeled me out of it slowly. He growled, "No bra?" I shook my head, "Built in. All the girls were."

Lucas didn't respond, he just took my nipple in his mouth. His finger entered me again slowly. I whispered, "Lucas." He linked me, "I'm going to take my time. I'm going to worship your body." I was shivering and not from the cold.

I tried again, "Lucas Lyons, I need you inside me." He kissed me slowly, "You want me inside you. You'll need it before I give you what you want." I whimpered and he lightly spanked me. He kissed me from my neck down to my center again. He lightly kissed it then continued down my leg. He came back up and made me come again with his mouth.

He commanded, "Turn around." I quickly obeyed. He bent me over the bed and gave me a few spankings. He ordered, "Crawl onto the bed." I replied, "Yes, Alpha," hoping that would get me what I wanted while I did as he told me to.

He gave his next command, "Conjure me jasmine oil." I quickly followed the instructions. I felt it drip onto my back. His powerful hands rubbed the oil all over my backside. Then his talented hands began to massage my neck, shoulders, and

back. I moaned in pleasure. He thoroughly massaged every inch of my back then whispered in my ear, "Turn over."

I complied and he did the same to my front. His fingers played with my clit again before entering me. I whimpered, "Lucas." He slowly moved his fingers licking my neck, "You taste so good, baby girl. Do you have any idea what you do to me?" I'd had enough playing. I demanded, "Show me, Alpha. What do I do to you?" He grabbed my hand and put it on himself. He spoke roughly, "This. You do this to me. All the time. Every moment I think of you, all night long I've wanted to be inside you." I ordered, "Take what you want, then. I'm yours."

He growled and he finally entered me. I cried out, "Oh my gosh, Lucas!" We moved in a slow rhythm together. I came countless times before he finally did. We lay, breathing heavily before I got up swaying my butt as I walked away.

Lucas growled, "Where are you going?" I pointed towards my body, "I have oil all over me." He raised an eyebrow, "Emmaline." I shrugged, "I need to wash off." I bit my lip and popped into the shower. I turned it on and counted with my fingers when he growled. I only counted to two before he was behind me in seconds. He murmured, "Bad move, my fairy."

I smirked and popped to the other side of the shower. He growled again. I teased him for several minutes until I let him catch me. He entered me quickly, roughly demanding, "No witty remark now, baby girl?" I moaned, "Lucas." He growled and backed me into the wall of the shower. He let Dominic take over and pounded me into the wall. I screamed his name until my voice was hoarse. He roared my name when he came.

Afterwards, we washed each other and he kissed the top of my head. He admitted, "I missed doing this for you." I smiled, "I actually missed it too." He carried me to bed. I smirked and snapped us into swim attire, then popped to the hot tub.

Lucas came outside growling and hopped into the hot tub. He asked, "Aren't you tired?" I responded, "Not yet." He sat down and I immediately straddled him. He stiffened, "Emmaline." I nuzzled his ear, "Lucas." I grinded against him

and he groaned. He mused, “What are you doing to me?” I laughed, “Isn’t it obvious? I must be doing it wrong.”

I snapped his swim trunks off, and they floated to the other side of the tub. I stated, “You played with me with your hands. I’m returning the favor.” I gripped him and began to move my hand. He instructed me on how he liked it, and I licked his mark. He stiffed, “I’m going to...” I dove under water taking him in my mouth as he shot his warm seed inside my mouth. Once he was done, I came back up. He smashed his lips onto mine, “You’re amazing.”

I smiled at him and after a while we got out of the hot tub. He discreetly put his swim trunks back on as I snapped us towels. Lucas smacked by butt. I playfully shoved him, “Race you back to the bedroom.” I took off running. I had just made it inside the door when he scooped me up into a fireman’s carry.

He spanked me and placed me on the couch. He slowly untied my top. He took my nipple in his mouth again as his hands untied my bottoms. I felt his finger in me seconds later. I arched my back off the couch. I laced my fingers with his hair trying to pull him closer. He flicked the nipple that wasn’t in his mouth, then pinched it. I scratched his back with my other hand. I came shortly after that.

He took his fingers out of me and licked his hand. He groaned, “You taste so fucking good.” He lowered his mouth to mine. I came up pushing his back against the couch. I snapped his swim trunks off, “I don’t know why you bothered to put those on.” He shrugged and I lowered myself on him.

I grabbed onto the back off the couch setting a fast pace. I screamed his name when his fingers started to play with my clit. He started coming off the couch as he thrust into me, groaning as he came. We held onto each other breathing hard. I rested my head on the crook of his neck. I couldn’t keep my eyes open any longer.

I woke up confused because my alarm hadn’t gone off, and Lucas wasn’t in bed. I sat up, “Lucas?” He walked around the corner with breakfast on a tray. He smiled, “It seems I was a

few seconds too late.” I smiled as he sat down, “What’s this?” He threw a dish towel over his shoulder, “This is eggs, bacon, and pancakes, with a side of fruit for my baby girl.”

I reached for the fork, and he smacked my hand. I glanced up in shock. He admonished, “I’m feeding you.” I nodded and he slowly fed me my food. I decided to make it hard for him by moaning and savoring my food. The bulge in his underwear was showing me how much I was getting to him.

I asked him, “Where’s your food?” He answered, “I ate as I cooked, but I have a special dessert in mind.” I laughed, “Oh yeah? What are we having?” He smiled, “Not we, just me.” I laughed as he cleared the tray. He laid me back down and spread my legs.

I gasped in surprise, “Lucas…” His tongue was on me. I clutched the sheets as he made me come repeatedly. Once I had climaxed for the sixth time he pulled back and licked his lips. He nipped my ear, “Yup, that hit the spot.” I laughed then kissed him, “You’re too much.” He stared lovingly into my eyes, “I love you so much.” I tapped his nose, “I love you too.” He pulled out a bag of clothes, “This was in the living room this morning.” I pulled out the card.

Emmaline,

Just in case you don’t want to wear your dress from last night. If you do by all means, work it!

FGM

I laughed and pulled out jeans for Lucas along with a t-shirt and tennis shoes. She had put yoga pants and a t-shirt in for me. I asked him, “Can we walk around for a bit before I pop us back?” Lucas nodded, “We can do whatever you want to do.” I smiled, grabbing his hand. I snapped us into our casual clothes.

We went into several shops. I'd even gotten myself some sparkly blue cowboy boots. We grabbed lunch at *Margaritaville* then headed back to the loft. We gathered up all our stuff, but I wasn't ready to go back yet. We watched a *Hallmark* movie that was on the television.

I sighed, "I guess we should get back to our real life or something." Lucas laughed, "I promise you that at least once a month, we will do something like this. We can have a regular date night once a week, whichever day you want." I smiled, "I don't need a date night once a week, just some nights where we spend time together." Lucas kissed me, "I love you so damn much." I smiled, "Good, because I love you too, and we are getting married in December." He briefly tickled me before asking, "It's so far away. Want to change the date?" I emphatically shook my head, "No." He fake pouted, "Fine."

We made out for a bit then he said, "Let's get back." We grabbed the stuff we'd packed, and I popped us back to the main room. Lacy was there with Debbie, Dale, and Dylan. She squealed, "Did you guys have so much fun? Never mind, I can smell you both all over each other."

I blushed but Lucas laughed. He teased her right back, "I smell you and my Beta all over each other all the time, but I never say anything. You have no idea the mental gymnastics that takes for me." Lacy laughed, "Oh, you!" She playfully smacked Lucas.

We all sat and had family time. I asked, "Debbie, are you excited about having another little boy running around?" Debbie smiled, "I really am. I think it's going to be such fun." I agreed, "It really will be!" Debbie added, "I will have a little one and grandpups running around together. I'm sure that won't be weird for them at all."

Dale spoke up, "It won't be because it will be their normal." She smiled, "We can't agree on the name." Dale groaned, "It doesn't have to be an L name, Debbie." Debbie sat up, "We already have Lucas and Lacy. It HAS to be an L name. Landon is a perfectly good name." Dale grumbled something about not having an L name.

Lucas linked me, “Landon will be my little brother’s name.” I pointed out, “They haven’t agreed yet.” Lucas just smiled, “It’s going to be Landon.” I laughed until Gemma announced dinner was ready. We all ate together.

A wave of tiredness hit me out of nowhere. I stood, “I’m going to nap.” Lucas frowned, “Are you alright?” I yawned, “I’m fine, just sleepy.” He nodded, “Alright.” I barely made it up the stairs to bed falling on my pillow.

I jolted awake feeling like I’d slept for hours. I didn’t recognize where I was. I called, “Lucas?” I stood, looking around. Did I go into the wrong room? I heard something clang together and whirled around. I saw chains on the bed.

A woman with wide eyes yelled, “Help me!” I quickly asked, “Who are you?” The girl shivered, “They took me to prove they could. I’m not going to make it.” I looked around, “You’re going to be fine! I’ll call my cousin, and she’ll help us.” The woman looked at me, “You can’t save me. Not even my mate could. They wanted to destroy him and they are going to win. He said he didn’t want me anymore. I realize he was protecting me, but he didn’t realize... and I didn’t tell him.”

What? I frowned, “Tell me how to help you.” She laughed, “You can’t help me. I’m already dead.” I let go of her hand stumbling backwards. I whispered, “What?” She rolled her eyes, “I’m trying to help you. You have to understand what they did to him when they killed me. He felt weak because he couldn’t protect me. He’s not a bad man.”

I asked, “Who? Who isn’t a bad man? What’s your name?” She smiled sadly, “My name was Millie. I love him so much. He doesn’t even know about our daughter. They had me so long I never got to tell him. She lives and you have to find her.”

My eyes widened, “Who is she? Who is he? Let me help you!” She demanded, “Find my daughter. I’ve seen her destiny; she’s meant for great things. Your friend Sam’s aunt and uncle will raise her. Promise me it will be done, fairy duchess.” I shook my head, “I can’t promise that. I don’t know

if they want a child. I don't even know how to find your child."

Millie smiled sadly, "You will. You will unite me and my mate. It is your destiny to bring mates together. Not usually in the way this will be done, but he's lost without me. Maybe if he knew about our daughter, he'd have a purpose. Fate robbed us of our time together, and you will give it back to us. Promise me!" She started to scream in pain.

I couldn't stand it. I yelled, "Fine! Gosh! FINE! I promise. I'll give your daughter to Sam's aunt and uncle!" She stopped screaming and smiled, "There's a traitor among you. He doesn't want to be one. My mate has his daughter. She was part of his pack, and he is keeping her hostage. He didn't used to be so cold. It's just because he lost me. When he felt the mate bond die, it broke him."

I angrily said, "If you don't tell me who you are talking about..." Millie laughed, "You'll what? Oh, that's right. You can't do anything about it. I made a deal with the actual devil to interrupt the magic placed on you tonight."

I groaned, "OH COME ON! What now?" Millie said, "I'm sorry. I'm just interrupting it. You'll be in the vision they want you to be soon. I just wanted you to understand him, and to help my daughter. Tell him Millie said it's enough. Maybe it will reach him. He always called me Millie."

I sighed, "It's a nickname? What's your real name then?" She smiled sadly, "Sadly, that's part of why he wants you so bad. My real name is Emmeline with three e's no a. One letter difference in how we spell our names, but he wants you all the same. I'm sorry."

I was stunned, "You're talking about Alpha Hammond? You are Alpha Hammond's mate?" She laughed, "I called him Charlie. No one else did though. I miss him. You'll bring him to me soon, right?" I felt cold. I whispered, "You're saying I'm going to kill him?"

She nodded, "You could be the one to end him. Sometimes your cousin takes the burden in the paths I saw Death deciding between. As much as I love him, he deserves it. I can't hold

onto the connection any longer. Remember he runs with witches, that's my fault too. Goodbye and good luck, Emmaline." Great.

She desperately yelled, "Remember you fairy promised to bring my daughter to where she is supposed to be. Charlie will give you the clue you need to find her." I groaned, "I can probably just pop to her if you'd tell me her name." Millie smiled, "You probably can. I named her Charlie Rose." I nodded, "I'll find her." Millie disappeared.

I heard Alpha Hammond's voice, "There you are. Later than expected, but here you are all the same." The room had changed. I groaned, "First an illusion and now you're having a plane trance cast. How much money do you have?" Alpha Hammond growled.

Before I could blink, he smacked me. Blood trickled out of my mouth. He asked, "How do you know this isn't real? How did you know you were in an illusion? You have no witch blood." I laughed, "I'm not answering your questions, Charlie." He froze for several seconds then his hands clutched my throat. I couldn't breathe.

He screamed, "HOW DO YOU KNOW THAT NAME?" I brought my elbow down on the inside of his. His hold loosened and I popped away from him. I answered, "Millie told me." He growled, "Don't say her name!" I asked, "Why not? Her name is the same as mine after all."

I felt someone grab my shoulders, but it wasn't Alpha Hammond. I felt the tingles on my skin. I whispered, "Lucas." I closed my eyes briefly allowing myself that comfort.

I opened my eyes, "Your time is short, Charlie. What do you want?" Alpha Hammond growled, "My witches can keep you here." I laughed, "Your witches are not more powerful than mine." Alpha Hammond said, "The Forrester siblings. Why are they even here? Why do they protect you?" I panicked I couldn't lie, but then the evasion popped into my brain.

I told him, "I brought Ryan Bishop and his wick together. He is protective of me as the Soul Searcher." Mentally I added

and as his sister. Alpha Hammond cursed, “Shit! Make this easy for me. Come to me, and I won’t hurt anyone.”

I retorted, “Make this easy for me and remove the contract on Chelsea and me.” Alpha Hammond laughed, “Silly girl. I have nothing to do with the contract on Chelsea Hanes. I care nothing for Peter Kyle’s mate. His father upset someone who wants his line to die.” I snorted, “That’s working out really well for them.” Alpha Hammond shrugged, “I don’t care. How can you even feel Alpha Lucas?” I shrugged, “I’m sure it’s probably a fairy thing.”

Alpha Hammond threw a knife at me. I hit the floor. He growled, “I’ll pay you back for this! When I get my hands on you... you’ll pay!” I frowned then realized that’s what Bexley had done to him. The scar ran from the bottom of his eye to his jaw. Go Bexley.

I asked, “Is this what Millie would’ve wanted? She wouldn’t want this for you.” He threw a punch that I dodged. He screamed, “STOP SAYING HER NAME!” I sighed, “I’m sorry you are in pain without her.”

Alpha Hammond didn’t seem to notice the tears that escaped, “I’ll get you, Emmaline. The deaths from here on out are on you.” I shook my head, “No, if you kill anyone that’s on YOU. You won’t make me feel bad about it. I don’t even know how to find you, and we both know you won’t tell me.”

He frowned, “You’re fading.” I smiled, “As I said, my witches are stronger than yours.” He frowned, “You don’t even see the people I have watching you. Lucas is weak!” I yelled, “Lucas is stronger than you will EVER be! You lost your pack to us. We WILL defeat you.”

He lunged for me. Arms gripped me as I scratched and threw punches. I heard a curse, “EVIE, stop!” I opened my eyes and saw my siblings, Haley, Eric, Lucas, Dylan, Lacy, Dale, Debbie, and Logan staring at me worriedly.

I turned and gasped, “Lucas! I hit you! Your nose is bleeding!” He said, “It’s nothing. You’re bleeding. What happened?” I took a deep breath trying to stop my hands from shaking. Haley said, “Just give yourself a second. I’m going to

heal you and Lucas. Then we can talk, alright?" I nodded and she healed us both.

When she stepped back. I told them, "It was Alpha Hammond, but first I met his dead mate because she made a deal with the actual devil because somehow that's my life." Everyone gaped at me waiting for me to continue my story. I grabbed Haley, "I'll continue this, but Haley and I have a baby to save."

Before anyone could stop me, I popped us away thinking of Charlie Rose. I opened my eyes hearing hissing. Haley ordered, "Emmaline, get the baby. Now." I looked around and gulped. I asked, "Are these vampires?" Fangs clicked down. So that was a yes.

One licked his lips, "Yes little fairy. How kind of you to pop us dinner." I threw hail at the vampire about to put a cigarette out on Charlie Rose's arm. Haley called the wind and knocked them down. She told me, "Conjure the baby to you. We aren't faster than them. I tried but nothing happened. I yelled, "I can't do it!"

Haley conjured two stakes in her hands. She told me, "You can do this, trust your light!" She screamed and started to kill vampires. I focused on my light. Charlie squealed and appeared in my arms. The vampires were so focused on Haley they didn't notice what I'd done.

I squealed, "I did it!" Haley yelled, "Pop the HELL out of here now!" My eyes went wide, "Come with me! I won't leave you here." Haley killed another vampire and turned, "Babies come first, now go!" A vampire turned and lunged for me, hissing, "You won't make it out of Saint Louis alive!" I gasped and popped away. I heard Haley say, "The FUCK is going on between Tennessee and Missouri?"

I opened my eyes back in my room. Lucas was pacing. He was on me in a second, demanding, "Don't do that ever again." Eric growled, "Where's Haley?" I started to cry, "I didn't know that vampires had Charlie Rose."

Eric growled, "VAMPIRES?" Logan cursed, "Gunner track Haley's phone, now!" I said, "She's in Saint Louis." Eric

growled and we all heard a pop. Haley sounded jazzed, “MAN! Who’s up for round fucking two? I even got to kill a witch. Shady vampires and witch bitches hiding a baby who isn’t theirs are dead. I didn’t even pop into the situation Eric, so don’t you even THINK of giving me shit for it!”

Everyone turned to me, and all the blood drained from my face. I winced, “Before anyone yells at me, we need Sam’s aunt and uncle.” Lucas stared at me in bewilderment.

Haley stated, “Baby takes priority, my lion.” Lucas sighed, “Fine. I’ll link them.” He gave me a look that let me know I was in big trouble. I looked down at Charlie Rose and cooed at her. She was a beautiful baby. I told her, “You’re safe now, Charlie Rose.” She smiled at me. Everyone was probably pissed at me, but I’d do it again to save this baby.

Betrayed

Lucas was using all his restraint to resist carrying Emmaline inside to peel her out of her dress. Haley was one of a kind. Dylan linked me, “I will wind up and set King Alpha Prick loose on anyone who tries to change Haley. It’s so easy for me to do. He has such a hair pin trigger. I love her so much. Do you SEE Lacy in that dress?”

I had to agree, “I’ll dial his number or take you to him. My little sister looks all grown up and beautiful.” The limo driver got things moving. Dylan linked me, “The private theater? Lacy has wanted to go there since we were kids. Did you tell Haley?” I replied, “No, but Eric knows. I’m sure he told her.”

Dylan snorted, “I REFUSE to be thankful to King Alpha Prick. Haley is all knowing until proven otherwise. Don’t you even think of asking him either. It’s Schrodinger’s cat.” I rolled my eyes.

When they left Dominic growled at me. “I want to take mate right now.” I admitted, “So do I, but we have a date night to get to.” Dominic grumbled his displeasure. I decided to throw him a bone. I picked Emmaline up and carried her inside the house. I couldn’t stop myself from kissing her. Dominic purred, “Mate wants us too, make a move, human!” I growled at him, “She deserves to have a nice date.” Dominic growled, “MUST you make sense right now?”

It got us moving though. Emmaline popped us to our destination. I quickly lead her up to the loft. I was taken aback when I saw it. Haley had gone above and beyond. I smiled when I looked over at Emmaline. I was going to take this to heart. Emmaline loved this whole thing. I could do this for her occasionally. Especially since we didn’t need to drive or fly anywhere. She could pop us in and out. That would make it

easier since we did need to be there for our pack. A night away was doable.

We toured the loft, Emmaline practically salivated over the hot tub. I was determined that no matter how much growling Dominic did, we'd do whatever Emmaline wanted today. If she just wanted to go to bed after our date that's what would happen. I'd join her after a very long, cold shower on my part.

Looking at Emmaline's dress I had to wonder what Haley was thinking with her suggestion of touring the park here. Emmaline was wearing heels. She wouldn't want to walk around and get sweaty. I could get us a car to drive around.

A man with a black top hat called to us. I linked Eric, "Did your wife get us a horse drawn carriage?" Eric laughed, "Did she not mention that?" I snorted, "No. He said bibbidi bobbidi boo to us." Eric just replied laughing.

Horses didn't typically like wolves, but this one seemed fine with me. Haley's suggestion of the park made more sense given Emmaline's outfit with this added detail. I glared at several admirers throwing glances towards Emmaline. Our coachmen got us the General Jackson right on time. We really did need this. I made a mental note that as a couple we needed to escape the craziness sometimes, I was going to remember that.

As soon as we got on board the boat, Emmaline was swarmed with women asking about her dress. I heard my name called, "Mr. Lyons?" I turned and the captain smiled at me, "You look just like your picture. Your clue is underneath your seat for dinner." I asked, "Where was it originally?" He smiled, "I was just going to hand it to you. Mrs. Connors wanted to put it on our paddle wheel, but I told her that was not possible. I do not think that woman often hears the word impossible." I smiled, "She does not. She makes things happen."

The captain smiled, "Her husband is a lucky man then, as are you. Your fiancée is quite beautiful." I smiled back at Emmaline, "That she is. Thank you for the information." The

captain nodded, “Enjoy the dinner and the show.” I nodded to him as he walked away to greet other guests.

I turned as Dominic let a low growl out at several men. Two were even werewolves that immediately scattered. I couldn’t take my eyes off the way Emmaline’s ass looked in her dress. Haley was trying to kill me slowly with her fashion choices. The dress even had a slit this time, which meant she’d remembered our conversation in Faerie.

When we were seated, I pulled an envelope out from under the table. I felt a key inside and relaxed. This was finished. She’d given me the key to where my collection must be held. Thank god. I would look at it later. Right now, it was just about us. I didn’t watch a single moment of the performances. I was captivated by my mate. Her eyes sparkled with delight as she ate, drank, and took in the entertainment. It ended all too soon.

Once we got back into our carriage, she wanted to go get milkshakes. When we were back in the carriage, I asked where she wanted to go next. Maybe dancing? I’d have to keep her glued to my side. I was a little surprised she wanted to go back to the loft until I remembered she wanted to use the hot tub.

Dominic growled, “I want to get her out of that dress.” I sighed, “So do I, but we fucked up. This is her night.” Dominic mumbled, “You fucked up. I’m just along for the ride.” I rolled my eyes, “You didn’t offer a single alternative suggestion.” Dominic was quiet after that.

Once we got back, I paid the coachman. He assured me, “That’s not necessary, Mr. Lyons. I have already been paid.” I gave him the money, “I insist you take the tip. You made my fiancée so happy this evening.” The man nodded his thanks.

I took Emmaline upstairs. Dancing with her in the loft was much better than the club. When she kissed me, I barely managed to pull back. I was on the cusp of losing control to Dominic. Dominic huffed, “Blame the wolf, we’re easy targets. You want her too.” Before I could respond to him Emmaline told me she didn’t want me to stop.

Dominic said, “Green light. If you don’t take her right now, I’ll take control and lock you away all night long.” I growled, practically sprinting towards the bedroom carrying Emmaline in my arms. I teased her. Dominic growled, “Why aren’t we inside her yet?” I retorted, “We are taking our time.” Dominic grumbled until I finally pulled her dress off her. I was painfully hard realizing she hadn’t been wearing a bra all night. I was going to pleasure her all night long.

I wanted to give her a massage first. I took my time, loving the feel of her skin under my fingertips. Her arousal grew the longer I worked on her muscles. It was an intoxicating scent to me. Once I’d finished, I played with her some more. Tasting her skin; desire exploded within me.

After I put Emmaline’s hand on myself, I couldn’t control the need to be inside her. Dominic yelled, “FINALLY!” I ignored him; slowly building us to release. I was going to take her harder later, but this time I wanted to be sweet and tender.

Emmaline got up way too soon after we finished and began sashaying around wiggling her ass. She popped to the shower, and I let Dominic take over. Emmaline started popping all over the shower to get away from me. I hoped she knew what she was getting into. Dominic and I were both riled up.

When I caught her, I fucked her hard against the shower wall. She just screamed for more and Dominic willingly gave it to her. She could barely talk when we were done. Dominic was preening in delight. She popped away to the hot tub. Her actions in it were unexpected but welcomed.

When we got out Emmaline wanted to race for the bedroom. Dominic laughed, “Mate is so funny. We are much faster than she is.” I gave her a head start, and still had her the second she walked in the room. I threw her over my shoulder before laying her down on the couch. We spent the evening inside each other. After our last round, her breathing evened out. I chuckled, realizing she had fallen asleep.

I carried her to the bedroom, carefully laying her down on the bed after pulling back the covers for her. I cleaned us both off, before sliding in beside her. I turned her alarm off on her

phone. It was going to go off in three hours, and she needed more sleep than that. I pulled her to me kissing her forehead as I drifted off to sleep with her.

I woke up at eleven o'clock in the morning pleasantly surprised to see Emmaline still sleeping. I got up and walked into the kitchen. I saw a note on the counter.

Emmaline or My Lion,

I had the fridge stocked with food and conjured clothes just in case you wanted something comfy.

FGM

I smiled as I opened the refrigerator. I started the bacon and pancakes before throwing on the eggs. I ate the first batches of everything to make sure it tasted good, then got out a tray and prepared to feed Emmaline breakfast in bed. Just as I'd finished preparing her plate by adding in some fruit to eat, I heard her call my name.

I fed her and had my own Emmaline dessert. I was grateful Haley gave us this trip. We were back to normal. Before agreeing to walk around I linked my dad, "Emmaline and I are still here. Is everything ok?" My dad replied, "You know I used to run this pack, son. I can handle it while you have time with our Emmy." I teased, "Of course you can."

Emmaline's eyes sparkled in every story we went into. She debated buying some sparkly pair of boots until I told her to go for it. I took her to grab lunch before we headed back to the loft. I could feel her reluctance to go back. I led her to the couch and turned on the tv. We watched some cheesy movie as we snuggled on the couch. Once it was over, I promised her we could do this regularly.

Her response startled me somewhat. She didn't want anything fancy, just me. I had the money to give her whatever she wanted. The women I'd gone out with before or that I'd fucked had wanted the title and power that comes with my

position. My money definitely didn't hurt, but Emmaline didn't care. She just wanted my time.

Eventually, Emmaline popped us back to the main room of our home. Lacy was gushing about her date with Dylan. Dylan linked me, "Our fun sized ninja fairy is goddess. I've decided the fairies have the full-blooded fairy goddess, and a partial fairy goddess; it's obviously Haley."

I didn't want to talk about how we all smelled like each other. I put a lot of brain power every damn morning into not thinking about that when Dylan walked into my office reeking of my sister. We all sat down to discuss our dates.

I linked Dylan, "I'm guessing all is well. Keep in mind, I'm asking for G rated details. That's my baby sister." Dylan gleefully filled me in, "We are all good. I feel the need to point out she's a woman now. My woman and boy, does angry Lacy get it going..." I slammed our link shut and shivered.

I focused on the conversation in front of me. I linked my dad, "Why don't you like the name Landon?" My dad smirked, "It's fun to argue sometimes when it's all in good fun. Landon is a fine name." I asked, "So, my little brother's name is Landon?" My dad responded, "Of course it is. Look how happy she is." He looked at my mom with such love. I had to shake my head at the shenanigans.

Gemma came and announced dinner. We were mid meal when Emmaline almost dropped in her seat. I felt in my chest she suddenly felt so tired. I frowned as she walked away to go to bed. My mom laughed, "You tired her out, Lucas. You are aware she needs sleep, right?" I watched the stairs, "She slept until after eleven o'clock today. She normally gets up and going by four to train. She's never this tired."

Lacy bit her lip. I asked her, "What?" Lacy timidly asked, "Could she be pregnant or something?" I shook my head, "She's on birth control, and Haley would've told her."

I took out my phone to call Eric. He answered grunting, "Lucas, this has better be good." I quickly said, "I'm sorry to interrupt whatever it is I'm interrupting..." Dylan chimed in, "I'm not sorry, not even a little bit." Eric growled.

I shot Dylan a look then asked, “Can fairies get pregnant outside their concupiscence? Did Haley notice Emmaline glowing?” Eric sighed. Haley answered, “Hello, my lion. Those with supernatural mates who they share their light with cannot get pregnant outside their concupiscence from what Aiden and Marcious have found. Katie doesn’t have very much fairy blood, so she can. Emmaline wasn’t glowing the last time I saw her... Why? Did you mess up my damn near perfect fairy godmother date?”

I snorted, “No, she just slept in late today, and then almost fell asleep at the table just now. She feels exhausted in my chest. It was very sudden.” Haley was quiet then asked, “What did she eat?” I frowned, “What we all ate. Steak, mashed potatoes, and salad.” Haley questioned, “Who prepared it?”

I raised an eyebrow, “Our cook, Gemma. I trust her implicitly. She’s my Gamma’s mate.” Haley asked, “Does anyone else have access to the food?” I growled, “It’s in the pack house. She’s not sick, just tired.” Haley explained, “It’s rare for a fairy to be that tired that quickly out of seemingly nowhere. Especially after getting a lot of sleep.” I assured myself, “She’s fine. She’s upstairs sleeping.” Haley said, “Either you put a guard on your room my lion, or I’ll send one. This is not normal.”

I stared at the phone in shock. I linked Brad, “Get to the house, and guard my room.” I linked Dylan, “Get people on the border.” Dylan nodded. Lacy asked, “Wouldn’t we get tired too?” Haley said, “You aren’t susceptible to the same things as fairies. Just as if your food was spiked with wolfsbane or silver it wouldn’t affect Emmaline. If her food was laced with Iron or sangied it wouldn’t affect you.”

Lead hit my stomach. I asked, “Sangied? As in the plant, that knocks fairies unconscious, and makes them unable to wake up for a period of hours if not days. That’s not a rumor?” Haley replied, “No, it’s not. It can make us tired and susceptible to attack.” Eric added, “Call if you need us to come.”

I asked, “Haley, can you heal Emmaline?” Haley sighed, “She’s not actually injured. Had she ingested iron, yes, I could.

Right now, she's just tired. I can't heal that. At least, I don't think I can. I'll call Aiden and ask. Let us know if anything changes." We hung up.

I got up as Brad ran inside and went upstairs. I ordered, "Lacy, mom, go sit with Emmaline." They both nodded wide eyed. I ran to the pack house and banged on Gemma and Alex's door. He answered, "Lucas? What happened?" I said, "I need Gemma."

Gemma hurried to the door, "Lucas, what's wrong?" I questioned, "Who helped you prepare the food tonight?" Gemma frowned, "An Omega. I watched her; she didn't do anything wrong. Was the steak undercooked?" I said, "Haley Conners suspects Emmaline's food was laced with Sangied." Gemma gasped, "No! Is that even real?" I nodded, "It is."

Alex asked, "Who would do that?" I told him, "I don't know." I turned knowing who followed me, "Dylan, go over every moment with Gemma. Alex, pull the feeds. Someone did this. I'm going to call Dustin." Dylan nodded and began to walk through the meal preparation with Gemma.

I began to walk away then turned back, "Gemma." She looked at me. I assured her, "I know you had nothing to do with this. I just want you to know that I have absolute trust and faith in you." Gemma assured me, "None of my staff would do this, I swear that to you." I hoped she was right.

I called Dustin. He answered on the second ring, "Lucas? Is Evie ok?" I sighed, "She's not injured. Somehow her food got laced with Sangied, or Haley suspects it did." Dustin gasped, "I'm coming." I frowned, "You've heard of it." Dustin said, "Of course. Witches use it to incapacitate fairies. We have for centuries."

I was surprised, "Haley didn't mention that." Dustin said, "I doubt she knows. Fairies know they have a weakness for it, but she doesn't seem to hang around many witches on purpose. You need us because this means Alpha Hammond is likely coming."

I groaned, "Valerie is in heat which means Ryan can't leave her." Dustin sounded like he was running, "I know. Aubree

and I will be there shortly. I'll call Katie." Five minutes later a portal opened, and Logan, Katie, Benjamin, and Harper came through. Katie ran up to our room to see Emmaline.

Logan's eyes blazed, "If Hammond comes, he's a dead man." I sighed looking at the time. Dylan came out of the pack house and joined us. I told them all, "We need to set up a schedule. We are on high alert. Dustin has informed me that witches are aware of what Sangied does to a fairy, and they use it to their advantage not irregularly."

Dylan frowned, "There's no witch on the list Gemma gave to me." I sighed, "We have a traitor among us." Dylan growled, "I SHALL find this culprit who ruined the FGM date glow. They are on my shit list. They are a glow ruiner and they will suffer." Logan laughed.

I said, "Let's get to the office. We won't be caught unaware, but I won't have us all be exhausted when Hammond arrives." I texted Eric the update. A pop sounded and Eric and Haley were now in my office. Haley gave him a kiss on the cheek and popped away.

Eric told me, "She went to see Emmaline." I nodded as Dustin burst into my office with Aubree in tow. He kissed Aubree on the head, "Aubree, go check on Evie please." She nodded and made a beeline for the stairs. Dustin questioned, "What happened?" I admitted, "We must have a traitor to the pack." Dustin's eyes narrowed, "Then they will pay for doing this to my little sister."

Alex came in. By the look on his face, I knew it wasn't good. I asked, "Who?" Alex sighed, "Someone who knows about the camera's. After Gemma and her staff prepared the food, the feed was turned off for seven minutes, then back on. None of the other camera's caught even a shadow." I growled in anger.

I had to focus on what I could do right now. I made the schedule taking the first shift. Once mine ended Dylan said, "Go close those eyes of yours. We can't have your mate waking up and discovering you didn't get your beauty sleep. She might pop to Faerie in terror." I nodded.

Eric and Haley took my place. Haley smiled at me, “She’s alright, she’s just sleeping.” Dustin muttered, “For now.” Haley turned, “What do you mean?” Dustin said, “There are two reasons to do this.” Haley tilted her head, “I know that. To make her easier to take or kill. He wants to take her, not kill her.”

Dustin added, “Or to make her mentally susceptible.” I growled, “To another illusion?” Dustin shook his head, “No you have to be awake for that. I’m worried he’s going to take her to a trance plane. It’s expensive though, so it’s a long shot. He’s probably coming to try to get her when she can’t pop away.” I nodded, “We will be ready no matter what.” Dustin shook my hand, “We will.”

I stumbled upstairs to sleep beside Emmaline. I woke with a start four hours later only to find Emmaline was still asleep. I growled then headed downstairs. Gemma was in the kitchen. She assured me, “I did the shopping myself. No one has touched the food but me today.” I squeezed her hand gently, “Thank you, Gemma.” She started to cry, “I’m so sorry about this.” I told her, “It’s not your fault. We are supposed to be safe inside our territory among our pack.” I linked Alex, “Gemma needs you, she’s at my house.” He replied, “On my way.”

I ate my food then went out to get a report. Dylan was already there, “I know. You want to know things, but I have nothing. We have seen nothing.” Nick called before he could say anything else. I answered, “Nick.”

He sounded worried, “Lucas, our patrols have noticed your pack warriors running our border. What’s going on?” I explained the situation to him then apologized, “I’m sorry, I should’ve called.” Nick said, “Don’t worry about it. We will be on alert now as well.”

At noon Ryan called Dustin. Dustin answered, “Hi, Ryan.” Ryan sounded blissed out happy, “Where are you guys? Valerie’s heat ended thirty minutes ago. I texted you the all clear but didn’t hear back from either of you.”

Dustin explained, “We are in Blue Moon. Evie’s food was laced with Sangied.” Ryan yelled, “AND YOU DIDN’T CALL ME?” Dustin responded calmly, “You couldn’t have done anything that I’m not doing. Valerie needed you.” Ryan gritted out, “I’m taking Aubree’s car. Val’s still out, I’ll just put her in the car. I’m coming.” He hung up.

Eric commented, “Valerie will be asleep for at least six hours. A she wolf is exhausted when her heat ends.” Ryan had just arrived when terror gripped me. I went to my knees before I realized what it was. I yelled, “EMMALINE!”

I ran up the stairs faster than I had in my entire life. Lacy was shaking Emmaline demanding, “Wake up, Emmaline! WAKE UP!” Emmaline’s mouth was bleeding, and her lip was split. Her face was turning purple. She couldn’t breathe.

I yelled, “WHAT THE FUCK!” Haley, Eric, Dylan, my parents, Logan, and Emmaline’s siblings ran into the room. Ryan was incredulous, “He took her to a trance plane?” Dustin gulped while Katie started to cry. She told us, “We haven’t had a chance to get the right ingredients to counteract this yet. Some take days.”

Haley quickly asked, “Katie, what do you need?” Katie said, “Space unheard.” Haley chanted. Thankfully, Emmaline gasped for breath. Dominic took over and snarled, “I’ll kill him. I’ll RIP HIS THROAT OUT!” Eric put a hand on me, but he didn’t say anything. His eyes had gone black too.

Haley conjured Katie what she needed and the Bishop siblings got to work. Haley said, “Lucas, you should touch her. Her soul cannot be disconnected from you. She will know we are coming.” I didn’t need to be told twice. I gripped her shoulders assuring her, “We are coming, baby girl. We will get you out of this trance. I promise.”

She whispered my name. I cried into her hair, “I’m coming for you. Your siblings are going to bring you back to me.” I turned to Aubree, “How can he hurt her? Her body is here?” Aubree sighed, “Technically, she is here. He made her mental defenses weak so he could attack her mind. He’s in her head.

She's really strong mentally for it to take this long for the witches to penetrate her mind."

I growled, "WHY is she bleeding?" Aubree flinched, "He must have hit her." I growled, "So you're saying he could rape her in this plane trance place?" Dustin and Ryan hissed. Katie gripped Logan's hand and began to pale. Aubree had a few tears running down her cheeks as well. Aubree answered quietly, "Yes, he could. It's just as real to her as us standing here talking."

Haley snorted, "Then I can heal her." Dustin said, "Wait. He doesn't know we know yet, or that we have the supplies to get her out." Haley frowned, "Fine." I growled as Katie, Dustin and Ryan started chanting.

Aubree said, "I'm going to join them so we can break the connection faster." I barely nodded. I focused on Emmaline. Her eyes began to flutter. I yelled, "It's working! She's waking up."

They kept going and suddenly Emmaline was reaching out wildly. I grunted when she managed to punch me directly in the face. Eventually, she sat up and looked around. I felt her devastation and panic when she realized she'd hit me. I'd taken harder hits and could give a fuck less. I needed to know she was ok. I needed to know what happened to her.

The second Emmaline noticed Haley; she calmed down. Eric linked me, "As her cousin, Haley's presence calms Emmaline more than just being a fairy does. Apparently, it has to do with being her princess too." I nodded.

Haley healed both Emmaline and me. I was able to relax when Emmaline didn't have bruises on her throat or blood trickling down her face. I linked Eric, "She met his dead mate? WHAT is happening?" Eric shrugged, "I'm going to guess it's some weird fairy shit." I was inclined to agree.

Because I'd relaxed, I was a second too late trying to grab onto Emmaline when she popped herself and Haley out of the room. I yelled, "Come the fuck on!" Eric growled, "Agreed." Logan said, "That was a Haley move if I ever saw one." I growled, "Great! They are rubbing off on each other."

Eric growled angrily. I whirled to face him, “What?” He told me, “Haley felt slightly panicked, now she’s fighting.” I quickly said, “I’ll link Emmaline.” Eric shook his head, “Don’t. If they are fighting, they need to focus.”

I growled at him, and he met my stare. He linked me, “I’m right, Lucas. That distraction could cost them their lives and you know it. We don’t know what they are up against.” I paced the floor with Eric. Not even Dylan said a word.

Katie’s sobs echoed in the room as Logan held her to him. He pulled out his phone demanding, “Gunner, I need you to tell me where Haley is.” We heard Gunner sigh, “What did the Haley do now? I’m kind of busy.” We heard Harper say, “Come back to bed, Haley is fine! She feels victorious in the bond. Her wolf is in for celebratory sex. Cali and I want you back.”

We heard a pop, I turned to see Emmaline with a pup. I took a beat to adjust to how natural she looked with a pup in her arms. Dominic wanted to take her and put our pup in belly immediately. Eric voiced the fact that she came back alone. Shit.

Emmaline’s guilt hit my chest like a freight train when she said she didn’t know vampires had Charlie. Dominic commented, “The pups name must be Charlie.” Logan yelled at Gunner. Gunner replied, “I got it! I’ve got my laptop open. I’ll have her location in...” Haley popped into the room elated from her fight.

Eric kissed her hard. Gunner muttered, “She could not give us all heart attacks every damn day. I’m going to relieve my stress now. Goodbye, Logan. Tell Hales to call Harper, me, and Cali later.”

Emmaline said she needed Sam’s Aunt and Uncle. I had no clue what Thomas and Lynn had to do with this, but I linked Thomas, “I need you and Lynn in the main house, in my rooms. Right now.” Thomas replied, “I’ll grab Lynn, and we will be there shortly.” I didn’t reply.

I linked Dylan, “Keep the patrol’s running. Let the pups and she wolf’s resume their regular schedules.” Dylan

nodded, “Things are getting weird, and that’s coming from me. First, we had illusions and now plane trances... I DON’T EVEN KNOW WHAT THAT IS! I liked it better when we admired witches from afar, and they left us to our own business. My Beta text chat is activated. They are getting us all the answers.” I locked eyes with him, “Thanks, Dylan. I’m sure her siblings will explain, but...” Dylan snorted, “Yeah, but they are not Dylan or Dylan’s Beta think tank.” He wasn’t wrong.

I turned to Emmaline, “Thomas and Lynn are on the way. Explain. Whose pup is this?” Haley snapped a diaper bag full of things pups need. She cooed at the baby, “Let’s get you out of that dirty onesie.” She put a changing station down after pulling it from the bag.

All of us growled and she gasped in shock when she took off the onesie. There were burns all over the pup’s body. Haley’s eyes blazed with anger. Her tone was sweet when she cooed, “Don’t you worry, Charlie. Auntie Haley will fix this right now. No more pain for baby Charlie. The bad people are fucking dead too, so don’t you worry.” The pup giggled at her.

I linked Eric, “Who the hell would do that to a pup?” Eric replied, “Vampires and a witch evidently. You do realize that’s likely Alpha Hammond’s daughter, right?” I looked back at Emmaline admitting, “I was getting that sense, yes.” Eric was trying to reign in his fury as Haley healed the pup.

Eric linked me, “I say we go on a vampire and witch killing spree in Missouri. Are you in?” I winced, “We can’t declare war on Missouri.” Eric growled, “We can. They basically already did. This is twice now.”

I linked Dylan, “Get Jackson on the phone, and get him here. Maybe even Caleb. Bexley can bring them or something.” Dylan looked at Eric, “If he’s suggesting war; I hate to say it, but I agree with King Alpha Prick. You know I hate doing that, but this is twice. They are hurting pups now, that’s just low. Lacy is steaming mad.”

I sighed, “Get Jackson and Caleb here anyway.” Dylan nodded. Haley finished healing Charlie. Thomas and Lynn

walked in as Haley changed her diaper then put on a clean onesie. Lynn charged forward, “Thomas.... It’s... how is this possible?”

She took the pup from Haley and cooed at her, “I’ve seen you in my dreams little Charlie Rose. I’m here now, you are safe.” Thomas went over to his wife and put his arms around them. They already looked like a family.

Emmaline smiled, “Millie said you had to take her. She insisted that Charlie was yours.” Thomas cleared his throat asking, “Millie?” She nodded, “I don’t know her last name but oddly her name is my name with a letter difference.”

Dustin sucked in a breath as did Thomas. Dustin asked, “This is Emmeline Ryder’s daughter?” My eyes widened as I looked at Eric. Emmaline frowned, “I don’t know her last name.” Thomas asked, “She’s dead then? Emmeline would never give up her pup.”

I frowned this time, “You know her?” Thomas nodded, “We are related, on my mother’s side. I think she’s my third cousin or something.” Dustin tilted his head, “That’s why she wants you to have her then. You have witch blood.” Thomas shrugged, “Very little.” Ryan muttered, “Which is clearly enough.”

Emmaline commented, “She’s Alpha Hammond’s daughter too.” I groaned, “Why did Millie want you to bring her here? Hammond will attack us to get her back.” Emmaline shook her head, “He didn’t know Millie was pregnant. She said he rejected her before she could tell him. She was hurt, and then she got kidnapped. She realized he was trying to protect her, but it was too late.” So, she was able to be taken because she was weakened from the rejection and recovering. Damn.

Haley sighed, “If she was taken by vampires and gave birth.... They probably drained her. I’m guessing that wasn’t the plan, but the baby was with vampires. It stands to reason they drained Emmeline.”

Katie snorted, “Emmeline Ryder has a lot of enemies. She wasn’t the most liked person out there. She was really powerful though.” Thomas said, “She was bitter she couldn’t

find her wick or her birth parents. She channeled that into taking over covens. She has an adoptive sister who found her wick over a decade ago. Emmeline was happy for her, but it hurt her all the same. She couldn't stand to be around after that. Her sister's wick got sick, and Andie begged Emmeline to come home about five months ago."

I perked up, "An adopted sister? Named Andie...?" Dylan linked me, "It couldn't be that simple. Nothing is anymore." I looked at him, "We are owed a break." Thomas nodded, "I never met Andie or her mate, but I know he died. They had a son, but Andie lost it when her mate died. She left him with relatives somewhere."

I groaned, "So we have a partial witch, werewolf out there all alone somewhere?" Thomas shook his head, "The mate was a partial werewolf who didn't have a wolf himself. Andie's not a witch, you could call her a wiccan though. She just called her mate a wick because Emmeline did when they were kids."

Lynn said, "Charlie needs her sleep. We need to go get stuff for her." Haley handed her the diaper bag. I heard a pop. Thankfully, Bexley had brought Caleb and Jackson. Eric raised an eyebrow at me. Bexley smiled, "Aww, what a cutie. Haley linked me the situation. I'll conjure whatever you need for this little one at your cottage." They left together.

The second the door shut I lamented, "Emmaline, what were you thinking? You popped Haley and yourself straight into danger." Emmaline shuffled, "I didn't think vampires had Charlie. I promised Millie I'd get her baby to safety so she would stop screaming at me. She said we had an unwilling traitor among us."

Dylan linked me, "Could the weirdly spelled Emmeline named witch be helpful and give us a name? I'm betting no but hope springs eternal and all." I asked her out loud, "Who is the traitor?" Emmaline sighed, "She didn't say." Dylan grumbled, "Of course not. No one EVER helps me. Disrespectful and rude, that's what this is."

Ryan chimed in, “She wouldn’t. Emmeline Ryder was renowned for enjoying making people figure out things themselves. She would only give enough of the puzzle to get people on the right path. She thought if they were smart enough, they’d figure it out and if not; they’d die.”

Emmaline sighed, “Anyway, Alpha Hammond has someone’s daughter.” I growled interrupting, “No one in our pack is missing.” Emmaline shook her head, “She’s not in our pack. It’s someone from Hammond’s pack. Someone’s daughter from this pack was mated to someone in his. He is holding her hostage to make our pack member help him.” I growled, “It’s treason all the same.” Emmaline argued, “It’s for their daughter though, they are probably scared” I gave her a look and linked, “Not another word on the subject out loud.” She frowned at me but said nothing.

I speculated to the group, “In theory Alpha Hammond wanted Emmaline at first because I let Christy die. Alpha Hammond’s brother’s mate HAS to be Christy’s foster sister or whatever she calls herself, which is Andie. Andie was distraught over her mate’s death, then her foster sister’s subsequent death. She asked Hammond to avenge Christy. Hammond then meets Emmaline a few days after his mate died, because that pup is about a month old. Then he decides wants to replace his lost mate with mine because of her damn name.”

Dylan chimed in, “I would just like to say, I could’ve recapped this for everyone with pizzaz. Don’t worry, my memo will be entertaining the masses.” I continued, “Anyway, a member of my pack, instead of coming to me, is betraying us. Feeding Alpha Hammond information that could lead to their Luna being kidnapped. Oh, and let’s not forget they drugged their Luna. Did I miss anything?”

Dylan whispered, “Dramatic flair. I’ll fix it later, have no fear.” Eric said, “You missed that his pup, that he doesn’t know about, is here. Being raised by members of your pack.” I growled, “Wonderful.”

Dylan clapped, “I mean, it kind of is. It’s such a trump card. His mate didn’t even want him to raise his daughter. We

are superior in all ways. I'm just saying, that's either some petty mate revenge, or a sign. I choose a combination. It's petty but also a sign we are awesome."

Emmaline asked, "Drugged? Is that why I felt so tired?" I nodded, "Yes, you were drugged by one of our own. Our pack members know if they come to me with problems; I will help them. We could've solved this together. Instead, they chose to act against me."

Emmaline thought about it then asked, "Can't we ask Alpha Chase's brother, Alpha Cameron, who's missing? Didn't he take over Alpha Hammond's pack?" Dustin snorted, "If your cousin hadn't slaughtered everyone standing in her way that day, we might have already had an idea."

Eric growled at him. Haley popped and tackled Dustin to the ground. Logan, with eyes blazing gold, ripped her off Dustin. Haley yelled at him, "THEY HAD MY CHILDREN! AND MY MATE! What would you have done? My cousin Bexley was pretending to be Emmaline. She was, technically speaking, IN DANGER! Your brother killed twenty people because Valerie was dying, you fucking hypocrite!"

Logan dragged her out of the room. He spoke softly, "Hales, calm down!" She yelled, "CALM DOWN? CALM DOWN! When in the HISTORY of saying the words calm down has it worked?! NEVER! That's when. THAT ASS!" Logan agreed, "Yes, he's an ass. You did what you had to do that day, little sister." Their voices died down.

Dustin rubbed his face, "I didn't mean that she did anything wrong." Emmaline sighed, "It's a sore subject, Dusty." Dustin nodded, "I'll apologize to her." I looked over and spotted Dylan munching on popcorn.

I growled, "FOR GOD'S SAKE DYLAN! ENOUGH with the popcorn." Dylan shoveled more popcorn into his mouth, speaking with a mouthful, "I'll forgive you for this kerfuffle. Poor Alpha Sleep Tyrant is so tired, and he needs his beauty sleep. I warned you that you'd scare the villagers and your mate without said beauty sleep. 'Enough with the popcorn he says.' I NEED it for my show, and you know this. I didn't

even have to say any words to wind up King Alpha Prick over there. He's just waiting to be let go. I could get him going, but I haven't. Gosh, my restraint is legendary. I'm such a good person."

Dustin backtracked, "I was just saying Alpha Chase's brother might not know someone is missing because of the slaughter that occurred." Eric growled, "Haley wouldn't have hurt anyone who didn't come at her. They are in a transitional time, but if Alpha Cameron doesn't know already; he might have a traitor as well."

Eric strode over to Dustin and promptly punched him in the jaw. Dustin dropped like a rock, Eric growling at him, "Do not EVER insult my wife again, Dustin Bishop. She was protecting our pups and your sister." Dylan whispered, "Word to the wise, stay down. I just want to throw this out there... King Alpha Prick has NEVER punched me. You must learn the balance, young grasshoppers."

Emmaline ran over to her brother. Ryan sighed and helped him up. He told him, "Maybe the sarcasm isn't needed right now. Leave it to Dylan, let him get punched." Dylan crunched on his popcorn and tapped his hand like it was a microphone, "Is this thing on? I just said I've never been punched by King Alpha Prick. He is all twitterpated with love for me deep down. Plus, my sarcasm is on point and timed to perfection."

Eric linked me, "He also doesn't make Haley mad. She's pissed off. Warlocks push her buttons." I pointed out, "That's not Dustin's fault." Eric growled, "Blaming her, sarcastically or not is. We both know that wasn't sarcasm." I didn't have anything to say to that.

Dylan continued after eating more popcorn, "I don't blame people for this situation, or for protecting their families like you just did. I for one, worship at our very own fun sized ninja fairy's feet. I can't believe I have to say this again, but I'm with King Alpha Prick here. Who do you think you are? You just waltz in here and try to ruin my fairy show. You've run a main character off! I have not had enough sleep for this. Lucas should kick you out. My show is not on every day, and you're trying to RUIN it. I am filled with righteous indignation."

Emmaline blurted out, “Dusty didn’t mean it the way it sounded.” Eric deadpanned, “He did. He thinks it’s my wife’s fault that we didn’t know someone was taken from Alpha Hammond’s pack.” Dustin sighed, “I mean... No... I guess it’s not her fault, but he’s right Evie. I meant it when I said it. Albeit sarcastically, but still.”

Emmaline said, “You can’t blame her even sarcastically. Alpha Hammond would’ve had me already if not for Haley.” We all turned to her, and she sighed continuing, “Without her plan, I’d have gone to him all by myself if I saw that text and picture that he had Lucas. I’d have gone to save him.”

I growled. Dominic told me, “Mate is not allowed to be in danger to save us.” I said, “I agree, Dominic.” Dustin sighed. Haley and Logan walked back in. Eric pulled Haley into his arms.

Dustin took a deep breath, “I’m sorry, Princess Haley. I’m just so damn tired of this guy being ahead of us.” Haley raised an eyebrow. Dylan linked, “She’s choosing her words. I bet they will cut him at the knees metaphorically.

Before she could answer, Lacy said, “But he’s not anymore. We have all these clues from Emmaline’s weird conversation with his dead mate. Besides, don’t tell me you all don’t think he’s going to attack at my wedding.”

Dylan linked, “DANG NABIT! Foiled by my one true love. We may never hear our fun sized ninja fairy’s speech. Tis a sad day in these lands.” Everyone but Dylan, Haley, and Emmaline turned to Lacy with our jaws on the floor.

Lacy looked at me, “Come on now, you didn’t think I’d figure that out? What am I, new? It’s the best time for him to attack. We have a traitor in our pack. Alpha Hammond knows the date we are getting married. Even if he didn’t have a source in our pack, he could find out. Dylan and I talked about it being the most likely scenario. So, I know I’m right.”

I linked Dylan, “Thanks for the heads up.” He replied, “Hey, she brought it up on our big date. We theorized. I planned. It was a whole thing. We are an adorable Beta Male and Female couple. Then this happened. I’m so very tired, but

I have plans written down. Plans on plans on plans.” Of course, he did.

My mom stomped her foot, “DALE LYONS! NOTHING will ruin our baby girl’s special day. Do you understand me?” My dad sighed, “Some days I just don’t know what you want from me, woman. We are trying to locate him, and we can’t. He’s hidden by witch magic, which is probably his dead mate’s coven. They aren’t some puny little coven; they are powerful witches. Lacy is right. It makes the most sense for him to attack at their wedding.” My mom stuck her finger in his face, “Then you stop him.” She stormed out of the room.

Emmaline asked, “Why would they help him if he rejected her?” Dustin sighed, “They might not know. Being rejected is typically embarrassing. Emmeline might have gone off on her own to recover and lick her wounds. Then she was kidnapped.”

Haley asked, “Why would she lick her wounds? Did he hurt her? I mean, he rejected her but to cause wounds; that’s to his mate? A werewolf? Plus, doesn’t everyone know licking wounds could lead to an infection?” Dylan laughed, “Yes, they do. How very silly of the witch.” Dustin added, “It’s a saying.” Haley muttered, “A stupid fucking infection inducing saying.”

I redirected, “Back to your wedding, Lacy Loo. I’ll make sure it happens.” Lacy waved her hand, “It’s not like he’s going to do it during our mating ceremony when everyone’s sober. It’s the reception I just had to have.”

Dylan hugged Lacy, “I’ll do everything I can to make sure you get everything you want on our oh so special Dylan and Lacy day.” Lacy shrugged, “I mean Alpha Hammond dying at my wedding would make it memorable. No one would ever forget about our wedding. It would be THE talk of the supernatural world.” Dylan laughed.

Emmaline stiffened and her dread filled me. She began to pale. Haley and Eric glanced at her. I asked, “Baby girl? What’s wrong?” Emmaline quietly said, “Millie said I would reunite her and Charlie.” Dylan laughed, “She called Charles Hammond, Charlie? I’m sad we never met this woman, that’s

beautiful. A certain someone, named Claudzilla, called him Charlie once. Does anyone want to guess what happened?"

Ryan spoke, "You're really not going to be too sad you didn't meet her. She was a piece of work." Dylan shrugged, "No one wants the story? UGH! I am SO under appreciated. I see you looking curious over there fun sized ninja fairy. I'll send you a glorious memo of said story. I got you; we are the fun ones."

Dylan turned to Ryan, "Her being a piece of work is not surprising. Obviously, her mate is too. Hence our current dilemma. Alpha Hammond is trying to ruin Dylan and Lacy day. This upsets Lacy which means serious Dylan has to rise again. For this, I'll crush Alpha Hammond. Serious Dylan has been around so much lately. Someone mention this to my dad. He'll be ever so sad he missed it. The man tried to make me be serious all the time. He's missing his shining moment. Oh well, I bet he'll be green with envy when he finds out. Will he come home? Nope, but he'll still be green. Which sparks joy for Dylan. Yes, it does." I looked at my dad who winced.

I turned to face Emmaline. She was still pale. I took her hands and asked softly, "Millie said you were going to kill him?" Emmaline nodded sadly. I disagreed, "No... no, baby girl. I won't let him get close enough for you to kill him. I will kill him. Ok? You don't have to do that." Emmaline shrugged.

Haley encouraged her, "I have absolute faith in you, Emmaline. You can and will do what needs to be done. Don't feel bad for one second about ending his wretched life. He's coming for you and your friends and family. He dares to try to ruin Lacy and Dylan's wedding. Take his ass down if you have the opening. Everyone here would do the same damn thing." Emmaline nodded.

I linked Eric. "No fucking way. He's not getting close enough for her to kill." Eric sighed, "I hate to point out she can pop wherever she wants." Dylan said out loud, "Don't worry yourself, little Luna. If I get a chance, he's done for. Honestly, thinking of ruining Dylan and Lacy day. It only comes but once in our lives. Then we only celebrate with each other. After everything I've done for all the people around here; he

wants to mess with my mate's perfect day. Serious Dylan is on the prowl and he's angry. Angry Serious Dylan. Oh god, he's getting more adjectives. HE IS SO SERIOUS! IT'S MADNESS." Lacy pulled him into a hug.

Emmaline said, "Alpha Hammond said he didn't put the contract out on Chelsea. It's someone who Alpha Kyle upset. He wants their line to die out." I groaned, "I'll call him." Jackson snorted, "Chelsea is pregnant with his grandpup and Peter isn't an only child. Whoever put the contract out on Chelsea isn't very smart."

I looked at Eric, "Who could that be? It won't be on our list of who was upset with me." Eric frowned, "Caleb and I have been looking into people upset with Alpha Kyle. He honestly hasn't done anything that would warrant a contract on his son's mate. I have a theory, but no proof." I knew he wouldn't say what it was then. Dylan whispered, "I'll expect my super-secret memo, Beta Caleb. Mums the word." Caleb laughed.

I said, "Let's go to the office and brainstorm." Haley asked, "The fuck is that? Your brain shouldn't storm anywhere. That sounds painful." Emmaline laughed, "He means they want to theorize." I said, "With both of you." Emmaline looked surprised I was including her. I had promised to do better at that. Besides, at the moment I couldn't let her out of my sight.

Once we settled in the office, I called Nick. I let him know what happened on our end, and what we'd learned. He was not happy, but Beta McAlister had already been pulling threats on just them. Peter was irate and had doubled Chelsea's security.

We reviewed Dylan's plan for his and Lacy's wedding. Eric was going to have warriors stationed and hidden on our border. More were going to be in the main house. Lacy was fine letting her wedding reception be bait. Peter and Drake were apprehensive since Chelsea and Sam couldn't leave without raising suspicion. Emmaline and Haley offered to pop them out when things went south. We called our allies that were attending the wedding to let them know the situation. We'd have our pack well-guarded.

Once those calls were finished Logan looked at Katie. He simply said, "Haley." Haley sighed, "Fine." Logan smiled at her. Katie asked, "Logan, what was that?" Logan answered, "You'll be getting popped out when things go down with Emmaline and Chelsea."

Dustin interjected, "Can someone pop Aubree too?" Emmaline volunteered, "I will." Aubree looked at Katie and said, "It's about the babies. I would be the first to argue with them if it wasn't." Katie sighed, "Fine." Emmaline rubbed Katie's arm.

Logan teased, "I'm glad you can be reasonable." Katie said, "See what communication gets you, Logan Cambridge? You didn't suggest I miss my friend's wedding, and we all arrived in a happy place." Logan said, "Not quite happy, but not upset." Katie made a face at him.

I linked Dylan, "Call Alpha Cameron. I'd imagine this is someone's daughter who grew up in our pack and met their mate in his." Dylan replied, "I pulled our files. We have fifteen women who could fit the bill." I sighed, "That's better than what we had before. Not much, but it's something." Dylan nodded.

I took Emmaline to my car. She asked, "Where are we going? We didn't even say goodbye." I didn't say anything. I couldn't. She had been hurt in our home. That was unacceptable. She popped out without me, and into serious danger. I stopped at a sandwich shop. I had her order what she wanted and drove back to the house. I told her, "Pop us to your sanctuary or your treehouse it's your choice." She looked at me then agreed, "Alright."

She popped us to her treehouse. I looked around, "It's nice." We ate in silence until Emmaline asked, "What's going on? I don't like silent, brooding Lucas." I tilted my head, "Don't you? You popped out taking yourself and your cousin into an incredibly dangerous situation."

Emmaline put her food down, "I didn't go alone, and I didn't realize vampires had Charlie Rose. I obviously wouldn't have done that if I'd known." I sighed, "Emmaline, take me,

Brad, Dylan, My dad... a wolf. Take any wolf with you. You're doing remarkably with your powers, but you haven't been training very long. Do you have any idea how worried Eric and I were?"

Emmaline raised an eyebrow countering, "Probably as worried as Haley and I were when you let yourself get captured." I stood, "I apologized for not including you in that conversation. You can't just go off into danger without planning." Emmaline stood too, "You do. There was a baby involved. I couldn't just leave Charlie. I fairy promised, and I took Haley." I growled, "Haley is a good start, but take a wolf next time too."

Emmaline crossed her arms, "Because Haley and I didn't handle it?" I growled, "You act like I can't feel you. You were scared. Haley made you leave her behind, and you felt extreme guilt when you came back." Emmaline teared up, "I didn't want to leave her, but I had Charlie. She told me to go."

I softened my tone, "I know why she told you to go." Emmaline pouted, "Haley can handle herself. You guys don't give us enough credit." I groaned, "It has NOTHING to do with credit. Haley is a killing machine. But waving two royal fairies' in front of a vampire is insane. They are faster than you and physically stronger. You didn't even have fucking stakes on you."

Emmaline started to cry, "I know you're right, ok? I never meant to put us in danger. I thought with both of us going we'd have Charlie and be back soon. It was so scary. Their fangs all came down, and Haley went all ninja assassin. Then she had me leave her behind. I can't believe I did that."

I walked over to her taking her in my arms, admitting, "I felt so useless to you. They drugged you in our home. Then they had you in some sort of trance plane or whatever your brother called it. Then you pop out without me! Just take me with you, baby girl. Wherever you go, I go. Haley was protecting you and Charlie. You protected Charlie too. Regardless of who her parents are biologically, she's just a pup." Emmaline looked up, "I understand. If I can't take you,

I'll take a wolf. I never meant to put Haley and I in danger like that."

A knot released in my gut, and I kissed her. I was about to take it further when Dylan linked me, "We have a witch at the front door. An emissary she says. I think I should let Fang have her, I don't like her." I groaned, "Stay here. There's a witch at the front door." Emmaline said, "You can't be the lone hero if I can't. We do this together, or next time I stick with taking Haley alone." I growled, "Pop us back then."

Emmaline popped us beside Dylan. Katie was glaring daggers at the witch in question. Haley was twirling her swords around. The witch was visibly paling as she watched. I commanded her attention, "If you are here on behalf of Alpha Hammond, you have made a grave mistake. He's being hunted by the werewolf council, and I am under no obligation to allow an emissary to live."

Emmaline linked me, "She's feeling deceitful, she's going to lie to us." I linked Eric, "Haley needs to do her thing. Emmaline says the witch feels deceitful." Emmaline stiffened beside me when the girl said, "You don't recognize me, Alpha Lucas? I'm sad."

Emmaline released an impressive growl. I turned to her in shock. She popped next to the girl and punched her in the face. I stood, gob smacked, while Haley started to laugh. I started to move forward, but Dylan pushed me backwards. He chastised me, "You don't break up a girl fight! What the HELL are you doing? You would be LOST without me, adrift in the sea with no purpose. Just let this play out."

I glared at him, "I'm protecting your Luna. You remember we had a pack meeting about the guys standing around to watch." Dylan snorted, "This is different. The witch needs protecting, not Emmaline. I don't want your or me to get hit with hail. You're welcome. I know, I'm such a good friend." He threw more popcorn in his mouth.

He was right, Emmaline was kicking the witch's ass. The witch tried to use magic but Emmaline encased her hands in ice. She screamed in pain when Emmaline headbutted her,

falling to the ground as she shrieked Emmaline hissed, “Keep your lips on your own man, bitch.”

I was confused. I assured my mate, “Emmaline, I’ve never seen her.” Haley said, “I actually know this one! Pick me!” I asked, “You know what?” Haley laughed, “That’s the bitch that was making out with the illusion version of Lucas. Right, cousin?”

Emmaline looked down at the witch hissing, “Bitch!” Haley smiled, “I’m so fucking right.” I turned Emmaline to face me. I rubbed her face until she looked at me. I told her, “I didn’t actually kiss her, baby girl.” Emmaline yanked me into a kiss.

Dylan groaned, “I don’t need to see that.” I heard Dylan grunt in pain. Haley laughed, “Not a good comment, my friend Dylan. My cousin is upset.” Dylan pouted, “I gathered that since I got pelted with hail for a mere comment. I’m insulted. That witch should get pelted with hail. She’s bad! I knew I should’ve let Fang have her. I should always go with my first instinct. I know this. I’m disappointed in myself.”

Emmaline popped us upstairs and snapped our clothes off. She declared, “You’re mine, Lucas!” I nodded, unable to do anything else. Emmaline pushed me back onto the couch with force. She bit my lip hard and slid down onto me.

I assured her, “Baby girl, I’m yours.” She rode me and bit my neck demanding, “Say it louder, Lucas.” I growled, “I’m yours.” She bit my mark hard making me yell, “FUCK! I’M YOURS!” We both came violently.

Emmaline started crying. I pulled back, “Baby girl? Please don’t cry.” She couldn’t stop, “It hurts. I know it wasn’t you, but I just keep seeing you two together.” I closed my eyes. How do I apologize for not kissing someone?

I asked, “What do you want me to do?” Emmaline sniffled, “Kill her?” I laughed, “That’s easily done. I’m not leaving her in the dungeons as some sort of sleeper.” Emmaline wiped her tears away as I assured her, “I want you, and you alone. I would never kiss anyone else.” She laughed and playfully

pushed my shoulder, “You better not.” She snapped us clothes and popped us back downstairs.

Eric winked at me. The witch asked, “Can you get me some ice, Alpha Lucas? The hospitality around here leaves something to be desired.” Haley rolled her eyes muttering, “Witch bitch.” I linked Eric, “I see Haley did some charms.” The witch had warts on her face and some bruising she didn’t before we went upstairs. Eric nodded, “I did stop her from killing the witch, you’re welcome. It took some effort on my part. Particularly when Dylan was all for it.”

Emmaline spat out, “No, he can’t. I’d be glad to give you some if you keep talking. Suck it up, buttercup.” Haley lost it laughing hysterically along with Katie. Katie threw in, “Yeah toughen up, rub some dirt in it. Weren’t you just saying it didn’t hurt that bad?” Haley said, “Exactly, after all it was just two fairies that kicked your ass, right?”

The witch looked at Haley asking, “Who are you? You didn’t even say anything before you hit me.” Haley retorted, “Someone who doesn’t have to answer your fucking questions, that’s who I fucking am.” Eric growled at the witch. I linked him, “Just a fairy?” Eric nodded, “The witch was playing off her injuries saying they didn’t hurt, and that Emmaline and Haley were just a fairies. It apparently didn’t hurt that bad.” I asked, “Is Haley ready to go with her truth thing?” He nodded.

I turned to the witch. “What are you doing here?” The witch gritted her teeth, “My mental defenses are strong.” Haley smirked, “Good.” Eric linked me, “She’s trying to block Haley. She’s not through yet, but she will get there. I actually think she could be in by now. Apparently, it hurts when you break down mental defenses.” I nodded.

The witch rubbed her head. She spoke through clenched teeth, “I want peace. I lied to Alpha Hammond saying I’d be his emissary. I really came to request to join Dustin Bishop’s coven.” Emmaline snorted, “Liar.”

The witch glared at her, “Just because you can’t keep your man satisfied...” Emmaline attacked her before I could hold her back. I threw my hands in the air, “Great!” I turned around

and asked, “Dad, how does one apologize for not cheating on their mate? Like what flower says, baby girl, I’m sorry a witch made you see me kiss someone who wasn’t me, but you thought it was me.”

Ryan was amused, “She didn’t think it was you.” I said, “Ok, someone who looked like me.” My dad laughed, “Roses and chocolate are the best I’ve got, throw in some wine. Your mother didn’t speak to me for a week once because of something that happened in a dream. I had no clue why she was mad at me for five days, until she yelled that I did something in her dream. You could’ve knocked me over with a feather.”

Dylan was hopping around, “Yeah! What a jab and cross! Get her, Emmaline! Alex is getting the good whiskey for his training classes. He’s doing the lord’s work.” I linked him, “Could you enjoy this less? We will never get answers at this point.” Dylan cheered when Emmaline headbutted the girl again.

I tried to calm her down, “Baby girl, let’s try to get answers.” Emmaline whipped her head towards me angrily, “You’re taking her side?” My dad linked me, “Son, that’s a trap.” I quickly disagreed, “No, not on her side at all. Once we have the answers we want, you can have at her.”

Emmaline took a deep breath and sat on the couch in a huff crossing her arms, “Fine, but if that bitch makes one more nasty comment, I’m drowning her.” I just nodded. Eric linked me, “Our women turn vicious when it involves us.” I replied, “Does it have to be so hot?” Eric said, “Evidently.”

I linked Dylan, “Help the witch to a chair.” Dylan answered, “Why don’t you help her? I don’t like her and I’m eating my popcorn while watching my show in fascination. You do not appreciate my show enough or the love I have for it.” I snarked, “Besides the fact that I’m your Alpha and I told you to do it? Emmaline might just kill her if I touch her. Then she’d accuse me of defending said witch, whose name I don’t even know.”

Dylan conceded, “Fair point. It would put a damper on my show if my Luna was more upset with you. She could pop away and that would be a travesty. I actually don’t know the witches name yet. Haley monopolized all her time kicking her ass. It was glorious.”

Dylan picked the witch up. Emmaline snapped, “Put her in the folding chair, Dylan. There’s no need for her blood to infect the furniture. Who knows what STD she has?” The witch hissed, “I just want to help you.” Emmaline sneered, “Liar.” The witch looked at me, “Alpha Lucas please, I just want to offer you information. In exchange I want to live in the area.”

Emmaline commented, “That’s a partial lie.” Emmaline looked at Haley as the witch rubbed her head cringing in pain. Haley nodded. Emmaline stood questioning, “You want to cause Lucas and I problems, don’t you? That’s why you’re really here.” The witch said, “Yes, I’m here to make you fight. I have a potion that will make him susceptible to agree with me. I just need to spray it on him. I was going to request a meeting with just him and his Beta. The potion wouldn’t work on his Beta, but if Lucas wanted me here I could stay in this territory. I need to get your patterns down and report back. If I could drive a wedge between you two, all the better. Sending you mental images is just a bonus.” Emmaline’s pain was twisting in my chest. I didn’t understand what was going on.

Emmaline’s hands started to glow blue. Before anyone could stop her, she touched the witch. She yelled, “Lucas is MINE!” The witch started to choke then she turned to water. Emmaline said, “I told you she would’ve ruined the furniture, Dylan.”

She turned on heel and stalked out of the room as we gaped at her. Haley offered, “Katie, you should go after her.” I started to move, but Haley popped in my way. She said, “Give her minute, my lion. Emmaline and I are different from other fairies, but even full blooded fairies are possessive. Emmaline and I just happen to be possessive of our mates; not unlike you all. The witch was sending your kiss over and over to

Emmaline's mind. She must not have realized Emmaline could in fact kill her.”

My jaw dropped. I asked, “How could she send it to her?” Haley looked upset with herself, “We need to work on mental defenses. Emmaline's defenses are naturally strong as a Royal, but the plane trance weakened her. She was seeing you kiss that girl and put your hands on her on repeat.”

Eric asked, “How do you know that?” Haley shrugged, “Because to get past the witch's mental protection, I had to lower mine. Any of you would have killed the witch much faster than Emmaline did. I would've the first time she projected to me. Emmaline clearly has more restraint than I do.”

I groaned “Can I just take her back to Nashville? We were in a really good place before this. Now... What do I even do? I DIDN'T kiss that witch.” Haley said, “She knows that. They are attacking her how they can. She's sensitive, more so because she's the Soul Searcher. Our feelings don't always make sense.”

Katie came back, “She popped away.” Haley told me, “You're on, Lucas. Only you can find her.” I raised an eyebrow, “You think she's in her new sanctuary?” Haley nodded, “Yes, I do.”

I quickly left the house, shifting into my wolf. I ran until I reached the force field. I stepped through and found Emmaline sobbing on the bridge. I ran over to her and pulled her to me. I comforted her, “Baby girl shhh... I've got you. I don't want anyone but you. I'm sorry for what she was projecting to you.” Emmaline pulled back, “You saw it too?”

I shook my head, “Haley did once she pulled back her defenses. She just told me.” Emmaline said, “I'm sorry. We needed more information. I shouldn't have killed her, I just... I can't stand it. I keep seeing your lips on hers. Hearing her moans and... it hurts so much.” I pulled her to me, “I've never even seen her.” She sniffled, “I can't lose you.” I pulled back, “You never will lose me, baby girl. I'm yours. Only yours.” I rocked her until she stopped crying.

She popped us back to the house and laid in our bed. I got in with her. She told me, "I'll be fine in the morning." I sighed, "You don't have to be fine, just talk to me." She nodded and whispered, "Ok." She sounded so broken. I was going to rip Alpha Hammond's throat out when I caught up with him. He had no right to hurt her this way. Losing his mate was not a reason to torture mine.

Emmaline woke me up the next day and tried to leave for school. I pulled her back asking, "How are you?" Emmaline sighed, "I'm embarrassed." I frowned, "Why?" Emmaline sat down, "I lost it over something that's not even true. I killed someone." I shrugged, "She was dead anyway. We knew she was lying." Emmaline nodded, "I'm sorry."

I lifted her chin with my fingers, so she'd look in my eyes. I assured her, "You have nothing to be sorry for. If I was projected images of you kissing someone else. I'd rip out their throat out in seconds. You lasted longer than anyone in that room would have, even Haley said so." She laughed, "You would rip their throat out, wouldn't you?" I nodded, "I would, so would Dominic." She gave me a kiss, "Thank you. For cheering me up." I smiled, "Have a good day, baby girl."

I walked into my office to find a worried Dylan. I saw five empty coffee mugs on the desk. He jumped when he saw me asking, "Is Emmaline ok?" I nodded, "I think she's getting there. She's embarrassed she lost it." Dylan shrugged, "It was funny. Plus, the wicked wannabe witch of our territory deserved it." I rolled my eyes, "Maybe switch to decaf."

Dylan gasped, "BLASPHEMY! Even you have to admit it was funny. Emmaline encased a witch's hands in ice Lucas.... ICE! That's funny. I've decided her name is no longer Emmaline, it's Queen Elsa forever and always. Our Luna is an honest to goodness Disney Queen. If some warlock projected Lacy kissing someone, I'd rip him in half instead of giving him two beatdowns as a warning. Emmaline gave her a chance; the nameless witch was none too bright." I laughed, "You have a point."

Dylan handed me my clue, "This fell out of your pants when you shifted like a valiant Alpha to go find your upset

mate. I thought you could use a distraction, and some fun.

Clue 9

This key holds it all. Bring it back to where it all began, my lion.

I frowned, “This key doesn’t open my safe room.” Dylan shrugged, “Let’s go see.” We went to the door, but there was no keyhole. I entered the code just in case, and it was still full of Tinkerbell’s. Dylan laughed, “It’s still hilarious.” I sighed, “I don’t know what this goes to.” Dylan shrugged, “I don’t know either. I’m also not going to put any brain power into figuring it out, or I’d unlock the mystery. Those Tinkerbell’s spark such joy for me.”

I groaned, “I’m never getting my collectibles back.” Dylan said, “I think if you figure out what that key goes to you will.” A pop sounded behind us. A voice greeted me, “Hello, my daughter’s wolf.” I turned, raising an eyebrow, “Prince Marcious. What are you doing here?” Marcious smiled, “I am here to help my daughter. I will wait in the main room until she gets home.”

I frowned asking, “Help her how?” Marcious smiled, “Haley called. I can help you both. She’s my little girl, just let me stay.” I shrugged, “Go ahead.” He sat down.

Ryan entered the house without looking up he told me, “Dustin and I came up with a more powerful necklace to protect Evie.” Marcious smiled, “Then she will be doubly protected, it cannot hurt.” Ryan frowned, “Right, whatever that means.” Marcious smiled but didn’t say anything else. Ryan muttered, “Fairies.” Dylan whispered, “Are fabulous. We know.”

Dylan and I went back upstairs to work on our plans. Emmaline popped to me after school. She gave me a hug, “My dad’s here, he says he wants to do something. I don’t know how long it will take, or if it involves becoming a crazy sex fairy afterwards.” I laughed, “One can only hope, baby girl.

One can only hope.” She smiled, “Ry and Dusty bought me a ring.”

I looked down at it. I told her, “It’s very pretty.” She smiled, “I keep wondering if they are going to admit it’s magical protection of some kind.” She shrugged, “I guess not.” I laughed, “You knew the whole time?” Emmaline laughed, “Katie told me when we were kids.” I smiled, “You could tell them.” Emmaline smiled, “How is that fun?” I laughed, “Your secret is safe with me.” Emmaline gave me a kiss and popped away.

Lacy came in right after, “So Emmaline’s dad is.... interesting.” I laughed, “He’s a fairy, but he seems to truly care about Emmaline.” Lacy nodded, “She’s ok, you know?” I sighed asking, “Is she?” Lacy nodded, “She really is.”

Dylan asked her, “And you? You are acting all fine that our wedding could be attacked.” Lacy shrugged, “I didn’t think I’d get to meet my mate until I was old and gray. If we can get rid of a threat, then I’m all for it. Besides, it’s Halloween. Everyone knows the crazies come out on Halloween. OH MY GOSH! It will be like our own personal scary movie! Except we can be smarter than the dumb people you yell at to not do something stupid. We are reversing the roles. Come on that’s epic!”

Dylan kissed her, “Is it any wonder why I love you?” Lacy said, “No, I’m amazing.” Dylan kissed her again, “You really are. I love you.” She smiled, “I love you too.” I cringed, “Get out of here before I have an aneurysm.” Lacy laughed, “You love it.”

Her smell intensified. I stiffened. Lacy whimpered, “Dylan...” He growled as two unmated warriors came into the room. Lacy fell to the ground in pain. I commanded, “Go, Dylan!” Dylan picked up Lacy and ran. I fought off my warriors trying to claim my sister in her heat.

I had just knocked them out when I heard Dylan growl. I took off for the stairs. He’d had to put Lacy down to fight. I linked my dad, “GET OUT HERE! Lacy is in heat.” My dad

came running and he guarded Lacy. I growled, taking down two more warriors.

I yelled, "Get her out of here Dylan!" I groaned as several more unmated wolves came in. My dad took a hit when he was surrounded. Dylan and I both growled as a warrior picked up Lacy and ran away with her. He made it outside when I caught up to him.

I snarled, "That's my damn sister. What the HELL are you doing?" I knocked him out then yelled, grabbing Lacy before she fell, "Dylan, for the love of god get her out of here!" Dylan snarked, "I was trying! Did it look like I stopped for coffee?"

Hail began to pelt the unmated warriors. I grinned like an idiot as I heard my mate pop in. She sounded disappointed, "Honestly, you all need to have better self-control." She grabbed Lacy and Dylan and popped them away.

The warriors came to their senses instantly, "Alpha, we are so sorry." I shrugged, "Get back to work." Emmaline popped back beside me. She shivered, "I have seen things I did not want to see." I teased, "Better you than me. My mom was right again." Emmaline smiled asking, "Right about what?" I said, "Lacy going into heat soon." Emmaline shrugged.

I asked, "Where are they?" Emmaline answered, "Their wing. Why does her scent not bother them now?" I groaned, "Because she's being claimed. I really don't want to think about that. Her heat sends amplified pheromones into the air, and until she's claimed unmated males want her." Emmaline rolled her eyes, "Well... ok then. Dylan has her, their rooms are charmed so no one can hear them, and she's claimed."

I smiled and led her back to the house. I asked her, "What did you do with your dad?" Emmaline smiled, "It was actually fun!" I smiled, "No crazy sex fairy?" Emmaline pouted, "Your warriors stole my mojo. I was all hopped up ready to go, engines were revved. You should do something about that. Get me going again." I laughed, "Show me what you were doing." Emmaline popped us to her treehouse, and said, "Ok, let me

show you.” I didn’t know how this would get her back in the mood, but I was more than willing to try.

Projections

Emmaline swayed with baby Charlie trying to keep her calm. I couldn't keep my eyes off this beautiful bundle in my arms. I smiled at her picturing a little baby with Lucas' eyes and hair. Holy crap! Was I ready to have a baby with Lucas?

Haley snapped a diaper bag. Thank goodness she was here. I didn't know what a baby needed. My eyes filled with tears seeing the burns on Charlie's body. Lacy linked me, "They better be dead! Doing that to a pup. Haley better have staked them all." I looked at Haley answering, "They are definitely dead."

Lacy pleaded, "Don't pop without me next time. We've been training together; I'll always have your back." I nodded, "I should've taken you with me. You're right, I'm sorry. We are a team." She agreed, "Heck yes we are."

She asked, "Is that Alpha Hammond's daughter?" I sighed, "A daughter he doesn't know about." Lacy winced, "Oh good. Here I was thinking this situation needed another complication." No joke.

Sam's aunt and uncle walked in the room. I saw recognition in her aunt's eyes when she saw Charlie. I wondered if Millie was reaching her to let her know she was going to be a mom. I gave them a moment to bond as a family before I told them what Millie had said. I saw Sam's uncle's eyes flicker with disbelief and recognition when I said Millie's name. He must know her.

Even my siblings reacted to that information. They all knew her. I didn't know her last name though, she never said it. How did they figure out who she was? Emmaline wasn't exactly common, but there were a few out there, evidently not

always spelled the same as my name. I'd assumed she'd married Alpha Hammond since they were together for a time. Maybe that's how they knew her last name, but no one seemed to know if Alpha Hammond had a mate except for Eric. He somehow knew that, but he didn't appear to know she'd been kidnapped.

Lacy linked me, "Things are just getting weird. Some witch related to our pack members." I sighed, "It makes sense. The baby is part werewolf, part witch. Who better to raise her? Plus, her father's pack has been taken over. Millie wouldn't have wanted her daughter to run a pack anyways."

Lacy frowned, "Why?" I smirked, "If she's the leader of her coven she would've argued that was her daughter's right. Witches are all about the same gender of the leader taking over. Dusty would've taken over for his dad because David was the leader. If my mom had been the leader, Katie would've taken over the coven." Lacy seemed to consider that.

I explained the situation. When Haley mentioned Millie being drained I paled. I linked Lacy, "Wasn't Haley held captive while she was pregnant?" Lacy nodded, "Yes." My eyes went wide, "She's a fairy... if they killed a witch wouldn't they kill her?" Lacy answered, "Not just her. There would've been dead vampires too. They would've fought over her blood. Whoever was left standing, Eric would've killed once he got in. Well, slaughtered is a more appropriate term." I shivered at the thought.

Thomas explained a little bit about Millie's background. I felt bad for her, desperately wanting her other half only to have him for five months. Not even that. Charlie must favor her werewolf side if Millie had that short of a pregnancy. Poor Millie, she probably thought she had more time to plan an escape.

Something nagged the back of mind when he said Millie's sister's name was Andie. I knew that name, but I couldn't place how. Sam's uncle said that Andie could be considered a wiccan. I looked up surprised. I glanced at Ry, but he wasn't listening. Could Grayson know Andie? Why did I know that name? I was usually better with placing people. I couldn't just

ask Grayson. No one would let me near him, and he could lie. Plus, he'd try to talk to me about fake Lucas kissing that girl. I shuddered pushing that from my mind. I didn't want to talk about that. Ever.

I sighed wondering who could ask Grayson my question. I didn't know anyone he would talk to at our school. I'd figure out how to get that information later. I was surprised when Bexley, Jackson, and Caleb popped in. I linked Lacy asking, "Why did they come?" Lacy surmised, "Lucas wants to talk Eric down from going to war with Missouri."

My eyes widened, "Well, something is clearly going on with Missouri, but war seems extreme." Lacy said, "Not really. If Alpha Hammond had come to the council when his mate was kidnapped, all the packs would've come to his aid. If we'd found out she was in Missouri we would've already been at war." I sighed "Can't we all just have peace?" Lacy raised an eyebrow, "Evidently not."

Lucas turned his gaze to me. I could feel his anger in my chest, but I didn't need it to tell me how he felt. It was written all over his face. He was mad I'd popped Haley and myself into danger. I actually felt really bad about it. If I'd known more, I would've done things differently. I just wanted to save Charlie. I didn't want to leave her in whatever situation she was in, and I'm glad I didn't. They were hurting a poor, innocent child.

I tried to deflect some of Lucas' anger with the traitor in our pack. Millie did give us some clues for suspects, but she didn't say who. I couldn't help but feel for whoever they were discussing as a traitor. This was someone who feared for their child. Surely, they had some understanding of that.

Lucas wasn't swayed by my logic. I wanted him to show some compassion. Lucas turned and pierced me with a look that hurt my heart. He didn't want to discuss it.

I linked Lacy, "Why can't he understand? This person is a dad." Lacy sighed, "Lucas would've helped. He could've come to Lucas to explain the situation." I said, "Surely, they told him not to do that. Isn't the bad guy always telling you

not to contact someone? In a werewolf's case it would be an Alpha.”

Lacy responded, “It doesn't matter. Lucas would've given him information to leak, but we would've known. This person got them into the territory so you could be taken. You disappeared right before my eyes and were taken by a warlock.”

I sighed, “That's true, I guess. It's someone who is scared though.” Lacy replied, “They could've linked Lucas or Dylan. They could've had someone else come to him, there were options. They might be scared, but Lucas is always there and protects people. They know that, and they made bad choices.” I guess I could understand that, but I still saw their side of the situation.

I was surprised this was about Christy. Great. She was messing with us in death. That actually sounded just like her. Then he said I was drugged... Drugged? Was that why I got so tired? Why wasn't anyone else tired? Lucas was reeling from the betrayal he felt from his pack member. I pointed out Alpha Chase's brother could help us.

Dusty blamed Haley for the situation. I couldn't stop my jaw from dropping. Lacy said, “That's going to go badly.” It did. Haley was dragged out of the room by Logan, yelling about Valerie. Wait... where was Valerie? Wasn't she in heat? How could Ry be here? Dustin said he wasn't saying she did anything wrong. I sighed. That's exactly what he implied. He didn't understand the way it felt to have your mate in danger. Combined with her children popping to their dad... It was a mess. I heard a crunch and held in a laugh as Dylan ate popcorn. He was always there to ease the tension.

I eyed Eric. He was still tense. It was almost like his emotions were coiled like a snake ready to strike... and he did strike. Aubree winced when Dusty went down after Eric's hit. I could tell he'd held back though. I ran over to my brother. Ryan helped him to his feet. He pointed out that Dusty should keep quiet. He threw in that Dylan could make the snide comments. Were both my brothers on glue? Where were their filters?

Lacy linked, “Are they in shock? It has to be that right? Ryan is usually the levelheaded one.” I studied their souls before replying, “They feel guilty. I think they feel like they didn’t protect me, and they are lashing out. There’s something else there... like hearing Millie’s name unsettling them for some reason.” Lacy nodded.

I tried to calm the situation, but Eric wasn’t going to cut Dusty any slack. Dusty even agreed with him. I shot Ry a look. Ry shrugged, so I glanced at Katie. She looked torn, but it was clear as day she was angry with Dusty. I sifted through my own feelings. I found I was tired of Dusty’s attitude. I needed to study his soul more and figure out the crux of the problem before people kept on punching him.

When Haley came back, I turned my attention to Logan. His eyes were blazing. That was more concerning to me. I knew Haley wouldn’t really hurt Dusty because of me, but Logan was different. He wouldn’t kill Dusty because of Katie... hurting him was a different story. Although, I suppose Haley did punch him. Maybe this was fine.

Dusty apologized to Haley, explaining his frustration stemmed from being several steps behind Alpha Hammond. At least that made sense. I felt myself relax a little bit along with Ry and Katie. We all shot each other a look. Dusty always hated being behind. He was a strategist.

We discussed everything. I decided the guys really didn’t give us enough credit. They should really consult us girls more often. We were smart, not to mention diabolical. I couldn’t believe they didn’t think Lacy would realize her wedding was a target. How dumb did they think she was?

When Debbie got angry Lacy linked me, “I forgot she was in here.” I shrugged, “You seem fine with this.” Lacy shrugged, “I am. We can take him down and be done with him. It will be a date to be remembered. Dylan will NEVER have an excuse to forget our anniversary. It’s not only Halloween, but the day we overcame an enemy.” I teased, “We really are diabolical.” She replied, “Damn straight.”

I realized when they were talking that I was going to kill someone at Lacy's wedding. I was going to ruin her wedding, not anyone else... Me... I was her Luna, and she was basically my best friend. Everyone distracted me, but mostly Dylan.

My siblings were making weird comments about Millie. She seemed fine to me. Why didn't they like her? Lucas finally came over and held me. He was trying to assure me he'd kill Alpha Hammond. Thankfully, Haley found the words I needed to hear. Her confidence in me gave me wings. Holy crap! I needed to ask her if we have wings as fairies. That would be so awesome.

We got onto the subject of Chelsea. I was certain her baby was a girl; I just knew it. Just because I was watching her, I saw Haley briefly twitch at the mention of Chelsea's baby. Oh no! Was something wrong with the baby? Eric squeezed Haley's hand lightly smiling at her. Ok, that was odd. I looked over seeing if anyone else saw that. I met Logan's questioning gaze. So, I wasn't crazy; even he'd seen it.

I studied Haley and Eric's souls. They were both happy. She felt cautious whereas he had complete faith in... her? Something had her doubting herself. She shouldn't. Whatever was going on, I was team Haley is right.

Haley caught Logan's gaze and smiled reassuringly at him. He did not seem reassured. I studied his soul. He felt fiercely protective, but something about his feelings gave me pause. I wondered if his bond with her gave him more insight. He could feel her every emotion; I was just guessing things based on her soul. Dang it! Now I was worried, just like him.

I was going to pull Haley aside when the guys left, but Lucas wanted me to come with him. Huh? Lacy linked me, "He needs you with him right now." I nodded. I wasn't going to argue. I liked being with Lucas. When he called Alpha Kyle, their group was so angry the phone's speaker almost busted. Peter was growling so loud it was hard to hear Alpha Kyle's responses. It was clear no one was happy. My phone buzzed.

Chelsea: It sounds like you are having quite the night. Are you ok?

Me: Yeah... are you?

Chelsea: Peter will figure this out. I know me and my little nugget will be safe.

Me: You bet he will!

Chelsea: It's a girl. We finally got a good look.

Me: I KNEW IT! I told Lacy it was a girl.

Chelsea: I'm really excited.

Me: Congratulations, girly!

I took a deep breath while the guys were arguing and texted Haley.

Me: I'm really sorry.

Haley: ...why?

Me: For popping us into danger.

Haley: I'm not. We saved a baby, and you controlled your powers quite impressively.

Me: I could've gotten us hurt.

Haley: PSHHHH, no. We could've popped out. If a vampire is draining you, pop the fuck away.

Me: Is that what you did when you were taken?

Haley: Sadly, no. I was shot with iron so I couldn't pop. My light zapped the vampires across the room though. That was fucking awesome.

Me: So, we are good?

Haley: Why the fuck wouldn't we be? We saved a baby, I got to fight which both sides of me enjoys, I killed bad people, and I'm getting fantastic sex tonight. I should actually be thanking you. Would you like cake? Molly says

her mom always thanks people with cake. I assume that is custom in this realm.

Me: LOL never change please.

Haley: I have no plans to change, little cousin.

I smiled as I put my phone away. I still felt guilty that I'd taken her to vampires. That probably gave her bad flashbacks or something.

Lacy linked me, "At least they are making plans for the takedown with us here." I agreed, "That's definitely progress, I'll take it." Lacy said, "Lucas is going to give you hell for popping out." I sighed, "I just wanted to save Charlie. I didn't think it was going to turn into a massacre." Lacy bit her lip, "I get it. That little pup is such a cutie, and you did take Haley. You didn't go alone, that has to count for something."

I focused back on the conversation just in time. To offer to pop the pregnant women out of Lacy's wedding when everything went sideways. That brought the tension down several notches. Logan and Haley shared some weird sibling conversation by saying two words. I wanted to do that. How Haley translated Logan saying her name to her popping Katie out of the situation even though she's capable because I need her and our child safe... I'd just never know.

Dusty actually asked me since we couldn't communicate by him just saying my name. I offered to take Aubree because that was my little niece or nephew cooking in there. I looked around the room. Everyone's souls were telling me this was going to work. Haley was practically wafting confidence. Eric often seemed pessimistic and bit 'the glass was half empty' so his feelings that we would be successful had me sighing in relief. This was finally going to be over.

Lucas pulled me from the room. We drove away. It was killing me that he wasn't talking. The silence was stifling and loud. I didn't know silence could be loud, but it was practically pulsing in my ears. When he spoke telling me to pop us to either my sanctuary or my treehouse, I was hoping

this was the end of brooding Lucas. I picked my treehouse because I wanted him to be able to find it. Maybe that would thaw him a little. It did not.

Eventually, I broke the silence. His anger stung me like a whip in my chest. We argued. Guilt hit me when I used his previous actions we'd already argued about. I couldn't keep bringing that up, it was the past. I didn't agree we needed to plan things out. Sometimes the situation warranted diving in headfirst. Life happens and sometimes it doesn't give you time to plot out a freaking plan of attack. There was a baby that needed her family. I didn't know Charlie Rose was actually related to Sam's Aunt and Uncle, but they were who the mother wished her child to be with. I couldn't leave a baby in an unsafe situation. I didn't even know if she was alone because Millie had died.

Lucas brushed all that aside and insisted I take a wolf with me when I popped away. Even though I'd agreed with Lacy I'd bring her next time, I was deeply annoyed that he thought Haley and I couldn't handle it. Lucas called me on the feelings I'd had when I'd popped away.

OF COURSE, I was scared. I'd never met a vampire before, and those vampires wanted to eat me. When he mentioned I felt guilty when I came back without Haley, I couldn't hold back my tears. I was still disappointed with myself for leaving her behind. Logically I knew Haley was right. I just wish I'd known of a way to keep Charlie safe and help her at the same time.

Then I was annoyed. Haley was a fierce badass, and no one gave her the credit she deserves. Lucas argued it was about us being royal and fairies. My frustration and anger crumbled. I knew Lucas was right. I'd popped Haley and I into danger without even warning her. I knew she wasn't mad, but I couldn't help but be disappointed with myself.

I felt badly I'd worried everyone, that wasn't my intention. I still hadn't grasped how long I'd been out. It didn't feel like I'd been asleep that long, but I'd practically slept Sunday away. I don't even know why I didn't tell him I'd already agreed privately with Lacy to bring her next time; I just didn't.

Things were headed in a sexy direction when a witch popped up. If my siblings weren't amazing; I'd join Haley's witch bitch's bandwagon just for this moment. I needed to connect with Lucas. I pushed down that need with great effort.

I almost laughed at the sight before me when we popped in. Haley was waving her swords around clearly ready to go in for the kill at a moment's notice. I searched the soul of the witch without really looking at her face. She was feeling quite deceitful. Not on mine and my cousin's watch, lady.

When I finally looked at her face, anger snapped within me so quickly I couldn't control it. I'd been around werewolves for a long time, so I let a growl go. Lacy linked me, "Emmaline? I mean that was an impressive growl, but are you ok?"

At the same time, I saw clear as day in my mind Lucas kissing the girl in front of me in the front office of the school. His hand was on her breast and the other on her butt. That was a witch ability to project, and she was using her power on me. THAT BITCH! I tried to force it out of my mind, but I never got to train with Dusty on how to do that. We were going to once I started my lessons with David, but that never happened.

I couldn't stop myself when I hit her. I tried to project the real Lucas kissing me back to her. I knew it wouldn't work because I wasn't a witch. I kind of hoped by picturing it in my mind her projection would fade. My light felt furious, and I was really frustrated with myself because it wasn't working. I could still see her and Lucas on repeat. Nothing I did was working. I couldn't get her out of my head.

When her hands started to glow, I knew I could do something about that at least. Without much thought I put my hands on hers and froze them. I smirked, hoping she got frostbite. Actually, I hope her fingers fell off her hands. I used a move Alex had shown me in our last training session. Horrid bitch.

Haley said something, but I could barely focus. I could just see Lucas' hands trailing over her body. It went further than what I saw. They'd continued after I left for whatever reason. I

saw Lucas lift her shirt off her, kissing her chest. I turned to the real Lucas trying to will the images away from my mind. It wasn't working. He was kissing every inch of her in my mind and I just needed it to stop.

I kissed him hard proving to that witch he was mine. I must have shocked her because the images finally stopped playing over and over in my head. Then she projected an image of Dylan about to help her to her feet. I pelted him with my hail until I saw him back away in my mind. I decided I couldn't project to her, but I could make her hear Lucas with me. She would know not to mess with what was mine.

I made Lucas yell he was mine pretty fast. Lacy linked me, "Gross... but if your goal is for us to hear you; we do." I smirked and bit Lucas' mark, so he'd yell even louder. The second we stopped, and the projections came back to me; I couldn't stop my tears. His hands were on her butt, he was growling into her mouth. Lucas pulled me back into his arms, and my mind cleared.

It was needed relief. I tried to explain, but I didn't do it well because my mind and heart were a wreck. I didn't even feel bad about the fact that I wanted to kill her. She was unrelentingly throwing visions into my head. I was going to be sick.

Lucas told me he only wanted me, and the real him would never kiss anyone else. He better not because I don't think whoever he kissed would survive. I knew it wasn't Lucas in the school, but if I hadn't that bitch would've been met with hail. I popped us back downstairs once we were dressed.

The witch spoke directly to Lucas asking him for ice. She started projecting herself moaning. I heard it clearly in my head, "Oh, Alpha Lucas take me." Lucas ripped her skirt off. She couldn't have any freaking ice unless it came from me, and it was going to cause her pain.

Haley's comments broke the witch's concentration which made the projects stop again. I was with Dylan; we all needed a statue of Haley to worship. If this witch projected herself having sex with Lucas to me then I couldn't be held

responsible for my actions. Lucas stepped forward asking her what she was doing here. I gaped in shock as the witch realized someone was trying to enter her mind. Haley was trying to make her tell the truth.

Lacy snorted, “Don’t witches know you can’t block the Truth Seeker? Haley’s mental shields are fortified and can break down any protection spell of the mind.” I said, “I don’t think anyone, but you and the fairies know that Lacy. You spent time with them.” Lacy smiled, “I do know a lot about fairies.”

I focused back on the witch’s soul and when she said she wanted to join Dusty’s coven I felt deceit. I told Lucas she was lying. She hit me with a projection of Lucas thrusting into her. I saw red. I hit her with hail, then decided my fists would be more satisfying.

I yanked the witch to her feet, and she feebly tried to defend herself. Lacy linked me, “Should you need it, I have your back.” I couldn’t answer her, I was blinded by rage. Lucas’ voice cut through the haze while I was kicking her ass. I hoped it hurt like hell. He basically told me to stop. He was asking me to give her mercy? He was on her side? She was HORRIBLE! She was back to projecting their kisses to me.

Only Haley seemed to realize this woman was already dead in my mind. Her eyes and soul held understanding, anger, and sympathy. I wondered if she could see what I was seeing. I couldn’t take it. This witch was NOT going to come into my home and make me see this crap until they were done with her. She had maybe fifteen minutes left to live. I wasn’t sure I’d even last that long.

I was going to drown her and have her turn to water. It wasn’t enough to just drown her. There would be NOTHING left of this wretched woman. I restrained myself from pelting Dylan with hail again when he helped that stupid, wannabe manstealing witch to her feet. He began to lead her to our furniture. NO... HELL NO... she was not touching a single thing in our home. I snapped her a folding chair. A really cheap one that I hoped collapsed underneath her.

The witch spouted more lies. I didn't even need to search her soul to know that was a freaking lie. While she spoke to Lucas, she started her projections from the very beginning of what I'd seen in the school.

When she rubbed her head crying in pain, I knew Haley had broken through. Her resistance is what had hurt the witch so badly. I looked to Haley for confirmation, and she nodded to me with understanding in her eyes. I asked the right questions and got the witch's plan.

Lacy linked me, "That wouldn't have worked. You guys are soul tied. Seriously? Does this coven not pay attention to supernatural gossip?" The witch threw in that she planned to keep sending me mental images of her and Lucas and that snapped any remaining restraint I had left.

I turned that bitch to water, then ran from the room trying to scrub my mind mentally. I kept seeing it even though she was dead. Lucas' hands on her, wanting her, running his hands all over her. I couldn't stop my sobs. Katie ran in, "What did she project to you?" I sobbed, "Her and Lucas.... Over and over. I can't... stop... seeing it and them together." Katie whispered, "Evie, it wasn't real. He would never touch that woman. He loves you." I said, "I know... but it hurts. It hurts my soul... I can't... breathe here. I'm sorry."

I popped away from her to my sanctuary. I sat down on the bridge trying to center myself. I gave up and gave into my tears and anguish from seeing Lucas with someone else. I don't know how long I was there crying before Lucas found me. He rocked me apologizing for what I saw.

That surprised me. I figured out Haley told him before he explained. I shouldn't have come with him to the house. I should've just stayed in the dang treehouse. We needed more answers, but I couldn't keep seeing it. It was now permanently etched into my mind. Lucas tried to ease my fears saying he'd never even seen the woman. I just... I wouldn't make it if I lost him. He was it for me... he was everything. He told me I could never lose him, and I just didn't say anything. What could I say? The fake you showed me I could? It wasn't fair.

He held me until I ran out of tears. I popped us back to the house laying down. I know I'd slept most of Saturday night and Sunday away, but I was exhausted. I woke up with puffy red eyes and popped myself back to my sanctuary. I sat there and centered myself for several moments.

Once I felt stable, I popped to the gym where Lacy was waiting. She asked softly, "Hey, are you ok?" I nodded, "I'm better. I centered myself before coming here." Alex walked over to us. He studied me then said, "Continue to center yourself in the pool."

Lacy groaned, "Not more cardio! Do you all wake up and ask yourselves, how can I torture someone today? I know... Cardio." Alex laughed and ruffled her hair, "No, little Lacy." He walked away, "Since I wouldn't want you think I'm out to ruin your day, you can run laps or join her in the pool. I can't upset our Beta female, can I?" He winked at her.

Lacy said, "I think that's the first time someone's called me that. It was weird, but I liked it. I guess I'll be running, I'm not a swimmer." I went over to the pool and snapped myself into a swimsuit. I dove in the pool and let everything go so I could swim. I saw Lacy's hand in the pool and stopped.

I smiled at her, and she smiled back. She studied me, "You seem much better now." I smiled, "Water has always made me feel better." Lacy laughed, "You don't say? That's so strange, little water fairy duchess." I pouted, "Hey! I'm taller than you, I'm not little." Lacy rolled her eyes, "Go get ready for school." I laughed, "You go get ready for school." I snapped my fingers then stuck out my tongue, "I'm already ready." I popped away laughing as she growled at me.

I opened my eyes back in my sanctuary. I really focused on centering myself. Lucas and I talked, and it was as if he applied a soothing balm to my soul. It was the final piece I needed to feel more myself. Mostly. It still hurt, but I didn't feel as wrecked by the whole series of events.

I popped to the car and Brad regarded me carefully. He asked, "Are you alright?" I nodded, "Yup." We all got in the car. I looked in the review mirror and nearly squealed in

delight. I was trying to keep my composure. I turned back around and linked Valerie, “That’s a lovely glow you have about you.” Valerie gasped.

Ry asked, “What?” Valerie stammered, “N... nothing...” I bit my lip. Lacy linked me, “She’s pregnant, right? Pups everywhere... I’m calling it. You told her she was glowing?” I replied, “Yup.” Lacy laughed, “You better watch out, we are so next.” I said, “You first, then me.” Lacy winked, “Whenever my heat comes, I’m hoping for a pup.” I snorted, “A mini Dylan, we are not ready.” Lacy laughed out loud.

Ry grumbled, “No linking conversations, share with the whole car.” Lacy turned, “Be careful what you ask for. I was talking about Dylan and I having sex.” Ry shut up immediately. Valerie laughed out loud. Brad looked at the window as if the grass was the most intricate and interesting painting he’d ever seen.

When we got to school Ry said, “Evie, hang back.” I sighed. I was trying to avoid his eyes in the mirror to avoid this conversation. Everyone got out. Ry ordered, “Do that space unheard deal you do.” I sighed and spoke my chant.

He immediately asked, “What did she project to you? You didn’t attack that witch repeatedly because she projected some kiss she had with Lucas.” Tears pricked my eyes. “Don’t, Ry. I’m trying to be ok.” Ry climbed into the front seat, “You don’t have to be ok. Tell me what you saw. Now I know I’m right. It wasn’t just him kissing some woman.”

I furiously wiped at the corners of my eyes where tears threatened to spill over, “I saw everything. They didn’t stop after I left. He was kissing her... everywhere.... They... had sex.” Ry’s eyes widened with horror; he yanked me into a hug.

He apologized, “I’m so sorry you saw that, I’d have killed her too. You know it wasn’t him though. Lucas would never do that to you. I don’t know how much you know about wolves, but that would physically hurt him.” I pulled back, “What would?”

Ry tilted his head, “Being physically intimate with anyone, even kissing them, would physically hurt Lucas as it would

hurt you.” I gasped, “Are you serious?” Ry nodded, “Yes, wolves feel the pain in their mate bond. To actually have sex with someone who isn’t their mate hurts them; quite a bit I believe.”

I sighed admitting, “I didn’t know that. I knew during the illusion it wasn’t him. Even now, it’s just in my head. I can see his hands on her... in a way that they are only supposed to be on me.” Ry said, “Those are some mental images a brother doesn’t need...” He shook himself, “But this isn’t about me. I’m fine... this is ok.”

I laughed, “You should’ve had Katie ask me, Ry.” Ry said, “No, I’m fine. My little sister is sexually active. That’s totally fine.” I blushed, “Didn’t you hear us yesterday?” Ry laughed, “Haley snapped noise cancelling headphones on Dusty and me. I chose not to think about why.” I gave him a hug, “Thank you for talking to me even if it makes you itch.” He said, “I’m always here. Plus, if Lucas ever did that to you, he’d be dealing with me. I’m not nice when you hurt the people I love.” I smiled, “I know.”

I got out of the car and walked into school. Class had started. I heard Grayson’s voice, “You’re still wearing your ring? You’re still with him? After what he did? Do you have NO self-respect?” I turned, “Grayson, my relationship is none of your business.” Grayson snarked, “I didn’t take you for a gold digger, but I guess you can be wrong about people.” I punched him directly in the jaw.

Brad materialized beside me. He sighed, “I can’t even go to the bathroom and leave you alone for one second.” He was trying to hide a smile. He linked, “Nice punch.” Yeah, well I was contemplating following it up with a swift kick to the balls.

Drake came out of class, “Come on Grayson, enough.” Grayson stood, “He CHEATED on her! All the way, I stayed! He didn’t even stop when she ran away.” Brad laughed, “Into voyeurism, are you Grayson?” Grayson turned red and started sputtered, “I... you... that’s...” I studied his soul. He was feeling guilty and deceitful.

It hit me. I slapped him and yelled, “It wasn’t him, and you know it.” He paled, “It was obviously him.” He was lying, and I could tell. I gritted my teeth, “You know about werewolves. You know it would’ve hurt him to be with someone else. He’s MY mate. I don’t care about Lucas’ money. How dare you! Seriously, I’m sick of this. What is your deal?”

Grayson yelled, “My deal? He’s a pervert! That’s my deal! I’m trying to protect you, and you keep letting everything go. He’s not a good person! He’s a murderer!” I stepped back, “What did you just say?” His soul was angry but serious.

The principal called, “Grayson, my office. Now. Emmaline, Drake, go to class.” I turned to Drake and Brad. The principal ordered, “Now, you two. Get to class.” I sighed, walking into my class.

Mr. Blaze frowned looking down the hallway. When we got to our seats, I said my space unheard chant. I asked Drake, “What did that mean?” Drake looked confused, “I mean being an Alpha, he has to kill people. If you know about the supernatural world you know that.”

I sat back. His explanation made sense, but I had a feeling it meant something else. Did Grayson know Christy? He’d mentioned a while back that Lucas had a girlfriend he dumped for me, and now he called him a murderer. He just happened to be there when I saw the illusion Lucas kissing that girl. Could he be working with Alpha Hammond? I pushed that aside. Grayson didn’t want to hurt me, I knew that. Alpha Hammond definitely wanted to hurt me.

On the other hand, Haley told me not to ignore my instincts. Is that what this was? This feeling telling me not to trust Grayson with a ten-foot pole. I’d trust it. It’s not like I was about to give Grayson a friendship bracelet, but my guard was going to be up for any future encounters. I put that all out of my head and focus on my day.

By lunchtime, I was on autopilot being left alone to my thoughts. I was pulled from that by Lacy, Sam, Valerie, and Chelsea. They sat down at a different table to our usual one.

Lacy demanded, "Space unheard." I quickly complied, "Ok." I said my chant.

I asked, "What's going on that no hear can hear but us?" Sam said, "Lacy told us about that witch." Chelsea said, "Yes, and we all agreed you didn't go all Rambo on her ass because of a kiss." Valerie just smiled softly at me.

Lacy said, "She showed you something else. Did she imagine herself with Lucas?" I dejectedly told them, "She didn't have to imagine. They went much further than kissing after I locked myself in the girl's locker room." Lacy growled, "That BITCH! Lucas would never..." I put my hands up, "I know."

Sam grabbed my hand, "He would've been in immense pain." I nodded, "That's what Ry said this morning." Chelsea said, "UGH! I wish she was alive so I could punch her!" I shivered, "I don't. She was going to drive me insane with her projections." They all hugged me, and I made the space heard again before we went over to join the guys. The rest of the day flew by.

I drove everyone home and was about to pop to Lucas when Ry handed me a box. He told me, "This is for you from me and Dustin." I smiled and opened it, "A ring?" Ry nodded, "We had a necklace, but Katie said we'd given you too many necklaces. She said you needed a ring." I honestly told him, "It's beautiful. Thank you, Ry." I gave him a hug. I waited for him to tell me it was some sort of witch voodoo protection, but he didn't. I smiled at him.

I nodded to Valerie. She linked me, "I'm nervous to tell him." I replied, "Don't be. He'll be insanely happy. I promise." I walked inside and about fell over. I heard my own astonishment when I said, "Dad?" My dad smiled, "Hello, daughter." I walked over and hugged him, much to both of our surprise.

I pulled back, "What are you doing here?" He smiled, "Haley called. I'm here to help you." I raised an eyebrow, "How?" My dad laughed, "It is good you are cautious. I want to show you something fun, and work on your mental

defenses. We can't have someone torturing you over and over with images from their minds now, can we?" I said, "I'd rather they not. I'll go say hi to Lucas."

I popped in and said hi before popping back to my dad. He commented, "Haley said you have a place here." I nodded. He smiled, "Will you pop us there?" I did as he asked. He smiled, "We do not have long, you will be needed shortly." I frowned asking, "Needed for what?"

My dad smiled coyly, "You will see. Now, you were weakened so your mental defenses were not strong. Royals do not have the luxury of waiting for shields to come back. You must strengthen your defense. They are up now because you don't have to think about them. Feel the walls protecting you in your mind." I nodded to him, "I feel them." His smile was almost smug.

I felt them drop. I asked, "What was that?" My dad smiled, "I forced them down. Bring them back up or you will keep seeing this." I cringed as I saw him and my mom together in bed. I yelled, "EWW EWWW EWW STOP!" He simply replied, "Make me." I centered myself and used my light. I managed to get the pictures he put in my mind dulled.

My dad laughed, "Good! For your first lesson, that was very good. One just needs the proper motivation. Now, I'm going to let you do this, but I want you to bring my walls down." I gaped, "I can penetrate someone's mind? I thought only witches could do that!"

He smiled, "You can do it to other fairies and your mate. Witches can do it to anyone." I asked, "Can any fairy do that?" Marcious explained, "No, only royal water fairies. It is a trait of our line. Come on, time's wasting." I needed more instruction, "How do I bring your walls down?"

My dad smiled, "Trust your light, and focus it. Stare into my eyes and will my walls down." I stared at him, focusing on feeling his walls. I found four walls. I got two down and projected the ancient ritual Haley did with me to him.

I could tell he was surprised. So, I used that to break the other walls down. He smiled once I finished showing him the

ritual and I was slammed out of his head. That felt weird. He told me, "With practice, you will be able to shove anyone out of your head. Work on making your shields stronger. I was quite sad I missed Haley performing that ritual. Thank you for showing it to me."

I smiled, "Of course, old man." He laughed, "I am old. Practice your shields here daily. You don't need another person, but you can practice with your wolf. Speaking of said wolf, you need to get back. They need you. Think of Lucas and throw your hail." With a wink my dad popped away. I thought of my hail and popped.

I was stunned our own warriors were fighting my mate, Dylan, and Dale. Dale linked, "Lacy's in heat. Please get her and Dylan out of here." What the hell? My dad could've mentioned that. Why couldn't these wolves control themselves? This was Dylan's mate, and their Alpha's sister. They probably even grew up with her. Seriously. We needed to have a chat about control.

I grabbed Lacy and managed to grab Dylan's ankle to pop them away to their room in the house. Dylan turned as Lacy dove at him, kissing him. I spoke my space unheard chant. Before I could pop away, they were both naked. I saw Dylan's bare butt. Dang... he and Lucas worked out together. That much was clear. Were all werewolves ripped?

I shook those thoughts from my head. I had almost seen my best friend and his having sex. I was taking it to my grave that I'd seen Dylan's very sculpted bare butt. It wasn't as good as Lucas' but still... Werewolves, I guess.

I was getting more than tired of seeing people fight over who could have sex with my friends when they weren't in control of themselves. It was sick. I glared at the warriors who looked sheepish now. Perverts.

Lucas and I talked about my dad. I really needed a manual on my powers. I wished I'd known how to tear that witch's mental walls down. Or known that once Haley had them down, I could project something back. Lucas was sad it didn't mean crazy fairy sex. I mean I was down to have sex, but we

got sidetracked with his pack of perverts trying to hump Lacy. He wanted me to show him what we were doing.

I popped him to my treehouse. I sat us on the couch and focused on Lucas. He asked, "What are you doing?" I slapped his hand, "Shh!" I needed quiet. I focused. His walls were different than my dad's, but they allowed me in. Probably because we were soul tied or mates. Whatever it was, I was in.

His walls were easier to get down than my dad's had been. I smiled wickedly and projected the moment he marked me the first time we'd had sex. Lucas's eyes widened and he growled pinning me underneath him, but I wasn't done. I showed him where I shared my light with him. I didn't stop until I'd taken him through our whole first time in bed.

Lucas growled, "That is something, baby girl. Can you do that to everyone?" I shook my head, "No just fairy's and you. My dad showed me how to work on keeping them up so people couldn't project in my mind." Lucas kissed my mark, "Is that so?" I grabbed onto his shirt, "Yes."

I pulled his shirt over his head. I kissed his chest. Lucas ripped my shirt off, and it flashed in my mind. Him with that girl. I popped up frustrated with myself. I groaned, "UGH!" Lucas was behind me in a second. He asked, "Emmaline?"

I turned and kissed him hard. I wrapped my legs around him and snapped us both naked. I told him, "Make me yours, Alpha." Lucas growled and slammed me into the wall, "You're already mine, always mine."

His lips were back on mine. He bit my lower lip then slid his tongue into my mouth. He put me down and turned me to face the wall. He entered me from behind. I moaned, "Lucas." He growled and grabbed my breast squeezing it.

I tilted my head back panting with need. He pulled my hair to the side, licking my mark. I opened my eyes screaming. He grunted, "Is this what you wanted, baby girl." I choked out, "Yes." Lucas growled, "You are mine! I want no one else but you." I put my hands against the wall to brace myself as he went harder.

When we finally fell apart, it was dark outside. I popped us to the bed in my treehouse. Lucas pulled me to him. He questioned as he ran his fingertips along my arm, “What was that earlier?” I teased, “Maybe we didn’t do it right if I have to explain. You proved I’m yours; emphatically.” Lucas narrowed his eyes, “Not that. You popped away from me after I ripped your shirt off. Why?”

I sighed, “Do we have to talk about that?” Lucas tensed, “Now we do. Did I make you uncomfortable?” I answered, “No.” Lucas got out of bed and turned on the light. He pulled me up to him. “Emmaline, tell me what happened.”

I closed my eyes and whispered, “I saw more than you kiss that witch. You ripped her shirt off the same way you ripped mine. For a brief moment, you and she flashed in my mind.” Lucas asked, “They didn’t stop kissing during the illusion when you ran away?” Tears filled my eyes, “No, and I’m really tired of talking about this today.”

Lucas pulled me to him and looked in my eyes, “What did she show you?” He wiped my tears away. I whimpered, “Everything.” Lucas frowned, “They had sex?” I nodded, “She showed me everything then started over from the top.” Lucas kissed me lightly, “Baby girl, I would never....”

I interrupted, “I know. It’s just... now it’s in my mind, and I hate it.” Lucas sighed, “I hate it too. I’m so sorry you had to see that. Even knowing it’s not real would hurt.” I sighed, “I just don’t want to talk about it anymore. I just want to focus on us.” Lucas nodded and kissed the top of my head, “Alright, go to sleep.” I nodded and snuggled into his chest.

The next day went by in a flash, even fairy lessons flew by. Katie was getting really good. Haley popped into our training session as Lacy ran up to join us. I bit my lip as Haley said her chant, Miley said, “Let me just guess.” I laughed, “Lacy... you are kind of... glowing.” Lacy squealed, “Really? Dylan is going to be so excited!” She hugged me and turned to Haley, “You’re not going to let me train, are you?”

Haley laughed asking, “Why wouldn’t I? You’re pregnant, not injured. I trained throughout my pregnancy. Well, except

those first few weeks, but that was out of my control. Miley will just refrain from knocking you to the ground or aiming for abdomen shots.”

Miley smiled, “I do love a challenge.” I asked, “Is it just you two today?” Haley nodded, “Yup. You’re with me, let’s go.” Haley came at me with more intensity than she had before. We used both fairy powers and physical strength. I was trying to throw hail at her, but she’d call the wind to bat them away.

I heard Dylan yell, “FORE!” and “HIT THE DECK!” Every so often. I was trying to tune him out and maintain my concentration. No matter how much I tried, I couldn’t hit Haley. She smiled and called time. I sat down grumbling, “Why are you so hard to hit?”

Haley laughed, “I trained for a very long time with Marcus and Bjourn. It’s also my fairy side. I know more about my powers. Don’t worry, you’ll get there. You’re doing really well.” I smiled then remembered something, “Hey nothing is wrong with Chelsea’s baby, right?” Haley frowned, “Why would anything be wrong? She’s ok, isn’t she?”

I nodded, “I just thought you seemed tense when they mentioned she was having a girl.” Haley asked, “She’s having a girl? I don’t remember hearing that.” I smacked my head, “That’s right she texted me that. You just seemed to have a reaction when we mentioned her baby the other day.”

Haley thought about it, “It’s probably nothing. I could just be overthinking. Cassandra thinks I’m insane. Well, that’s a tame word for her feelings on the matter.”

I raised an eyebrow, “Do you really think you are being silly or are Cassandra’s feelings making you doubt yourself?” Haley thought about it, “I’m fairly certain I’m right, but we will find out.” I laughed, “Care to share?” Haley shook her head, “No, I will when I’m completely certain. If I’m right, then I’ll tell you. If I told you before my mother in law would lose her shit, and Eric’s losing patience with her as it is.” I frowned, “I’ve never seen you so flustered.”

I studied her soul. Haley smiled, “It doesn’t happen often.” I surmised, “You’re upset and hurt by your mother in law. You’re done with her.” Haley agreed, “I have been for a while. I thought she gave me a chance, but she didn’t. It is what it is.”

I encouraged her, “You should talk to Eric.” She sighed, “And say what? Your mom is a serious bitch who hates me? What good does that do? My kids deserve their grandparents in their lives, and so do my nieces and nephews. I can’t take their grandparents from them. Nathan is amazing, and he deserves to be around. I can deal with a petty basic she bitch for them. It’s nothing to me. People have been mean to me my entire life.” I frowned. She meant that, but it didn’t make it right. We went our separate ways for the night.

The next day at school I got called into the office. Sam’s aunt was bursting with joy. She squealed, “The Alpha sent you flowers and chocolates!” I smiled but quickly linked Lucas, “Are these flowers and chocolate from you?” Lucas replied, “Yes. Do you like them?” I smiled at the blue and white roses, “I love them.”

I asked Sam’s aunt if I could leave the flowers in the front office. I took the chocolates with me though. I walked into the lunchroom and sat with my friends. I was looking down when everyone tensed. I asked, “What’s wrong?”

No one answered before I discovered what it was, or more accurately who. Grayson spoke, “Emmaline, can I please speak to you?” I sighed, “Sure, go ahead.” He gave me a pleading look, “In private.” That wasn’t happening. I couldn’t bring any of my friends, they were pregnant. I knew Grayson wouldn’t talk to me with any of the guys present though.

I looked around the room and spotted Tessa. She wasn’t glowing, and I’d seen her at training. She was fierce. I must have caught her on a bad day, which I was grateful for, since I hadn’t been training like I was now. I told Grayson, “Sure, but Tessa is coming with us.”

Lacy growled. I linked, “You’re glowing, and Tessa is a good fighter.” Lacy grumbled, “She is. Screw your logic.” Tessa masked her shock quickly and followed us. I linked her,

“Be ready to punch him in the face or something.” Tessa replied, “Of course, Luna.” I sighed, “Just Emmaline will do.”

Valerie linked me when I stood up, “TESSA? What the hell?” I replied, “You are ALL pregnant. He won’t talk with Drake or Peter present.” My friends all made annoyed faces. I smiled at them and walked outside.

Tessa stopped me once we’d reached my locker and kept a hold of my arm. To Grayson, I’m sure it looked like she was supporting me. I knew it was just in case he tried to grab me. Grayson spoke sadly, “You don’t need protection from me.” I disagreed, “Our last several encounters suggest otherwise. You are openly hostile toward me. You’ve even called the cops on my fiancé and me.”

Grayson angrily told me, “I won’t apologize for being your friend. None of these people are being your friends right now; I’m trying to help you.” I countered, “Lacy is my best friend. My whole family that’s met Lucas likes him. Your opinion on our relationship is irrelevant. You’re not helping me, you’re hurting me.”

Grayson frowned, “Your family? I thought you didn’t have any.” I sighed, “I recently connected with a cousin of mine. I’m sure your cop friends have told you about her.” Grayson frowned, “Haley Connors is actually your cousin? She’s being very unpleasant.”

I laughed, “She dislikes you much more than you dislike her. You’re not helping me, Grayson. I’m happy with Lucas.” Grayson looked down. I searched his soul. He was angry... really angry and... deceitful? Maybe even manipulative. That didn’t bode well.

Grayson looked up, “I’m sorry if I’ve gone about it the wrong way, but I really do care about you.” That last part seemed to be the truth. He asked, “Can we meet up at any restaurant back home?” I frowned, “Red Run isn’t my home anymore.” Grayson was clearly annoyed, “Yes, well can we just meet up and talk?”

I pointed out, “We can talk at school. I don’t believe you won’t try to do something drastic if I meet you somewhere

outside of school. You're scaring me lately. I didn't even want to come talk to you alone for goodness sake! Tessa isn't even my friend, and she's here because you scare her too. Doesn't that mean anything to you?"

Grayson hit a locker, "I'm scaring you? Your FIANCE is keeping you with your head buried in the sand. You don't even know him!" Tessa laughed, "Because you know him so much better than Emmaline. She lives with him after all. You definitely don't know him better than me. You've never actually met him, have you? I've seen you glare, but I don't think I've ever seen you speak to him."

Grayson glared at her, "You have to say that he's your Alpha. You all serve a murderer." Tessa's eyes flickered black and she growled at him. I squeezed her hand, "Why do you keep saying that?" I asked him. Grayson looked away, "He's an Alpha, they have to kill to stay on top." I studied his soul then frowned, "You're lying." Grayson smiled, "I'm not, they kill people."

Now I was annoyed, "Not about that. You didn't mean as an Alpha. You mean something specific." Grayson shrugged, "You don't know that. Look, Emmaline, you, and me, we are humans in this equation. We don't belong in the supernatural world. You should let them be in their world, we weren't meant to join it. I have a friend who told me you can reject Lucas. Just come with me. I'll help you get away from this world."

Tessa growled loudly and slammed Grayson into the locker. She snarled, "You seriously think you can take our Luna away from us? We've been waiting for her for ten years." Grayson winced, "It's not your choice, Tessa. Emmaline, come on. He already cheated on you once. What kind of life are you setting yourself up for?"

Tessa squeezed his shoulders tightly. Her soul told me she was worried about me, and furious with the disrespect being thrown at her Alpha. Dang. I think I actually liked Tessa now. I really must have caught her on a bad day. We all had those though.

I told Grayson, “I already told you that wasn’t him. You even knew it wasn’t him before I told you.” Grayson said, “Please just let me help you. You don’t need to get sucked up into this world. Trust me, it’s not a place for people like us. We can run away.”

Tessa lost her patience and punched him. She told me, “I dislike this human.” I linked her, “Same.” She smiled at me. She told Grayson, “Time’s up human. Lunch is almost over, and I’m going to see the Luna to her classroom.” He hissed, “You aren’t even friends!” Tessa shrugged, “Us women have to stick up for each other. We don’t need to be friends to watch each other’s backs. I’m not letting some asshole manipulate any girl or woman and idly stand by watching it happen. That’s not me.”

We walked away as the bell rang. Tessa walked me to my class. I thanked her, “Thanks for coming with me.” Tessa smiled, “Anytime, Emmaline. Well, before I transfer schools and packs at break. I’m going to my mate’s pack. He’s ranked very high within their warrior system where I’d just be starting my rank in ours. I might as well start my rank there with a clean slate. I messed up here.”

I smiled, “I’m glad you’re happy with him. You will always have a place here with our pack should you need it, along with your mate. We all mess up. I think we would’ve been friends had that not happened. We still can though. I’m at my cousins pack a lot.” She smiled, “Thank you. That means a lot.” I told her, “It would be a sad place to live if we were considered to be the person we were at our lowest moments. Everyone deserves a chance to prove their true colors.” She told me, “Spoken like a true Luna.”

I walked into my class and sat down. I crossed my legs and banged my knee on something. I put my hand under the desk and pulled out a phone with tape on it. I quickly looked around realizing no one was in here yet. Curiosity got the best of me, and I opened it quickly taking the tape off of it. There was text from an unknown number.

Unknown: I'm here to help. Text anytime and I'll help you.

Me: Who are you?

Unknown: A friend.

Me: A friend is not a name. Commonly a name is given.

Unknown: I'm just here to help.

Me: With?

Unknown: Anything.

Me: Great. I need help with knowing your name.

Unknown: Anything but that.

Me: Then why would I ask you for help?

Unknown: Because I know a storm is coming, and I can help you.

Me: Great. A storm is coming. Must be a day ending in y. That's pretty much my life now.

I put the phone in my bag amazed that no one had seen it. I knew it had to be Grayson or someone connected to Grayson. Maybe Gunner could track it. I shot a text to Katie letting her know I needed to see her after school. She replied with an affirmative. I had to laugh.

After school, I pushed the car a little bit more than normal but was still safe. Ry followed me into the living room where Katie was waiting. She shooed him away, "Go live in sin with your pregnant girlfriend, it's sister time." I laughed when he ran away.

I popped us to Lucas. I was not at all surprised to find Logan already with him. I gave Lucas a kiss and popped Katie to my treehouse. She asked, "So, what's going on?" I pulled out the phone, "This was under my desk after Grayson HAD to talk to me. I was wondering if you could give it Gunner. I need it back in case whoever is on the other end texts or something... but I thought maybe..."

Katie smiled, "Say no more. I will get Harper's boytoy lover on the task of tracking this phone's purchaser. Why didn't you ask in front of the guys?" I sighed, "I'm hoping to get a lead before Lucas goes and beats up Grayson. Maybe we can stop Alpha Hammond before Lacy and Dylan's wedding with Gunner getting this phone."

Katie asked, "And are you ok with everything else?" I sighed, "Do you mean do I keep getting flashes of Lucas and the witch kissing and having sex? Yes, I do. It's driving me insane." Katie frowned, "You killed her too quickly." I said, "I wasn't going to watch my mate with her in my mind while everyone tortured her." Katie agreed, "That's understandable."

We talked for a while, and then I popped her back to Lucas' office. He was angry for some reason. I looked around to see Dylan shooting me a look of confusion mixed with pity. Logan simply looked like he always did.

Lucas asked me pointedly, "Do you have something to share with me, Emmaline?" I gulped and then looked at Katie wide eyed. She was also confused. Was I wrong earlier? Did someone see me with the phone? I asked awkwardly, "About?" Lucas gritted out, "School." I sighed, "Umm Grayson wanted to talk to me."

Lucas growled, "And you took Tessa with you to talk to him." I nodded, "Yes, because all my other friends are pregnant. Tessa isn't glowing, and I know she can throw a mean right hook. I might have been able to deflect it, but Grayson couldn't. Plus, I've been watching her in practice. I caught her on a bad day which I'm grateful for."

Lucas growled, "Why did you even go talk to him?" I sighed, "Because I think... because... just BECAUSE!" Lucas growled. Dylan jumped in, "Uhh Queen Elsa... little fairy... Now is not the time to be evasive."

Lucas' eyes went black. Dominic was in charge. He snarled, "Brad said he told you to run away with him." I rolled my eyes sarcastically spitting out, "Yes, and we are going to be very happy together when we run away. I was thinking of

the Bahamas. You know clear waters and I could work on my tan.”

Dominic growled and pinned me against the wall, “YOU WILL NOT LEAVE ME!” Dylan said, “Sarcasm, Dominic... it was sarcasm. Queen Elsa is not serious. Let’s all just take deep breaths.” I said, “Come on Dominic, I’m not going to run away with him, that’s ridiculous. Him wanting me to do something doesn’t produce results. We’d have broken up five minutes after we got together if that was the case because he’s never liked our relationship.”

Dominic growled, “You shouldn’t even SPEAK TO HIM!” I raised an eyebrow, “I told you once before you don’t control who I talk to. I took backup AND I knew Brad was there. By the way Brad, you are a NARC!”

Dominic growled and slammed his lips onto mine. He broke our kiss to say, “You should’ve told me.” I yelled right back, “I was going to! I was talking to Katie, my sister, remember her? I popped in to say hi and we left. Logan is here so that should’ve clued you in too. I’m sure he told you I was with Katie.”

He growled, “I hate this Grayson kid, I will kill him.” I sighed, “Then we might lose a lead.” Lucas took back over and set me down, “What are you talking about?” Dylan had popcorn. I actually laughed. Lucas turned around. He was incredulous, “Seriously?” Dylan shrugged, “What? Popcorn makes everything better. You should try it. My way of life is more fun than you fuddy duddies.”

Logan cracked a smile and Katie smiled at me warmly. I told them, “Look, Haley told me to trust my instincts, that’s what I’m doing. Grayson has been in some weird spots that could be suspicious. I’m not saying he has anything to do with this, but if he does...”

Lucas questioned, “You think Grayson is involved? And you STILL went to talk to him?” I emphasized, “WITH TESSA and technically Brad. I don’t know if Grayson is a part of this, I’m just saying... it makes sense to me. I am ALSO

pointing out that I AM your Luna and you are supposed to trust me the way you want me to trust you.”

Dylan clapped, “Break it down, Queen Elsa. The Alpha blood is not tracking.” I asked, “Huh?” Dylan slowly repeated, “Break. It. down. Queen. Elsa.” I groaned, “I heard you. Since when do you call me Queen Elsa?” Dylan shrugged, “Since you started to freeze a lake and encased a witch’s hands in ice.”

Lacy got us back on track, “Why do you think Grayson could be involved?” I sighed, “That bracelet he tried to give me. Brad back me up here; he seemed desperate to get that on me, didn’t he? Did I imagine that?” Brad answered, “No you didn’t.”

I continued, “Ok, then the day of the illusion he was just there when I saw Lucas and that witch kissing.” Lucas interrupted, “It was not me but continue.” Dylan laughed, “He takes my job interjecting the facts. I’ll let it slide this once.”

I sighed, “Well... I just... He wanted me to go outside for some air. Which is normal, but he just happened to be right there. Then he keeps calling Lucas a murderer. When I pressed him, he lied to me. He said Alpha’s are murderers. Sam’s uncle said Andie could be called and wiccan. Ry said that Grayson is wiccan too.”

Katie yelled, “OH MY GOD! She’s right!” Lucas agreed, “There’s merit to her thoughts, yes.” I looked at him studying his soul. He wasn’t surprised. I surmised, “You suspected him already. THAT’s why you’re so mad I talked to him.”

Lucas sighed, “We thought it could be possible. We are trying to look into his background and have run into a lot of roadblocks.” I sighed, “I took a wolf with me, that’s what you asked me to do.” Lucas growled, “You did. Everyone OUT!” Everyone fled.

His eyes turned black, “You need to be punished, little mate.” I smirked, “Oh yeah? Then I guess you should punish me, Alpha. Even though I did what you asked.” With that I began to pop around the room. I knew it would be interesting

when he managed to catch me. I got an idea winked at Dominic/Lucas and popped to my sanctuary.

Dylan linked me, “I love you, Queen Elsa. NEVER CHANGE.” I laughed and waited for Lucas. I stripped my clothes off and dove into the water. I heard Lucas growling his whole run from the house to my sanctuary. When he entered the force field his eyes were darker than I’d ever seen them. He growled, “You are in such trouble, mate.” I gulped as Lucas dove into the water.

Making Plans

Lucas looked at Emmaline as she sat them both on the couch in her treehouse. She was not in a talking mood. Dominic laughed, “You got shh’d.” I growled at him. I felt what could only be described as a pressure on my brain. Then all of a sudden I was seeing Emmaline and myself the first time we had sex and I marked her. I was instantly hard and had her underneath me as the entire thing played in my head. I actually saw her share her light with me.

After seeing it, I don’t know how I didn’t realize that’s what was happening at the time. I didn’t realize fairies could project. Projecting is usually a witch’s power. I was glad Marcious was working with her on how to keep her own shields up. I didn’t want her to have to suffer seeing what someone else wanted her to.

I couldn’t stop staring at my mark on her neck. After seeing her project, me putting it there, the desire to kiss, lick, and bite it was at an all-time high. I decided to kiss it first. Emmaline immediately responded and pulled my shirt over my head. I ripped her shirt off.

The next thing I knew, she had popped away from me. I lost my balance hitting the couch with my stomach. Emmaline was clearly frustrated about something. Had I done something to make her uncomfortable? Dominic growled at the thought, but she immediately went right back to kissing me. I was startled at the need and desperation in her voice when she told me to make her mine. Dominic growled, “She is ours. What is she talking about?” I said, “I don’t know, but she needs reassurance. We will give it to her.”

I gave Dominic control, and proved she was ours; repeatedly. I only stopped when her entire body was shaking, and I wasn’t sure if she could take anymore. Emmaline popped

us to a bed, and you just had to give it Haley, she thought of everything. She'd conjured the treehouse with a bed. I felt her shame when I brought up what happened.

She explained about the witch and fake me. I was surprised the couple didn't stop when Emmaline ran away. Were they not part of the group that was supposed to apprehend her? Emmaline had apparently talked about this with other people. She wanted to stop, but I needed to know what all she'd seen.

When she said everything, I wanted to bring the witch back to torture her to death. When I found out who was playing the fake me in this illusion; he was dead. I asked her to tell me if they'd had sex. Haley must not have seen that. This was just great.

I would never have sex with anyone who wasn't her ever again. Dominic growled, "FIND the guy who pretended to be us. If the girl got away he did too, and we could find him. Then he's a fucking dead human." I agreed, "I will find him, Dominic. He will pay for what he did to Emmaline." Dominic was appeased.

I honestly couldn't blame her for her reaction. If that had been projected to me, I'd have gone on a killing spree. Thinking of her with someone else was like a punch to the gut. If I'd seen it, they would've had to chain me in silver to stop me from killing whatever I got my hands on. I kissed her and told her to sleep.

When she woke me up before she left for school I got up and hit the gym myself. I'd just knocked a heavy bag to the ground when I smelled my Beta. Dylan asked, "What did the heavy bag ever do to you, Lucas?" I growled at him. He raised an eyebrow, "You looking for a fight? Because you know I'll give you a better one than the bag that can't move. I can't beat you, but I am better than the bag. I can't believe you didn't link me. Thinking bags will give you a better fight. I'm insulted."

I told him, "Call Eric." Dylan's eyebrows raised, "Exsqueeze me? I'm not good enough? I've got to call King Alpha prick because you're that mad?" I just looked at him.

He stuck his tongue out then pulled out his phone, “Hello my super special fun sized ninja fairy whom I adore. I need you to get King Alpha Prick to our gym, stat.” I heard Haley laugh, “This had better be good. I had plans with him during the triplet’s nap.”

I heard a pop. Eric took one look at me and said, “Haley, snap me into gym clothes.” Haley nodded and snapped them both into gear. She asked, “Do you want to fight us both?” I looked at Eric.

Dylan clapped, “DEAR GODDESS PLEASE LET THIS HAPPEN!” I nodded. Before I could process anything else, Haley tackled me to the ground. Dylan was ecstatic, “YES! YOU SEE? THAT’S HOW THAT HAPPENS! SHE’S FREAKING FAST! She’s a super special fun sized ninja fairy flash.”

I growled and jumped up to attack as Haley popped away. Eric hit me and I turned to face him. We sparred for an hour. Afterwards, I could honestly say I’m glad Haley was not on the side of the fairy’s when we were at war. I held up my hand, “I’m good now.”

Eric asked, “What happened?” Dylan said, “Who knows King Alpha of the pricks? Lacy and Brad assured me Emmaline is fine. My Beta blood had that question before you did. I just need that notated for the record.” Haley amended, “Physically she’s fine. Emotionally, I doubt it. I’d still be on a murderous rampage if I’d seen Eric doing what that witch bitch showed Emmaline.”

I growled, “You didn’t see it all. You saw the beginning. She’d started over.” Haley paled, “Don’t tell me she saw you have sex with someone else.” I growled, “She did.” Eric winced, “Fuck.” Dylan’s jaw dropped, “But... it wasn’t really you. That counts in your favor, right?”

I growled, “And I want to know who it was. Because he’s a fucking dead man for doing this to my mate! She popped away from me in the middle of things getting hot and heavy because I ripped her damn shirt off. Apparently, the fake me tore it off

in the same way the fake me did to that fucking BITCH!” Eric winced.

Dylan asked, “So this is about blue balls? Gotta say, I thought it was more serious.” Haley said, “Uh oh.” I tackled Dylan to the ground. Haley said, “Eric, you should separate them.” Eric laughed, “Nope. I’m good.”

I hit Dylan several times before the wind knocked us apart and Haley popped between us. Haley demanded, “Settle the fuck down, Dylan was just being himself. He knows this isn’t about blue fucking balls.” I growled at Dylan who smiled at me, “And now we feel better.”

I charged him and the wind blew me away from him again. Haley yelled, “GROW UP! I can do this all damn day. I can knock your asses into the wall repeatedly by calling the wind. You’ll never touch each other, and you won’t get anywhere near me. CALM THE FUCK DOWN!”

Dylan laughed, “Maybe you should calm down, my special fun sized ninja fairy. I’m fine. He needs to be angry and get it out. It’s what us Beta’s are for. I’m perfectly fine.” Eric laughed, “Word to the wise, telling my wife to calm down is a hard no.” Haley grumbled, “Telling ANY women to calm down is a hard fucking no. Men are different.”

Eric teased, “Good to know, Angel.” Dylan asked, “Don’t you feel better now, my precious Alpha? You do. Come on, I know you do.” I sighed, “I do.” Haley said, “Good. So, you think the guy who was the fake you got away? Because I have an alternative theory.”

Eric interjected, “Of course you do.” He kissed her forehead and Haley smiled at him. Dylan squealed, “What’s the fairy hijinks alternative? Is he dead? Because if I spend the COUNTLESS hours my best friend is going to make me spend looking for a dead guy... It’s really going to cut into the time I get to bang Lac...”

I growled, “DO NOT finish that sentence.” Dylan grumbled, “I’m going to have Brad bring Emmaline back for a midday bang. You’re moody.” I growled, “No, you won’t.” Dylan asked, “Wouldn’t we all be happier though?” I stared at

him. Eventually he yelled, “FINE! I’ll just get you coffee. That works for me.” He linked someone.

I took a deep breath and asked, “Haley, what’s your theory?” Haley said, “What if the person who was you is the traitor in your pack? None of your pack would’ve questioned fellow pack member being in the school. You have to have teachers old enough for a daughter to have been mated to someone in Hammond’s pack.”

Dylan chimed in, “Actually, there are six faculty members with daughters that were mated to someone in Hammond’s pack. Bless you, Haley. You are breathing life into the time I have for my sex life.” I growled. Dylan shrugged, “What? I didn’t name names, you inferred. That’s obviously not my fault.”

A pack member walked in, handed me coffee, then left quickly. Haley laughed and I ran my hand through my hair. I lamented, “She’s my sister, Dylan. Besides, if you even thought about having sex with another girl; I’d kick your ass.”

Dylan put a hand on his chest, “Well, I never.” He even said it in a southern accent. He sobered, “In all seriousness, I would never hurt Lacy. I’d cut off my own hand before causing her one second of pain. Stop making serious Dylan appear. He’s just no fun.” I nodded, “I know. On both counts.”

Eric said, “Lucas, let’s take a walk. Dylan don’t talk to my wife, don’t look at her, and unless you want to be pulverized... do NOT touch her.” Haley laughed, “What if we stay on opposite sides of the mat? Then can we talk?” Eric considered then said, “If you really want to, I was trying to help you. He’s annoying.”

Haley smiled and popped into Eric’s arms, “He’s my friend, and deep down you know he’s funny. He’s your friend too. I figured that out a while ago. He gets away with so much because you’re friends.” Eric growled, “Sure he’s funny... looking.”

Dylan said, “How you wound me King Alpha Prick. Have no fear, I know that you are just warm for my form. You are

aggrieved that you met Haley before you could convince me to sow my wild oats batting for the other team.” Haley laughed.

I linked Dylan, “Why? He’s going to hit you, and you won’t be able to say he hasn’t.” Eric was already moving. Dylan tried to run, but Eric caught him easily and pinned him. He told him, “You are not my type, Dylan. Do not EVER suggest in front of my wife that I’d fuck you or anyone else. Got it?” Dylan nodded.

Haley put her hands on Eric’s chest. “Eric, it was a joke. I’m not upset.” Dylan said, “Yeah, she likes Lucas and she KNOWS you two got it on. Plus, my record of you not punching me continues. Gosh, I’m on such a roll today.”

Haley said, “Dylan, give me a second please.” Dylan smiled at her, “I am but your humble servant, I will do as you say.” Haley smiled then kissed Eric. She whispered, “It’s ok, Thor. He meant nothing by it. The women you’ve been with bother me more than the men do anyway. Men aren’t catty ass bitches who try to throw my lack of sexual experience in my fucking face.”

I winced. Dylan linked me, “Uh oh. You might have to fight King Alpha Prick to calm him down now. Our gym will have to clear all day. I was going to give Alex the all clear. Poor Alex. R.I.P. our schedule we worked so hard on.”

Eric growled, “WHO FUCKING SAID THAT TO YOU?” Haley sighed, “Claudzilla, for one.” Eric said, “Who else, Haley?” She kissed him then pulled back, “We can talk about that home. Go take care of your friend. I didn’t have some bitchy witchy project images of you having sex into my head. Which you can all fucking thank your moon goddess for because you’d need all my brothers, yourself, and my dad to stop me; and they’d have to catch me first.”

She broke off seemingly thinking about something then added, “Ok, I take that back. You’d need Aiden too. He’s the only one who could catch me.” Eric laughed, “That’s so you, Angel.” She smiled, “You’re mine.” Eric kissed her, “As you’re mine.” He put her down and turned to me.

He inclined his head, "Let's go." He shifted the second we were out of the door. I followed suit letting Dominic free. We ran several miles before Eric shifted back. I ran a bit longer then joined him shifting into human form.

Eric asked, "Do you feel better?" I sighed, "A little. That damn woman came into our home and did that to my mate. Someone DRUGGED her in OUR home. How the FUCK can I claim to be able to protect her when this shit happens in our home?"

Eric was quiet then he asked, "Do you think I can protect Haley?" I was bewildered, "Of course you can." He reminded me, "Haley was taken from my backyard. Vanessa, my own pack member, challenged Haley for the Luna position and I could do nothing. Haley has flashbacks and panic attacks that I can't stop. Her family and I tortured and killed her uncle. She saw him die and he still haunts her. We do what we can. You can protect Emmaline, that's not a claim. You have no power over witches or warlocks. None of us can stop them projecting into anyone's mind. Haley told me Marcious was going to help Emmaline with her mental shields."

I nodded, "He did. She's going to practice more." Eric shrugged, "Then it's out of your control." I growled, "That's fucking BULLSHIT! I'm supposed to protect her!" Eric said, "I know. Believe me Lucas, I know. I hate the shit Haley deals with. My whole life, I was taught that I would make everything better for my mate. That's a lie. It's still a relationship and I hate myself for the fact that there have been times; I made things worse for Haley. I'm not always the hero in our story, but she doesn't need me to be. She's a hero, and she needs a partner. It's not a superhero and sidekick situation. We are partners, and we have saved each other on multiple occasions. She's strong enough to stand without me though. That's what your mate and Luna does. They are strong enough on their own. I simultaneously love and hate that. I have to fight my instincts to protect her at all costs, but you have to let Emmaline handle her business. Be there for her always, but don't feel like you can't protect her. You can."

I sighed staying quiet for several moments, “That was very wise.” Eric laughed, “Part of it is something my dad said to me.” I laughed, “Of course, Nathan always knows what he’s talking about.” Eric nodded, “My dad is a knowledgeable man. Are you alright?” I nodded, “I’m much better, thank you.”

Eric snorted, “Let’s get back before Dylan convinces my wife to make this a daily visit.” I laughed, “He’ll try. He loves his fairy show, and Haley is the star.” Eric smiled, “Yes, but she’s my star.” We were both laughing as we shifted back.

We both pulled up startled when we got to the gym. Haley was cackling as four of my pack warriors carried her around in a makeshift chair with poles. Another pack warrior was fanning her. Dylan said, “You see? We worship you here. Come more often, and this will all be at your service.” Eric growled and ran faster. Dominic was howling with laughter.

When Eric reached Haley, she snapped his clothes and he ripped her out of the chair baring his teeth at Dylan. He told her, “This is why I didn’t want you talking to him. Dylan, she’s FUCKING MINE!” Dylan put his hands up, “No one was arguing that. I was simply making excellent points, if I do say so myself, for why she should visit Emmaline here more often.” Eric growled, “If she comes, I come.”

Dylan sighed, “That’s fine. Not even you can ruin the fairy show, King Alpha Prick. Though I bet you’d try, you just can’t help it. This was but a taste of my plan, my fun sized ninja fairy. I’ll have it laid out perfectly later.”

I laughed. Haley snapped me some clothes as well. Dylan said, “See? You didn’t even have to go grab shorts. How handy is that?” Eric said, “Your own Luna can do that too.” Dylan countered, “I am aware.” Eric said, “Angel, pop us home before we send their pack into heat again.”

Dylan quickly disagreed, “No, you should stay! That would be great, but if you could wait like a day that would be better. Back to back heats sounds like Dylan is out of shape... Help a brother out.” Haley laughed, “Brother?” Eric explained, “It’s a saying. We are leaving.” Haley frowned, “But he’s my friend, not my brother.” I laughed as they popped away.

I told my Beta, “Sometimes Dylan, I swear you want him to kill you.” Dylan smiled, “No, no. I want to live, what we now know to be, a very long life. I have mate friendship immunity now which surpasses my simple being his friend immunity status. As long as Haley likes me, I am untouchable. MUHAHAHA I have such power. I have a get out of jail free card that never expires. How you cannot give him crap is beyond me. He’s so damn hard to like sometimes. He’s good looking, his mate is perfect, he’s a prince of the Hackura now, he’s aligned with the fairy’s and Hackura, and did I mention his mate is perfect.”

Dylan shook his head, “GOD! They even go into alternate realities. If anyone was meant to meet other reality versions of our group and regale the tales... IT WAS ME! But noooo. He gets to go. There will be a Haley who grows up with King Titus because of it. At least we don’t have to deal with that King Alpha Prick... those poor versions of ourselves. He’ll be even worse in that one. Maybe that version of you will join me on the dark side.”

I laughed, “I doubt it. I’m happy for him. He’s my friend, and our ally. His backing is ours; should we need it.” Dylan groaned, “COME ON! Just admit it, it’s just us here. He left, just say it. HE SUCKS!” I laughed, “He’s a good friend.” Dylan groaned, “I know deep down somewhere, you know he’s the King Alpha Prick. One day, in a weak moment, I’ll get you to admit it out loud.” Dylan did an evil laugh again. I rolled my eyes.

We walked into the office. I asked him, “With Haley’s theory; who are our suspects?” Dylan answered, “The gym teacher, the social studies teacher, the English teacher’s husband, I hate to say this one because I know Emmaline likes him but Mr. Blaze, a biology teacher, and the principal.” I sighed, “I know all those people.” Dylan said, “We all do.”

I groaned and sat down in my chair, “Did Alpha Cameron have any of the daughter’s?” Dylan sighed, “No, some of the pack decided to leave. He’s reaching out to packs to see where they settled, but all six girls’ whereabouts are unknown.” I

asked, "Do we know if any of them are mated to a witch?" Dylan happily answered, "We do know that, nary a one."

I groaned then asked, "Did any of their mates die?" Dylan shook his head, "Not according to our information. Not all of Hammond's warriors fought. According to Alpha Cameron, many said they no longer respected their former Alpha's leadership. They said he was losing it, and they couldn't be part of taking another Alpha's mate. Scratch that, they said ANY werewolves mate. Especially unwillingly on her part. Then you add in our fun sized ninja fairy's fury, and they made the wise choice to not be on her righteous, and fun for me, war path." I said, "At least I can have some faith that overall, we are respectable as a group of supernatural's. I want all those men in our pack watched closely."

I called Logan. He answered, "Alpha Lucas, this is a surprise." I asked, "How much do Gunner's services cost?" Logan sounded surprised, "You need to have someone's electronics' monitored?" I said, "I need to monitor six members of my pack, and I can't be sure that my people can do it without alerting someone. We would lose our advantage against Alpha Hammond if he found out we were looking for a traitor among ourselves."

Logan said, "Send me the names. Gunner will monitor them discreetly." I said, "Thank you, Prince Logan. Send me a contract for his fee, and I'll sign it." Logan snorted, "And have my mate try to cut off my balls? I'm going to pass. Besides, this is about family. Emmaline is my family too now, and Hammond is coming for her. I will help you in what way I can, Alpha Lucas." I said, "Call me Lucas."

Logan laughed, "If you'll call me Logan." I agreed, "I will. This really means a lot to me." Logan said, "I will always help my family. I wish I could put it out there that Emmaline is considered family to me and mine. That would let everyone know who she really was though. I really want to kill David to just get over that hump."

I laughed, "It would solve many problems, but I want David." Logan said, "I could be persuaded when the time comes for you to join me with him. He caused both our mates'

immeasurable pain, and I won't let that go." I agreed, "Neither will I." Logan said, "Good. Send me the names, Gunner will monitor them."

I turned to Dylan and asked, "Is Lacy's heat over? How have you been here this whole time?" Dylan looked at his watch, "I don't think so. This is our first non-fairy induced heat so it's not a certain science here. I'm taking notes. She's sleeping though so I thought I'd join the fun." His phone lit up and he said, "Got to go, she's up." I asked, "Is that a baby monitor with a video feed?" He yelled, "Yes, I had to monitor the situation!" I laughed as he ran away.

My dad came in, "Was that Dylan I saw running through the house like his hair was on fire?" I nodded, "Yup, he left Lacy sleeping to join me for a bit. I'm guessing he'll get hell for not being at her disposal the second she woke up." My dad smiled, "That boy, for all his kid-like tendencies, is an excellent Beta." I smiled, "He is. I want to run something by you."

My dad sat down, "Hit me." I said, "This kid Grayson. I don't know if it's my instincts telling me has something to do with this whole Alpha Hammond situation or if it's wishful thinking." My dad nodded, "I'd be glad if he did, but break it down for me."

I explained my theory to him of Grayson being Andie's child with Hammond's half-brother. Thomas said Andie was a wiccan and we knew Grayson was too. That was thin evidence, but our investigators were hitting a wall learning more about Grayson just like they were with Andie.

My dad thought about it, "I don't think it's wishful thinking, son. I think you do what I taught you. Following your instincts. Obviously, we can't bring him in and torture the son of a bitch, but we can monitor him." I nodded and got on making that happen.

The rest of the week flew by. It was hard since I was only getting Dylan for a few hours here and there when Lacy was sleeping, but Lacy came first. I was just glad I was getting Dylan at all. I missed the light heartedness he brought to all

the situations. Emmaline helped me with some paperwork Tuesday night, which was a great experience for her, and we got to spend time together.

I was pissed I'd had to send my dad with her to fairy lessons, but I just couldn't get away without Dylan here. Dylan joined me mid-day Thursday beaming, "I'm really tired, but it was worth it." I laughed asking, "Her heat's over?" Dylan nodded, "Yup. She's working on the homework Emmaline had collected for her." I laughed, "Of course she is."

I caught Dylan up. He smirked, "I knew you'd be lost without me." I smiled, "I'd argue with you, but it took me two hours to find a file the other day. I was so pissed because I knew you'd have it in minutes." Dylan laughed, "I have a system." I said, "That you NEED to write down. Emmaline caught on though. She found the damn file in ten minutes."

Dylan laughed, "At least you found it. So, Grayson is being watched?" I nodded, explaining my logic to him. Dylan said, "Yeah, I know it's bad, but I really hope he has something to do with this so he can stop being a problem. My fun sized fairy will disappear him. Won't that be fun?"

I said, "We'd have to be careful. He's gone to the cops about us." Dylan said, "Uhh, I know I was gone for a few days, but you forgot our fun sized ninja fairy is not in our pack. King Alpha Prick will be so upset. He's ever so testy about her." I smirked, "I missed you, man."

I thought it over and called Dustin. He answered, "Hey, Lucas." I asked him, "Do you have a spell or something that can alter someone's memories or erase them?" Dustin said, "Of course we do. I can even give someone amnesia. It's not a simple process but I can do it." I told him, "We might need to keep that idea in our pockets for Grayson should he be a part of this."

I explained to Dustin our thoughts and agreed, "I'll gather the supplies and talk it over with my siblings. Well, maybe not Katie. She's a bit... touchy and vindictive these days in her spells." I laughed, "Pregnancy." Dustin said, "Combined with

her need to keep Evie safe. She's determined to never let anyone take her from us again. Ryan and I agree she just has different methods of how she'd want to accomplish that." We spoke a bit longer then hung up.

Dylan groaned, "Lacy is joining training. Damn it! I was hoping she'd stay out of training until she knew if she was pregnant." I raised an eyebrow, "She'll know the second Haley or Emmaline sees her." Dylan shot up and ran, "COME ON! We have to get there before that space unheard chant. It's my current nemesis. My show is trying to take off without me. What WERE you thinking, Lucas? I'm exhausted. What's your excuse?"

I rolled my eyes, "You won't make it." Dylan said, "Where there is a will there's a way, doubting Mufasa." I replied, "If you weren't racing a fairy then maybe." Dylan growled. He was breathing heavily when he shifted back grabbing some shorts, he ran into the gym.

We missed it. He growled, "FOILED!" He turned to Eric, "Did you hear anything before the space unheard chant?" Eric frowned, "No? What was I supposed to hear?" Dylan started to pace. I said, "If Lacy was pregnant or not."

Eric shrugged, "I wouldn't tell if I did because my wife would be upset with me." Dylan said, "You see, Lucas? He's the king Alpha Prick." I rolled my eyes, "You'll be fine." Haley and Emmaline squared off while Miley and Lacy did.

Only because I'd watched them before did I notice Miley changed her style. I smiled and linked Eric, "Lacy is pregnant." Eric replied, "I would have to agree." Dylan didn't have a chance to notice because we had to start diving. Emmaline was throwing hail at Haley, but Haley was using her wind to knock them away.

It was a good distraction for Dylan who was yelling ridiculous stuff. We couldn't really even watch the practice. Dylan got hit by hail and grunted, "Man down. Beta down. Man, that hurts!" I laughed. Eric said, "I'd say you didn't deserve it, but I'm sure you did something at some point to deserve that."

Dylan said, “Deep down, I know that you like me King Alpha Prick.” Eric rolled his eyes, “Keep dreaming, Dylan.” Dylan said, “If Lacy’s pregnant I hope our pups are mates.” Eric said it as a matter of fact, “You’d better hope you have a girl then Dylan, because no one will touch my little girl.”

Dylan smiled broadly, “Your little girl will have a mate though.” Eric growled. I linked Dylan, “Not the button to push. You enjoy that mantle of him not punching you. Cassie has a mate comments might tip it against you.”

Dylan ignored me, “She looks JUST like her mother too. I bet men will fall at her feet.” Eric went at Dylan not caring that he got pelted with hail. Dylan said, “You know she will have a mate.” Eric growled, “I hope you have a girl, Dylan.”

He grabbed Dylan and held him up using him as a shield. I winced as Dylan took shots of hail all over his body for several minutes before Eric put him down. Eric told him, “You can mess with me Dylan, but you leave my little girl out of it. Understand?” Dylan winced, “Got it, baby Cassie is off limits.”

Eric nodded then said, “Yes, my little girl looks just like my wife. My little girl will have everything her mother didn’t, and if someone so much as looks at her sideways; I’ll kill them. She will never be in casts like my wife.”

Dylan was serious for just a moment, “I’d never let anyone hurt Cassie either, Eric. I swear. Consider me on guard. I’ll activate my Beta Chat. NOTHING shall ever happen to little Cassie. We SHALL ensure it. Nary a scraped knee even. We will be everywhere, like the creepy ninja’s.”

Eric nodded, “Thank you.” Dylan rubbed his chest. I linked him, “I did warn you.” Dylan said, “Maybe Haley will heal me.” I nodded, “She would.”

Haley and Emmaline were done and talking to each other. Haley popped to Eric. Dylan said, “Oh beautiful perfect fun sized ninja fairy friend, please heal me before you go.” Haley laughed, “Did you get hit with hail?” Dylan said, “After being used as a shield after a series of events that may have been

entirely my fault, yes I did.” Haley laughed and healed Dylan while Eric stared at him. They popped away.

The next day I’d realized I hadn’t ordered Emmaline flowers and chocolates yet because I’d been so busy without Dylan. I’d ordered her blue and white roses and an assorted box of chocolates to be delivered to the school.

Dylan came dancing into the room. I asked, “Do I want to know why you are dancing?” Dylan said, “I’m going to be a dad! ME!” I laughed, “You’ll be a good one.” He smiled, “I will, won’t I?” I nodded, “You will. So, I’m going to be an uncle.” Dylan smiled, “You are. You’re next buddy. Dad life is coming for you. I get to tell dad jokes which means the stars have aligned!” I said, “Eventually it will be my turn.”

Dylan wiggled his eyebrows, “Lacy told me Emmaline said she’d be next after Lacy.” The joy I’d felt at that statement was unlike anything I’d felt before. I asked, “Does my mom know she’s getting her long awaited grandpup yet?” Dylan gasped in mock horror, “You didn’t hear her scream? I was sure they’d heard her in Australia.” I laughed. “I must have been inside Emmaline.” Dylan snorted and we got to work.

I smiled when Emmaline linked me about what I’d sent her. I made sure she liked them and got back to work. Several hours later, a portal opened in my office. Dylan squealed, “That just happens in our lives now. It’s awesome.”

Logan then Katie stepped through. I smiled asking her, “Are you here to see Emmaline? She’s not back from school yet.” Katie smiled, “I know. I’m going downstairs to wait for her.” She left quickly. Logan announced, “Something’s up. Emmaline asked to see Katie.” I said, “She could just want to spend time with her.” Logan said, “I think it’s both. Something is up, and she wants to spend time with her.”

I nodded while Dylan and I kept working. We were almost caught up from the week. Emmaline popped to me and gave me a kiss before popping away with Katie. I asked Logan, “Do you need me to ask Emmaline where they are?” Logan said, “No, I called my sister and made her tell me the location of

Emmaline's treehouse and sanctuary. While my men can't find it, they are around in the surrounding area."

I smiled, "Of course they are. Has Marcus let Torvi out of the Hackura realm?" Logan tilted his head, "Let is a strong word. Torvi agreed to stay, and the next girl's day is in our realm because Torvi refused to miss it. Marcus talked to Haley, and she agreed to have it hosted at the castle to ease his mind." I laughed, "Of course she did. Haley would do anything for you all." Logan agreed, "She would."

Brad entered the room. Dylan groaned, "That's not a good face. Make a different face." Brad winced, "We had a situation today at school with the human Grayson." I growled and opened my report from those watching said obnoxious human.

I stood asking, "He talked to Emmaline?" Brad nodded, "He came up and asked Emmaline to talk to him. He refused to speak to her in front of others." I growled, "Tell me she didn't go off with him alone." Brad winced, "No, she took Tessa."

Logan laughed, "Tessa? I heard about her from my sister." Dylan said, "Then you'll know your sister likes her now. I think they are friends. Tessa is a good warrior, and Emmaline would've noticed that."

I growled. Brad cautiously said, "Tessa stayed close; she even had a hold of Emmaline's arm." I couldn't hold Dominic back from taking over. He snarled, "WHAT HAPPENED? WHAT DID THAT WRETCHED HUMAN DO TO HER?" Brad flinched, "Nothing, he never touched her. He offered to help her get away from you... to reject you and run away."

Dylan sucked in a breath, "This is why we warn a Beta. ALERT! Angry Sleep Tyrant Alpha. Lock up your windows. He'll be loose at any moment to terrorize the unsuspecting pack members except the high schoolers who did not warn a beta. They are already hiding, the jerks. Teenagers. What can you do?"

I growled and started throwing things. Dominic snarled, "SHE'S MINE!" Dylan calmly stated, "We know. She knows. She's even here. Which means she doesn't agree with

Grayson. Let's step away from throwing things at us poor bystanders."

Dominic growled. Dylan said, "I mean not Grayson. That's obviously not his name. He's the wretched human now, that's obviously his name." Dominic kept growling, "I AM NOT LUCAS!" Dylan put his hands up, "Ok, Dominic. You are still Dominic, right? Or... Are you like the seriously whipped King Alpha Prick's wolf who changed his name for our very own special fun sized ninja fairy?"

Dominic thundered, "I AM DOMINIC! MATE CALLS ME DOMINIC!" Dylan made a face, "Ok, just checking." I growled again, "Get her back here!" Dylan raised his hand, "Flag on the play. That's not the best plan. Let's let Lucas come back before the girls get back. You can talk to Emmaline once you've taken a breath or run twenty miles. I'm not picky whichever happens first, we can play it by ear."

Dominic snarled, "Are you SUGGESTING I'd hurt my mate?" Dylan held up his hands, "No... no, no no. I'm suggesting that you are very upset right now. Which could lead to your mate getting upset, and then she could pop away." Dominic growled, "SHE WON'T LEAVE ME!"

Dylan sighed, "Not permanently, no. She's been known to say you're sexist in the past. Well, not you. Lucas. Let's call a spade a spade here, Dominic; you are leaps and bounds more sexist than Lucas has ever thought about being. Just let Lucas come back, please."

Dominic linked me, "I'll give you control back, but I AM claiming mate AND talking to her later." I told him, "That's fine." He gave me back control. Dylan said, "Thank god. I'm the Alpha wolf whisperer people. I'll be expecting a plaque with my new title. Lucas, Emmaline's here in our territory. She's not leaving, ok?"

I growled, "She should NEVER have gone to speak with him." Dylan said, "Women. Independent little things. What can you do?" I growled, "She went with TESSA for fucks sake! When did they become friends?"

Logan interjected, “I’d guess she took Tessa because all her friends are pregnant. She also knows my sister agreed to let Tessa move to their territory. Which means she knows Haley knows Tessa is not a crazy she wolf.”

I asked, “Fine. Tessa is fine. How doesn’t she see Grayson as a threat?!” Logan pointed out, “She obviously does, or she would’ve talked to him alone.” I growled, “Don’t make sense right now, Logan.” Logan shrugged but stopped talking.

Emmaline popped back. Her expression told me she knew why I was mad. She played dumb, but I wasn’t here for games. Dominic growled, “Let me out, I’ll talk to mate. Because IS NOT a good enough answer.”

I let him take over. She replied saying they would be very happy together when they ran away. Dominic wouldn’t let me through our connection to explain she was being sarcastic at a very bad time. He had her pinned against the wall in no time.

Dylan linked me, “Dominic, let’s take a breath.” It didn’t work so I tried, “She’s not leaving, Dominic. It’s alright.” Brad winced when she called him a narc. Brad guards her on my order, not hers. He reports to me, that’s his damn job. He’s not a narc.

Dominic couldn’t keep his instincts at bay anymore and kissed her hard. I cautioned, “Don’t mate with her, there are other people in the room.” He begrudgingly pulled back. She was going to tell me after spending time with Katie. That was something.

We needed to have a quick highlighted breakdown of the day come first when shit like this goes down. Dominic wanted to kill Grayson. Her comment about losing a lead surprised him enough that I was able to take back over.

Dylan linked me, “I got you. Just keep doing those breathing exercises I enrolled you in when you became Alpha.” He got her talking. I linked him, “Grayson was there when she saw the fake me? Why didn’t I know that?” Dylan said, “I mean... there were other more important details. I’m sure it slipped her mind.” I growled, “He was going to take her outside to whoever was waiting to take her from me. I’m

GOING to kill this kid.” Dylan amended, “You will kill him at the right moment. Let’s wait for the right moment, which to be clear; Is not right now.”

I wasn’t surprised Grayson had called me a murderer. If he was in fact Andie’s son, he probably liked Christy. Dylan linked me, “Now, I just feel like no one listens to us Beta’s. Alpha Hammond deliberately ignored the fact that our fun sized ninja fairy killed Christy.” I shrugged, “It’s probably for the best. I’m not putting that out there. That would split some of Hammond’s people’s focus. We could miss some.” Dylan nodded.

Dominic growled, “I can’t hold back anymore, Lucas. I NEED to claim her.” I told everyone to get out. I linked Dylan, “Seriously. Everyone needs to hustle. I can’t hold Dominic back from claiming her any longer.” Dylan responded, “On the double!”

Dominic was unleashed. Emmaline encouraged and teased him even. She started popping around. Anytime I’d almost reached her she popped away. Then she popped out of the damn room.

Dominic roared, flinging the door open. Dylan said, “That was fast. I thought for sure we wouldn’t see you the rest of the night. You’re losing your touch.” Dominic growled, “She popped away. Mate picked the WRONG time to play catch the fairy.” Dylan howled with laughter as I charged out of the house snarling.

I shifted and made my way to Emmaline’s sanctuary. If she wasn’t here, she was in her tree house. I found her naked in the water. She had no idea what was coming for her. I dove in after her. I came up behind her and pulled her to me. Dominic growled, “Naughty fairy.” I entered her with no warning.

She screamed, “LUCAS!” I lightly choked her neck and bit her mark hard. She screamed louder. Once I’d finished, I pulled out of her and threw her over my shoulder smacking her hard on the butt.

I ordered, “Conjure me a flogger, baby girl.” She did it and I smacked her butt again. I growled, “Say yes Alpha.” I put

Emmaline down. She dutifully stated, “Yes, Alpha.” I nipped her ear, “Conjure me a chair.” She complied, “Yes, Alpha.”

I sat and bent her over my knee. I instructed, “You will count and say thank you Alpha after ever smack.” I brought the flogger down. She followed directions, “One, thank you Alpha.” We continued for thirty, and I had her straddle me.

I ordered, “Ride me, baby girl.” She smiled, “Yes, Alpha.” I gripped her hips and helped her move at a fast pace. I stood, “Wrap your legs around me.” She moaned, “Yes, Alpha.” I pounded into her, “You. Will. NEVER. Leave me.”

She held onto my neck, “No... GOD! I won’t.” I growled and laid us on the ground. I thrust into her and paused, “You’ll never leave me. SAY IT!” I pulled out of her and thrust back in. She screamed, “I won’t, Alpha.” I repeated the process demanding, “You won’t what?” She whimpered, “Leave. I won’t leave, I promise. I don’t want to. I love you.” I flipped her onto all fours.

We didn’t stop until her alarm went off. I glanced at her phone, “Shit. It’s four in the morning.” Emmaline stretched, “I’ll pop you to bed, go to training, then pop back to bed to sleep with you.” I frowned, “You need sleep.” Emmaline agreed, “I’ll sleep after training.” I sighed, “Fine.” She popped me back to bed.

I forced myself to stay awake until she came back. She smiled, “I thought you’d be asleep.” I shook my head, “Not without you, come here.” She climbed into bed with me, and we both drifted off to sleep. I heard an alarm go off again. I groaned, “Why?”

Emmaline laughed, “It’s twelve thirty in the afternoon. I don’t want to get my days and nights mixed up because you and your wolf got all crazy yesterday.” I growled, “We didn’t get crazy.” Emmaline disagreed, “You did. You know I won’t leave you. I promised not to remember?”

I grabbed her and rolled on top of her, “I do seem to recall something about that.” I rubbed my dick on her clit. She moaned, “Lucas...” I smirked, “You’re already wet. I can

smell it, and I can feel it. Do you have any idea how hard it is for me to get things done when I know I can do this to you?"

Emmaline gasped as I continued rubbing her. I felt her mischief in my chest before she teased me, "Probably not as hard as it will be when I tell you I feel this way when I see you shirtless. Or when you kiss me, or you have this look you give me. I swear my underwear has caught on fire a few times."

I growled entering her. She arched her hips whispering, "Oh my..." I growled and bit her earlobe, "You're mine, only mine." We continued at a slower pace than we'd kept up in her sanctuary. She popped us into the shower when we were done, and we continued our ritual of washing each other.

The weekend passed by too quickly. Emmaline and Lacy helped Dylan and I with paperwork throughout the week. We were having so many people watched; that activity combined with our daily pack life was bogging us down with paperwork.

Dylan was not happy when Lacy decided to go with Emmaline to fairy lessons. I had to send my dad again. They hadn't been gone that long when he linked me, "Son, there's a fairy here VERY interested in Emmaline." I growled, "Who?" My dad answered, "I don't know, he's working with the water fairies."

I growled again, "It's usually one of her sisters." My dad informed me, "Eric said they were both busy." I called Eric. He answered, "Lucas..." I interrupted the rest of his greeting, "Get Emmaline to work with Haley. I don't like what I'm hearing." Eric answered, "Consider it done."

I asked, "Do you know this fairy I'm hearing about?" Eric replied, "I've never seen him before. Done' worry, he won't get near her. He wasn't close to her anyway just keeping a close eye on her. Haley has her now."

I relaxed and told Dylan, "I'm not missing fairy lessons again." Dylan said, "I might have to tag along with Lacy. She's giving me shit because she had to get a new costume for our wedding. I told her that her bump is not visible. She said she looks bloated and fat, which is apparently my fault. Any

ideas on how to deal with that King Alpha Prick? Your mate has been pregnant before.”

Eric laughed, “Haley leaned towards her fairy side during her pregnancy. She didn’t get mad at me other than that whole Claudia situation; the witch freezing us all, and us being out of commission for three days. She wasn’t too mad at me by the time I woke up either, she’d redirected that anger.”

Dylan glared at me demanding, “NOW, can you admit he sucks?” I laughed, “Maybe when Emmaline’s pregnant, I’ll agree.” Dylan growled, “No, you’ll suck then too. Your fairy is more of a fairy than his mate. Of course, Haley couldn’t be like a Hackura female. I heard stories about Miley’s pregnancy. King Alpha Prick DESERVED a piece of that action. No, no we ALL deserved for him to pay some kind of price for his life. His wife, who is a HACKURA PRINCESS; should’ve had a pregnancy LIKE A HACKURA. The universe is so cruel to me. I give and I give, and I get mocked with his life.”

Eric laughed, “To be fair, my wife is also a fairy princess.” Dylan bemoaned, “He’s making my point for me. HE SUCKS!” Eric asked, “So, is now when I should mention a male fairy is shamelessly flirting with Lacy? I could stop him, but you call me a prick, regularly, so... I’ll let it go until she asks for help.”

Dylan growled, “Activate King Alpha Prick! You go get that fairy away from my mate and pup. It’s LITERALLY the best thing about you. You’re terrifying. I’ll accept you doing that terrifying thing where your face splits, but that evil I’ll murder you glare would be best. I’m not picky you have so many terrifying options. Pick one!” Eric laughed, “I suppose I could, or not.” He hung up.

Dylan growled, “Get him back on the phone.” My dad linked me, “There’s no fairy flirting with Lacy.” I laughed, “My dad says no fairy is flirting with Lacy.” Dylan said, “HE HAS JOKES NOW?! The WORLD is ENDING! It’s a sign of the apocalypse. I’m writing a memo about it POST HASTE!” I laughed, “You keep pushing him.”

Dylan growled, “I thought we established when I was used as hail target practice pups were off limits!” I said, “You threw his fear in his face.” Dylan stopped pacing, “Clearly, I have wax in my ears. I think I heard you say fear. He has no fears. He’s a robot!”

I tilted my head, “Haley’s life and how her childhood went, hurts him.” Dylan said, “That will obviously never happen to Cassie.” I said, “I’m sure King Titus thought the same thing. I’m not saying it’s rational. I’m just saying Cassie looks just like Haley, and Eric was already going to be insane about protecting his little girl. You add in him dealing with Haley having flashbacks and panic attacks and looking just like his little girl...” Dylan frowned.

I continued, “Then let’s throw in that fairies have already tried to take Haley and Cassie. I know for a fact there have been several kidnapping attempts on his pups. He can and will protect them, but I’m sure it plagues him to think what could happen to Cassie if someone got a hold of her.” Dylan sighed, “I’ve changed my mind. Moon Goddess DO NOT let any pup of mine be the mated to ANY of Eric’s daughters. Current or Future. Males only, ok thank you.”

I laughed, “It would be hilarious.” Dylan winced, “Until he killed my pup.” I rolled my eyes, “He wouldn’t do that. Punch, probably. Kill, no. That would hurt his daughter.” Dylan said, “I’m cool with having a girl who’s one of his sons, current or future’s, mate though. Think of the jokes.”

He rubbed his hands together, “We would be in laws, it’s too perfect. The FUN I could have. I would be untouchable. The universe owes me this. It’s a small ask, and I’m owed.” I laughed, “You could ruin your ‘whole he hasn’t punched you’ streak.”

Dylan didn’t even acknowledge I’d spoken, “Plus, my daughter would still be close to our pack. It’s beautiful. You just know they are going to pop out pups continuously during the super long lifespan we all have now. I can get Lacy on board; we can pop out pup after pup. I’ll just up my chances. The fates know this would be HILARIOUS.”

I laughed, “We do have the money.” Dylan hit my arm, “That’s the spirit!” I laughed, “I’m already anticipating the family dinners, because Emmaline and I are coming.” Dylan smiled, “With your pups because they are cousins to the Conners pups. It’s GLORIOUS!” I smiled, “I’d be lying if I said all these pups coming didn’t make me excited for my own.”

Emmaline, Lacy, and my dad popped back in. Emmaline gave me a kiss, “Hi, Lucas.” I smiled back, “Hello, baby girl. I heard Hexxi and Idel were busy today. Who was your trainer?” Emmaline answered, “Halber. He said I’m really good already with my drowning and turning to water power.”

She glanced at me then rolled her eyes, “He’s my cousin, so wipe that look off your face.” I said, “Some supernatural’s don’t care about that. In some groups being first cousin’s is the only one that’s taboo. Is he your first cousin?” Emmaline said, “I don’t have a single clue. I also do not care. You’re the only man for me.” She kissed me again.

When we pulled apart Lacy smiled, “Haley fixed my costume situation. I think my sobs turned her into my fairy godmother too.” Emmaline laughed, “She would’ve done it anyway. She loves fashion and fixing problems.” Dylan asked, “What are we dressing as now?” Lacy smiled, “That is for me to know, and you to dress as I say.” Dylan agreed, “Whatever you want.” No one could say my Beta wasn’t a smart man.

I turned to Emmaline, “We need to figure out our costumes.” Emmaline smiled, “I’ve had ours figured out for weeks.” I asked, “Really? Who are we going as?” Emmaline smiled, “I’ll leave your costume wherever the guys are getting ready. I can’t tell you before the wedding.”

Her excitement was practically on my tongue. I frowned, “That makes me feel like you don’t want to be there when I find out.” Emmaline denied that, “Not really. I’d love to see your face, but I couldn’t possibly take that moment from Dylan on his special day.” Dylan clapped, “I’m so excited! A present for little old me. On Dylan and Lacy day. How apt.”

I rolled my eyes. Weeks flew by, and somehow, we were almost to Dylan and Lacy's wedding. Emmaline gave me a kiss, "Your sister is getting married tomorrow." I smiled, "That's the rumor. Are you still not telling me what our costumes are?" Emmaline smiled, "Nope, it's epic though." I laughed, "I'm sure it is."

I got up and did a quick workout. I could hear shouting before I walked into my office. I walked into a heated argument happening on the phone. I was startled to realize that Eric was yelling at Dylan. Dylan was eating popcorn and drinking his coffee looking far too happy.

I shut the door asking, "What happened now?" Dylan smiled, "King Alpha Prick isn't happy with some wedding details. He's the party pooper we all invite to things and deal with his party pooping attitude." Dylan's broad grin told me it wasn't good.

I rubbed my temples, "Eric wouldn't care about any detail of your wedding unless... Oh god. Haley's in the wedding." Eric growled, "She is and she's not WALKING WITH ALPHA THEO'S BETA FOR FUCKS SAKE."

My eyes widened. Despite myself hope built up that Alpha Theo was ready to amiable with me. I asked, "Alpha Theo is coming to your wedding?" Dylan frowned, "No, but Beta James and I are friends." I tried not to be disappointed, but I was. I missed my friend. Eric growled, "Beta James is NOT walking down the aisle with my WIFE!"

Dylan smiled, "I couldn't possibly ask Lacy to change something the day before our wedding." Eric's voice got dangerously quiet, "If he touches my wife, I'll kill him, then I'll beat your ass. Your mantle of me never hitting you will end so fast. Friend or not. He doesn't touch Haley." Eric hung up.

I gaped at Dylan. "Are you insane?" Dylan shrugged, "Don't worry, you're my best man." I said, "Of course I am, but Beta James? That's not safe for Haley." Dylan frowned, "What are you talking about?" I said, "Beta James hates Eric." Dylan said, "Yeah, well who doesn't?" I rubbed my temples,

“Do you not remember that Eric had sex with Beta James’ sisters. All four of them.”

Dylan snorted, “Please, we were there. They threw themselves at him knowing their sisters had been with him. He even told them, and they all literally said they didn’t care. I think it bonded them as sisters or whatever.”

I said, “I don’t think Beta James cares that they don’t. He fought Eric.” Dylan grumbled, “And Eric won. Again, we were all there. It was not James’ brightest moment challenging King Alpha Prick. I may hate him, or secretly be his bestie, but he’s a really good fighter. I admit this.”

I sighed, “I hope you know what you are doing.” Dylan advised, “Calm thyself, it will be fine! James won’t hurt Haley. Besides, I made it clear he couldn’t touch her, or she’d put him on the ground. I don’t want her to be uncomfortable. I detailed the no touching rule. He’s a Beta blood, he understands. I also didn’t make the who walks with who list. I just agreed.”

I shook my head, “You could’ve told Eric that.” Dylan said, “It’s like you want my life to be boring now that it has spice in it.” I laughed at him, “I just want you to stay alive. My niece or nephew needs their dad, and my sister needs her mate.” Dylan said, “Aww, shucks. I’ll be fine. James won’t touch Haley. King Alpha Prick would never kill me, I know you know that. I doubt he’d even hit me. James, now James is in danger. He’s not secret besties like KAP and I are.” Great. Now he was abbreviating the nickname he gave Eric. I sighed. Dylan would always be Dylan.

We got through our work at record speed. We were done when the girls got home from school. Emmaline came over to me, “I told Chelsea, Sam, Peter, and Drake they could spend the night here since all the girls are getting ready together. That’s ok right?” I kissed her, “It’s your home too, Emmaline. You don’t need my permission to invite people over.”

Emmaline sighed in relief, “Great. I invited Grayson...” I growled viciously. She giggled, “To get lost.” I pulled her to me kissing her hard, “You are playing a dangerous game, baby

girl.” Emmaline laughed, “You’re just too easy to get sometimes. I mean really. Do you think I’d invite him into our home? He’d probably try to record you holding me and turn it over the cops saying you were abusing me or something.” I admitted, “That does sound like his MO.”

We spent time with my parents and Dylan and Lacy until Chelsea, Sam, Drake, and Peter arrived. Both boys nodded to me. Peter said, “I hope this is ok. We just wanted Chelsea and Sam to get their sleep.” I assured them, “It’s not a problem. You guys are in the final stretch before parenthood.” Both guys smiled.

Drake told me, “Emmaline and Lacy have their shower all planned.” I thought about it, “Emmaline mentioned it, but we’ve been so busy. When is it?” Drake answered, “Next weekend.” Dylan pouted, “I should pay more attention. I blame you, Lucas. You distracted me. I could’ve told Lacy I wanted to spend time together next weekend. Now she’s going to be throwing a shower.”

Peter laughed, “Haley planned it.” Dylan clapped, “TELL ME no one told her how pup showers really go in this realm.” I laughed, “She had one thrown for her, I’m sure she knows.” Dylan growled, “DRAT!”

He walked away grabbing Lacy away from the girls. Emmaline popped away with Chelsea and Sam then popped back. She told the guys, “I popped them to your rooms. Lucas can show them how to get there, or I can.” I amended, “We can show them together.”

I led us up the stairs showing them to their room. Peter grinned when he saw Chelsea, “Back to where it all started, sugar baby momma.” Chelsea giggled as he shut the door. I glanced at Emmaline, “Did you know that was the room they mated in?” Emmaline nodded, “Yes, I thought they’d like that. I know they could’ve stayed with Chelsea’s parents, but I thought this time before the baby came... It would just be fun to enjoy being in the room where they started their lives together.”

I picked her up, “You’re so sweet and sentimental. Does that mean the night before our wedding we are staying in the Luna bedroom?” Emmaline smiled shyly, “I’d like to.” I nodded, “Then we will.” We showed Drake where Sam was.

We walked into our room so quietly I almost didn’t hear when Emmaline whispered, “What would you think... if we tried for a baby on my next concupiscence?” I turned, shocked. I swallowed, “Baby girl? I thought you wanted to wait until we are married.” Emmaline nodded, “Well, I was going to get my IUD removed after our wedding. My dad thinks my next concupiscence will be in January, so I thought maybe... If you don’t want to, though...”

I grabbed her and kissed her, “Baby girl, I’d start trying tomorrow if you wanted to. I want pups with you when you are ready. If you want to try in January, then that’s what we will do.” I kissed her, placing my forehead on hers. I asked, “Do you have any idea how happy you make me?” She smiled, “Not as happy as you make me.” I chuckled, “That’s not possible, baby girl. You are my everything.”

I kissed her and placed her back on the bed. I made love to her slowly and reverently. When we were finished, she curled into me, drawing circles on my chest, “I love you, Lucas Lyons. You’re going to be an amazing father.” I kissed her head, “You’ll be a great mother.” She wistfully responded, “I hope so.”

Her breathing evened out and I knew she had fallen asleep. I stayed up longer with a smile on my face. I couldn’t wait to see her pregnant with my pup. I woke to lips on mine. Emmaline was standing beside me. I pulled her back into bed. She giggled, “I have to go next door. I snapped the spa for the girls this time. Haley insisted that I practice. Lacy will send Dylan in here if I’m late, and you don’t want him to see me naked.”

I growled, “He knows better.” She giggled and squirmed away from me. “It’s their day today.” I grumbled, “Fine. What are we dressing as?” Emmaline teased, “I’m still not telling. Do you want to know what Eric and Haley are dressing up as?”

I sat up asking, “Does Eric know?” Emmaline shook her head saying no. That was good. I could know something he didn’t for a change. I gestured with both hands out, “Alright. Tell me.” Emmaline smiled, “Thor and Sif.” I laughed, “Dylan will be so disappointed Haley wasn’t even slightly mean with this couple’s costume. Who is Sif? Why isn’t Haley’s going as Jane?”

Emmaline started laughing, “I’m sorry. We had similar questions. Haley hasn’t seen the movies. She was going with the Norse god’s version. Evidently, fairy’s LOVE the Norse gods. There’s a whole story that goes with it. I’m actually curious if Eric knows it.”

I assured her, “I’ll ask him. Is that why Haley calls him Thor?” Emmaline smiled, “The reason she calls him Thor is literally the sweetest thing I’ve ever heard. I don’t think he knows though. Lacy and I both cried when she told us the story.”

I groaned, “I’m getting the feeling you’re not going to tell me the story.” Emmaline smirked, “No, I’m not. I want you to ask him if he knows why. If he doesn’t know, Haley should be the one to tell him. I think it will mean a lot to him.” I smiled, “Give me a kiss.” Emmaline moved towards me and gave me a sweet kiss. She pulled away commanding, “Now, go get ready with the guys.” I laughed and got up.

I went downstairs and found Logan, Ryan, Dustin, Dylan, Eric, Drake, Peter, Jackson, my dad, and to my dismay... Beta James. I grabbed Dylan, “The man of the hour. Do you know your costume yet?” Dylan said, “No, my bride seems to have taken a page out of the fairy’s book. Like you, and King Alpha Prick over there; I don’t get to know until we get dressed what my costume is.”

I proudly stated, “I know Eric’s costume.” Jackson spit out his water. Eric asked, “Haley told you?” I shook my head, “No, Emmaline did. I’m not allowed to tell you though.” Eric rolled his eyes, “Figures.” Dylan jumped up and down, “It’s good, right? Please tell me it’s good.” I laughed, “It’s good, but it won’t make you happy, Dylan.” Dylan growled, “Of

course not, it's only my special day. He can't even make me happy today of all days."

We changed subjects. Eventually, I decided I could casually ask about his nickname. I asked, "Eric, why does Haley call you Thor?" Eric shrugged, "She's just always called me that since she first met me in wolf form." I pressed, "But why?" Eric raised an eyebrow, "I..."

He looked at Jackson who looked at me. Eric asked me, "There's a reason?" I nodded, "Evidently, there is." Eric said, "Well... what is it?" I shrugged, "I wish I knew. Emmaline wouldn't tell me." Eric assured me, "I'll ask Haley." I smiled, "The only clue I got is that it made both our women cry." Jackson was intrigued, "Really? I'm linking Molly."

Eric assured him, "If she doesn't know, I'll tell you when I ask Haley." Jackson told him, "Molly knows. She also cried." Eric asked, "Seriously? It's just a nickname." Peter said, "Emmaline and Lacy told Chelsea and Sam at lunch on Friday. They cried too."

Drake offered, "To be fair, three of those people are pregnant." Eric pointed at Peter and Drake, "Then you two know the story. What is it?" Drake snorted, "That space unheard chant sucks ass, man. Our mates ask Emmaline to perform it ALL the time. We know nothing. Ever. It hurts my brain. I stay up late trying to figure things out." Eric laughed, "It's a pain. I'll be sure to circulate the story to those interested when I find out."

The girls came downstairs. Haley skipped over to Eric. Emmaline popped into my lap. I asked, "What's this?" Emmaline smiled, "We were hungry, and Lacy wanted to see Dylan." I tickled her, "Just Lacy?"

Dylan said, "Ladies, ladies, I know you all want to see me, but soon I'll be a married man." Emmaline laughed, "We all wanted to see our guys." We heard three pops. Haley cooed, "Good morning you three." I heard a pop again.

I looked over and saw EJ was now in Chelsea's arms. Peter stood, "Ok, spill Fairy Princess... Is... is something wrong with my little girl?" Chelsea gasped. Haley immediately said,

“No! Oh my god. I’m so fucking sorry! Nothing is wrong with the baby. I... I didn’t think you would think that.”

Eric smirked and linked me, “Dylan is going to lose it.” I asked, “Fairy fun?” Eric nodded. Peter sighed in relief. Haley spoke quietly, “Peter, I would’ve healed Chelsea if I thought something was wrong with your baby. I would know as a healer if anything was too. Nothing is wrong with your daughter.”

Alexander cooed in her arms to get Haley’s attention. She smiled at him as Cassie snuggled in with Eric. They both looked around the room then smiled at EJ. Peter asked, “Ok, so what’s going on? The other two pups didn’t pop to anyone else. Why does EJ like my Sugar Baby Momma so much?”

Haley looked at Eric. He shrugged, “It’s your genes not mine, Angel.” Haley looked really nervous, “Well... umm... you... well... Fairies can sense ...” I linked Eric, “No fucking way.” Eric smirked, “Yup.”

I looked over at Dylan who had popcorn. I yelled, “DAMN IT, DYLAN! How do you always have popcorn?” Dylan looked at me like I was crazy, “A magician cannot reveal his secrets. Especially not on this oh so sacred and special Dylan and Lacy day.” He held the bucket out for Lacy who took some.

Haley finally managed, “Fairies can tell who their mates their whole lives. Age isn’t a factor and... well... Fuck it. Your daughter is EJ’s mate.” Dylan stopped chewing his popcorn as everyone’s jaw dropped.

Chelsea squealed, “Really?” Haley nodded. Chelsea bounced with EJ in her arms. She turned to her mate, “Isn’t that just so sweet, Peter? They will grow up together, and Black Mountain isn’t even that far from us! This is just the BEST news! Since we found out we were having a girl, I’ve been having NIGHTMARES she’d come with us to a summit when she turned eighteen; we’d find out her mate was from Alaska or something. This is amazing news!”

Peter cleared his throat, “Amazing... yeah... That’s... A... word.” Eric was desperately trying not to laugh when popcorn

went flying. I turned, startled, when I realized Dylan threw his popcorn bucket. He yelled, “COME ON! Now your freaking pup has his mate already? SOMEONE JOIN ME IN LOATHING HIM WITH MY ENTIRE BEING!”

Everyone started laughing. Eric smirked at Dylan. He pointed out, “Just the one pup. My other two don’t know theirs yet.” Dylan mockingly retorted, “Well, that makes it all better. GOD! You REALLY are the King Alpha Prick. We might have to elevate you to God status. You are the God Alpha Prick. Seriously, all the other pricks have statues of you, don’t they? Don’t answer, I know they do. Do they pray to you asking for a fraction of your good luck?”

Haley actually laughed. Peter finally found words, “They won’t mate until she’s eighteen.” Haley responded before anyone else could, “Ok, first of all, my son will respect your daughter and her choices. I will NOT tell any of my children when they can become sexually active. They will be safe and respectful. As a woman, I’d advise you not to tell your daughter when she can or can’t have sex because I’ve never seen that end well. Ever”

Peter ground his teeth. Eric said, “That’s a promise, Peter. EJ will respect your daughter and her wishes. If she wants to wait, he will do that. I swear it to you.” Chelsea slapped his chest lightly, “Peter, this is great news! Look, let’s remove any doubt show Emmaline the sonogram.”

Emmaline startled, “Uh, what?” I explained, “They want you to see if you can tell if they are mates.” Peter took out his wallet and showed Emmaline the picture. She started stammering, “I mean I don’t know if this works from sonograms... HOLY CRAP!”

Dylan threw more popcorn lamenting, “COME ON!” Lacy coaxed, “Babe, this is good news.” Dylan muttered, “He gets everything. Now his pup, who is a few months old, has his freaking mate. AND SHE ISN’T EVEN BORN YET! It’s so hard to like him. Why are we secret besties?”

Lacy bit her lip. Emmaline said, “I... It’s true, Peter. They really are mates.” Sam happily squealed, “My turn!” She took

a sonogram out and showed Emmaline. She asked excitedly, "Do you know his mate?" Emmaline stared at the picture, "No... sorry." Sam shrugged, "We can try again later. I LOVE having the Soul Searcher around. It's so much fun!"

Peter started to cough. Haley snapped him some water. He thanked her. Nick burst into the room with a smile on his face. He nodded to Eric, "I hear we will be family, Alpha Eric." Eric nodded, "So it seems, Alpha Kyle." Nick waved his hands, "Nick, call me Nick. My grandpup is going to marry your son one day." Peter coughed, "Dad! She's not even born. Can we not talk about her mating day?" Eric snorted.

Peter's siblings filed in. I quickly realized the room was too small, "Why don't we take this out to the living room?" Emmaline and I led everyone into the living room. I linked Emmaline, "How's Peter?" She answered, "He's reeling. He's conflicted but very happy." I nodded, "I understand that."

We heard a pop and a knock at the front door. I snorted, "That's new." Dylan muttered, "A popping fairy who knocks on the door; how strange and polite... I don't like it. Not one bit." Emmaline opened the door and then hugged someone.

I started towards the door when Alpha Tucker and Luna Maribella stepped in. Garrett and Sharon were right behind her. Maribella smiled timidly, "I hope you don't mind we are early. Haley said the girls were getting ready together, and that Lacy said she didn't mind if Sharon and I joined. I really needed to get out of the house. I've been cooped up after giving birth to these two. Tucker has been encouraging me that this is the perfect time to do something for myself and have adult time."

Lacy smiled, "Of course not! The more the merrier." I smiled when I saw their two pups. They'd had twins. I went over to Tucker, clapped him on the back asking, "Who do we have here?" He smiled, "This is Brooke and Blake Thomas." I smiled at both of them. Brooke opened her eyes and looked around. Without a second glance, she popped to Nick's youngest son, Christopher.

Tucker was startled. Eric started outright laughing. I linked Emmaline, “Is it happening again?” Emmaline asked, “What? I was talking to Maribella and I didn’t see anything.” I replied, “Their daughter just popped to Christopher Kyle.” Emmaline turned and gasped.

Haley muttered, “Oh boy...” Nick’s second oldest son, Sebastian, said, “Let me take her, Christopher. You’ve never held a baby.” Nick stared at Christopher in shock when he twisted away from Sebastian. He growled at his brother, “She popped to me. She wants me, not you!”

Lacy started laughing quietly. Dylan, of course, found this entertaining enough to go back to eating popcorn. Maribella asked, “Haley, is this what I think it is?” Haley answered, “Yes.” Maribella squealed. She rushed over to Christopher asking, “What’s your name?” He puffed up his chest, “I’m Christopher Kyle.” Maribella asked, “How old are you?”

Eric linked me, “Fairy’s. What can you do?” I replied, “I don’t know, but Tucker might lose his mind.” Eric smirked, “I know.” I snorted, “You better watch it, or Cassie will be popping to someone’s kid next.” Eric shrugged, but I saw him tense for a solid second.

Christopher answered, “I’m five.” Nick sat down muttering, “Dear sweet baby Jesus.” Alpha Tucker asked, “Honey, what is going on?” Maribella turned, “Now, don’t get upset...” Tucker growled, “That makes me want to get upset.” Maribella said, “You know fairies can tell who their mates are their whole lives...”

Tucker yelled, “Oh, hell no! Brooke’s mate is Christopher Kyle? NO! No, I was supposed to get eighteen peaceful years to come to terms with my baby girl having a mate. I only got four weeks of peace. I am NOT prepared for her to have a mate at four weeks old. No, take it back. Someone. Anyone?”

Dylan was howling with laughter. Peter grumbled, “At least you got four weeks. My daughter isn’t born yet, and we just found out EJ Conners is her mate.” Tucker turned to gape at Eric. He shrugged, “Fairy’s.”

Nick stood and winked at Christopher before walking over to Tucker. He clapped Tucker on the back, "Let's take a walk, Tucker." Tucker looked from Christopher and Brooke back to Nick. Emmaline said, "Alpha Tucker, they really are mates. I'm the soul searcher."

Tucker rubbed his face, "It's just Tucker to you. You're Maribella's family I know you're the soul searcher my mate told me. Jesus Christ. Four weeks." He turned around, "Nick, and yes I call you that now, we can go on a walk as soon as Lucas points me in the direction of his finest liquor." I laughed. Dylan gleefully pointed out, "It's a little early..." Tucker growled.

Dylan said, "On second thought, it's the perfect time. It's five o'clock somewhere. I'll go grab you some of the good stuff. No one speaks while I'm gone, or I'll get you." Dylan rushed off. Haley asked, "Why does it matter that it's five o'clock somewhere?" Everyone laughed and Eric explained the meaning to her.

Dylan came back with a bottle. Nick pushed Tucker out of the house once they had it in their possession. Maribella was instructing Christopher on how to hold Brooke's head. Emmaline said, "Let's get the girls back upstairs to get ready." She grabbed Lacy, "You got your wish. No one, and I do mean no one, will forget your wedding day." I laughed.

I told Dylan, "That's true." Beta James spoke for the first time. "Are your lives always like this now?" Dylan threw his arms around him, "Yes! I've found a cure for boredom. It's partial fairies. We need to get your pack one." Beta James laughed, "I think we do."

Christopher carefully got off the couch to follow the girls with Maribella smiling at him. Sebastian asked, "Chris? Where are you going?" Chris growled at him again, "Be quiet! Brooke's sleeping." Eric lost it laughing.

Peter chuckled, "Oh boy." Sebastian asked, "Seriously? He gets his mate next. He's five. I'm thirteen. Logically speaking, shouldn't I know my mate next?" Eric advised, "Throw logic

and everything you know out of the door when it comes to fairies, Sebastian Kyle.”

Peter sat down. Drake asked, “You ok man?” Peter shrugged, “I don’t know. My daughter is going to be the Luna of the strongest pack in the world. At the same time, I can’t imagine anyone who could protect her better. Her mate has fairy, wolf, and Hackura blood. She’s so protected it’s insane. She’s not even born yet, and we know her mate. This is... surreal. We just decided her name.”

Eric asked, “What name did you pick?” Peter said, “Elise. Her name is Elise.” Dylan said, “AWWW EJ and Elise. That’s adorable. DAMN YOU GOD ALPHA PRICK! I’m going to abbreviate it. I’ll get everyone calling you GAP, just watch me.” Eric laughed, “You’re really mad because their names sound cute together?” Dylan said, “Most things involving you are upsetting, GAP.”

We sat and talked until after lunch. Dylan got up clapping, “Alrighty then, let’s go see these costumes.” All of our costumes were in garment bags in Dylan’s room with our names on them. Eric opened his first and laughed announcing, “I’m Thor.” Dylan growled, “Of course you are.” Eric looked at me asking, “Is Haley going as Jane?” I shook my head, “Sif.” Eric nodded, “Norse mythology then. That makes sense. Fairies love that.” Of course, he knew that.

I had a smile on my face until I unzipped my garment bag. I yelled, “You have GOT to be kidding me.” Dylan ran over and started laughing so hard he fell onto the floor crying. Eric bit his lip. I turned to him, “Don’t you dare laugh. This is your wife’s fault.”

Dylan gasped for air, “OH MY GOD! YOU’RE PETER PAN!” Beta James was trying to chuckle quietly. Peter and Drake couldn’t hold it in anymore and threw their heads back cackling. Jackson asked, “You realize who Emmaline is then, right?” I growled, “She better be Wendy.”

Jackson laughed aloud. Eric’s amusement couldn’t be disguised, “Lucas, you know who she’s going as.” I growled, “She’s fucking Tinkerbell.” Nobody could stop laughing. After

several minutes, I did too. I'd be a good sport and put on my Peter Pan costume. Haley's prank continued it seemed.

Mates Day

Emmaline was surprised when Lucas surfaced behind her in the water in her sanctuary. I was loving every second of him claiming me. When my phone went off for my daily alarm, I was surprised. Maybe having sex was making my internal body clock forget the time. I couldn't believe I didn't even feel tired.

I popped Lucas to our bed then popped myself to the gym locker room. I snapped myself a workout outfit then popped into the main area. All the warriors grinned at me. I couldn't figure out why.

Tessa linked me answering my unspoken question, "It's because you reek of the Alpha and sex." I blushed furiously. Tessa quickly linked, "It's normal to us, Luna Emmaline."

I decided to change the subject, "Call me Emmaline, you're here early." Tessa smiled, "I am coming to training early so I can go spend more time with my mate. We are splitting time as much as we can until I can transfer schools. He's not overly happy I haven't moved, but it's what we have right now."

Her soul felt sad, and I couldn't help the fact that I wanted to help her. I asked, "Is that why you aren't marked?" She nodded, "We won't be able to be without each other once I am. I don't know how Chelsea and Sam managed it. I want him to mark me, but I don't want him to torture himself because I can't sleep the same place as him every night."

My soul searcher side hated that they were having problems. I offered the best solution, "I'm sure between Haley and me we could work it out. We could pop you in and out. You could train with their pack some mornings, and I could pop you in for school. Or Haley could. I'm sure Lucas would agree their training is the same."

Alex yelled, "You can make that order as the Luna. Also, their training would absolutely be equivalent; actually, it's

harder.” Tessa’s filled with tears. She asked me, “Really?” I nodded, “Yes, we can make it work, I want you to be happy. As the Luna, I’m saying your training in their pack would count as yours for the day.” She gave me a quick hug, “I’ve moved most of my stuff into his room there anyway.”

I asked, “Why are you waiting until break?” Tessa sighed, “It makes the most sense as much as I hate it.” I nodded, “All right. So, I’ll work out something with Haley.” Tessa nodded. We got separated to spar.

When class ended, I grabbed her. I asked, “Do you want me to pop you to your man?” Tessa laughed, “I was going to drive, but this will freak him out. This could be fun.” I smiled and thought of her mate. A startled snarl greeted us. Tessa teased, “Aww, Paul, it’s just me.” He grabbed her and pulled her onto the bed.

I quickly popped back to Lucas. We went to bed, and my alarm went off all too soon. My mate was so sexy. He had no idea what he did to me. He had a panty dropping smile and lickable abs. I mean he’s lucky I get out of bed in the mornings instead of keeping him here all day. I decided to do just that the rest of the day. We eventually took a shower but ended up right back in bed. We made it a weekend in bed. I was not complaining.

After school on Monday, I spoke to Lucas about letting Tessa train with Eric’s pack some mornings. He had no problem with it. So far, I’d been popping her in and out, but I hadn’t talked to Haley yet. For her part, Tessa was much happier now that she was marked. That made me happy.

Lacy and I even helped Lucas with paperwork. They had so much to do it was insane. I linked Lacy, “Do they not want Alpha’s to have a life? What is WITH this paperwork?” She grumbled, “They don’t want us to have sex ever again? Jerks!” I bit my lip to stop myself from laughing.

The week was flying by, Wednesday I walked into Lucas’ office. I was disappointed when he told me his dad was coming with me to training instead of him. Lacy linked me,

“I’m coming. I’m not sitting around watching Dylan do paperwork. I want to have fun.”

We left and grabbed Dale. I popped us all to Haley’s yard. We left Dale with the guys and walked over to Haley. She smiled in greeting, “You guys are early.” Lacy groaned, “I can’t do more paperwork. Or watch Dylan do more paperwork. It’s very boring over in our territory these days.” Haley laughed, “Paperwork sucks, no if’s or but’s about it.”

She handed me a flash drive then explained, “Here’s some data to input whenever you get the chance.” I smiled at her, “Thanks! I kind of told Tessa we’d help her pop between our territories so her mate could mark her.” Haley laughed, “That’s not a problem. We can work out a schedule.”

Lacy chimed in, “Subject change! What are you and Eric coming to my wedding as? And do you already have your costumes?” Haley seriously stated, “Of course I have. Eric will be Thor.” I squealed, “Are you Jane?” Haley frowned asking, “Who’s Jane?”

Lacy answered, “Thor’s girlfriend.” Haley asked, “What are you talking about? Thor is married to Sif.” I caught on, “You aren’t talking about the *Marvel* movies, are you?” Haley frowned, “Who is Marvel?” I laughed.

Lacy explained, “Superhero movies.” Haley shook her head, “No, I call Eric Thor because he reminds me of the Norse mythology Thor. Well, my version of him, not a superhero movie person.” I asked, “So you are Sif? You said that’s who Thor is married to in Norse mythology.” Haley nodded, “Yes. I’m going as Sif.”

Lacy pushed, “Why did you call him Thor in the first place?” Molly walked over intrigued, “There’s a reason?” Haley looked flustered for once, “Well, yes.” I squealed, “Come on! Now you have to tell us!”

Haley blushed, “Fairy’s study Norse Mythology. When we covered Thor and his life, I’d just discovered that I could control the weather. I can make it rain, and Thor brings the thunder. I... Well... Thor is known as the protector of the

realms; in general Thor is known to protect people.” That made sense.

Haley continued, “Not much is known about his wife, Sif. Not much was known about me in Faerie. Rumors were that I was beautiful, but no one really knew much about me outside of Faerie. My mother nor uncle wanted it that way. They only allowed certain rumors to circulate. Like the fact that I was a Princess and my mother loved me.” Her mom? Her mom controlled the narrative? I cut a glance at Lacy who was frowning. Molly looked mad too.

Haley waved her hand, “Anyway, there is a story where Loki cuts off Sif’s hair; Thor becomes enraged. He confronts Loki, and they come to an agreement, but Loki is punished. After my hair was shaved off, I always envisioned having a protector like Thor. Someone who would avenge the things that happened to me; someone who would protect me forever. Someone who would not only avenge me but be upset about the things that happened to me. I crafted in my mind all these things that my Thor would be. Actually, I had dreams about him. He even had a wolf with him sometimes.”

I was not the only one tearing up. Haley sighed, “In my head, after every bad thing that happened to me, I told myself my Thor would take care of me. He would protect me, and one day he would be real. He would make all the injustices that happened to me go away and heal my emotional wounds. When I first saw Eric’s wolf, he was my Thor. He is quite literally the man in my dreams and his wolf. Thor, the wolf is the same wolf I saw. I know that sound batshit crazy, but it’s true. So, I told him I’d call him Thor. He never said anything, but sometimes I wonder if he had dreams of his own and knew I called him that. He is that man for me. He’s everything I’d imagined and more; both his wolf and human half.”

All of us were wiping tears away, so I snapped tissues for everyone. I told her, “That’s really beautiful, Haley.” I wished I’d dreamt of Lucas before I met him. On days when I was lonely, I would’ve loved seeing dream Lucas.

She shrugged, “It’s just how I see him, it’s probably silly. It was a little girl’s way to escape the horrors of what was

happening. I would think of my Thor and everything else would fade away.” Molly disagreed, “It’s not silly.” I agreed, “Not at all. My mom used to tell me stories about you as a child. Even I would dream of your prince because that’s all your stories needed.”

Haley asked looking slightly horrified, “What stories?” I smiled reassuringly, “Stories about a strong little girl who was different than those in her kingdom. She always persevered through everything.” Haley sighed in relief, “True. I am standing before you today.”

Molly commented, “By the way, Eric has no idea that’s why you call him that. He definitely didn’t get put in your dream or we’d have been at war with the fairies sooner. I feel like Jackson would’ve mentioned it if Eric had his own dreams about you. I’ll have to ask.”

Lacy started full on crying. I asked, “Lacy, are you ok?” Lacy frowned, “She has this beautiful story and meaning to her costume. I can’t even wear the costume I had planned with Dylan because now I’m too bloated and fat.”

Haley quickly told her, “I can fix your costume situation, I’m sure. What were you going to be?” Lacy sniffled, “We were going to Kim Possible and Ron.” Haley said, “I have no fucking clue who those people are.” I didn’t think the explanation would help so I stayed silent.

She thought about it for a moment, “From my research, my friend Dylan likes Mario video games. As do you.” I raised an eyebrow. Her research? Lacy nodded, “Yes we both do.” Haley nodded and snapped Lacy into a costume.

Haley asked, “Do you like Princess Peach?” Lacy twirled, “I love Princess Peach! You can’t even see my bloat! Thank you! Thank you!” Haley smiled and snapped her a Mario costume in a bag. She nodded to Lacy’s hand, “There you go, that’s for Dylan.” Lacy jumped on Haley, hugging her.

I heard a low chuckle. I turned and saw Halber watching our group. I asked, “Halber?” He smiled, “You remember me.” I said, “Of course I do. Next time, feel free not to speak in riddles about my guards being charmed away.” Halber seemed

nonplussed, “I speak how I speak, cousin.” I rolled my eyes, “Naturally, I guess the heads up was nice. I might’ve put it all together if not for the creepy guy.”

Halber smirked, “Yes, I hear Bactu is no more.” I shrugged, “He messed with the wrong group of women.” Halber smiled, “So it seems. I hear you join me in the elite royal water fairies who can not only drown an enemy but turn our enemy to water.” I nodded, “Yes, I can do that.” Halber told me “I’d like to see it myself.” I sighed, “Can you bring creepy dolls to life too?” Halber laughed, “Yes, cousin. As can you.” I groaned, “No, thanks.”

I linked Lacy, “It’s a Chucky movie waiting to happen. The fairies are going to rise to power in this realm in some type of horror movie.” Lacy busted up laughing. Halber didn’t pay much attention to her. He just brought creepy dolls to life. I turned them all to water much faster than the first time, when Hexxi brought the dolls to life.

Halber complimented, “You did great! Now, you can make them drown faster or if you’re feeling mischievous you can make them suffer longer.” My jaw dropped, “Really?” Halber frowned, “Why would I joke about that?” I sighed, “Where the heck were you last weekend?”

Halber tilted his head then answered, “In Faerie.” I rolled my eyes, “I just mean that information would’ve been nice to know. How do I do that?” Halber smiled, “Tell your light how you wish things to go.” I asked, “That’s it?” He nodded.

Haley popped over, “My turn. I need to work on her telekinesis control.” Halber frowned, “Wolves.” He glared at the group of guys. Haley laughed, “Sorry, Halber. Lucas will eventually be back. I think you and Emmaline have a lot to learn together.”

She popped us away. I asked her, “What was that?” Katie squealed and hugged me, “Hi, Evie!” I hugged her back, “Hey, Katie Cat!” Haley said, “Evidently, your soon to be father in law told Lucas that Halber over there was interested in you. Lucas called Eric, and Eric told me to get you away from him.”

I frowned, "He's my cousin. We were making good progress." Haley reached over and squeezed my hand, "Don't worry, he will be around more in November. We have enough partial water fairy's now that we need two trainers." I asked, "Are Idel and Hexxi coming to Lacy's wedding?" Haley was surprised, "Were they invited?" Lacy answered, "They were but they haven't RSVP'd."

Haley started laughing, "Where did you send their invitations to?" Lacy said, "Fairies have human addresses." Haley tilted her head, "They don't live there though. I'll tell them they are invited. I'm sure Idel will come. She's obsessed with all things werewolf and partial fairies."

I frowned, "Why isn't she here more often then?" Haley shrugged, "Hexxi took most of the teaching spots. Idel was quite upset. They argue every week about Idel being able to come. Which is silly. I've told Idel she's more than welcome." I teased, "Tell her she better watch out with her werewolf obsession. What if her mate is a werewolf?"

Haley smiled, "She would match with one quite well. Although, male fairies have developed a dislike for werewolves because wolves last through a female's fairy's full concupiscence. They would hate it if Idel's mate was a werewolf. I, myself, am a fan of that thought. Let's find her mate. I really fucking hope it's a werewolf."

I questioned, "You want the male fairies to be upset?" Haley snorted, "Full blooded male fairies? Yes, I do. It makes my whole day better when they are upset. They deserve it."

Halber's laughter reached us. I turned asking, "He's listening to us?" Haley didn't seem upset, "Probably. He finds us entertaining." Halber shouted, "Princess, you think full blood fairies hate wolves because of the concupiscence business?" Haley frowned, "They do."

Now, Katie started laughing. I realized the full-blooded male fairies must hate wolves because of Eric. They like Haley, but she never liked them. Now, she was mated to a wolf who believed in monogamy. Their shot with her was gone forever.

I joined Katie laughing; Lacy did too once she caught on. Haley frowned, “What’s so fucking funny? I want to laugh too.” Farrin popped over to us, “Princess, the male fairies don’t hate wolves because of the concupiscence business. It certainly doesn’t help the situation, but it’s not the reason.”

Haley made a gesture with her hands for him to continue asking, “Then why? I know you all were at war, and the werewolves won. That’s petty though. Never mind, that makes perfect sense. Fairies are petty.”

Farrin started laughing so hard Trixie popped over to try and explain. She was trying not to smile, “Haley, it’s because of you.” Haley gaped, “ME? Are you serious? What the fuck did I do? I’m not a damn werewolf, or even a partial!” Trixie admirably kept her laugh in, “No, it’s because of Eric, he’s your mate....”

Haley interrupted her, yelling, “They don’t like wolves because my mate is a wolf? COME ON! That’s absurd. To hate a whole supernatural group because he makes me happy it’s absurd. Did they not make me miserable enough as a child? They now begrudge me happiness of any kind?!” Farrin had tears coming out of his eyes, “It’s too good. You don’t see it.”

I tried, “Haley it’s because they like you, and you don’t like them. They hate werewolves because one took the possibility of sleeping with you from them... forever.” Haley rolled her eyes, “Whatever fucking drug you are on you all need to share with the class because it’s good.” I bit my lip, “You do know you’re stunning, right? You’re kind, caring, and powerful. Of course, they desire you. They don’t hate Eric because he makes you happy. It’s because he took the option of you away.”

Trixie agreed, “She’s right. You are stunning, and they feel like they never had a chance with you. When you finally returned to your home, you had a mate. One who would kill for people looking at you sideways let alone having an affair with.”

Haley blanched, “I would never have an affair. I would never be with anyone but Eric. He’s the first man whose touch outside of my family didn’t make me throw up. Feel free to spread it around Faerie, Farrin. They could’ve been nice to me as a child, but they weren’t. I’m a fairy, so I’m petty. I’m a Hackura too, so loyalty runs in my blood. I would never be with someone who stood by and watched me be physically assaulted or jeered at me. I’m too proud. There are lots of beautiful fairy women they could want. They don’t want me. Exfuckingcuse me.” She popped to the other side of the lake and took a deep breath.

Farrin sighed, “For the record, I never saw her get hurt. They kept that away from the fire fairies.” I asked, “You didn’t know?” Farrin shrugged, “We heard rumors. Exsis saw her the most. He was concerned. The rumors were that she was clumsy. I hunted down who started that rumor though. It was a demon which told me it wasn’t true, or a fairy would’ve started it. I didn’t care to know much about Haley because if the rumors were true, I found her odd because she never fought back.” That was really sad.

Haley popped back over and everyone went back to their lessons. Haley conjured several Tinkerbell dolls for me to use my telekinesis power on. She wanted me to bring them from the other side of the lake to me. I worked on that for the rest of the lesson.

When we were done, we walked over the guys. Eric instantly asked, “Angel, why were you so annoyed when everyone else was laughing? Why did you pop away?” Remembering that Haley found it unfathomable that people were attracted to her set Lacy, Katie, and I off again.

Haley frowned, “They have lost their damn minds.” Eric raised an eyebrow. Logan questioned, “Sister?” Haley huffed, “They seem to think full blooded male fairies don’t like werewolves because of me. I said it was fucking ridiculous to dislike an entire supernatural group because my mate is werewolf and I’m happy now.”

Bjourn started laughing with us. Haley glared at him, “Don’t you even agree with them, Bjourn Cambridge!” Eric

was biting his lip, but the rest of his brothers couldn't hold their laughter back. Eric tried, "Angel, it's not because you're happy."

Haley rolled her eyes, "Just because you like me doesn't mean other people do. They hated me. Some weren't mean; however, NO ONE FUCKING LIKED ME." Katie said, "You don't have to like someone to want to have sex with them Haley. LORD KNOWS I hated Austin Suthers, but I still fucked him." I snorted; I was laughing so hard. I told Haley between giggles, "She did hate him. So much."

Logan stopped laughing. Katie continued, "You're drop dead gorgeous, of course they wanted to have sex with you." Haley shook her head, "You all have gone fucking insane. They don't want to have sex with me. They never did. There was a reason I was raped the way I was. It involved not wanting to have sex the usual way with me because I wasn't good enough for them to accidentally get pregnant."

That brought everyone's laughter to a halt. Damn. Farrin popped over. He told her, "Not all male fairies are sadistic rapists, Princess." Haley nodded, "I know that." Farrin said, "Then... it stands to reason some of them wanted to have sex with you."

Haley yelled, "No it fucking doesn't! Fairies are forward." Farrin disagreed, "Not with someone who shied away from everyone." Haley rolled her eyes, "You guys are crazy. They don't hate werewolves because I fuck my husband and not them."

Eric growled and pulled Haley to him, "You will NEVER fuck anyone but me." Haley said, "I don't recall saying anything to the contrary. I don't *want* to fuck a fairy. I don't even fucking LIKE them!" Farrin said, "You just highlighted the problem, again. It's been said several times, but THAT is what people's problem with him is."

Katie reiterated, "Again, you don't have to like someone to fuck them." Haley pursed her lips, "I do." Farrin glanced at Eric then wickedly said, "You don't hate all fairies though. I

seem to recall you didn't dislike Exsis. I know Exsis liked you."

Haley thought about it for half a second. Eric's soul was steadily growing more and more possessive. Haley admitted, "That's true, I do not hate Exsis." Eric growled. Haley groaned, "Why are you growling? I'm not going to fuck him. He wasn't mean to me. He even gave me water a few times when no one was looking. He asked questions about my treatment which I evaded. He did try to help me. He was kind. Sometimes Aiden would send him to play games with me. Everyone left me alone when he was around now that I think about it."

Eric growled, "Who is Exsis?" Haley's soul was completely confused when she answered, "A fire fairy, he's nice." Eric growled, "Pop us to our room... NOW." Haley shrugged, "Ok. Bye, guys." She popped out.

Jackson commanded everyone's attention as he stared down the fairies asking, "Who is Exsis, Farrin?" Farrin smiled, "Aiden's cousin on his father's side. I believe people in this realm would call them fifth cousins or so." Everyone's souls were going to an angry place. Except Farrin, who was feeling incredibly mischievous.

I tried to de-escalate the situation, "He's obviously staying away from Haley. None of you have met him." Farrin smiled broader, "He's been traveling realms. He doesn't know the nature of Eric and Haley's relationship. He simply knows she was married for the sake of peace." I shot him a look. He was determined not to help me calm the wolves down.

Jackson growled. I tried again, "But... he knows she's married. You said those words." Farrin laughed, "Duchess, I forget you don't know our ways. It doesn't matter in Faerie if you are married. Many take lovers, and many... and I do mean MANY, men were delighted the Princess was married off. The earth and sky fairies didn't believe she had a mate. Fabian's evasions about her were well engrained in their minds. Not to mention the demons he got to actually lie about her and spread rumors. Those were all believed by sky and earth fairies

because they did not care enough to track down the source of the rumor.”

This was going to a bad place. I looked around, and noticed even Dale was getting mad. Farrin gleefully continued, “ALL of them knew she’d have to have sex with Alpha Consort Conners. Children were a part of the treaty, and he’s known as a man who is good in bed. He’d never force her, but he’s clearly charming. He’s had many lovers. Most fairies hoped she’d take a lover, or several, after she bore his children. She does look a lot like our late queen. In my opinion, she’s prettier than Queen Alania.”

Jackson growled, “Will Exsis be a problem?” Farrin gleefully asked, “How could I know? I don’t have sight.” I asked, “Does Aiden know?” Farrin smiled, “Aiden knows many male fairies who want to fuck his sister.”

I raised an eyebrow, “That’s not what I meant.” Farrin looked over his shoulder. He turned back grinning, “Trixie wants to go home. Bye all.” He popped away.

Katie looked at Logan. She rubbed his arm, “Come on, Haley can handle one fairy.” Logan said, “Of course she can.” Marcus pinched the bridge of his nose, “The question is can she pick up clues that he may want more than just to be nice to her? No, no she cannot. Unless he directly tells her what he wants...”

Jackson interjected, “Which he won’t, since he hasn’t.” Bjoorn sighed, “Great. There will be no arguing with her. She won’t think he wants her sexually.” Darrin groaned, “Eric’s going to lose it.” Harold added, “And Haley will think Exsis is her friend or some shit.” Nathan groaned, “Please goddess let us see this fairy before Haley does.”

Katie snorted, “Come on! So, he wants to have sex with her? He’s not going to get what he wants. Farrin already pointed out lots of fairies want to have sex with her. She’s hot. I’m sure there are other non-fairy men who want to have sex with her.”

I countered, “No fairies that were nice to her.” Katie said, “Seriously guys, not all of them could’ve been mean to her.” I

sighed. Katie was right. I nodded, “I agree. There had to be some that were nice to her. She would never cheat on Eric though. You guys are blowing this WAY out of proportion. I’ve got to get my group home. We will see you guys later.”

Jackson said, “None of us think she will cheat on Eric, that’s not the problem.” I asked, “Then what is? She’s hot and people want to have sex with her? The same could be said about Eric. Which means your problem is she’s literal to a T and doesn’t understand subtlety. Eric does. You do. TALK to them YOURSELVES. Based on his soul alone Eric would go all possessive Alpha wolf. I’ll vouch for the fact that his soul is somewhat terrifying without her, and she was there when I sensed that; she was just unconscious. I’ll just bet they listen to me when I say that is not a man whose soul you want be around when you to try to take what brings him joy.”

Dale agreed, “She’s right. Everyone knows not to mess with Eric.” Jackson snorted, “They would see her as worth trying.” I agreed, “Because she is. She’s amazing, but SHE only wants Eric. HE is her Thor.” Katie shot me a soft smile. I continued, “Besides, I’m certain I could scare them with facts about his soul.” I winked at them.

Katie gave me a hug and put a piece of paper in my hand. She whispered, “Call me later.” I nodded and popped our group back. We caught up with our mates.

I smiled linking Lacy, “You aren’t going to tell Dylan what your costumes are for the wedding?” Lacy replied, “I’m going the fairy route. You guys have fun, I want in.” I agreed “We are fun.” Lacy was cackling in our link when Lucas discussed costumes. I really wanted to see his face when he figured out who we were, but it was Dylan’s wedding day. I should give him that moment.

Dylan linked me, “I love you oh so much Queen Elsa. What is his costume?” I smiled, “You will enjoy it so much more if I don’t tell you. Trust me when I say, you will love it.” We left them in their office, and I went up to our room. I opened the note from Katie.

Gunner said that the phone is off. It was purchased at a gas station in New York. The camera didn't get the person's face. Call me later.

I frowned and took out my phone. I called Katie. She answered asking, "Evie, did you read my note?" I responded, "I did." Katie asked, "Did you ever live in New York?" I answered, "No, I didn't." Katie sighed, "Damn. I was hoping you did, and that would tell you who it was. Gunner said based on the build he assumes it's a man, but that he knew where the cameras were. He never showed his face."

I frowned, "This doesn't make sense. Alpha Hammond can't be in New York. It's way too far from Tennessee." Katie agreed, "I don't think it's Hammond, Evie." I sighed, "Then who the hell is it? What do they want?"

Katie sighed, "I don't know. Try to keep getting information, but you really should tell Lucas about it." I sighed, "I will... eventually. He'd take the phone." Katie told me, "It's in your nightstand. Gunner put it back for me." I gratefully told her, "Tell him I said thanks." Katie said, "He's going to keep an eye on it." We talked about a few other things then hung up. I took out the phone and turned it on. There was a text waiting.

Unknown: Be ready for October 31st. He's coming.

Me: We are already planning on being ready. We figured he was coming then. Do you have any more specifics?

Unknown: Not at the moment. Don't trust anything that day, especially people you don't know.

Me: Ok, then. Thank you for the vague warning. Why are you helping me?

Unknown: We have a common enemy. The enemy of my enemy is my friend.

Me: Alpha Hammond?

Unknown: No, but I will help where I can with him. He's not my focus.

Me: Then who is?

Unknown: I'm sure it will come to you.

Me: Sure. With all the vagueness I can't help but get a clue. What do you want?

Unknown: Revenge.

Me: For what?

I waited for an hour, but no response came. I sighed, turned the phone off, and went to sleep. I woke up, went to training, popped back, showered, then gave Lucas a kiss goodbye. I was thinking over everything as I drove us to school. I went through my day on autopilot until lunch.

Chelsea and Sam simultaneously said, "Space unheard." Drake and Peter groaned. I quickly spoke the words. Lacy squealed, "Ok, I want to know everyone's costumes. Val, what are you and Ryan going as?" Valerie smiled, "We are coming as Hermione and Ron." I nudged her, "You know Ry loves the Harry Potter movies." Valerie nodded, "Yup!"

Lacy pointed, "Chelsea, you next who are you guys?" Chelsea wiggled her eyebrows, "I'm Juno and Peter is Paulie Bleeker." I clapped, "That's amazing!" Lacy squealed, "I love it! Sam?" Sam smiled, "Mickey and Minnie." Lacy giggled, "I love my wedding." Chelsea animatedly replied, "So do we! Does anyone know what Haley's coming as?" Lacy and I teared up again. Lacy waved her hands saying, "Her and Eric are coming as Thor and Sif." We explained the background to the girls, and they all cried. Sam fanned her face, "That's so adorable." I agreed, "I know."

I made the space heard again. Peter put his arms around Chelsea, "Sugar baby momma, what's wrong?" Chelsea waved her hands, "Hormones. Haley's reasons for calling Alpha Eric Thor are adorable."

Peter nodded, "I'm sure." Drake asked, "Are you going to tell us why?" I snorted, "No." He groaned, "You guys are hell on my Beta brain." Huh? Sam explained, "Beta's like answers." I thought about Dylan and realized that made total sense.

I changed the subject, "What do you guys think about having your baby shower the weekend after Lacy's wedding?" Chelsea said, "Aww, you guys are throwing us a shower?" Lacy and I nodded. We all agreed the week after the wedding would work.

I emailed Haley to see if she had any ideas. She was really excited and offered to plan it. Lacy and I gladly let her. The weeks started to fly by. Before I knew it, it was the morning before Lacy and Dylan's wedding. I got my workout in then kissed Lucas goodbye. Lucas wanted a hint about our costume, but I wouldn't give it to him. I left for school taking my group with me.

By the time we got to lunch, I realized we'd never had a wedding rehearsal. I asked Lacy, "Who are we all walking down the aisle with tomorrow?" Peter and Drake stiffened. I studied them. They were starting to feel that same possessiveness Eric was before Haley popped them away from fairy practice.

Lacy said, "That's a popular question today. I texted Haley that this morning when she asked if Maribella and Sharon could get ready with us. Chelsea is walking with Lucas because he's the best man." Peter instantly relaxed.

I forced myself not to pout. It made sense, and it wasn't a big deal I wasn't walking with him. Lacy continued, "You are walking with Brad. Drake and Peter get those looks off your faces. Everyone in the wedding party is mated except one of Dylan's Beta friends. He's walking with Haley."

Peter spit out his pop, while Drake choked on his milk. Drake recovered first, "Are you insane?" Lacy frowned, "No, Dylan insisted... oh god..." Peter asked, "Who is it?" Lacy said, "Beta James Powell." Drake asked, "From Alpha Theo's

pack? That Beta James Powell, by chance? Moon goddess please let there be another Beta James Powell in the world.”

Lacy nodded, “There’s not that I know of. He is Alpha Theo’s Beta.” Drake started laughing. Peter winced, “That’s not going to go over well, Lacy.” Lacy frowned, “Why?” Drake explained, “Beta James hates Alpha Eric.” Lacy frowned, “They are Eric’s allies though.”

I asked, “Does Dylan know that?” Drake said, “Everyone knows that.” Lacy sighed, “Oh, Dylan. What did you do?” I said, “It’s not like Dylan would invite someone who would hurt Haley. Are they from around here?” Peter said, “I don’t think he will hurt her. Flirt with her and drive Alpha Eric insane? Yes. They are from around here.”

I frowned, “So, they are allies then, right?” Peter winced, “Not yours.” I asked, “Why?” Drake said, “That’s complicated, but it’s why Alpha Theo isn’t coming.” I rubbed my head, “But Alpha Theo and Eric are allies?” Peter nodded, “Yes, they are friends.” Ok, but Eric’s not with his Beta? What the hell?

Lacy frowned, “This is not the kind of drama I’m ok with at my wedding. Killing Alpha Hammond, cool; great even. Eric killing Beta James over Haley... not cool Dylan. Not cool.” I tried to assure her, “It’s not a big deal. Haley would put this guy in his place.”

Lacy snorted, “She wouldn’t believe he was flirting with her.” I shrugged, “If he’s direct, she would.” Lacy sighed, “It’s going to cement it in her mind people don’t like her because this would be about Eric. As a fairy, she could sense that motive.”

I laughed, “That would be a little funny.” Lacy agreed, “True.” I could tell she wasn’t happy though. I linked her, “Just tell Dylan to tell Beta James to be on his best behavior.” Lacy sighed, “I just want everyone to remember our wedding with good memories. Not Beta James and Eric fighting.” I assured, “It won’t happen, talk to Dylan. He only does things for fun. He would never do anything that would get in the way of your dream day.” Lacy nodded.

Chelsea sighed, “I’m not looking forward to getting up early. I feel like every time I manage to get to sleep, I have to get up. I might just pull and all-nighter.” Sam sighed, “Same.” I asked, “Why don’t you guys spend the night with us at our house?” Chelsea perked up, “Yeah?” I nodded.

She turned to Peter, “Can we Peter, please? I’d get more sleep.” Peter agreed, “Whatever you want, Sugar baby momma.” The rest of the day flew by. Everyone in the pack was excited about Lacy’s and Dylan’s wedding.

After school, I grabbed Tessa since it was my turn to pop her to her mate. I popped right back and drove everyone home. I got really nervous that I’d invited people to stay without telling Lucas. It was his house. He didn’t care though and reassured me it’s my home too and I have just as much right to invite people as he did.

His soul was very testy about Grayson. You make one joke. Seriously, he was too easy. He kissed me so hard he practically set the carpet on fire. I was going to have to get him more often. The family ended up all being in the living room. Debbie was practically radiating happiness. I smiled at both her and Lacy. I looked at Lucas, and just knew. I was ready. On my next concupiscence, I wanted to try for a baby. We’d already be married at that point, and I couldn’t wait to see him as a dad. Hopefully, even though I had a crappy role model... I’d be a good mom.

I shot Haley a text asking if she would turn the Luna rooms into a spa again. She told me I should practice, and if I didn’t like she’d fix it. She had absolute faith I could do it though. Chelsea, Sam, Drake, and Peter arrived, ending our family moment.

Chelsea came over to me, “We are probably going to stay with my parents tonight, but we wanted to drop Sam and Drake off.” I nodded, “Sure, or you could go with my plan.” Her eyes sparkled when she asked, “What’s your plan?” I smiled, “I was going to put you guys in the room you mated in when you met.” Chelsea squealed, “I love that idea! I’m texting my mom that we are staying here.”

Dylan came over and dragged Lacy away from our group. She threw a wink our way. I popped Chelsea and Sam into their rooms. I was going to make the guys scent them and build the anticipation as Lucas and I took them to their room. Peter was excited when he realized where I was taking him. Drake was just excited to see Sam. You'd think he'd been apart from her for weeks, not literal minutes.

When we made it to our room, I brought up having kids. I searched his soul, and he was shocked. Did he not want to try so soon? He assured me that was not the case. A knot released in my chest when I felt pure happiness radiating from his soul. He made love to me whispering how much he loved me. He was going to be such a good dad.

I woke up when my alarm went off. I sighed and got ready to get my training in for the day. To my surprise, Lacy was there too. I walked over to her, "Let me guess, you couldn't sleep?" She squealed, "Nope, I'm too excited." I smiled, "I think that's normal."

Alex walked over to us, "Lacy, you'll be working with Bevin. You know we have different workouts for pregnant she wolves." Lacy groaned, "I do remember that, yes." She rolled her eyes and went over to a female warrior.

Alex turned to me, "It's swimming for you today. We can't have any bruises on you for the wedding." I frowned, "My cousin would heal me." Alex shrugged, "Still, swimming laps for you." I huffed and went to swim.

Lacy came over to get me when we were done. I popped her to her room, then popped myself into the Luna rooms. I thought of how Haley had the room for the spa day. I snapped my fingers and squealed. I'd gotten it exactly right. I popped back into my room. Lucas was still asleep. I popped into the shower and then dried my hair. I conjured the secret phone to me and turned it on.

Unknown: Be ready. I need your help for what's to come. We can't have you getting kidnapped. I don't have time to rescue you.

Me: Good to know it's all about you.

Unknown: As long as you know.

Me: Who are you?

Unknown: It's not the time for that answer.

Me: Why would you rescue me?

Unknown: I can't get revenge without you. I've been waiting for years. I've been looking for you just as your siblings were. You have always been the key to my revenge, and I've finally found you.

I put the phone down. This person knew my siblings found me. How? I needed to tell Lucas about this. I was being hypocritical. If he was doing what I am, I'd be upset with him for not telling me. Or was it only hypocritical if I acted on something the phone person told me without tell him? UGH! Relationships need a handbook. Maybe Haley put one together that I could have to help me figure this out. I shook myself and put my situation aside. This was Lacy's day.

I popped in my room and teased Lucas. I laid the trail for him to talk to Eric and see if he knew about Haley's nickname. Molly was certain he didn't, but I knew Eric would tell Lucas. I was curious if he has his own dreams. That would be so sweet.

I also knew Lucas asking him would spark Eric's curiosity. I was certain it would mean a great deal to Eric to know Haley always saw him as her hero if he didn't already know. Even before Haley knew Eric was her mate; on an instinctual level she trusted him the moment she laid eyes on his wolf because they were her literal savior's in her dreams. I gave Lucas a kiss and told him to get ready with the guys.

I walked into the Luna rooms. Haley and Katie were already there. Lacy joined seconds after I did. Chelsea and Sam were next, Valerie was last. Haley handed Lacy a present, "BA wanted you to have this. She can't come because she's on a mission, but she gave this to me for you." Lacy smiled,

“Thanks! Dylan and I agreed to open presents together unfortunately; so, I can’t open it.”

I linked Haley, “Isn’t Alpha Chase coming?” Haley answered, “Yes, and if she didn’t have a mission, I’d have found something for her to do. As it happens, the goddesses are on my side. For now. Lord knows I’m due for that. BA had a legit mission and couldn’t make it.”

Lacy said, “I wish we could eat with the guys, but we need to get our nails done.” Haley said, “How do you want everyone’s nails done?” Lacy answered, “French manicures.” Haley snapped her fingers, “Done. Does that give you time to do what you want?” We all looked at our nails which looked picture perfect.

Chelsea commented, “She’s so darn handy.” Lacy smiled, “I think you’re my fairy godmother now too, Haley. Let’s go eat with the guys. I already miss Dylan.” I popped into Lucas’ lap as soon as I saw him. He held me tightly to him.

When Haley and Eric’s kids popped in, I couldn’t help but think of how Lucas and my children would do the same thing. Things got crazy. EJ was mated to Peter and Chelsea’s daughter. Eric’s soul was really happy and just the slightest bit smug.

I finally observed the man who gave Dylan his popcorn. I’d seen that guy before. I think he was actually tasked to have popcorn and whiskey on hand at all times for Dylan. Lacy even grabbed some from him. I linked her, “I want a handful too.” Lacy smiled and passed out popcorn to the girls.

Lacy linked me, “I’m jealous of an unborn child. There’s no wondering if she has a crush because someone is her mate. She just knows, her whole freaking life. Do you know how many nights I cried when Dylan would go on a date? Or how many nights I cried while I was away thinking he found his mate?”

I agreed, “That would suck. This is so cool though.” Lacy panicked, “Damn! I hadn’t even thought of my pups moving away once mated. Selene, please let me have a boy.” I didn’t have a comforting word for her because now I was worried

about that for my future little girls. Which began a burning in my chest. All my friends were worried their future daughters would find their mates and move away, including me. Yet my mother threw me out. I forcefully shoved that thought from my mind. This was a happy day.

I distracted myself by searching Peter's soul. He was relieved, protective, excited, and nervous. Poor guy. I linked Lacy, "Dylan does know this is about Haley's fairy side, not Eric's DNA, right?" Lacy replied, "Dylan doesn't think Eric's life is fair, he never has. Eric is a grounded driven person. People always threw themselves at his feet. Dylan considers it his personal job to make sure Eric doesn't turn to the dark side of being too serious. Until Haley showed up, Dylan was the only one cracking jokes around Eric. I think he actually makes Eric feel a little normal. He knows Dylan would never blow smoke up his ass." True.

I frowned pointing out, "As far as his life being fair, Eric waited forever to find Haley. He even gave up." Lacy pointed out, "Yes, he gave up and what did he get? The woman he always wanted, and she was better than advertised. She's a good person and a double princess." I started laughing because I couldn't help it.

I searched Dylan's soul. He was mostly entertained with a slight bit of lingering annoyance. Beta James was equal parts entertained and jealous. I wondered if he had a mate. I had no sooner wondered that then it came to me exactly who his mate was.

Before I could say anything, Chelsea was asking Peter to give me a sonogram picture. I didn't even know if my power worked that way. Besides, Haley was obviously certain. Peter took a sonogram picture out of his wallet and gave it to me.

I was stunned that when I looked at it, I saw EJ in my mind. Dang this thing even worked with sonograms? Dylan threw more popcorn into the air. This time I was certain it was just for fun. Lacy and Dylan were hilarious together. She was fake consoling him because she knew he wasn't actually upset.

Sam handed me their sonogram picture. I got nothing. I had no clue who their kids' mate was. I linked Lacy, "I didn't know their kids' mate, but I know who Beta James mate is." Lacy turned to me with shocked eyes as Alpha Kyle walked in.

Lacy linked, "He's been looking as long as Dylan was. Are you going to tell him?" I smiled, "When we get upstairs, I'm going to call his mate, and tell her to pop on by." Lacy's eyes were now wide as saucers.

Lucas told us to go into the living room. I think Lacy was tempted to scratch him with her claws. She linked me, "It's a fairy? A partial fairy?" I smiled, "You'll have to wait for it." Lacy pouted, "That's not fair! It's my wedding day! Do I know his mate?" I thought about it, "I don't think you met her, but you know her name." Lacy tapped her fingers against each other, "Dylan is rubbing off on me, I just want to know."

Maribella and Tucker arrived with their twins. They were so adorable. Maribella followed me inside. I cooed, taking the baby from her arms, "Who's this little man?" Maribella smiled, "This is Blake." I heard a pop but wasn't paying attention.

Lucas linked drawing my attention to the room. What was happening? I turned to see Maribella's daughter in the arms of one of Peter's brothers. It me again, they were mates. I couldn't stop my laugh when Peter's other brother tried to take Brooke from Christopher. Christopher's soul felt exactly like the older mated, possessive men. Naturally. He was feeling very protective too. Typical Alpha male right there.

Lacy linked me, "Is it find your mate day? What is HAPPENING?" I laughed, "I guess it is." When Alpha Kyle sat down Peter shot his dad a smirk. It was a smirk that practically spoke the words: See... this is how it feels.

I studied Sebastian Kyle; he was happy for his brother but jealous. Alpha Tucker was confused. When he caught on his soul was in turmoil. I had to laugh because as a wolf he would expect to get eighteen years of peace.

I linked Lacy asking, “Do she wolves not date?” Lacy snorted, “Of course they do. That’s a typical dad outlook. Not a lot of us have sex, but we date.” I nodded. I was loving this day so much. All the mates being found around me brought me such joy. Peter and Alpha Tucker were mumbling about possessive males. If I wasn’t feeling such joy, I’d be mischievous and point out that technically EJ was being possessive of Chelsea since their little one wasn’t here yet. I was certain Peter would get all worked up, and he wouldn’t be able to do anything about it because EJ wasn’t going to leave Chelsea’s arms.

I got the girls heading back upstairs to get ready. Lacy’s wish was going to come true. No matter what happened the rest of the day, the wolves would be talking about this for a long time. We all laughed when Christopher Kyle came into the Luna rooms right behind us.

Haley snapped him a comfy chair, which he very carefully sat down in with Brooke in his arms. He just watched her sleep; it was the cutest thing. Maribella smiled sweetly at him. I casually asked, “Haley, can you call Idel?”

Lacy squealed, “NO FREAKING WAY!” Haley frowned, “Of course I can. I’m pretty sure she’s planning to join us at the reception.” I teased, “She definitely should.” Haley raised an eyebrow but dialed.

I heard Idel answer, “Hello, cousin.” I took the phone explaining, “It’s me, Idel. I don’t have your number.” Idel laughed, “We will have to correct that. What’s up, little sister?” Katie frowned. I said, “I just met your mate.”

Haley’s jaw dropped, along with everyone else’s. Idel squealed, “REALLY? OH gosh... It’s a wolf... you live in a pack... There’s a wedding. TELL ME IT’S A WOLF!” I laughed, “It’s a wolf, he’s a Beta.” Haley started laughing, “That’s just too damn good.”

I warned, “Don’t tell Eric yet.” Haley shrugged, “I don’t think he’d care. He said Beta James didn’t like him. It doesn’t make sense to me, but whatever. Typical testosterone bullshit.”

Idel said, "I really can't get away until it's time for the reception. What's his name?" I said, "Beta James Powell." Idel sighed dreamily restating, "James Powell. OH, I AM SO EXCITED!" Lacy asked, "What are you coming as?"

Idel answered, "I was just coming as what human's see fairy's as... Does anyone know what Beta James is dressing up as?" Lacy clapped, "That answer will be coming to you in seconds. I'll make Dylan tell me." Her eyes were glassy then she responded, "He's dressing up as Mr. Incredible. So, you could be Mrs. Incredible." Idel squealed, "Thank you so much, Emmaline. I am so excited! I'll see you all soon."

Haley hung up and then started laughing. I asked, "What?" Haley told me, "Hexxi is going to shit herself. She's been looking for her mate for fifty years, which is a lot longer than Idel has been looking." I gasped, "How old is Hexxi?" Haley shrugged, "She's sixty-six."

My mind blanked. I stammered, "She looks like she's twenty... maybe." Haley again shrugged as if it was no big deal, "Fairy genes. We all are going to look like this for some time."

Chelsea was holding EJ as she rocked in a chair. She asked him, "What do you think of the name Elise, little man?" He cooed. She smiled, "That's your mates name." He let out the cutest little baby wolf purr. Haley smiled, "EJ and Elise, that's cute."

We all started to get ready. Haley said, "Nobody move. Emmaline needs to practice. So, I want you guys to show her the makeup and hair you want. She will snap it done for you." I smiled, "You are always teaching." She winked at me.

I went one by one and smiled when it was Katie's turn. I told her, "I don't have to ask. I know what you and Logan are coming as." Katie told me anyway, "Harley Quinn and the Joker." I smiled, "I knew it!"

I asked her, "Am I doing your makeup and hair too?" Haley smiled, "My makeup, yes. I need to do a charm on my hair. It's going to be blond and floor length." I was astonished,

“You can do that?” She nodded, “Yes, it’s only temporary though. After so many hours, the natural hair returns.”

Lacy laughed, “Eric’s going to want you to keep the hair for tonight.” Haley smiled, “It won’t wear off until tomorrow.” I did Haley’s makeup. Once I was done, she quickly chanted in Fealish. We all watched in awe as her all her hair literally turned blonde and grew to the floor in seconds, even her eyebrows.

Katie cleared her throat, “Can you do that for me, so my hair looks like Harley Quinn’s?” Haley nodded, “If you show me a picture so I can see who the fuck Harley Quinn is I can.” Katie laughed and showed her a picture. She did Katie’s hair as I snapped myself ready.

Lacy choked, “Lucas will DIE seeing you in that.” I asked, “Why?” Sam said, “It’s short, and you look hot.” Haley laughed, “I got that for her at our bad ass girl gang day.” Lacy teased, “They are such brave little fairies.”

A portal opened and Astrid came through. What stunned me was the woman beside her. It was clearly the queen of the Hackura. Haley asked them to babysit while the babies slept. We were too stunned to do much but wave at them. Haley quickly put her kids down for bed. She started to lead us downstairs. We were all in shock. The queen of the Hackura waved to us. What was life lately?

We paused while Maribella coaxed Christopher into putting Brooke in the bassinet she’d conjured. Haley assured her, “The babies are in capable hands. My mom and Astrid have them.” Maribella laughed, “I’m not even worried.” I noticed both Tucker and Eric looked happy about that fact.

Lucas growled and was on me in a second, “Baby girl, you are testing me.” I smiled, “Aww, but you’re such a handsome Peter Pan.” He growled, whispering, “That’s not the problem. Your costume is... enticing.” I smiled teasingly, “Do you like Tinkerbell again?”

Haley started laughing. I glanced at her realizing Beta James had moved closer to her. I linked Lacy, “Crap.” Beta James smirked at Eric and bent down to whisper something in

Haley's ear. She didn't see him, but I was positive she knew he was there. Haley whirled around when Eric's thunderous growl filled the room.

Jackson reached for his arm to hold him back. Haley's eyes widened when Beta James was flung across the room by the wind. Haley spun to face Eric in shock. She quickly popped to Eric and popped them both away.

Beta James fell to the ground clearly bewildered. Dylan said, "Dude, I warned you she'd put you on the ground. Not in the dramatic fashion she pummeled me, because I'm at she'll tackle me status. You'll get there, don't you worry."

I stated, "That wasn't her. Maribella, did you do that?" Maribella frowned, "I can't call the wind." Dylan waved his hands, "Of course it was her." Lacy tried to make him see reason, "Dylan, she didn't even see him behind her." Logan started laughing, "She knew he was behind her."

Jackson groaned, "Fuck me." Haley popped back with Eric, who was much calmer. Dylan looked back and forth between them. He growled, "DO NOT tell me God Alpha Prick got a fairy power! On my wedding day? Is nothing sacred?!"

Haley answered, "Evidently, he did. We've been waiting to see what power of mine he'd get, since we're twice light bound. We were hoping it wouldn't show up like this. I am deeply sorry, Beta James." Eric growled, "I am NOT sorry, Beta James. Stay AWAY from my wife." I snorted.

Lucas linked me, "What was that?" I asked, "Can you link Eric?" Lucas cautiously answered, "Yes, why?" I said, "Then tell him Beta James' mate will be popping into the reception as Mrs. Incredible." Lucas gaped at me and then turned to Beta James in shock.

Beta James growled at Eric, "I was just going to introduce myself to her. We are walking down the aisle together." Haley put a hand on her husband's chest assuring him, "It's fine, Eric." Eric growled, "It's not."

I noticed the moment Lucas got his attention. Eric looked at me, smiled, and relaxed instantly. He casually commented,

“On second thought, I think my day just got even better.” Dylan grumbled “Of course it did. Did your pack just link you that someone dropped off a billion dollars for you?” Eric rolled his eyes, “No.”

Dylan came over to Lacy, “You look beautiful, my perfect Princess Peach. I love my costume.” Dylan kissed her then turned to me, “And thank you for letting us all be the first to see Lucas’ reaction to his costume. It was everything you said it would be and more.” I curtsied dramatically, “Of course.”

Lucas was wrapped possessively around me. His mom cleared her throat as Eric whispered to Haley who giggled. Debbie shot a look at Eric and Lucas announcing, “We all need to get to the lovely venue. Courtesy of Haley and her cousin Bexley. She’s been... vigilant about the decorations this morning.”

I liked her costume. She was Wilma from the Flintstones. We all filed out with Lucas close behind me. He linked me, “I don’t know how I’m going to keep my hands off you. What partial fairy is Beta James mate?” I teased, “Who said it’s a partial fairy?” Lucas stopped walking so quickly Eric ran into the back of him.

Lucas quickly started walking again. He quickly asked, “Who?” I winked, “Wait for it! Anticipation is good for the soul.” He growled, “Is it really a full-blooded fairy?” I smiled, “You will know soon.” Lucas grumbled until we reached the barn. He begrudgingly left my side and stood beside Chelsea.

Eric growled something to Beta James. Haley rolled her eyes behind Eric’s back. Eric pulled Haley to him and laid a fiercely possessive kiss that screamed ‘she’s mine’ on her, then he walked into the barn. I had to laugh as the Addams family theme song began playing for us to walk down the aisle to. Lacy had decided to have her ceremony on the deck and the reception inside.

I linked Lucas as Dale cut both their wrists with a blade, “Do we do that?” Lucas answered, “Yes, we do. You could ask Haley about any Fairy traditions. If you want to have them in

our ceremony, we can add them. Blood sharing is an important part of ours as wolves. Haley and Eric did it too. With some... fairy things." I sighed, "It's a good thing Haley can heal me then. I don't heal like you guys." As soon as the ceremony ended people filtered into the bar for the reception. Lacy had us all stay back.

I bit my lip as a pop sounded. EJ was back in Chelsea's arms. Peter huffed, "Of course." Chelsea laughed and two more pops followed. Cassie was in Eric arms and Alexander was in Haley's. Haley snorted, "Stinkers! It's bedtime." They all giggled.

I smiled broadly when I heard a pop behind me. I turned, "Mrs. Incredible, don't you look fabulous?" I heard a growl, "MINE!" Everyone turned, astonished, as Beta James rushed over to Idel, kissing her deeply. Even Eric looked surprised for a solid second.

Haley squealed, "I'm so glad you made it, Idel." Beta James pulled back, "What's your full name?" She smiled, "As of today it is Duchess Idel Walsh of the royal fairy water house. Cousin Aiden granted my father's petition for all his children to be named Duchess now that Emmaline is recognized. As she is child with his mate, we had to wait until that happened. It is a pleasure to make your acquaintance mate of mine. I was already told your name is James Powell."

Beta James was taken aback. Idel continued, "I hope you don't mind that I matched our costumes. I was just excited when I found out my sister found my mate." Beta James turned, "Your sister is Luna Emmaline then? The soul searcher." Idel smiled, "Yes, she called me a while ago. I got here as fast I could."

I smiled at her. Beta James turned to me, "Thank you, Luna Emmaline." I waved my hand, "It's just Emmaline. The room at the top of the stairs in our home is open, Idel." She smirked and popped them away.

Dylan clapped, "Is it mate day? I think it's national find your mate day. On Dylan and Lacy day. A day that will LIVE in mate immortality MUHAHAHA!" I laughed, "It's a good

day for mates.” Lucas admitted, “I did not see that one coming.” Eric snorted, “Really, Lucas? You saw the pups being mated coming? This is SUCH a good day. James has NO IDEA what he’s in for.” Dylan retorted, “That *would* make you happy, GAP.” Eric just smirked. We all made our way into the reception.

It was going well until Haley set down her food. She groaned, “I have a bad feeling.” Eric tensed along with his brothers. Haley picked up her food then put it down continuing, “FUCK! Dylan, who did you hire as the caterer? I’m sorry, but I’m not eating that. I’m conjuring my own food, this smells horrid. Honestly, it smells like something died.”

Dylan frowned, “It smells fine. Oh my god! Is she glowing again? We picked a caterer off the list you faxed us.” Haley tilted her head, “I am not glowing.” She turned to Eric and asked, “Eric, what the FUCK is a fax?” I gulped. “Oh no.”

Eric, Lucas, and Dylan’s eyes widened. Lacy muttered, “Great.” A few feet away from us, the most adorable baby growl came out of EJ. A gold dome surrounded Chelsea. The glass that had just been handed to her flew across the room. The waiter who had given it to her was convulsing on the ground as EJ growled at him.

What was happening? Haley yelled, “ERIC!” Eric ran over, “Buddy we need answers first. Don’t kill him.” EJ growled in response. Lucas growled along with Peter and Alpha Kyle. Lacy linked me, “I’m sorry. The PUP is doing that?” I was pretty sure he was.

Lucas then linked the whole pack, “NO ONE EAT OR DRINK THE FOOD! Women and pups get to the safe room. Lacy will direct you to where it is in this building.” Eric convinced EJ to stop doing whatever was making the waiter’s ears bleed.

Haley had rounded up the rest of the wait staff. The guests were holding others by their throats. Eric spoke one word, “Haley.” Haley answered his unspoken question, “You can ask him our questions. I’ve got him, and if I didn’t you have Cassie in your arms.”

Eric growled, “Why did you just try to give Chelsea Hanes a wolfsbane and silver laced drink?” The waiter answered, “To cause a distraction. Alpha Hammond and our group are going to attack. We wanted chaos before he did so you wouldn’t notice us coming. Chelsea Hanes would also be easier to take if she was incapacitated. We were told we could collect the bounty on her.”

EJ growled again and the man began to scream. We all gasped when his head literally exploded. Eric sighed; Cassie squealed. Then she growled at her brother. Lacy linked me, “Oh my god. Cassie is mad EJ got her covered in brain matter. I love her.”

Haley snapped Eric and Cassie clean. Cassie curled up into Eric. Haley spoke to her son, “EJ, I need you to pop yourself, Chelsea, and Elise to Grandpa Titus. Ok? We want them to be as safe as possible. Let mommy and daddy deal with this with our friends.” EJ growled at the waiters by Haley, but he popped out with Chelsea.

Logan pulled out his phone and quickly announced, “He’s with dad.” Five of the waiters by Haley went down screaming. Haley sighed, “Alpha males, I can’t even be mad. Alexander’s mad for his brother’s sake. They tried to take his brother’s mate from him. I’d be mad too. Fuck all you bitches! How am I supposed to parent when you all are a bunch of assholes?!” None of their heads exploded, they died a much slower death. Their brains were leaking out of their ears and nose. It was gross.

Dylan spoke first, “Umm... did God Alpha Prick’s pups just... exploded people’s brains? Because I have so many thoughts about that. So very many. I may need a notebook to write them all down.” Haley answered, “Yes, they are pushers.”

Dylan yelled, “For the LOVE OF GOD! One thing... can ONE THING in his life not be amazing? Alpha Hammond is going to attack my wedding, and his PUPS saved us. Because his son is possessive of his freaking UNBORN MATE! UGH! I have to thank GAP now. What IS THIS SHIZAH YOU

GIVE ME, MOON GODDESS? He raised his hands up to the air shaking them.

Several people laughed. Dylan gleefully added, “On a separate note, I’m team let GAP’s pusher pups at Alpha Hammond. Just explode his brain, he deserves it. Let’s be honest, everyone was thinking he deserves it. I know, what you’re when I’m right... I’m right. It’s such karma. He could be killed by a pup. It’s amazing.”

Haley sighed, “EJ won’t leave Chelsea. Alexander used a lot of his power just now. I’m not willing to test the capability of their powers right now. We can defeat Alpha Hammond without my kids.” Dylan sighed, “That’s an excellent point special fun sized ninja fairy.”

Peter stuck his hand out to Eric, “I owe you.” Peter had tears in his eyes as he continued, “I was right beside her, and I smelled nothing wrong with her drink.” Eric disagreed, “You owe me nothing. My son protected his mate. His sense of smell is heightened, and clearly the witches didn’t know that the fairies can smell wolfsbane. That has to be what’s in the food too. I don’t smell anything wrong with it either, but my wife did.”

I took a whiff of the food and wrinkled my nose. I asked incredulously, “You can’t smell that? It’s...” I gagged, “Intense.” Lucas growled, “They must not have thought Emmaline or Haley would notice.”

Idel popped back in, freshly marked with Beta James. She looked around stating, “We missed something.” While Dylan filled them in I grabbed Sam and popped her to Haley. I whispered as she grabbed Katie, “I don’t know how to pop to the Hackura realm.”

Haley smiled, “Valerie, Aubree, do jump on the fairy pregnant express out of danger.” Aubree and Valerie laughed and grabbed on. Cassie popped into Haley’s arms reluctantly and Alexander put a hand on his sister.

I quickly said, “Deb... I mean mom, you’re coming with us too.” Dale said, “YOU SEE, WOMAN! I told you. You never listen to me!” Debbie growled at him, “Don’t you dare get

hurt, Dale!” Dale rolled his eyes, “I used to run this pack, I can defend it and our pups.” Debbie retorted, “This is NOT the wedding I wanted for our little girl, Dale. When I get back, you are in TROUBLE!”

We popped out, dropping the girls off with Haley’s family. Astrid came over, “I need a fight.” Haley smiled, grabbed her, and popped us back. Marcus and Bjourn had joined the group. Bjourn smiled at Astrid, “How did I know you would be coming back with my sister?” Astrid smiled, “Because you’ve known me my whole life.” Bjourn kissed her, “Don’t get hurt, or I’ll give you hell.” Astrid retorted, “Same goes for you.”

I walked over to Lucas and kissed him. He held me asking, “I can’t convince you to pop back to the Hackura realm, can I?” I smiled, “No, you really can’t. This is our pack, and we will defend it together.”

I saw a flicker of Lacy outside. I warned, “Ry, Dusty, they are going with an illusion again, how unoriginal.” I grabbed Dylan who was about to run after her, “It’s not her! No one would bring her back here. I saw the flicker, it’s an illusion. If you follow her, you’ll fall into it.”

Lucas grabbed Dylan who was growling viciously, “Let me go! We have to get her inside!” Lucas tried reason, “Dylan, feel your bond with Lacy. Is she close by?” Dylan growled at him, “No...” Lucas said, “I know it’s not easy, but you have to stay here.”

I frowned, “Why would they think Lacy isn’t inside with us?” Haley grabbed one of the waitresses, “Were you supposed to get Lacy outside?” The waitress said, “Yes, when Chelsea Hanes was being attended to.” Dylan said, “Because I’d just LET you jerks have my bride.” The waitress said, “You would be busy. An Alpha’s mate would be in distress.” Dylan growled, “What sort of logic is that? Do I look serious enough to be a doctor to you? People just want Serious Dylan to emerge. My memos are not making headway. I couldn’t help Chelsea. Do you see this chaos? No! Nothing is chaotic here. Do you see Alpha’s in the room? This is what you get when you let a man losing his mind plan things without a Beta. We fix your plot holes.” Dylan paced as Lucas watched helplessly.

Haley conjured her swords. Eric went over kissing her deeply. He pulled back warning her, "Don't get hurt, Angel." Beta James said, "Idel, pop out of here." Idel snorted, "Hell no! I'd like to see them try for me." Beta James growled, "You do know the fairy's lost the war with the werewolves by a LARGE ass margin." Idel laughed, "I never came to the human realm. I never fought, nor did any royal. The earth fairies started that war. Water fairies didn't fight any of you people."

Beta James growled, "Don't you dare get hurt, I just found you." Idel snorted, "Me? You don't get hurt. Men, honestly. I can teleport away. You do realize that? One second I'm in front of you, the next..." She popped on his back and kissed his neck, "I'm behind you."

I laughed agreeing, "Wolves." Idel smiled, "I'm so glad he's a wolf. I have been OBSESSED with werewolves since the war started. Then it only grew after Consort Connors over there lasted Haley's entire concupiscence."

Beta James growled, "You like Alpha Eric?" Idel laughed, "I mean he's not bad to look at, but no. I don't like him in the way you mean. He would kill me in a heartbeat. My cousin is insane for how she teases that man so."

Haley stuck her tongue out stating, "Eric would never hurt me." Idel laughed, "As I am not you, I maintain he'd snap me like a twig." Eric smiled a sinister smile at her. I even shivered. Idel was right. Eric could and would kill her.

Ry and Dustin finished chanting. Just like at the dance the light shot out around the area. Dustin announced, "The illusion is down." I heard a growl outside, "LUCAS LYONS!" I sighed, "Great." Alpha Hammond called, "Bring your pretty little Luna out here, Alpha Lucas! Let's settle this." I took Lucas' hand assuring him, "We will defeat him." Lucas kissed me, "Pop away if any of them get their hands on you." I nodded and we all walked out hand in hand.

Alpha Hammond and his forces were waiting. His eyes moved beside us. He greeted, "Ryan and Dustin Bishop, you

are powerful.” Dusty said, “And you are an idiot. Now we are all caught up.” Alpha Hammond growled at Dusty.

Alpha Hammond’s soul was a mess of pain, hurt, and anger. I gently told him, “Millie wouldn’t want this, Charlie.” Dylan snorted and several witches paused at my words. Alpha Hammond growled, “DO NOT SAY HER NAME!”

A witch spoke, “She... she came to you? No one knew she called him that. You could only know if she came to you.” I nodded, “She did come to me. She wanted me to know he wasn’t always this way. She was taken by vampires and a witch in Missouri.”

Alpha Hammond growled, “FUCKING FANGERS! I’ll deal with them once I have you by my side.” Haley sounded bored when she said, “That’s already done. I killed their fucking asses.”

Alpha Hammond turned to her, “You... you killed my men and ruined my home.” Haley’s eyes narrowed, “YOU took my mate, and put MY CHILDREN in danger. Don’t test me, asshole.” Alpha Hammond laughed, “I didn’t take your pups.”

I sensed people coming up behind us. Haley looked at me and nodded. I linked Lucas, “Haley and I both sense people coming up behind us.” Lucas responded, “I know. Our warriors and Black Mountain are following them.” I leaned into Lucas’ side.

A few witches started to back off. I linked Lucas, “Some of the witches and warlocks are leaving.” Lucas nodded, “Millie showing herself to you proved to them that this isn’t what she wanted.”

Dustin spoke, “You all know what Millie showing up to Luna Emmaline Richards means. Do you intend to fight my brother and I?” Someone scoffed, “You can’t take us all.” Ry warned, “Last chance.” Several others abandoned the cause. Dusty laughed at the ten who remained, “Bad call.”

They began to battle, exchanging spells. Lucas kissed me and pushed gently to the side as he shifted. Idel and Haley popped to me. Haley conjured me a dagger. Idel had a sword. I

asked, “You can use a sword?” Idel smiled, “All royal fairies can. Haley was the only one not trained to fight, and obviously that was rectified after she left Faerie.”

A pack of wolves came at us. Idel killed one, I let one get close to me and my hands turned blue. I drowned it. Haley popped beside me, “Millie told you that you will kill Hammond, right?” I nodded. Haley asked, “Do you want to kill him?”

I’d thought about it a lot, so I didn’t hesitate to answer, “Yes, I do. He’s after Lucas. That’s his ultimate goal. I don’t care that he wants to hurt me, but the end game is to kill Lucas. I find I’m offended and pissed off about that.”

Haley said, “Then Idel and I will get you to him.” I asked, “If I didn’t want to kill him, what would you have done?” Haley shrugged, “I’d have killed his pathetic, hurting my mate, and having his men come at my children ass.” Fair enough.

Haley grabbed Idel, “You and I get the witches guarding him. Emmaline if you need help, we’ve got you. I know you can do this.” Idel happily stated, “Our wolves are going to lose their minds. Ohh that was fun to say. Our wolves. I feel like I officially joined the gang.”

Haley laughed, “You’ll have to join our girl gang of bad asses, Idel.” Idel clapped, “I like it. Do we get t-shirts?” I scoffed, “Idel, the t-shirt is tip of the iceberg. You all missed out on Haley planned events when she was younger. They rock.”

We locked our arms. Alpha Chase shifted back near us. He reached for Haley yelling, “Wait!” Haley popped us away. I studied her soul; it was as if his actions confirmed something she already knew in her soul. I wondered what it was.

Haley had us closer to the witches guarding Alpha Hammond. She muttered, “He heard us, and he was trying to stop us. Such interesting things are happening lately.” I laughed, “Of course he did, he’s our mate’s ally.” Haley shrugged, “Perhaps. Why was he close enough to hear us though?” I didn’t know the answer, but it seemed like she did.

A witch yelled at us, “Bad call fairies.” Idel laughed, “I do love how overconfident witches are about killing people. Fairies could eat you witches for breakfast.” Haley agreed, “You know I love killing witch bitches. I can’t believe they haven’t heard that I put them in ditches yet. I thought that would catch on in this realm for sure.”

We heard ferocious growls. Haley smirked, “They sound mad... Oops?” Lucas linked me, “What are you doing?” I replied, “Ending this.” We heard a pop followed by another angry growl. Maribella smiled at us, “Taking on five witches without me? I’m offended.” Idel giggled, “I’m so sad we didn’t grow up around all of you. This is fascinatedly fun.” We might have a different definition of the word fascinating.

Haley yelled out a war cry, calling the wind and sending it at the witches. She was such a graceful fighter. I could only gape realizing she’d already killed a witch and was trading charms versus spells with another. I threw hail at Alpha Hammond. He laughed, “I hope you’ve got more than that, little dove.”

I smirked and started throwing basketball sized hail at him. He was trying to dodge me, but I nailed him in the gut, and he went down. He quickly got back up. I yelled at him, “Did you think because Millie died, you could take my mate from me?”

Alpha Hammond growled, “You’re mine!” I heard Dominic growl. I emphatically stated, “I’m Lucas’ not yours.” Alpha Hammond smiled, “I have something that will change your mind.” Grayson literally appeared out of thin air. I rolled my eyes, “Of course you’re here... and OH MY GOSH! Your mom’s name is Andie! That’s why I know that name.”

Andie said, “Emmaline, I know you’re a sweetheart, but that MONSTER you’ve been living with killed Christy. She was the first person to show me love in this world, and he took her from me.” Haley yelled, “Try again bitch, I killed her.”

I nodded, “That’s true. My cousin killed her, after she tried to have me killed. I can’t say I’m a fan of hers.” Grayson gasped, “YOUR COUSIN? Haley Connors is actually your cousin? You’re a fairy?” I threw my hail at him, “What was

your first clue? She told your cop friends I was her cousin, and she can't lie. I confirmed she was actually my cousin. Seriously, this one's on you."

Andie yelled at Haley, "I'll kill you... you bitch! You killed Christy!" She ran at Haley who laughed. Andie was run through with a sword from behind. Alpha Hammond and Grayson yelled, "NO!" Blade told her, "No hurt Princess. Is job."

Grayson ran at Blade pulling a knife. I yelled, "GRAYSON, NO! Are you insane?" He didn't listen. Haley called the wind throwing him away from Blade. A witch grabbed him and backed them up into a tree where there was a holoport waiting. They disappeared.

Haley yelled, "I fucking hate witch bitches and their annoying ass holoports!" She ran through another witch. Alpha Hammond reached for me, but I popped behind him. When he turned, I punched him in the face. He shifted.

Somehow his wolf seemed more unhinged than he was. His eyes were half red and there was saliva dripping from his mouth. I asked, "Do you have rabies? What the heck is wrong with you?" He looked like a rogue, that had survived for decades alone. He snarled and came at me. I started to pop away.

We had gotten pretty far from the group when he shifted back. He taunted, "That was easier than I thought, little dove." I asked, "What was?" Alpha Hammond retorted, "Getting you to the holoport." I popped behind him.

He growled at me then pulled a syringe. I rolled my eyes, "Let me guess that's iron." Alpha Hammond smiled evilly, "Yes." We fought each other. I threw icicles and hail at him. He tackled me to the ground, and I broke his nose. He stuck the syringe into me, and I turned the iron to water. I whimpered because it did hurt because he stabbed me with it.

He stroked my cheek with his finger, "There now, isn't that better?" I heard a pop. Haley snorted, "Yes, I do think this is fucking better. Your being in your human form that is, your

wolf looks unhinged. Poor thing.” I brought my knee up and nailed him in the balls then headbutted him.

I popped out from under him. He yelled, “No... NO! I injected you with iron.” I smiled, “I turned it to water.” Haley nudged me, “Which is still super fucking cool.”

Alpha Hammond was grabbed from behind. I couldn’t help but smile when Blade hissed, “Is dead. Tried to hurt fairy. Princess loves fairy. Blade likes fairy. Makes princess happy. Fairy kill wolf.” I smiled, “Thank you, Blade.” Alpha Hammond tried to get out of Blade’s steel grip, but he couldn’t.

My hands glowed blue and I stepped forward. I put my hands on his chest and willed my light to drag out his drowning. I told him, “I may not like killing people because their souls tell me how much pain they are in, but I will NEVER let anyone hurt Lucas.”

Haley announced, “And we have a bad ass girl gang that has her back.” Maribella and Idel popped to us. Maribella cheered, “Heck yes she does!” I waited until we were joined by my brothers, Haley’s, and our mates.

I got close to Hammond, “You asked me how I knew at the school it was an illusion, it’s because a warlock raised me. Dusty and Ry are my brothers. One last thing, Millie appeared to me to ask me to bring your daughter to our pack so she could be raised here.” Hammond gasped for breath and then his eyes turned blue. Haley, Maribella, Idel and I popped out of the splash zone. Everyone else got wet.

Dusty turned to me yelling, “WHAT THE HELL WERE YOU THINKING?” I frowned, “Ummm... did you not notice we killed him?” Ry said, “You popped away from us all.” Lucas had his arms around me, and he growled lowly in my ear, “You are in such trouble, baby girl.”

Haley winked at me as Eric grabbed her and crashed his mouth to hers. Beta James was scenting Idel and Tucker had Maribella in his arms. Haley broke apart from Eric, “We had it under control. I even brought Blade to their territory earlier tonight.”

Blade said, "Is true. Princess said wait until fight." Haley patted Eric's chest, "Exactly. Now, I'll be popping to get the other women and the babies." Eric growled, "Don't you..." Haley popped to me, and we popped to get the girls.

When we popped back Lucas growled in my ear, "If you pop away from me one more time, I'm going to tie you down somewhere. You know what? Fuck it." Lucas threw me over his shoulder yelling, "Good night, everyone." I squealed, "Lucas!"

Howls filled the air when Lucas smacked my butt. He carried me to our room and threw me onto our bed. His eyes turned dark, "Never do that again, mate." I gulped as Dominic jumped on top of me commanding, "Conjure me rope." I whispered, "Lucas... I mean Dominic." He growled and turned me over and spanked me. He nuzzled my neck, "Alpha. Call me Alpha. Now, conjure me rope." I said, "Yes, Alpha." I conjured him rope and he smirked widely telling me, "You're in trouble mate." With that his lips were on mine.

Halloween Reception

Lucas couldn't take his eyes off Emmaline's Tinkerbell costume when she came down the stairs. Dominic growled at me, "Make mate change! That is very short and revealing. Actually, let's rip it off her. Yes, that's a better plan."

My pants tightened. I tried shaking my thoughts of ripping her costume off her from my head. I linked Eric, "This is your wife's fault." Eric ripped his eyes away from Haley to look at Emmaline. He laughed in our link, "I'm not even sorry." I growled at him.

I practically sprinted over to Emmaline. Her arousal reached my nose, and I barely managed not to throw her over my shoulder. Dylan linked me, "Oh, no you don't. I know that look. It's Dylan and Lacy day! You're the best man, and the bride's brother. You cannot, I repeat cannot disappear for hours. Calm yourself."

I replied, "Do you SEE this outfit?" Dylan smirked, "Now that I think about it you're right. I didn't see her standing there through my keen senses. I just don't know what happened. YES, I SEE HER! IT IS DYLAN AND LACY DAY! You can rip it off later, bestie."

I growled, "Watch it because I could convince Emmaline to get Lacy to wear something just like it." Dylan perked up, "Could you? I'd like a slutty Disney princess please." I groaned. Dylan winked, "Emmaline looks nice though." I growled, "She looks like a snack." Dylan sounded scandalized, "I would never say such things of my Luna and best friends' mate. I'll stick to she looks nice."

Emmaline teased me. I linked Eric, "Fuck your wife and her fairy outfits!" Eric replied, "You don't have to tell me twice, I'll be back." I growled, "NO! That's not what I meant!" Eric smirked, "Haley made you dislike Tinkerbell,

and now she's bringing back the fun to said character. It's very fairy of them." I growled, "You're enjoying this because your wife is fully covered."

Eric raised an eyebrow, "My wife's dress is hardly covering her. Things like your mate being kidnapped from your own backyard pregnant with your pups puts things like their outfits into perspective."

I growled, "There's more material to Haley's outfit." Eric agreed, "That's true, but it wouldn't matter to me. At the end of the day, I get to rip it off." Eric's eyes went back to Haley and his entire demeanor changed. I looked over and realized what happened. Her clothes he was fine with, men taunting him about his wife not so much.

I linked Dylan, "This is why this is problem." He looked up at me questioningly until Beta James was flung back from Haley. Dylan looked stunned, "Dang. I didn't think she'd get that mad from him almost talking to her. Did GAP tell her to do that? He's no fun."

I watched as Haley popped to Eric and popped him away. I linked Dylan, "I don't think Haley did that." I linked Jackson, "Does Eric have some of Haley's powers?" Jackson replied, "He hadn't shown any, but Marcious told us he'd get at least one of her powers."

Dylan linked me, "Of course, she knew he was behind her. I didn't even need the youngest creepy ninja assassin to share that detail. I knew. She has ninja stealth powers. She threw him against the wall with the wind. I told James she'd do that if he crossed a line. I'm not entirely certain how almost speaking to her was crossing a line... women. What can you do?"

Jackson was surprised but glared at Beta James. Haley popped back with Eric. He linked me, "Beta James better watch the fuck out. I can apparently call the wind." I linked Dylan, "Remain calm." Dylan frowned, "Why wouldn't I... OH SASSAFRAS! DO NOT TELL ME!" I laughed in our link. He took it well.

I linked Eric, “Did she tell you how to control it?” Eric sighed, “She did. Apparently, my rage at seeing him near her; knowing his intent brought the power forward. When Fairy’s first use of their powers it’s usually activated by a strong emotion.” I assured him, “Beta James won’t do anything to Haley.” Eric growled, “You and I BOTH know he’d fuck her in heartbeat to get back at me.” I gave him a look, “Before you marked her, sure. Now, absolutely not. That would cause you pain, he’s not that angry. Flirt with her, sure. Nothing else.” He was clearly past reason though.

I linked Jackson, “Eric might need fresh air.” Jackson replied, “He’s not leaving Haley alone with Beta James here. I’m not a miracle worker.” I sighed. I was concerned because Beta James was entirely too smug for someone who’d been thrown into a wall.

I was surprised by Emmaline’s line of questioning in our link. Beta James finding his mate at this wedding was certainly welcomed news. I linked Eric, “Emmaline figured out who Beta James mate is. She said she’ll be popping in later.”

Eric relaxed a little bit, “So, he gets a fairy too. Oh, that’s so good. He deserves the karma of the male fairies that will try to seduce his mate.” I frowned, “Does anyone deserve that?” Eric retorted, “The guy who’s mad his sisters all wanted to have sex with me does. They ALL knew what they were getting into. None of them were virgins. I didn’t lie, coerce, or mislead any of them in any way, shape, or form. Yet he still wants to flirt with my and fuck my wife because I slept with his sisters. Who all knew I’d slept with the others.”

I said, “Haley wouldn’t flirt back, nor would she ever think about having sex with him. Again, he would not have sex with her. She’s marked.” Eric growled, “I am aware she won’t, or he’d already be dead.”

I linked Dylan, “Why did you do this? On your wedding day?” Dylan replied, “Beta James is NOT going to hurt Haley. He’s my friend. Maybe having them walk together wasn’t my best idea, but I’m taking credit for GAP getting a fairy power. He’s welcome.”

I told him, “Emmaline told me his mate will be popping in to join us later.” Dylan squealed, “ARE YOU SERIOUS?” I nodded. Dylan grinned broadly, “That’s so great! See? It all worked out. God Alpha Prick, who can all the wind now thanks to little old me, I so loathe him will settle down. Beta James will get his mate. All will be well. All because of my meddling.”

I rolled my eyes, “Sure, your meddling. Let’s all overlook the fact that my mate is the soul searcher, and she solved the problem that you created.” Dylan admitted, “Ok, so Emmaline played a part, but I put the players on the court. You can’t take this from me. I am the conduit to the matchmaker today.” I rolled my eyes.

Dylan thanked Emmaline for my costume I growled, “Really?” Dylan smiled, “It’s my wedding day, and she gave me a lovely present.” I rolled my eyes, “Then I’ll return the present we got you if you like hers so much.”

Dylan gasped, “Hey, now your sister needs a present too. It would be so rude not to get your little sister a present. Have you no shame or manners?” I laughed. I pulled Emmaline to me and started to run my hands up and down her costume. I could convince her to pop us away for a quickie.

My mom came in linking me, “You will NOT mess up your sister’s wedding, Lucas Lyons.” I responded, “I have no intention to mess up the wedding.” My mom rolled her eyes, “Let’s pretend like I don’t know that predatory look on your face. You can wait to claim Emmaline. You WILL wait until a reasonable time AFTER the reception has started. Do you hear me young man?” I groaned, “Yes, mom.” She smiled at me.

She addressed the group then linked me again, “You relay that message to Eric as well. I’ll have his mother scold him too if needed. Actually, I’ll do it. She’s already in a mood about fairies.” What did that mean?

I linked Eric, “My mother has informed me we cannot mess up Lacy’s wedding. That means we can’t fuck our mates until a reasonable time after the reception has started.” Eric growled, “Thor is NOT happy about that. I am not fucking

happy about it either. Does your mother know Beta James wants what is mine?" I reminded him, "His mate will here soon." Eric grumbled, "Haley said Emmaline told her she couldn't tell me who his mate is. All I know is it's good. What does that even mean?" I replied, "I'll ask Emmaline."

Emmaline's responses brought me up short. Eric slammed into the back of me. He linked, "Lucas?" I cut a glance at him, "Emmaline implied it might not be a partial fairy?" Eric was surprised, "Are you serious?" I nodded, "Apparently it may be a full-blooded fairy. The only thing I know is that it is in fact a fairy. She won't tell me because and I quote 'Anticipation is good for the soul.' I have no words." Eric groaned, "Fairies." I actually agreed with him this time. I didn't need anticipation; I was an Alpha. I got answers immediately, and I wasn't nice if I didn't.

Dylan linked me, "So, who is my buddy Beta James mate? You didn't say earlier. I won't tell him or anything. That's no fun." I growled, "I don't know." Dylan frowned, "Didn't you ask Emmaline?" I retorted, "Anticipation is good for me apparently." Dylan howled with laughter, "I love fairies." I rolled my eyes, "Yes, we all know you do."

Dylan continued his questions, "Do we know this partial fairy?" I retorted, "Possibly a full blooded fairy, and I don't know if we do." Dylan groaned, "Next time link me, I can get us more details. Beta blood does that for you. Alpha's ask one measly question and get pissed if they don't get answers. You all shut down. That's what I'm here for, it's literally my job." I rolled my eyes at him.

I linked the pack, "No one looks at your Luna with anything but respect. I will punish anyone who looks at her lustfully." Everyone went on alert. My mom linked me, "REALLY? It's Lacy's wedding." I replied, "I said what I said."

Lacy looked back at me then linked, "We tried to tell them, but they are just stubborn, brave little fairies." I smirked at her, "You look beautiful, Lacy Loo." She smiled and I continued, "I'm so proud of you." She teared up, "Thank you. Now go stand by Chelsea before you make me cry."

I sighed leaving Emmaline's side. It was going against every fiber of my being. I linked Eric, "You need to get in there and sit down. Jackson saved you a seat." Eric growled at Beta James, "Touch her and you won't live to meet your mate one day." Beta James said, "For god's sake, Eric. What are you, worried she'd prefer me to you and your sunny disposition?" Eric growled and slammed his lips on Haley's.

I linked Dylan, "Get someone to start the music before Eric kills Beta James." Haley put her hand on Eric's chest and smiled at him, whispering, "I love you, Thor. Only you." He smiled at her, glared at Beta James then stalked in to sit beside Jackson. His eyes never left Haley.

My eyes never left Emmaline once we got to alter. Lacy had the traditional werewolf ceremony. Quick and Easy. I did love my little sister, and I really was so happy for her. Emmaline and I linked about our own ceremony. The blood sharing seemed to scare her. Come to think of it, I was glad Haley could heal her afterwards. I would hate to see her bleeding. Dominic recoiled at the thought. I thought back to Eric and Haley's wedding.

I linked Eric, "Remember when you and Haley did the fairy piece of your wedding, and the fairy's freaked out. Why did they freak out?" Eric replied, "That's actually when we became twice light bound. The fairies didn't think Haley could share her light. They freaked out realizing she could use said light." I replied, "I remember some even passed out when Titus said Haley was his daughter." Eric smirked, "It was a good moment."

I snorted, "Let's hope that my wedding doesn't have fairy's trying to take my bride during the reception like yours did." Eric growled, "I have no patience for that, I'd just kill them for you." I snorted, "I'm in."

Once the ceremony ended Lacy had our group stay back. Eric, of course, didn't leave keeping his eyes on Beta James and Haley. I hugged Lacy, "Congratulations, Lacy Loo." I pulled Dylan in for a hug, "We are officially brothers." Dylan declared, "It's about time. We've basically been brothers forever. Your parents adopted me when mine abandoned me

and Travis. Now, it's all official. I did notice my parents didn't make it. Don't be sad, Travis. It bothers me not at all." Travis snorted, "I'm not sad. I didn't think they were coming despite what they said." I winced. I hadn't known they'd said they come.

Lacy smiled and kissed Dylan's cheek drawing the attention away from that, "I always wanted my mate to be you, Dylan. I always had the biggest crush on you. You were my first kiss, and you'll be my last." Dylan kissed her deeply.

I went to Emmaline. I linked Eric when EJ popped to Chelsea, "You're going to have to get Peter's number. EJ could just pop on over to Red Run." Eric gave me a look, "I already got it." I rolled my eyes, "Of course you did." Eric cooed at Cassie.

Dylan linked me, "I wasn't ready. I need him to coo again when I have my phone ready to record that moment. The great GAP coos." I groaned, "It's his daughter." Dylan gave me a shocked look, "He cooed. I've seen him rip a man's heart out, and now he's cooing. It's adorable and I need it for extortion purposes. As my brother of a few minutes, I need you to get him to do it again."

I was about to reply when another pop sounded. My heart stopped for a few seconds realizing it was right behind Emmaline. For a brief moment of terror, I wondered if Alpha Hammond started to work with fairies. I exhaled in relief when I realized it was just Idel dressed as Mrs. Incredible.

Dylan linked me, "YES! Beta James mate is here!" Eric said, "Holy shit." Dylan asked, "Pray tell since it's Dylan and Lacy day... who is she?" I answered, "That's Emmaline's full-blooded fairy sister, Idel." Dylan squealed, "The moon goddess loves us, and no one can say she doesn't. I'll fight them. We just added a FULL-BLOODED FAIRY to our growing show!"

I snorted, "Alpha Theo is going to call Eric about this." It should be me, but we all knew he wouldn't. Dylan snorted, "Who cares about Alpha Theo?! A full-blooded fairy related to our Luna has found her werewolf mate. You just KNOW she

will spend more time in this realm, and probably wants to spend time with her long-lost sister. THIS IS THE BEST DAY! I got married to the best girl at a COSTUME themed wedding Lucas. Maybe this is how we have peace between our pack and Alpha Theo's."

I rolled my eyes, "In your dreams." Dylan smirked at me, "Have you not been paying attention lately? My dreams come true." I sighed. He had a point. Lately, Dylan did seem to get what he wanted. Sure, he got pelted with some hail, but Eric would've killed someone else for saying the things Dylan did to him. Here Dylan was... perfectly fine at his wedding. Where he didn't have to wear a tux.

Emmaline directed Idel to a room they could mate in. Eric linked me, "To quote my wife, Exfuckingcuse me? They can go mate, and I have to wait? Where the HELL is your mother to stop that from happening?" I told him, "She won't care because Lacy doesn't care about Beta James."

Eric growled and kissed Haley, whispering in her ear, "I like your wig." Haley giggled, "It's not a wig, it's a charm. This is my hair for a bit longer." Eric glared at me, "I have never disliked your mother more." Dylan sighed, "Only because it is such a special day will I point out she can perform the charm again." Now Eric smiled broadly.

We all filtered inside. Our group had dispersed and now it was just me, Emmaline, Lacy, Dylan, Eric, and Jackson. Someone walked by and handed Eric a plate of food. Haley snatched it from him. She mentioned she had a bad feeling and Eric and Jackson went on high alert.

Dylan linked me, "What was that? My Spidey senses say it's not good." I answered, "I don't know." Dylan glared, "Make it stop. It's unsettling. I want Lacy to enjoy more of the reception before all hell breaks loose. Get GAP a drink, that should calm him down."

I rolled my eyes linking Eric, "Why did you tense up?" Eric replied, "Nothing good ever follows Haley getting a bad feeling." I sighed clarifying, "Ever?" Eric inclined his head, "Shit is about to go down."

We all stared at Haley in surprise when she said the food smelled awful. I took a deep inhale, it smelled fine. Several werewolves nearby sniffed the food and shot me a questioning look. Dylan linked me, "Is she pregnant again? The food smells fine." He had a point.

I linked Eric, "Is she pregnant?" Eric answered, "Not to my knowledge, no." Dylan said, "She's the one who sent the damn list for the caterer." I stared at him as he seemed to realize at the same time what I did.

I linked Eric, "It wasn't Haley, was it?" Eric's lips went into a grim line, then Haley asked him was a fax was. Dylan linked me, "I HAVE BEEN BAMBOOZLED! Why did I think a fairy would fax anything? I thought GAP was MESSING with me having her send it that way." Lacy was annoyed until EJ's growl reached our ears.

Dylan linked me, "Never tell GAP, but that was the most adorable growl I've ever heard." I was about to reply when the contents of Chelsea's cup spilled on the floor and a dome surrounded her and EJ. All of the wolves growled as we smelled silver and wolfsbane. I ordered the pack not to eat or drink anything.

I linked Dylan, "How the hell didn't we smell that? Take the principal into custody now." Dylan replied, "On that. You do realize Haley will go on a tangent because the only answer is witches spelled the cups." He threw Lacy's drink out of her hands.

He whispered, "That's it. I've joined Haley on team WITCHES SUCK! That could've killed my pup and hurt Lacy. These jerks want Serious Dylan. HE'S HERE NOW! No one hurts my family. Wait..." He linked me, "The principal?"

I replied, "He's been talking to one of the waiters and waitresses since he got in here. I'm confident he's our traitor. GET HIM!" Dylan replied, "I am all over that like white on rice. He SHALL be apprehended." Alex and another warrior took him into custody.

Dylan yelled, "WHAT THE BIBBIDI BOBBIDI FAIRY SHIT IS HAPPENING?" He pointed in Eric's direction. I

looked over as Eric tried to convince EJ not to kill the waiter. Dylan said, “His pup is doing that? Are you for real right now?! What am I saying? Of course, it’s real. It’s GAP.”

I didn’t answer him as Eric managed to get EJ to stop. He kept on growling though. Haley told Eric to ask his questions. She had rounded up the wait staff. Dylan linked me, “Cassie is the Truth Seeker too?!” I knew that answer, “Yes, she is.”

Dylan grumbled, “Oh COME ON! What else can they do? We know they can do whatever EJ was just doing to that guy’s head, then that gold shield that appeared around Chelsea. Don’t think I didn’t see that. Now, Cassie is the Truth Seeker, and they can all can pop. One already has their mate, and we’ve seen Alexander heal. Is there no END to his prickishness?” I replied, “That’s not a word, Dylan.” Dylan said, “It’s a word, Lucas. The name Alpha Eric Connors, known as GAP, is the DEFINITION of prickishness. I wrote Websters and everything.”

Eric got us the answer we’d all known were coming. Chelsea and probably Lacy were going to be distractions for us so Hammond could attack. Lacy wasn’t going to drink it before Chelsea did. Did Hammond think we couldn’t handle getting one woman to the hospital? EJ apparently didn’t like hearing there was a bounty on Chelsea. He started using his powers again.

Lacy linked me, “Umm.” Before I could answer, Dylan linked me, “Did he just get so mad... he exploded that guy’s brains? Because that’s what it looked like, and while that’s super cool I’ll have to think of a new level for GAP to ascend to.” I responded, “Yes, that’s what happened.”

Dylan said, “Right. That’s normal... completely normal. This is fine. We all shouldn’t stock up on candy to keep on hand so that kid never gets mad at us and explodes our brains. Nope... all good here. Move along, nothing to see. I’m not bulk ordering candy to test which is his favorite. That’s not happening.” He was definitely going to do that.

Haley convinced EJ to pop Chelsea out of the situation. Nick linked me, “I have no words. No, I lied. I have words.

What in the HECK just happened?” I replied, “EJ...” I trailed off as Alexander began using his own pushing powers. I sighed and continued, “And Alexander are Pushers.”

Dylan shrieked in our link, “HIM TOO?!” I nodded. Nick replied, “So, Chelsea and my grandpup are fine because EJ Connors protected his mate in the womb and turned that guy’s brain to mush?” I agreed, “That about covers it.” Nick sat down, “I just... never... his head exploded. It’s got to be rare since not one fairy during the war we just had tried to do that.” I replied, “I know. I’ve seen it before. They did it from the womb. It’s startling and rare from my understanding.”

Nick snorted, “Startling and now Eric’s other son is doing it. Those five people are goners. The moon goddess picked my grandpup to be EJ’s other half. She’ll always be safe with him, no one could doubt that.” I agreed, “That’s true.”

Dylan started shouting out loud. I linked him, “Didn’t I just tell you his sons could explode heads?” Dylan replied, “It warrants being said out loud. HIS HEAD EXPLODED BECAUSE A PUP GOT MAD AT HIM.” Dylan started to rant about Eric’s life.

Eric linked me, “Is he EVER less annoying?” I answered, “He’s in shock. He’s not wrong though. Chelsea and Elise’s lives were saved because EJ is possessive of his mate.” Eric replied, “The moon goddess knows what she’s doing. They needed to meet so Elise would be born.”

The gravity of that statement hit me full force. Nick’s wife, Luna Marissa, was silently crying. I linked Lacy, “Get all the women and children to the safe room. Wait, tell me you had them conjure a safe room in this building?” Lacy replied, “I am an Alpha’s daughter. Of course, there’s a safe room.” Lacy began leading everyone away.

Eric linked me, “That waiter didn’t expect Haley to take my food. They were going to get all the wolves down.” I replied, “Would that have affected Logan?” Eric shook his head, “No, I’ll bet the food is also laced with iron though. They couldn’t have known wolfsbane or silver smelled bad to

fairies.” I replied, “Wolfsbane is rank, that has to be what they smell.”

Emmaline gagged smelling the food. Dustin whispered to me, “It’s a spell. They didn’t do a blanket spell; it was specific to witches and wolves. If they’d included fairy’s that would’ve gone down badly.” Nick shivered.

I replied, “EJ’s Hackura senses would’ve picked it up though.” Dustin agreed. Dylan linked, “Haley doesn’t have Hackura sense of smell.” I replied, “I think her pups do.” Dylan snorted, “Of course they do.”

Dylan growled out loud, “These guys are toast.” Idel and Beta James popped back in. Dylan linked me, “At least Beta James would’ve been able to help if the rest of us were down.” I replied, “We aren’t, so bring him up to speed.”

Emmaline and Haley gathered up the pregnant she wolves and popped them away. My dad breathed a sigh of relief, “Thank the goddess Emmy grabbed your mother. Crazy woman was talking about taking Alpha Hammond on herself for ruining Lacy’s wedding.” I assured him, “Emmaline wouldn’t have let mom fight.”

Eric advised, “Keep her close when she gets back, Lucas. We don’t need our mates getting separated from us. That was clearly the goal.” I nodded, “They won’t have any luck with that.”

Dylan laughed, “Hello my karmic justice, I thought you ran away from me, fleeing the very room in GAP’s presence. It’s like you all forget they are fairies. If they don’t want to stick beside you, they will just pop away from you.” Eric growled, “Dylan... Not now.”

Dylan retorted, “Sure. Who needs logic or facts? They just mess everything up.” Eric glared at him. Dylan linked me, “I’m right.” I nodded, “You are. We need to keep them with us though because they didn’t expect for us to be in fighting shape.” Dylan said, “I don’t need that explained to me, be sure to tell your Luna though.”

A portal opened beside Eric. Bjourn, Marcus, Darrin, and Harold stepped through. Darrin said, “Witches are being followed from the border discreetly by our warriors. They are coming from behind to surround you.”

The girls popped back with Astrid. Dylan said, “YES! The future King AND QUEEN of the creepy ninja assassins are on our side. I AM SO PUMPED! Alpha Hammond done messed up now. He’s not getting away this time.”

I replied, “He ruined my little sister’s wedding, and he wants my mate. He absolutely dies tonight.” My dad agreed, “Amen. My wife will have a conniption fit if he doesn’t, and we are avoiding that at ALL costs.”

Dylan fist pumped. I walked over to Emmaline. I linked Eric, “Are they going to snap into different outfits?” Eric replied, “It doesn’t seem like it.” I growled. Dylan asked, “What now?” I pointed to the women, “Emmaline is still in her costume. All of them are.” Dylan laughed, “Oh my gosh. She is going to pop around as Tinkerbell. That’s... there are no words... No, I’ve changed my mind, amazing... that’s the word. So many words are flowing to me now.” I growled, “No.”

Emmaline warned an illusion was coming. Dylan grumbled, “How unoriginal, I’m disappointed in them. I’ll chastise them thoroughly for not mixing it up.” He stalled when he saw what appeared to be Lacy being chased and run down.

Emmaline couldn’t see or hear what we did, but Lacy was screaming for us to help her. I cringed as I heard, “LUCAS! DYLAN! HELP ME! DADDY! PLEASE! PLEASE HELP ME!” My eyes filled with tears. I linked Eric, “Get my dad.”

I got in Dylan’s face trying to reason with him. This had to be their backup plan in case we didn’t eat the food. I could see Eric restraining my dad while Haley spoke to him. He was thrashing and crying. “My pup... that’s my pup! She needs me!”

Dylan relaxed when I used his own words in our previous illusion about using the bond. I linked my dad, “It’s not her.

Dylan felt his bond with her, Lacy is still in the Hackura realm.” My dad answered, “Haley just showed me a picture of Lacy with King Titus. I knew it wasn’t her, but... I heard her crying for me. She’s my baby girl.” I wiped my eyes, “I know. He will suffer for using her that way.” My dad growled his agreement.

I linked Dylan, “She’s fine. Haley just showed my dad a picture of Lacy with Titus. She’s probably going to squeal about taking a picture with the King of the Hackura all night.” Dylan said, “I’ll RIP his head off. That was torture. She needed me. She was screaming for us.” I put an arm on his back, “I know, but it wasn’t her.” I patted him on the shoulder.

Eric looked at us worriedly. I nodded to him letting him know we were all good. Haley was using her truth seeking ability to get more information. Dylan was irate that they thought they’d get Lacy away from him. I assured him, “We know she wouldn’t have left your side.”

Dylan lamented, “They would’ve had to pry her away from cold dead hands.” I nodded, “No one doubts that. We know you love her.” He grumbled, “This is why you don’t let someone who’s losing their mind plan something. Chelsea Hanes is not more important to me than Lacy. She’s mine. Mine trumps worried for a she wolf *everyone* else would be worried about.” I sighed, “I know she is.” He answered, “We need to kill him quickly because I need to see Lacy. I need to see they don’t have her. I need her here in person.”

I got back in his face, “You protect her and our pack, right here, right now. I need you by my side.” Dylan straightened, “I’m always by your side. I just need to get my windup toy, and sick him on Alpha Hammond. I’ll give his murderous GAP self this one because I need efficiency.” I was relieved knowing he had his focus back on the fight we were facing. He started to pace; I watched him worriedly.

Eric spoke softly to Haley then dragged Haley over to our group. He spoke to Dylan in hushed tones, “I know how you feel, Dylan, and before you say some snarky comment just let me say this. I watched Haley fight from behind the god forsaken enclosure with our pups inside her. I watched her get

hit and injected with iron. I watched her lose weight, she had bruises and fang marks all over her. I watched her, and I could do nothing to help her. I couldn't get to her no matter how much I tried to get through the barrier keeping her from me. I sat outside that house for a week unable to touch my mate while she suffered."

Dylan linked, "I can't snark when he says such things. He's such a mood killer with his facts. My facts are fun, his are depressing." Eric's were on point though. Eric continued, "We WILL defeat Alpha Hammond, and when we do Lacy will be back in your arms. Channel that anger and helplessness you just felt. Let it fuel you to fight with us."

Dylan was silent for several seconds then smiled, "I knew you liked me, GAP. I told you Lucas it was deep down, but he likes me. We are secret besties. All our allies just heard the proof. There will be no denying our secret friendship after this." Eric rolled his eyes.

Dylan lowered his voice, "Thanks, Eric. I needed to hear that. Of course, it had to come from you of all people... prick." Eric smiled as he dragged Haley away. I linked Eric, "Thank you." Eric replied, "We need him, and I meant every word. I know all the emotions that just hit him; it's not pleasant."

Dylan linked me, "We missed James and Idel's first couple fight... DANG IT!" I retorted, "Yes, well it's good to have you back." Dylan danced in place when Beta James stiffened asking if Idel liked Eric. Dylan whispered in my ear, "Dear moon goddess, let her say yes. I mean... honestly have we met a woman who doesn't like him?" I thought about it, "I'm sure there's a few."

Idel's answer settled the room. Dylan linked me, "Did anyone else see that smile GAP just had. I swear to god, I flashed to two years ago right before he killed two people." I responded, "She's not wrong. Eric could snap her like a twig if he wanted to, but he never hurt anyone without a reason. Especially a woman." Dylan agreed, "True. We need to get a partial male fairy in our group. It would drive GAP insane. I have new goals."

I tried not to laugh. Eric would hate that, but I can't say I would be a fan either. Idel and Haley bantered. Dylan linked me, "Someone will have to inform Idel that GAP's love for his fun sized ninja fairy is his one redeeming quality."

I sighed, "He's a good guy." Dylan replied, "He's a terrifying God Alpha Prick who is now less murder-y because of our fun sized ninja fairy; AND he's only less murder-y if no one threatens her. He gets WAY more murder-y when she's threatened than he did before, which says something. We should get him into therapy." I wanted to tell him murder-y wasn't a word, but I knew that would launch a rant.

I groaned, "He gets things done, and he's a good guy." He was about to reply when Alpha Hammond shouted my name. Dylan said, "You did not just tell your fairy to pop away. I see that happening like I see the grass turning blue tomorrow. A fairy could make that happen though, so hope springs eternal and all." I growled at him as I took Emmaline's hand, and we walked out to face him together.

Hammond started talking about Dustin and Ryan. Dylan linked me, "He's a bad villain. You don't compliment the other side as your opening statement. He's got thirty freaking witches, and he's complimenting the TWO we have. I hate him and his not knowing how being a villain works self."

I looked at the ground so no one would see my smile when I responded, "I don't like him either. It's safe to say none of us do." Dylan snorted, "I hate him the most out of us all. It's my crown and not even GAP can't take it from me."

Eric linked me, "Our men are right behind the witches coming at us from the flank." Emmaline tried to appeal to Hammond, but he was far too gone. I noticed several witches blanched during Emmaline's attempts. They seemed to realize that if Millie appeared to Emmaline, then this wasn't what she would've wanted.

Eric linked me, "Ten just cut and left." I linked my men in the main house, "Ten witches coming your way." Alex replied, "We've got them, Lucas." Dylan linked me, "We aren't letting them get away, right? Because illusion or not those assholes

had her screaming for me, and serious ANGRY Dylan must have vengeance.”

I replied, “No one who was a part of this gets away.” Alex linked me, “I interrogated the principal and some of our wait staff that were brought to us. I got the location of the principal’s daughter and her mate. Should I send someone to get them?” I contemplated before answering, “Send five men in case it’s a trap. She’s our responsibility, she grew up here. Bring her home.”

Emmaline figured out we were being flanked. I was proud that she and Haley were looking out for us. I linked Eric, “Did your mate tell you we were being flanked?” Eric nodded, “That she did. Our mates are one of a kind. I was tempted to tell the remaining witches their leader’s daughter was hiding in a safe room, but then they’d try to take her from us.

Dustin and Ryan’s threats had more of them running. They fled right into the arms of mine and Eric’s warriors. We were getting confirmed numbers as they left. Dylan linked, “These ten remaining morons should get a Darwin award. Dustin and Ryan already proved they were more powerful than thirty of them. These guys are like ‘sure we lost over half our numbers; but we can take them.’ Seriously?! Where did all the logical people go?” I replied, “They ran into our warriors.” Dylan snorted.

I kissed Emmaline and pushed her a safe distance away so I could shift into Dominic. We attacked. I linked Dylan, “Make a circle around the women.” Dylan said, “Ok I guess I can do that. It seems like a waste of time since they can pop away, but alright.” The women were talking, but I couldn’t focus on them right now. The witches brought rogues into the fight.

I whirled to check on them after I took one down, but the rogues didn’t even twitch in their direction. They were focused on us. I concentrated back on the task in front of me. I growled at Hammond who just laughed at me. I took down more rogues.

All of us froze when Alpha Chase yelled. My blood ran cold because that meant he’d shifted back to human form. His

pack members that were here, and any Alpha fighting could have heard him through link. Dylan linked me, “Now seems like a bad time to say I told you so.... but... I did tell you so.”

I turned to where Emmaline had been, but they were gone. I linked Eric, “Where did they go?” I heard Thor’s furious growl. Dominic and Beta James’ wolf joined him. Thor tried to cut off from the group to get to them, but he was surrounded immediately.

Peter and Drake jumped in to help him. We heard Haley making silly comments. Eric linked, “OOPS? FUCKING OOPS! Haley has GOT to stop saying that!” I growled, “Let’s just get to them.” We heard another pop, and I glanced up. Maribella had joined the fight. Tucker’s wolf’s howl of anger couldn’t be mistaken as the girls began to fight.

I linked Eric, “They are going to let Emmaline take on Hammond.” Eric responded as Haley took down a witch, “It looks that way.” Emmaline’s link back to us had me roaring in anger. Dominic growled, “ENDING THIS? IS MATE INSANE? WE NEED TO GET OVER THERE!” I pointed out, “You’re in control. Move your ass, wolf!”

Dominic and I snarled taking down two wolves when Hammond called Emmaline his. Dominic thundered at me, “MATE IS MINE! MY MATE! HOW DARE HE!” I was pissed off too, “I’m not disagreeing with you. She’s ours.” Dominic calmed down when Emmaline said the same.

I got a clear path for a brief second and bounded towards the girls with Eric beside me. Dylan was behind me when we were suddenly surrounded again. I growled when Grayson appeared. I linked Dylan, “THIS DAMN KID!” Dylan huffed, “I have good news, it’s official we have finally reached the right moment for him to die.”

More information was revealed about his home life and clarified lingering questions. I growled to Dylan, “I KNEW IT! Andie is the foster sister!” Dylan pointed out, “Emmaline has met her. Because they went to that dance la...” I growled, “DO NOT finish that sentence.” Dylan took down a rogue on my left. He responded, “Of course not. What was I thinking?”

Everyone stopped when Blade killed Andie. Dylan linked me, “Is anyone else wondering WHEN DID HE GET HERE? How do they keep doing that?! I’M SCARED! I’m going to order motion sensor cameras to see if it can ease my anxiety about the creepy ninja’s just showing up.”

I linked Eric, “Did you know he was here?” Eric replied, “No, Javi and Sasha are on guard duty. Blade was supposed to be in the Hackura realm.” So, Haley had plans. We really had to get in on the ground floor of knowing her whole plan. She was quite the strategist.

Dylan laughed when Grayson charged at Blade. He asked, “Is this kid for real? How has he made it this far in life without dying? He’s an idiot. Darwin awards all around.” Haley flung him into a tree. A witch dragged him to a different tree where they disappeared.

Dustin hissed, “Of course they have a damn holoport.” I growled at Dylan, “The principal is going fucking down for that.” Dylan replied, “His name is Tom.” I growled, “I know his damn name!” Dylan nodded, “Ok then, the principal it is.”

My heart stopped when Hammond grabbed Emmaline, but she simply popped away from him. I killed another rogue. Eric linked me, “He’s turning feral, Lucas.” I replied, “Once I get to him, I’ll put him down.”

I howled in delight when my dad broke away heading straight for Emmaline. But when he got there, Emmaline was gone again. I noticed with dread that Hammond was leading her to holoport. I linked, “Dad! Hammond is leading Emmaline to the holoport!” My dad grunted and took on a witch.

Haley turned, spoke in Latin, then killed the witch coming up behind my dad. I linked Dylan, “Get me a damn Latin dictionary!” Dylan responded, “Maybe I ordered one and I’m learning said language. She said something about behind him.” I growled, “That’s not helpful.” Dylan responded, “I just started! Give a Beta a break.”

I linked Eric, “What did Haley say?” Eric replied, “She told Blade to get to Emmaline, and she’d be right behind him.”

Eric and I finally managed to kill the rogues around us and hit the ground running to assist my dad. We'd just killed the witch he was fighting when I heard Emmaline whimper in pain.

I saw red and tore through the remaining rogues that had appeared in my path. Blade grabbed Hammond from behind and told Emmaline to kill him. I shifted back and grabbed some shorts throwing my dad, Eric, and Dylan other pairs. Emmaline told Hammond who she really was.

I linked Dylan, "Anyone left alive and not our ally dies. No one leaves with that information." Dylan nodded. Emmaline dropped the pup bomb on Hammond. I saw the pain in his eyes when he realized he'd never know his pup before they turned blue. We all got soaked when Hammond turned to water, and it dawned on me exactly where the fairies had popped to. Behind us, out of the splash zone.

Alpha Chase caught up to us. He linked Eric and me, "I tried to stop them, I really did." Eric replied, "There's no stopping them once they get an idea. Thank you for trying." I echoed his sentiments, "You really can't stop them. It's ok Alpha Chase." He was staring at Haley, but what was odd was Eric didn't seem upset. He seemed like he knew something he wasn't saying. Alpha Chase just looked relieved that Haley was ok. Dominic growled, "Probably because she knows who his mate is. Focus on OUR mate." He had a point.

Dustin yelled and he was lucky Emmaline answered before Haley did. Haley looked furious he'd yelled at her. Ryan calmly explained why they were upset; I took Emmaline in my arms breathing deeply. Eric could barely contain Thor as he kissed Haley.

Dylan linked me, "They can't send the pack into heat again, Lacy is already pregnant. They have to wait until she has our pup. It's only fair since it's Dylan and Lacy day." I linked Eric, "Take her to your room in the house before you mate on the lawn." Eric replied, "Don't mind if I do." Before he could, Haley popped to Emmaline and left.

Dylan smiled, "I finally see how he pays. His little fun sized ninja fairy can pop away from him any old time she

desires.” Eric growled at him, but before he could come across the field they were back. Eric grabbed Haley. He whispered in her ear, “Where are the pups?” Haley answered, “Mom already had Cassie and Alexander down for the night. Chelsea had to put EJ down. I told them we’d come get them in the morning.”

Eric nipped her ear, “Good. Pop our group home.” Eric linked me, “We will come back in the morning if cleanup is needed. I’ll call you.” They left.

Dominic growled, “CLAIM MATE NOW!” I couldn’t deny him or myself anymore. She was still in her ridiculous, short Tinkerbelle outfit. My pack howled in delight when I threw Emmaline over my shoulder.

Dylan linked me, “No, no, I insist that I handle this. Don’t you or GAP worry about it for one second. It’s only my wedding night.” I linked my dad, “Can you handle this so Dylan can go be with Lacy?” My dad answered, “Of course.”

I replied, “Go, my dad’s got it under control.” Dylan happily replied, “Best older brother ever!” He entered the house right behind me carrying Lacy bridal style. I wasn’t going to think about that. I was going to focus on my baby girl.

I tied her hands to the headboard telling her, “You have no idea what this costume does to me.” She replied in an innocent voice, “What does it do to you, Alpha?” I commanded, “Snap me naked.” She snapped her fingers quickly. I placed her hand on my dick telling her, “I have felt like this ever since I saw you. Then you popped away from me, and our pack, who were protecting you.”

Emmaline pursed her lips, “Alpha, I have every right to defend you like you’d defend me, and our pack. I love you too, you know?” I growled and kissed her. When I pulled back, I responded, “Don’t expect me to be happy that you put yourself in harm’s way to protect me. I understand it, but I don’t have to like it.”

She bit my lip, “Do you think I was happy when you did it? I need you just like you need me. You don’t own the corner

market on loving your mate so much you'd do anything to protect them. Millie said I would be the one who killed him. So, I did, and I'm not sorry I protected you."

I bit her mark and she screamed. I tore her underwear off and entered her. She screamed my name. Dominic pushed forward, "Scream for me mate, scream my name." She screamed, "DOMINIC, PLEASE!" He growled and slammed into her, and she gripped the ropes holding her in place. We both came, but I was nowhere near done with her.

I ripped off her costume and took her nipple into my mouth. Dominic couldn't take it and entered her again. We continued like that all night. Dominic lost it for a bit when she popped out of the ropes. He pinned her against the wall. He ordered, "No more popping away from me, mate. YOU. ARE. MINE!" He growled as he pounded into her.

I took her until her body couldn't take anymore, and she fell asleep after we'd finished. I pulled out of her and carried her to the bed. Her body was still twitching with pleasure. I held her close breathing in her scent.

After an hour, I finally calmed down enough to go to sleep after silencing her alarm. I linked the warriors, "There is no training tomorrow. Everyone did very well tonight." I got back a sleepy replies, "Yes, Alpha."

I linked my dad, "We had no casualties, correct?" My dad answered, "We didn't lose anyone. A few injuries, but they are healing. The worst was a broken leg. He will be in pain tonight, but Dr. Gonzalez says he will be fine by tomorrow. Alex and some warriors found Gina and her mate. It was Tom that betrayed us for her. I noticed he was already in the dungeons. Gina is distraught."

I sighed, "I'll speak to her later. Is she alright physically?" My dad spoke carefully, "She was beaten in front of her mate, and vice versa with him. They are alive and their physical wounds are healing now that they aren't being weakened by wolfsbane. They will need help." I replied, "Then they will have it. Get to bed, dad." My dad informed me, "I just walked in the house. I love you." I replied, "I love you too, dad."

Thanks for handling everything.” He snorted, “Anytime, you’re my pup.”

I fell asleep holding Emmaline and woke up to an empty bed. I felt for Emmaline in our bond. She was distraught. What the hell happened? I grabbed shorts and headed for her sanctuary. I found her crying softly. I grabbed her, “Baby girl, what happened?” Emmaline sighed, “You’re going to be mad at me.” I asked, “What are you talking about?” Emmaline sighed and handed me her phone. What? I asked, “Why are you giving me your phone?”

Emmaline wiped her tears, “It’s not my phone. Well, it kind of is. It was waiting for me under my desk at school the other day.” I growled, “When?” She wiped her eyes, “After I talk to Grayson with Tessa. I gave it to Katie to see if Gunner could track anything down on it. He’s still monitoring it, but he hasn’t been able to figure out who it is.”

I looked at the phone asking a question I knew the answer to, “You’ve been talking with this person?” Emmaline shrugged, “Cryptic stuff. I thought it would give us a lead on Alpha Hammond, but this person has a different agenda.”

I pushed through my anger to ask, “Alright, so why are you crying?” Emmaline said, “Because you’re mad at me.” I said, “I wasn’t mad until I woke up. You’ve been upset since before I got up.” Emmaline sighed, “The most recent texts gave me the details on who put the contract out on Chelsea. I don’t know if they are right, but I knew we’d have to talk about this. I won’t put Chelsea in danger by keeping this to myself.” I growled, “So you only keep things to yourself when you’re in danger?”

Emmaline sighed, “I knew you’d take the phone. I only did what you would have done. I gave it to Gunner first. I don’t know what this person wants now. He said it’s not about Alpha Hammond, but I didn’t believe him. He said we have a common enemy, but I don’t know who it is.”

I read through their conversations. I offered, “I’d imagine this is about David. How do you know it’s a he?” Emmaline said, “Gunner said the profile of the person who bought it

appears to be male.” I asked, “What else does Gunner know?” Emmaline mumbled, “That it was bought with cash in New York. Do you really think it’s about David?”

I nodded, “Yes, I do. You are the perfect weapon against David. You make him lose his common sense because he knows your mom cheated on him.” Emmaline asked, “How mad are you?” I sighed, “I’m not mad, I’m disappointed. I started this sequence of events in our relationship, and now I’m ending it. From here on out, the only secrets we keep are fun secrets. Did this not hurt your soul? To keep this from me?”

Emmaline thought about it, “I’ve been a little off, so probably.” I sighed, “We have to stop doing this, and I don’t just mean you. We aren’t two separate entities anymore. We have GOT to talk about stuff like this together.” Emmaline nodded, “I’m sorry,” she whispered.

I kissed her forehead, “It’s fine. Nothing in these texts are things we didn’t know. You planned to bring this to when something important was shared. I’m not taking the phone, but I do want you to tell me when you get texts.” Emmaline nodded.

I told her, “I need to move on this information. I need to let Nick know, and we need to verify it. If it’s true we will likely be attacking this pack.” Emmaline winced, “Do you have to? Can’t you talk to them?” I shook my head, “No, the Alpha want to kill Chelsea, and has plans to kill Peter’s siblings. We can’t talk him down at this point.” Emmaline sighed, “Alright.”

I kissed her then reassured her, “I’m really not mad. I’m glad you told me when you did. I wish you’d told me about it sooner, but I’m glad you are talking to me. I’m glad you didn’t rush off to try to handle this on your own.”

Emmaline looked hopeful, “Will you let me help you with this then?” I nodded, “I won’t bring you to the fight if it’s avoidable. I’ll have you sit in on the meetings with our allies about this information though.” Emmaline nodded, “I want to fight if you fight.” I sighed debating, “We can talk about that

later when the time comes. I'm not saying no... If Haley goes you can go." Emmaline smiled, "Ok." I kissed her again. "Let's get back. We have a lot to do."

Emmaline grabbed my hand and popped me back to our room. We took a shower together and washed each other. Dominic linked me, "She could've kept it from us, and gone off with her girl gang but she didn't. Mate trusted us." I replied, "I know, that's why I'm not mad. Nothing in those texts was vital information until now." Dominic replied, "I don't like it though. This person wants her to feel like she owes them. They want to use mate, and they clearly know who she really is. That's dangerous." I agreed, "I know."

I linked Dylan, "I know this is not how you saw today going, but I need you and Lacy today." Dylan replied, "Yes, I know. We have to go over stuff from yesterday. Can we put off torturing Principal Tom until tomorrow?" I begrudgingly admitted, "We have to." Dylan groaned, "I can't tell you how much I dislike the sound of that." I replied, "Get to my office." Dylan grumbled, "I dislike it all so much. We are on the way."

I took Emmaline's hand and led her to my office. I asked, "Does Lacy know about the phone?" Emmaline shook her head, "Only Katie, Gunner, and I knew about the phone." I asked somewhat incredulously, "You think Logan doesn't know?" Emmaline shrugged, "I don't think he does. Katie would've told me if she clued him in."

I couldn't stop my laugh, "Emmaline, Logan knows about it whether Katie told him or not." We entered my office and Logan flipped on the light. I nearly jumped; Emmaline squealed. Logan smiled, "Logan does know about the phone. No, Katie didn't tell me, and no we haven't been able to track down the person sending the texts. He sends the texts, turns the phone off, and disconnects the battery."

Dylan walked in asking, "Who does what with a phone that our creepy resident ninja is stalking?" I brought them up to speed. He and Lacy were taken aback. Dylan clapped dramatically, "Well, Lucas I don't think I could be more surprised if you'd told me you owned a purple unicorn. That's not what I was expecting to walk into today."

Logan smiled, “Andie was in a car accident last night. She was drinking and driving, not wearing her seatbelt. She was thrown from her car and impaled by a tree. She died on impact.” Emmaline gaped at him.

Dylan said, “You people are terrifying. How did you fix the time of death, and get alcohol into her system?” Logan smiled, “You can be dead, and your blood can circulate, Dylan. It’s called CPR. By definition that gets the heart pumping. We are good at what we do.”

Dylan muttered, “Good? You’re good at what you do? Terrifying. The whole lot of you. Do I need to send you a fruit basket to stay on your good side?” Logan smiled, “You’ll be fully aware if you get on my bad side, Dylan Frost.” Dylan shivered.

I got everyone on a conference call. Eric answered, “I heard Grayson’s mom had a drunk driving accident where she was thrown from the car and impaled.” Logan casually commented, “That she did.” Dylan said, “Don’t you just sound tired, GAP.” Eric snorted, “You’re lucky I’m on the phone at all. I had sexy plans after hearing about my nickname that I barely got into. Logan sent a text to Bjourn to let me know we’d be busy with other things. So, why are we busy?”

Emmaline spoke, “Do we know if Grayson is going to use his police contacts to question the story about his mom?” Logan laughed, “They wouldn’t get anywhere. The coroner already got the blood alcohol level back that was well over the legal limit. There’s documentation Andie left the state of Louisiana where she was staying. No one would believe she was here. She had a hotel that was paid for the rest of the month, and she just so happened to die in the state of Louisiana a block from said hotel.”

Dylan linked me, “They are scary. He’s like Beetlejuice or something.” I shook my head, “I don’t even want to know how you arrived at that conclusion.” I shot an email off to everyone, “I just sent you all some information we can discuss once we have everything situated. Dad, do you want to take the lead from last night?”

My dad stood, “We had a dozen injuries and all have healed. We took the principal from our school into custody during the reception. It was confirmed he was feeding the details of our patrols to Hammond. His daughter was being used as collateral. Obviously, we all know he should’ve come to us. I didn’t have time to get all the details from him. He did say he was so worried about his daughter he was doing whatever he could to save her.”

I growled, “So he chooses betraying our pack, our Luna, and the future Luna of Red Run? Instead of coming to me? We would’ve helped him.” My dad said, “I know that. He said he wasn’t thinking straight. He refused to harm Emmaline and Chelsea. They asked him to get them out during school. He said he would be discovered and kept putting them off. He only...” I growled as it clicked, “It was him, wasn’t it?”

Dylan said, “Oh my god... Emmaline thought Principal Tom was Lucas?” He started laughing, but Emmaline frowned. Dylan wheezed, “He’s older than Dale. Emmaline, we need to get your eyes checked. Someone get our Luna some carrots!” Emmaline pouted, “Hey! Illusions are really powerful. He had to have had something of Lucas’ so he’d look like him.” Dale cleared his throat, “Yes, he had the tie Lucas wore the day he met you. He took it off in the conference room, and Tom kept it.”

I frowned, “He’s been against us that long?” My dad sighed, “He’s been a spy for Alpha Hammond’s pack since his daughter joined theirs. Neither she nor her mate knew about what he was doing. Her mate dislikes Hammond, for obvious reasons. Once Hammond had to flee their territory, they started the flip from spy to traitor.” I growled, “He was betraying our pack this entire time?!” Emmaline put her hand on mine and linked me, “You can deal with him later. We are ok.” I kissed the top of her head and sat back down.

Eric announced, “Our pack killed all the witches coming from the flank. We had three injuries that have all healed. Alpha Chase’s pack had no injuries, nor did Alpha Sophia. Alpha Kyle had a few, but all had been healed.”

Dylan asked, “How did I get bamboozled from a fake Haley fax?” Haley grumbled, “I still don’t even know what a fucking fax is!” My dad answered, “The principal faxed it over. They used a spell to make it look like it came from Eric’s territory.” Dylan gaped, “They can just do that? Can we go back to where witches and warlocks ignore our existence, and we ignore theirs? It was a happier time; I was but a carefree boy.” I rolled my eyes.

Nick said, “Can we get into the information you emailed us all before my son destroys my office. Are we sure about this?” I said, “No, we aren’t, we are all going to have to do our own investigations.” Peter snarled, “Where did this come from?”

I explained, “Emmaline got a phone taped under her desk at school. It’s an unknown caller on a prepaid phone. The Hackura ran it down, it was purchased in New York with cash. It appears to be a male, but he hid from cameras. The caller claims he and Emmaline have a common enemy. He warned us Hammond was coming. We already knew that. I believe we got this information because Emmaline told this person he wasn’t actually helping her. Obviously, we had to share this with you all. We can’t act on it as we aren’t sure it’s accurate, but if it is we are with you.”

Peter growled, “I’ll tear him to FUCKING pieces! He wants my mate, daughter, and my brother’s dead!” Nick growled lowly and we heard a little growl from Eric’s line. Dylan rolled his eyes, “His pup is going to rival him in possessiveness. GAP can rip people’s heads off, and his son can just explode someone’s brain. Life is not fair...”

I interrupted, “Yes, Yes, I know.” Eric said, “We will stand with you, Nick.” Dylan said, “To be clear... is EJ coming? It would just save us all time if he just got mad and exploded their brains.” Eric growled, “My son is NOT coming if we fight.”

EJ growled again. Haley cooed, “Don’t you worry, EJ. Mommy and daddy will be there.” I winced and Emmaline grinned broadly. I heard someone laugh, “There you have it, Garrett. I get to fight this time WITH Haley and Emmaline.” Nick offered, “Lucas didn’t say Emmaline was coming.”

I sighed, “I said she could come IF Haley was coming.” Haley replied, “Haley’s fucking coming. Girl gang of bad asses TAKE TWO!” Eric sighed, “Yes, and you’re bringing Blade with you again.” Haley stated, “Blade says I have to take him everywhere. He even got my dad to basically make it a law. Where I go Blade goes.”

Dylan snorted, “He made it a law? You’re saying he passed an actual law saying his daughter had to bring her guard with her wherever she goes?” Logan chimed in, “Basically, he did. You can’t really blame him at this point.”

Eric laughed along with the rest of us. Dylan asked, “Could the Creepy ninja King make some sort of law where Lacy can’t run off into danger without me? That would be great.” Logan said, “He’s not a werewolf.” Dylan agreed, “No but he can just pop up like all of you, can’t he? That would be motivation to obey any law he puts down.” Logan rolled his eyes, “It’s not going to happen.”

Dylan sighed, “If only you were a partial fairy, you would do it for me because it would be fun.” Logan said, “Doing things for your amusement is not my thing.” I linked Dylan, “Not the person to mess with.” Dylan sighed, “Fine.”

Emmaline and Lacy had been very quiet. We made several more plans, but Dustin was suspiciously silent as well. When we hung up, I turned to Emmaline, “You have been a very quiet, baby girl. What’s going on?”

Dustin cut in, “You didn’t know about the phone, did you Lucas? She didn’t tell you? She told Katie, and not any of us.” I felt like an evasive fairy when I answered, “She told me when important information came in, that’s what counts.” I gave him a hard look letting him know to let this go.

Ryan spoke, “Evie, you aren’t alone anymore. Fuck our dad for making you think like this. You always used to confide in us.” Emmaline winced, “I told Katie Cat... It’s... it’s not easy guys. I just didn’t want to be cut out again, and I knew Katie wouldn’t do that. I didn’t know if you would or not.”

Ryan sighed, “That’s our fault. We all have to figure out our new dynamic, but I don’t like this one we have going. I

won't hide things from you, but I don't want you to hide them from me either." Emmaline nodded, "I swear on the green of my turtle toad." Ryan and Dustin burst out laughing.

Dylan voiced all our question, "I'm sorry... the green of your turtle toad? Do we need a doctor? Did you hit your head last night?" Dustin said, "She loved this stuffed turtle Ryan gave her. When she was four, she tried to convince Ryan she would keep a secret for him. She swore on the green of her turtle and she got flustered and added the toad."

Dylan said, "Aww, Hallmark moment! You guys need to hug it out, right now." He pulled out his phone and started playing some cheesy romantic music. Emmaline stood up. Dylan squealed, "That's the spirit! The music demands you hug."

Emmaline smiled and hugged her siblings. Dustin whispered, "I'll keep doing better, Evie. We love you." My heart warmed, knowing how badly she'd wanted them in her life. Emmaline pulled back and said, "I love you guys too."

She walked back over to me, and I pulled her into my lap and kissed her. I linked Dylan, "Get our PI's on the information we were handed." Dylan sighed, "That's going to be an interesting if it turns out to be accurate." I admitted, "I have a feeling it's right." Dylan nodded, "I thought you were going to say that."

Logan said, "Email me the information, I'll see if we can't run it down." I nodded. Dylan said, "Were you just skulking around in the dark again?" Logan answered, "I don't skulk, I was waiting for the meeting to start. Now I'm off." He faded into nothing.

Dylan squealed, "I want him to teach me how to do that. GOSH he's so awesome. WAIT! GAP said Haley can do that... she would totally teach me!" Lacy smiled, "Or we could enjoy what's left of the day after our wedding." Dylan stopped immediately, picked her up and ran out of the room like he was the Road Runner.

Emmaline laughed and turned to me, "Would you like to enjoy the day after Lacy and Dylan's wedding before we have

to deal with real life tomorrow?” I kissed her, “Absolutely.” Emmaline popped us to her treehouse. She asked, “Can I ask a question?” I smiled, “Always.” She whispered, “Why is it so unforgivable that for his daughter, the principal helped Hammond? I know you said he could’ve come to you, but I’ve seen a LOT of TV shows. They always get in trouble for going to the cops. It never turns out well, and you’re basically the police chief of the pack.”

I couldn’t help but laugh, “In pack life, you thrive together. The lone wolf who doesn’t disown their pack but doesn’t live in a pack get lonely. They are vulnerable to attack. Those who are banished or reject and leave their pack go crazy. That’s why rogue’s eyes are red. They need a pack, and without it they slowly descend into madness. I am the leader of our pack, and my job is to protect my people. Tom could’ve linked me; he didn’t even have to approach me. Instead, he helped the catering company try to potentially cause Chelsea to lose her pup; not to mention the pack members that would’ve been injured. Hammond had no intention to let my family live, or Dylan most likely. He put everything we stand for at risk.”

Emmaline thought about that for several minutes then said, “Alright. I didn’t think of it that way. He could’ve linked you at any point in time without being discovered.” I smiled, “I know it’s a different way of life for you, so anytime you have questions just ask me.” Emmaline looked me in the eyes, “I promise I’ll do better at sharing. I expect it of you, and then I cut you out. It wasn’t exactly fair since we’d agreed not to do that. I was hoping to hand it to you with a lead. Not more work for you to do, you have SO much work.”

I smiled, “It was a lot because we had lots of people being watched. It’s not normally that much paperwork.” She smiled, “Thank goodness! I was wondering how we’d have time for our kids.” I smiled at her, “Because you and our family are my priority. I know I suck at relationships, but I’m promising you now; you are my family. If and when we add to that it’s always going to be number one. Work will be there, but we won’t be able to get those moments back when our pups are young.”

Emmaline smiled, “Look at you already being a good dad. I’m scared if you guys act on this information something will happen to you.” I nodded in understanding, “We will be fine. I’m more worried about your unknown caller.”

Emmaline sighed, “I think Dusty had a theory.” I smiled agreeing, “I think you’re right. Since I’m sure it has something to do with David, I would imagine he would know the list of those it could be best.”

Emmaline pursed her lips, “He’ll try to track some things down before sharing. He’s kind of a perfectionist.” I rubbed her shoulders, “Let’s worry about that tomorrow. Right now, I have something else I want to do.” I leaned in and kissed her. For the rest of the day, nothing existed but the two of us.

Extra Fun Fairy

Emmaline watched as Lucas and Dominic fought for control as he tied her to the bed. I smiled wondering if he remembered I could just pop out of them. Lucas was talking about my costume. What could a short little green sparkly dress with wings really do to him?

I wished I wasn't tied down. For a moment, I considered popping out of the ropes to take him in my mouth. The only thing that stopped me was the look on his face. He needed this right now, but later I was going to pop out and make him catch me.

We briefly discussed things before Lucas lost all semblance of control. My body was screaming for me to do everything he said. I was sad he destroyed my costume; I liked it. Then I remembered I could snap it back together. It really was the perfect catch the fairy outfit since Tinkerbell was literally a fairy.

After a few rounds, I was over the ropes, so I popped out of them. The growls that followed would've intimidated me if I didn't know that Lucas nor Dominic would ever hurt me. I decided a game of catch the fairy wasn't in the cards tonight. I didn't think he could handle me popping away anymore.

My body shut down on me after countless orgasms, and I drifted off with a smile on my face. I woke with a start. My alarm hadn't gone off. I quickly realized my phone was on Lucas' side of the bed. He must have turned it off. I opened my nightstand and turned on the unknown phone. I wondered if this person already knew we'd killed Alpha Hammond.

Unknown: Congratulations on taking down Alpha Hammond. I don't have details, but I know he is no more.

Me: How did you know?

Unknown: I just do. You didn't seem to find my assistance too helpful for this situation.

Me: You didn't tell me anything I didn't know.

Unknown: Ask and you shall receive. I want you to see me as helpful. See attached for the details on the person after your friend Chelsea Hanes. The plan is for much more than Chelsea. I do want to help you.

Me: Why? Why do you want to help me?

Unknown: Because I want you to help me when the time comes. I have watched and waited for such a long time for the perfect revenge plot. You my dear, are my chance.

Me: For what? And don't say revenge I know that already.

Unknown: Revenge is what I want. I looked for you from the moment I discovered you were gone. My purpose in finding you changed as certain facts came to light, but I found you all the same.

Me: What was your original purpose in finding me?

Unknown: It doesn't matter, my purpose changed. See the attached and remember where you got this.

Me: Where did you get the information? What do you want from me?

I waited several moments but nothing came back. I sighed, knowing he must have turned off the phone. Darn it! He had an original purpose in finding me that changed. What changed his mind? What information? Had he found out about David's bounty? Was he trying to kill me until King Titus declared me off limits?

I opened the attachment and almost dropped my phone. The unknown caller really did come through. He'd sent me information on who had put the contract out on Chelsea. I popped to my sanctuary to think.

Tears streamed down my face. Lucas was going to be so upset with me. I couldn't keep this information from him. I

didn't even know who Alpha Raven was. I had seen his name on some paperwork when doing work for Lucas these past weeks. They thought he'd put the contract on me before we found out it was Hammond. Alpha Raven's pack shared a border with Alpha Kyle.

My tears came harder when I realized there were more plans. After Chelsea was dead there were plans for Peter's brother's Sebastian and Christopher. They were just little kids! Why was Alpha Raven so upset with Alpha Kyle? Why did he have plans to leave Alpha Kyle and Peter alive? Unless... he wanted Peter to go crazy without Chelsea like Alpha Hammond did. Was this connected? Did Alpha Raven work with a vampire clan in Missouri to take Millie? Why would he do that though? I didn't get the sense that Alpha Hammond and Alpha Kyle were allies.

My thoughts were swirling as I cried. I felt Lucas put his arms around me, crying harder because I should've told him about the phone right away. I handed Lucas the phone. I hadn't realized it was an exact replica of my actual phone until Lucas pointed it out. I got chills at the fact that the unknown caller seemed to know so much about me when I didn't even know his name.

Lucas wasn't happy when I explained what was going on. I honestly had no defense. I just wanted to help. I didn't want to be cut out of the loop again, and I didn't trust a single male in my life not to do that. I didn't even know what Katie had told Gunner about the phone. I felt a little bad she'd kept it from Logan for me.

I was scared for my friends, and Peter's siblings. Christopher was only five years old. Could we just leak these plans out, like we'd done when David put a contract on my head? Everyone would be outraged that a contract was placed on five and thirteen year old.

I didn't know what to do with this information, but I knew just handing it over to Alpha Kyle without Lucas was wrong. I could probably go talk to Alpha Raven with Lacy, but I couldn't take on a pack without Lucas. Their pack has to stand by their Alpha.... Don't they?

I didn't think Lucas' assessment that I'd keep things to myself when I was in danger but not Chelsea was fair. I wasn't in danger. It was a phone, not a bomb. The person is still in New York, or I'm sure Gunner would've told Katie, who would've told me. I was confident I wasn't in danger from this phone at the moment. I didn't know the revenge plan yet. For now, though, I wasn't in danger.

I needed to know what this person wanted. I didn't know why exactly; I just knew it was important. Somehow, I just knew this person would play a part in something big. I searched my own feelings, and realized I felt I needed this person. That was insane. I didn't know who was on the other end, but something told me they would help me. He was all about his own revenge, but if he needed me; I could need him. I was going to trust my instincts on this one.

This person on the other end was going to matter to us. Lucas pointed out it was about David. I wanted to smack myself. That made a lot of sense. This person had been looking for me since I left when David ran me out of town. He had another purpose when they thought I was David's kid. That had to be the information they got that changed their minds; that I wasn't really David's daughter.

Did the unknown caller intend to kill me originally? I shivered. Something told me that was in fact the original plan. Were my siblings in danger? I rejected that thought. Logan being Katie's wick would deter anyone from coming for any of them, let alone against their own powers. To anyone looking in when I left; I was the only child of David's not trained in witchcraft. I would be the easiest target. How did the caller find out I wasn't David's daughter though?

Lucas pointed out I'm a bit like David's kryptonite. He hates everything I represent. I'm the embodiment of the knowledge my mom cheated. He's all about his perception, and this would be a blow to his pride. Dusty and Ry said he'd been losing it since I left. It had to be for appearances sake that he wanted my mom to stay. It would've looked bad if she and I disappeared. That would've looked like she left him.

For the first time in a long time, I was curious how he got her to stay. My mom was never a docile, go with the flow type of woman. She was sharp, witty, and independent. Her lapses in judgement were all about me and David. She clearly leaned towards the selfish side of fairies, but she never used to take any crap from anyone. I shoved those thoughts aside. She made her choices, and I would probably never understand them.

I searched Lucas' soul, and after his initial wave of anger I'd felt; his feelings now reflected disappointment with a tinge of sadness. I felt bad. I should've just told him. I searched myself and realized he had a point about hurting my own soul. It wasn't a big hurt, but it was there. I didn't want to keep secrets from him. We needed to work together because we were stronger together.

The reason my soul probably wasn't in turmoil was because I'd always planned to take anything big to him. We sat there for a few moments just holding each other. Lucas broke away saying he needed to start gathering his own intel on the information we'd been given. My stomach dropped when he said we'd attack if the information was right. Can't we just have peace? I guess from Alpha Kyle's perspective, if I found a contract out on my children I'd kill first and ask questions later. Peter's emotions were going to be next level angry.

I was not happy when he said I could help, but if it came to a fight, he wasn't going to bring me. He didn't have to bring me, I'd come though. If he fought, so did I. He amended his statement to say I could fight if Haley was fighting. I admirably hid my smile. I knew Haley wouldn't sit this one out. There were kids involved. Plus, Chelsea was in our girl gang not to mention this was her son's mate. EJ would be distraught if anything happened to Chelsea or Elise. Haley would make sure that didn't happen.

I popped Lucas and I back to our room feeling like a weight was lifted off my shoulders. I should've trusted him with this information sooner. I didn't even realize keeping the secret was weighing on me. We showered and dressed then

walked down to the office to make phone calls. When Logan appeared and scared the crap out of me, I shot a text to Katie.

Me: Logan knew about the phone the whole time

Katie: Freaking all-knowing assassins. I swear I'll never be able to surprise him.

Katie loved surprising people. I looked over at Logan and discovered I had no reassuring words for my sister. I was pretty sure she wasn't going to manage it. Maybe Haley would have an idea, or Eric. He managed to plan a surprise party for Haley. So, in theory Katie had a shot.

Dylan and Lacy walked in and Lucas brought them up to speed. Lacy linked me, "Any theories?" I said, "I really don't know. I don't know anyone who knew David that's now in New York. That's coast to coast hatred. I didn't really know him though. He was different at home than he was with other people."

Logan explained how the Hackura had staged Andie's accident. Lacy linked me, "They are way too good at that." I sighed, "I feel bad for Grayson, he lost his mom. She wasn't really a big part of his life, but she's still his mom. We know he already lost his dad too." Lacy sighed, "His mom made her choices, and so has he."

I thought about it then said, "He won't be at school anymore." Lacy snorted, "Not if he's smart. Rather the people with him need to be because the goddess knows he's an idiot. He probably thinks we wouldn't touch him, but the witch who got him out of there has to know he'll be dead if he comes to school."

We watched Dylan turn slightly pale when Logan told him he'd know if he got on his bad side. Lacy linked me, "There's good news for you, it wouldn't matter if he didn't like you. You're Logan's family now. Thank god you and I will be family in the very near future." I smirked, "Dylan will be my family too." Lacy said, "Let's keep that to ourselves since

Dylan hasn't seemed to realize it. Let him sweat a bit." I barely managed not to laugh.

I linked Lacy, "Will Hammond's group even do anything now? They lost their leader. Grayson's not a leader..." Lacy said, "I seriously doubt we've seen the last of Grayson. He saw his mom killed." I paled, "Not by us. He'll go after Haley." Lacy raised an eyebrow, "Then he's dumber than a box of rocks. He'd be dumb to try to for us again. He's just a wiccan." I sighed, "I think he'll blame me." Lacy frowned, "That would be the most illogical thought process of all time. It's his fault." I shrugged, "I still think he will."

I was glad that there were no losses in our pack or our allies. I was stunned when our principal was declared the traitor. That's why I felt those feelings from him. That's why he stopped Grayson in the hallway that day. Because they were working for the same side. I chided myself for not listening to my instincts or my powers. I would not make that mistake again.

Lucas was still beyond pissed that our principal hadn't come to him. I wanted to point out he could've called Chelsea or me to the office at any point to be kidnapped. Or given us detention after school so people could take us. I was so in my thoughts I didn't hear the rest of the conversation until I felt intense rage from Lucas.

Dylan asked if I really thought Principal Tom was Lucas. What were they talking about? I quickly realized they were thinking the principal in the illusion was Lucas. Illusions were powerful, and the principal had to have something that belonged to Lucas. Besides, we should get Haley here to ask the principal if this was really just for his daughter. Who gives an assignment like have sex with this witch? May she burn in hell. She was pretty though.

I linked Lacy, "We should ask if the principal was in a relationship with the witch. She wasn't horrible looking. Does Principal Tom have a mate?" Lacy replied, "She disappeared after she had their daughter." I raised an eyebrow, "Disappeared? How so?" Lacy shrugged, "I wasn't born yet."

I'm not sure." I nodded, "We should look into that." She agreed.

We focused back on the meeting. Lucas was growing angrier by the minute realizing the principal had been a spy since his daughter had left the pack. I linked Lacy again, "How old is his daughter?" Lacy winced, "She's twenty-five. She found her mate at eighteen." Dang. Things were not looking good for our former principal.

I winced when they mentioned Alpha Chase. Lacy linked me, "What was that? Are you still pissed about the mate thing?" I was really sad for BA. Lacy kept taking, "Dylan said Alpha Chase told Lucas that he and Sophia were supposed to get the marriage annulled when he left for Europe. She backed out. He doesn't know what to do."

I frowned, "I mean... I'm sure Haley would have some colorful words for her about that." Lacy asked, "Can you tell me who his mate is?" I shook my head, "No, the only person I can tell is Haley." Lacy sighed, "So did you wince because of his mate?" I shook my head, "He tried to stop us from popping away. I feel bad, he was just trying to protect us. I'm sure he thought Eric and Lucas would come for his head."

Lacy smirked, "Both could take him, but he's no chump. It would be a good fight, but neither of them would blame him. He couldn't be held responsible; you guys just pop away. It's what fairies do." I nodded, still feeling like I might owe Alpha Chase several apologies. I had searched his soul in that field, and he was in a bad place. He had so many conflicting feelings, and his wolf was just angry.

Poor guy. His wolf is probably constantly arguing with him about his mate. I felt really bad for BA too. After that guy she thought was her string, her first boyfriend, I just didn't know how she would handle all of this. Or how Alpha Chase would handle it for that matter.

Lucas and Eric still needed A LOT of relationship advice, and they were much older than Alpha Chase. Would he even be a good communicator? Something told me he wouldn't. I

couldn't help but feel that the entire situation was headed for heartache and disaster in the short term.

Dylan was just learning witches could make things appear like they came from somewhere else. I raised an eyebrow at Dusty who just smirked. I linked Lacy, "Dylan really thought Haley faxed him something?" Lacy rolled her eyes, "I know, right? Like when has that girl EVER seemed like the type of person to fax something? She's magical. She doesn't need a fax machine." I had to agree. I really couldn't believe Lucas or Dylan believed she'd done that. It was pretty absurd.

Lacy linked me, "Does he bother to mention this to me? Nooooo. I would've laughed my ass off at him if he'd said Haley and fax in the same sentence." I reasoned, "He probably wanted to be nice, and handle that detail of the wedding." Lacy snorted, "He did, he insisted food was his territory. I should've told him to stick with popcorn. Just popcorn. Nothing else." I agreed, "He does like popcorn."

Alpha Kyle got onto the topic about the information our mysterious caller had given. I linked Lacy, "Peter sounds... mad." Lacy replied, "Peter and Alpha Raven's son used to be very close. Drake's always been his best friend, but... Daniel was right there with them." I asked, "What happened?"

Lacy sighed, "Alpha Kyle's mate, Marissa, is from Alpha Raven's pack. He thought she was his mate. Marissa never did anything with him because she didn't feel any sort of connection with him. She was a little afraid of him to be honest. Alpha Raven HATED Alpha Kyle until he found his own mate. When she died three years ago, Alpha Raven attacked Alpha Kyle's pack. Alpha Kyle always felt it was to take Marissa from him, but he couldn't prove it. The council let the attack go, explaining it off as grief. They put Alpha Raven back in control of his pack to mentor his son until he could take over. They said it was understandable he lashed out after his mate died." Wow. So serious bad blood. Poor Daniel. He lost his mom and his friends.

I questioned, "How did she die?" Lacy answered, "A rogue attack. She protected their youngest pup, a little girl. She was three at the time. Alpha Raven is ridiculously protective of her

now.” I sighed, “I get that.” I felt bad for that little girl too. All his kids actually. In his grief he made them lose everyone but each other and their own pack.

Lacy smiled sadly, “Alpha Raven’s mate was a really good fighter. She took on ten rogues. She’d killed seven of them. The pack warriors got to them as the remaining three took her down. They tried to save her, but they couldn’t.” I frowned, “That’s really sad. So, the theory is Alpha Raven did this because of Luna Marissa?” Lacy theorized, “I’d imagine so.”

I questioned, “He wasn’t suspect number one for the contract on Chelsea because?” Lacy shrugged, “I’d imagine he was on the list of suspects. Alpha’s have a lot of enemies, and until we knew Christopher and Sebastian were on the list as well... They could’ve thought this was about Peter. Peter hasn’t had time to make many enemies, but he has them.”

I sighed, “Could Alpha Raven’s son not know?” Lacy said, “Alpha Raven does love his children. I doubt they know. He knows if he’s unsuccessful his children will die, especially his sons. If Daniel knows, they won’t spare him. Alpha Kyle would choose who would take over the pack. I’d imagine he’d put a placeholder in place until Sebastian was ready to lead a pack.” I mumbled, “I have a headache.”

Lacy and I tried not to laugh when baby EJ’s growl came through the phone. Lacy linked me, “Oh boy, he’s already possessive. Little Elise has no idea what she’s in for.” I smiled, “I think it’s super sweet. They will grow up knowing they are mates.” Lacy smirked, “He will be so possessive of her. The boys in her pack... heaven help any little boy who pushes her down on the playground. EJ will kick their ass.” I smirked, “That’s actually kind of funny and cute.”

I grinned and told Lacy, “I get to go to the fight. Haley’s going. Lucas said if Haley went, I could go.” Lacy put her head down and her shoulders shook with laughter, “Did he really think she wouldn’t be there?” I shrugged, “I don’t think he did.”

Lacy linked me, “I got pregnant at the wrong time, I could’ve been in all these fights.” I hopefully replied,

“Hopefully it settles down after this.” Lacy said, “Eric’s life seems to have been crazy since he met Haley. I hope we still have fun in our lives after I pop this pup out.” I grumbled “Calm can be fun too. We don’t need to be constantly dealing with threats.” Lacy smirked, “It’s more fun though.” I sighed, “Until we lose someone.” Lacy conceded, “That’s true, but with a healing fairy on our side it’s highly unlikely we would.”

I wasn’t surprised Blade wanted a law about Haley taking him places. I linked Lacy, “Blade would convince her dad about that. He’s very protective of her.” Lacy agreed, “He does seem to be.”

I studied Dusty who seemed to be in deep thought. Lacy followed my stare. She asked, “Do you think he knows who the unknown caller is?” I said, “No, he would say if he did. I think he has a few ideas. He won’t share until he’s certain though. Dusty is a perfectionist, and he’s HELL on confirmation and details. He’ll have a file with a breakdown when he’s ready to share.”

Lacy smirked, “Dylan said he had a file for the council meeting where the coven tried to make him, and Ryan pay for killing the coven who was complicit in the Ducant attack.” I rolled my eyes, “Ry was protecting Valerie. No witch would fault him for that.” Lacy shrugged, “Dylan said Dustin proved it was a money grab.” I nodded, “He would. Like I said, he is a perfectionist who is insanely detail oriented.”

The meeting finally ended. Lacy linked me, “Good, that’s done. Maybe I can have the rest of the day to be a normal newlywed.” I frowned, “I’m sorry this overshadowed that for you guys.” Lacy shrugged, “Such is life. I already knew this was coming and had time to prepare. Plus, like I said; I’d never really dreamed about my wedding. Just the mating ceremony, and that was everything I wanted.”

I squeezed her hand, “It was a beautiful ceremony.” She smiled, “It was, wasn’t it?” I nodded. Dusty cut into our conversation because he was upset that I hadn’t told him, Ry, or Lucas about the phone immediately. He’d obviously put together that I’d told Katie.

Lucas and Dusty were locked in some silent stare off. I eased the tension using a promise I'd say a child. I knew it would make him smile. No one understood it, but I was four when it happened. It made sense in my head at the time.

I would do better with everyone. We were stronger as a team, and I was going to do my best to remember that if they would. Logan asked that we send him the information. I wondered why since there was no way Gunner didn't have the texts monitored. I'm sure he was ready to step in just in case I went off on my own. I figured it had to be because he didn't want to freak Dylan out anymore today by admitting he already had the details.

Lucas and I popped away to our treehouse. I wanted to ask some questions about Principal Tom's actions. When Lucas explained I was a little sad there was nothing I could do to help the man. Then Lucas pointed out his family would've been killed, and I was furious. I no longer wanted to help Principal Tom; he could rot. He'd known Lucas' family his entire life and he knew better than me that Lucas would've helped him.

I still had a nagging feeling there was something going on with his mate. Who leaves their daughter and mate? Was she dead? Did she run away? If she did... why?" I put that aside for now. We discussed a few more things, then I got my wish. We spent the rest of the day just the two of us. I was a little disappointed when I had to pop us back to our bed to go to sleep knowing tomorrow, we had to deal with the real world.

I woke up to my alarm going off for training. I popped over as soon as I was ready. Valerie and Lacy were separated for their special pregnancy training. I actually got to fight today. The warrior I was working with showed me some new moves.

Halfway through they brought over someone's human mate. They had me pop away from him. I did my space unheard chant and we began. We'd gotten into a groove when he tackled me into some equipment before I could pop away. I was screaming in pain when I popped out from under him.

I looked down at my arm and almost puked, it was clearly broken. The human mate's eyes were wide. I gritted my teeth, "Keep coming." He frowned, "No, that's a bad idea." I said, "That could happen in real life, let's keep going."

He looked around then asked, "Why doesn't anyone know you were just screaming?" I breathed deeply, "Fairy thing, keep going. I am the Luna, and I'm telling you to keep coming at me. I know you know what that means." He sighed, "As long as you keep the Alpha from killing me."

Lucas linked me, "Baby girl? Where are you? I felt intense pain from you." I answered, "Gym. Training." I kept popping away. After a few minutes I heard an angry growl and Lucas' arms wrapped around me. The human looked terrified.

Lucas roared, "What the fuck? You broke her arm?" I put my hands on his chest and winced. I'd forgotten it was broken. I explained, "I didn't pop away fast enough, and we landed on some equipment. I told him to keep coming at me because this could happen in a real situation. It's not his fault, I insisted as his Luna."

Dylan groaned, "Really, Emmaline? Why do you do this to me? That's a little better than he just kept coming at you, but not much. When one's arm is broken, they go to the hospital. Now my happy barely gets any sleep beautiful self is going to have to be here when you train to make sure this doesn't happen again. Alex, for shame. For shame!"

Lucas growled and glared at the warriors running the class. He angrily spat at Alex, "WHY did you let her keep going?" They were staring at me in astonishment. Alex sputtered, "We didn't hear anything. She didn't even scream or grunt in pain."

The human mate spoke, "She said it was a fairy thing." Lucas growled, "NO SPACE UNHEARD CHANTS DURING TRAINING!" I cringed, "Ok." My adrenaline faded and my arm really began to hurt. I started to cry.

Lucas picked me up and ran me over to the hospital. He ordered, "Give her something for the pain. Now, Hector." Hector's eyes were wide as saucers. I relaxed once he'd given

me something. I told Lucas, “Just call Haley to come heal me.”

Ry ran into the room panicked, “What happened? Valerie said there was an accident during training.” I complained, “Seriously! I can’t be the first person to get hurt during training. Nor can I be the first person to push through it.” Ry laughed.

Lucas growled, “You BROKE your arm.” I pointed out, “And I have a cousin who can fix it.” Dr. Gonzalez stopped getting a cast ready. He muttered something under his breath. Lucas whipped out his phone and growled at who I could only assume was Eric.

He hung up and we heard a pop. Bexley was there with Eric. I raised an eyebrow. Bexley explained, “Haley is feeding little Cassie. She’ll be here as soon as she’s done, but Kujo wanted to come now.” Eric looked at me asking, “Are you alright?” I nodded, “I’m fine.” Lucas snarked, “You have a broken arm. YOU ARE NOT FINE!” I watched his eyes go black. I kissed his cheek, “Dominic, I’m really ok.”

Gemma came in with a ton of food. She gently told me, “You are going to eat with your hand that’s not broken. I have your training schedule, so I was prepared to feed you a lot.”

Lacy came in with Brad. She took one look at me and asked, “Brad, are you driving us to school?” I wanted to scream. Instead, I calmly said, “Haley will probably be here before school starts.” Lucas ignored me, “Yes, Brad is driving you to school, Lacy Loo.”

I frowned, “I can drive once my arm is healed.” Lucas simply stated, “Brad is driving you today.” I sighed, “Ok... Can Lucas and I have a minute guys?” Eric looked at Lucas who nodded. He grabbed Dylan who sounded like he was cursing. Bexley touched my arm, comforting me. I smiled at her before she popped away.

Once the room was clear I reiterated, “Lucas, I’m ok.” He growled, “Do I need to say it again? Your arm is broken! That’s not what ok means! You can’t enchant the space during training.” I nodded, “I agree, I wasn’t thinking clearly. The

warriors are there to help and coach. I shouldn't have enchanted the space and I won't do it again. I'm still ok. It's a broken arm, it's not that bad."

Lucas grimaced, "I felt it. I felt your pain. I... I thought someone had taken you." I held out my good arm, "Come here." Lucas gave me a side hug, "I'm alright. I'm here." I rubbed his back until I felt him relax.

We heard a pop. Haley smiled at me, "How are you doing, cousin?" I told her sheepishly, "I'm fine. It's Lucas I'm worried about." Haley concurred, "I agree. I'm more worried about Lucas as well." Lucas was incredulous, "Are you two serious?" Haley answered seriously, "Yes. Why would we say it if we weren't serious? Men... I tell you. We will get you healed."

I quickly asked, "Does it matter they gave me something?" Lucas supplied, "Morphine. The doctor gave her morphine." Haley laughed, "You're going to be... interesting today. It makes the pain go away, but fairies react differently to drugs. Not in a bad way. You'll just be extra fun today, in about an hour or so."

Lucas grumbled, "Great. Dylan will love that." I sighed, "He seems pretty upset with me." Haley frowned, "Why would Dylan be upset? You couldn't help that you got hurt." I winced, "I enchanted the space, so no one heard I got hurt, and then I kept training."

Haley stared at me for several moments. Eventually she asked, "Is that the end of the story? I didn't hear a reason for anyone to be upset." Lucas sounded pained, "Haley, I really hate seeing her arm broken." Haley said, "Alright, alright."

She held her hands over my arm. Just like before I felt peaceful. It felt like I just drifted away. All too soon my eyes opened. I moved my arm and beamed at Lucas, "Happy now, my Alpha? My arm is good as new! Thanks, Haley." I gave her a hug. She whispered in my ear, "Meself canabe ina own. Ow mater cwizion group, group cunif've cwizion own. Owow." I smiled at her.

She left us alone to go find Eric. Lucas asked, “What did she say?” I answered, “I don’t know yet.” Lucas nodded and yanked me into a hug. I wheezed, “Can’t breathe.” He pulled back asking, “You won’t stay home today, will you?”

I shook my head, “No, I’m fine now.” He growled and walked me to the car. Lacy, Valerie, Ry, and Brad were already waiting. I slid into the passenger seat. Lucas gave me another kiss goodbye then begrudgingly closed the door.

I conjured my Fealish dictionary Haley had given me so I could look up the words she’d said. I laughed when I figured it out. She’d said, “I am proud of you. No matter what they say today, they would’ve done exactly what you did. Don’t take their shit.

Lacy linked me, “What’s so funny?” I linked her what Haley had said. Lacy agreed, “She’s not wrong. Lucas and Dylan have both gotten hurt while training. They kept going for hours afterwards. You were just going for a few more minutes. Training was almost over.” I nodded, “Thank you!”

We got to school, and Sam ran up to me. She immediately asked, “Are you ok?” I was confused, “I’m fine... why?” Sam frowned, “Drake got linked and so did Peter to watch you today...” I rolled my eyes, “I broke my arm in training, I’m fine Haley healed me.”

Peter frowned and looked at Drake who sighed. Sam tried to hide her smile. Chelsea sounded annoyed, “Really? She’s their Luna. This is ridiculous.” Peter said, “You wouldn’t be here if that had happened to you, Sugar Baby Momma.”

Chelsea turned, “If Haley came and healed me? Yes, I would be.” I smiled at her, “Thank you, Chelsea.” She hugged me, “I hear you are why we have a lead on who’s after me and my pup. Thank you, Emmaline. Next time you get a creepy phone though share that with the girl gang.” I laughed, “You’d have gotten in trouble if you knew.” Chelsea shrugged, “I’m on Team Fairy, trouble is fun!” Peter groaned. Sam cheered, “I second that. Team Fairy!” I couldn’t stop the laughter that bubbled in my chest.

I felt giddy. I skipped to my class. Drake easily kept pace with me. I walked up to Mr. Blaze and tapped his nose with my finger greeting, "Good morning, Mr. Blaze. Can we have class outside? Look how gorgeous it is!" Mr. Blaze was taken aback for a moment, "Right, I have an email about this." He looked at Drake who was trying not to laugh. I giggled, "About having class outside? YAY!"

I popped outside to my tree. Brad and Drake came running up to me seconds later. I asked, "Where's everyone else?" Drake cautiously answered, "We aren't having class outside." I frowned, "But Mr. Blaze said we were." Drake said, "No, he was referring to you being in a 'fun' mood today. Not having class outside."

Brad clapped his hands, "New rule for today, no popping without me." I stuck my tongue out at him, "I don't like that rule." I popped away from them both. They were growling as I laughed. I'd popped all over the back of the school when Lacy came outside laughing.

She waved, "Emmaline, stop popping away from them." Sam and Chelsea joined her. I grabbed Lacy and began popping with her. I couldn't stop laughing. Peter started trying to catch us too. I declared, "TEAM FAIRY IS WINNING!"

I grabbed Chelsea and Sam and popped to the lake in Red Run. I stripped down to my underwear and dove into the water. I surfaced, "Come on in guys! The water is great." Sam laughed then shrugged, "Why not?" Chelsea yelled, "SAM!"

Sam turned, "What? I'm not walking back to school. We don't even know where we are. We might as well enjoy it." The girls laughed and joined me in the water. Lucas linked me, "Baby girl, where are you?" I answered, "Swimming with the girls! You're hot, you know? Like insanely hot."

He laughed, "Where are you swimming?" I teased, "Our special spot in Red Run." Lucas sounded amused, "Alright. Can you pop back to school?" I snorted, "Can I? Yes. Will I...? Eventually." He laughed, "Nick is on his way." I asked excitedly, "Does he want to swim with us?" Lucas laughed in our link.

I splashed the girls with a water wave using my powers. I snickered, “Chelsea, your soon to be father in law is coming. Evidently, he wants to swim with us.” She cackled, “That’s not why he’s coming. How did he know where we were? I’ve never seen this place.”

I smiled, “I know this territory like the back of my hand. Lucas probably told him where we were because I told him.” A truck pulled up and Alpha Kyle, Beta McAlister and a few warriors got out.

Alpha Kyle was trying not to smile, “Chelsea, my son is... worried.” Chelsea laughed and held up her hands, “I was an innocent bystander.” I asked, “Aww why is Peter worried? We are just swimming! Did he tell you Team Fairy kicked Team Werewolves butt? They couldn’t catch me! Do you guys want to play?”

They all shouted, “NO!” at the same time. I pouted, “Werewolves are such sore losers.” Beta McAlister laughed, “Why don’t you all come on out, and head back to school?” I clapped, “Oh yeah! We were at school.” I grabbed the girls, “Bye!” Alpha Kyle yelled, “Wait!”

I popped the girls into the locker room. I snapped us all into the outfits we were wearing earlier. Peter, Drake, and Brad ripped the door open to the girl’s locker room. I gasped, “What are you guys doing? This is the girl’s locker room!” I started singing, “UMMM MMMUMMM you’re going to get in trouble!”

Drake grabbed Sam and Peter did the same to Chelsea. Brad sounded weary, “Emmaline, let’s be done popping. Please.” I popped behind him giggling, “But it’s fun!” I popped back behind Lacy. Brad growled, “Uh huh. Fun. Let’s get everyone to class... please.”

I tilted my head, “What period is it?” Drake answered, “Its second period. You missed first period.” I shrugged, “But that’s ok because Mr. Blaze said we were having class outside! I took the girls on a field trip!”

Chelsea started laughing hysterically. Drake nodded, “Yes, but second period is inside. Along with all the other classes for

today.” I sighed, “But it’s so nice outside. The water was perfect!” Drake disagreed, “It’s November, I don’t know that I would call the water perfect.” Sam slowly stated, “Now that you say that the water was warm.” Lacy surmised, “I think our fairy had something to do with that.”

I thrust my fist into the air, “Onwards and upwards, Drake! To second period we go!” I popped him into class. The teacher was startled by our appearance. Drake muttered, “At least there are no humans in this class.” I skipped to my seat.

After a few minutes, I started bouncing. Travis asked, “Are you ok?” I pleaded, “Can’t we go outside?” Drake and the teacher simultaneously yelled, “NO!” I frowned, “Why do people keep saying no so loudly today?” Travis chuckled.

I turned and looked around. There was an empty seat. I pouted asking, “Grayson is a no show today?” Travis answered, “Yes, he withdrew from the school claiming he was moving.” I sighed, “Oh, well.” I tried to stay, but this was boring. I told them, “I can’t sit still anymore. Bye, guys!” They tried to stop me.

They were silly. I popped to Lacy’s class. I greeted, “Hi, Lacy.” Lacy was startled for a second then laughed. She told me, “The pack link is going crazy asking where you are.” I ignored that asking, “Are you sewing? That looks fun, I want to sew.”

Lacy pointed, “There’s an empty machine beside me. Do you know how to sew?” I smiled, “Of course I do. I had to sew my clothes all the time back when I lived in a tent.” I grabbed some material as Brad ran into the room. I winked at him, “Team Fairy two, Team Werewolf zero. I’ll have to tell Lucas I’m winning.” Lacy bit her lip.

I linked Lucas, “Lucas I’m winning two to nothing.” Lucas responded sounding confused, “Winning?” I squealed, “Yes! Team Fairy is winning! The werewolves are very put out. Actually, now that I think about it, I beat Alpha Kyle and Beta McAlister too. It’s three to zero!” Lucas sighed, “It’s not a game, baby girl.” I retorted, “It is a game, Alpha. A game I’m winning!” I stopped linking him because he was being no fun.

Lacy said, "Lucas wants to know why you stopped linking him." I stuck my tongue out then told her, "Because he's not being any fun!" Lacy covered her mouth with her hands as she laughed. I grabbed the material and started making bibs for babies. I had blue for Sam, and pink for Chelsea. I made some spit up spit up cloths too. I threw yellow for Katie's nugget.

The teacher came over commenting, "Umm... that's a lot of bibs." I smiled, "It's an easy pattern. Gotta go!" Lacy yelled, "Take me!" I grabbed her and my material and popped to the place where my tent used to be.

We heard lots of growls from the school. I giggled, "Isn't this fun?" Lacy considered that then answered, "Actually, yes. Lucas, is on the way." We heard a pop and Haley stood there with the triplets attached to her. EJ instantly popped away.

Haley shook her head, "Do you guys wonder where he went? I don't." Cassie and Alexander giggled. Haley smiled asking me, "Are you having fun, cousin?" I smiled, "I am. Team Fairy is up four to zero." She smiled, "Are they now? Why don't you snap yourself a Team Fairy shirt?" I squealed, "That is a FABULOUS IDEA!" I snapped Lacy and I shirts.

Haley spoke a chant and the score appeared on them. She told me, "As you win the score will change on your shirt." I popped and hugged her, "You are without a doubt THE BEST fairy godmother of all time!" Haley smiled, "Enjoy your game, cousin. Don't end it until you want to. I'm going to pop to EJ."

Lacy asked, "He's with Chelsea, right?" Haley nodded, "Yes." She popped away. I smelled chocolate. I told her, "Lucas is here." Lacy admitted, "So is Dylan." I heard Lucas say, "She's over there."

I popped us both into a tree. I did the space unheard chant. Lacy couldn't stop laughing. She told me, "They can smell us, but they can't hear us. They know we are here though." We watched them run around in circles.

I linked Lucas, "Chasing your tail there, my Alpha?" Lucas growled, "Where are you?" I replied, "Oh... around. Team Fairy five to zero. The werewolves are putting on a bad show today." Lucas pleaded, "Emmaline, please come out." I teased,

“What fun would that be? Find us.” Lucas asked, “Us?” I giggled, “No more clues for you!”

Lacy and I howled with laughter. Finally, Dylan looked up into our tree. I put my finger to my lips in a shh motion. Dylan started laughing which made Lucas look up. I stuck my tongue out at Dylan. Spoilsport. He was supposed to be the fun one.

Lucas put his arms out, “Emmaline, bring Lacy down here please.” I popped us down to the ground. I crossed my arms, “You guys are NOT good at this game.” Peter, Drake, Brad, Lucas, and Dylan looked at me like I was crazy. Chelsea and Sam were laughing. I snapped them chairs.

Drake asked, “Out of curiosity, what game are we playing?” I smiled, “Obviously we are playing the non-sexy version of catch the fairy. So far, you’ve failed. Epically.” Lacy howled with laughter. I continued, “Only Lucas can play the sexy version. Well, Eric can with Haley and Garrett can with Sharon. You have to have a fairy to play the sexy version. I’d offer to pop your mates around, but you’d never catch us. Lucas is here now though, and he’s very good at the catch the fairy game.”

Lucas pinched the bridge of his nose, “Didn’t Haley come to see you? Didn’t she tell you to go home?” I nodded, “She did come to see us. She enchanted my shirt and told me to have fun.” Dylan laughed.

Lucas gaped, “She enchanted your shirt to do what?” I smiled, “The score changes when one of us wins.” Lucas said, “We don’t want to play, baby girl.” I pursed my lips, “Aww, that’s too bad cause I want to play.” I grabbed Lacy and popped back to school.

I asked her, “Are werewolves always such bad losers?” Lacy questioned, “Alpha’s and Beta’s? Yes, because we do not lose often.” I smiled, “I’m going to see Aubree. Do you want to come?” Lacy snickered, “I think that’s the safest plan for us all.” I shrugged then squealed, “OHH, we will get to see our shirts change.” Lacy asked, “Why?” I pointed to the guys who ran inside, “Because they didn’t catch us.”

Lucas growled. I waved to him as I popped to Dustin and Aubree's house. Ry, Dusty, and Aubree were startled by our appearance. I smiled, "Hey guys, what is that? I smell food. I AM STARVING!" I ran into the kitchen and started eating pasta. A portal opened. I wasn't surprised when Logan and Katie coming through.

I grinned, "They'd NEVER find us in the Hackura realm! Team Fairy would so win!" Ry asked, "Team Fairy? What is going on? Are you ok?" I clapped, "I'm great!" I looked down at my shirt and squealed. "Lacy it changed! It's six to zero. Aren't you glad you're on Team Fairy?" Lacy said, "I have literally never been happier about anything in my entire life. I love you, soon to be sister in law. This is amazing."

Dusty was trying not to laugh, "Evie, what's going on? What are you winning?" I smiled, "A game. Non-sexy catch the fairy." Katie laughed. Logan tried to hide his smile. Ry spit out his drink. Dusty groaned, "Why did I ask?" Aubree reigned herself in, "I really don't know, Dustin."

I stared at them suspiciously, "Has anyone linked anyone for our location? Because that's cheating!" Lacy said, "Lucas did it earlier with Alpha Kyle." I frowned, "He wasn't playing yet. Now he's playing, and he doesn't get to cheat."

Logan couldn't hold back his laughter. He asked, "Did someone get drugged today, little fairy?" I raised my hand, "Oh, me! I did!" Katie frowned, "Why?" I explained, "I broke my arm, but Haley fixed it. Dr. Gonzalez gave me morphine."

Dusty groaned, "I'm going on record saying when she was ten and got drugs, I'm glad she didn't know how to pop." Ry laughed, "I'd forgotten about that. She did play hide and seek... for five hours." I smiled, "And I won! I'm winning today too."

There was a knock on the door, but I knew it wasn't Lucas. I didn't smell him. I was surprised when Alpha Kyle, Beta McAlister, and the warriors from earlier filtered into the room. All of them smiled at me.

Alpha Kyle said, "This is an interesting way to spend the day, Luna Emmaline." I smiled, "It's just Emmaline. Who told

you we were here?” Alpha Kyle nodded to Dusty. My jaw dropped, “TRAITOR! That’s cheating! You are helping them cheat!”

Dusty laughed, “Your fiancé was nervous. I assured him you were here and fine.” I looked at Alpha Kyle, “Is Lucas on his way here?” Beta McAlister answered with a smile, “He is.” I grabbed Lacy, “Don’t be cheater, cheater, pumpkin eaters and tell him we left. Bye!” Beta McAlister laughed as I popped Lacy and I back to school.

I squealed, “LUNCH TIME YAY! I’m still hungry.” Lacy didn’t bother to try to hide her laugh as we walked into the lunchroom. Peter and Drake gaped at us. I pointed at my shirt, “Seven to nothing SUCKERS!”

Chelsea and Sam were shaking with laughter. Lacy and I grabbed our food. Lacy frowned, “Sadly I need to be in my next class. I have a test.” I nodded, “Alright.” I looked around and spotted Tessa. I sang, “Oh TESSAAA!”

She bit her lip but came over. I told her, “You are tagged into Team Fairy. Lacy has a test. Peter and Drake are spoil sports and weren’t happy I took Chelsea and Sam earlier.” Sam swatted Drake, “You’re spoiling the fun.” Tessa asked, “Team Fairy?”

I nodded and snapped her a shirt. I repeated the chant Haley said and squealed, “Look at that she’s even got the score right. You don’t have a test next class do you, Tessa?” Tessa smiled, “I don’t, and I have never been happier to say I have nothing to do in class.” I clapped, “YAY!”

Drake offered, “Maybe... The game could be over?” I frowned, “Why would it be over? Don’t you guys want to win at least once?” Peter said, “Good lord, Goddess have mercy. We have to win?!” I smiled, “I told you Lucas is good at catch the fairy. Well, sexy catch the fairy. Maybe he’s not so good at catch the fairy in a non-sexy way. I might have to change the game later to make it fair. He clearly doesn’t have the proper motivation. Oh well, he’s so lickable.”

Drake choked on his drink. When lunch ended Dylan, Lucas, and Brad ran into the cafeteria. I pouted, “You guys are

not doing so hot today. Do I have to change the rules to sexy catch the fairy to get your attention, Lucas? Would Dominic enjoy that better?" He growled and lunged towards me.

I popped Tessa and I away. Tessa squealed, "PAUL!" Her mate stopped his run and shifted back. I snapped him clothes. He held her asking, "Tessa? Are you ok?" She smiled, "I'm good. I'm on Team Fairy."

Paul looked over to me then asked her, "Is Luna Emmaline alright?" I assured him, "Luna Emmaline is great! I am winning!" I heard laughter, "Hello, cousin!" I saw Haley and Eric. Eric raised an eyebrow, "What brings you here?" I smiled then explained, "Team Fairy is kicking Team Werewolves behind! They might need your help, Eric. They are not motivated to win even once. They are such sore losers too."

Tessa laughed. We hung out until it was time for the next period. I popped Tessa to her class then popped to Lacy. I smiled at Lucas who was with her. I waved, "Hi, Lucas. Bye, Lucas." I popped us to Red Run's pack house.

Lacy asked, "What are we doing here?" I smiled, "At fairy lessons, Haley said Sharon took her GED so she could spend more time with Garrett. She didn't want to graduate from our school because she didn't know anyone. We are here to see her."

Alpha Kyle turned the corner, "Hello again, Emmaline." I giggled, "Just the man I wanted to see. Where's my sister?" He was obviously amused, "I'll tell her you're here to see her." Beta McAlister laughed, "I see the score has gone up on your shirts." I nodded, "It's not a good day to be a werewolf."

Alpha Kyle snorted as Sharon walked in the house. He told me, "It's not a good day to be your mate. He's going to be wound tighter than a tick, Emmaline." I smiled shrugging, "Darn. Sounds like sexy fun to me."

I hugged Sharon, "How are you? We haven't gotten to talk much since you've been mated." She smiled, "It's been great. Garrett linked me he's already making plans to keep me contained if I have to receive drugs for anything." I smiled,

“It’s fun! Haley told me I would be extra fun today! Boy did she undersell it! I am having SUCH fun. BEST DAY EVER!” I clapped and Sharon laughed at my antics.

Lacy offered, “I, for one, am having a great day as well.” I asked, “Dylan’s not mad, right? He likes the fairy show.” I pointed at Alpha Kyle and Beta McAlister, “Their spoilsport sons were upset. Their souls told me so. Dylan’s though... Last I saw, his soul was entertained.” Lacy snorted, “Dylan’s beyond entertained.”

Beta McAlister chuckled, “He is. Our Beta group chat is on fire today filled with Dylan and his fun.” Alpha Kyle said, “Our sons are... not used to the fairy show.” Sharon teased, “I’m considering taking myself on a morphine trip. Emmaline seems like she’s having a great time.” Beta McAlister said, “Let’s not, unless it’s necessary. Alpha Lucas has been chasing her for most of the day.” I smiled, “And he’s losing. He’s usually much better at this game.”

I smelled chocolate and stood to hug Sharon, “Goodbye, big sister. We need to hang out soon! You’re coming to the baby shower this weekend, right?” Sharon nodded, “Of course. Why are you leaving?” I pointed to the door, “Lucas is here, so I’m popping out. I want at LEAST ten wins. Ten to zilch sounds like a good number.” I waved to Lucas. He pounced, but I grabbed Lacy and popped away while everyone laughed.

I popped to the living room of our home. Debbie and Dale were sitting there. I warned them, “No one can tell Lucas where we popped to. That’s cheating! People keep cheating, and it’s not fair.” Dale laughed, “He’s in a mood about this.”

I asked, “Is his paperwork upstairs?” Lacy groaned, “No... that’s not fun.” I smiled, “We can just do some of it.” Dale said, “It’s up there. I did most of it, there’s just a little bit left.” I grabbed Lacy, and we easily finished the paperwork.

I heard the front door open. Lucas all but snarled, “Are they here?” I linked Lacy, “I didn’t even need werewolf hearing for that one.” Lacy asked, “Is the game over?” I smirked, “Nope.” I grabbed her and popped to my treehouse.

I told her, "Once he finds me here, the game can end with no werewolf victories. I am the irrefutable winner." Lacy laughed, "I don't know, I think a lot of us won today." I sat up, "Shoot! It's my turn to pop Tessa to Paul." I popped away.

I grabbed Tessa from school and quickly popped her to Paul then popped back to Lacy. Lucas was in the treehouse with Dylan and Lacy. I shook my finger at him, "Bad, bad day for Team Werewolf, very bad. You were no good at the game today, Lucas. Wanna change the rules?" Lucas growled, "Dylan... Lacy... out."

I grabbed them both and popped them to the house. Dylan whistled, "You are a crazy fairy today.... I love it. I am team give Emmaline morphine every day. I have a petition. Only Travis has signed it, but I'm positive I can get the she wolves in the game to get the signatures rolling." I giggled, "YES! That's an amazing team!"

I popped back to Lucas. He was almost to the house. I teased, "Are you going to catch me now?" Lucas growled, "Emmaline..." I popped a few feet away from him taunting, "Come get me, Alpha. It's now a game of sexy catch the fairy. I don't think you were properly incentivized earlier." I giggled and snapped myself into a Tinkerbell outfit.

I popped all over the territory. I chatted with Liam at the border of Eric and Lucas' territory for a while. He felt bad for Lucas because this had happened to him before with Bexley. When Lucas caught up, I popped to my sanctuary.

I swam several laps. I choked down some water when his hands grabbed me. I trailed my fingers up his chest, "Finally. Gosh, Team Werewolf really needed a win. Is it winning if I let you catch me though?" Lucas growled, "You have been a VERY naughty fairy." I snuggled into him, "I am your naughty fairy."

I snapped his shirt off and licked him. He groaned, "Pop us to our room now." I giggled and did as he said. He spanked me, "No more popping away from me because I won." I nodded, "Yes, Alpha. After several wins on my part, you did catch me. Because I let you" He spanked me again. I smirked,

“Thank you, Alpha.” Lucas growled, “Baby girl, I am so beyond worked up.” I bit my lip, “Let me take care of you, My Alpha.”

Lucas grabbed my hair and kissed me hard. I pulled away, but he yanked me back. He broke our kiss, “I’m in charge of the game now.” I clapped, “Goodie! I love it when you go all dominant Alpha male.” Lucas growled, “Do you?” I nodded, “Yes.”

Lucas ordered, “Take my pants off, no snapping.” I nodded and undid his belt. I slipped it off and undid the button on his jeans. I unzipped his jeans and slid them off. I snapped his shoes off, and he lifted his feet up one at a time.

I looked back up at him for my next instruction. He spoke authoritatively, “Take my underwear off without using your fingers.” I thought about it. I couldn’t snap if I couldn’t use my fingers. I smirked and bit the top of his boxers. It wasn’t easy, but I managed to get his underwear off without using my hands.

Lucas growled, “Open your mouth.” I did as he said, and he grabbed onto my hair. I moaned when he thrust into my mouth. He groaned, “Grab my ass, baby girl.” I grabbed his butt and dug my nails in lightly. He hissed and fucked my mouth. He was still hard after he’d finished coming.

He let go of my hair and walked into his closet. He came back out with several items. He walked over to me, “Open your mouth.” I complied, and he put a small bullet vibrator in my mouth. He bent me down on the bed and I felt the whip sting my butt.

I linked him, “Sore loser.” I teased. He brought the whip back down a few more times. He roughly demanded, “Open your mouth.” I did and he removed the vibrator, then put it inside me. I whimpered as he started it on a low setting. This time he used his hand to spank me.

I moaned, “Alpha...” He growled, “You will thank me after I spank you.” I nodded, “Yes, Alpha. Sorry, Alpha.” He groaned, “FUCK! I need you. I can’t get any harder.” He removed the vibrator and slammed into me.

I shivered with pleasure, “LUCAS!” He growled, “MINE!” I gripped the sheets, “Yours.” He pushed me onto the bed on all fours and lost all semblance of control. We destroyed our room. I heard a knock and Lucas’ furious growl drove whoever it was away.

I smirked teasing him, “Is that the best you’ve got, Alpha? I’m not even scared.” Lucas grinned, “Is that so?” I nodded emphatically, “I know you’d never hurt me, Alpha.” He kissed me softly, “No, baby girl. I’ll never hurt you.” My words seemed to have calmed him down. He slowed his movements and when we both climaxed, I fell asleep.

My alarm went off for training, and I woke up with a start. I felt great. I snapped our room back to normal. Lucas groaned beside me and got up. I raised an eyebrow, “What are you doing?” Lucas mumbled under his breath.

I teased, “I don’t have werewolf hearing. I have no idea what you said.” Lucas spoke clearly, “I’m coming with you today.” I frowned, “Lucas... You don’t have to do that.” He disagreed, “Yes, I do.”

I rolled my eyes and popped us to class. Lucas nodded to Alex who told me to go swim laps. I linked Lacy, “Is it a cardio day because of me?” Lacy replied, “It is one thousand percent a cardio day because of you.” I groaned.

Dylan said, “I don’t want to hear a peep out of you, little Luna. It is FAR too early for me to be awake. For god’s sake Lucas, the sun isn’t even up!” I left them to bicker and jumped into the pool. I saw Lucas’ hand in the pool after some time and swam over to him.

As I reached for him, a mischievous thought popped into my head. I smiled when our hands connected, then I yanked him into the pool. He let me. I saw he could’ve braced himself, but he didn’t. He came up smiling. I kissed him and wrapped my legs around him.

Dylan grumbled, “Aren’t you two adorable? It’s still too early for this, Lucas.” Lucas groaned, “Come on.” Dylan walked away with Lacy grumbling. I muttered, “I thought he was a morning person.” Dylan yelled, “I AM A MORNING

PERSON! This is still nighttime!” I whispered to Lucas, “It’s not nighttime.” Dylan yelled, “If the sun isn’t out, IT IS nighttime!” I laughed. I popped Lucas I to our room so we could get ready for our day.

The week flew by. I almost had the entire lake frozen at my last fairy lesson. Idel said I’d have it next week. Haley put me through the ringer during our physical training. At least I didn’t break a bone again. Friday all us girls were really excited for Sam and Chelsea’s baby shower.

When we got home, Lucas was tense. He brought Lacy and me to his office. It was confirmed Alpha Raven was the one that put the contract out on Chelsea. Lucas and Dylan were coming with us to Red Run to coordinate with Alpha Kyle and Beta McAlister. Haley was going to bring Eric, Jackson, Harold, and Darrin. Luna Marissa Kyle insisted they not be in the pack house because of the shower. Dusty offered his house as the headquarters. Peter didn’t like it but agreed since Dusty’s house was only ten minutes from the pack house.

Lacy and I woke up early on Saturday. I kissed Lucas, “I’ll be back to grab you once we are set up.” Lucas groaned, “Sleep is a thing. Why don’t you ever sleep?” I laughed, “I find I need less and less.” Lucas grumbled, “Isn’t that wonderful?” I smile, “I sense sarcasm.” Lucas pulled a pillow over his head, “Do you really, baby girl?” I laughed, “Are you even awake?”

Lucas rolled over and huffed. I popped to the living room where Debbie and Lacy were waiting. I popped them both to Red Run. Haley smiled at us. She encouraged me, “Let’s see what you’ve got.” I explained, “She’d told me I’d be snapping the party done.”

Lacy and I had decided on a pink and blue explosion from Haley’s plans. I snapped the food too. We’d wanted it catered, but after a heated debate with Lucas and Dylan we were going the snapping route. They wanted someone we trusted since we’d had bad luck with food lately.

Haley smiled and bumped her hip into me, “Good job. It looks amazing!” She handed me some games, “Google says

these are fun.” I laughed, “Did you play them at Bexley’s shower?” Haley shook her head, “No, fairies have their own versions of baby showers, as do the Hackura. I had to use the Google for this one.” Oh boy.

She had a diaper cake with lots of things a baby needs. I had the bibs and spit up rags I’d made in school. Lucas and I also got them a baby carrier and a bassinet that rocked back and forth. Chelsea walked in with EJ in her arms. Peter was right behind her.

She teared up, “You guys... This is beautiful.” I asked, “How many times has EJ just popped to you?” Chelsea laughed, “So far it’s only if Haley is around. As soon as she got here today, he was with me.” That was adorable.

I told them, “I’ve got to go get Dylan and Lucas.” I linked Lucas, “I’m on my way to you.” Lucas replied, “Dylan and I are ready and waiting.” I popped to them then brought us back to the pack house at Red Run.

Dylan bragged, “How did we do this pre-Emmaline? The drive would be so annoying now. Do you even think about how much of our life we wasted getting places the old-fashioned way? How much more sleep I did not get? How was I surviving? I don’t even know.”

Lucas shrugged, “We ran here sometimes.” Dylan waved his hands, “Boring. Now we hop on the fairy express. I love it, I really do.” Alpha Kyle and Eric snorted. He had Cassie in his arms, and Alexander was in Haley’s.

I linked Lacy, “When did Eric get here?” Lacy pursed her lips, “Evidently, he was here the whole time. Haley doesn’t have a good feeling.” I sighed, “Really? Man! Can’t we catch a break?” Lacy snickered, “That’s what she said. It’s not a super bad feeling yet though.”

The guys left and the shower began. Chelsea and Sam opened all their presents. They got a lot of good stuff. Both of their parents had gotten them cribs. Peter’s gift made Chelsea cry. Their cottage was ready to move into. Sam and Drake’s was done as well. Haley had me snap all their gifts to the baby’s rooms in their cottages.

Haley clutched her stomach briefly. Lacy linked me, “Her bad feeling definitely got upgraded.” Chelsea grimaced in pain. Haley winced, “Well, fuck.” I asked, “Chelsea, are you ok?” Chelsea panted, “Someone get Peter back here... I think I’m in labor.”

EJ cooed at her. She tried to smile at him but grimaced in pain. Sam stood and water gushed out. Chelsea stared at her friend in shock. Haley stated the obvious, “Ok, both babies are coming.”

Warriors ran into the room. One yelled, “ROGUES! They are attacking with witches!” Haley groaned, “Of COURSE they are. EJ pop Chelsea to...” Before Haley could finish EJ popped her away. A warrior yelled, “FUCK! WHERE DID HE GO?” Haley glared at him, “Nowhere dangerous, obviously.”

She got her phone and yelled in Latin. She sighed then said, “Sam, come with me.” Sam asked, “Where are we going?” Haley answered, “EJ took Chelsea to the Hackura realm. It’s easier if you two are together. Emmaline, the guys are on the way. I’ll be back.”

I nodded then said, “Take Lacy and Debbie.” Haley popped away with her group. I turned to Luna Marissa, “Get Christopher and Sebastian to the safe room. We don’t know if the contracts are active on them or not.” She smiled and kissed my forehead, “You will be an excellent Luna.”

Just then someone yelled, “LUNA MARISSA! DO COME OUTSIDE!” We heard a whimper, “MOM, DON’T DO IT!” I paled as Marissa ran out to the front. A witch had Christopher and Sebastian. Marissa screamed while I held her back.

I threw her to Drake’s mom demanding, “GET HER INSIDE!” I threw hail at the witch holding Sebastian. She wasn’t ready for it and went down hard. I popped beside Christopher. I yelled, “Run, Sebastian!” He took off as I threw icicles at the witch holding Christopher next. She dropped dead when one sliced through her chest.

I grabbed Christopher. I heard a pop. I stared in shock. Brooke Tucker had popped to Christopher. I yelled, “OH, COME ON!” She was crying. I paused as a single drop of

water formed into a giant drop right above the dazed witch I'd hit with hail. Brooke hissed and the giant ball of water dropped on the witch. Umm, ok?

I gasped as the witch's skin started falling off. She screamed in horror. I mean, same. I yelled, "What in the hell is happening?!" Haley popped back in, "Oh... shit. Acid water. Very cool, Brooke. That's a nice power. She must be mad. What did I miss?" Ok? Just so blasé about acid water. Oh, to be raised in Faerie and the Hackura realm.

Blade laughed, "Princess miss lots. Fairy here. Kill now." I looked over to see Blade mowing down witches. Haley shrugged, "Well, if you insist Blade. Emmaline, you take the left and I'll go right. Brooke, pop back to your mom with Christopher please." Brooke cooed and popped away with Christopher.

Haley immediately took on those on the left. I conjured a dagger and stuck it in my pants. I threw my icicles and hail. I used my telekinesis to throw glasses that were left on the deck from the party at the rogues.

I'd drowned two wolves when Dominic jumped over my head growling. He and the rest of the wolves took out the remaining rogues. I sat down. I needed to eat. I conjured myself a pizza. Haley praised me, "Very nice." Eric shifted, "Yes, Emmaline actually feeds herself. Follow her lead, Angel." Haley stuck her tongue out and snapped herself food.

Alpha Kyle shifted back, and I snapped him clothes. He frantically asked, "Where is Christopher?" Peter and Alpha Kyle were anxious while I tried to explain, "Well, through a series of honest to god crazy events, he's with Alpha Tucker and my sister. Brooke popped in... I'm guessing she sensed he was in danger or something. Yeah, she was... mad. Mad is a word we can go with. She can apparently turn water to acid. She melted the skin off a witch that had Christopher and Sebastian."

Alpha Kyle gaped at me along with everyone else. I added, "Haley told her to pop him back to her mom. I know Sebastian made it inside." Alpha Kyle nodded, "Marissa has him." Haley

said, “Drake, Peter... Do you want us to bring Chelsea and Sam back here or do you want to go the Hackura realm? Doris has them in a room together on the royal floor. Two of my sisters in law are with them. Cali assures me they have time before the babies come.”

Before they could answer a voice came from the east, “Long time no see, Nick. You have something I want.” I turned towards the voice. A man who looked like he’d lost it was there. He looked like the picture of Alpha Raven I’d seen from the file we had, but much more unkempt and definitely crazier.

He was leading hundreds of rogues. Haley groaned, “Great. Just fucking great! I promised Chelsea and Sam I’d get Peter and Drake to them as soon as possible. You just had to show up and fuck shit up.” I praised her, “You always add humor to the situation, cousin.” Dylan sounded put out, “Excuse me, that’s my job.”

Alpha Raven ignored us, “Give me Marissa, and we will leave in peace.” I quirked an eyebrow as the entire pack growled. Peter declared, “You can’t have my mom!” Alpha Kyle put his hand on Peter’s shoulder. He spoke calmly, “Marissa is mine, Ray.”

I linked Lucas, “Ray? Alpha Ray Raven? Man, his parents didn’t even like him.” Lucas smirked, “It’s Raymond.” My eyes widened, “That’s actually worse. Raymond Raven? That’s just mean.” Lucas’ lips twitched.

Alpha Raven smiled, “I was hoping you’d say that.” Lucas and Eric tackled Haley and I to the ground. I watched Garret dive on Sharon. I asked, “What was that?” Lucas growled, “Iron darts.” Haley ordered, “Emmaline and Sharon pop inside the house.” I did as she said. She’d come with us too. She chanted the space unheard.

She clapped, “Here’s the plan, we are going to pop to those with the darts and kill them. Then we pop back and kick some ass.” I agreed wholeheartedly, “I love your plans. They are so simple and brilliant.” I thought of those with a dart and popped.

We ended up behind five werewolves. Haley taunted, "Hello boys." One whirled right into my hands that were already blue. I thought about the darts all being water. I knew it worked when they all aimed at Haley.

She got hit by one and smiled, "So damn handy. Water to iron. You kick ass, little cousin." Sharon smiled as she put her hands on a wolf drawing the water out of his body. She told me, "You really are amazing, little sister." I snorted, "ME? That's freaking awesome!" She smiled, and we killed the men with darts.

I heard a scream of pain that chilled my bones. My eyes widened and I clutched my side. I whispered, "Lucas." Haley and I both popped back with Sharon on our heels. Lucas was laying in front of Dylan. A stared at Dylan and Lucas in shock. Lucas shifted back from Dominic to his human form groaning in pain. I couldn't look away from the knife sticking out of his side.

I screamed. Everything stopped except Haley. I ran to Lucas. I yelled at her, "WHY ISN'T HE MOVING?" Haley put her hand on me, "You froze them. He will be fine in a second. One cannot say the same for that mother fucking witch bitch. I think your powers are going to lash out. You've already unlocked your full water fairy powers, and you are understandably pissed off. We can use that combined with my power to end this quickly though."

Everything came back into motion with a snap. I whirled. Haley blew out a breath, "Damn. Her eyes turned blue. I'd say I'd feel bad for you witch bitch, but I really don't. This is what happens when you piss off the royal water fairy house."

I reached out to my light. Haley said I could communicate with it. I wanted it to do something horrible to this witch. Haley assured me, "I'll heal Lucas. Eric... just... watch Emmaline's back."

I screamed, "HOW FUCKING DARE YOU, BITCH!" Ry spoke, "Umm... Did Evie just cuss?" Logan asked, "Are you deaf? The dead heard that screech."

I tuned them out as I worked with my light. I was drawing the water from the ground and trees. Once it was large enough, I sent it to the witch. She was essentially in a giant riptide I'd created. I'd let her up for air only to drag her back down. She was NOT going to die quickly.

I saw Haley and Eric killing anyone who got near me, so Haley was obviously done healing Lucas. Why wasn't he with me? Haley had released her tornado on the witches after taking half of their forces air.

I linked Dylan, "Is Lucas ok?" Dylan replied, "Yes, Vaporean. He should wake up soonish according to Haley. Are you done with that witch yet?" I hissed, "No. Did you just refer to me as a Pokémon?"

I let her come back up to breath then took her back under. Dylan continued, "Well ok then. I did call you a Pokémon that can control water. Because you just called water to form a riptide. That's totally normal. You're definitely not a Pokémon. Noooppee. Normal things are happening here."

He paused for several moments, then grumbled, "This is awkward, I thought you'd laugh. Guess we aren't there yet." I asked, "Are you ok?" Dylan snorted, "I'm fine now that she's otherwise engaged. She let go of her spell or something. I'm not in pain anymore." I responded, "Good."

I let the witch come up then yelled, "This one is for my friend Lacy! She'd kick your ass for what you did to Dylan!" I told my light to drag her back under. I saw Peter fighting someone out of the corner of my eye and sent an icicle at the heart of the wolf coming at him. I barely registered that Peter shifted back into his human form to look at me in shock.

I still wasn't done with the witch who'd stabbed Lucas, and these people were trying to hurt my friends. I was over it. I screamed in anger. Haley taunted our enemy, "You ALL have fucked up now!" I yelled, "ENOUGH! I AM SICK OF YOU PEOPLE TRYING TO HURT MY FRIENDS, MY FAMILY, AND MY MATE! I CAN'T TAKE IT ANYMORE!"

Haley smirked, "Wanna see what happens when I bring the rain?" I nodded, "I really do." Haley instructed, "Use the rain

with your light like you called the water to you. Use it to make a bigger riptide to sweep our enemies into. Make sure to specify enemies to your light. We wouldn't want to drown the good guys." It started pouring buckets of rain.

My light was thrilled. I used the water Haley brought, and I created a huge whirlpool riptide that swept up our enemies. I didn't feel the need to do more than let them drown quickly. I pulled Alpha Raven out of the riptide, letting him go at Alpha Kyle's feet. Once the others had drowned; I turned back to the witch who I let back up for air.

She begged, "Just kill me." I answered emotionlessly, "No." I pulled her back down. Ry touched my shoulder, "Evie, let me kill her." Tears streamed down my face, "No." Dusty sighed, "Evie..." I turned to them, "I SAID NO! Until Lucas wakes up, she suffers! She tried to take him from me! If Haley couldn't heal, she might have killed him. Lucas is not awake, so she doesn't get to die yet!"

Ry shrugged, "Ok then." Dusty shot him a look but they both put their hands on my back. Haley said, "He will wake up any second. He had a punctured Spleen, but it's mended now. His body just needs a minute. I promise, my lion is fine."

I nodded letting the witch back up for air. Eric said, "Remind me never to piss you two off, Angel. That was something." Haley snorted, "You and Lucas do that all the time." Eric shook his head, "I mean seriously." I couldn't stop the tears streaming down my face.

I heard the voice I'd been desperately waiting for, "Baby girl." I sobbed and turned into the arms that were wrapping around me. I told my light to kill the witch. I held onto Lucas like he was my lifeline. Because he was. He was what I needed in this world.

Spun Up

Lucas jolted up in bed grunting in pain. I was checking myself for injuries, I realized with dread it wasn't my pain. I linked Dylan yelling "Where is Emmaline?!" He groaned, "What? Huh? What's happening?" I jumped out of bed, "She's in pain. It's so bad I woke up to it. Did someone take her?"

Dylan grumbled, "I'm sure you've thought of this, but did you think to link HER, screaming at this ungodly hour asking where she was? Since she would quite possibly know better than I don't know... ME? She is the only one out of the three of us who is fully awake."

I sighed in relief, "Good idea." Dylan yelled, "ARE YOU SERIOUS? YOU DIDN'T LINK HER FIRST? WHY, LUCAS? WHY DO YOU HATE ME?" I ignored him and linked Emmaline. She said she was in the gym training.

I was off my bed and out the door running. I met Dylan on the lawn. He told me, "Lacy said Emmaline is in the gym. She didn't think anything was wrong." I growled, "Something happened." Dylan made a face at me, "Yes, it did. You happened. You screamed in our link and woke me up. I distinctly recall that happening. It was very wrong. Wrong indeed. I'm glad you are man enough to admit that."

We entered the gym. My eye's widened when I spotted my mate. Dylan said, "Well... poop." I growled at Alex and grabbed him by the shoulders. I yelled, "Emmaline's arm is clearly broken! I can see that from here! WHAT IS WRONG WITH YOU? WHY IS SHE STILL TRAINING?"

Alex was clearly bewildered, "Lucas, I had no idea. Obviously, that would've stopped..." I ignored him and ran to Emmaline. Dylan clapped, "Do you all want him to kill you guys? What were you thinking?" Alex responded, "We didn't know, you know that." I growled.

Dylan said, “My barely awake not had any coffee brain figured out her arm was broken from the angle. Not even kind of broken; really broken. I’m not a doctor but the ulna and radius are fractured. Do you want to know how I know that? I LOOKED at her arm that’s bent in a direction one’s arm should not be bent. You didn’t know? Seriously? What do you people want from me? She had to have screamed really loud. I’m stunned that’s not what woke me up. Do you guys know I am ONE MAN?! One man who has had no coffee. Someone, get me a gallon of coffee. I only mentioned it ten seconds ago and no one ran to me with coffee. You are slacking on my trainings when I mention coffee.”

I heard him taking sips, so I assumed someone did run him coffee. He smacked his lips together, “Ahh, I will try to keep our Alpha from killing the whole lot of you. AMATEURS! If the Luna gets a papercut, you stop what you’re doing and get her a BAND-AID. If she breaks her arms, you get the doctor. Then because you have a brain and your Gamma is right there; you wake up your Beta. Whom by the way... is me. I explain this because I think you need me to explain. Or since the Gamma has gone deaf along with the lot of you, and he’s actually taking part in the class today; someone is assigned to check on the Luna sporadically throughout class. Because you value your life and things.”

He drank more then continued, “Then I get our Alpha and keep him from killing you. When you follow NONE of the steps I mentioned, it is MUCH harder for me to keep him from killing you. Especially when said Alpha wakes up in pain because he felt hers. No one wins. NO ONE! Least of all me! I need more coffee!”

I linked the pack doctor, “Hector, I’m coming to you with the Luna. She’s got a seriously broken arm.” Hector replied, “Are you sure it’s broken?” I growled, “Since she’s not gumby, YES, I’m sure it’s broken, Hector.”

Emmaline said she’d made her partner keep coming at her, with a Luna command. Wonderful. Dylan groaned. I glared at my warriors. How could they let her keep going? They said she didn’t make a single noise. I linked Dylan, “They

should've looked when they hit the equipment. HOW WAS NO ONE MONITORING THE LUNA'S TRAINING?"

Dylan replied, "Because Alex was actually someone's partner today, and the rest hate me. It's the only logical conclusion, and I've been SO NICE to them. So nice." The human, who I was trying not to kill, said they didn't hear because of fairy stuff. SPACE UNHEARD IN TRAINING?!

Lacy linked me, "Luc, you need to get her to the hospital. Her adrenaline is fading." I looked down at Emmaline who started to cry. Her pain hit me again like lightning. I picked her up linking Hector, "We are coming to you now."

I linked Dylan, "Do SOMETHING about those men not giving a shit about watching their Luna." Dylan said, "Of course. To be fair, they couldn't hear her." I growled, "To be fair SOMEONE should've been watching her! I'm not a fairy, I give no shits about being fair." By the time we reached the hospital her pain was so bad I wanted to puke.

Hector linked me, "It has to be morphine. That's a really bad break. We might need to perform surgery." I growled. Emmaline felt better immediately, but her eyes closed for a bit. I punched a hole in the wall. I snarled, "SURGERY?"

Dylan winced as he came into the room. He said, "Surely, not. You all are forgetting that..." Hector stammered, "Alpha, this is a bad break. We could set it and give it a few days. It's going to swell, and we can't perform surgery until that goes down, but in my opinion it will require surgery."

Dylan said, "Awesome. Any more good news for us, Hector? What's that you say? The whole pack has decided to hate me collectively? Don't you worry doc, I am fully aware of that fact."

I growled and threw things. I asked, "Why isn't she awake?" Hector said, "The morphine combined with her adrenaline fading. Her body just needs a minute. She will be aware of us in a few moments. I'll prepare her cast."

I turned to Dylan, "SURGERY!" Dylan patted my head, "Yes, the whole territory heard you the first time. It's a

surgery, not a death sentence. Plus, you are forgetting....” I growled, “I want the warriors IN MY OFFICE NOW! Alex can handle training until I’m done with them.”

Dylan shook his head, “Not now, Emmaline needs you now. We can’t have her wake up, and have you be in the wind. That would be very bad. Not only for her, but everyone else involved. Let’s take a beat here, Lucas. Then let’s remember our ace in the hole....”

I growled interrupting him, “They should’ve been watching her.” Dylan rubbed his temples, “Ok... since you woke me up so ridiculously early; Your vocabulary hasn’t been very expansive. We have covered surgery, and the fact that they should’ve been watching her. There’s no need to rehash. Let’s get Emmaline taken care of, and then revisit the training situation.”

Lacy scoffed, “You both have been hurt worse in training.” I growled, “Not now, Lacy Loo.” Lacy reassured me, “Lucas, she’s ok.” I asked, “And what if she wasn’t? NONE OF THEM WOULD HAVE NOTICED!” Lacy frowned, “She’s fine though.” I growled.

Emmaline came around to say we could just call Haley. Hector mumbled, “I need the princess on speed dial.” Dylan rubbed his temples, “I kept trying to say that, and you kept interrupting me. Call Haley... so simple and brilliant. Now, she gets all the credit. I should’ve just called myself.”

Ryan ran in the room. He was pale, but calmed down once he saw Emmaline was, as Lacy said, “fine.” I was not ok with everyone saying this was fine. Dominic huffed, “She has broken bones, that is not fine. What is wrong with these people?” I replied, “I don’t know.”

Hector complained, “Who needs doctors? She has the fairy princess. What do I know? I only went to school to be a doctor.” Dylan linked me, “Haley will fix her right up. It will be as if it never happened.” I growled, “It DID happen. This will NEVER happen again. She should be safe here in our territory.”

Dylan reasoned, "Now, now she was safe." I growled, "A broken arm suggests otherwise." Dylan sighed, "You poor Alpha Sleep Tyrant, you're so tired you're not making sense..." I growled, "I need to call Eric." Dylan sarcastically replied, "Sure, one should talk to GAP in this mood. What could go wrong? I'm just going to text Beta Caleb for funsies."

I pulled out my phone. The second it picked up I growled, "Eric." Eric asked, "Lucas, what's wrong?" I immediately said, "I need Haley. Emmaline broke her arm in training." Eric sighed, "Angel, your cousin broke her arm training." I heard Haley say, "Aww, poor thing! I'll be there as soon as Cassie is done eating. Can you link your mom and see if she can come be with the triplets until I get back?" Eric replied, "Of course, Angel."

I growled, "I know she can't come now, but I need her." Eric assured me, "She will be there as soon as she can." I hung up on him. Dylan asked, "Did you just hang up on the God of the Pricks?" I growled at Dylan, "We will be at trainings until I am certain someone is watching her closely." Dylan nodded, "Of course we will. What else could we do? Can we go back to you hanging up on the God of pricks? I feel like a slow clap is in order." Bexley and Eric popped in.

Eric linked me, "Lucas, just keep calm for Emmaline. When she leaves for school, you and I will fight your anger out. Just keep Dominic on simmer until then." I truthfully told him, "I don't know if I can. He's mad and I'm fucking pissed."

Dominic linked me, "You are NOT more upset about this than I am." I sighed, "Fine." I linked Eric, "Correction, we are both equally upset." Eric snorted, "I know. Just focus on her. She needs you, and that's what's important." I replied, "She's staying home today." Eric gave me a disbelieving look, "I wish you best of the luck with that."

I was going to lose it if someone else said the word fine. Dominic calmed down when Emmaline spoke to him. I linked Dylan, "The next person who says the word fine is going to feel my wrath." Dylan nodded, "Of course. Don't mind me,

I'll just be striking the word fine from the vocabulary of the pack for... the foreseeable future."

Lacy came back into the room. I hadn't noticed she left. She must have gone to get Brad. Brad linked me, "I'm sorry, Alpha. I should be at training sessions with her." I replied, "We didn't have you on rotation until school." Brad frowned, "I'll be there from now on." I told him, "You're driving them today if she insists on going to school." He just nodded.

Emmaline asked everyone politely to leave us alone. It was good she did because I didn't have the ability to be nice right now. Possibly for the entire day. I nodded to Eric who grabbed Dylan. Dylan sighed, "Do you have ANY idea what this has done to my entire day, GAP?" Eric answered, "Yes."

Dylan kept going, "I'm going to have to keep him from killing warriors. The only thing I can argue on their side is she did that ridiculous space unheard chant that NEEDS to be forgotten. Can Haley make her forget that chant?" Eric snorted, "Can she? Yes. Will she? No. Just keep moving."

Dylan demanded, "SOMEONE GET ME MORE COFFEE!" Lacy added, "And some food. You can't just have coffee, babe." Dylan lamented, "I need an IV to pump coffee directly to my veins. Do you have ANY idea what this has done to my life?" Lacy laughed while Eric sighed.

Emmaline and I talked. She agreed no space unheard during training. I felt another piece of myself relax. I briefly let her into my panic this morning. My mind went to a bad place. I didn't think there was any way she was hurt in our territory. I thought a witch had taken her as revenge for Hammond or something.

Haley finally popped in, and asked Emmaline how she was. Just heal her. Was that too much to ask? They both agreed they were more worried about me than Emmaline. I linked Dylan, "The fairies are on drugs. They are both more worried about me than Emmaline." Dylan snorted, "I hear them. I have other questions. They are worried about YOU? What about ME? Is no one worried about me?"

Haley tried to hold back her smile when Emmaline told her they'd given her morphine. I linked Eric, "What does Haley mean that Emmaline will be extra fun today since she had morphine?" Eric replied, "I don't know. Haley was sedated and mixed it with alcohol. She was very chatty and flirty. It was the first time we played catch the fairy."

I asked, "What does morphine do then?" Eric frowned, "I have no clue... well... Bexley had a... reaction to drugs. But she's a full-blooded fairy." I nearly groaned, "What reaction?" Eric admitted, "She found things extra entertaining. Liam had quite the time pinning her down." I grumbled, "Great."

I linked Dylan, "Call Sam's aunt. Let her know Emmaline's teachers need to know she will be in an interesting mood. We aren't completely sure what that means." Dylan sounded harassed, "Ok... what does that even mean?"

When I explained, Dylan became jovial. Ass. Haley was trying to understand why anyone was upset with Emmaline. It wasn't Emmaline we were upset with. It was the lack of supervision. Training should've stopped the second she got hurt.

I was still holding Emmaline when Haley healed her, and I let the peaceful euphoria wash over me. It didn't seem like it took her very long and looked at the clock. Ten minutes. She'd healed Emmaline's arm in ten minutes.

I linked Eric, "Is Haley getting faster at healing?" Eric answered, "Yes. According to Bexley since Haley is no longer hiding her powers from fairy's and fully accepting of her fairy side, as well as her place as the princess, she has allowed her powers to flourish. In addition to eating regularly. Haley feels guilty when Bexley says that which tells me there is more to it." I asked, "What's the more part then?" Eric replied, "She hasn't said." Ok then. Odd.

Haley spoke in Fealish. I linked Dylan, "What did she say?" Dylan sighed, "I don't have a Fealish dictionary. I do not know. Do you know who does? His nickname is an acronym." True. Eric would know.

I linked Brad, “She doesn’t leave your sight today. Tell me you understand.” Brad agreed, “Of course, Alpha.” I watched them leave before I asked, “Eric, what did Haley say?” Eric spoke in an even tone, “Essentially she said that Emmaline shouldn’t take shit from anyone because any of us would’ve done what Emmaline did.”

I growled, “Of course she did. Dylan, get Nick on the phone.” Dylan saluted me, “Calling Alpha Kyle, because that is his name.” Nick answered, “Lucas?” Without preamble I told him, “I need you to have Drake and Peter keep a close eye on Emmaline today. There was an accident in training this morning. Haley popped into heal Emmaline. I couldn’t keep her here, and I’m...”

Nick cut me off, “Anxious about her being out of your sight. I will let my son know. Call if there’s anything else I can do.” I sighed in relief, “Thank you, Nick.” We hung up. I counted to ten in my head before I did anything else.

I turned to Dylan, “Get those warriors in my office.” Eric cut in, “Let’s use your gym first.” Haley popped to Eric asking, “Are we going home now?” Eric shook his head, “No, I’m going to fight Lucas.” Haley giggled, “Do I get to fight too?” Eric shook his head, “No, Angel.” Haley pouted, “Fine, I’ll hang out with my friend Dylan.” Eric growled.

I stalked into the gym. Pack members fled the mats from the look on my face alone. Dylan called, “Better you than me in the mood he’s in, GAP.” Eric rolled his eyes. We fought for an hour before I held my hand up. “Thank you, Eric.”

Dylan stood, “Yes, thank you GAP. Lucas, your mate is popping away from Brad, Peter, and Drake. Travis is howling with laughter watching it all unfold.” I groaned, “Why is she popping away from them?” Haley wiggled her eyebrows, “She’s in an extra fun mood.” I sighed, “Why isn’t Travis helping them?” Dylan said, “Travis said he doesn’t want to look as dumb as they do chasing the air.”

I asked, “Haley how long will she be like this?” Haley shrugged, “Every fairy is different. My best guess would be most of the day.” I asked, “Why didn’t you tell her to stay

home?” Haley look amused, “You can’t keep a fairy somewhere they don’t want to be, my lion. We simply pop away. She’s having fun, and it’s not hurting anyone.”

Brad linked me, “Emmaline popped away with Chelsea, Sam, and Lacy. We don’t know where they are.” Awesome. Haley smiled, “My advice? Enjoy it my lion, eventually it will be fun for you too.” She popped away with Eric.

My phone rang. I answered, “Nick.” Nick laughed, “It would seem your mate popped away with my son and Drake’s mates. They are... beside themselves.” I linked Emmaline. She told me their location. I informed him, “She’s at the pond your men saw her at when they were tracking her.” Nick snorted, “Alright, we are heading there now.” I couldn’t help but laugh that Emmaline though he was coming to swim with them.

Dylan was relieved, “Thank god. Your extra fun fairy finally got you to crack a smile.” I sighed, “Get those warriors to my office, I’m not asking again.” Dylan responded, “They’ve been in there since we left the gym.” I snorted, “Of course they have.” Dylan smiled, “Your dad is reading them the riot act. Your mom had to calm him down.”

We had reached the house when Nick called back. I answered, “Nick, did you get them?” Nick said, “We had them. When Ben pointed out they were supposed to be in school Emmaline popped them back. Peter linked me, they have them all there now. They are trying to convince Emmaline the classes for the rest of the day are in fact inside.”

Dylan gasped, “Ben? Excuse me but his name is Beta McAlister.” Beta McAlister laughed, “Beta Dylan, you know my name is Ben McAlister.” Dylan replied, “I do, but everyone calls you Beta McAlister. None of this Ben business. We all make our choice to go by our first name or last with our title. You chose your last name. You will always be Beta McAlister. I don’t make these rules, I just follow them people.”

Beta McAlister laughed then said, “Call if we need to track your mate again, Alpha Lucas. This is a lot more fun than the plan I had for my day.” Nick agreed, “Me too. Something tells

me, we will see her again.” Dylan clapped, “That’s the spirit! Moon goddess PLEASE let this be an all-day thing. After the rude wakeup call you allowed in my morning, I ask that you grant this to me.” I walked into my office.

My dad turned to me then took his seat. I growled, “This will NEVER happen again. What possible excuse could you have to not have someone watching her when your Gamma is participating in class?” The first warrior spoke, “It’s not excusable, and it will not happen again.”

Another warrior spoke, “We are sorry, Alpha. She’s doing so well, and she was working on fairy skills.” I growled, “I don’t care if she’s watching paint dry. YOU HAVE EYES ON HER! ARE WE CLEAR?” They all nodded. I demanded, “Get out of my sight, before I beat you all bloody.” They all fled from the room.

Dylan casually said, “If anyone cares Emmaline is apparently sewing like a possessed person. She’s made over fifty bibs and spit up rags.” I frowned, “She’s not in a class that sews.” Dylan smirked, “Lacy is. She popped to Lacy because she couldn’t sit still. You should monitor the pack link today. It’s highly entertaining. Until Lacy told them she had Emmaline, they were in a panic. It was comical.”

Emmaline was linking me about Team Fairy winning. I tried to reason with her, but she shut me out. I told Dylan, “Link Lacy. Emmaline won’t answer me anymore. Apparently, Team Fairy is kicking Team Werewolf’s butt.”

Dylan howled with laughter, “I thought today was a dead loss, but it’s been revived... with gusto.” He was quiet for a minute then resumed laughing. Someone brought him popcorn. I couldn’t stop my growl. Dylan explained, “Lacy said Emmaline cut you off because you aren’t being any fun. I guess you need to lighten up to get your mate to talk to you.”

I grabbed my wallet, “Go get in the damn car, Dylan. We are bringing her home.” Dylan stood, “I’m sure I don’t need to point this out, but it doesn’t seem like she wants to come home.” I growled, “We will convince her.” Dylan said, “Ohhh convince the extra fun fairy to play our way, I like it. I

personally think you have no shot, you no fun fuddy duddy. I could probably help, but that would also be no fun. I cannot be called no fun. It will hurt my soul.”

As I drove, I called Eric. He answered, “Lucas.” I asked, “Can Haley talk to Emmaline? She’s giving everyone at school the slip. I need her to come home.” Haley sighed, “I can talk to her.” I heard a pop. Eric said, “You probably should’ve specified more than just talking to Emmaline.” I hung up.

I got out of the car to pure chaos. Brad, Travis, Drake, and Peter were running around like chickens without heads. I asked them, “Where is she?” Sam and Chelsea were hanging back trying to laugh quietly to themselves. Brad sighed, “We don’t know, but she took Lacy with her.”

I used our bond and led them back to where Emmaline was. I could smell her, but I couldn’t find her. Did she build another treehouse? We ran around the area for fifteen minutes before Emmaline linked me. I told Dylan, “She thinks this is a game that Team Fairy is winning. Link Lacy and ask where they are.” Dylan said, “I already did that, she said she couldn’t tell me.” I groaned.

Dylan started laughing. I looked over at him and followed his line of sight. Emmaline and Lacy were up in the tree. I convinced her to come down. Emmaline popped down to us, and I could see the black part of her pupil was expanded. She was smiling though and having a great time. Dylan linked me, “Game? What game are they playing?” I said, “Something tells me we are playing catch the fairy.”

Dylan linked me, “NON-SEXY CATCH THE FAIRY? I LOVE TODAY!” I rolled my eyes. Dylan didn’t find it funny that Eric got to play the sexy version, “Of course GAP plays this game with Haley. GOD, he is the worst.” I snarked, “You are such a girl.” Dylan snorted, “You seem to imply that was an insult. I disagree. If I can be on team Haley and Emmaline, I could be a girl. They will run the world, Lucas. Mark my words.”

Dylan linked me, “Are we even surprised Haley just enabled her cousin to continue the game? GOD, I love my

fairy show.” Emmaline seemed genuinely confused that we didn’t want to play. She as nonplussed when she popped away continuing her game.

Peter groaned, “She’s been doing that all damn morning!” Chelsea said, “It’s actually pretty funny.” Peter yelled, “FUNNY? We have been chasing her all day.” Sam smiled, “We got to go with her, she’s just in a good mood guys.”

I told the group, “They are still here.” I ran inside to see Emmaline wave and pop away. I turned to Dylan, “I don’t feel them nearby anymore.” Dylan smiled, “Neither do I. Isn’t it great?” I admitted, “My link with Emmaline still feels blocked. Ask Lacy where they are.” Dylan’s grin broadened, “Apparently, that’s not allowed now that you are playing. It wasn’t cheating earlier because you weren’t in the game. Now, you don’t get hints.”

I growled, “For FUCKS sake. My wolf is pacing. I have been on edge since she was hurt this morning. With this...” Dylan smirked, “I know. Our fairy Luna is playing a dangerous game because you will catch her... eventually” I linked him, “What if I’m so worked up, I hurt her?” Dylan rolled his eyes, “I’ll stop you, but you won’t. You can’t fathom hurting her. I won’t help you cheat.”

I sent a text out to her brothers. Dustin immediately replied that she was at his house. I told everyone, “They are in Red Run at Dustin and Aubree’s house. Peter, can you link your dad to go make sure she’s ok? Tell him we are on the way.” Peter nodded.

Dylan and I took off to the car. Dylan said, “I’m even getting my cardio in today. This was not what I thought would happen when I woke up unexpectedly before my alarm, and before any sane human is awake. Everyone needs a fairy in their life.” I grumbled, “I just need to pin down the fairy I have in my life.” Dylan sounded far too happy when he responded, “Somehow my friend, I do not see that happening any time soon. Dylan is a fan of that, yes he is.”

I sighed, “Dylan, you know I already needed to claim her after this morning. She keeps popping away from me. I’ll lose

control.” Dylan waved his hand, “Yes, yes, yes. You prattle on, but I see fun. Do you think GAP doesn’t get all worked up when his fairy pops away from him? Because he does. She gets him riled up and pops away. He hasn’t hurt her; ipso facto you will not hurt Emmaline. Stop trying to ruin this for me. Relax and enjoy my show.”

We were halfway to Dustin’s when I got a call. I answered without looking, “Hello?” Nick laughed, “I am being a cheater, cheater pumpkin eater, but Emmaline and Lacy popped out. I did give them a fifteen-minute head start.” Dylan laughed.

I asked, “Cheater, cheater, pumpkin eater?” Dylan slapped his knee. Nick chuckled, “That’s what Emmaline called it. Peter linked me that they are back at school.” I pulled u turn. Dylan yelled, “WHOA there cowboy! It’s a good thing I didn’t eat lunch yet or I’d have to get the car cleaned.” I said, “Thanks Nick.” Nick admitted, “This is better than paperwork.” We hung up.

Dylan said, “Since my stomach is in the middle of the street back there... I remembered we do need lunch.” I growled, “We will get lunch when we have Emmaline.” Dylan grumbled, “Come on! Unless you are planning to hit her with iron, we can’t catch her unless she wants to stop. That’s always been the problem with fairies. You have two choices in catching one. One, you shoot them with iron. Or two, they let you catch them. Granted sometimes they want to fight, but generally speaking it’s those two options.”

I growled, “NO ONE will hurt her!” Dylan agreed, “Then we have to wait until she WANTS us to catch her. Besides, she can turn iron to water.” I growled, “She does want us to catch her, it’s a game.” Dylan laughed, “Maybe she wants you to catch her, but the rest of us... She’s having fun according to Lacy. Who is also having a grand old time by the way.”

I called my dad, “Can you cover the office? Emmaline’s... in a mood. We are having to chase her all over trying to catch her.” My dad waited a beat then laughed, “Yes, son. I’ll take care of this. I do listen to pack link on occasion. It’s been

entertaining today. You... catch my daughter in law.” He was still laughing when he hung up.

We got back to the school and ran in as Emmaline popped away with Tessa. I yelled, “TESSA! What the hell?” Lacy said, “I have a test next period. Peter and Drake ruined the fun for Sam and Chelsea. Emmaline tagged Tessa in.” Eric linked me, “Emmaline is here with Tessa and her mate. I’d advise you to stay at the school, and not head here. I’ll make sure she’s safe.”

I growled, “She’s in Eric’s territory.” Dylan begged, “PLEASE do not make us start driving there. We are wasting precious time.” I admitted, “Eric seems to believe we should stay and wait here.” Dylan yelled, “Damn it!” I frowned, “You wanted to stay here, and get food. Remember?” Dylan grumbled, “Yes, and now I get to thank GAP for it. That selfish prick for being the voice of reason, you listen to. I’m going to get us food at Al’s.”

We ate outside Lacy’s classroom. Dylan said, “Not that I’m complaining I enjoy sticking by Lacy, but why are we outside her class?” I pointed out, “Emmaline will tag Lacy back into Team Fairy as soon as she’s done with her test.” Dylan nodded, “That makes sense.”

The teacher came out and told us, “The students are done with their test. Come in Alpha, Beta, please. You can sit in the empty chairs.” I nodded and sat by Lacy. Seconds later a pop sounded as Emmaline quickly grabbed Lacy. I went for her but missed. I was painfully hard at this point.

Dylan stood, “Nothing to see here, move along students.” He dragged me out of the classroom and shoved me into the car. He happily told me, “No one needs to see your hard on. Think unsexy thoughts.” I growled, “I literally can’t. She’s spun me up so damn much.” Dylan tried not to laugh but couldn’t keep it in.

His phone buzzed. He told me, “My Beta chat is here for you today. They are at the Red Run pack house according to Beta McAlister. I still can’t believe someone called him Ben

today, the audacity.” I snorted, “Yes, the audacity to call him by his name.”

I made it to Red Run in record time. Dylan said, “Maybe I should drive. You’re going to kill us driving one hundred and forty miles an hour. She’s not in danger.” I glanced at him, “I’m driving. If she was in danger, she’d probably just pop away thinking it was some kind of game.”

Dylan chided, “You have GOT to lighten up. She’s just visiting with her sister.” I glared at him, “If Lacy had broken her arm this morning...” Dylan cut me off, “Point taken. It’s MUCH more fun in my seat. Also, Lacy can’t pop away from me, so I will never be in your shoes. I also have no plots whatsoever to dope up our special fun sized ninja fairy.” I warned, “Dylan...” He smirked, “There are no plans on plans on plans going on here. Don’t worry, she’s included in all plans I haven’t thought of.” I didn’t have the energy for that.

I pulled up to the house and shut the car door quietly. I growled at Dylan when he slammed his, “Are you TRYING to let her hear us?” Dylan chuckled, “She already smelled you; the door doesn’t matter.” He was right. I ran inside. She waved to me again then popped away. I dove for her and hit the couch she’d been sitting on. I groaned in frustration.

Sharon clicked her tongue, “The poor thing. I don’t even think she realizes how spun up you’ll be when you catch her.” I growled, “POOR THING? Poor me, not her!” Nick and Beta McAlister laughed. Nick said, “Better you than me, Lucas. I’d put a note in her chart that she can never have morphine again.”

Beta McAlister laughed, “Or that she should only be given some if absolutely necessary. This is easily the most fun workday we’ve had in ages, Nick.” Dylan clapped, “YES! More people on team give Emmaline morphine. I started a petition. Travis signed it already, everyone else is scared. The she wolves will rally around me though. They will.” I growled, “No, Dylan. Team give Emmaline more morphine is not a team we have.” Dylan smugly retorted, “I bet I could even get Haley to get me a t-shirt.” I rolled my eyes, “Of course you could.”

Dylan got in the car asking, “Where to?” I sighed, “Schools over now, hopefully she went home.” Dylan smirked, “At least she’s not popping all over Red Run. She knows this territory pretty well.” I sighed, “I was going to talk to Tom today.”

Dylan admitted, “We need to talk to your dad first.” I frowned, “Why?” Dylan sighed, “I looked over his files. Tom’s mate just disappeared.” I pointed out, “People don’t disappear.” Dylan prodded, “Which is why we need to talk to your dad. What mom abandons her pup and mate?” I frowned, “Someone who’s not really their mate, or someone who is afraid. My dad wouldn’t have let Tom keep his daughter if he thought he would hurt her.” Dylan shrugged, “We still need to know, so maybe we could get more information out of Tom.”

I growled, “Talking to him is a bit redundant, we know what we need to. I just want him to say it to my face. You’re right though, that’s a weird situation.” I changed the subject, “Any news on Alpha Raven?” Dylan nodded, “Logan emailed me information before I sent it to him... he already had it. That guy is scary. Gunner is on it, and he is positive it will confirm Alpha Raven is behind it.” I groaned, “Great.”

We got to my house, and I ran in to see my parents. Dominic was uncontrollable. I heard a pop upstairs. My dad asked, “Don’t have any stealth left do you, son?” I growled. Dylan followed me. Lacy was waiting at the bottom of the treehouse.

She led Dylan inside. He gaped, “This is surreal. I love fairy magic. Lacy and I want to move out of the main house and into a treehouse that Haley conjures for us. I will live in magical treehouse Dylanland.” I growled, “No.” Dylan grumbled, “Grumpus! Fine... But I want one of my own.” I asked, “Lacy, where is she?” Lacy said, “She’ll be right back. She had to pop Tessa to her mate.”

Emmaline popped back in staying out of my reach. Dominic and I were evaluating her. Now, it was sexy catch the fairy. I needed the damn game to end. To my astonishment Emmaline popped Dylan and Lacy away.

I growled in frustration and took off for the house. Emmaline popped to me before I made it back. She snapped herself into her Tinkerbell outfit and took off. I shredded my clothes taking off after her. Warriors linked me she was on the border of our territory and Eric's. Liam, Bexley's mate, was talking to her, keeping her in one place. Dominic was not appeased. He didn't want her talking to another male right now.

She popped away when I reached her. Liam assured me, "She's winding down. I'd say the next place is the place she wants you to catch her in. Sorry, man. I know it's rough. Enjoy the aftereffects though."

I ran away from him. I was worried about the aftereffects. I didn't want to hurt her, but I wasn't going to be in control of myself. I found her swimming laps in her sanctuary. I jumped off the bridge and grabbed her by the waist.

Things quickly escalated. Eventually, I smelled Dylan as he knocked on our door. I growled angrily at him. He linked, "Is now the wrong time to say, I told you so? Because I told you that you couldn't hurt her. You can say I'm right. It's ok." I growled, "Get out of here you smart ass know it all." Dylan snorted, "She's right. You should work on your angry Alpha growl, I barely wet my pants. Crazy fairy."

She fell asleep once we both climaxed. I pulled out of her and took in the state of our room. Hopefully, Emmaline would just snap it back. It was wrecked. I cleaned myself off and then her. I pulled the covers back onto the bed and over us. I brought her to me and fell asleep.

Her alarm went off all too soon. She actually asked what I was doing. I muttered, "What am I doing? Going with you because those incompetent morons didn't watch you, and you got hurt. That's what I'm doing." She couldn't hear me. It was too early for so many words.

I wasn't surprised Dylan came too. He was glaring at everyone in sight. I watched Emmaline swim for a minute. Then I asked Dylan, "What do you want me to do?" Dylan said, "Be a normal person so I can sleep in my bed." I

shrugged, “You can go back to bed.” Dylan snorted, “Puh-lease, where you go, I go. Is it too much to ask that at four in the freaking morning, you stay in bed?”

I told him plainly, “Until I’m certain they will watch her, no.” Brad assured me, “I’ve got the Luna, Alpha.” Dylan clapped, “Praise the goddess, back to bed.” I informed him, “We aren’t leaving. Brad can watch her tomorrow.”

Dylan sat down, “Do you just THINK of ways to be unreasonable and ruin my sleeping patterns?” I growled, “Yes, Dylan I do. I lie awake at night thinking of how to ruin your whole day.” Dylan stuck his tongue out at me, “As long as you can admit it.”

After class was over, I went to get Emmaline. I could tell she was going to pull me in the pool. It might jolt me awake, and I wanted her to be playful. Dylan had decided to be a thorn in my side and interrupt our moment.

I linked Lacy, “Get your cranky mate out of here little sister of mine whom I love dearly.” Lacy agreed, “Sure, Luc.” Lacy and several members were trying not to laugh when Dylan became enraged about being accused of not being a morning person.

Dylan linked me, “I’m sending Brad a gift basket. No, I’ll subscribe him to some monthly membership, so he gets a monthly reminder of my gratitude for covering the four a.m. trainings. My pillow felt cheated on. It practically wept when I got up this morning.” I rolled my eyes and got ready for our day.

Once Emmaline left, I linked my dad. He came into the office with my mom. He asked, “What’s up? Other than the destruction of your room?” I told him, “That’s snapped back together. Dylan and I plan to visit Tom today. We were curious about his mate.” My dad frowned, “She ran off.” My mom looked away.

Dylan linked me, “Umm.... That was weird.” I asked, “Did you look for her?” My dad nodded, “Everywhere. Tom was distraught. He held it together for his daughter, she was his

everything.” I clarified, “Our trackers lost her?” My dad nodded, “Yup, lost her, and our allies couldn’t pick her up.”

My mom suddenly found the tile on my floor too interesting. I quietly asked, “Mom?” She looked up, “What? Yes?” I asked, “How many tiles have you counted on the floor? What’s going on?” My dad turned to her asking, “Debbie?”

My mom sighed, “He wasn’t her mate.” We all stared at her. Finally, my dad asked, “What?” Debbie sighed, “She was young and in love. She’d been rejected by her mate, and she thought the pull she felt towards Tom was something. She thought that maybe he was her second chance mate.”

I pointed out, “Tom would’ve known.” My mom rolled her eyes, “He loved her too.” My dad asked, “Debbie, what did you do?” My mom admitted, “She came to me after she’d given birth. Her mate that had rejected her rescinded his rejection. She felt the bond with him again. Her wolf was cringing away from Tom’s touch, and she felt the pull to go be with her mate.”

I was appalled, “You can’t just un-reject your mate. Wasn’t she marked by Tom?” My dad said, “She was...” My mom interjected, “By her mate, Tom didn’t mark her.” I asked, “So, she just left her daughter?” My mom sighed.

Dylan asked, “Is her daughter her mates’ pup or Tom’s?” My jaw dropped. Dylan linked, “You need me, just admit it.” My mom answered, “Her mate’s.” My dad gasped, “Debbie, why did you keep her here? Does Tom know?”

My mom assured us, “Tom knows, and he loves her as if she was his own. He promised Tammy that he’d raise her as if she were his flesh and blood. He loves her, you know that Dale. Biology does not make a parent.”

My dad frowned, “The only reason you would keep her from her real father is if...” My mom sighed, “Her mate was abusive. We tried to convince her to reject him, but she couldn’t. She insisted this was the only way. I didn’t want her to go back, and Tom didn’t want her to go back. Her wolf was insistent.”

My dad said, "I would've helped her." My mom smiled, "You did. Well, our son and his allies did." I snorted, "How did we do that?" My mom looked at my dad, "I promised her as her Luna to never let her daughter know who her real father was. She made me swear an oath not to tell you, Dale. They aren't just your people. I had to do this for her, as her Luna."

My mom turned to me, "You helped kill her mate, Lucas." I yelled, "I did WHAT?" Dylan muttered, "Holy crap on a cracker..." He trailed off. It clicked for me, "No.... The Ducant Alpha? The Alpha of the Ducant's was her mate?" My mom nodded, "I don't know where she is, but she's free now. I hope she will come visit."

My dad announced, "I'll find her." I said, "I'll help you dad." My dad shook his head, "No, your mother is right. It was her job as the Luna to look out for the needs of this pack, but it was my job to protect my members. Gina needs to know."

My mom yelled, "NO! There are so many reasons why not Dale Lyons, but no. I swore an oath. We cannot tell her. Her mother can, but I would do everything in my power to not let that happen." I asked, "Why mom? She deserves to know."

My mom demanded, "To know what? That this family played a part in killing her sperm donor, who was a sick twisted mad man that spat on everything werewolves stand for? That the little girl she befriended in Red Run and has kept in touch all these years was abused by her father? Allison McAlister is Gina's friend; this information would ruin that. Why should she know that he would've let her be abused because she was a girl and not a boy? NO! I want better for Gina. She has been through enough at the hands of that wretched Ducant Alpha. Let her be happy!"

My dad spoke softly, "Debbie..." My mom stood, "I said no, Dale. Your vows are mine and mine are yours. We are going to help Gina. I already have a list of therapists that Haley gave me, and I have been to see Gina since she was brought home. We will let her live here in our pack, and we will keep her safe. That's what we will do."

I cautioned her, “She may not want to stay. Tom isn’t going to live.” My mom winced, “I already took her to see him. She was angry with him, and she deserved to say her piece.” My dad asked, “Angry?” My mom nodded, “She told him if he’d told us or Lucas she’d have been found sooner. She might not have been hurt or seen her mate hurt. She lost their first pup from the abuse. She’s sad because he’s her father, but she understands. Even Tom understands. I will NOT have any of you upset Gina further. Am I clear?” Crystal.

My dad hugged her, “You make so damn proud, woman.” I agreed, “Understood, mom.” I tried to lighten the mood, “I suppose you can keep secrets like you said.” She snorted, “Look at you trying to make me feel better.” She tapped my cheek lightly then took my Dad’s hand. They left together.

Dylan stood, “Off to see Tom.” I admitted, “We have a problem.” Dylan moaned, “Great.... What now?” I pointed out, “The Ducant Alpha’s true heir is in our pack, but what if he has a love pup? Or if his mate gave him another pup.” Dylan said, “If she did, it wasn’t a boy. He would’ve groomed him to take over. If there is another pup it’s possible, but it’s also possible the pup did not live if she existed. He could have a love pup though.”

I said, “We need to look into that. They could help their uncle with revenge.” Dylan nodded, “We can try Lucas, but we won’t know. He’s not listed on a birth certificate for any pup. We already had him looked into, and we didn’t know about Gina.” I frowned, “I fear this will come back to us in some way. Maybe not now, but in twenty plus years.” Dylan frowned, “Maybe. It could be nothing.” I disagreed, “Doesn’t feel like nothing.” I knew he agreed.

We walked down to the dungeons in silence. I heard weeping as soon as I opened the door. Tom looked up, “Alpha Lucas, just kill me. I’ll tell you whatever you want to know. I hurt my little girl; she lost my grandpup. I don’t want to live. All I wanted was to protect her.”

I sneered, “You had sex with witch to protect your daughter? You and I have different versions of protection.” Tom frowned, “I thought they just needed your tie. I was

bewitched. The woman I saw at the school that night was my Tammy. My beautiful Tammy.”

I sighed, “Emmaline saw you as me with this witch.” Tom said, “I’m sorry, I didn’t know that.” Understanding crept into me. If Emmaline was gone, and I thought I’d seen her I’d react how Tom did. Dylan linked me, “Don’t EVEN tell me you want to give him mercy.”

I looked at him and replied, “I understand him, don’t you?” Dylan answered, “Yes, but fuck understanding. Serious Dylan is very upset about the school dance. You were going to be crowned king. Among other serious things that happened, that did not. I am PUT OUT at the highest of levels about it.” Tom said, “I really did want the best for Gina. I never meant to hurt her.”

I pointed out, “You betrayed our pack the moment she left.” Tom hung his head, “Never anything big. They said they’d give me Gina back if I gave them Emmaline and Chelsea. I couldn’t do it. I’m a horrible father, but I couldn’t. Gina wouldn’t have wanted me to do that, and Chelsea... she’s pregnant. I tried to keep them away from the girls.”

Dylan spoke, “You gave them our border patrols to plant a holoport to take away the Luna.” Tom put his head in his hands, “That’s not what they were supposed to be doing. Alpha Hammond must have known I wouldn’t let them do that. They were just supposed to let Grayson see his mother.” Dylan sighed.

I asked, “Do you have any information that can help us?” Tom glanced up, “With what? Hammond is dead.” I reminded him, “Grayson and several witches got away.” Tom shrugged, “Without Hammond, they won’t come back. Grayson won’t be too upset that his mom is dead. She’s more of a fun aunt, who was more of a mess than fun. His aunt raised him. If she died, he’d be enraged, and do something stupid.” Dylan told me, “His aunt is still in Red Run.”

Tom nodded, “Yes, she told him not to get involved. That his father wouldn’t have wanted this for him. His father hated Christy. I think he just wanted his mother around more. He

missed her, but she wasn't right in the head anymore." I asked, "Was Andie the one waiting outside the school to take Emmaline the night of the dance?"

Tom nodded, "Yes, Grayson was supposed to get her outside to talk." I wondered aloud, "You really didn't know they planned for Emmaline to see me with someone else?" Tom admitted, "I didn't really want to know, Alpha. I just did what I had to do to keep my little girl as safe as I could. I made mistakes, big ones that cost her so much. At the time, I thought it was best."

I told him, "I can't let you live." Tom nodded, "I know. I lived for my Tammy and my little girl. She's not so little anymore. She's fierce like her mother, my Gina is. She has her mate, and he swore to me he'd never let anything bad happen to her again. Just... for her, please get him some better training. Hammond wouldn't let anyone get too strong in his pack. Gina's mate could be a top warrior, but Hammond held him back. Please, Alpha."

I didn't know why he asked. Everyone was trained here. I told him, "He will be properly trained. They will be welcome in this pack if that's what she wants. I will protect her as her Alpha." Tom nodded, "Thank you." I snapped his neck quickly.

Dylan said, "I thought you were going to torture him within an inch of his life." I admitted "If his story wasn't so damn relatable, I would have. I don't have pups, but I've seen Eric with his. He's smarter and he would make better choices, but he'd do anything for them. Tom was misguided in how tried to help her, but he was a father above all. He loved Tammy, and he never met his mate. Tell me you wanted to torture him after hearing all that."

Dylan sighed, "During my wedding I did... I still do a little. He was going to hurt Chelsea and Lacy." I said with finality, "He's dead now. Let's get back to work."

We worked steadily throughout the week. Gunner confirmed Alpha Raven was behind the contract on Chelsea. He was also able to unearth the plans for Christopher and

Sebastian. To say Nick was enraged was an understatement. He was on simmer until a pack confirmed it through non hacking channels.

Dylan said, "I feel for Beta McAlister right now. I have been in those shoes, and it's not an easy task containing your Alpha." Eric's pack confirmed the information next, and our pack followed. There was no doubt it was Alpha Raven. His ultimate goal was getting Luna Marissa.

We all got on a conference call. Nick was irate. He snarled, "Marissa is MINE!" I agreed, "Luna Marissa is not going anywhere she's yours, Nick. We will keep her and Chelsea safe." I heard Luna Marissa assure him, "Nick, I am yours and no one else's. We have three beautiful boys, and a grandpup on the way. I am yours." Alpha Kyle growled, "MINE!"

Dylan linked me, "Beta McAlister said she has to be with Alpha Kyle at all times right now to keep him calm. He's been going into rages when she's not around." I sighed, "Sounds about right." Dylan said, "Poor, Beta McAlister. I gotta pour one out for my buddy."

I countered, "Poor Nick. I know it's difficult for you all, but I understand the emotions he feels that there is someone out there trying to take his mate from him." Dylan said, "You have NO IDEA the hell Beta McAlister is in right now. It's his best friend and his Alpha. It's our job to mitigate your anger alongside your Luna. The poor man is probably getting no sleep trying to keep upsetting situations on Alpha Kyle's plate. There are always those unknown situations though. That are not actually upsetting in the slightest, but in your Alpha's current mood it's a def con one situation. Or when people do stupid things like not watch the Luna while she's training. You know, as one does. It's hard being a Beta."

I complimented, "You all excel at it though." Dylan rolled his eyes, "It's LITERALLY in our blood." I wasn't going to say anything comforting so I left it. We came up with a plan to attack Sunday. The guys agreed to meet in Red Run tomorrow to finalize everything while the girls had their pup shower.

Luna Marissa declared, “You will NOT have that meeting in the pack house. That’s where the pup shower is.” Dylan said, “Our special fun sized ninja fairy calls it a baby shower.” I stared at him. He shrugged, “What? I felt that was a necessary tidbit to share.”

Nick ignored Dylan saying, “Fine, we have it in the house.” Luna Marissa disagreed, “No, there’s a different meeting in the main house.” Nick sighed, “Yes, of course, the group therapy session. Where do you want us to go? The yard?”

I linked Dylan, “Group therapy?” Dylan answered, “She has a group she runs for abused werewolves. Be that family, mates, any type of relationship. They meet at their house, so no one sees them in case they are embarrassed. She’s such a kindhearted soul.”

Dustin spoke up from the Red Run end, “We can have it at our house. We are close, and our house is big enough.” I heard Beta McAlister sigh. Dylan linked me, “Aww, stay strong Beta buddy! I’ll just get his support going in our Beta Chat.”

Nick growled, “I don’t want to be that far away from you, Marissa.” Marissa spoke softly, “It’s ten minutes, Nick. It’s five minutes if you shift and run.” Eric threw out, “Haley and Blade will be at the shower.”

Haley interjected, “Haley will be at the shower, Blade will be outside. Apparently, I tested him too much with the it’s a small world ride.” Luna Marissa chuckled, “There, you see? A Hackura guard will be on the perimeter. You could not possibly ask for more.” Nick grumbled, “The army. If you can get the Hackura army here I will calm down.” Marissa snorted.

Eric mused, “I’m sure we could get some of them.” Luna Marissa yelled, “Jesus Christ! It’s a pup shower, not a ticking time bomb. This is about our soon to be daughter in law when Peter asks her to have their mating ceremony. By the way son, GET ON THAT! I want to call her my daughter. I don’t have one, and unlike the Hackura queen; I’m not willing to pop out eight pups for the chance to have one. She didn’t even get to meet her daughter until Haley turned thirteen.”

Haley laughed. Peter yelled, “MOM!” She snorted, “Don’t you use that tone with me. Have your mating ceremony, you already got her pregnant.” Peter grumbled, “She wants to see if she wants to have a wedding reception.”

Beta McAlister said, “For the love of the goddess, please no. Alpha Eric’s reception was ended by fairies trying to take and mate with his wife. Beta Dylan’s reception ended in a battle. Can we just stick to our traditional mating ceremonies?”

Haley sounded scandalized, “HEY!” Eric laughed, “That did happen, Angel.” Haley said, “Our reception was beautiful, and it’s not my fault the full-blooded fairies lost. It was fun. The added drama would be what the fairies considered a GIGANTIC success!” Dylan snorted.

Beta McAlister admitted, “It was a beautiful reception. Very uh... pink. Lots of pink. Barbie would’ve been jealous.” Haley asked, “Who is Barbie?” Her mom should be punched.

Drake cut in before Eric could lose his mind, “Peter, I was supposed to tell you that Chelsea told Sam and Lacy she just wants a mating ceremony. She didn’t want to pressure you by telling you in case you didn’t want to have one just yet.” Peter yelled, “What? Why would she think that? I wanted to have our ceremony the second I found her.”

Luna Marissa told him, “Pregnancy hormones are a powerful thing that you will never understand. That is wonderful news! I’ll start planning, Peter ask her so she and I can plan together.” Peter lamented, “Again, I was not the hold up here people!” Nick laughed, “Get used to it, son.”

We all agreed to meet in Red Run right before the shower so we could head out together. I linked Dylan, “Text Beta McAlister. Have him link Nick to let him know we are offering to assist his warriors to ease his mind at the shower. Brad and Emmaline’s other four guards will be there. We could spare ten more.” Dylan nodded, “He will send you a fruit basket and whiskey. I won’t be able to stop him.” I snorted.

Beta McAlister was thankful for the offer and even took us up on it. I sent the men I had in mind to spend the night in Red Run. I told Emmaline's guard they'd be going in the morning. We explained to Emmaline and Lacy what had been going on. Emmaline seemed excited to be included in the plans.

Dylan linked me, "Look at how excited your little fairy is that you explained something to her. I want to cry a little seeing my little boy turn into a man." I rolled my eyes at him and took Emmaline to our room. I vaguely recalled speaking to Emmaline when the alarms went off, but I not what we said. I woke up and got ready when my alarm went off.

Dylan was already downstairs when my phone dinged. Eric had sent a group text saying Haley had a bad feeling. Dylan groaned, "Goodie. They all had such great reactions at the wedding when she said that." I ordered, "Put the pack warriors on alert. Border patrols running until my dad tells them otherwise. Pups and non-fighters stay inside as a precaution."

My dad came around the corner asking, "What's going on?" I explained, "Haley has a bad feeling. It's not too bad yet." My dad nodded seriously, "We will be on alert here. You stay safe, and you keep your sister and Emmy safe too." I assured him, "I will." He looked at Dylan, "You too, Dylan. Keep them and yourself safe. Your dad called they were delayed and couldn't make the wedding, but they are still coming back."

Dylan sarcastically replied, "Are they? I guess they lost my number. Or Travis', you know... their son who is still in high school? How long has it been since they've seen my little brother?" I winced answering, "Coming up on four years." Dylan snapped his fingers, "Yes, that's it."

My dad sighed, "They are misguided, but good people." Dylan said, "You know I respect you sir, but I don't agree. They abandoned my little brother. I've heard people argue they abandoned me too, but I was older. I had to get Travis through high school and help Lucas run the pack. I'm not saying they didn't deserve a vacation, but they could've come back. Hell, they could've made my wedding. Travis' first shift comes to

mind. Big moments they just missed without even an apology.”

My dad sighed, “I know they hurt you, but... your father is my best friend. He did everything he could to help locate Lacy. That’s part of what kept them away.” Dylan didn’t care, “Lacy is here now, and they still aren’t.” My dad hugged Dylan, “Just give them a chance when they come home.” My dad left.

Dylan waited for a second then snorted, “Yeah, when they come home. My firstborn will probably be five with siblings.” I clapped him on the back, “I’m sorry, man.” Dylan lamented, “I don’t understand. I don’t understand why they just left and didn’t even bother to be there for Travis. I was grown up, and we were running the pack, but Travis... they will NOT come back here and hurt my little brother. My father will be THRILLED to meet Serious Dylan for all of five seconds before I get them.” I frowned, “They won’t hurt Travis. We will protect him. I am his Alpha, after all.” Dylan nodded.

Emmaline linked me. I told Dylan, “Look alive, funny man. Your fairy fun is incoming.” Dylan shook himself and perked up, “Ah, yes. Off to my fairy show.” Emmaline popped us in. Dylan was back to his usual self, talking about time wasted driving. I didn’t mind popping, but there was something freeing about running in wolf form.

Eric caught my attention linking me, “I don’t think we should leave.” I asked, “Do we have a choice?” Eric snorted, “Yes, we do.” I shrugged. I wasn’t sure what got him out the door, but we left. We shifted and ran to Dustin and Aubree’s house.

Eric was anxious and pacing the second he shifted back. Jackson said, “It’s alright, Eric.” Eric growled, “Is it? We should go back.” Nick snorted, “My wife will kill us all.” Eric disagreed, “Just you, Marissa loves me.” Nick laughed, “She does have a soft spot for you. It’s only gotten softer since hearing your son is our grandpups mate... which is just something.”

Eric reminded him, “Your youngest has his mate too.” Nick smiled, “She popped to him the other day. Tucker was beside

himself because Brooke refused to pop back for thirty minutes. Chris growled at Sebastian when he got near her. Marissa is tickled pink over the two of them. Chris pouts when she leaves.”

Dylan chimed in, “He’s already possessive.” Beta McAlister smirked, “Naturally, he’s an Alpha after all.” We went over our plans until Peter went rigid. He snarled, “Chelsea.” Drake stood seconds later yelling, “SAM!”

Nick growled, “Sebastian is linking me for help. Witches have him and Christopher.” He sprinted out the door. Dustin grabbed his keys and jumped into his car with Ryan. Eric and I shifted with everyone following close behind.

Warriors linked me, “A pup just killed the witch holding Alpha Kyle’s pups. Luna Emmaline popped to the boys; Sebastian got away. She just had the pup pop out with Christopher.” I linked Nick, “Your sons are safe.” He howled in relief.

I linked Dylan, “You’ll love this. Brooke popped in and saved Christopher.” Dylan replied, “SHUT UP! TELL ME EVERYTHING! A pup?! Pups are saving our literal asses? Lacy was popped out with your mom to the Hackura realm. Chelsea and Sam are there too with someone named Doris.”

I linked Nick, “The pregnant women are in the Hackura realm. I’m going to guess EJ popped Chelsea where he knew it would be safe.” Nick responded, “Eric told me.” I came into the clearing. Eric veered off heading towards Haley and Blade.

I saw Emmaline attacking rogues. My warriors were keeping as many away from her as possible. She had just drowned one while another was sneaking up on her. I let Dominic tear through them as I jumped over her and into the fray. Once we’d contained the threat, I turned to see her eating. Good. Emmaline broke down what happened with the Kyle boys.

I linked Dylan, “ACID TO WATER?” Dylan replied, “I love it, Lucas. I love it SO MUCH! A pup melted a witch’s skin off... for her mate. That’s terrifyingly adorable... Nope

it's just adorable." It was going well until Alpha Raven appeared in front of our group.

I linked Eric, "He's got rogues, but there are no pack members with him." Eric gritted out, "On your right, he has ten pack members." I looked over and growled. I asked, "Couldn't they have made this simple?"

Eric answered, "No, now we have to question who in the pack knew about this. His children are in the dungeons in silver cuffs, it looks like Daniel fought him." I looked around, "How do you know that?" He replied, "I texted Haley's brother's before we shifted since we thought it was Alpha Raven attacking. Ubbe and Benjamin found his family."

Peter's wolf was forcing his way forward to protect his mom. Alpha Raven didn't even acknowledge him; his eyes were on Nick. Nick seemed the picture of calm. Dylan linked, "That's the calmest he's spoken any time this week we've heard those words." He was right.

I saw Alpha Raven give a signal, and I heard the darts being fired. I dove on Emmaline; Eric did the same. Emmaline and Haley were both confused, I saw Sharon was on the ground being guarded by Garrett. I explained they had iron darts. Alpha Raven frowned. His gaze sharpening on Haley and Emmaline. He wanted them to be without their powers most of all.

I linked Eric, "He watched them, Eric. Emmaline and Haley are his goal with the iron darts." Eric growled, "I'll rip his spine from his body. It's also a miscalculation not to want Sharon; she's good." The fairies popped inside.

The rogues attacked. We were fighting them when Dustin and Ryan pulled up. Magic was thick in the air as Dustin countered their witches magic with his own. I linked Eric, "How are none of their spells affecting us?" Eric answered, "Haley and Emmaline's magical protections. If they start using dark magic, we might be in some trouble."

I heard pops. Eric linked me, "They went after the wolves with iron darts." I growled, "Heaven forbid they stay the fuck inside, and not get near the iron." Eric snorted,

“Unfuckinglikely, Lucas.” I grumbled, “I can dream, let me have my dream.”

I heard a whimper that I knew. My blood ran cold, that was Dylan. I turned to my left knowing that’s where Dylan always was when we fought. A witch was using dark magic trying to force him to shift, or to at least cause him pain. I wasn’t sure. He was still taking out rogues, but he didn’t see the witch pull a knife. I didn’t think, I ran and jumped in front of him.

I heard Eric’s howl of anger, but I couldn’t focus when I felt pain burst into my side. I couldn’t hold my scream as I shifted back to human form to spare Dominic the pain. Dylan shifted back yelling, “Lucas... no! Bad wolf! Why did you do that?” I looked at him, “You’re my best friend.” Dylan’s eyes filled with tears.

He gathered himself and yelled “GAP! We need our special fun sized ninja fairy and her healing hands! Right now!” Dylan held me, “Don’t you die on me, brother. You have to be the steady uncle in my pups’ lives.” I tried to get my breath back, “It’s fun Uncle.” Dylan snorted, “Please, I’m the fun one. You have to be the serious, helpful one.” I laughed weakly quickly stopping because it hurt.

I heard Emmaline scream, but I couldn’t see her. I wasn’t sure what happened but the next thing I knew Emmaline and Haley were next to me. Emmaline’s eyes were fiercely blue. There was no pupil left, just two blue circles.

Emmaline’s gaze cut to the witch who was staring at her in terror. I vaguely heard Haley taunted the witch. I whispered, “Dylan... can...” Haley cut me off, “Dylan is suffering from the effects of the dark magic. He even overpowered it to shift and held you which had to cause him a great deal of pain.”

I looked at Dylan. He shrugged, “It was but a mild irritation. Haley you can heal him, can’t you?” Haley put a hand on his shoulder, “Of course I can, it won’t even take me too long. I can heal you too, my friend Dylan.” Dylan shrugged, “I am feeling better since Emmaline is doing... whatever it is Emmaline is doing while GAP kills anything

that glances in any of our directions. I knew he cared about me somewhere in that pinky toe of his.”

I laughed letting myself float away in the peaceful euphoria. A voice filled the silence, “Hello, my child.” I whirled and went to my knees, “Moon Goddess, Selene.” She put a hand on my shoulder, “Rise.” I asked, “Could Haley not heal me?” Selene laughed, “Of course she can. I gave nothing but the best for you and my child Eric. Powerful women were needed for powerful Alphas.”

I asked, “How can I serve you, Moon Goddess?” Selene smiled, “I just used this moment to officially meet you. I love all my children, and I so rarely get to meet them. Your pups will be strong just like their parents. Stay vigilant and weary of the enemies you create. Down the road it will be important to people who are important to you. I, of course, will try to alter my children’s path, but I fear some souls will not be swayed. I will try all I can. I do not want any of my children to suffer as I see this path they are so set on.”

I gulped, “Will my pups suffer?” She shook her head, “Your pups will have trials, but it is not for you or your pups that I make this request.” I admitted, “I don’t understand then.” She smiled sadly, “I am afraid I cannot say more. Just keep a watchful eye. You won’t be able to prevent it all, but maybe you can spare some pain. Your Luna will take the situation hard. She is a such sensitive soul, and she loves fiercely.”

I nodded, “I will be watchful.” Selene stated, “More trouble is coming soon. Your mate is strong, it’s why I chose her for you.” I growled, “How do I protect her?” She smiled sadly, “Her goddess believes she needs this trial. She will need you, but she will do this her way.” I growled, “David.” Selene smiled, “You are so smart, my child. You need to wake up now. Your Emmaline needs you.”

I opened my eyes. I sat up to see Emmaline standing with her back to me. Both of her brothers were beside her. The witch who had stabbed me was in what appeared to be a riptide that was suspended above the ground.

Dylan linked me, “Dude, Emmaline has been almost drowning the witch but refusing to let her ACTUALLY drown until you woke up. Don’t piss off our Luna, man. Seriously, if she and Haley decide to take over the world, let’s just let them. They could do it; I’m telling you. She got pissed and Haley brought the rain. She used it to kill everyone else. Except Alpha Raven, and Emmaline literally delivered him to Alpha Kyle’s feet. Emmaline has lost it. Haley did Haley things with those Emmaline didn’t see.”

I stood and wrapped my arms around Emmaline. She turned sobbing into my chest. I watched as the witch died, she actually seemed relieved. I linked Dylan “Was it my imagination, or was that witch relieved to drown?”

Dylan snorted, “No, no... Did you not hear me? Your mate wouldn’t let her die. She kept almost letting her die, brought her up for air, and then dragged her back down. I even tried to get Emmaline to crack a smile by calling her a Pokémon. No dice, Lucas. It was very dreary and serious. I did not care for it.”

I linked Eric, “Any casualties on our end?” Eric replied, “No.” I looked at him. He had actually ripped out Alpha Raven’s spine to kill him. Dylan said, “Oh yeah, and GAP went full Raging Predator Monster. Let’s just say he doesn’t like it when people shoot iron darts at our special fun sized ninja fairy. We might need to get him into counseling for his rage. I’ve goggled such groups. There are no spine ripper groups, but we could fudge a bit to get him accept into a different one.” I rolled my eyes.

Emmaline’s sobs trailed off, and she passed out cold. I caught her yelling, “Shit!” Haley assured me, “She’s alright. She went through such extreme emotions very rapidly, and she used a lot of power. She’ll need food when she wakes up. Let’s all be glad she didn’t turn to water.” Dylan got on his knees, “Dear moon goddess, never again. ANYTHING but her water fairy period.”

Peter pleaded, “Please bring Chelsea and Sam back here, Princess Luna Connors.” Haley said, “It’s just Haley, I’m friends with your mates. I’ll be right back.” She popped and

was back in seconds. Drake asked, “Where are they?” Haley snorted, “I’m not popping them into the yard. I popped them to your pack hospital. Go on you two!” They took off.

Haley turned to her mate, “Eric, EJ is refusing to leave Chelsea.” Eric snorted, “Of course he is.” Haley continued, “Which means the other two refuse to leave.” Haley pulled out her phone and spoke in Fealish.

Brooke, Christopher, and Maribella popped in seconds later. Christopher walked over to his dad calling out excitedly, “Brooke can melt people’s skin off, dad. How COOL is that?!” Nick laughed, “That’s... something, son. Can you give Brooke back to her mom, please? Your mother needs to see your smiling face.” Christopher sighed, “I guess. Bye, Brooke. Thanks for melting the skin off that witch for me.” He handed Brooke back to Maribella. Haley and Maribella smiled at him before the latter popped away. Christopher sighed and stomped into the house.

I couldn’t stop my laugh. Dylan sighed dramatically, “Young love, it’s so adorable.” He punched me in the arm. I yelled, “HEY!” Dylan asked, “What?” Eric raised an eyebrow then linked me, “No one but me saw that.”

I linked Dylan, “What in the actual hell?” Dylan angrily told me, “Don’t take a knife, bullet, or any sort of weapon for me. That’s my job for you!” I growled, “I will take whatever I like from you. You’re my best friend too.” Dylan made eyes at me, “Aww, shucks... but really Lucas. Don’t do that to me. My heart stopped.”

Lacy slammed into Dylan yelling, “WHAT THE HELL HAPPENED? Why is Emmaline unconscious? Why did I feel pain from you? Not even a little, a lot of pain! Me and the little peanut were worried sick! Are you hurt?”

Dylan linked me, “All you dude.” Dylan spoke out loud, “Lucas will tell you.” Eric laughed. I opened my mouth, but nothing came out. Haley explained, “A stupid witch bitch used dark magic to try to take down Dylan. Dylan still took down rogues, but the witch bitch was going to stab him. Lucas dove in front of the knife. I healed him. Emmaline used a shit ton of

power to kill the vast majority of the forces remaining. Sharon and I killed those she missed with our wolves.

My mom gaped at me before yelling, “You were STABBED?” I assured her, “I’m fine, mom.” She hugged me awkwardly and pulled Emmaline’s hair out of her face. “Poor Emmy.” I begrudgingly admitted, “She’s alright.” My dad linked, “STABBED?! What did I say before you left?” I groaned, “Not now.” He growled, “STABBED!” Great, just great.

Nick shot me a look before saying, “Let’s move this over the hospital.” We all went inside. Nick broke our silence again, “Fairies are fun, yet terrifying.” Beta McAlister snorted, “Full blooded fairies are idiots. Have we said that? Sharon was drawing the water from their bodies to petrify and kill them; Emmaline was drowning them in an actual riptide. Haley decided that wasn’t crazy enough and had Emmaline draw the water from EVERYTHING around her. Then Haley made a torrential downpour so Emmaline could kill them faster while she took the air from people and created a tornado. I don’t know that I want to see what happens if they add fire into the equation.”

Lacy mused, “It’s something. King Aiden has literal fire hands.” Eric told us, “That is a new development, all thanks to my wife.” Beta McAlister snorted. Cassie popped to Eric. He smiled at her and rubbed her nose with his.

Dylan bemoaned, “I NEVER have my camera ready at the right moment. DANG IT!” I rolled my eyes. I asked, “Haley, do you need to check Emmaline out to make sure she’s ok?” Haley snapped hundreds of pizza boxes taking at least fifteen for herself.

She told me, “Emmaline is ok. She will wake up soon, and then she will eat all of these boxes I’m putting beside you. Then you should probably get her somewhere private.” Dylan snorted, “Of course he will sex out of this.” Haley laughed, “Eventually, she could be mad first though. I can’t really say. Eric’s never really gotten hurt when we fought together. She saw him injured. I was plenty mad when you all ran into that

trap with Alpha Hammond, and he got hurt. Alexander healed him before I saw what was done though.”

I was dumbfounded, “Mad?” Haley raised an eyebrow, “She got a broken arm in training, and you lost your shit. You were stabbed, and without me you would’ve needed surgery to live.” I complained, “If you’re going to be logical, fair, and shit, I can’t talk to you.” She laughed.

Eric teased, “Would I be in trouble, Angel?” Haley blanched, “Trouble? Trouble would be the least of your fucking problems. There’s no getting stabbed, or I’ll kick your fucking ass. After I go full fairy Hackura princess on so many people’s asses. They would RUE the day they hurt you.”

Nick laughed until Luna Marissa walked in. She chided, “There’s no laughing, Nick. You’d be in his shoes too. I would be so upset with you. Is poor Emmaline is she alright?” Nick assured her, “It’s just emotional overload.” Beta McAlister’s wife, Esther, came in behind her.

Luna Marissa said, “Poor thing. She made Esther get me inside. She is deceptively strong, threw me right into Esther’s arms.” Nick growled, “Why were you outside?” Marissa gave him serious side eye, “I can fight, you know? I was running to our pups.”

Dustin pointed out, “If you’d gotten close enough the witch could’ve taken you away. I’m sure there’s a holoport out there. That’s why Evie didn’t want you outside. She’s all about women fighting in the trenches, which I blame the princess for.”

Haley snarked, “I don’t recall being around when she killed five rogues on her own. I also don’t recall her needing to be saved today. You’re fucking welcome, Dustin Bishop. Will SOMEONE get on team let’s kill the dark witch bitches.”

Nick said, “Your sister in law is a witch.” Haley snorted, “Two are. Neither are dark witches. I said DARK witch bitches.” Blade laughed. I linked, “Two?” Dylan replied, “Lisa, Arion’s ex-mate. She considers that witch her sister in law too.” Of course, she did.

Out loud Dylan agreed, “I mean... maybe the ones in Missouri.” Dustin yelled, “COME ON!” Dylan shrugged, “They have been giant pains in our asses lately. When the special fun sized ninja fairy doesn’t like you; you gots ta go.” Haley smiled, “Thank you, my friend Dylan.” I rolled my eyes.

Nick said, “I guess I need to call Alpha Raven’s Beta.” Eric assured him, “Caleb is there dealing with it. Haley’s brothers were managing that side of things while we were fighting. We will handle it since I killed Alpha Raven.”

Nick sighed, “Only because I was going to let the werewolf council decide his fate. I was waiting for him to make a move.” Eric smirked, “I distinctly saw his foot twitch.” Nick laughed, “My granddaughter is going to have her hands full.” Haley agreed, “Our sons are just like their dad. I’ll have to give little Elise pointers.” Dylan clapped, “Please do.” Eric rolled his eyes.

Alexander popped to Haley. Peter came out announcing, “Elise is here.” Nick’s family filed into the hospital room. Drake came out twenty minutes later. “Tristan McAlister is on the scene.” His family hugged him and went into their room to see him.

Emmaline stirred in my arms. Haley pointed to the pizza beside me. I whispered, “Baby girl, you need to wake up and eat.” Emmaline sat straight up and hugged me like her life depended on it. Dylan prompted her again, “Eat, little fairy who can’t decide if she’s Queen Else or a Pokémon. OHHH She’s a combo!” I snorted.

Dylan teased, “We need you around in case someone else who needs to drown in a riptide appears out of thin air.” Emmaline laughed and wiped her tears. She ate twenty-five of the pizza’s that Haley brought over for her. I told her while she was eating her friends’ pups had been born. She insisted we all go see them before we popped out.

When went to see Chelsea first, EJ was cooing at Elise. He was popping to whoever was closest to her at the time. He’d even conjure her a bottle when she cried. Haley gave some

Fealish blessing, and then we shuffled to Sam and Drake's room.

Tristan strongly resembled his father. Drake was beaming with pride. Sam looked a little tired but happy. Haley repeated her Fealish blessing for Tristan. I linked Eric, "What is she saying?" Eric explained, "She's blessing them, and helping them sleep." I asked, "She can do that?" Eric nodded, "Yes, she can."

Emmaline popped our group home. She then popped me to her sanctuary. She clung to me, "I was so scared, Lucas." I assured her, "I'm ok." She started crying, "You can't do that to me. I need you." I rubbed her back, "I need you too, baby girl. I was told you'd be mad at me."

Emmaline shrugged. I wiped her tears, "No more of this, I'm ok." She cried, "I can't help it. I'm not mad at you, I don't even have it in me. I just need you to be ok. If you're not ok, I'm not ok. I was so not ok. I lost my mind a little bit."

I disagreed, "I was filled in, you did nothing wrong." She said, "I don't even feel bad. She tried to take you from me, you're mine." Then her lips were on mine. She popped us back to our room, and I made love to her all night long.

Game On

Emmaline's mind cleared. I sat up remembering Lucas had been hurt. I quickly realized I was on his lap. Relief filled me as I clung to him. He was my lifeline. I don't care what my dad said, he was wrong. If I didn't have Lucas, I would not be ok. I sure as hell wasn't going to keep on uniting people without him. How could I bring souls together if I was missing half of mine? Haley had it right with her twice light bound stuff. If there was no Lucas, I'd follow him in death. I wasn't going to be half a person. Maybe that worked for full fairy's but not for me.

Haley shot me an encouraging smile pointing to the pizza beside me. I realized I was ravenous. I just kept eating; not sure if I was emotional and eating my feelings away, or if I was replenishing myself after using my fairy powers.

I practically flew into Chelsea's room once I was done eating. EJ was so adorable with Elise. She would turn her head towards him, and he would simply pop to whoever was closest to her. He conjured her a bottle and binky when she started to cry. It was the cutest thing I'd ever seen.

We left Chelsea's room, and went to see Sam. They had named their son Tristan. He was so sweet. I told her, "Sam, he's so cute!" Sam smiled at Drake, "He looks just like his daddy." I smiled amending, "With your hair." She smiled.

I asked, "How are you doing?" She yawned, "A little tired, but really happy." I kissed her forehead, "We will get out of your hair. I'm so happy for you and Chelsea." She squeezed my hand, and I led us into the hallway. I waved to Haley and popped our group home.

I took Lucas to my sanctuary to center myself. I took Lucas because I needed him with me to feel completely centered. This was not a repeatable adventure. I needed him more than he could ever know.

I was so tired emotionally and physically exhausted. Clearly, if Lucas was hurt the only person who could contain me was Haley. Something told me she wouldn't even try. I couldn't even release the witch when my brothers asked me to. I really think the only person who could've done anything about me was Haley, as my princess. Apparently, her murder-y side wasn't just her Hackura blood.

I had never understood my cousin more than in that moment. She was a great person, but she was ruthless in defense of those she loved. Everything snapped into place for me. I would much rather kill fifty people if it meant Lucas didn't get hurt. I was fine with that trade off. Anyone coming to hurt me or mine was going to die. End of story.

Lucas was consoling me thinking I was upset I'd done something wrong. I knew I hadn't. It didn't even remotely bother me to kill those people. Nor did it phase me that I made that witch suffer until Lucas was ok. She's lucky he was ok, or I'd have thought of something more awful to do to her. I had no idea what that would even be, but I'd do it.

I looked into Lucas' eyes. My mind kept replaying him lying there, stabbed. I needed to get better with my powers. My light felt more connected to me than it had before. I wanted to keep that going. I needed to keep my physical training going because I needed to be ready for David. Maybe I could even take the fight to him instead of waiting. Our badass girl gang could take him.

I'd talk to Haley. Until David was dealt with everything needed to be upped in intensity. This was MY life, and David wasn't going to touch any part of it ever again. I was done being scared of him and the threat of his impending arrival back into my life.

I was officially pissed off. This was David's fault not mine. I was done acting like I had something to be ashamed of. I never had. I kissed Lucas with everything in me. I needed him. He was it for me, and I was going to do everything I could to keep him safe. We made love all night.

Eventually I pretended to be asleep. I waited until Lucas' breathing evened out, then I popped out of bed and watched him for a moment. I popped to my sanctuary. I texted Haley asking if she was up. She replied that she was. I asked if she could get away from Eric for a minute. She popped next to me seconds later.

She greeted, "Hello, cousin. What's going on?" I blurted out, "I want to keep this feeling going. I feel very connected to my light, I need to get stronger. I want you to come at me harder in our physical training."

Haley evaluated me before asking, "Is David's coming? Or did seeing Lucas hurt spark your intensity?" I shrugged, "I don't know that I will wait for David to come anymore. If our girl group took on David... we could win."

Haley grinned, "Our partial fairy group alone could take him, but yes. Our bad ass girl gang could absolutely take him down with ease. YOU can take David down, as can any of your siblings. He was powerful to you because you were a child. I understand that. Fabian was a terrifying man to me, but in reality; I was stronger than him, physically, emotionally, and definitely in my powers. If you truly want to be more intense, we can." I nodded.

Haley asked, "How far do you want to go?" I frowned, "What do you mean?" Haley replied, "I mean the reason I can fight with iron in my system is because I have been trained to do so. My brothers trained me with sulfur because it contains iron. It doesn't hurt as much, but it weakens you. I pull my Hackura side to the surface, but you can't do that. I'm not sure how to advise you to do it." I nodded, "That makes sense though. Maybe if we do small amounts, I could get used to it so I'm not on the ground in pain just in case."

Haley considered, "You can turn iron to water though, you might not need it." I asked, "What if I'm knocked out, and wake up with it already in my system?" Haley conceded, "That's a valid point. Are we telling the guys that we are using sulfur in our practices?" I wanted to, then I remembered Lucas flipping out about my arm.

I pursed my lips, “Let’s see if they can tell. Lucas could tell when I broke my arm.” Haley nodded, “Fuck... ok. If that’s what you want, we will do that. We can tell them if you want, I’ll back you up. They would argue but they’d admit we have a point.” I nodded, “For now, let’s do it this way.” Her soul told me she didn’t think it was the right move, but she nodded.

She told me, “Alright, we will train that way. It won’t be every practice, and only small amounts. I’m going to give you a cardio program to start. It will include days we are not training. Let’s snap you an obstacle course.” She popped me to the field by my tree house.

She instructed, “Conjure an obstacle course, climbing ropes, a rock wall, a regular wall you have to climb to get over, you get the point.” I thought about it and gasped when I opened my eyes. I’d really done it. I didn’t miss anything.

Haley nodded, “Good. I can make a training plan based on what’s here. Here’s my caveat; IF something happens with David before we have a plan; then you call, text, send a fucking smoke signal, I don’t care, but you do something to let me know.”

I frowned, “I wouldn’t go without you.” Haley tilted her head, “Factors, my dear Emmaline. There are factors that would cause you to go to David without me. Just as there are factors that come up that mean I charge off on my own.” She had a point.

She continued, “Now, we are badass bitches who can handle our shit. You’re not alone though, and there’s strength in numbers. Once signaled, I will gather our girls. If you have to start without us, you’ll be ready.” I sighed asking, “What factors?”

Haley theorized, “Off the top of my head? David goes after those who are weaker than him. He instinctively sees women that way, and that’s where he will make a mistake. If for example, he got Debbie or Lacy and called to tell you about his captives; that would make you go to him, correct?”

My stomach dropped as she continued, “Or Aubree or Katie. He could be dumb enough to think you’d come to help

your mom, but I think we both know you'd plan first before popping in to help her."

I admitted, "You're right. I'd go for my mom, but not without backup. I'd make the whole thing a trap, but the others I'd pop without a plan." Haley evenly replied, "Exactly."

I pointed out, "Aubree is pregnant with his grandchild though, and Katie is his actual daughter." Haley looked away, "You're using logic, Emmaline. Sometimes people are just rotten to the core. David doesn't care about Aubree. There's no way in hell he'd get to Katie. I was just using that as an example; but if the sun turned green and David got Katie, he wouldn't have to hurt her. He'd just need her to get to you. Katie is the only one of those people I listed that David cares about. I'd say his most likely target is Aubree."

I gasped, "Why? She's pregnant with his grandchild." Haley stated, "A grandchild who stands to be MUCH more powerful than David will ever be. His grandchild that will not carry his last name, and I believe David has been outspoken in his dislike for Aubree. He knows that you love your brother. You would go rescue Aubree even if you didn't like her, but you do."

I grumbled, "Aubree's powerful though too." Haley nodded, "We all have things we are susceptible to Emmaline. Eric is both my strength and weakness. I would give up my life for him or our children. I turned my back on my brother, and he betrayed me. I would go after my family if they were hurt, and I have. I don't ask questions or get permission; I act. I come for the people I care about, all of whom can handle their shit. No one is invincible. Aubree is vulnerable because she is pregnant. In any situation, it's not just her she's looking out for. I'm not saying it will be her, I'm just saying she's the most obvious target."

I asked, "Does Logan know that?" Haley raised an eyebrow, "If I know that, Logan knew two weeks ago. My brothers consider all the angles of every situation at all times. Their brains must be constantly exhausted honestly." I laughed, "I could see that."

We were quiet for a moment, I popped us back to my sanctuary. I asked quietly, “Do you really think I could take David?” Haley confidently replied, “I know you can. He’s a powerful warlock, but you are ROYALTY. By birthright alone, you are better than him. What David has going for him is fear. That’s not inspiring, and people tend to revolt against a ruler who is only feared eventually. Take our mates for example; they are feared but they are respected. They have reputations for being fair and formidable. When the only emotion people have for you is fear... you lose. People are with him because of his power. Sure, there will be a few who idolize him, but they will be outliers. He doesn’t have enough loyalty on his side.”

She had a point. She added, “Besides, his children have already turned their backs on him and others followed. He is not the man of power you once knew him to be. That doesn’t make him any less scary or intimidating to you though. Believe me, I get that. Fabian still haunts me.”

I rubbed my face admitting, “I don’t want to be scared of him anymore. I’m mad. Mad that I have taken the blame for this, and I’m mad that I’ve been living in fear.” Haley smiled, “Good. You should be. Give yourself grace here though if he haunts your dreams. Or if you freeze when you see him.”

I gulped, “When I see him, I’ll be ready.” Haley shrugged, “The real him, yes. I am going to fairy charm someone to look like him first. You can’t just expect your psyche to be ready. You will practice on fake David before facing the real one.” I shivered, “I guess the fact that the thought of seeing him makes me shiver means you are right.”

Haley hugged me, “You can do this. You are a duchess. He’s a discarded piece of gum on the sidewalk.” I laughed, “It’s dirt under your shoe but same thing.” She shook her head, “This realm. Go get some sleep cousin.” I nodded and popped back to Lucas.

I kissed his forehead, “I’ll make sure he’s out of our lives before we have kids. Our children will not fear him. I most certainly will not be worrying that he will come for them.” I

would protect my family, current and future. I took a deep breath and closed my eyes.

The week flew by. Haley was harder on me at fairy lessons than she had been previously. She'd even spoken to Hexxi since she was my water fairy trainer. I popped Lucas and I back home and collapsed on the couch.

Lucas commented, "That was... something." I muttered, "Yup." Lucas frowned, "I thought you were working on freezing the lake." I said into the pillow because I couldn't even turn my neck, "I asked Haley to change my training plan." Lucas frowned, "You are making good progress, but that was intense." I shrugged, "It's what I want for right now." Lucas wasn't happy, but he accepted my decision.

The next night for our fighting training, Haley had Lacy sit out. She popped her and I away and held out her hand. "Put your hand on this, and a little sulfur will flood your system." I did. It wasn't as bad as the iron I'd been hit with in the past.

To my surprise, Haley did the same thing. I asked, "Will Eric and Lucas feel that?" Haley said, "We will see if Eric can with our Hackura connection, but it's small enough Lucas shouldn't. I know how to pull back enough and put blocks up on my bond with Eric that he shouldn't. Are you ok?" I nodded, "Let's do this."

Haley didn't hold back, and I was both glad and sore. Lucas pulled me to him, "Haley, this seems very different." Haley shrugged, "Because it is." Eric questioned, "Is there some threat we don't know about you two are preparing for?" Haley answered, "No." Dang. She was good. She was telling the truth; everyone knew David was a threat. It wasn't a secret.

Dylan gripped, "This just bodes so well, doesn't it? I don't have a single bad feeling about any of this. Nope not a one. Does seeing one's mate badly injured make you all go to crazy town where you become a comic superhero with a tragic angry backstory? Please god do not let this be your villain origin story. Look how perfectly fine Lucas is. He's so uninjured and on the side of good," he said while waving his hands between Haley and me.

Lucas tried again, “Baby girl...” I interrupted, “You were stabbed. The time for kid gloves is over. I asked Haley to train me this way, and that’s how we are going to train.” Lucas sighed. Haley asked, “Kid gloves? We never wore gloves.”

Dylan lamented, “I have SUCH good feelings about it, Lucas. Mark my words... this will SOMEHOW come back to bite ME in the ass. Not any of you, just me. RIP my sleep. I just know it. I feel it in my very soul.” He was serious, his soul actually felt that way.

As I walked out of the gym Lacy joined me. She asked, “What’s going on?” I did my space unheard chant then stated, “Lucas got stabbed.” I wiped at the tears coming down my face continuing, “I told Haley that I want to take the fight to David. I don’t want to live in fear waiting for him to find me and strike; because he will.”

Lacy sucked in a breath, “You’re training to fight David Forrester?” I answered, “Yes.” Lacy asked, “Haley knows that’s the goal?” I nodded, “She does. Our plan is to get me to a good place fighting and powers wise then devise a plan of attack.” Lacy questioned, “And Lucas doesn’t know about the reason because...?”

I frowned, “Lucas does know the reason. He got stabbed, that started this. I have this drive inside me right now. I need to end this with David once and for all before Lucas and I have kids. I don’t want him coming for my family, you included. He’s my monster, not yours.”

Lacy squeezed my hand, “I’ll slay any dragon with you, Emmaline.” I bumped her shoulder with mine, “You and our bad ass girl gang.” Lacy somewhat pleaded, “So, can we wait till the little peanut pops out so I can be by your side?” I nodded, “Hopefully, it depends though. My dad said that my next concupiscence will be in January. That’s around the time your little nugget will make his or her debut.” Lacy smiled, “His debut, and he should be born in February.” I squealed, “It’s a boy? I’m getting a nephew! Is Dylan excited?” Lacy nodded, “He’s over the moon.”

Lucas came out of the gym and scooped me up. He complained, "You know, it's infuriating how fairies make such good points." I was nervous, "You didn't give Haley a hard time, did you?" Lucas shrugged, "Not really." I sighed, "She's doing what I asked her to. She's not just my cousin, she is my princess." Lucas' reply was measured, "I know that. I don't have to like it."

I pressed, "I need to do this." Lucas asked, "Do you really?" I nodded and he ran a hand through his hair, "Fine then, I'll get on board." I admitted, "It's not just you getting stabbed. I need to be ready for David." Lucas stiffened, "He doesn't know about you. He doesn't know your new name, or where you are." I agreed, "Not yet he doesn't. I want to be prepared." Lucas closed his eyes, "Alright."

We continued in that pattern. I was working on my cardio program every other day. I never got bored because Haley prepared different lessons for every lesson. I was getting really good during our fighting sessions. The sulfur didn't really even bother me as more than a minor irritant.

We were steadily making our way to Thanksgiving. Eric apparently usually hosted, so we were going to their house. Dylan was really excited about it. I guess they normally didn't go, but since I was Haley's cousin we were. She was very about this being a perfect google holiday. She was very into google now.

The Thursday before Thanksgiving Haley upped the amount of sulfur for our training. She put a timer on her watch, "By the end of our training it will wear off, let's get to it." She popped us back absorbing the sulfur when we popped in. Everything was going fine, until there were a few minutes left in our training session.

Eric and Lucas jumped down from the bleachers as several warriors came running in. Alex yelled, "ROGUES!" Haley looked at her watch and mouthed, "Ten minutes." Lucas, Dylan, and Eric ran out. Dylan yelled, "Beautiful mate of mine, and mother of my unborn son. Make post haste to the gym safe room, ok? Thank you!"

Once they left Haley said, “Lacy, do you want me to take you to the safe room?” Lacy answered, “No, it’s right there.” Haley ordered, “Move your ass then!” Lacy raised an eyebrow, “You’re not just going to pop me there? Interesting. I KNEW IT! There is something different about your training. What is it?” I scuffed the toe on my shoe on the floor, “Not every training.” Haley yelled, “Oh my god! Get to the safe room, Emmaline will explain later.”

I chuckled at her urgency. Haley grabbed weapons while cursing, “Damn it! Seven minutes. Let’s go. I guess this is good practice.” I snorted, grabbing a dagger from her. We ran out of the gym and entered the fray. I had killed two wolves when one scratched me. I hissed and a wolf jumped in to take him down. I realized it was Brad. He looked at me as if questioning why I wasn’t using my powers.

A knife flew through the air past me into the heart of a wolf who was sneaking up on me. I looked to see Haley giving me a look that said focus. I saw a few wolves fly away from Eric and looked at Haley who shook her head. Eric was calling the wind, not Haley.

The minutes passed slowly. I was fighting close enough to Haley to hear the alarm on her watch beep. I let my hands turn blue and took down two more wolves. I took cues from Haley not using my powers in a big way. I wasn’t sure why she wasn’t, but I was going to follow her lead here.

When we defeated the rogues, I popped to get Lacy. Lacy smirked, “You’re done. Good. Why couldn’t you pop me earlier?” I sighed, “Haley has been injecting us both with sulfur before some training sessions.” Lacy said, “That makes sense.”

I gaped at her, “That’s it?” Lacy shrugged, “Packs do something similar. Every so often we shift, and they inject us with lead that has traces of silver. We have to run either in wolf form if we can manage it, or in human form. I get it. If Lucas didn’t notice though, mums, the word.” I snorted, “Brad noticed.” Lacy sighed, “Damn. He’s going to tell for sure.”

I popped us back to the group. Lucas and Eric looked back and forth between Haley and me. I turned and noticed Logan was here. His lips were twitching but he was maintaining a cool demeanor. Haley spoke, "Hello brother. What brings you here?" Logan looked at me, "The clone phone got a text warning this was coming."

I clapped, "I knew Gunner was still monitoring it!" Logan didn't sound sorry, "Of course he is. He alerts me if anything is concerning. Rogues attacking concerns Katie, which concerns me. So here I am, little sister." Haley smiled, "You're so cute when you're in love, Logan." Lucas said, "Let's take this to my office."

Dylan clapped, "Emmaline, Haley, someone pop me there, please. I need to prepare." Haley and I both grabbed his hands and popped. Dylan sang, "I smell TROUBLEEEEEEE" He looked at me, "Little Luna of mine that I do love so dearly, pretty please with a cherry on top, snap me some popcorn. I LOVE when the fairies are naughty."

Haley frowned, "We weren't naughty." Dylan snorted, "That's a matter of perspective. From the werewolf side, you've been naughty." Haley smiled, "Then do we get punished?" Dylan spit out his water, "GOD! I LOVE IT WHEN YOU COME HERE! You WANTED to goad GAP into punishing you? Fun sized ninja fairy of ours, I do worship at your feet."

Haley shrugged, "Eric will be fine." Dylan told her, "You know, I can't call him by his first name. I stick to nicknames that way on the rare occasion I say his first name I do not get punched." Haley said, "I think you could manage. You call him the God of the Pricks, and he hasn't hit you yet." Dylan said, "Because there's an undercurrent of respect in the name, and he knows that he's a prick."

Eric slammed the door open with his eyes on Haley. Logan was still smirking. I gulped when I saw Lucas' face. Lucas grounded out, "Care to share, you two?" Haley sat looking bored, "I'm going to need you to be more specific. I have a lot of things I can share. I could snap us blankets, we could share those." Dylan was already howling with laughter.

Haley continued, "I could snap us drinks and snacks for all to share." Lucas growled. Eric jumped in, "Angel, what was going on with your powers?" Haley looked over at me and saw my scratch. She stood and healed it quickly. I smiled at her, "Thank you." She nodded, "Anytime."

Lucas growled, "Emmaline," in a tone that demanded I look at him. He continued, "Brad said you weren't using your powers." Lacy shot me a look. Haley looked at her nails saying, "This Brad sounds like a fucking tattletale. Eric, you KNOW how I feel about that."

Eric rolled his eyes, "Nonetheless, you didn't use your powers." Haley argued, "Yes, we did." Dylan crunched on his popcorn with his eyes shooting back and forth between us both. I chimed in, "Agreed. I drowned some rogues."

Lucas pointed out, "You used a dagger first." Haley complimented, "Quite well too. One slip when the wolf, who I assume was the tattling Brad, distracted you but overall, it was good." Logan actually laughed. Lucas grumbled, "I don't like evasions." Haley frowned, "Who's evading? I'm telling the truth."

Lucas turned to Logan, "You seem to know what's going on here. Care to enlighten us?" Logan evaluated him, "I think you and my brother in law both know to a degree of what's going on. You are smart men." Lucas turned to me, "You've been getting shot up with iron before training lessons?!" I disagreed, "No, I have not." Logan smirked again.

Eric angrily asked, "Then what are you getting shot up with?" I made a face at him. Dylan laughed, "I love fairies, they are all so brave. Sticking their tongues out and making faces at the God Alpha Prick. You have to love it. I've seen him crush a heart for less. Do they care? They don't. I love it."

Haley answered Eric, "Sulfur." Lacy interjected, "Not unlike our own practices of taking doses of lead." Lucas glared at her. Dylan howled, "YES! That's a fairy tendency right there. They are rubbing off on my mate in the best way. I love this for my life. It sparks such joy."

Lucas angrily spat out, “We don’t do that every training session.” I assured him, “Neither do we. It just happened to be today.” Eric asked calmly, “And we didn’t know you were doing this because?” His soul was not calm at all; he was very angry. I raised an eyebrow at Lucas, “I didn’t know that you all get injected with lead every so often...because?” Haley snorted and Logan laughed outright.

Lucas growled, “It’s not the same.” Haley rolled her eyes, “Come the fuck on.” I nodded, “Agreed, Haley. I’ll go a step further. My training, my body, my call.” Dylan dropped his bowl while Lacy gaped at me.

Lucas pinned me against the wall. Haley calmly stated, “She’s right. Eric, I don’t know all the ins and outs of the training for every warrior on our grounds. You train some of them yourself, and I don’t know their training plans.” Now Eric pinned Haley to the wall.

Logan said, “Sometimes little sister, I consider getting you a shovel so you don’t have to dig your own grave with your hands.” Haley asked, “Why would I need a shovel? I’m not digging anyfuckingthing. I’m saying it how it is. I’d just snap a grave anyway. There would be no manual digging. That sounds terrible.” Dylan agreed, “It is. Who tries to make a double princess do manual labor? Crazy people, that’s who.”

Lucas growled, “I want to know when you make changes to your training plan.” I said, “Ok, give me a detailed plan of yours then.” Lucas growled, “I’m the Alpha, I can’t write that down. We keep our training secret.”

Dylan went back to eating popcorn. I glared at Lucas, “But the Luna’s training plan should be written down? You’ve never asked us for one before.” Lucas growled, “FINE! Tell me when sulfur days are.” I countered somewhat immaturely, “Tell me when lead days are.” Lucas set me down, “FINE!” He left, slamming the door.

Dylan cleared his throat, “God Alpha of the Pricks if you would be kind as to help me with... that.” Eric growled, “This conversation is not over.” Haley sighed, “Of fucking course

it's not. Just so you know, I did this type of training with my Hackura family."

Eric shot a look at Logan who nodded. Eric yelled, "FUCK!" Haley yelled as he left with Dylan, "Aiden trains that way too! So does the fairy army and royalty!" Lacy stood and did a slow clap, "GOD! You and Lucas need to get married so I can call you sister. My body, my training, my choice! I need that on a t-shirt. DAMN EMMALINE! Your balls are bigger than Lucas'."

Haley laughed. Blade said, "Is trouble. Fairy trouble. Princess trouble. Smart though. Fairy needs training. Princess had training. Is good. Still trouble. Blade knew." I jumped, "Where did you come from?" Blade replied, "Blade always around." I waited for my heart to stop sputtering, "Good to know."

Logan spoke, "You two... I don't even know what to do with the two of you." I sheepishly asked, "Take me to see Katie?" Logan snorted. I continued, "Lucas will calm down while I'm gone." Haley commented, "You might as well take her, brother." Logan smiled, "Come on then."

I linked Lucas, "Logan is taking me to see Katie, I'll be right back." Lucas snarked, "As if I could stop you." I didn't like his tone, but in his shoes I might be salty too. I replied, "At least you know." Jerk. Haley sat down and started talking to Lacy.

Katie was so excited to see me. She took me aside, "Did you read the texts?" I shook my head. I closed my eyes and conjured the phone to me.

Unknown: Rogues are coming. Prepare for an attack.

I looked at Katie then responded to my unknown friend.

Me: A little late on that one, buddy.

Unknown: He's testing the waters.

Me: Who?

Unknown: Don't play dumb, it doesn't suit you.

Me: David?

Unknown: He doesn't know yet, but he's digging. He's thrown off by your birth certificate. Emmaline Richards is seventeen. Almost eighteen. Happy early birthday, consider this my present.

Me: Happy birthday to me then.

Unknown: See you soon Emmaline.

Katie said, "David won't think they got you a fake birth certificate." I nodded, "But he might see me as a way to strike back at Haley. It's firmly established she's Emmaline Richards' cousin." Katie frowned, "Unfortunately, that does sound like dear old dad." I promised her, "I'm getting ready." Katie rubbed my shoulders, "Good. He's weak, but tricky."

I disagreed, "Weak isn't a word I'd use for David." Katie sneered, "Anyone who goes after someone weaker than them because it's an easier target is a weak coward. He never picks on someone his own size. His reputation was built on taking out those weaker than him. I used to think he was this all-powerful warlock, but he's not. I'm stronger than him, and so are you." I smiled, "Thanks Katie."

We hung out some more, and she showed me the nursery she'd set up for her little boy. I smiled, "It's beautiful." Logan joined us, "Time for little fairies to go home." I gave Katie a hug, "Love you, Katie Cat." She smiled, "Love you too, Evie. Good luck with your wolf." Logan snorted, "She's going to need it." I assured my sister, "It will be fine."

Logan opened a portal and sent me back to Lucas' office. I looked around only seeing Haley and Lacy. I asked, "They aren't back yet?" Lacy stared at me like I was insane, "It's been ten minutes." I mused, "That's just so weird, I spent hours with Katie."

We waited for a few hours before Lacy got tired. I popped her to bed. I said goodbye to Haley who gave me a hug. I frowned, "We didn't do anything wrong." Haley said, "No, not wrong. They can dislike it all they want, but they've never asked to see my training plan for you. Not once since we fucking started. I swear they have hypocrite horses they ride around on. Where they have a point is we didn't tell them about it. We were quite possibly on our own hypocrite horses with that one."

I laughed, "High horse. They have high horses they ride around one." Haley said, "Nope they have hypocrite horses." I sincerely told her, "I love you, Haley." She smiled, "Love you too, Emmaline." She popped out.

I went upstairs to my room. I linked Lucas, "Are you coming to bed?" I didn't get an answer. I opened my eyes to my alarm going off. Lucas' side of the bed was cold and unslept on. That stung. I popped to the gym.

Lacy frowned at me, "Whoa, you look like you didn't sleep well." I admitted, "I waited for Lucas until I fell asleep." Lacy asked, "You didn't see him?" I tried to sound nonchalant, "I still haven't. He wasn't in our room." Lacy crossed her arms, "If you need me to kick his ass sister style, you let me know." I shrugged.

I was sure we'd talked about it when I got home from school, but I was wrong. Lucas avoided me as much as he could in the following days. I'd caught glimpses of him here and there. The entire pack was shooting me sympathetic looks.

After a week, I'd had enough. If he wanted to behave like this, then fine. I wasn't going to stick around to watch it. I'd be taking our group to Thanksgiving dinner at Eric and Haley's. Then if Lucas couldn't get the stick out of his butt, he'd get a taste of his own medicine, my style.

I linked Lacy, "I need to talk to you." She replied, "Pop to me." I popped and found her with Dylan. I glared at him, "If you so much as look at me with an OUNCE of pity, I'll punch you in the throat." Dylan's eyes widened and he held up his

hands, “Umm whoa... I was just going to tell you how pretty you look. Pray tell, pretty little Luna, what’s with the glare?”

I shrugged, “That’s the most action I’ve got in a week. Thanks, Dylan.” Lacy snorted. Dylan frowned, “Those kinds of lines are my thing.” I shrugged, “Take it up with your Alpha. He’s put me in a dang mood.”

I popped away with Lacy before he said anything. Lacy asked, “So, what’s up?” I explained, “If Lucas’ attitude doesn’t change after dinner I’m not staying here.” Lacy yelled, “You can’t leave the pack!” I could but I wasn’t. I told her, “I’m not. Haley sent me instructions on how to conjure a treehouse. That’s what we are doing now.” I conjured everything I wanted and popped Lacy up to it.

Lacy looked around my new treehouse. She reverently whispered, “Wow... this is.... wow.” I smiled, “Thanks. I have hotel reservations in Red Run, this territory, and Haley’s.” Lacy’s jaw dropped. After several moments she squealed, “DAMN! I love you. Won’t Lucas know you aren’t there?”

I shrugged, “If I didn’t plan to pop to all of them and check in, maybe.” Lacy clapped, “Ok, when Dylan pisses me off this badly, you HAVE to help me get him back.” I spoke in a monotone, “Lucas probably won’t even care that I’m not here.”

Lacy put an arm around me, “Sweetie, he will care.” I disagreed, “I’ve seen the back of his head for a week.” Lacy frowned, “He’s been in your room at night.” I shook my head, “Not on the bed like a normal person he hasn’t.” Lacy sighed, “I know, I’ve told him he’s an idiot. Alpha males are stupid about their mates.” I knew I sounded bitter when I replied, “I guarantee Eric and Haley are fine now.”

Lacy looked at me with concern in her eyes. She spoke quietly, “They have that rule so... probably.” I countered, “Or Eric just loves her more.” Lacy’s eyes filled with tears, “That’s not true.” I asked, “Really? He’s managed to not speak a single word to me in a week. He doesn’t answer my links, and he doesn’t sleep in our bed. I doubt he even remembers my birthday is in three weeks. We are supposed to get married on

Christmas Eve. Thank GOD I asked Haley to make my dream wedding snap into place. I'm not in the mood to plan a freaking thing."

Lacy stepped back, "That's... odd. Fairy's love to plan parties." I shrugged, "I'm not in the mood." Lacy looked at me worriedly for several moments. She told me, "Dylan said everyone's ready to go." I sarcastically spat, "Great. My first Thanksgiving in four years that I'll get to eat something, and I just want to throw it all at Lucas' face."

Lacy offered, "Cranberry sauce. Throw the cranberries at him. It stains and he does not like them." That gave me a slight flicker of amusement, but it was brief. Nothing made me happy anymore. I told her, "I just might."

I popped us back and grabbed Dylan's hand. I let go briefly to flip Lucas the bird. He growled, but I didn't spare him a glance. I popped us there. Lucas stalked off. Dylan asked, "Quick question, did you really just flip him the bird?"

I snarked, "Did he really growl because I grabbed your hand? Again, that's the most action I've got in a week. You keep me sane, Dylan. Thanks for that." Dylan ripped his hand from me as if it was on fire. Dale laughed, but Debbie frowned at him.

Dylan advised, "Let's say such things quietly. I like my head where it is currently. Atop my neck where it belongs. Having to run from my Alpha and keep him calm is a push pull balance I'm not sure I could do, and he is actually faster than me."

Debbie growled, "Do something Dale!" Dale retorted, "Woman! I swear it's like you think I do nothing all damn day long." Debbie snorted, "Obviously, you're doing a bang-up job." I left them to bicker and found Haley in the kitchen.

The triplets were in little bouncing chairs. Haley was covered in flour. I asked, "What on god's green earth is happening?" Haley looked up and smiled, "Google said Thanksgiving dinner is very important. Eric loves cherry pie. So, I am making him a shit fucking ton of cherry pies; that

he'd better love. Because I could've just snapped it done, but I took the time to make it all myself."

I told her, "I'm sure he will love it." Haley smiled then did a double take. She asked me, "What's wrong? I feel your sorrow." I sighed, "Nothing you need to worry about." Haley disagreed, "Too damn bad. This is what I get for cancelling fairy lessons yesterday. Google said people need travel days. Fairies can pop though; I knew it was ridiculous. I should've just had practice. Now, I'm behind. What happened?"

I shrugged and tears filled my eyes. Haley came over and hugged me. I broke down crying, "Lucas won't talk to me." Haley asked, "What happened?" I sniffled, "The sulfur thing." Haley gaped, "Lucas hasn't spoken to you since LAST FUCKING THURSDAY?" I nodded.

Lacy walked in, "He's being a stubborn idiot." Haley threw off her apron, "No he's being a hurtful fucking idiot, and I'm going to go beat his stubborn ass! Right fucking now!" Miley giggled, "Now she's going to go off."

I wiped my tears and apologized, "I'm sorry, I didn't see you there." Miley smirked, "I didn't want you to. You'll never see a Hackura who doesn't want you to, until they do." I muttered, "That's not terrifying. People usually go with Happy Thanksgiving." Miley laughed, "I like you."

Blade appeared, "Happy Thanksgiving fairy." I greeted him in a monotone, "Happy Thanksgiving, Blade. See Miley? So simple and less terrifying." The only one not laughing was Haley. Her eyes were blazing gold.

She gritted her teeth, "Miley, make sure NOTHING happens to my fucking cherry pies or Lucas will pay. I can't prove it, but I'm positive Eric's mother is lurking, waiting to ruin one." I linked Lacy, "She believes that. Is she right?" Lacy winced, "Cassandra doesn't like fairies so... maybe. Mom said she's been in a mood about Haley." Bitch.

Miley saluted her, "I am on it! I feel like that was permission to finally punch that bitch in the face if she tries. There will be no messing up of pies." Mrs. Blanch laughed, "I'll be here too, Haley." Haley kissed her cheek, "The world

doesn't deserve you, Mrs. Blanch." I searched Mrs. Blanch's soul. She agreed with Haley too. Maybe I'd charm Cassandra's chair to fall over like Haley did Lucas' that one time.

A pop sounded. Blade pulled a sword, but Haley quickly put her hand on his arm. She seemed surprised but not scared, "Exsis? What are you doing here?" The fairy who must be Exsis smiled, "Hello, Princess. You are beautiful as always; it has been far too long. You certainly grew up, didn't you? My, my, my. I did always tell everyone you would be stunning. I love being right. Did you know Aiden tasked me to be a fairy liaison with the hood?"

Haley went on alert, "No, I did not. What happened?" Exsis held out something to her, "I do not know what happened, Princess. I have a letter. It was an urgent request, so I guess nothing good." He looked quite happy about something that was bad. He glanced at me, and instantly look concerned. Haley snatched the piece of paper out of his hand.

Her eyes went wide, "Exsis, we have to go. Miley, call Bexley to comfort our cousin. Tell Lucas when I get back, I'm kicking his ass. NOTHING better happens to my pies. Happy FUCKING Thanksgiving." She paused she said, "Google did say holidays can get dramatic. I will take its warnings more seriously next time." Blade put a hand on Haley's shoulder, and she grabbed Exsis and popped away.

The letter floated to the ground. I grabbed it hoping BA wasn't in trouble. I frowned as I read it, "This is gibberish. How the heck does Haley know what it says? I'm positive this is not Fealish." Miley grabbed it and told me, "It's code."

I pressed, "A code you know?" Miley frowned, "No, but Marcus or Bjourn will know what it is." She sat back down. I waited then asked, "Are you going to get them?" Miley shook her head, "No, Haley has Blade, they will be fine. If she needed more help, she would've told us. She can pull on her connections with any of her family if need be. She took her phone; Gunner can track her if it comes to that."

I asked, "Why didn't she take you?" Miley said, "The Hood has rules they follow. Blade goes with Haley

everywhere. If only Haley's help was requested, then she has to go alone. It's understood Blade is coming. If I wasn't requested Haley couldn't bring me unless it was life or death."

Bexley popped in. She frowned the second she saw me, "Now I know why Miley said Haley wanted me to comfort you. Exsis even texted me he was concerned. Your sorrow is intense, cousin. What's happening?" Lacy frowned, "What do you mean? Emmaline's seems fine." Bexley laughed bitterly, "Has she wolf? I am her relative and another fairy. I know she is not fine, far from it. What's wrong, little cousin?"

Lacy explained, "My brother's an ass." Bexley asked, "How much of an ass?" Miley answered, "He hasn't spoken to her in a week." Bexley gaped, horrified. "You poor thing! How could he be so cruel?" I shrugged, "Don't worry, I have a plan." Bexley smirked, "Good. Show him what he's missing. Let's start by changing this outfit." She snapped then nodded to herself, "That is much better."

I looked down when Miley whistled. Lacy whooped, "DANNNGGGG, Emmaline!" Mrs. Blanch chuckled, "These men need to learn, you don't mess with females. We are dangerous. Warfare of the mind is our game; they should stick to the physical."

Bexley had snapped me into a skintight, pumpkin colored dress that scooped around my neckline. My tone was monotonous even to my own ears, "Thank you, Bexley. I love it." Bexley told me quite seriously, "Make him sweat, cousin." The timer on Haley's pies went off. We all had to help get them out of the oven.

I surveyed them all once they were on the counter. I asked, "She made fifty pies?" Miley groaned, "We have GOT to get her away from google. She helped Mrs. Blanch with the turkey too. She told Eric he had to carve it. She did not take it well when he said it's usually done before dinner by the kitchen staff. Needless to say, Eric is carving the turkey." I agreed, "That's so Haley."

I saw Cassandra. I asked directly, "Can we help you?" She said, "I thought we'd taste the pies to make sure they were ok."

I have pies from Eric's favorite place ready to go." I searched her soul and didn't like it one bit.

I stared at her, "My cousin has yet to fail at anything I've seen her do since I met her. Maybe instead of hoping for her to fail, like your soul tells me you want her to, cheer her on instead. You're not wanted in here until you get a soul cleanse. Stick around and I'll figure out how to do just that. I'm in a mood. I bet since I'm mad my light would make it hurt if possible." She ran from the room.

Miley clapped while Lacy gaped at me. I shrugged. I didn't care. I snorted, "I don't even know if I can do that. She obviously doesn't pay attention to anything Haley does, or she'd know that she's great. That's on her." Bexley agreed, "It is."

Miley threw her arm around me, "How about you come around more often? I have to be nicer to her." I shrugged, "Maybe I'll move in since Lucas doesn't care where I am." Lacy frowned and went to say something, but Bexley motioned her not to.

It got closer and closer to dinner. I started to pace because Haley wasn't back. I asked, "Do we have to tell the guys why she's not here? She's coming back, right?" Miley frowned, "Yes, hopefully soon." I kept pacing, "Can we nominate Miley to tell Eric and Haley's brothers where she is?" Miley smirked, "Uncle Titus is here too." I gulped. I did not want see the King of the Hackura angry.

Lacy raised her hand, "Miley to explain the situation seconded. Can I get a third?" Bexley said "I'll be your third, hands down. The Hackura are leery of me. All those people love Miley though. She has to explain."

Marcus asked, "Miley has to explain what?" I jumped three feet in the air shrieking in fright. Where did he come from? Dylan snickered, "FINALLY! Someone understands my pain." He gave me a fist bump and went to Lacy. I could smell Lucas, but I refused to look at him.

Miley greeted, "Well hello, everyone. Haley made a lot of pie. We MUST get her away from google." Eric raised an

eyebrow, “If that’s what you were voting on I’ll be your fourth. Unfortunately, I don’t think that what you get to explain, Miley.”

Miley sighed and held out a letter which Eric snatched. He instantly asked, “What the fuck is this?” Eric grit his teeth then continued, “Why is my wife in pain? WHERE IS SHE?” He looked at me. I squeaked searching his very angry soul. I timidly answered, “With Blade?”

Lacy said, “That’s what we know. Oh, and that Exsis guy. She’s with him too.” Eric growled, “WHAT?!” Aiden popped in with Lucinda and Aiylee. He greeted, “Hello, all. Haley insisted we come for this Thanksgiving meal deal... something about a family holiday....” He trailed off looking at Eric.

He quickly said, “Lucinda pop Aiylee, Fenilton, my niece, and nephews to their room here. Aiylee’s been dying to see it.” Lucinda quickly popped away with her children and the triplets.

Aiden frowned, “Eric, I swear Haley said it was important that I be here.” Eric growled, “WHY is she with Exsis?” Aiden was taken aback, “I have no idea. He’s our liaison with the.... Oh no.” Eric growled, “Don’t say that.” Aiden admitted, “He’s our liaison with the Hood.”

Bjourn snatched the note out of Eric’s hand. He yelled, “FUCK ME! I’m going to KILL THE HOOD! GUNNER GET IN HERE!” I linked Lacy, “Gunner is here?” Lacy smiled, “He must be, I like him.” I said, “Me too.”

Gunner ran in and glanced around the room quickly asking, “What did she do now?” Bjourn demanded, “Track her goddamn phone right now, because it better fucking be on her.” Eric began to pace as Gunner left to grab his tablet. He muttered, “Somehow I just knew I’d need this.”

Just as he booted it up Haley, Blade, and BA tumbled into the room. I linked Lacy, “They look like they were in an explosion.” Lacy agreed, “I think they were.” Haley glanced at the group with her and they all started laughing.

BA sounded astonished, “I can’t believe that worked.” Haley jumped up victoriously, “Of course it worked. We came up with a brilliant fucking plan on the literal run. I can’t believe you wanted me to heal that asshole.” BA smiled, “He’s not... usually an asshole. He’s been having a rough time.”

Haley smiled asking, “Can you stay for dinner?” BA said, “Sorry, I need a portal home. I have Thanksgiving plans. Plus, I need to see my brother.”

Bjourn interjected, “Do you? How fortuitous. I’ll take you to him.” Haley whirled as if realizing we were there. She greeted, “Hey guys! My pies are fine, right?” She was halfway to the counter to check them when Eric picked her up and inhaled.

Aiden snapped his fingers. Haley, Blade, and BA were back to looking like they hadn’t been in an explosion. Haley giggled, “Eric, I’m fine.” Eric dragged her out of the room. I sighed linking Lacy, “Look at that, he’s going to talk to her. I’m jealous.” Lacy snorted, “Maybe... or be mad... or other things.” I shrugged, “Still talking.” Lacy shot me a sad look, “Lucas hasn’t taken his eyes off you.”

The front door opened loudly. Someone yelled, “HELLLLOO, everyone!” Jackson groaned, “Tell me Haley didn’t invite her.” Cassandra Connors came back into the room and slapped him on the arm. She told him, “No, I did she’s family.”

Jackson was stunned, “This will end... badly. Mom, Haley is really about this holiday going well. She won’t like her. Not one bit.” Cassandra said, “It will be fine. She had nowhere else to go.” She didn’t believe that. I muttered, “Liar.” Several people looked at me. Darrin broke the awkward silence, “She had nowhere to go because no one wants her around.”

A beautiful girl walked in. She hugged all the Connors then squealed when she saw Lucas, “LUCAS BEAR!” I raised an eyebrow linking Lacy, “Who the F is she? And who says Lucas bear?” Lacy answered, “She’s Eric’s cousin, her name is Nikki.” Well, Nikki was all over my mate.

I asked, “She likes Lucas, doesn’t she? Have they had sex?” Lacy winced, “I think so, but I don’t actually know.” I linked Dylan, “Who is she to my mate?” Dylan answered, “No one, you’re it to him.” I retorted, “He’s still hugging her, Dylan. What is she to him? They had sex, right?”

Dylan winced, “Emmaline...” I snarked, “As your Luna, tell me.” Dylan sighed, “She was his first.” I kept my face blank. The wind knocked Nikki away from Lucas. She looked around wide eyed. Aiden demanded, “Keep your hands off the Duchess of Faerie’s wolf.” I shot him a grateful look.

She glared at him and turned back to my mate. Aiden grabbed me and took me out of the room. He chanted the space unheard chant. He asked me conspiratorially, “Do we want to make her meal unpleasant?” I didn’t even smile. He continued, “You are very sad, cousin. I assume your wolf is upsetting you. I can help you there.”

I frowned, “How?” Aiden smiled, “I have a cousin that Haley won’t mind being here. He can help us. Little touches here and there and some light flirting.” I thought about it, “Tell me it’s not Halber because I already told Lucas he was my cousin.” Aiden smiled conspiratorially, “That’s the spirit. It’s not Halber, he’s my cousin not yours.”

I asked, “Exsis?” Aiden laughed, “No, that would upset Haley’s wolf. This is another fire cousin of mine, Fegle.” I nodded, “A fire fairy named Fegle. How did you get a normal name?” Aiden smiled, “Luck.”

A pop sounded. A charming man greeted Aiden, “Hello, cousin.” Aiden responded, “Cousin.” Fegle took my hand, “You MUST be Duchess Emmaline. Our beautiful water fairy duchess who was found safely.” I nodded, “That’s me.” He smiled, “You MUST sit by me at dinner, Duchess Emmaline. Cousin, tell her she must.” Aiden smirked, “She must.” Fegle clapped, “Marvelous.”

Jackson came out announcing, “We are heading into the... oh fuck me. Who is this?” I introduced him, “This is Fegle.” Aiden added sounded delighted, “He’s a cousin of mine. Haley

did say this holiday was for family when she demanded I come.”

Jackson looked between me and Fegle. He warned, “Emmaline...” I sounded blasé to my own ears, “Yes, Jackson.” Jackson threw his hands in the air, “Fairies. We are overrun by fairies.” Fegle held out his arm to escort me. I looped mine through his.

I linked Lacy, “Operation my way has commenced.” Lacy responded, “That sounds ominous. I thought that was after dinner.” I explained, “Aiden helped me start it early.” Lacy sighed, “I’m officially worried. Nikki is...” I stopped her, “All over my mate, I figured.”

I walked into the dining room, everyone but Nikki stopped talking. Lacy linked me, “Lucas definitely noticed.” I glowered, “Good.” I refused to look at him. Aiden directed me to the chair next to him and Fegle sat on my other side. Debbie glared at Dale who stared up at the ceiling. He complained, “Why, moon goddess? Why?”

Haley walked into the room with Eric. She smiled seeing the fairy next to me. She squealed, “Fegle! It’s so good to see you!” Fegle stood and bowed, “I am honored by the invitation. I have been most intrigued by our new Duchess. Word of her beauty was not exaggerated.”

Lucas growled. Fegle didn’t falter as he continued, “That’s a potent smell, Princess. Glad you and your wolf are so happy together.” Haley blushed but everyone else laughed.

Nikki sounded like a baby, “Lucas bear, will you pour me more wine?” Haley turned, “Exfuckingcuse me, he’s either Alpha Lucas or you can call him a lion. What the fuck is this bear shit? And who the fuck are you?” Nikki gasped, “Eric... she’s so rude! I demand you punish her. She should be locked in the dungeons.”

My jaw dropped. Did she not come to their wedding? Haley flung her out of her seat by calling the wind. Haley warned, “Bitch you haven’t BEGUN to see rude. Sit down and shut the fuck up. This is MY territory.” Nikki scampered to her seat; I couldn’t hide my laugh. It sounded hollow though.

Haley broke the awkward silence, “Google does say Thanksgiving can have family tension. Now that the bitch is silent, and has realized my lion is not a fucking bear nor is he even available; Eric, will you carve the turkey please?”

Eric was not hiding his smile well. All the Conners were trying not to laugh. Cassandra just sighed. I shot Haley a grateful look. My phone buzzed.

Haley: I’ve got your six, cousin.

Me: Thank you!

Haley: Who is this she wolf who I might have to kill?

Me: Eric’s cousin

Haley: NO FUCKING WAY!

Me: yup-p.

Haley: Why are there so many crazy she wolf’s?

Me: Lucas had sex with her.

Haley: Once upon a time, I got that.

Me: He won’t even talk to me, but her... his first... he will.

Haley: Want me to kick his ass? LOL The teens here have been teaching me texting lingo.

Haley: But really. I will kick his ass.

Me: Let’s keep that in our back pockets.

Haley: We both have on dresses. Mine doesn’t have pockets and neither does yours.

I laughed out loud which had Eric looking at me. I couldn’t decipher his soul other than to know he was worried. I looked around the table. I noticed Gunner and Harper were there with a really pretty girl beside them. She smiled introducing herself, “I’m Cali.” I nodded, “Hello, nice to meet you.” Their souls were perfect for each other. I asked Gunner, “Where are Katie and Logan?” Gunner frowned and looked at Marcus.

Marcus answered, "Katie wasn't feeling well, so Haley sent food to them." Haley sighed, "Valerie wanted to spend this thanksgiving with her parents, and Ryan went with her. Aubree and Dustin were going to come, but she's also not feeling great." I teared up, "You invited them?" Haley glared at Lucas, "Yes, I did." What was that?

Conversation picked up around the table. Fegle engaged with me, "So, Duchess I heard that you have some impressive skills. Halber raves about you and let me assure you, the man doesn't rave about anyone." I heard a low growl. I smiled, "Thank you. I've got a really good teacher. I can't wait to learn more from Halber."

I saw Haley slap Lucas' arm out of the corner of my eye. Fegle saw it as well but didn't stop our conversation, "Yes, he looks forward to the same. Cousin Aiden, I might have to take one of these training spots. Partial fairies are delightfully fun, and quite pleasing to the eye. In case no one's told you yet today you look stunningly beautiful, Duchess. This dress is fabulous."

Aiden chuckled, "I'm sure my sister has a spot for you, cousin." Dylan groaned and linked me, "Emmaline, for the love of god please..." I retorted, "We are just talking. He's not touching me unlike your Alpha over there, who has done NOTHING about Nikki's hand on his thigh."

Dylan's gaze went to Lucas which caused Haley's to. Haley whispered something to Nikki. Lucas stared at her in shock. Nikki withdrew her hand from Lucas as if she'd been burned. Good. Eric was shaking with laughter. Actually, everyone but Cassandra was. I shot her a measured look. She broke our stare first. The Hackura were studying us both. Queen Veronica smiled smugly and gracefully took a sip of her wine.

The meal passed a lot like that. Lucas didn't even link me. Lacy linked, "I like the Fegle guy." I snorted, "Me too. Maybe I should run away with him." Lacy teased, "I'd miss you." I agreed, "I'd miss you too. I'd never leave you behind, Lacy, and for some reason I love your stupid brother." Lacy smiled, "Lucas is barely managing not to shift." I asked, "Why?" Lacy said, "Fairies really don't see it, do you?"

I pointed out, “He’s ignored me all week. Am I supposed to sit around and wait for him to decide to be a grown up? I have a life to live. By the way, where have my brothers been this week? I saw their cars, but not them.” Lacy fidgeted, “They have been having dinner with Lucas.” I yelled, “You have GOT to be kidding me.” Lacy winced.

Dylan glanced sharply at her then looked at me. He put his head in hands. I hissed back in our link, “They are dead meat.” Lacy said, “On the plus side, they get along now.” I ranted, “They are MY brothers. They get to be on my side when he’s the one who’s wrong. Heck, even when he’s right, my side! My brothers, MY SIDE! That’s a frigging thing.” Lacy tried to appease me, “If it matters, mom and I are on your side.” I calmed down, “Thank you.”

Fegle stood and held his arm out to me, “Duchess Emmaline, I would love to escort you to the glass chapel our lovely princess conjured on this property. Many of our trainers speak of its beauty. I find myself very curious to see it.” Lucas growled.

I smiled and said, “I’d love to show it to you, it’s magnificent.” Lucas started to say something, but Fegle popped us away. I told him, “They will come out here.” Fegle chided, “Ahh, but Duchess you cannot catch a fairy if we don’t want to be caught. Something tells me they won’t be shooting us with iron.” My phone buzzed.

Haley: Lacy says you have a plan. Enact phase two now because the guys are on the way.

Me: Thanks, cousin.

Haley: Call or text if you need me.

I asked Fegle, “Do you want to join me on this charade?” He looked at his watch, “I have some time. Let’s see what mischief you have planned.” I popped us away to the hotel in Red Run. I checked in, and we went up to the room.

The phone rang the second we walked in the room. I frowned, picking it up, "Hello?" Alpha Kyle hurriedly asked, "Emmaline, what in the seven hells is going on? A pack member just linked me that you checked into a hotel with a guy. Are you alright?"

I answered, "No, I am not. Thank you for asking. The guy is a fairy, and he's a cousin to the king. He's escorting me around. When Lucas calls you or vice versa tell him to enjoy Nikki." Alpha Kyle yelled, "What?!" I slammed the receiver down. Fegle conjured cards and taught me a fairy game.

I looked at my watch, "Onto the next stop." Fegle smiled, "Wiley, little duchess." I popped us to Lucas' territory and checked in. Dylan linked me, "Emmaline... Please..." I asked, "Please what, Dylan?" Dylan tried, "You don't understand..." I disagreed, "But I do. My mate doesn't care about me until someone else is speaking to me."

Dylan corrected, "Flirting. He was flirting with you, and Lucas does care. So very much. Do you know how much sleep I have missed because he loves you?" Even to my ears I sounded sad, "I don't know that he does anymore. Fegle wasn't flirting, he was being nice. I actually got to speak to someone who didn't feel sorry for me because my mate is a jerk. He didn't stare at me with pitying eyes or anything else. So, stick that in your pipe and smoke it."

Dylan asked, "Will you at least unblock your link with Lucas?" I knew it was immature, but I didn't care. I snarked, "No, he hasn't wanted to talk to me all dang week, and now I don't want to talk to him. Does he not like a taste of his own medicine?"

Fegle got a text and laughed. He bowed, "My cousin has sent me a warning via the Princess. Do you plan to get caught here?" I shook my head, "Nope." I grabbed him leaving my phone behind. I popped away to Haley's territory. We checked into my room there.

Fegle smiled once we got up there, "Will this be as quick as the last visits?" I shrugged, "Probably not. I'm not as well-known here." We talked for a bit. Fegle smiled, "Riling up a

wolf is dangerous when they love you. Even when they don't, it's dangerous."

I looked at the ceiling, "He could've fooled me that he gave a damn." Fegle gasped, "Why Rhett Butler? Such language." He sobered, "That wolf does loves you; it was all over his face. Besides, if he did not; the princess would kill him. If she had qualms about it because of her own wolf, cousin Aiden would kill him. Or your father." I laughed.

Fegle said, "I noticed you left your phone at the last hotel." I nodded, "They would've tracked it. Lucas hasn't wanted to talk to me all week. So, why should I talk to him now that he's decided because another male spoke to me he needs a conversation?" Fegle smirked, "I love partial fairies, I always have. I must be off. Should you need another partner in crime any time, I would be at your service Duchess."

I smiled, "Thanks for the company, I appreciate it." Fegle smiled and kissed my hand, "It's an easy thing to do. Spending time in the presence of a beautiful woman." With that he popped out.

I sighed and sat down. I called upon Haley's protection because it was the only way for me to get a hold of her. She popped to me in a second. She took a relieved breath, "Thank fucking god, I thought something bad had happened." I smiled, "Sorry, I don't have my phone."

Haley got into the bed and held me. She stroked my hair and I started to cry. I admitted, "I miss him, and he didn't even bother to look at me all week." Haley sounded annoyed, "Apparently, he looked when you weren't looking, but fuck him." I laughed, "He doesn't even want that anymore from me."

Haley snapped us drinks, "Miley swears a strawberry martini fixes everything. You don't have school tomorrow, right?" I nodded. Haley smirked, "Then pop us to your final destination. Evin just texted they found this reservation." I laughed, "How do you know I have a final destination?" Haley smiled, "Because you are a smart fairy, who is also cunning." I smirked and popped us to my second treehouse.

Haley looked around then complimented, “This is amazing! I’m so proud of you!” We clinked our glasses. With some enthusiasm I said, “Cheers!” Turns out Haley couldn’t get drunk, but I definitely could.

I linked Lacy, “Ohhhhh LLLAACCCYYYY! Are you up?” Lacy replied, “Are you drunk?” I laughed, “That rhymed. Can you spend the night away from Dylan? It’s ok if you can’t.” Lacy instantly told me, “Pop to me, sister. I got you.”

I giggled and said to Haley, “I’m sending you home since you have kids and a mate who speaks to you. Lacy is going to spend the night with me.” Valerie linked me, “Emmaline, are you ok? Ryan is beside himself.” I retorted, “You tell that Benedict Arnold he’s supposed to be on MY SIDE! Mine! My brother, my side. Fair is fair.”

Valerie asked, “What? Lacy just said she’s spending the night with you. Take me too. Maybe I can get an explanation this way.” I countered, “Do you still want to come if you can’t tell Ry where you are? Because you literally can’t.” Valerie agreed, “Sure.”

Haley put a hand on my back, “I can stay if you need me to.” I shook my head, “Nope, go to your mate who loves you.” Haley told me, “Lucas does love you, Emmaline. He’s a stupid asshole, but he’s your stupid asshole.”

I cried, “Is he? Or is he Nikki’s?” Haley laughed, “That she bitch won’t come within a mile of Lucas ever again. She didn’t have a welcomed exit from our home. Ok, I kicked her ass. That’s not the point, if she goes near Lucas again; I’ll kill her.”

I laughed, “I love you and your murder-y-ness. I totally get that now.” Haley smiled, “I’m sure you do. I’ll bring Lacy to you.” I clapped, “Valerie wants in too! Is it safe to say Team Fairy is back in the lead? Team werewolf was winning all freaking week.” Haley smiled and kissed my cheek, “Team Fairy is totally winning.” She popped away and popped right back.

Lacy and Valerie hugged me. Valerie was asking what the hell was going on. Haley snapped and we were all in comfy pajamas. She snapped again and there was another martini in

my hand. Valerie frowned, “Umm maybe she should not have another drink.” Haley laughed, “Fairies don’t get hangovers, and this is as drunk as she can get. I don’t see the problem. Call if you need me, cousin. Don’t worry. I made them leave their phones behind.”

I smiled, “My fairy godmother thinks of everything.” Haley gave me a hug, “Don’t settle for anything less than what you deserve. DEMAND that he treats you better. Next time, kick his ass if he won’t talk to you. He can’t just ignore you for days, that’s not allowed.” Haley popped away.

Lacy, Valerie, and I talked for several hours then we all snuggled into the bed into the treehouse. If Lucas wanted to play, he picked the wrong fairy. Game on, Lucas Lyons. Game on.

Protect Her

Lucas woke up feeling like he was missing something. The week had flown by. On Wednesday afternoon Alex came into my office. He asked, "Have you seen the obstacle course the Luna is working on?" I glanced up startled, "What are you talking about?" Dylan asked, "Is that where she and Lacy have been disappearing to after school? Tell me Lacy isn't participating in said obstacle course. I KNEW I should follow them. Dang this paperwork to the pits of hell. It's interfering with my knowing things."

Alex winced, "Lacy has done some of it. Not like the Luna has been though." Dylan grumbled, "When did we get on obstacle course, Lucas? I should know these things! I would've said we needed to test the equipment. It would've added fun to our day. You bought an obstacle course and didn't even tell me. I am offended at the highest of levels. I pay our credit cards. What charge did you hide this under?"

I told him, "I didn't order an obstacle, Dylan. I didn't even know we had one." Alex smirked, "We do now." He led us outside. Dylan whistled, "This is a legit obstacle course. When did this appear?" Alex looked away, "After the pup shower in Red Run."

Dylan asked, "Why did your mate create this obstacle course? Actually, I don't care. Let's play on it. Can we PLLLEEAAASSSEEE?" I laughed, "We might as well." We played on Emmaline's obstacle course, and we went inside when we were done.

Dylan asked, "What do you think that's about? She just randomly conjured an obstacle course. How the hell did you not know she'd done it? Wait, I know how. You're a workaholic. The pack is going to get a scathing link about my lack of links about this. I must know the things."

I sighed, "She must have done it after I went to sleep that night. I hope she's just running off her nervous energy because I got hurt." Dylan groaned, "I hear a but in there." I sighed,

“But I’m worried she knows something is coming, and she’s training for it.”

Dylan grimaced, “And there it is. I knew there was a but. Technically speaking, we all know who’s coming eventually.” I added, “Nothing I have found indicates David knows about Emmaline being Evelyn Forrester.”

Dylan said, “Again technically speaking she’s Evelyn Walsh.” I sighed, “I have a headache. My mate’s birth name is Evelyn Forrester which she legally changed to Emmaline Richards but technically her birth name is Evelyn Walsh; therefore, she’s technically Emmaline Walsh.” Dylan smiled, “Don’t you worry. I am here for you and all the technicalities.” That was probably good. We worked on paperwork the rest of the day.

Emmaline came to get me for her fairy lessons. She bounded away from me the second she popped us in. After five minutes, I looked at Eric who also looked confused. I asked him, “What the hell is going on? I’ve got a fairy conjured obstacle course, and now Emmaline is being trained like she’s about to go to war. I’d say Haley is in a mood, but that can’t be the case. No one else is training the way Emmaline is.”

Eric sighed, “Haley said Emmaline asked her to change their training plan.” I growled, “She’s dodging Bexley’s sunlight hands.” I winced when she took a hit. Haley popped over to Emmaline instructing, “Fight with your powers, not just your speed.” Haley popped away.

Emmaline started using her ice powers against Bexley’s sunlight hands. Jackson snorted, “She really is Queen Elsa.” I stared at him. He shrugged, “What? I have a little girl. Do you have ANY idea how many times I have watched that dang movie? I swear Matt took her to see it just so she’d sing it all the time. He bought her the digital version the second it was available too. Saied runs around the house singing ‘*Let it go*’ at least three times a day.” I empathized, “I feel for you.” Jackson grumbled, “You have no idea.”

I turned back to my friend, “Eric, why did Emmaline ask for a change in her training plan?” Eric shrugged, “I don’t know, and to be fair I didn’t ask. I only know that much because Haley was up late re-working some plans and I asked what they were.” I frowned, “Would Haley tell you if David contacted Emmaline?” Eric looked grim, “I’d like to think so.”

Bjourn spoke, “David has not contacted Emmaline.” I whirled, “You know what’s going on?” Bjourn nodded, “I have been pinky sworn to silence. Haley wanted help creating a cardio plan and new training plan. I am the obvious choice for that. My mate is the Commander of the Army’s daughter. Had she not been my mate, as the oldest she could’ve chosen to take the spot as our commander. Actually, I’d have let her do both. She chose to train, her charities, and training to be the future queen. I trained with my father-in-law to fight from the time I was walking. My cardio programs are implemented by our entire realm. I do not mess around with cardio.”

I asked, “You got married?” Bjourn laughed, “Not yet, no. I call him father-in-law, and have since I was sixteen. Astrid is mine, she’s my family as is he. In our realm, we are family. We don’t need to be married for that to be true.”

I was curious, “Do you have to ask permission from the family, usually the father, like in this realm?” Bjourn smirked, “No. The only permission I ask for about our relationship is from Astrid. I find the tradition of asking the father here interesting, if not outdated. I can see the argument about respecting the man of the family; however, if who you are dating someone who wants to marry you... why does it matter what the father says? If he says no, do you cast aside the feelings of the one you love and break up? Why is it the partner’s consent is not more valued in this realm? These are the things I ponder.”

Jackson asked, “Weren’t you guys going to have Haley marry Eric for an agreement with our pack?” Bjourn smiled, “Yes, Haley would’ve consented to it before we brought it to him though. We wouldn’t have done it if she was opposed. We were not about to leave her partner to chance. Fate had not

been kind to her in life. We'd been scouting Eric as our top choice for several years. Luckily for us all, it worked out."

I cringed, "Do I need to be worried, Bjourn?" Bjourn assured, "Not at this moment, no. I do believe if that changed Haley would tell Eric." Eric snorted, "She'd fucking better." Hexxi took over with Emmaline, and they fought using their water powers.

I began to pace, "Seriously, this has to be how the fairies prepare for war. We are NOT going to war with David." Eric disagreed, "We will someday. If he's not caught quickly, we will be at war with him and his." I growled, "My mate doesn't need to prepare for war."

Bjourn spoke, "It's better to be prepared and have the knowledge than to not have it and need it. I will say there are a few pieces of this training plan that you will despise. One does not come into play until later though." I groaned, "I hate the cryptic comments."

Bjourn smiled, "I never lie to my little sister, and I promised I wouldn't tell anyone." Eric told me, "Lucas, he wouldn't have promised before knowing why Haley wanted the training plan. If he says David doesn't know about Emmaline, then he does not. You can't fault her for wanting to be more prepared. You would be possessed and driven to train harder if you'd seen her hurt."

I cringed, "I saw her whipped because of Christy's lies and my incompetence; I did nothing." Eric disagreed, "That's not true at all. You are more vigilant now about unknown factors. You have several people being watched. There's not much you can do training wise. You've been training since you could walk. Emmaline has not and now she feels the need to catch up."

I sighed, "She doesn't need to catch up in a few weeks. They could build to that." Eric shrugged, "I think it will be a good thing." He was right, but I still paced the field. Haley was going to have to use some charm to fix the patch I'd created.

Emmaline popped us home, and I talked to her about the training session. I just didn't want her to push herself too hard. I'd seen it happen many times, where warriors push themselves into exhaustion. I carried Emmaline to bed, and she was asleep before I laid her down. I watched her sleep for a while, getting some work done on my laptop. I might have to convince her to take it easy on herself. Maybe after Thanksgiving I could convince her to slow down and focus on the wedding. Fairy's love to plan parties.

The next day, Gina and her mate came into my office. I nodded to them both. I apologized, "Gina, I am terribly sorry about what you suffered." Gina sniffled, "It's not your fault, I know if dad..." her voice broke, "I know if he'd told you... you'd have found us." I nodded, "I would've. We have prepared your father's body. He will be buried on pack lands if that is what you wish."

Gina's eyes filled with tears, "You would do that for him after what he did?" I nodded, "For you, yes. You are a part of this pack as long as you wish to be. If you both want to move on, I'll give you my recommendation to join any pack you like."

Gina shook her head, "No, we talked about it and we want to stay here. Ryker didn't have a good experience growing up in Alpha Hammond's pack like I had here. I want to remember the good times with my dad here. Thank you for letting me bury him here, he would have wanted that."

I nodded, "He did love you, Gina. Everything he did was done for you. He went about it the wrong way, but I could tell he loved you." Gina cried, "I loved him too. I can't believe he did this though." Ryker hugged her and she curled into him.

I spoke after several moments, "My mom said she gave you a list of therapists. If there is anything else you need Gina just ask." Gina looked up, "Will you train Ryker, personally? He could be a great warrior, I know it."

Dylan linked me, "Something about how you don't have the time..." I agreed, "Dylan and I will train him. When do you want to start Ryker?" Ryker looked at Gina, "I'd like some

time to get settled. What about the week before Thanksgiving?”

I looked at Dylan nodding, “We can start on Friday that week. From then on, we can do Mondays, Tuesdays, and Fridays.” His eyes brightened hearing the schedule. I added, “That first week we could do Wednesday as well. That will be your cardio day along with Thursday. My mate has fairy practice with her cousin on Wednesday’s, but Haley gave everyone that Wednesday off to be with family.”

Ryker nodded and stood, extending his hand, “Thank you. I know you don’t have to train me personally with your Beta. I know I’d be well behind your warriors due to our treatment with Alpha Hammond and I do want to learn. I appreciate the time you’re giving me.” They left my office.

I sighed, “Call Alpha Cameron.” Dylan saluted me, “Aye, Aye captain. You do realize training him personally is going to chew up A LOT of our free evenings?” I nodded, “We owe it to him. He deserved better than he got. With us training him, he’ll catch up to our other warriors quickly. We will be able to shuffle him into classes once he’s comfortable. It was the only thing Gina asked of me.”

Dylan groaned, “Do you HAVE to be such a good person and Alpha? Seriously, you’re nauseating.” I laughed, “You’ll live, Dylan.” Dylan grumbled, “So you say. Is this what I have to look forward to for our very long lives? You making us work a lot more than necessary? I SO did not sign up for that. You need to relax and enjoy the scenery. We already have ongoing surveillance on Alpha Raven’s children, Alpha Prater, and his children, oh and Alpha Ezra... he doesn’t have kids thank god. While combing through any sort of trail to find if the Ducant Alpha had more children. Let’s throw in training a warrior. Why not? We obviously have the time. Who needs sleep? Not I Lucas, not I.”

He stopped talking, but I knew he wasn’t done. He did not disappoint, “Why do we have that surveillance by the way? It seems like overkill.” I knew he’s freak out, “It was advice from the moon goddess. She told me we’d need to watch those we make enemies of for the future. I didn’t get the sense it was

for our pups, but it's going to help one of our allies. So, I will keep watching them because I want to help. Who says no to the moon goddess anyway?"

Dylan was gaping at me. I waited several moments for his mind to catch up. Dylan yelled, "Ok... I have so many thoughts. First, I will quote our special fun sized ninja fairy, EXFUCKINGCUSE ME?! YOU MET THE MOON GODDESS? WHEN? HOW? WHY AM I JUST HEARING ABOUT THIS? I thought we were best friends! You're just out here meeting the moon goddess and not telling me. I'm complaining about the amount of work we are doing, and you met the moon goddess? OH, CRUEL UNIVERSE! Did you ask the moon goddess why she thought we could handle this workload and have a oh gee...? I don't know... A LIFE?"

I bit my lip, "We are best friends. I know we are going to spread ourselves thin for a bit, but we will get used to the surveillance reports before my wedding. I met the moon goddess when I was stabbed, and Haley healed me. She told me that Emmaline would handle David with my help. She also said to keep an eye on our enemies for the future. I asked if it was my pups, and she said no."

Dylan said, "Well I'm glad you didn't ask for any more clarifying details, Lucas. That would've been boring and unhelpful. GOD! I'm going to write out a detailed list of questions for you to ask our moon goddess if she gives you another audience with her. Seriously, Alpha's are lost without us Beta's. You can't speak to fairies or goddesses without our help. You got the bare minimum on the details. You're KILLING me, man! And now you're saying I have to have a near death experience to see the moon goddess."

Dylan paused then grinned, "Please oh please let me tell GAP you've seen the moon goddess. I'll forgive you for not telling me sooner. This is too good. You've seen the moon goddess and he hasn't. PLEASE LET ME TELL HIM!"

I admitted, "Eric and Haley have met the moon goddess." Dylan threw the file in his hands, "OF COURSE he has. I HATE HIM! Don't mind me as I sent Beta Caleb a SCATHING memo for not sending one about that. What else

is a memo for? You know what question goes on your list for the moon goddess. WHY dear goddess WHY does God Alpha Prick get EVERYTHING?"

I laughed, "You're not upset that Haley met the moon goddess?" Dylan snorted, "Our fun sized ninja fairy is a goddess herself. I harbor no ill will towards her ever. I am her humble servant. I will not be offending my source of entertainment. That would upset Emmaline, who is now my main line to said entertainment. I cannot upset the apple cart. I'd meet our fun sized ninja fairy if I was the moon goddess too. Wouldn't you? She's amazing."

I laughed, "She's pretty great." Dylan frowned at me, "You're trying to take my fairy fun from me with this schedule." I shrugged, "It won't bog you down too much until right before Thanksgiving." Dylan snarked, "Yeah, because how could that be problematic? Let's make the holidays even more hectic. How can we do that? Throw in extra work. Let's not forget that same timeline has Emmaline's birthday, and a wedding. What could possibly go wrong? The holidays are a carefree, joyous time that aren't hectic at all. Sometimes Lucas... you don't use that brain of yours. I love you though." I rolled my eyes, "You'll live. Alpha Cameron, please."

He dialed. Alpha Cameron answered on the second ring, "Alpha Lucas, I have a bit of a situation on my hands." I cut to the case, "I'll be quick, Gina and Ryker are back in our pack. Gina was raised here but left and joined Hammond's pack when she met Ryker. They brought some concerning information to us regarding his former pack that you acquired."

Alpha Cameron sounded relieved, "You guys have Ryker and Gina? They were on my list of those I was concerned I couldn't locate. That's a relief." I told him, "We rescued them from Alpha Hammond. Ryker brought a situation to my attention, and I wanted to bring to yours."

Alpha Cameron spoke evenly, "Alright, what's going on?" I told him, "It seems Hammond held warriors back intentionally. Ryker gave me the impression they were embarrassed by their lack of skill. I'm going to train him

myself to get him up to speed, but you may have warriors who are embarrassed to tell you of their true abilities. Gina told my mother that Hammond held many back from their true fighting potential.”

Alpha Cameron groaned, “That makes sense. I’ll have to do individual evaluations and come up with a program. Thank you, Alpha Lucas.” I offered, “Anytime. If you need additional trained warriors, I can assign some to help you. I’m sure Alpha Eric and Alpha Kyle can as well.”

Alpha Cameron sighed, “My brother has many warriors that could help. If we can’t get the numbers between myself and Chase, I’ll give you call.” Alpha Chase spoke, “I’m sure we can, brother.” Dylan raised an eyebrow, “Ahh, Alpha Chase. How are you?” Chase answered, “Alright. Great even, probably.”

Dylan smiled broadly, “Color me intrigued.” Alpha Cameron said, “Gotta go. Thank you for the heads-up, Alpha Lucas.” They hung up.

Dylan mused, “Methinks something is going on with Alpha Chase.” I held up my hands, “I don’t want to know. If I don’t know I don’t have to decide if I tell Emmaline or Eric, who then has to decide to tell Haley.” Dylan smiled, “You make it too fun for me to find things out. Anything that ruins GAP’s day is something I must know.”

I growled, “Not this, Dylan. Emmaline and Haley were already feeling... some type of way about this situation. They did some ancient fairy ritual, and there was a LOT of discussion about pain being involved. Lots of pain. Let’s leave this one for now.” Dylan moaned, “Why MUST you take these moments away from me? All work and no play makes Dylan Dull. Dull Dylan is not a moniker I want.”

I rolled my eyes, “No one would call you dull. Anyone who’s met you anyway. Actually, anyone who’s heard of you, your reputation would tell people you aren’t dull.” We worked until it was time for fighting lessons. Dylan was elated when Haley told Lacy to sit out.

I was apprehensive sharing glances with Eric. I sighed, “At least it’s just Haley today.” When Haley and Emmaline popped out Dylan clapped. I growled, “No one said they were fighting outside tonight.” Eric frowned, “Haley said they’d be right back.”

Eric shivered. Dylan said, “I’m sorry God Alpha Prick, did you just get a chill? Or did someone Beetlejuice you?” Eric bit back, “Dylan, shut up before I hurt you. Something is off with Haley.” I sighed, “Emmaline doesn’t feel any different to me.” Eric admitted, “It’s not a big feeling, but it’s from our Hackura bond.”

Dylan smirked, “Don’t you worry GAP, we will not tell anyone you caught a bit of chill.” Eric lunged at Dylan who shrieked and stood up. Eric smirked, “Be careful, one day you will push me too far.” The girls popped back.

Eric’s and my eyes narrowed. Dylan spoke first, “Lacy, I do believe something interesting is happening in my show.” Eric growled at him. Lacy teased, “You just now caught that? I caught that when Haley had me sit out.”

I hissed when Haley knocked Emmaline down with a roundhouse kick. Dylan winced, “YIKES! I see we are not holding back tonight.” Lacy agreed, “So it seems.” Dominic and I were on edge watching them fight the whole time.

As soon as they were done, I was on the mats. I needed to know what was going on. Haley was giving me nothing. Eric directly asked her if there was a threat we didn’t know about. Dylan linked me, “Did you hear that question? He is taking lessons from Beta Caleb, I’m convinced. You need to take lessons from me, so I don’t have to say GAP asked a good question.” I yelled, “DYLAN!” Dylan smiled, “Don’t worry I’ve penciled our sessions into our lunch hour. I’ve got your back.” I rolled my eyes.

Dylan linked me, “They might not know of an imminent threat, but your mate just had this big ass smile. We are missing something.” I growled, “You think?” Dylan tried to get the girls to laugh. He linked me, “But really, I have a bad feelings. Maybe I’m becoming a fairy and getting a power. Or

maybe it's my Beta senses. I pick becoming a fairy. That's much cooler."

Emmaline said it was about me getting hurt. Dylan linked me, "BAD, BAD FEELINGS! I just know this is going to ruin many of my days to come. SO MANY DAYS!" I sighed, "It's not always about you."

Dylan watched Lacy go after Emmaline. He muttered, "Oh contraire, Lucas. This will very much be about me. Not today but someday soon, this little declaration from our Luna WILL very much be about me and my life."

I ignored him, "Haley, this isn't necessary." Haley said, "Oh. Well in that case, I guess we can stop." I paused, "Really?" Haley rolled her eyes, "FUCK NO!" Dylan asked, "Umm did you just lie?" Haley said, "No, if Lucas was right and this wasn't necessary, we could stop and go back to the original training plan. He's wrong though. I can be sarcastic." Dylan took out a notebook and wrote that down. Jesus.

I growled, "That wasn't the first time I've been stabbed." Haley said, "There's a great argument. Hey, I've been stabbed before so obviously it's fine. I've been kidnapped and snacked on by vampires. Eric, are you cool with me feeding one since they didn't drain me of all my blood the first time?"

Eric's eyes flickered black and he roared, "NO!" Haley smiled, "Right and why is that, Thor?" Eric growled, "Just because a group of them didn't drain you the first time doesn't mean another couldn't! They can't have you. YOU ARE MINE! NO feeding vampires."

Haley kissed him lightly on the lips then tapped his nose. She told him, "Thank you, my dear husband, for proving my point. Just because something happened once before doesn't mean it's a good idea to repeat it."

Dylan howled with laughter while I growled. Dylan gleefully pointed out, "She got you there." Haley nodded, "She's fine, my lion. She wants to up her training. Would you deny a pack member that request as their Alpha if they came to you?"

I growled, “Fuck your damn good points! Pop back to your territory to fight calmly and rationally with Eric about something.” Dylan gasped, “LUCAS! WHY are you trying to end my show early? I DO SO MUCH FOR YOU!” Haley laughed, “Goodbye, my friend Dylan. I leave you with my cousin who is also part of your fairy show.” Haley popped out with Eric.

Dylan said, “The show is ten times better when they are together. You ruined the whole thing!” I growled at him. Dylan ranted, “Gosh, I hope you are nicer to your nephew than you are to me sometimes.”

I stopped and turned on a dime asking, “It’s a boy?” Dylan grinned broadly, “Yes, it’s probably best you made GAP leave before I taunted him about my son being mated to a future daughter of his.” I snorted, “Not Cassie?”

Dylan rolled his eyes, “You don’t pay close enough attention to the fairy show. Cassie has been around Lacy, and she didn’t pop to her. EJ couldn’t stay away from pregnant Chelsea. Ergo, my son is not Cassie’s mate, but the chance at a future daughter lingers. Hope abounds, my dear friend.” I laughed and gave him a hug, “Congratulations, Dylan. You’ll be a great dad.”

Dylan and I walked outside. I picked up Emmaline who was concerned I’d given Haley a hard time. Dylan linked me, “Sometimes I don’t think Haley or Emmaline know the restraint it takes Alpha males to watch their mate get hurt and not attack. On second thought, that’s brilliant. Now, I just need to goad GAP into joining my fun. You and Emmaline versus Haley and Eric. I could sell tickets! I NEED to go buy popcorn in bulk. I WILL BE RICH!”

I sighed, “You are rich, you overgrown man-child!” Dylan said, “I WILL BE RICHER! WHOOPEE!” He twirled Lacy around who laughed at him. I talked a bit with Emmaline. I linked Dylan, “Emmaline says this new training is about David and me getting stabbed. He doesn’t know about her, does he?”

Dylan replied, “No, we read through those reports today. He knows nada, and he has no Beta. I’d feel bad for him, but he sucks. So, I spare him no cares.” I calmed down a little. I hated that I understood hers and Haley’s logic. WHY were fairies so damn logical when I wanted them to have a glaring error in their logic? Damn it.

The weeks passed by; I was never at ease with the new training plan. Eric and I paced while Dylan mocked us. Eric thought something else was different, but he couldn’t pin it down. I shrugged it off. The Thursday before Thanksgiving I was reminded that Eric’s feelings are never wrong.

We were watching the girls spar when we heard the fighting. The pack link was filled with shouting, “ROGUES! At least one hundred of them.” I was out the door with Eric. I shifted and began fighting.

I linked Brad, “How the HELL did they get through?” Brad replied, “They were fast, and the border patrol was running on our regular schedule. They either got lucky, or they knew. Since there are so many, I’m guessing they knew. Black Mountain is engaged on the border. They stopped a lot from getting this far.” I growled and began ripping through rogues.

I saw a wolf fly by me. I smirked at a rogue whose eyes were wide. That’s right we have fairies! He should be afraid. Dylan linked me, “You know I reserve cursing for specific moments. Well, prepare yourself. MOTHER FUCKER! GAP just called the FUCKING wind in wolf form. I hate him!” I was surprised it wasn’t Haley.

I spotted Emmaline fighting with a dagger. I turned and kept taking down wolves. Brad linked me, “Does the Luna not have her powers?” I frowned, “Of course she does.” Brad responded, “She’s not using them, and neither is the Princess.”

I linked Eric, “TELL ME they are not shooting themselves up with iron before practices!” Eric growled, “I’m getting the feeling they are.” Dylan practically skipped in wolf form to his next target. He linked me, “I do love the fairy show. They aren’t using their powers. I thought they were practicing their hand-to-hand skills. Now, I have other suspicions.”

I growled, “Let’s hope that’s what it is.” Dylan said, “But I saw you and GAP lock your linking eyes. You’ve put it into the universe that they’ve done some iron type training.... don’t you just know.... That’s exactly what they are doing, shooting up with iron. God bless them and the entertainment they bring to my life.”

I growled and ripped through rogues even faster. Eric and I turned in time to see Haley and Emmaline using their powers. I linked Eric, “Dylan originally thought they were working on hand to hand. He must be right.” Eric didn’t sound happy, “I’m not the optimistic one, they wouldn’t do a high dose.” We shifted back.

Dylan asked, “When did the youngest creepy ninja assassin get here?” Eric said, “You’re not very observant, Dylan. He was here the whole fight.” Dylan growled, “First of all, he has NINJA like powers! Second, sorry I was focused on not dying and didn’t pay attention to the NINJA. Oh wait, no. I am not sorry at all. Off to my show!”

We grabbed clothes. Haley snapped us into them before we could put them on. Eric stared at her, and she stared back. Emmaline popped back to our group with Lacy. I couldn’t decide where to look. Haley teased her brother about being in love.

Dylan said, “For the record, I am such a fan that he’s in love with your mate’s sister. He maybe a creepy scary ninja, but he’s our creepy scary ninja.” I rolled my eyes. Dylan went over to Haley and Emmaline and had them pop him back to our office. I growled in disbelief.

Dylan linked me, “I’m doing the lords’ work. I’m giving you guys a chance to breathe in the fresh air before this confrontation. Also... and quite possibly more importantly... I need popcorn.” Eric said nothing, but his angry aura was practically permeating the air.

I linked Dylan, “We aren’t getting calmer out here, just angrier.” Dylan admitted, “Ok, you caught me. It was an excuse. I really wanted popcorn for the showdown.” I growled at him. Dylan continued, “By the by, Haley is excited GAP

will be mad at her. Fairies are so brave. How did no one notice this group of partial fairies? They have brass ones!”

Eric stalked in my house with me right behind him. I was still holding out hope they weren't dosing themselves with iron, but I was going to be mad regardless. Eric didn't seem able to form a sentence once we reached them.

I tried to get the conversation going, but Haley was in a sassy mood. Dylan linked me, “For me, because you love me, PLEASE ask her to snap us a blanket to share!” I growled, “No.” Dylan complained, “Come on! Aren't you curious what the blanket looks like? I need to know!”

I growled out loud and Eric asked what happened with the girl's powers. Dylan chided, “Again, you mocked my Beta lunch and learn ideas, but GAP there came in with the save... again.” I glared at him. Haley walked over and healed a scratch on Emmaline.

I saw red, “HOW DID OUR WARRIORS LET THAT HAPPEN?” Dylan winced, “She was fighting with a dagger. I can get her broadsword. Those provide less chances to be scratched.” I glowered at him and he took out his phone.

He typed and explained, “Not me ordering the Luna a broadsword pronto. That's what the teenagers say whilst they do exactly what they say not me is doing. I keep hip with the kids. You should try it.” Lacy smirked when she saw what he was doing.

I linked her, “Tell me he's not honest to god ordering a broadsword for Emmaline.” Lacy gave me a measured look, “You know he is.” I cut this conversation off telling the girls Brad already told us about them not using their powers.

Haley's eyes had a bit of gold to them now. Eric linked me, “She really doesn't like it when people tell on her.” I replied, “I see that, I don't really care at the moment.” Dylan asked me, “Can I link Brad to come in here and meet Haley?” I sighed, “No, you giant child, you cannot.”

Dylan pouted as the girls argued evasively. I had enough. Eventually, I gave up and asked Logan because he seemed to

know. He practically confirmed it. I rounded on the girls. I could NOT believe they would dose themselves with iron.

Emmaline denied it. Dylan linked me, “Listen to me and let me help you...” Eric asked what they were shot up with. Dylan complained, “I was going to tell you to ask that. He’s such a GAP!” Haley said sulfur. FUCK! Of course. That had iron in it.

Lacy was quick to point out it was like our own practices with lead. Whose side was she on? I growled because we only did that sometimes. Thinking back, I knew exactly what lessons they’d done them in. We asked why we didn’t know, and they countered with asking why they didn’t know about the lead. That was different! They JUST started doing this. The lead containing silver was done in every pack and as far back as I could remember. I had it done as a pup. It wasn’t a new policy I’d implemented in the past few weeks and neglected to mention.

I couldn’t contain Dominic anymore. Dylan linked me as I pinned Emmaline to the wall, “Lucas... Dominic... whichever one you are. Please, pretty please say nothing.” I growled, “This is not some women’s rights platform! I had every right as her partner to know she was doing this. We were attacked and she was vulnerable. I HAD NO FUCKING CLUE! I should know about this! I was out there thinking she had her powers to use during that attack. I wouldn’t have left her damn side! At MINIMUM, I would’ve warriors alerted to guard their damn Luna.”

Dylan calmly replied, “Be that as it may, say no words. I beg this of you.” Haley was on Emmaline’s side. Naturally. Eric linked me, “I both love and hate that they are fairies. It’s about their safety and having a plan that won’t endanger the pack. Not that they can’t handle it. They didn’t grow up in a pack though.”

Logan understood the problem, but he didn’t enlighten Haley as to what it was. She didn’t get it. I told Emmaline I wanted to know when there were changes made to her training plans, particularly if they were a safety concern. She simply said she wanted my training plan. I can’t write that down for

her or I would. It was a werewolf law. Alpha's didn't write their plans down; they were passed down from father to son. We all had different styles and strengths.

Dylan linked me, "Damn dude... I just got nailed with a glare. What did I do?" I didn't even bother to answer him, I'd had enough. I told her I needed to know when sulfur days were. She said she wanted to know about lead days. Was she serious? I never hid that from her intentionally. It was a werewolf tradition in a pack.

I had to leave before I said something I'd regret. I shifted the second I got outside and howled in anger. I ran as fast as I could. I could hear paws hitting the ground behind me. I could smell Eric and further back Dylan. Emmaline linked me she was going to the Hackura realm. As if she cared about my opinion.

Dominic huffed, "You don't care if she goes to see her sister, you'd want her to any other day. You are just upset about this situation." I admitted, "You're right." After I ran for several hours, I shifted back. Eric and Dylan followed suit.

I dejectedly said, "She thinks I can't protect her. She's doing all this because she thinks I can't beat David Forrester!" Dylan sounded bewildered, "Lucas, that's not true." I admitted, "It feels very true." Dylan countered, "You said the moon goddess herself told you Emmaline would handle it."

Eric tried, "Lucas, this isn't about your ability to protect her. I guarantee you Haley didn't consider the pack side because she's a fierce fighter. So is Emmaline, her natural fairy instinct makes her a good fighter. They just didn't consider that we'd need to know for precautions. Not to keep them out of the fight but to have a better plan in case of an attack. I'll explain it to Haley, she will understand. Emmaline will too." I nodded and took out my phone.

Dylan yelled, "Whoa, whoa, whoa slow your roll Brothers Osborne. Who are you calling?" I told him, "My mates' brothers." Dylan snorted, "Oh, good. Here I thought you were doing something dumb. DO NOT TELL ON YOUR MATE TO HER SIBLINGS!"

Eric cautioned, "To be fair, that didn't go well when I did it with Haley. Much as I dislike agreeing with Dylan, he's right." Dylan waved his hands, "You see? Why are you still on the phone? LUCAS! Hang up!"

Dustin picked up, "Lucas, is Evie ok?" I heard Ryan say, "What's going on?" I snorted, "Other than she's been injecting herself with sulfur to practice fighting with iron in her system, she's great." Dylan winced, "Should I use my powers of being mute for good or evil, GAP? I lean towards evil, but the partial fairy kind of mischievous fun kind of evil. They have a lot more fun." I rolled my eyes.

Both brothers yelled simultaneously, "SHE WHAT?" I didn't bother to repeat myself, "I want you two to train with me." Everyone was silent. Ryan asked, "Huh?" I stated the obvious, "You're warlocks. She's worried about your father and is going to drastic lengths with her safety. Eric and I have learned strategies watching fairy's train. It stands to reason we'd learn more fighting with other supernatural groups. I want to train with you both so I can know how to better fight a warlock."

Dylan nodded slowly, "Ok, we can work with that. That's not as bad as what I thought you were doing. This is good." Dustin agreed, "Alright, I think we should do two sessions to a day to start." Dylan snarled, "OF COURSE you do, you giant warlock fairy jerk." Eric laughed.

Dylan jumped, "I HAVE WITNESSES! GAP LAUGHED at something I said. Write this down you were all a witness to history my friends." Eric rolled his eyes. Dustin asked, "Can you guys be here by four in the morning? I have had tight days lately with starting my own coven and picking up some EMT shifts." Valerie groaned, "Ryan, don't you dare wake me up when you leave with them." Dylan snorted.

Dustin continued, "Then we could do our second session in the evenings." Dylan said, "Joyous day. Three training sessions a day. Here I told Santa I'd been a good little boy, and he is giving me coal. Fat, jolly BASTARD!" Eric looked at the sky trying not to laugh again.

I thought about it, “Dylan and I can make it work. We will have Ryker’s training right after school gets out, then train with Dustin and Ryan. We can all eat a late dinner.” Dylan gaped, “We can totally make it work, we are single men... Oh wait. NO, we have mates. We won’t see them, there will be no sex! NO SEX, Lucas. I am proud of the fact that I am sexually active.”

I winced, “That’s my sister. Besides, you get Thanksgiving off.” Dylan cringed, “A WEEK? I have to go a WEEK without my Lacy loving? WHY LUCAS? What did I ever do to you?” I gave him a look, “You don’t have to come.”

Dylan growled, “We’ve covered this. Where you go, I go you rapschallion. Prepare for so much snark. You CANNOT handle the amount of snark coming your way. You’ll be in a bad mood ALL the time and so will I. This is a great plan. I can’t count the ways this is going to end badly. Do you want to know what the number is? I can’t count that high. The limit does not exist to the possibilities of how this ends badly.”

Eric cautioned, “Lucas...” I cut him off, “I have to prove to her I can protect her. With the goddess as my witness, I WILL protect her. If I have to get up at three in the morning to do that, then I will. I will do whatever I have to do, just as she does to prove I can.”

Dylan hit me on the head, “Lucas William Lyons no one, not even her oldest brother who is the furthest from being sold on you, thinks you can’t protect her.” Dustin cut in, “I am trying! But Dylan is not wrong. If I didn’t think you could protect her, she’d be living with Aubree and me.”

I growled, “She’s mine!” Dylan hugged, “Oh thank the lord! You’re back! I was worried. This weird spirit inhabited your body, and you jam packed our day so full of things we’d never see our mates.” I rolled my eyes, “You’re dramatic.” Dylan frowned “It was worth a shot.”

It was almost midnight when we made it back to the house. Lacy glared at me as she led Dylan upstairs. I was in for a long night because I needed to explain everything to Emmaline. When I got to our room, she was already asleep. Pain hit my

heart when I took in that she looked sad somehow. I should've come back sooner. She'd had sulfur in her system, and she was probably exhausted.

She was reaching to my side of the bed, and I didn't want to disturb her. I reasoned that she'd be less likely to wake up if I spooned her on her side of the bed instead of moving her arms and rolling her over to spoon her.

I linked Dylan, "Wake me up. I don't want to set an alarm because Emmaline is a light sleeper. I want her getting good rest." Dylan was aghast, "So, you care about her sleep? WHAT ABOUT ME? When will ANYONE care about my sleep?" I rolled my eyes and closed our link.

Dylan woke me up all too soon. Fighting with Dustin and Ryan wasn't terrible, but we obviously had things to learn. Dylan told Ryan using the shadows to trip people who haven't had coffee wasn't fair. I actually agreed with him.

Dylan was right about a lot of things. I'd barely seen Emmaline. I'd glimpsed her a few times, but she was always asleep when I left, and she was asleep when I came up to bed. I saw her on her obstacle course on my way in between training Ryker and lessons with her brothers. It was now the highlight of my day.

I knew she was pissed because she wasn't answering my links. It felt as though she'd blocked our connection. If I had time, I'd track her down about it. I almost made it out the door Tuesday afternoon to pick her up for lunch to demand she at least sit in my presence. Of course, a pack emergency came up, and I didn't make it.

By Wednesday Dylan was fed up. He grouched, "That's it! I'm telling Brad to bring Emmaline home." My mom came into the room. I groaned. Lacy and my mom had been on my case. Even my dad told me I needed to take a break and spend time with Emmaline. That's what Thanksgiving was for. I'd make it right then. She'd HAVE to talk to me. We'd be in the same place without me running off for my next appointment.

My mom glared at me while saying, "You can't get Emmy, Dylan. She has tests today. Your maid tells an interesting tale,

Lucas Lyons. WHERE HAVE YOU BEEN SLEEPING?" I frowned, "My room. Where have you been sleeping?" My mom growled, "How odd... Your maid says for the ENTIRE week your side of the bed hasn't been the slightest bit ruffled. As if you weren't sleeping there. Are you TRYING to ruin your relationship with Emmy? If so, bravo son."

I growled, "I've been sleeping on her side of the bed. Her arms are always outstretched on my side facing my pillow. I don't want to move her arms and roll her over to me. I just snuggle on her side." My mom shook her head, "Right, I'm sure she knows that." I frowned, "She can smell me on her pillow."

My mom laughed humorlessly, "Because she'd smell her pillow. She doesn't have werewolf senses. Why on GOD'S GREEN EARTH would she think you slept on HER PILLOW? DALE LYONS TALK TO HIM!" She slammed out of the room.

I asked my dad, "Can she not give me a break?" My dad gave me another one of his Alpha looks, "Can you not give me a break? She's been like this the whole week. She says Emmaline's been moping around."

Dylan chimed in, "Lacy said that too. In the brief moments we get to talk before bed." I frowned, "I don't feel anything that bad from her." I could feel her in my chest, but her emotions hadn't come at me this week. Probably because I'd seen her when she was sleeping.

I shook myself, "Dad, I get to spend time with Emmaline tomorrow. I have some paperwork in the morning, but I'll get up early to do it so we can spend the whole time at Eric's together. Then when we get back it will be just us. I don't know what else to do. She's sleeping when I get up, and when I come to bed. She won't answer my links. I miss her... a lot."

My dad cut me off, "Then GO spend time with her. This is just a job, Lucas. That girl is your whole future." I argued, "I know and I'm doing this for our future. I'm going to prove I can protect her." My dad stood, "Son, I love you but you're an idiot." With that he left.

Dylan burst into song, “Tomorrow, tomorrow, I love you tomorrow, you’re only a day away!” I couldn’t stop my smile, “Yes, I’m really looking forward to tomorrow too.” We got through the rest of our work quickly.

Haley called me at dinner time. I answered, “Hello?” She greeted, “Hello, my lion. I have been waiting to hear back from Dustin and Ryan if they are coming to Thanksgiving dinner tomorrow. Emmaline didn’t answer her phone. Did she tell you if they were coming? I invited them for her because I know she’d like to have them there. I am personally ambivalent about it.”

I winced. None of us had talked to Emmaline this week. I said, “They are here so they can tell you themselves.” Dustin said, “Aubree and I will be there.” Ryan sighed, “Valerie wants to do Thanksgiving with her family this year. We are going to switch every year.” Haley responded, “Ok then. I would’ve invited her family too, but whatever. What’s Emmaline doing?”

Lacy came in announcing, “Sleeping.” Haley sounded surprised, “Wow.... she must stress out about tests. I go the barely eating route. She must go the crashing post test route. I have to test out a pie recipe. Goodbye all! See you tomorrow.”

Ryan asked bewildered, “She’s making a pie? Now I’m sad we won’t be there.” I glanced at lacy, “Is Emmaline ok? It’s only eight thirty.” Lacy glared at me, “Not that you’ve noticed but Emmaline’s been going to bed at seven thirty every day this week.” Dustin frowned, “That’s not like her, I’ll talk to her tomorrow.”

Lacy growled, “Tomorrow, tomorrow, have NONE of you heard the saying seize the day? Something bad is going to happen, and none of you care.” She stormed off. Dylan sighed, “You guys make my life so very hard. What did I do to you? Nothing, that’s what.”

Ryan chuckled when Lacy was out of ear shot, “Pregnant she woves have spice. Valerie has been sassy too.” I agreed, “That they do.” Dylan snidely commented, “Sure, it’s the pregnancy. Absolutely, let’s blame that. Could they be grouchy

they haven't gotten to see their mates much the past week? Nooooo... that would be preposterous. Women. Such strange creatures." We laughed. Dylan sighed, "It's the curse of being funny. Even when you're right, people think it's a joke. I was serious."

The next morning, I got up early. I was excited I would finally be in the same room as Emmaline. Dominic was excited. "Mate will be so proud we've been training with her brothers. We've already made good progress! I can't wait to smell her!" I agreed, "Me too."

After a few hours, Dylan walked in, "Your mate is in a very bad mood, quite possibly dangerous. No, I take all that back. It's absolutely a dangerous mood." I frowned, "What happened?" Dylan winced, "She told me if I looked at her with pity, she was going to punch me in the throat. Then when I said she looked pretty... she said that was the most action she'd got all week."

I growled and pinned him by the collar. Dylan said, "You see? Dangerous. You and Dominic need to get laid. You have a mate, and now you're all grabby because your mate made a lewd comment. Take her aside when we get to GAP's." I admitted, "I plan on it."

Dylan looked worried, "Lacy is concerned about her, she said Emmaline's been acting off. I have to say from our one interaction earlier, I agree. You broke your fairy, and by doing so have broken my entertaining show. Please fix her." I growled, "She's the one who won't talk to me! I link her she doesn't answer. It's blocked or something."

Dylan lamented, "If we could've taken a break somewhere you could have talked to her in person. You know, like a person in an actual relationship." I sighed, "She clearly needed her sleep. I tried to get away, but the universe was not on my side."

Dylan grumbled, "Yeah, I know you did. If only we knew the person who set our schedules. He's such a jerk. Oh, wait. IT'S YOU! I do know you did try to get away though from the

craziness you imposed on our lives, but actually stopping to go and see her was an option that you did not make use of.”

I led us downstairs. I tried to link Emmaline letting her know everyone was ready to go, but it was still blocked. I told Dylan to link Lacy. They popped in a moment later. Emmaline looked beautiful. I couldn't stop my growl when she didn't even look at me and took Dylan's hand. She flipped me off.

My mom glared at me. Dylan linked me, “She just... awesome. This is going to be a good Thanksgiving. We are about to have two pissed off fairy's because you know Haley will take her side. Bexley will probably be there, so three pissed off fairies. Maybe if Haley makes Aiden come, he will be on our side. No, that's wrong too. He's a fairy, he would so not be on our side. It's more entertaining to be on theirs. He has fire hands, Lucas. Don't get my perfect ass burned, please.”

We popped into Eric's home. I linked Dylan, “HER SIDE? SHE wouldn't talk to me!” I heard Emmaline say something to Dylan, but I was so pissed I didn't hear it. Dylan followed me to a different room. He jumped beside me, “Not to split hairs here but... yes she didn't answer your links. YOU could've made time to go talk to her instead of running yourself into the ground.”

I growled, “I HAVE to prove to her I can protect her.” Darrin spoke, “So, this is awkward. We were just standing here.... I was about to say hi.” Dylan rolled his eyes, “Finally! An Alpha. One of you talk sense into him. AHH GAP, I see you back there. I choose you because he listens to you. You are tagged into the game. Go forth and do my bidding.”

I growled, “She didn't even look at me!” Dylan shrugged, “Yes, females tend to ignore you when they are PISSED OFF. It's a thing they all do. She's angry.” Eric interjected, “Let's all go play a game of football.”

Dylan waved his hands, “No, no. That's not what I put you in the game to do. LOOK at him! That's a hell no. Do you know how mad he is? I told you to talk to him. I distinctly recall telling you to talk sense into him.” Eric glared at him.

Dylan grumbled, “Fine, I’m on Lucas’ team.” Everyone laughed and we went outside.

It was a good thing we could heal quicker than humans. There were without a doubt some cracked ribs. When we stopped Eric broke our silence, “Now, that we’ve calmed down. What’s going on?” Dylan honest to god raised his hand, “Pretty please, let me tell you the short version.”

Eric sighed, “You can tell a short version of a story? This I have to hear. Tell me your short story, Dylan.” Dylan smirked, “I was right.” Eric sighed, “Fuck my life, I actually know what he means. You haven’t gotten to see Emmaline this week?”

Dylan smiled, “I knew you spoke my language, GAP .” Eric rolled his eyes, “Anyway, Lucas?” I shrugged, “She won’t answer me in link and now she won’t even look at me.” Eric offered, “I’m not an expert but she probably thinks you were ignoring her. Did you talk at all after you left your office?” I winced.

Jackson whistled, “Lord almighty, buy her a jewelry store Lucas. Maybe if you give your fairy a bunch of shiny things.... you will live.” Harold chimed in, “Just an FYI not speaking to your mate for seven days is.... Well just don’t do it. Not even for twenty four HOURS and definitely not for a week. Not ever.” I sighed, “I tried to link her.”

Jackson ignored me, “Dylan, we have a plan if Eric and Haley fight again. If we are out of town we are renting an Airbnb and locking them in it. OR we will trap them somewhere in the house, they can’t come out until everything is resolved. We even have a fairy in on the plan to help keep a certain fairy from popping out.”

Dylan squealed, “I could kiss you! You know what... screw it!” He leaned in and kissed Jackson on the cheek, “I love you and your brilliant mind, Alpha not so serious somewhat like a Beta Connors brother.” Jackson bewildered asked, “Do you see what you’ve done to yourself and your Beta? He’s crazier than normal.”

I sighed. Eric said, “We need to get inside. I’m surprised Haley hasn’t harassed me about the time. I want to go back in

time and stop her from using google.” Dylan laughed, “Why?” Jackson answered, “She googles everything now. She says it has all this realms answers, and that has led to interesting things.”

Dylan whirled and pointed at Gunner, “You... you are that boytoy lover Haley speaks of, yes? The techy one?” He knew that. Damn. He must be really tired. Gunner laughed, “Yes.” Dylan jumped up and down, “I have a mission for you of the utmost importance. Use your cyber skills to block Haley from using to google to find out what a girl’s day is in this realm is really like.”

Gunner laughed, “You’re a day late and dollar short to that party, Beta Dylan. Harper had me block her from certain searches the moment she started using google. She will never find girl’s day activities on google.” Dylan emphatically stated, “He does the lord’s work, Lucas.” Gunner laughed.

When we got inside we heard Emmaline panicking. I frowned. She wanted Miley to tell Eric and the Hackura something. Dylan said, “OHHHH Haley did something! I can’t believe I was out playing football and missing my show! I would like my award for the world’s best friend. It should be glass and engraved, Lucas. It should be elegant.”

My heart stopped when I walked into the kitchen. Emmaline had changed. I had to stay on the opposite side of the kitchen because I was tempted to throw her over my shoulder and peel that dress off her.

I linked Dylan, “Where the HELL did she get that dress?” Dylan sighed, “You not only broke your fairy, but you also broke yourself. Pick one of the three fairies that are coming to Thanksgiving dinner. One of them snapped it. Sidebar.... WOW That is A LOT of pie on that counter.” It was. All the same type of pie too. Cherry, Eric’s favorite.

I half listened to the situation while studying my mate. I linked Dylan, “Lacy might be right. Emmaline doesn’t sound like herself.” Dylan said, “SHHH my show is on!” Haley tumbled into the kitchen with the Black Arrow. Dylan

immediately linked me, “Twenty bucks says Eric takes Haley in his office.”

I looked at Eric after tearing my eyes off Emmaline who still wouldn’t look at me. I snorted, “I’m not taking that bet. Emmaline won’t even look at me.” Dylan grumbled, “Now, does not seem like a great time for I told you so, but my tired ass has no decorum left. I told you so.”

I heard Nikki yell hello after Eric dragged Haley off. Dylan lamented, “Of course, GAP would ruin the wonderful moment of Haley meeting Nikki for me. This is not my week.” I heard Nikki squeal when she saw me.

She jumped, hugged me, and whispered, “Oh, Lucas bear... hello.” Dylan linked me, “I forgot about this gem of a nickname. I think to get back at you for this hellish week of torture; I will order the warriors to all refer to you as Lucas bear until your wedding.” I groaned, “Why did I like her as a teenager?” Dylan answered, “She had boobs, it’s her only good quality.”

Dylan stiffened. I asked, “What?” He bemoaned, “The universe hates us, it’s official. Emmaline just used her Luna command to make me tell her if you’d had sex with Nikki.” I sighed, “Once and it was... bad.” Dylan happily recounted, “If I recall correctly it was *really* bad. You are the only male I know who didn’t get off your first time.” I sighed, “She just said she’d come too much and couldn’t take it. Was I supposed to say I wasn’t done yet? That sounds awful, and I did get off... in the shower.”

Dylan raised an eyebrow, “Worst first-time story ever. I finished with my hand in the shower. She should’ve known what she was getting into with an Alpha. Everyone knows, literally everyone. Emmaline is mad.” I frowned, “She can’t be that mad, I don’t feel that from her.”

Dylan looked at me like I was crazy, “Your barometer is off. LOOK at her face.” I sighed and engaged in small talk with Nikki. Emmaline’s eyes never left Nikki, even though mine were pleading with her to glance my way.

I stared at Aiden surprise even though I was grateful he'd flung Nikki away from me. She was really annoying. I growled at Aiden though when he took Emmaline from the room. Lacy linked me, "You are my brother, and I love you Luc but you are idiot." I snarked, "I'm aware. Many people have said that to me lately. She still won't talk to me."

Lacy frowned, "She said you didn't talk to her. She's linked you and you didn't answer." I disagreed, "No, I've linked her, but it feels like it's blocked." Lacy's frown deepened, "We need to talk to Haley." Nikki said, "Lucas bear, let's head into the dining room."

Nathan Connors spoke, "Nikki, Lucas' mate is the girl in the orange dress." Nikki frowned, "That little thing? A fairy? The rumors are true?" I answered, "They are." Nikki shrugged, "Well, let's catch up! I'll meet her later and tell her all about your youth!"

Dylan linked me, "Get her hand off your chest before Lacy scratches her eyes out." I looked down and took a step away. I really needed to focus. I hadn't even realized Nikki was touching me. Jackson linked me, "Stay away from her, you're already in enough trouble."

I made a beeline for my usual spot cringing when Nikki sat next to me. Lacy linked me, "Get her hands off you before Emmaline walks in here and sees this. You aren't even paying attention! Stop staring at the door. Focus on keeping Nikki's hands away from you before Emmaline drowns her pathetic ass."

I winced and turned to Nikki until everyone stopped talking. Everyone except Nikki. She kept going on about the good old days. I turned to see Emmaline being led into the dining room by some unknown fairy who shot me a smug look.

I shouted in my link with Dylan, "WHO THE FUCK IS THAT?" Dylan rubbed his temples, "I don't know. All I know is despite the fact that I have been NOTHING but kind to partial fairy's; that full blooded fairy hates me with a burning

passion. That jerk attending Thanksgiving dinner as if he care about the holiday.”

I looked at Jackson. He'd gone to get them. Jackson linked me answering before I could ask, “His name is Fegle, he's Aiden's cousin.” I growled, “What kind of name is that? Aiden's cousin... as in not Haley's cousin?” Jackson sighed, “I don't know what kind of name it is a fairy name. I do know he's not Haley's cousin.”

Emmaline sat beside Aiden and this Fegle shot me wink sat on the other side and began to flirt with my mate. I stood. Jackson grabbed me. I linked Dylan, “I'm going to kill him.” Dylan sighed, “Maybe not at the dinner table. That seems like an outside activity.”

Fegle stood up to greet Haley. For a brief moment, I thought she'd kick him out. My face fell realizing this wasn't a fairy she hated. I glared at Aiden who simply shot me a pointed look as if I was wrong. I stared at Nikki stunned when she disrespected Haley. It was a bad idea anywhere, but in this territory? Was she suicidal? Eric would kill her. Did she not remember the Connors brothers didn't like her?

Every fairy except Emmaline was openly entertained. I linked Dylan, “Emmaline didn't even have an expression until Nikki crawled back to her chair. That laugh didn't sound like her.” Dylan winced, “I agree. You know, we did need another problem to solve. We only have a few major ones on our plate right now. What's one more? There's something wrong with our Luna down to her laugh. Sounds good. This is fine. The room isn't on fire while we sit and eat. Nope. All good.”

Haley had Eric carve the turkey. I barely looked at the food they passed around. I couldn't take my eyes off Emmaline. She was smiling at Fegle who Dominic wanted to lunge across the table and kill him. I had half a mind to let him do it. Emmaline's smile wasn't reaching her eyes though. She seemed really off.

Haley glared at me when Emmaline asked where her brothers were. I only knew where Ryan was, Dustin should be here. Haley explained the girls weren't feeling well and I still

had no clue why that was my fault in Haley's eyes. Fegle started talking to Emmaline about Halber saying how good she was. I growled at him.

Haley whispered, "Stop that right now, Lucas." I stared at her astonished, "He's flirting with MY mate." Haley hissed, "Funny how now she's your mate. Where the FUCK was that this last week? I never thought you were so cruel. After dinner, we need to have a chat. Let Fegle try to cheer her up, you've done enough damage."

Eric, Jackson, and I all stared at her in astonishment. Dylan linked, "What does that mean? That does not sound good. Did... did we actually break your fairy?" I sat back in my chair staring at Haley who was clearly linking Eric.

Did I hurt Emmaline? I... I know I should've tried harder to talk to her in person, but she wouldn't answer my links. She could've just popped away if I'd gone to talk to her. Cruel. Haley said I was cruel. Dylan linked me, "Nikki's hand is on your thigh and while it doesn't look like Emmaline is watching... she is, and she somehow noticed. Fairy's peripheral vision is... insane. I'm making sure the Beta community knows this. Get her hand off you for all our sakes."

Before I could move Haley leaned forward and whispered, "It's Nikknasty, right?" My eyes widened. Nikki said, "It's just Nikki." Haley shrugged, "Whatever you say Nikknasty. Take your fucking hand off my lion right now, or I will charm you to spend the rest of your wanna be Luna title grabbing life to believe you have snakes wrapping themselves around you. Jackson told me you hate snakes. My lion is my cousin's mate. You do NOT want to attempt to steal from my family. I will gut you like the spineless wench you are. Just ask Claudzilla and Chisassty. Let me guess you all were friends?"

Nikki moved her hand immediately. I gaped at Haley. Dylan asked, "Can I clap? Is that inappropriate?" I linked back, "Yes." Nikki said, "Well... the three of us were close." Haley groaned, "Of fucking course you were. Eric, I need to know who ALL of Claudzilla's friends were. They appear to all be problems. Seriously, how could you be friends with

Claudzilla? She was awful. Never mind so are you, I get it. You were awful fucking werewolves together.”

Nikki gasped, “I am a member of this family and you can’t....” Haley let her eyes blaze, “I suggest you sit there, say nothing, and don’t look in Lucas’ general direction or some help me god... I’ll take this fork and jab it into your eye socket, pop your eyeball out, and make you eat it.” That would make Black Mountain love her more. No one liked Nikki here because she always ordered people about. I saw several omega’s already whispering about it. The news of their Luna’s threats were going to raise her popularity to an all-time high.

Dylan begged me, “PLEASE let me do a slow clap. If I throw a roll at you and Nikki looks at you.... Does that still count? I think it would.” I couldn’t answer him. Dominic wanted to take over. He wanted to rip Fegle’s head off then find out why Haley said we’d been cruel to Emmaline. I hadn’t meant.... I was trying to make sure I could protect her. She was my everything! Surely, she knew that.

I linked Eric, “If that fairy winks at me one more time while he flirts with my mate, I’m going to shift.” Eric sighed, “I wouldn’t blame you. Something tells me Haley would stop you from killing him.” I asked, “What is up with the fairies? They are acting like I tried to kill Emmaline.” Eric sounded sad, “We will find out. Haley is pretty mad though.”

Dylan linked me, “Lacy is wincing and Emmaline finally has an emotion besides fake happy, actually sad, and mad. She’s gone like six levels above mad, and now looks like she may murder someone.” I replied, “Ask Lacy why.” Dylan praised, “Look at you getting your Beta blood flowing with the right question. Emmaline is mad her brothers are on your side.”

I frowned, “My side? We were training.” Dylan said, “Lacy doesn’t know that. I’ve barely had time to lay eyes on her. I wasn’t wasting that time with the itinerary of my intense day.” Fegle stood and asked Emmaline if he could take her to the chapel. She stood and so did I.

I couldn't stop Dominic growl, "OVER MY DEAD BODY!" They had already popped away. Haley stood, "Before you Alpha males rush off after them, I'll remind you it's pointless. You can't catch them unless they want you to, which clearly they won't."

Lacy winced, "Emmaline has a plan." I growled, "A plan for WHAT?" Haley said, "Don't fuck with a fairy if you can't handle the hijinks. Angry hijinks are worse." Dylan muttered, "I don't like the sound of that one bit."

I growled and shifted. I took off for the chapel. I heard them pop away before I burst through the doors. Eric threw me outside before I could destroy the chapel. I fought several people for what seemed like a long time when my phone rang.

I was breathing heavy when I answered, "Nick?" Without pleasantries Nick asked, "What the hell is going on? Why is Emmaline telling me to tell you to enjoy Nikki, and mind you I'm assuming that is the Connors cousin Nikki on their mother's side. Emmaline just checked into a hotel in Red Run with a male fairy. Ben is coming to show me his Beta Chat text group. I'm getting yelled at by my wife about something YOU did, and none of us know what that is. What happened?!"

I growled, "Get her to your pack house. I'll get a fairy ride if it kills me." I hung up and stalked into the house and briefly paused when I walked inside. Dylan laughed, "I went to the wrong show." Haley and Nikki were in an all-out brawl, and Nikki was losing badly.

Eric growled menacingly. Haley called the wind and threw Nikki through the wall in the main room. Haley shouted, "Bitch, I will fucking kill you! Stay away from Lucas! He is NOT yours." Haley chanted in Fealish.

Aiden's mate, the queen, said, "Aiden, we MUST host one of these events Haley has googled. They all have to come to our realm. No one would ever top our dinner party. We would be the talk of the century. This has been the BEST dinner of all time!"

Dylan disagreed, “It’s been a disaster of epic proportions.” Aiden laughed, “In Faerie this would be a hit, epic even.” Dylan got on his knees, “Fairy Queen Lucinda, please invite me to this dinner. I love fairies. In fact, I’m the partial fairy’s biggest fan.”

The Queen smiled, “As the queen, I name Beta Dylan an emissary of the consort of the water fairy duchess Emmaline. You are welcome in our realm. I have heard a lot about you. Aiden said you give our dear brother-in-law fits. You are a MUST have at my dinner. Call me, Lucinda.”

Dylan twirled her around. He told me, “I know you are having a bad day, but LIFE GOAL ACHIEVED! I can go to Faerie! It’s a twenty-four seven fairy show, AND I’M INVITED! THE QUEEN has invited me. Thanksgiving has taken a sharp turn around to fun town.”

Nathan grabbed Nikki telling her how disappointed he was in her and took her outside with Cassandra on his heels. Haley whirled on me, “YOU!” Dylan froze, “SHIFT AND RUN, LUCAS! SHIFT AND RUN!”

My phone rang and I held up a finger to Haley whose jaw dropped. She asked, “Did he just...” Aiden gleefully answered, “He did, little sister.” Haley stomped her foot and looked at Eric. I sighed, “Emmaline left Red Run. We need to find her.”

Dylan chimed, “Whose your favorite person? It’s me, I know I already found her. She just checked into a hotel in our territory with Fegle. I don’t know what’s going on, but Emmaline thinks you don’t care about her. She won’t unblock your link.”

Haley cut in, “Because she FUCKING CAN’T, YOU IDIOTS!” I asked, “What do you mean?” Haley said, “Do you know what happens when a fairy becomes depressed?” Eric muttered, “Oh, shit.” I frowned, “I don’t feel depression from her.” Haley raised an eyebrow, “Do you feel anything? HAVE you felt anything?”

I started to speak and stopped. I hadn’t felt much of anything from her all week. I asked, “You think she’s

depressed?” Lacy whispered, “Oh my god. That’s why she said she was glad she had Haley handling the details of the wedding. She said she didn’t want to plan anything! FUDGESTICKS! I should’ve known. Fairies love to plan parties.”

I had been looking at Lacy, so I missed Haley marching over to me. She kicked me in the balls and then punched me in the face. She told me, “I don’t give a shit what your reasons are, but to be frank they better be good for not speaking to her for seven days. How could you do that to her? Did you not notice she stopped picking up on people being upset and trying to fix it? Wait, you didn’t notice because you’re an ASSHOLE who stopped talking to her! FOR SEVEN FUCKING DAYS!”

I stood, “I tried to link her.” Haley glared at me, “Depressed fairies shut down. She didn’t even try to shut you out, Her body did it because she feels like you left her. She’s fucking soul tied to you, and you shut her out.”

I yelled, “NO! No, I was training. I’ve been training with her brothers on fighting warlocks. I have another new pack member who needs my personal training. I’m monitoring over thirty people and have had a million pack emergencies.”

Haley glared at me, “Unless you want to become a single man again, I’d advise you to STOP FUCKING ACTING LIKE ONE. You don’t get to have weeks where you don’t talk to your mate. She’s not some stress relief fuck, she’s your goddamn mate! Act like it!”

Dylan cleared his throat, “Emmaline’s not at the hotel, and she left her phone there.” I ran a hand through my hair and saw Gunner. I asked, “Can you track her ring for me?” Haley spoke to him angrily in Latin. Gunner cleared his throat, “That’s for emergencies only. I gave her my word I would only do that if she’s in danger.”

I growled, “She’s with a fire fairy we don’t know.” Haley pointed out, “A fire fairy YOU don’t know. We know him, and you can send him a fucking thank you card. The fairies in the room have been trying to comfort Emmaline by our presence and complimenting her since she got here. Which is a hell of a

lot more than you've been doing the last week. Before they popped out, her sorrow had gone down."

Eric looked at me. He went to Haley and stroked her back, "Angel...." Haley asked, "What? He's being an ass! He's acting like he's single man, and completely forgetting his mate's soul is intertwined with his. He didn't talk to her! She didn't realize he was fucking busy, which is a shitty excuse in the first place! She thinks you don't love her. Every fairy in this room knows that because her soul was shattered, and that can only mean she believes you don't love her."

I went to my knees. Dylan and Eric grabbed me. Lacy whispered, "She's right. Emmaline said Eric must love Haley more because he's talking to her. She thinks you want Nikki." I gripped my chest, "I don't want Nikki! That's crazy!"

Haley tensed and looked at Aiden announcing, "I have to go!" Blade came forward but missed her by a hair. Aiden was tense until his phone beeped. He showed Blade his text and Blade took off.

Aiden's daughter said, "Daddy, you need to have a class with the werewolves about fairies. They don't know anything. Can I pop home to catch a spritle with my friends?" Aiden laughed, "Of course you can, Princess." She popped out.

Dylan linked me, "We just got called idiots.... by a six-year-old." I couldn't answer him. Aiden commented, "Before I get into your fairy lesson, this google my sister speaks of; is that a subscription I can pay for her to continue to have? It's delightful."

Eric growled at him. Dylan of course answered, "It's a free search engine. You don't have to pay for it." Aiden smirked, "Stupendous. Emmaline's wolf, do you know who the most emotional fairy is in all of Faerie is?" I stood, "I'm guessing it's Emmaline." Aiden smiled, "The soul searcher. Which at this time is Emmaline, yes. She feels far more deeply than any other fairy." Dylan winced.

Aiden smiled continuing, "For example, if before I met Lucinda, I was dating someone who didn't talk to me for a

week it wouldn't bother me because I do not care. I will do something else or someone else." I growled.

Aiden smirked, "Emmaline cannot handle such intense reactions because she is the soul searcher. As it happens, her soul is tied to you. If she feels disconnected from her soul, her tie lashes out at her. She will sleep, eat, and maybe one other thing. She will lose all interest in anything else."

I groaned, "I'm... I'm sorry. I was just trying to prove to her I could protect her from David. I thought she was ignoring my links." Dylan asked, "Is there a way to make her emotions more stable like Haley's?" We all looked at him.

He shrugged, "What? I know from Lucas at the summit Eric and Haley weren't in a good place, but she showed up to everything." Aiden answered, "True, but her wolf didn't stop talking to her. He was practically her shadow. He lived for their trivial conversations. She was the one who withdrew into her shell, but her wolf didn't go away. As it is, Beta Dylan, do you want to know who the second most emotional fairy is?"

Eric groaned, "Fuck me." Jackson agreed, "Seconded brother." I answered, "Haley." Aiden smiled, "Again with a name." Dylan supplied, "The Truth Seeker. It has to be the Truth Seeker." Aiden smiled, "Did I not tell you, Lucinda? I like that wolf. Right, you are Dylan. Do you know who's the third?"

Jackson grumbled, "If you say Bexley, I'm kicking your ass on principle." Aiden laughed, "No, Healers are the third most emotional fairy because they can sense the physical damage one is suffering. They can also glean mental anguish. Plus, you are forgetting Haley took on Emmaline's pain in an ancient ritual. To a degree, your mate bond being messed up affects her because she is holding on the name of Alpha Chase's mate for Emmaline. She's not meant to have the soul searchers ties to such things." I groaned.

Eric asked, "Why did I not know this?" Aiden said, "You haven't needed to. Emmaline will always be more sensitive to emotions than Haley simply because of her power as the soul searcher; however, Haley is a close second. It's why my little

sister will never be truly free of her flashbacks and panic attacks. They may come and go, but her soul is too sensitive to handle what was done to her. I am nowhere near as sensitive, and I have sought counseling for the things I have seen.”

His voice broke. “Emmaline is not designed to feel unloved. It’s part of why she kept moving from place to place. She was looking for a place her light knew she would find love. It’s why she stayed here. David throwing her aside along with her mother had to shatter her. The thing that kept her going was her love for her siblings.”

Gunner looked up from his tablet, “Emmaline is in this territory in a hotel. She has a reservation under her name at one of Eric’s hotels.” I asked, “Is that where Haley went then?” Gunner shrugged, “That I do not know.”

Aiden offered, “Haley answered a call to protection from a partial fairy.” Eric growled, “ALONE?” I was worried, “Emmaline is hurt?” Aiden assured me, “No, Emmaline called to Haley the only way her brain could process to since she doesn’t have her phone.”

I sighed, “Let’s get to the hotel.” Aiden laughed, “You can have my sister’s wolf send people, but to go yourself is a waste of time. They won’t be there.” I growled, “I need to talk to her.” Aiden shrugged, “Too bad, so sad. That is the saying here, isn’t it?” Jackson sighed, “Yes.”

Aiden grinned broadly, “I knew it. My sister is not wrong, you are not a single man. Cease acting like one. Emmaline is young, but even if she wasn’t, she deserved better than you have given her this last week.” I hung my head, “You’re right.” Eric groaned, “Don’t tell him that.”

Bexley offered, “I’ll pop you home.” I asked her, “How do I get her to talk to me?” Bexley admitted, “Your hope is my cousin. If she can get Emmaline to cry and share her sorrow with her, she will begin to come out of her depression.” Aiden chimed back in, “Prepare your territory for a very drunk fairy.”

Eric frowned, “Haley can’t get drunk.” Aiden’s eyes lost a little sparkle, “True, which is sad for her. Emmaline can get drunk though. Alcohol brings the fairy out of an emotionally

depressed state of feeling nothing. Well, once they've shared their sorrow."

I asked hopefully, "Will our link unblock?" Aiden said, "No, that will remain blocked until she feels like you love her." I yelled, "I DO love her!" Aiden held up hands, "I am aware, but I am not the one you need to convince. Haley will tell her you love even though she's angry with you. In the future, keep in mind wolf, you cannot ignore your own soul. Emmaline is a part of yours as you are hers." I nodded.

Bexley popped our group home. I asked, "Can we get her back to normal before her birthday? I planned a party for her." Dylan asked, "In what spare time? Do you sleep?" I walked over to where our mail sat. I pulled out invitations I'd ordered.

I told them, "I knew they were coming today; I was going to show her when we got home. I was hoping Bexley or Haley could get Marcious, Hexxi, and... I guess Idel's I can send to Beta James address." Bexley told me, "When you pin her location down, I'd show her those."

I frowned, "When I pin her down?" Bexley laughed, "You started a game with a fairy that she's now playing. Haley texted me she's drinking with Emmaline. Sorrow is shared, the drunk phase initiated, next is the game."

I groaned "She's going to play catch the fairy?" Bexley shrugged, "That I do not know. As she set up three hotel rooms and checked into all of them and now is in some location that not even Gunner could find a paper trail for... I'm going to say catch the fairy might not be her game. Getting even sounds more like the name of this game."

I sat down on the couch dejected. Eric put a hand on my back, "It will be alright, she loves you." I frowned, "I made her feel like I didn't love her." Eric winced, "You'll fix it, because you do love her." Dylan cut in, "Did anyone else notice GAP came with our group? I for one, did not. Wait one second, Lucas. I have something for you."

He went to the back porch and came back in with the doghouse he'd bought me. He set it down, "I have your sleeping arrangements while we play pin down the fairy and

convince her to stop playing the revenge game.” I actually started laughing. When I stopped I said, “Thanks for that, Dylan.” Dylan smiled, “Of course, I always have your back.”

Ryan and Dustin entered the house. Dustin asked, “Is she here?” I sighed, “We don’t know where she is, other than she’s with Haley.” Dustin frowned, “Emmaline isn’t answering her phone. I’m confused on what’s going on here. Lacy texted and said there was an issue. The princess texted and called me an ass. She doesn’t seem warm and fuzzy with me but an ass is new. So... what gives?”

Brad and his mate, Chasity, came into the room. Brad put Emmaline’s phone down beside me. He told me, “Emmaline wasn’t there by the time we arrived.” Chasity smiled, “But do thank the Luna for getting us out of Brad’s parent house.” Brad sighed.

Chasity asked, “What? They haven’t decided to like me yet. I think I’ll have to pop out a pup to bring them around.” Brad’s face flushed. Valerie sat down by Lacy. Lacy laughed, “Emmaline is drunk. I’m tagged into team revenge.”

I stood excitedly, “So she will pop to you then, that’s great! I can try to talk to her.” Ryan added, “We can all talk to her.” Valerie admitted, “She’s coming to get me too. Maybe she will fill me in on what the HELL is going on here.”

Haley popped into the room, flipped me off, then grabbed Valerie and Lacy. Once she had she popped away I sat back down. Dylan assured me, “We will track Emmaline down. Lacy said they are safe. We could check her treehouse.”

I sounded pathetic to my own ears, “She won’t be in her treehouse or sanctuary because I could find her. I do believe the point is that I don’t find her.” Haley popped back, “You’re right. She’s not in the treehouse I conjured for her, or her sanctuary.”

Dustin asked, “Where is she? We need to talk to her?” Haley turned to Ryan and Dustin. She crossed her arms, “Did I give either of you the impression I was talking to you? I wasn’t in case you were wondering. I texted Katie, you are

hers to deal with. She said she would come up with something really fucking creative. Those were even her words.”

Ryan asked, “What the hell did we do?” Haley turned, “Did you, or did not, ignore your sister’s calls or texts this last week?” Ryan looked down. Haley continued, “Don’t worry I know the answer. Harper’s boytoy lover already told me you didn’t. Training with Lucas isn’t a bad idea, but you KNOW your sister. You should’ve known she needed more time with him. No... no this is Katie’s domain. I still don’t like you.”

I explained, “I was trying to prove I could protect her.” Haley rubbed her face, “Eric, I’m tired and pretty pissed off. I can no longer speak idiotese, my ability has faded. What fucking nonsense is my lion saying?”

Eric told her, “When you guys didn’t tell us about your sulfur days, combined with the new training schedule... Lucas and Dominic felt it was a reflection on their mates’ feelings that they couldn’t protect her.” Haley was baffled, “Idiotese translator says what now?” Eric was trying not to laugh, “Angel...”

Haley turned me to, “Are you OUT of your FUCKING mind? Did you not hear her say it was about you being stabbed? I recall her saying those EXACT FUCKING WORDS! This wasn’t about your ability to protect her. It’s about her ability to protect YOU! Unfuckingbelievable. This is why you share these thoughts with a woman. We could’ve explained you were being a fucking dumbass. Where were you sleeping?”

I frowned, “In our bed.” Haley raised an eyebrow, “Emmaline said you weren’t, and she can’t lie.” My mom jumped up, “I TOLD YOU! I told you she wouldn’t know that. Does anyone listen to me? No!” She stormed out while my dad put his head in his hands.

I explained to Haley that I’d been on Emmaline’s side, behind her, and she just shook her head. She huffed, “For the record, I told her that you loved her. I also told her to kick your ass if you EVER try to pull this again. I wouldn’t let Eric get away with not speaking to me for days on end. Even when

I was mind fucked and pissed about Claudzilla, I spoke to him. He didn't let me ignore him. Even though they were meaningless conversations, we had them. I'm not saying we haven't done stupid shit in our relationship; we have and we will again because we are not perfect, but we TALK! Fix this, my lion."

I asked, "How do I do that? Bexley made it sound like she would be out for revenge. Where is she? I'll go talk to her." Haley cryptically replied, "Somewhere you cannot go." I shot up, "Tell me she's not in Faerie." Haley gritted her teeth, "You can go to Faerie, you're her consort. You just need a fairy to walk through the portal or pop you in." Ok, at least that was something.

I frowned, "So what do I do?" Haley advised, "Prove that you love her." I asked, "How do I do that if she won't talk to me?" Haley sighed, "Do I have to do everything? Find her." I frowned, "How can I do that?"

Haley sighed, "So the words you were looking for were yes, Haley you do have to do everything. She's on the property. You can't go where she is, but you CAN find her. Last I checked, your sense of smell is out of this world good. My friend Dylan, that is a fabulous doghouse, but I believe you're missing one."

Haley snapped and Dylan had a matching one. Dylan frowned. Haley offered, "Lacy's mad at you too. She didn't know a lot of the things you guys were doing." Dylan complained, "We were just so busy!" Haley shrugged, "Excuses are not welcomed here. We own up to our bullshit. Own yours. I fucked up by not telling Eric about the sulfur days. I should've pushed Emmaline harder to include you guys. That's my damn fault. I'm her princess, cousin, mentor, and trainer. I knew better. Own. Your. Shit. Find your mates with your super scenting noses. I'd bring your dog houses if I were you. I feel a storm blowing in."

Dylan looked confused, "The forecast is clear." Haley sat down, "ERIC! I can't. No one understands me here, and I don't want you to have to translate into idiotese anymore." Eric laughed, "Alright Angel, let's go home." She swatted his

hand, “Do you have any more bitchy she wolf cousins who need an ass kicking?” Eric laughed, “No, the rest are fine.”

Eric linked me, “Haley is going to make it rain here, probably buckets.” I sighed, “Of course she is.” They popped out. I sighed, “Haley’s going to make it rain.” Just then thunder cracked in the sky and it started to pour.

I sighed, “Let’s go, Dylan.” I picked up my doghouse and Dylan begrudgingly picked up his. He told me, “For the record, you WILL have to make this up to me.” I nodded, “I know.” We set our dog houses outside and shifted. We followed the girls’ scents. They were in a forest area close to Eric’s border. I linked Dylan, “Emmaline made another treehouse.”

We ran back to the house and grabbed our dog houses. We made the trek back to the treehouse we couldn’t see. We set our houses down and climbed inside. Dylan called, “Good thing I ordered Deluxe dog houses for my joke, you’re welcome.” I actually agreed, “True, at least you didn’t buy small ones.” Dylan said, “Hopefully when she’s not drunk, your little fairy notices you out here.”

I swore, “I’ll get her to talk to me. I’ll hand my title over to you if necessary, but this won’t happen again.” Dylan climbed out of his doghouse yelling, “OH NO! NO, NO, NO, NO, NO! YOU are the Alpha. Emmaline is the Luna.”

I told him sincerely, “If that’s what I have to do to prove to Emmaline that I love her Dylan, I’ll do it.” Dylan shrieked, “Again, NO! WHAT HAVE I DONE TO DESERVE THIS MOON GODDESS? I am a good person!” He ran back into his doghouse.

Dylan linked me, “She won’t want you to do that. We just can’t be so busy you don’t spend time with her. We even talked about that before.” I said, “I know, I’m just telling you I’ll do whatever I have to do to fix this... To fix her.”

Dylan growled, “I will kick BOTH your asses! I will move heaven and earth so that doesn’t happen. Order chocolates and flowers on your phone NOW! NO, WAIT; you order jewelry, and I will cover the chocolate and flowers.”

I replied, "She likes blue roses." Dylan informed me, "You are buying ALL the blue roses in the damn tri-state area." I knew he was serious. I sincerely told him, "I don't care, do it. Buy all the ones you can find; we can afford it." Dylan snarked, "Some of them will be here in the morning. Rush order. Sorry not sorry."

I laughed, "Again Dylan, that's fine." He asked, "When did you have time to plan a party and order invitations?" I admitted, "In some meetings. I had Gemma plan a tentative menu, but she's got the cake ordered."

The next morning, pack members brought the flowers I'd ordered via Dylan to the forest. I could smell Emmaline's scent stronger now. The rain had become a light drizzle. I linked Dylan, "Emmaline's outside her treehouse." Dylan asked incredulously, "We can't even see her when she's outside? You just have to love fairy magic. I really do want a treehouse of my own."

I counted flowers, "You ordered fifty dozen blue roses?" Dylan snorted, "That's all that I could get here today. I ordered so much more than fifty dozen. I WILL NOT take over as Alpha. I'll order all the damn blue roses in the country if I have to, but I won't be the Alpha."

I began to feel Emmaline slightly in my chest, she was hopeful. I took the roses and arranged them in the field of the forest. Other warriors brought a ton of blue rose petals. I looked at Dylan who ordered, "Don't look at me, scatter them around the field! She's still out here."

I scattered the roses between the arrangements. The chocolates arrived next. I asked, "Dylan, give us a second." Dylan gaped at me, "Really? Fine, I'll just go back inside my doghouse. Lacy, I smell you and I'm sorry. Your very own favorite chocolates are in our room. Overnighted from Europe. Yes, I know it's not fair because you've been craving it. I never said I'd play fair when it comes to you though. Lucas is down here with his crazy talk. I've got Travis helping me with plans. We've gone off the rails. Someone has to reign the Frost men in. We've run amuck in your absence. Poor Jacqueline is all alone trying to reign us in. She doesn't know she has no

shot containing me. Poor thing, you should save her.” He went into his doghouse.

I looked up, “Emmaline, I am so beyond sorry. I swear, baby girl, I wasn’t intentionally ignoring you. When you’re ready I’ll explain everything to you. I let myself get too busy trying to do too many things. Nikki means nothing to me; I actually wasn’t even paying attention to her. To be quite frank, I should’ve been. She never should’ve touched me. I’m sorry you saw that, and.... I’m just so damn sorry.”

I pulled at my hair, “I’m an asshole. I don’t care if you want to yell, scream, or glare at me. I just want to talk to you. I’ve missed you so much.” I took a breath, “Like I said though, this is your timeline. I’m here when you’re ready.” I crawled back into my doghouse.

My dad linked me the jewelry I’d ordered had arrived. I had him arrange it in a heart on our bed. Dylan and I spent all day Friday and Saturday in the area. More flowers arrived. The living room was practically a chocolate factory. My dad thought we were somewhat insane.

On Sunday afternoon a pop sounded outside the doghouses. Dylan cried, “Thank the goddess! Do you all have any idea how uncomfortable a doghouse is? I miss my bed. I miss you, Lacy.” Lacy pointed out, “You could’ve shifted.” Dylan kissed the top of her head, “You see... Do you see why I need you? That’s brilliant. Never leave me again. I am but a lost ship without you. There are oodles of your favorite things in the house. Your dad thinks I’ve gone cuckoo for cocoa puffs. He actually said that.”

I came out to find Emmaline regarding me wearily. She sounded sad, “Haley said you had something to say to me.” Dylan linked, “Our special fun sized ninja fairy was right. She really does have to do everything. I bow to her awesomeness, and I’m sending her.... Lacy said she likes strawberry martinis. I will order her a bartender for the day who will make them for her all day long.” I linked, “Put it on my card.”

I spoke to my mate, “I do have something to say, baby girl.” Emmaline shrugged, “Then say it.” Dylan tapped his

wrist, “My, my, my look at the time. Lacy and I must be going.” They took off like a shot, and I turned to talk to my mate.

Lashing Out

Emmaline woke up with a start. I was surprised I didn't have a hangover. I vividly remembered the first time Katie got drunk. I held her hair back the next morning, and we stayed in her room all day so no one would ask questions. Ry assumed she had food poisoning since he wasn't with her at the party. She'd gone with her boyfriend at the time. Since Ry didn't like him, she didn't tell him she was going. We just let everyone believe that, and no one ever asked us if it was true. Luckily, I felt perfectly fine.

I sighed and went outside. There was a slight drizzle that my water side welcomed. I was stunned to see two dog houses right below me. I watched in shock as pack members brought out dozens upon dozens of blue roses in vases.

Lacy came outside and linked me, "Good lord! How many roses did he get?" I spoke out loud, "They can't hear us, but I have no idea." We counted them together. Lacy whistled, "Fifty dozen. They even slept outside in their dog houses." I frowned, "That's not what I wanted. I just didn't want to be around him." Lacy rubbed my shoulders, "I know, I didn't really want to be around Dylan."

I turned to her in surprise asking, "What?" Lacy sighed, "They were doing a lot of stuff I didn't know about. This all could've been prevented with more communication. I get that he's my brother's Beta, but I'm his mate and your Beta female. Nothing about what they were doing was vital information to the pack that I couldn't know. I understand sometimes that will happen, but this situation wasn't it."

I shrugged, "He's got a big heart, Lacy. A kids heart." Lacy smiled, "He does. I really thought he'd lose that after his parents left. It was supposed to be a summer vacation trip, but they never came back." I frowned, "That's right, they didn't come to the wedding."

Lacy started to pace, “No, they didn’t. I’m so mad at them! They were like a second set of parents to me. I know Dylan will NEVER admit it, but he really thought they’d come to the wedding. I want to smack them because of how much they’ve hurt him and Travis. Have you met Jacqueline? They are so sweet together.”

I smiled, “I haven’t ever officially met her, but I do know who she is.” Lacy laughed, “You’d have to since you told Travis about her.” I smiled a little, “I’m happy they are happy.” We watched Lucas scatter blue flower petals in between all the arrangements.

I mused, “I guess he goes all out on apologies. I wish he’d cared that much this past week.” Lacy admitted, “I know some things, but I think you guys should talk. I think that’s a huge problem right now. None of us are communicating. We keep saying we will, and we keep falling back into old patterns. I’m no saint here either. I think I started the pattern by running away without talking to anyone. I convinced myself I was being noble, and that I was right to save my brother. Hell, save my pack too. I got a self-righteous award in my own mind. Savior Lacy to the pack’s rescue.”

She paused then added, “I would’ve saved everyone a lot of heartache if I’d just asked one other person besides Christy. It didn’t even have to be Lucas; Dylan would’ve told me. Heck, Chelsea could’ve told me. Her dad’s the Gamma, she could’ve asked him. We all have to take an active role in stopping this, to be blunt, vicious cycle we are in. I wish there was a manual on mates. Like you may be destined for each other, but it all still takes a lot of work and getting used to.”

I told her sincerely, “You are wise beyond your years, Lacy Frost.” Lacy gasped, “Oh, gosh. That’s the first time someone’s called me that. I think both of us are wise beyond our years because of the decisions we had to make on our own. You more so than me. Our experiences shaped us, but they didn’t take away who we are at our core. Claudzilla, I do so love that nickname from your cousin, tried to take all my joy away from me. David and your mother tried to take yours

from you. We are still here being who we truly are. The bad guys didn't win. Our villains lost overall."

I nodded. She continued, "The way they win is when we act independently. They forced us into that mindset of isolation. I have no idea what Dylan and Lucas' excuse for that is other than they've been autonomous and single for so long it's a habit. Honestly, our excuse is ten times better. We all need to break it though."

She was right. She pointed to the guys, "Lucas is going to talk to you. He basically sent Dylan into his doghouse." Valerie joined us on the porch. Dylan spoke over his shoulder before he went into his doghouse, but I couldn't hear him.

Lacy snorted, "I know he's sorry. He hates being outside in the rain. Poor Jacqueline, I'll have to text her." I snorted, "What kind of wolf hates the rain?" Lacy explained, "Travis was afraid of storms when he was little. His mom used to sing him a song to calm him down. Once it became clear they weren't coming back, Travis' fear of storms came back. Dylan couldn't remember the song. He thought he was the worst big brother. He spent several weeks writing down what he knew until he had the whole song. He hates being outside in the rain because he says it reminds him that he failed his little brother for a few weeks."

I gasped, "That's not his fault, he didn't fail Travis!" Lacy agreed, "I know he didn't, everyone does. Travis thought he was weak. He said he was fourteen and a little thunder scared him." I frowned, "We all react to stress differently, he just wanted his mom. There's no shame in that."

I turned my attention back to Lucas. He was apologizing and I was already confused. I rolled my eyes, "What? How could he not have been trying to ignore me? He literally never answered one SINGLE link. He was never around. UGH!" Neither of the girls said anything.

I hissed when he mentioned Nikki. Lacy laughed, "Haley kicked her ass." Valerie sighed, "I wish Ryan and I would've come to the Connors Thanksgiving instead of my parents. It

seems like I missed out on one hell of a dinner.” Lacy squealed, “It was epic! Nikki said Lucas was hers.” I growled.

Lacy complimented me, “Impressive growl, little fairy. Haley lost it and Nikki tried to fight her. It was like watching an ant try to fight an elephant. Aiden was beyond entertained.”

We all focused again as Lucas told me he’d be ready to talk to me when I was ready. I groaned, “He’s taking the fun out of getting him back.” Both girls shrugged. I contemplated going down to him right now, but I pushed that aside.

The girls decided to stay with me. Valerie must have linked Ry. She smirked, “Ryan is beside himself because we are mad at him.” I frowned, “Wait, you didn’t know either?” Valerie shook her head, “No, I know what’s going on. I can’t believe they didn’t tell you or think about how you would feel. He didn’t tell me he wasn’t returning your calls or texts.”

Lucas went back into his doghouse. I commented, “I’m guessing Haley is behind the rain. The forecasts were clear.” Lacy surmised, “I think that’s a fair conclusion.” We went inside, but my thoughts kept leading me to the deck.

Eventually, I just went to sit out there. I engaged in conversation here and there, but I longed to be down there with Lucas. It hurt to see him sleeping outside, but I wasn’t ready to give in.

Saturday came and more flowers arrived. Lacy bumped my hip, “Apparently, there are chocolates and jewelry to go along with the flowers. Mom said the living room is practically a chocolate store.” I sighed “I don’t need him to do this, I just need him to understand.”

Valerie asked me, “Understand what exactly?” I said, “That what he did wasn’t ok. It wasn’t fair.” Valerie nodded, “Agreed, it wasn’t.” I looked at her, but she didn’t continue. I sighed, “It feels like you have more to say.” Valerie shrugged, “It’s not my place to say anything. You and Lucas need to talk.”

I looked longingly at the doghouse. After a minute I whispered, “I’m not sure I’m ready.” Lacy stared at me, “If

you're sure." I nodded. I got through Saturday much like I got through Friday. By sitting on the deck watching more and more flowers arrive. My chest felt tight. I felt this tug to go be with Lucas, but I ignored it.

Sunday Haley popped in at ten in the morning to see us. I greeted her evenly, "Hello, Haley." Haley smiled, "Hello, Emmaline. Valerie, you're up first; Let's go. I'm popping you to Ryan. I'm such a damn good person rising above the fact that I don't like warlocks, I should make him come get you."

Valerie had a second to be surprised before Haley popped her away. She popped back and sat down. She looked at me and Lacy asking, "What's going on?" I stood, "Let's go out to the deck."

Haley raised an eyebrow but said, "Ooook....." The second we got outside Haley snorted, "I see." I admitted, "I'm not sure I'm ready to face all of this." Haley questioned, "Face all of what?" I sighed, "Lucas." Haley tilted her head, "You want to sit out here to be near to Lucas. Which you know, Lacy already knew, and now I know." I snarked, "Yes, I do know that's why I want to be out here."

Haley pointed out, "Your light and your soul want you to go to him." I thought about it, "Yes, I've felt a tug to do so." Haley sat back asking, "So, the question is, is it pride, stubbornness, or fear that's stopping you? Or a combination of the three?"

Lacy's jaw dropped. I stood in anger demanding, "HOW can you take his side? He IGNORED me!" Haley calmly replied, "I'm not taking his side. I'm on team Emmaline all the way, but you my dear cousin, need some tough love. We all do it from time to time. Marcus did it for me when I came back from the summit. I kicked your mate in the balls and broke his nose on Thanksgiving because I am quite firmly on your side. I yelled and gave him what for. I'm not yelling at you; I'm not even cursing." She wasn't but I was still angry with her.

She continued, "If your pride is keeping you up here, then you want to punish him and that's wrong. If it's fear, we need to talk through that. If it's wanting to hold out for the same

amount of time he hurt you for that's understandable; but it's not right. You know that in your soul too. You're hurting yourself and I can't have that."

Tears filled my eyes, "He hurt me." Haley nodded, "He did. Do you want to leave him? I can and will help you do that if it's what you want." I gasped and clutched my chest instantly replying, "No, I love him."

Haley asked, "Then why can you two not manage to talk to each other? Lucas has a lot to explain, and he has a hell of a lot say to you. He's not the only one who's wrong here though. We were wrong. I take the blame for that because I'm your mentor. We should have told them about the sulfur."

I snarked, "Where is my cousin Haley? What is the matter with you?" Haley didn't change her expression calmly saying, "Currently? My problem is that my cousin is still in pain for reasons I will uncover, and my husband is worried about his friend down there in a doghouse. Now, will you let me explain why not telling them about the sulfur was wrong?"

I flopped down on the couch. I was pissed she wasn't getting mad and snarking back. I rolled my eyes, "Go ahead. Try to convince me with whatever Eric brainwashed you with. I'd never thought I'd see the day you backed down. You're just not the bad ass we all think you are, are you?" Lacy gasped, "EMMALINE!"

Haley still didn't get mad. She even smiled, "It's fine, Lacy. She can't help it; her light is lashing out. I had my own qualms about not telling them. It was against my better judgement not to. Eric simply told me about the ramifications for the pack I had not considered. As our partners, they need to know if we are vulnerable." Annoying, but true I suppose.

Haley wasn't done though, "As the Alpha and leader of the pack, they need to know for the safety of their people as well as us. Eric and Lucas did not call as many of the warriors they would have to fight the rogues because they factored us and our powers into the decision." Lacy muttered, "Crap."

I hated that she was right. She was still a bad ass, and that did make a lot of sense. Haley continued, "As I said, I take the

blame there. I did ask you what you wanted to do, but I should've known better. To be honest, your natural fairy fighting instincts and my Hackura instincts told me it would be fine. It was fine, I just see their logic. We are the Luna of our packs. We can't make decisions to put them at risk without telling our significant other. They can make a better decision for protection of our packs. It's not crazy to say one of the warriors could've been hurt or overwhelmed, or possibly even killed, because Eric and Lucas were operating under the assumption we could use our powers and help the warriors."

I looked away. Lacy nudged, "Emmaline, you owe her an apology." I shifted uncomfortably. I knew she was right, but I didn't care. Why didn't I care? Haley looked at Lacy, "She can't right now, but I'm sure one day, hopefully even soon, she will be able to." Lacy asked, "She can't? Because she's depressed?" I hissed, "I'm not depressed!"

Haley agreed, "You're right. You're not now, but you were. You shared your sorrow with me, and you got drunk. Now, your light and your soul are very angry. Your instincts are telling you to go talk to Lucas, but you're ignoring them because you are hurt, stubborn, prideful, and or afraid. I tend to believe it is a combination."

I stubbornly retorted, "You can't make me talk to Lucas." Haley laughed "Sweet, naïve, Emmaline I could absolutely make you talk to Lucas. I'm a fairy/Hackura princess. YOUR princess to be precise. I could command you to do it. I could charm you both in a room that you are unable to leave until you talk. I could charm you to be unable to stop talking. The options are really limitless, but I'm not here to make you talk to him. It's not my style."

She paused then added, "Gosh, it's hard not to swear. I literally have to think about it. Anyway, I'm here to talk to you about why you are still up here. What you do with what we uncover is up to you cousin. I won't make you talk to Lucas. If I was going to, I would've brought him to you when you wanted Lacy and Valerie. I am here because you are hurting, and you're perpetuating a cycle that you yourself want to

break with your mate. You're also hurting yourself further, and I don't want that for you."

I snarked, "No one made you talk to Eric when you were mad at him." Haley laughed, "We were speaking. I talked to him every day. Granted it was about stupid shit. FUCK. DAMN IT! UGH! Ok, that didn't count as cursing for this talk. Eric and I talked about what was for lunch, and other silly things like that."

She paused then continued, "Our relationship is not yours though. We have our own getting to know each other issues as you and Lucas have yours. If you don't want to leave him, and you intend to end this fight... Why are you putting it off?"

I yelled, "It's not fair! He made me suffer for a week!" Haley nodded, "So you intend to make him suffer, not to mention yourself, for the next week? You'll go back into a depression. Except this time, it will be worse because you are ignoring your light. You could hurt someone."

I asked, "Like who? Why should I care?" Lacy hissed, "Emmaline!" I asked, "What? People hurt me all the time!" Haley put a hand on mine, "You should care because if you let your light consume you in that way, David Forrester wins. He knows about fairies, and he knows how important families are to our lights. He was hoping your light would lash out, and eventually someone would kill you, or you'd kill yourself. I'm a big proponent of not giving the villains what they want." Dang it. I didn't want David to win at anything.

Haley cringed, "We are clearly not going to get you to answer any other way. I don't like doing this, but I love you. You need to tell us and say the words out loud. It's some sort of cosmic joke the process fairies have to go through when we are hurt." She was going to use her power on me.

She looked into my eyes, "What's holding you back?" I found myself unable to stop the truth from coming off my lips, "He hurt me and ignored me. It's only fair I do it back until the pack members look at him with the same pitying looks they gave me. He said he wasn't ignoring me, but I don't know how

that's possible. If he can last a week without even sleeping beside me, I can do it too."

The words wouldn't stop coming out, "What if he does this again? If he can do it once, he can do it again. I don't know if I could handle it. I'm scaring myself. I don't care about people's emotions, and I can't even sense their souls anymore. My friends were upset this week, but I didn't even bother to tell them the solutions I came up with. I don't understand what's wrong with me, but I just don't care. I'm ignoring the pull to go to him because it's not fair. He was strong enough to stay away, I should be too." I felt instantly unburdened.

Haley squeezed my hand, "And now you've gotten through the last stage, with some help." I asked, "That's what your power feels like to people? I literally couldn't stop myself from telling you the truth about what you asked."

Haley nodded, "It does. You can't evade the truth when the Truth Seeker is around and doesn't want you to. You feel better though now, don't you?" I didn't hesitate to answer, "Not fully back to me, but I do feel better. I'm sorry I snapped at you."

Haley winked, "I made you snap at me because you needed to. Your light was wound up tight. It's better for you to lash out me than someone else. If you had used your powers, I could've handled it. Anyfuckingway, here's my advice. Don't hold back when you decide to talk to Lucas. Tell him everything you feel. I will tell you, your soul shut down because you thought he pulled away from you. The longer that went on your soul shattered thinking Lucas didn't love you. He didn't ignore your links, you shut it down. He says he tried to link you, but he met a wall." I did that?

Haley instantly said, "Now, I would like to point out that is not your fault. Anyone who says otherwise gets to deal with me. It's just something that happens to fairies, especially you when you start to shut down. You and Lucas are soul tied on top of you being the soul searcher. It hurt you and you didn't do it on purpose. He wasn't ignoring your links, and you weren't ignoring his."

I questioned, “Do you think I should forgive him?” Haley squeezed my hand again, “I think you should talk to him. For a few reasons, one this is hurting you. It’s that’s not healthy to keep yourself in this state. Two, because you want this relationship to work. You can’t very well have a relationship with someone if you don’t talk to them.”

I cringed, “I know you’re right, but he needs to talk to me too. He just went a whole week being perfectly fine without me.” Haley agreed, “Of fucking course he needs to talk to you. He was a giant asshole and an idiot, tell him that. He’s not single, and he needs to get that through his thick fucking skull. He should’ve known you would’ve thought he was still pissed. You believed he was punishing you about the sulfur thing.” I really had.

Haley ranted, “He’s a grown ass man, and he needs to act like one. You should’ve popped to him to demand he talk to you. You were being stubborn, and he was being an idiot. Because in all fairness it was his turn to make a move, and he should’ve come to you. As fucked up as it is, relationships are not always fair, little Emmaline.” Which was annoying, but I knew that was true.

Haley pursed her lips, “Frequently, we have to be the bigger person. Sometimes they do, but let’s be honest; they are lost without us. When Lucas is so dang busy he can’t even take a break for himself, you’re there to take him away from work. Pop him somewhere he can’t leave, whatever works for you.” That had some potential, I could pop him places.

Haley added, “Personally, I think popping him to a boat you’ve conjured in the middle of the ocean would be hilarious and your fairy side would love it. If you think he’s mad and he needs space, you can give him a day. If you see no sign of the man, then you pop to him. Keep popping if you have to, he can’t get away from you. Fairies always win stubborn fights.” The ocean idea was pretty good.

Haley assured me, “I’m not telling you to forgive him, cousin. I am telling you he has things to say, and for your own sake; you need to listen to him. Forgiveness does not always happen right away. Sometimes, it’s earned. In my personal

opinion, he needs to fucking earn it. The flowers are a good start. Is he going to cover your whole territory in them?"

I laughed, "Maybe." Haley smiled, "There's a real Emmaline laugh." I asked, "How long will I be depressed?" Haley answered, "You are not depressed anymore. As I said we went through the stages. You shared your sorrow with another fairy, me, you got drunk, and then you lashed out. Don't feel bad about that either, it was my goal because you needed it. Then you told us what was holding you back. You are not depressed anymore, little cousin. I'm aware of the situation now, so I won't let you go to that state again. Your soul will be unsettled until you speak with Lucas. Your link won't reestablish until you believe he loves you. Your powers will be a little unstable until then as well."

Lacy grumbled, "My brother is such a jerk!" Haley agreed, "Yes, he is. To be fair, he didn't know any of that. They don't know everything about fairies. Sometimes, I myself fail to give all the details. It's second nature to us, and we know these things. It's strange that they don't. He's still a fucking asshole though."

I asked, "How long was it until you and Eric were ok after your fight?" Haley tilted her head, "I was hurt, as was my fairy side. He broke a promise to me, and that's extremely hurtful to fairies. We weren't ok until we got home. Both my brother and my therapist told me I needed to tell him all about my feelings. I was talking to him, but not about anything important. We made meaningless talk."

I laughed, "It's small talk." Haley asked, "How can talk be small? Seriously, what is WRONG with this damn realm?" I couldn't stop the laugh that bubbled over. Lacy started laughing too. Haley seemed perplexed, "We will revisit that another time."

I snorted, "It's put a pin in it." Haley asked, "Are you fucking serious? How does that make sense? No... no more earthly realm sayings. You all are a bunch of weirdos!" Lacy and I were in tears we were laughing so hard.

I waved my hand in front of my face, “Haley, you are too much!” Haley grumbled, “How can one be too much? I am right. The saying here are fucking stupid. Bees knees, pins, you all are crazy. I know there’s one about a horse that’s wrong too. Oh, and the mime one.”

I glanced at Lacy who shrugged. I asked, “Mime one?” Haley sighed, “I told someone to be silent like a mime. I was told that’s not the saying, it’s a grave. Be silent like a grave, that’s just absurd.” Lacy and I laughed harder.

She gave me a kiss on the forehead, “I will let your light lash out at me anytime, little cousin. I know I pushed you to snap at me, but I needed to before you got so angry you hurt someone with your powers.” I nodded, “I understand. You didn’t even say anything that was wrong.”

Lacy commented, “I think you need to tattoo seize the day on all the guys’ asses for a period of time. So, they know tomorrow isn’t a good thing to say. ‘Oh, I’ll talk to Emmaline tomorrow.’ What could POSSIBLY go wrong with that plan?” I stared at her knowing there was no way she should’ve said that. She was kidding, but Haley did not pick up on that at all.

Haley grinned broadly, “I like where your head is at, Lacy Frost. I have different words in mind to put on their asses though. OHHH! I can do both cheeks!” Lacy and I dissolved into giggles again as Haley spoke in Fealish.

She clapped when she was done, “This is too good! I can’t WAIT until they notice. Lacy, that was brilliant! Should you think of more things like this, write them down. Text me... Something. It’s inspired!”

Lacy laughed, “If we could keep it on the DL that the tattoo you did was my idea since you used different words... that would be great.” Haley frowned, “DL?” I explained, “Down Low.” Haley asked, “Is that a short joke? Because I am down low to the ground?”

I cackled, “No, she’s saying don’t tell them she gave you the idea.” She shrugged, “As long as no one directly asks me whose idea it was, I see no problem with that. Emmaline, you should call Katie and hear what she did to your brothers.” I

chuckled, “What did she do?” Haley shrugged, “I don’t know, I haven’t talked to her yet.” She gave Lacy and I hug then popped away.

Lacy immediately said, “I hope they don’t see it until they shift, and some warrior tells them.” I couldn’t stop my laughter, “Oh gosh... what if another Alpha sees it?” Lacy and I were both laughing so hard we were full on crying.

We finally gathered ourselves. Lacy asked, “Should we put them out of their misery?” I admitted, “We should put ourselves out of misery. Haley was right. I’m hurting myself more than I’m hurting him. I was just so tangled up in anger until I lashed out at her, and she made me tell the truth.”

Lacy consoled me, “Hey, that’s not your fault, it’s a fairy thing.” I said, “Hopefully Haley never gets depressed because she can’t get drunk. We’d have to call in Aiden to figure out how to fix her.” Lacy snorted, “Then who would fix everything in our lives? She’s not allowed to be depressed. I’ll kick Eric’s ass myself.”

I startled, asking, “You can beat up Eric?” Lacy laughed, “He wouldn’t fight back. So technically, yes, I can beat him. He’d never fight a woman, outside of training, that wasn’t trying to kill him, and I’d just want to punch him.” I mischievously stated, “So we could both punch him.”

Lacy nodded, “Haley dropped kicked Lucas pretty hard, I heard his nose break. That girl packs a punch.” I winced, “I’m glad I didn’t see that.” I grabbed her hands asking, “Are you ready?” She nodded and we popped down to the guys.

Dylan took off with Lacy pretty quickly. Lucas waited until Dylan and Lacy were out of hearing range. He asked, “Do you want to go somewhere? If not, I’ll explain in the rain, baby girl.” I considered it then grabbed his shoulder and popped us to my sanctuary. I snapped two comfy chairs and sat down in one. I was glad the sun was shining here. I felt an instant peace, and the knot in my chest was releasing in Lucas’ presence.

Lucas broke our silence, “I’m sorry. I’m so damn sorry.” I held up my hand, “Tell me what happened. I want to know

how you weren't ignoring me and where you were sleeping at night." Lucas nodded, "I spread myself too thin. Gina's mate, Gina is Principal Tom's daughter."

I interrupted, "I know who she is. Well, I've heard her name." Lucas winced, "Well, in the spirit of sharing everything; she's actually the Ducant Alpha's daughter with his mate. Tom loved her mom, it's a long story, but her mom wants Gina and everyone else to believe he's her dad. Anyway, her mate Ryker needs to be trained as a warrior. Alpha Hammond held his pack warriors back. I'm sure he didn't want anyone to become powerful enough that they could've challenged him. He was definitely not loved by his pack anymore."

He paused before admitting, "I'm not sure when that happened. He used to be loved by their pack. Gina asked if I would personally train him. It was all she asked of me. I knew if Dylan and I trained Ryker we could get him up to speed and into a class probably before your birthday. I agreed and our sessions are scheduled for right after school gets out. After the sulfur incident, I felt like you were doing all this intense training because you thought I couldn't protect you."

My jaw dropped, "Lucas..." He put up his hands pleading, "Please, just let me get this all out." I nodded. He continued, "I called your brothers, and asked them to train with me using their powers. I've gathered lots of tips about fighting fairy's from watching your practices. I've learned a lot training with your brothers this past week, and they have too in reverse."

I was stunned. Lucas sighed, "Dustin has a hectic schedule, so I was driving myself, Dylan and Ryan to Red Run to start training at four." I shrieked, "You've been getting up at three in the morning?!" Lucas nodded, "Yes, I have. Dustin recommended having two training sessions a day to catch up and be prepared." That sounded like Dusty.

Lucas kept explaining, "So, after Dylan and I finished our session with Ryker, we ran to our session with Dustin and Ryan which was here in our territory. I saw you training on your obstacle course, it was the highlight of my day. I've been so busy I didn't even get a chance to tell you I met the moon

goddess. Among other things, she told me we needed to watch our enemies that we were making for the future. Not for our pups, but someone we know. They said this would affect you. So, I've been running surveillance on multiple Alpha's and their children. I haven't gotten used to receiving all those reports yet." What a vague, crappy warning. Someone we know has a child that's going to suffer? We know a lot of people.

Lucas got to where he was sleeping, "I have been sleeping in our bed, but your arms were outstretched to my side. I would slide into bed on your side and snuggle with you. I had Dylan setting an alarm and linking me to get up. You are a light sleeper, whereas Lacy is not. I'm sorry. I was even almost out the door on Tuesday to pick you up for lunch when a pack emergency happened." That was crappy timing.

He tilted my chin up so I was looking in his eyes. He sincerely told me, "I'll give it all up, Emmaline. It's you for me, you're everything. I'll pass the Alpha title to Dylan." I gasped, "Lucas, no!" Lucas held up his hands, "You mean more to me than our titles."

I shook my head, "No, we just... you promised we'd do better at communication and we both still suck at it. I don't want you to give up your Alpha title, it's your birthright." I got off my chair and hugged him.

I needed to clarify something, "That was a lot of information. The moon goddess is your goddess, right?" He nodded. That's even worse. A child of one of her own children, and she couldn't give us a better clue. I didn't care too much for her at this moment.

I pushed that aside and smiled, "I'm proud she came to meet you, for trying to help our friends' future kids, and I'm proud you are training a wolf who needs the extra training. This has nothing to do with you not being able to protect me. I know you can and will protect me, but I want to be able to protect you too. I can't even describe the emotions I felt when you were stabbed. It was horrible."

I literally felt the knot inside my stomach disappear. I whispered, "I can't believe you would give up your title for me." Lucas looked into my eyes, "I love you, baby girl. I know I've shown it horribly, but I do love you."

I admitted, "I was wrong too. Haley told me why you and Eric need to know about sulfur days." Lucas sighed, "I didn't communicate well there either. I was just so damn mad. It's a werewolf law that Alpha's don't write their training plans down. It's passed from father to son. Lead injection days are not a new policy I made within the pack. All the packs do it, it's been going on since well before I was born."

That did make sense. I apologized, "I'm sorry that I used that in our fight, I didn't know." Lucas rubbed my back, "I know. I think we both need to have supernatural lessons. You need to learn about werewolves, and we both need to learn more about fairies. I almost came across the table and killed Fegle." He could've tried, but I was certain Haley nor Aiden would've let that happen. Something told me Fegle was nothing to turn one's nose at either.

I looked out at the water, "I like him. I almost clawed Nikki's face off. I am certain there's a charm for that." Lucas growled. I slapped his chest knowing what had upset him, "Not like that, he's just a nice guy." Lucas growled, "He likes you. He was flirting with you."

I sighed, "He wasn't, he was just being nice. The whole pack was looking at me with pity all week. It made me so mad. I can't believe Fegle makes you mad when Nikki had her hands all over you. You've even had sex with her!"

Lucas frowned, "The pack was just worried about you. Everyone said you looked really sad. They know how I am when I get busy. As for Nikki, she means nothing to me. I didn't even notice her hands were on me because I was looking at you."

I smirked, "Haley said I'll have to kick your ass if you try ignoring me again. I'll go nuclear if you let anyone, besides me, touch you like that ever again." Lucas nuzzled my neck, "I don't intend to let this happen again, but you can kick my ass

anytime, baby girl.” Thinking about what Haley had done before she left made me laugh so hard. I wondered what she tattooed on their butts.

Lucas was clearly confused by my laughter. I linked Lacy, “Lucas said I could kick his ass anytime, and I can’t stop thinking about what Haley tattooed on him.” Lacy replied, “I’m so curious, but Dylan is not seeing me naked tonight. Maybe I can take a peak when he’s in the shower.”

I gathered myself and told Lucas, “Let’s pop back to the house.” I grabbed his hand. He asked, “Are we ok?” I nodded, “We are ok. We just need to communicate better. You can’t get so busy I don’t get to talk to you, not even for one whole day. I can’t shut down, and not confront you about it. I’m not sure we are in the land of total forgiveness, but we are ok. I understand what happened, but you need to prove to me that you won’t do it again. We were in a better place with all that before this happened. You were letting me in, and I was helping with the work. You just totally shut me out because you were busy, and that really hurts.”

He crushed me in a hug vowing, “I’ll make it up to you, I promise. Somehow. Any way you want.” I laughed, “You can stop with the flowers, I think I have more than enough.” Lucas said, “The flowers will be arriving for weeks to come.” I rolled my eyes, “You silly man.” Lucas shrugged, “Take it up with Dylan. He’s determined not to take over as Alpha. For some reason, he believes the way to accomplish that goal was through flowers.”

I laughed, “It’s mean, but we could so mess with him about that. You could tell him I’m considering your offer to step down.” Lucas disagreed, “I’m not sure I can. I put him through the ringer this past week. He’s had little to no sleep. I think we should be very nice to Dylan for a while.”

I fake pouted, but I knew I’d have more chances to tease Dylan in our lives. I popped us back into the living room. There were literally boxes and boxes of chocolates. I shouted, “LUCAS LYONS!” He shrugged, “You see why we have to tell Dylan all is well? He’s gone off the deep end.”

Dylan came running, “Tell Dylan what? I’m not even going to bother contradicting you about going off the deep end. I AM A MAN ON THE EDGE! I live there now. My adrenaline is permanently heightened.” He even looked frantic.

I linked Lacy, “You might need to reconsider the no sex tonight plan. Dylan looks insane.” She snorted, “I know, but there’s no sex.” I said out loud, “You need to stop ordering flowers and chocolate that might bring you off the ledge. How many stores have you wiped out? It has to stress you out to try and find more of them.”

Dylan shook his head so fast I couldn’t track it, “No can do, little Luna. They will keep coming until we have fixed the little fairy standing before me. The network is trying to cancel my show, but I have rallied the troops. We have signatures and we WILL stop this cancellation of my fairy show. Don’t you worry, Dylan is on the case. The show is far too young and new to go.”

I rolled my eyes, “I’m fixed.” Dylan raised an eyebrow, “Fixed as in...” Lucas assured him, “You won’t be taking over for me as the Alpha, Dylan.” Dylan screamed, “WOOHOO! Praise the moon goddess! To be clear, I wouldn’t have done it but YAHTZEE! Travis was already on team Dylan can’t take over because then he’d be the Beta. We had plans, so many plans. It wasn’t going to happen. I am a little sad we spent all night last night coming up with all these glorious plans. The world will never know of the genius we gave birth to last night. It’s a shame really.” I linked Lacy, “Help.” She snickered, “I’m coming.”

Lacy came in asking, “What’s going on?” Dylan picked her up, “I am free! Oh, so free! We are free! FREE! FREE! FREE!” Lacy questioned, “Free of?” Dylan explained, “Of taking over as the Alpha and you the Luna. I told Lucas it wasn’t happening, but he was all ‘I’ll do it for Emmaline.’ I was all ‘HELL NO YOU WON’T!’ It was a whole thing. I can’t stop the flowers that are coming though. Or the chocolate. As for the stores, I did in fact wipe out several. GAP owns most of them. His inventory people MUST be in crisis, which means he is. This sparks such joy for me, and I

couldn't possibly undo that. It's my gift to me in this cold war."

Lacy was gaping but recovered to ask, "There's more chocolate and flowers coming?" Dylan confirmed, "I ordered every single blue rose in Tennessee, Kentucky, and Alabama. Did you know Alabama has A LOT of blue roses waiting to be snatched up by a Beta in need of not taking over as the Alpha? It's like the state of Alabama knew to be prepared for an epic apology in the form of flowers." Literally no one knew that.

Dylan smiled, "I'm not even remotely sorry about ALL the flowers coming to your school. You know what's downright insulting? I order all these things, and I didn't even put a dent in ONE of your accounts, Lucas. Not a one, you rich bastard." I couldn't stop laughing, "Of course you are not sorry about an embarrassing display of flowers coming to school."

Dylan added, "Nor am I sorry about the chocolate. Not even a sliver of me is sorry. Do you two have ANY idea what you put me through? I have been waking up at three in the morning. Do you know in my carefree days, there were times I didn't go to BED until three in the morning?!"

Lacy bit her lip trying not to laugh. I consoled him, "I wouldn't let Lucas step down. It's his birthright. Also, he made you wake up that early, not me." Dylan looked at Lucas, "You see? You see why you should listen to me? I SAID she wouldn't want you to step down. You had to go all noble being a good man making the big gesture and giving me panic attacks. I was plotting so many ways to make this not happen. FOR NO REASON!" He wasn't wrong, but he should've known I wouldn't agree.

Dylan ranted, "I didn't sleep in the super comfortable doghouse Haley snapped for me. Why did we not think to bring a pillow? Why don't humans love their dogs? I heard they LOVE their pets! I thought a super expensive doghouse would be comfy but NOOOOO. Because of you and that doghouse I tossed and turned unable to sleep. Visions of taking over this pack and being named Alpha as I screamed NOOOOOOO NOT ME! TAKE TRAVIS, ANYONE BUT ME!" Lacy lost it and couldn't contain her laughter any longer.

I linked Travis, “Your brother is broken.” He replied, “Yes, well he just needs sleep.” Dylan continued, “Sadly, my powers of being mute were in full affect and no one heard me screaming, Lucas. NO ONE!” I gathered myself asking, “Your powers of being mute?”

Dylan nodded, “Yes, I discovered that it’s not that people aren’t taking my advice, they can’t hear it because I have the power to go mute. I have been researching who can help me with this ailment but have not come across a teacher who can train me. I can’t control when it happens...” Dylan started mouthing words instead of speaking. I spotted Dale behind a door laughing silently.

Dylan shrugged his shoulders, “See? It just happens. I will scour the records until I come across someone who can help me.” Lucas was the only one left not laughing and I was certain he was pinching himself to stop.

I asked, “Who didn’t listen to you?” Dylan put his arm around me, “Little fairy Luna, the list was so large. There is of course, your mate, my ‘I will make this great gesture of stepping down and make my Beta go crazy’ Alpha. Who will always be the Alpha until one of your pups takes over and mine will be the Beta because THAT’S HOW THIS WORKS PEOPLE!” Oh boy.

He continued, “Then there’s GAP himself who decided a game of football was what Lucas needed before he talked to him. Darrin Connors cracked my rib I tell you; I heard it snap. Do you know what it’s like to have your rib snapped and have to get up and act fine? Lucas crushed Darrin’s ribs after that though so evensies.”

I interjected, “You guys played football on Thanksgiving?” Dylan nodded, “Yes, just out of sheer curiosity... where did you get that dress you were wearing on Thanksgiving?” Somewhat surprised by the question I answered, “Bexley snapped it for me.”

Dylan yelled, “AH HA! There you see, Lucas! I was right! Come on, say it... Dylan was right!” Lucas rolled his eyes. Dylan hopped around him in a circle, “I won’t stop until you

say it. Dylan was right! Say it!” Lucas rolled his eyes again but stated, “Dylan was right.”

Dylan grinned, “There! Was that so hard? I need to sit, I’m dizzy.” Lacy admonished, “If you didn’t use werewolf speed to hop in a circle around my brother, you’d be fine.” Dylan was about to crash onto chocolates, so I snapped him a clear spot.

Dylan cooed, “Aww Lucas, you did fix our little fairy. Thank you, Luna.” I said, “I know you know my name is Emmaline.” Dylan just smiled, “I’m in SUCH a good mood! A weight has been lifted from my shoulders. I am carefree and happy again. The colors in the room brightened, Lacy, I swear that to you. Everything is so sharp and in focus again. I’m telling you I’ve been seeing grey since Lucas told me the news. I missed colors. I missed the greens and the blues, all of it. The world is a beautiful place. Let’s go explore it!” He grabbed Lacy and they shot out of the room.

Lucas snorted, “As if he ever lost his flair for snark in his troubled worried times with thoughts of taking over as Alpha.” I laughed, “I would be worried if he did, it would be unsettling. I’d have to bring in Haley and Bexley for a full-on fairy show. We might even need Aiden.”

Lucas agreed, “That would snap him right out of any funk. If all else fails, we bring Eric in to insult him.” I frowned, “Wouldn’t that just make him spiral more?” Lucas shook his head, “Nah, they feed off it. Dylan LOVES to goad Eric, and Eric enjoys toying with Dylan. I do worry for Dylan though.”

I asked, “Why?” Lucas confided, “Eric is not one to let things slide. Dylan has been giving him a hard time for months. He’s going to have a plan to do something about it.” I pointed out, “Haley wouldn’t let Eric hurt Dylan.”

Lucas laughed, “Eric wouldn’t hurt Dylan because they are friends. He will get him back though, and I don’t think Dylan realizes that.” I asked, “Haven’t you guys known each other for a long time?” Lucas nodded, “All our lives. Dylan thinks Haley is his safety net. Eric getting him back won’t stop Dylan

from goading him. He will just be more prepared in the future.”

I asked, “Why haven’t you told Dylan that?” Lucas grumbled, “I have many, many times. He just says it’s fine.” I shrugged. I turned my head surveying the chocolates until an invitation caught my eye. I walked over to it and tears filled my eyes. I saw the package was addressed to Lucas, but the invitations were for my birthday.

I whispered, “You planned a party for me? You remembered my birthday?” Lucas smiled softly, “Baby girl, I could never forget your birthday. Gemma has a tentative menu waiting for your approval. She did order the cake though because I wanted something specific. I ordered the invitations last week. I was going to show you when we got home from Eric and Haley’s on Thanksgiving.

A riptide of emotions hit me. A very strong emotion was relief. I sank to my knees and started crying. Lucas ran to me putting his arms around me. He yelled, “Fuck! Please don’t cry! Katie said you loved having birthday parties. We don’t have to have one, Emmaline. Please stop crying.”

I wiped my tears, “You talked to Katie?” Lucas nodded, “Yes, I asked her if we should have a surprise party. She said you hated the one they threw when you were ten. She helped me finalize the invitations. I only ordered them once she’d approved.”

I held onto him, “You love me.” He seemed startled, “Of course I do.” I shook my head, “Even with everything going on and how busy you were, you planned little details of my party. I’m not thrilled you had time to talk to my sister and not me, but I believe you love me.”

Lucas tilted his head, “I emailed your sister, but point taken.” I linked Lucas, “I love you too, you know.” Lucas glanced at me in shock then kissed me. He pulled back, “I feel your emotions again. I didn’t even realize how much I missed them until Haley pointed out they weren’t there.”

I quickly said, “I’m not ready for being intimate though. It all feels too raw.” Lucas shrugged, “Whenever you’re ready

again is fine, I can wait.” I sheepishly said, “You could give me another kiss though.” He grinned, “Anything you want.” He kissed me again.

For the first time in over a week, I felt truly happy and ok. I texted Haley.

Me: Everything is all good.

Haley: I’ll be checking in anyway.

You just had to love her. I snapped all the chocolates to a spare bedroom. Lucas smiled and held me in his arms. I called my sister.

She answered immediately, “Evie? Are you ok? Haley said...” I interrupted, “I’m all good now. Haley mentioned I should call and ask what you did to Ry and Dusty.” Katie sniffled. I looked at Lucas before I asked her, “Are you crying?”

Katie cried out, “Yes, I’ve been such a bad sister! I didn’t even know you were upset or fighting with Lucas. I mean obviously when you were here, but I thought that was all fine.” I said, “Technically speaking, it was all fine. I just didn’t know that. Katie Cat, you’re not a bad sister. I might not have answered even if you had called. It’s really ok. Come on, tell me what clever thing you did to our brothers.”

Katie sniffled, “They say ‘I’m a dumbass dick’ at the end of every sentence. Every other sentence they say ‘Emmaline and Katie are the good siblings. We are the worst.’ They will be back to normal Monday.” Lucas was shaking in silent laughter. Katie chuckled slightly before adding, “I heard about the other thing, Haley is good.” I agreed, “She is.” Lucas didn’t even catch on, but I knew Katie was talking about the butt tattoos.

Later, when we got up, I peaked in on Lucas’ shower. I raked my eyes over him for several solid minutes before making it down to his butt. I had to pop away to hide my laughter. I popped to Lacy. Dylan grumbled, “COME ON! I

WAS SO close, you cockblocking popping fairy!” Lacy disagreed, “You really weren’t. There is no sex for you in the near future.”

Dylan threw up his hands, “It’s already been a week because of the militant if I can’t get it no one can Alpha with his insane schedule. Now, you withhold sex. WHY DOES EVERYONE HATE ME?” I smiled, “I like you, Dylan. I’ll bring Lacy right back, I swear.”

Dylan stared at the ceiling, “Sure, the last time a fairy took her I didn’t see her for two and half days. I had to sleep OUTSIDE like an ANIMAL! In a doghouse!” Lacy teased, “Technically, you are part animal.” Dylan said, “Et tu, Lacy?” He acted like she stuck a dagger in his chest, and he collapsed onto the bed. I laughed and popped Lacy out to my treehouse.

I linked Lucas, “I’ll be right back, I’m with Lacy in my treehouse.” Lucas quickly asked, “Is anything wrong?” I answered, “Nope, just wanted to talk to Lacy.” Lucas said, “Hurry back. I’m drawing you a bath.”

I smiled and bounced up and down. I squealed, “Guess what Haley tattooed on their butts?” Lacy asked, “You saw it?” I nodded, “I stole your idea and peaked during Lucas’ shower.” Lacy thought about it before answering, “No, I want to see it for myself. Is it good?”

I nodded, “Yes, it really is. Can I tell you one thing about it? It’s so hard not to say.” Lacy’s eyes lit up, “There’s something to say about it besides the words?” I nodded. She squealed, “Go ahead, tell me. Now I’m curious.” I squealed, “It’s written in sparkly hot pink ink!” Lacy’s jaw dropped, “No... it’s not.” I nodded, “Yes, it is!”

We laughed for several minutes before I popped her back. She couldn’t stop laughing. Dylan was confused. He frowned at me, “Luna, I have to tell you the place of pack clown is taken... By me, yours truly. Stop stealing my moments.” I smiled, “Believe me when I say, I did not steal this one from you.”

Dylan groaned, “That doesn’t sound good. You know what? I don’t want to know. I want to lay here with my mate

who is apparently not having sex with me, but this is a bed. Specifically, it is Lacy and my bed. I'm going to snuggle the crap out of my bed and whisper sweet nothings to my pillow. Look at the poor thing. It's missed me so much." I laughed and popped to Lucas.

He smiled and led me to the bathroom then left me alone to get into the tub. I snapped myself naked and played with the bubbles. Lucas came in with wine, turned on some music, and turned to leave. I quickly asked, "Can you stay?" I snapped a chair explaining "I just need to be near you right now."

Lucas answered, "Of course." We sat there as I sipped my wine in comfortable silence. I stood and conjured my towel to me and got out. We walked into our room together. I stopped short when I saw the bed. I wasn't sure how I could've missed the jewelry in a heart shape on the covers.

I pointed at it, "Lucas, what is that?" He smiled, "I told Dylan to get you the blue roses, but I picked these out for you." Tears filled my eyes, "I don't need this stuff, but it's all really pretty. Did you buy a jewelry store?" Lucas laughed, "I actually did."

I spun around shrieking, "WHAT?" He just shrugged, "I seem to mess up a lot, owning a jewelry store can't hurt. Dylan told me the sale was processed today." I gasped, "On a Sunday?" Lucas smiled, "Money is persuasive." I picked up a blue heart necklace. THE necklace I'd always wanted.

I turned, "Lucas Lyons, Is this the necklace from the Titanic movie?" Lucas smiled, "It is. Katie said that you cried with her when you watched that movie, and you always wanted a necklace like that one. Haley had never seen the movie. Apparently, she has colorful things to say about it."

I shook my head, "I did always want that necklace." Lucas put his arms around me, "I'll give you everything you want that's in my power to give to you, baby girl." I gathered myself, "One day, you'll have to draw me like one of your French girls." Lucas gulped, "I could do that." I laughed, "Of course you can." He cleared his throat but still sounded hoarse, "I really can draw." I had no doubt about that.

I put my jewelry away in the closet, admiring each piece as I put it away. I saw a piece of paper on Lucas' side and picked it up. I laughed asking him, "Is this your final clue?" Lucas looked over startled, "I'd actually forgotten about it, I don't know what it means."

I mused, "The beginning... Where did you meet Haley?" Lucas answered, "At her reception." I implored, "Is that where she started calling you her lion?" Lucas shook his head, "No, that was at... SON OF BITCH! My collection is at King Arthur's house." He kissed me then said, "Thank you." when he pulled back.

I skipped over to our bed and snuggled with Lucas. I woke up for training the next day. Luckily for everyone, I didn't get hurt while sparring. I don't think anyone wanted a Lucas who hadn't had sex in a hot second and who had just got back to a good place with me to be pissed again. I swear I saw the warriors checking on me every five seconds even though Brad was here.

There was a girl smiling at me the whole time. After class was over she walked right up to me with her hand outstretched, "You are very good at fighting, Luna." I greeted, "Please call me Emmaline. What's your name?" She smiled, "I'm Chasity, Brad's mate."

I knew that their souls told me. I tilted my head, "He's a good man." Chasity agreed, "He's the best. You make our dinner conversations so lively. Do me a favor and pop away from him again in non-sexy catch the fairy game one day. The re-telling of that story was hilarious." Brad groaned, "Chasity!" Chasity smiled, "What? I only said it because I love you so, Brad." She kissed him and threw me a wink. They were fun.

I popped back to my room to get ready for school. Lucas linked me, "I have a meeting in Red Run. I was trying to make it back to say bye before school, but it's not going to happen." If he couldn't come to me, then I'd go to him. That was Haley's advice after all.

I popped to him. He was with Alpha Kyle, Eric, Beta McAlister, Dylan, and Eric's Beta whose name I was fairly certain was Caleb. I waved at everyone and gave Lucas a kiss. I pulled back, "Good morning." Dylan grumbled about something I couldn't hear. Not having supernatural hearing was a real drag.

I popped back to the car in our territory to wait for everyone to come outside. Everything was smooth sailing even though I'd gotten forty dozen more flowers. I thought the flowers would be the most interesting thing in school that day, but then lunch happened.

Haley popped in with fast food for our whole group. She congratulated Chelsea and Sam again on their little ones. They were even allowed to bring the babies to class. I asked, "Does the school always allow babies to come? I hadn't seen any before Elise and Tristan came along. Or at all last year, and I know several seniors found their mates at eighteen."

Haley frowned. Chelsea said, "It seems Haley was.... unhappy when Eric told her we'd have to leave the pups with our parents. EJ was fussy about it too." Peter laughed, "The Princess called and threatened many things. I'm told it was done in quite colorful language to the new werewolf principal. She said just because something is done a certain way doesn't make it right. The girls even have a room designated for feeding times and a written pass to excuse us; and I do mean us. She got Drake and I passes too."

Haley sighed loudly, "That's not even remotely how that sentence came out of my mouth. You are a bad storyteller, Peter Kyle" I agreed, "She's right though. The babies aren't even that old. Moms get three months off here."

Haley slammed her hands on the table, "That is PATHETIC! I googled all about it after Eric told me that. Did you know this country is LAST in the amount of time off given to new moms? Some aren't even guaranteed time. They have to go back to work after two weeks if they haven't been at their company for a year or they don't get paid. How FUCKING deplorable is that? Let's not mention what they give dads. '

That seemed to be the end of the rant. Then Haley waved her hands, “Ok, let’s mention it. It’s NOTHING. THIS DAMN REALM! I have written to our congressmen and senator for the state. I am SO ENRAGED! Canada and most of Europe give their people at least a year! You KNOW a fucking man came up with this dumbass policy of twelve weeks not even guaranteed to be paid BULLSHIT.” My jaw dropped.

Haley ranted, “A fucking man who does not understand the bond that forms when one GROWS HUMAN BEINGS inside them. Then to callously be told you have to be away from your babies, even if that’s not what you want. No WONDER there is such depression among human women in this country post birth. I would be fucking depressed too! Sleep deprived new mothers paying for daycare, which is HIGHWAY ROBBERY! Have you SEEN the costs humans pay? It’s INFURIATING! Especially for women who want to stay with their kids but can’t because they don’t have the money.” She might have a point.

Haley hissed, “I AM SO PISSED OFF FOR THEM RIGHT NOW! It’s one thing if a woman wants to go back, and she’s ready. To be forced... This fucking realm sucks balls. Hackura women can take their time. They don’t even have to go back to missions if they don’t want to. The kingdom takes care of everyone. It’s the same in Faerie. Fucking earthly realm bullshit.” I bit my lip to stop myself from laughing.

Peter pointed at her, “She said many things like that to the new principal.” Of course, she did. I nodded. Haley started cackling. Drake asked, “Is she plotting world domination? Running for president? Either way, let’s just get on board.” I agreed, “Let’s.”

Haley explained, “Eric linked me. Evidently, our men decided to shift and go for a run after their meeting.” Lacy and I started laughing. I asked Lacy, “Did you finally see it?” Lacy nodded, “Yup, I peeked during his shower this morning when he thought I was asleep.” She turned to my cousin, “Haley, you really do need a statue of yourself made; I will worship it.” Chelsea chuckled, “What did Haley do?” Haley swiftly stated, “What needed to be done.”

Lucas linked me, “Are there any humans in the cafeteria?” I looked around, “No.” I’d barely finished the word when Lucas, Eric, Alpha Kyle, Beta McAlister, Beta Caleb, Lucas, and Dylan all popped in with Sharon, who was laughing her head off. Haley smiled and popped to Eric. She kissed him then greeted, “Hi, husband. Hi, Caleb.”

Caleb smiled at her, “Haley, you make my whole day better.” Haley mischievously stated, “I do aim to please.” Lucas growled, “Haley.” Dylan actually seemed to be pretty happy. I searched Lucas’ soul; he was entertained and only slightly annoyed.

Lucas turned to me, “Did you know about this?” I teased, “Maybe.” Chelsea questioned, “Know what?” Alpha Kyle said, “The Princess fairy charmed a... tattoo on Lucas and Beta Dylan’s ass. A sparkling, GIANT hot pink tattoo”

Chelsea’s eyes widened. Sam, Drake, and Peter started laughing. Lucas asked, “Haley, when does it come off? Because it better come off! Tell me it’s not permanent.” Haley simply said, “It comes off when I decide it can come off. When will that be? When I believe you have fully learned your lesson, my lion.”

Somehow Dylan had gotten popcorn again. Lucas growled, “Haley, I have hot pink sparkly letters on BOTH my ass cheeks!” Haley smiled, “I know, I couldn’t get it all on one cheek. It was too many words. It’s easier to read on both cheeks instead of just one. I would’ve had to make the writing so fucking small. Then who’d see it? That’s no fun.” How did she know that? I wonder who it was tested on.

Eric and Caleb both lost it. Beta McAlister was shaking with silent laughter. Lucas demanded, “Take it off!” Dylan slapped the back of his head yelling, “Take it off? I’m going to streak around and hope someone calls GAP. I believe I could get arrested for that. I’m pretty sure humans’ frown on nudity. The cops could call him! THAT WOULD BE AMAZING!”

Eric retorted, “If you get arrested, you only get one phone call. I wouldn’t come bail you out of jail, so I’d suggest you use your phone privileges wisely.” Dylan frowned then smiled,

“Fine, I’ll run around MY territory and hope someone calls you.”

Haley smiled, “They would only call if they needed his services. Anyway, I have seen my cousin and she has no more sorrow. I’ll be popping away to see the kiddos!” Haley popped out with Eric and Caleb. She popped back seconds later, “Sorry, Blade.”

Blade stepped out, “Is ok. Tell Tattoo. Blade forgive princess.” Haley smiled, “With pleasure. I’ll tell you all about their tattoo. You are going to laugh so hard.” She popped Blade away.

Lucas said, “Baby girl, please get her to take this off my ass.” I smirked, “I didn’t ask her to do it. So, I don’t think me asking her to remove it would work. You know how she is.”

Lucas growled before Sharon popped them all back to Red Run. Chelsea said, “I’ve got to know what it says.” Peter linked her and she started to laugh. Drake linked Sam and she lost it. Sam finally managed, “You have to love her. It’s just too good.” It really was.

We made it through the rest of our day. Not much got done in our last hour as everyone, including the teacher, cooed about how cute Tristan and Elise were. I drove our group home after school. As I pulled into the driveway, I noticed a car I’d never seen before.

Lacy gasped when I parked next to them and froze. I asked, “Lacy?” She got out of the car and slammed the door shut. I popped out of the car next to her. She pointed her finger at two older people standing there staring at her with wide eyes. I knew exactly who they were without being introduced. They looked like two people I’d come to consider friends.

Lacy yelled, “YOU TWO have a LOT of nerve just showing up here! I know he doesn’t know you’re coming because he would’ve told me.” I stared at the couple bewildered. I linked Lucas, “We may have a problem.”

Lucas retorted, “I know we have a problem, it’s on MY ASS!” I winced, “No, I’m staring at Dylan’s parents while

Lacy yells at them.” Lucas yelled, “WHAT? I’m coming.” Lucas was outside the door seconds later.

He lowered his voice to talk to the Frost’s, “You just showed up? Tell me Dylan knows you were coming home today. Never mind, I know he doesn’t know. Get inside before Travis gets back makes it back from the school. He usually runs, and he had a meeting after today. This is not how he should find out you are home.”

We made it inside just as Dylan came bounding down the stairs. He sang, “Lucas... I counted to one hundred. I do hope you weren’t keeping me from my fairy show. You know how I love it so. I went through all that trouble to make sure it didn’t get cancelled. Do you know how hard it is to get a petition for a show not to be cancelled taken seriously?”

Lucas ran to incept him. He pointed, “Office, now.” Dylan complained, “You clearly said count to one hundred, I did that. Now, I am being punished. You are so very mean. You will have to be the disciplinarian for my pups. I don’t have it in me.”

Their voices faded for me. Dylan’s mom’s eyes filled with tears. Lacy growled, “Don’t you dare, you bitch!” Venom coated her words and she didn’t stop there, “You sent them birthday cards for the last four years. No calls, no texts, and no emails. You don’t get to cry about Dylan being himself. I will kick your ass on the front lawn if you don’t give them one HELL of an explanation.”

Lucas linked me, “I need you to pop to me. Dylan wants to talk to Travis outside.” I said, “Excuse me. Lacy, I think Dylan needs you.” Lacy gritted her teeth, “One minute then. Brad!” Brad came inside startled. She ordered, “Watch them. They don’t move a single freaking muscle. You got that?” Brad nodded, “Yes, Beta Lacy.”

I grabbed Lacy and popped to Dylan and Lucas in their office. Dylan was rigid with anger which was an odd sight. I preferred singing, happy Dylan. He relaxed when Lacy touched him. I popped our group outside.

Travis was standing next to Jacqueline. She smiled and came over and gave me a hug. She stepped back, “Thank you for him! I’m sorry to just hug you, I know we never officially met. I just I know who you are.” I quickly assured her, “It’s fine. I know who you are too, and I’m glad you’re happy.”

Dylan said, “I’m glad you’re here, Jacqueline.” She squealed, “I wanted to surprise Travis. I wanted to give him the good news!” I asked, “Good news?” She nodded, “I’m transferring after winter break to your school. I was only one name off, and I argued it would be easier on my brother if I was in school with him. They agreed!” I could tell how happy it made both of them. I squealed, “That’s great!”

She nodded. Travis’ eyes sparkled when he looked at her. He nuzzled her neck, “Best surprise ever, Jackie.” Dylan cleared his throat, “I love that nickname. Her full name is such a mouthful. I will be running with Jackie now, forever, and always. I despise that I have to step on this moment, but we have an unwelcome surprise.” Travis put Jacqueline behind him in a second looking around for threats. He growled, “What?” Dylan announced, “Our long-lost parents have returned home from never never land.”

Travis’ eyes darkened. Jacqueline gasped and put her hands on Travis’ back. Dylan assured him, “You don’t have to talk to them, Travis. I just wanted you to hear it from me. They are back, like the evil they are they arrived without notice moments ago.” Travis growled, “Of course they did. No, I want them to tell me to my face why they didn’t come back for us.” That didn’t sound like a good idea. Dylan nodded, “Alright. Let’s go.”

I asked, “Are we popping or walking?” Dylan snorted, “I’m slamming the front door off its little hinges, my fairy Luna. I need to get my angry walk going. The angry Dylan blood is a flowing. They WILL feel my wrath.” I winced, “Ok.”

Lucas took my hand and we followed Dylan. He really did take the front door off its hinges. Lacy glared at the Frost’s. Brad even looked like he’d swallowed something sour. Lucas’ parents looked wearily at all of us from the couch.

Lucas cleared his throat, “Dylan, Travis this is your show.” Dylan snorted, “Damn straight it is.” Dylan’s dad said, “Why don’t we all sit down?” Lacy growled, “Fuck that, and fuck you two.” Dylan pursed his lips, “No to that. We will not all sit down! You both stand there and tell Travis and I what the HELL happened? Did you fall down a hole after chasing a rabbit and end up in Wonderland? EXPLAIN YOURSELVES NOW!”

I gulped as his voice shook the room. Lucas put a comforting arm around me, and I put a hand on Lacy’s arm to support her. I hoped everyone would make it through this conversation in one piece, but after searching everyone’s souls I didn’t think it was going to happen.

Idiotese

Lucas couldn't tear his eyes off of Emmaline now that she was in front of him again. Dominic was howling in delight. He demanded, "Make sure mate talks to us. I miss talking to her." I replied, "That's the goal here." I honestly didn't care where she wanted to talk. Anywhere I could hear her voice was good to me.

She popped us into her sanctuary. Dylan linked me, "Your jewelry store purchase has been pushed through." I replied, "You didn't waste time on that." Dylan retorted, "I am a man on mission. I am FAR too awesome to be the Alpha. I know all the right questions to ask. Everyone would be bored if I was the Alpha. My poor Beta, which Travis is pissed about by the way, would have nothing to do because I would ask all the right questions. Travis would be so bored. No one wants to live a boring life, especially us Frost boys. We bring the fun."

I scoffed, "You are being ridiculous." He replied, "ME? I'm ridiculous! You just... no. The sale is processed. I will LOCK Emmaline in your new jewelry store until she forgives you if you can't convince her to. You have been forewarned, and I'm not even sorry. I'll make your fairy pick out all the shiny things she wants while you apologize after every single item. Eventually, she will say it's ok and all will be well." I somehow didn't doubt that was one of his many plans.

I sat in the chair Emmaline snapped me and we talked through everything. We got through everything that happened. When I offered to give up my title as Alpha she immediately said no, but I wanted her to think about it. She means more than all of this. A part of me would always long to lead my pack; but she was everything to me. She still immediately answered saying no. Dylan would be thrilled.

I hated feeling her uncertainty when I told her I loved her. I'd shot myself in the foot with her. It killed that she wasn't sure I loved her anymore. I'd prove it to her if it was the last thing I ever did. I was surprised and grateful Haley had been by to talk to Emmaline again to explain some things. Clearly, it was not my strong point. Dominic snorted, "No, it's not."

Dominic huffed, "You see what actually telling her things get you? She understands, mate is perfect." I agreed, "Yes, she really is." Dominic was not happy when she admitted she liked Fegle, "LET ME OUT HUMAN! I WILL TRACK HIM DOWN AND RIP HIS THROAT OUT!" I growled at him, "No, stay in there. Since when am I human to you?" He huffed in anger but said nothing.

I tried to calmly tell Emmaline that Fegle had been flirting with her. She really believed he was just being nice. Dominic grumbled, "Thor is right." I asked, "Thor?" Dominic retorted, "Keep up! You communicate with Eric; I communicate with Thor. He's told me MANY stories about how his mate doesn't understand her appeal. Now our mate doesn't see it, and it was blatant flirting. Thor thinks it's a partial fairy thing."

I groaned, "Good to know Thor has a theory." Dominic added, "I agree with him. He's a very smart wolf, not unlike myself." I agreed, "Of course you are both smart." Emmaline started to talk about Nikki and I winced. Dominic huffed, "But we were just focused on mate, Nikki means nothing. I wasn't even around yet when you slept with her. I wouldn't have let you; she smells horrible. Truly, I thought you had better taste."

I winced, "I was fifteen, she liked me, and had giant boobs." Dominic snorted, "You clearly needed me. Your taste was awful. Christy was a horrid human, but she didn't smell like garbage. I'll forgive you for Claudia. You were enchanted, but I hated that woman." I sighed, "Yes I know you did. You talked about it incessantly whenever she was around." It should've been a big clue to me about her. Dominic and I were usually in sync.

Emmaline started laughing hysterically. I had no idea what was so funny, but this was her real laugh, so I didn't care. I did

want to hear that hollow laugh she'd had at Thanksgiving ever again. We confirmed we were ok, but not fully back to us.

To be honest, I wasn't there with her yet either. I was still upset she hadn't told me about the sulfur training days. Thinking about her being vulnerable or losing a pack member because I thought she had powers upset me. I was pretty much over it, but not fully there.

I'd make this up to her somehow. I linked Dylan, "Emmaline said the flowers can stop." Dylan replied, "The flowers will continue. I cannot stop them, nor do I want to try. Stop linking me. I'm ordering more flowers! GAP is probably having fits over all the things I've wiped him out of. It's sparking such joy for me."

I laughed, "How are there more blue roses in the damn state at this point?" Dylan snorted, "I am ordering Lacy lavender roses. I ordered the last of the blue roses in Alabama from a town called Mountain Brook. I've decided I want to visit it. I MUST know of this town! They have a watermill that has a water wheel; I want to go there. I will see what wonder lurks in this small town."

Emmaline's eyes gleamed when she said we could mess with Dylan about the title change. Any other topic or another time, I'd have been on board. Dylan was having a tough time because of me though. Something like giving him the Alpha title wasn't an appropriate prank. That would change his whole life, and his pups.

Emmaline popped us to the living room and she was so shocked I felt it in my chest. Dylan had basically made our living room into a chocolate factory. There was every kind of chocolate you could possibly want somewhere in this room.

Dylan appeared out of nowhere. I linked him, "Were your ears burning?" He ignored me. Emmaline told him it had to be stressing him out to find more chocolates. I wanted to laugh. Dylan thrived on doing this type of stuff. They bantered back and forth.

I linked him, "You don't mean until she's fixed. You mean you won't stop until she agrees to me remaining the Alpha."

Dylan snorted, “I also truly do want her to be better. That is the first priority. Fix the Luna, then convince her your sleep tyrant self is to remain the Alpha.”

I wiggled my eyebrows at him over her head. Dylan linked me, “So help me Lucas... If you step down my first act as Alpha will be to make you sleep outside for a year! Just you. Emmaline gets to keep her room. All my orders will be directed at you until your Alpha blood literally CANNOT take it anymore and takes your title back. I have such plans.”

We put him at ease, and his happiness couldn't be contained. He rambled about the plans he and Travis had come up with. Of course, they had. Travis didn't want to be the Beta just as much as Dylan didn't want to be the Alpha. He had Beta blood, but Travis thoroughly enjoyed being a warrior.

I linked Lacy, “Get in here and calm your mate down. He's going to start breaking into song any minute now.” Lacy came in and that just caused Dylan to sing. I snorted; I just couldn't stop the man. He rambled on and on. Lacy linked me “Excuse me? Why does he think he would be the Alpha?” I answered, “Because I would step down as Alpha if Emmaline wanted me to.” Lacy frowned, “She doesn't want that.” I shrugged, “I offered because I meant it, Lacy Loo. She's my world.”

Dylan really had ordered every rose in the tri-state area. He probably could cancel some of the orders, but I knew he wouldn't. Dylan linked me, “I'm not even sorry, not one little bit. Do you have ANY idea the anxiety I have been dealing with? My blood pressure is higher, I just know it is.”

I gave him a look, “It wasn't an extended period of time for you to think it was a possibility.” Dylan scoffed, “An hour is too long for that kind of mental stress. I was doing mental gymnastics. In case you were curious, I'm the all-around gold medalist. You can send congratulations in the form of buying me a popcorn company as my very own.” I was absolutely not doing that.

Dylan then lamented about our schedule. There were days when we were younger that we stayed up until the early hours of the morning partying. I linked Dylan, “The last time we

stayed up that late, we were surveilling a pack. You complained the entire time that you wanted to go to sleep.”

Dylan growled, “Shhh that’s not relevant to my argument.” Dylan reveled in his victory about not becoming the Alpha, hopping around me like a bunny. A very fast bunny. I had to stop watching him because I was getting dizzy. I admitted he was right, and somehow that set him off.

I rolled my eyes when he told the girls about his power of being mute. Dylan linked me, “Don’t you roll your eyes at me. My powers affect you the most out of everyone.” I smiled at my best friend. He really was a great man. I couldn’t have picked anyone better for my sister.

I linked Emmaline just to test if it worked or not but was greeted by the same wall. It didn’t feel as solid as it had; but it was a wall, nonetheless. Dominic howled in pain that she still wasn’t sure we loved her. Dylan was ranting on.

I linked him, “Good GOD you are dramatic.” Dylan smirked, “And you love my dramatic ass! Toodles!” He took off like a shot with Lacy. I stared at him before replying, “Toodles? Are you eighty? Jesus, Dylan.” Dylan never lost sight of being himself no matter what was thrown at him.

Emmaline said she’d pull in Haley, Bexley, even Aiden if necessary to put Dylan back to his original settings if he was ever so upset he wasn’t cracking jokes. I’d throw in Eric as well. Those two can deny it, but they enjoyed the little verbal sparring they did. I did know Eric was going to get Dylan back. I was going to have to tell Eric he couldn’t do it at our wedding. Any other day he could, but I wanted Emmaline to have her dream wedding.

I could hear the shock in Emmaline’s voice when she noticed the birthday invitations for her party. I didn’t know how they’d got there. My dad linked me, “I put them there, just answer her.” I looked around and spotted him lurking in a doorway looking anxious.

She’d thought I’d forgotten her birthday. As if I could forget the date my mate came into this world. Gemma was going to have steak and potatoes with green beans prepared if

Emmaline approved. We had a secondary plan of burgers and fries. Emmaline could have anything she wanted though. They were just ideas of things I thought she would like.

I had gone ahead and ordered the cake. It was a waterfall, and the back was like the meadow the waterfall was in. I thought it would celebrate both her fairy sides quite well. Emotions snapped into me like a geyser as Emmaline started to sob. I immediately recognized them as hers. I'd missed feeling her this way. She fell to her knees, but I caught her before she fell on her face. SHIT!

I linked Dylan, "Katie said Emmaline liked birthdays! You saw that email too, right?" Dylan complained, "Dylan is busy. He is trying to get out the proverbial doghouse. He did see said email from the creepy ninja prince assassin's witchy mate that said Emmaline's LOVES her birthday." I growled, "She saw the invitations and she's sobbing uncontrollably." Dylan sighed, "Ordering more chocolates for you to beg forgiveness for whatever this is about. Do not forget you now own a jewelry store. The plan to lock her in just needs to be greenlit." We might have to.

My dad linked, "Just ask her what's going on. I guarantee it's not what you think." What was he on about? I should've considered that her stance on her birthday changed after she left home. She whispered that I loved her.

I was baffled. Invitations? The invitations to her birthday party showed her I loved her? I wanted to smack myself when I remembered Bexley had told me to show these to her when she was talking to me again. My dad linked, "I'm taking all fairy advice to heart from now on." I replied, "Thank you, dad. I really..." He cut me off, "I love you, son. I'll do anything for my kids, including Emmy." He was the best dad.

I needed to reassure Dylan, "Cancel the chocolates. She's crying because the invitations convinced her I do love her." Dylan snorted, "Seriously? Not the tri-state rose collection and chocolate factory I created? Your fairy is still broken. Fix her pretty please with a cherry on top. My genius needs to be appreciated."

Emmaline said she wasn't happy I'd found time to talk to Katie. I winced. I had talked to Katie, Dustin, and Ryan, but not her. To be fair, I only emailed Katie. I almost fell over when I heard Emmaline link me. Relief hit me like a ton of bricks. Her fairy side really was ok. I wasn't surprised she wasn't ready to be intimate, but that was fine. Talking to her was more than I was expecting from her by now. I could feel how happy she was. She took out her phone and seconds later I had a text myself.

Eric: Haley said Emmaline told her everything was good now. You ok?

Me: Yes, we are fine now.

Eric: I'm glad. I know Haley was hard on you.

Me: She wasn't wrong. Emmaline is not just her cousin, she's her subject. I understand. We need a

'what you need to know fairies' book. Also, Haley packs a punch, but I needed it. I think we all need to keep in mind some of this comes from the charm she used to take Emmaline's burden.

Eric: Haley and Aiden are arguing about the book. She says other groups that have partial fairy

mates in their pack need to have this information, because to fairies themselves it's second nature. She doesn't want to deal with issues like this when it's avoidable. Aiden has said the books cannot leave Faerie. Haley is fucking pissed. Bjourn taught her to fight. So, she does pack quite the punch. I'm worried about that damn ancient ritual too. I know Aiden is which makes me have even worse feelings about the whole ordeal.

Me: I'm sure she will find a way to get the books out there.

Eric: That she will.

My next text surprised me.

Logan: I'll come kick yours and Emmaline's ass if you try to do this again. Katie has been in a state since Haley told her what was going on.

Me: When did I get your number?

Logan: I put it in your phone.

Me: When?

Logan: You'll never know. Your jewelry purchase inspired Haley to watch that movie. She ranted about how Jack could've fit on that damn piece of wood FOR HOURS. She even did the math. Katie thought it was hilarious.

Jesus they were stealthy. I linked Dylan, "Logan is going to kick my ass then Emmaline's if we don't talk again. Katie is upset." I left out the part about Haley watching the Titanic. He'd bring it up with her and she'd rant again. Dylan snorted, "You'd best watch it, his ninja skills are next level. You'll be in a room then BAM he's punched you in the face. Because he was there all along, you just couldn't see him." That's true.

I felt bad Katie had done something to Dustin and Ryan. They were just helping me. I decided to get up and take a shower. I smelled Emmaline about halfway through my shower. I could see her in the mirror of the bathroom barely peeking in the door. I smirked realizing she was staring at me. My little fairy was feeling naughty. I wasn't surprised when she didn't join me because I knew she wasn't ready for that yet.

I was surprised when Dylan linked me, "Didn't our mates just spend two and half days together? WHY do they need to talk for a minute now? Lacy said there was no sex in my near future. Why is life SO unfair?"

Emmaline linked me. I told Dylan, "Emmaline said nothing is wrong, and that she will be right back." Dylan replied, "Did you fall and hit your head? That last time they popped away

we didn't see them for days." He scoffed mocking me, "Nothing is wrong. It is VERY wrong. Such an Alpha blood you are. Did my mute powers activate and you didn't hear me say there was no sex in my near future. That is the definition of wrong!"

I replied, "I know where they are. I also do not see sex in my near future. Also stop saying that, that's my sister." Dylan's trepidation came through in his tone "They are back. Whatever went down they are laughing like hyenas and they have tears streaming down their face. Some fairy hijinks are afoot. I feel it."

I didn't care, "I'm sure we will find out soon then." Dylan asked incredulously, "Not even a small part of you is curious?" I admitted, "Dylan, all parts of me are just relieved my mate is speaking to me again." Dylan complained, "GOD you are boring! Honestly, you are SO lucky I am around to help make you spicier." I laughed, "You have more than enough spice for both of us. I can have fun too."

Dylan snorted, "Because I make you have fun. Do remind your Luna I am the funny one in this pack. I was funny LONG before she got here. No, no, long before she was BORN. Being funny is my thing, and she can't have it."

I laughed, "I'll be sure to tell her that. I'm sure that will go over well since we just started talking again. You tell her. I will not tell her something that I could give a shit less about. You can both be funny." Dylan sounded aghast, "It's just a LITANY of betrayals tonight! At least I know my pillow is happy to see me. The rest of you can shove it. My pillow has all the love I need."

I laughed, "We still have training with Dustin in the morning." Dylan yelled, "YOU SON OF A SLEEP TYRANT! Fine, stop talking to me. I need to snuggle my precious pillow. It thinks I'm cheating on it with another pillow because of you and your evil sleepless schedule. It's devastated. I found it hiding under the bed today." I chuckled to myself.

I drew Emmaline a bath while she was gone. I was pleasantly surprised she wanted me to stay with her when she

came back. I wanted her to relax and feel pampered. She loved the jewelry I bought her. I was certain there were pieces I hadn't picked though. It must have been Dylan.

She admired every piece as she put them away. She was stunned when I'd admitted to buying a jewelry store. It would make Dylan's and my life easier. Hell, I was going to have to buy a flower and chocolate shop too. I might have stock in one at this point. Or at least I should with the amount of flowers and chocolates in this house.

Emmaline found my clue from Haley. She asked where I'd met her. That was at their reception outside the chapel. Has my collection been in plain sight hidden by some charm this whole time? Emmaline then asked if that was when Haley started calling me her lion.

OH MY GOD! King Arthur had my collection. That sneaky vampire! Of course, he would join Haley's game. He loved her and Bexley like they were his own kids. I'm positive Bexley would've had a half vampire fairy sibling if her mother had lived. Arthur had been willing to give her mother anything, even a child. She would've gone to him again eventually. Especially since she only left him because she just wanted a full blooded fairy child first.

After the summit, I'd done my research on King Arthur. Everyone talked about the strange love between the two of them. Many said there was a pull between them. I wondered if he was her second chance mate, but we'd never know. Or someone did know, possibly Aiden. I wondered if Emmaline's power could work that way. I shrugged that off and went to sleep.

I woke up to Dylan linking me, "MEEEEPPPPPPP MEEEEPPPP MEEEEPPPPP this is your courtesy Dylan wake up call. Should you like a nicer one, SET YOUR OWN ALARM, YOU TYRANT!" I held in my laugh and got out of bed to get dressed.

When we got in the car I ordered, "Call King Arthur." Dylan grumbled, "He will answer because he's still awake because THE SUN IS NOT UP." He pulled out a thermos and

took a swig. He jabbed a finger at me, “In case you were wondering this is all my coffee. MINE! There is none for tyrants.”

I laughed, “That’s fine, just call King Arthur.” Dylan yelled, “FINE!” He pulled out his phone and dialed. King Arthur answered, “Alpha Lucas, it has been a while.” Dylan grumbled, “It’s Beta Dylan’s phone, I could be calling.” King Arthur laughed, “I know who is calling and why.” Dylan shot me a look.

I answered. “It has not been that long. You have something of mine.” Dylan might have gotten whiplash from how quickly he was looking between the phone and me. His mouth dropped. He squealed, “No way! Not even I saw that coming. That was not my guess for where your collection was.”

King Arthur laughed, “I thought I’d be hearing from you MUCH sooner. Many of my subjects have questions for you Alpha Lucas on where you acquired some of these pieces. They have been salivating over them. I had to issue a command for no one to contact you about bartering with you for them.”

I growled, “Those pieces are mine. Where are they?” King Arthur laughed, “On display in my throne room.” I asked, “How did Eric not know that?” King Arthur answered, “I issued a command no werewolves could know. Haley did have such fun, and her rules were quite explicit. You can come collect them during the day today. I’ll tell my daytime assistant to expect you. I do apologize, but she cannot give it to anyone but you. Again, the rules are quite clear, and I don’t want to be Haley’s next prank target.” Who did? I glanced at my Beta and instantly knew the answer. He would love to be her next target.

King Arthur continued, “Her brother, Prince Bjourn, told me when he brought it to me that she’s quite into pranks. They all have her help get each other on occasion. Their first prank was quite hilarious on poor Prince Harper. Prince Drake heard fairies like pranks. They had some small prank planned which Haley found quite boring. She took over, and that opened her up to them. She’s pulled pranks on all her brothers many times over. Once she did get their mother, something about replacing

her designer clothes with Walmart brands. She's got Titus and Astrid's father as well. Along with Astrid's brother."

I sighed, "Dylan and I will be there later to pick it up." King Arthur chuckled, "I'd tell you how to avoid that, but I find this fun. Goodnight then. I won't ask why you're awake, it is strange though. Enjoy your vampire hours wolves." He hung up.

Dylan glared at me, "Even the VAMPIRE knows how weird it is we are awake. How did you solve your clue?" I smirked, "Emmaline asked when I met Haley and then followed that up with if that was when she first called me her lion. Back to the beginning." Dylan nodded, "Smart little fairy she is."

My phone rang and I tossed it to Dylan, "This is the Tyrant Alpha's phone. Please let us know why you, just like us, are also awake before the sun on vampire hours." Nick Kyle answered, "We got an early morning messenger from Alpha Ezra. He can't tell us his message until everyone is here."

I linked Dylan, "Did our reports show anything?" Dylan shook his head, "No." I said, "We are almost to your territory. We are meeting with Dustin and Ryan to train." Nick said, "Eric can't get here until eleven o'clock."

I couldn't deny that made me happy, "Great. Dylan and I have to go to King Arthur's house to pick up my gaming collection." Nick snorted, "She got the king of the vampires in on this? What am I even saying? Of course, she did. I heard she quite likes him after he helped her during her time there." Dylan linked, "What a nice was to say kidnapped and held against her will. Alpha Nick Kyle for werewolf communications everyone." I rolled my eyes at him, telling Nick "She does like him."

We hung up. Dylan said, "Don't think I'm not laying down in the back and sleeping the whole way to King Arthur's." I pointed out, "It's thirty minutes from here." Dylan snapped, "I know that! WHO do you think got you all the details before you charged off to stand watch over the place for God Alpha Prick? I know more about that entire area than you do!"

I laughed, “Yes, I know you do. You did get to kill a lot of vampires though. If I recall you were quite happy leading some of those charges by my side.” Dylan smiled, “Ahh, yes. They were the best of times in a very bad time. Thank GOD you let me run the pack while you were off seeing GAP at what is now King Arthur’s home. I shuddered hearing how he was.” I winced, “It wasn’t pretty.” Dylan sounded horrified, “He wouldn’t have even found my jokes hilarious. THE HORROR!” I rolled my eyes.

Our lesson with Dustin and Ryan took longer than I was anticipating. I sighed dejectedly when I got into the car. Dylan asked, “What? What are you glum about? That was the best we’ve done against them. No more sadness in our territory. I do realize this isn’t our territory, but you know what I’m saying.”

I admitted, “I was hoping to get back before Emmaline had to go to school.” Dylan frowned, “Drat! Now I’m glum! I didn’t know that was on our agenda. Why do you torture me with what could’ve been?” I growled, “You asked.” Dylan tapped my arm, “You should’ve lied, or said nothing.” I rolled my eyes.

Nick called back. As soon as I picked up he said, “Eric was able to get away early. Can you guys come now?” I answered, “Yes, we will be right there.” I linked Emmaline when we arrived that I wouldn’t be able to get back to her like I’d planned. A second later she popped to me. Everyone smiled at her. She waved and gave me a kiss then left.

Dylan muttered, “Oh, Hi Dylan. Nope, couldn’t bring Lacy to give you your morning kiss because if you don’t remember the whole pack has decided to hate you. I’m going to hang out with your mate all damn day. While Dylan gets no Lacy time. Bye bye now.” I laughed, “She probably just wasn’t with Lacy when I linked her.”

Dylan glared at me, “Because you couldn’t have linked her when we got in the car. She would’ve been with Lacy at training. Selfish Alpha, so very selfish and a tyrant to boot.” We all laughed. Nick motioned for us all to sit down.

The messenger took out packets for each of us. We opened them and found an apology letter with an offer for an alliance. Eric looked up stating in a hard tone, "Fuck no." I agreed, "I echo that sentiment." Nick sighed, "I'll think about it." The messenger left.

Beta McAlister said, "He is on one of our borders, Nick." Dylan huffed, "Again with this first name business. It's bad enough Lucas and GAP call him Nick; his name is Alpha Kyle." He turned to Nick, "I am sorry about these crazy people, Alpha Kyle. It's like everyone woke up on the wrong side of the bed because we got up at zero dark thirty and forgot all the rules." Nick laughed, "It's quite alright, Beta Dylan."

Eric looked at Dylan, pointedly saying, "Nick, Alpha Ezra will find out what happened that day eventually. I do not think you will want him as your ally when that day comes." Nick smirked, "That's precisely why I want him as an ally. If we enter into an alliance contract for the next fifty years, I can wipe him out if he has anything to do with any sort of move against me or anyone in this pack. No one will say anything about it." That was a valid point, but I could tell Eric did not agree with the move. He pointed out, "He would know more about you as your ally and what weaknesses you have." It was an excellent point.

We talked over the logistics. Eric still would not agree to be Alpha Ezra's ally. I spoke, "It might be better if neither Eric nor I accept. It would appear like you did nothing but we did. He already thinks Eric killed his brother. If you are his ally it could take him longer to figure out what really happened."

Eric commented, "Being an ally with a snake is a risk no matter which way this goes. I don't even need my wife here to tell me she'd have a bad feeling about this. I have a bad feeling. Nick, your grandpup is EJ's mate. I will always come to your aide as quickly as possible, as will my pups, wife, pack, and allies. I fear one day you will need our aid against Alpha Ezra. Not during your reign, but Peter's. You'll have our backing no matter the timing." I frowned.

Eric continued, "I understand why you want to make it harder for him, but dishonorable people will always be

dishonorable. Whether you have an alliance or not, he's planning something. Not that I wouldn't have before, but now I cannot let anything happen to Elise. It would hurt my son, and I won't have that."

Nick nodded, "I understand. What do you plan to do about it?" Eric tilted his head, "I have a warrior who usually guards Haley. I have another guard for her that's training with him, he's more social. I was going to have them work together, but plans change. The wolf I have guarding her now is a bit of a loner. If you'd accept him here, I'd like him to guard Elise from afar. He will remain a part of my pack, but he will live here. He would love this assignment because he loves pups. He enjoys playing with little Cassie. He's a great man. If anything were to come at your pack, his instructions would be to make sure Elise is safe above all else."

Dylan gaped at Eric, but I understood. Nick laughed, "As if I would say no. I know the warrior you speak of. If Ray agrees to this plan he's welcome here. There's a cottage next to Peter and Chelsea's that he can have. If he wishes to stay there when they move into the main house he can or a room will be arranged in the main house." They hammered out those details.

When they were done Dylan said, "So GAP, if any of my pups are mated to yours, I can expect a warrior to protect them?" Eric growled, "Shut up, Dylan." Dylan squealed, "Did everyone hear that? It was a resounding yes. MOON GODDESS GIVE THIS TO ME!" Several people snickered.

Nick readied the paperwork to align his pack with Alpha Ezra's for the next fifty years. He sent a messenger back along with copies he sent off to the council with their approval. Eric and I called our fathers to process it quickly. Dylan linked me, "Smart not to just assume Alpha Ezra would submit them to the council." I replied, "Nick is a smart man." After that was all said and done our wolves were anxious.

Eric told me, "Haley popped to check on Emmaline at school for lunch. She said everything is all good with her from a fairy standpoint." Dylan hopped up and down, "Fabulous, let's go for a run. I NEED to run."

Everyone stripped the second we got outside. Dylan and I were behind everyone keeping an eye on the flank. When we returned, Dylan and I were in the lead. We'd run for about forty five minutes before we quit. Dylan and I shifted back first and grabbed our clothes.

Eric shifted back howling in laughter. Dylan and I turned stunned to see the entire group laughing. I heard female laughter before I spotted Sharon, Marissa Kyle, and Esther McAlister hunched over in laughter.

Dylan clapped his hands, "Ok... that's the second time... What is going on?" I asked, "The second time?" Dylan glared at me, "See? Sleep deprivation is bad for you. I told you Emmaline and Lacy were beside themselves when they came back from the treehouse last night. I smelled Lacy this morning while I was in the shower. I thought she was going to join me, but she never did."

I was starting to get a bad feeling. I admitted, "Emmaline did the same thing last night before she popped to Lacy." I turned to Eric, "What did your mate do to us?" Eric couldn't speak he was laughing so hard. Dylan grumbled, "That's just unsettling, he is wheezing. He never used to laugh. Is that what we are calling that? Someone, make it stop. The windows in the territory aren't safe." That made several people snort.

Nick gathered himself first, "You both have tattoos on your ass." Dylan frowned. I raised an eyebrow, "I may be low on sleep, but I would remember a tattoo. TELL ME Haley can't magic a tattoo on to people."

Beta Caleb responded, "Evidently, she can. It's pink... hot pink and it's sparkly." He lost it again laughing. I tilted my head. I couldn't make out what it said, but it was hot pink and sparkly. I growled, "Dylan, turn around."

He jumped and stuck out his ass at me. I gasped. Dylan sang, "LUCAS! What do our asses say? The suspense is killing me!" I admitted, "One cheek says *I speak idiotese Call Alpha*, the other cheek says, *Eric Conners for interpretation.*"

Dylan roared with laughter. “She was not kidding. You mess with the fairy; you get the hijinks. GAP, you have ceased wheezing. Riddle me this, it comes off right?” Eric speculated, “If she can magic it on, she can magic it off.” Dylan pranced around showing off his ass.

I asked, “Really, Dylan?” Dylan asked, “Do you think we can convince the Fairy Queen to have her dinner party while we still have the tattoo? We could moon the table! I bet that would make their dinner FABULOUS!” I groaned, “You would find this funny.”

Dylan smirked, “So do you, admit it.” I agreed, “It’s a little funny, but I won’t tell Haley that.” Beta Caleb pointed out, “You can’t fool a fairy, but unlike them you can lie.” Eric smirked, “She’s at the school.”

Dylan clapped, “YES! Let’s go talk to her! You owe me, Lucas. You got to see Emmaline this morning because she can pop. I haven’t seen Lacy.” I laughed, “Hold on, let me get my angry face on.” I took several deep breaths then opened my eyes.

We all got dressed and Nick motioned Sharon to come over. Sharon popped to us, still laughing asked, “Yes, Alpha.” Nick said, “We need you to pop us to school.” Sharon agreed, “With pleasure, Alpha. I must say Lucas, pink looks good on you.” She busted up laughing and popped us to the school.

I had a hard time keeping my composure when speaking sternly to Haley. Dylan linked me, “You’re going to mess it up if you keep almost smirking. Think about Alpha Hammond, that should make you mad.” He was right.

I barely contained my laugh when Haley said it would come off when she was ready. I linked Dylan, “That is so insanely Haley.” Everyone else was laughing while I tried to keep a stern expression. Haley was just too funny.

I linked Eric, “Moments like this make me want to kick every fairies ass who tried to take this side of her away from us. Who thinks of this shit besides Haley?” Eric replied, “I know. I love how much fun she has pulling pranks. Possibly because she hasn’t gotten me yet. All her brothers said they

don't mind when she gets them though because she has so much fun pulling them."

I was barely managing to stay stern. Dylan linked me, "REMOVE IT?! ARE YOU INSANE? This is quite possibly the BEST way to get GAP called to our aid! He'd have to come; it would be his own wife's fault. Think of ALL the meetings he could have to come to with us. It's GLORIOUS." He would think that.

Haley popped the Connors group away, and Sharon popped us away. The second we were back in Red Run I laughed. "Do you have any idea how hard it was to keep a straight face?" Dylan responded, "One will never know, you almost smirked like twenty times."

I laughed all the way to the car. We arrived at King Arthur's shortly after we'd gotten lunch from Al's. We met the King's daytime Assistant. She greeted, "Hello, I'm MaryBeth. King Arthur had me box up your collection today. My vampire will be so disappointed. He loved your pieces. Could I by chance get the names of those you acquired your collection from? It might ease the blow for him."

I laughed, "Since you have it ready to go; I'll have my Beta, Dylan Frost, email you the list." She smiled broadly and exchanged information with Dylan. MaryBeth said, "It's been demanded for months now that when you arrive, I ask if you are willing to part with any of the pieces."

I quickly said, "Not at this time, should that change you will be my first call." She smiled again. Dylan spoke, "Milady all the collectors names where our valiant gamer knight bequeathed his collection from are now at your fingertips."

I pointed out, "I bought it all, Dylan. I didn't bequeath it." Dylan growled, "I was doing a whole medieval bit. She's dating a vampire; they are super old." MaryBeth laughed, "Not all of them, but mine is." Dylan slapped my chest, "You see? Just let me have my moments, Lucas!" I laughed and so did MaryBeth.

Once everything had been loaded into our SUV we made the trip home. Dylan said, "I arranged for people to unload all

of this in your safe once we arrive. I'm not lugging this stuff around. I linked your dad to let them into your safe room to remove the Tinkerbell's..”

That was a good idea. I replied, “Thanks. I thought you were going to sleep on the drive.” Dylan rolled his eyes, “Oh ye of Alpha blood, we've had training, fairy hijinks, and a collection to gather. Not to mention coffee, so much coffee. Dylan could last all day with no nap now.” We left the warriors to unpack my collection.

My dad teased me, “Finally got it all back, did you? Too bad. It was fun watching you run around solving clues.” Dylan told him in a far too delighted tone, “Don't you worry, Dale. Now, we have a sparkly pink tattoo on our asses.”

My dad faltered, “You what?” I dropped my pants. My dad roared with laughter. When he stopped, he told us, “We all need to take prank lessons from that woman.” I snorted, “We need to keep everyone else from taking lessons with her, or no one will be safe.”

Dylan and I went up to our office. I opened the door and was surprised to see a present in blue wrapping paper on my desk. I picked up the card and read it.

My lion,

I know you find my tattoo funny despite what you said earlier. I am sorry for the part I played in your fight with Emmaline. I never want either of you to be hurt. She's my cousin, and you are my lion.

In that spirit, I hope you read this whole book. I tend to forget not everyone has the knowledge I do. Fairies are secretive by nature, which is fucking weird for a group of people who can't lie. Fairies, I guess. Bunch of weirdos, what can you do?

Haley

P.S. Don't tell Aiden.

Dylan squealed, “OPEN IT! Keeping secrets from King Fire Hands?! GOD! This day keeps getting better and better!” I laughed and unwrapped the paper. I was shocked by what I found.

I sat there and stared for a moment then asked, “But... how?” Dylan started to play the song *Happy* by Pharrell Williams on his phone. He picked up the book and twirled it around dancing to the music. He told me, “I will build an altar for it, we will get a secret lair. I’ll have our resident creepy ninja cook one up for us. This is my new bible, and I must memorize every single word in this book.”

I took out my phone and dialed Eric. Dylan hissed, “DON’T YOU DARE get this book taken away from me, Lucas! I will hide it if necessary. I need time to screenshot the whole book if you’re giving it back. Then I can type it out from there. I won’t be at your trainings because I will be doing the work of the gods getting us this text back in print.”

Eric picked up, “Lucas, Haley won’t tell me when she’s taking the tattoo off your ass.” I laughed, “She seems to know I find it funny. I’m looking at a present from your wife. Dylan’s practically salivating over it.” Eric laughed, “Yes, it seems she got those out today then.” I asked, “How did she get us all *A History of fairies*? None of us have had this information or the ability to gain knowledge about the history of the fae. Their books never leave their realm.”

Dylan hissed, “STOP TRYING TO TAKE THIS FROM ME! GAP, you can’t have it back. I’ll fight you for it. It’s now my precious.” He whispered it like they do in *Lord of the Rings*. I rolled my eyes. Eric snorted, “If I wanted to fight you for that book, Dylan, I’d have it back easily. As it stands, I have my own. I do not need yours. She conjured herself a copy. Aiden said the original book couldn’t leave their realm. Haley said none of these are the original books. She doesn’t want what happened with Emmaline to happen again because we don’t have the information available to us.”

Dylan reverently stated, “She is a goddess fun sized ninja fairy goddess and I bow at her feet. What do we have to do to make that title official? I’ll do it. She must ascend to goddess

status.” I didn’t think anything could bring his mood down today.

Then Emmaline linked me that Dylan’s parents were here. I stood, “Eric, I have to go. Dylan, count to one hundred or something, but stay up here.” Dylan snorted, “I have literally no interest in whatever you are going to do right now. I’m going to read a chapter in my book. If you aren’t back, I suppose I’ll come see what’s so urgent. It had better be good though.”

I winced then raced outside and sure enough there stood Dylan’s parents. I linked my dad, “Did you know Davis and Betty were coming back today?” My dad replied, “What? They are finally back?” I sighed, “Evidently. Lacy is practically at their throats.” My dad told me, “We are on the way.” That was good. Because they’d have a better chance of controlling my sister.

I knew Dylan had no idea they were coming. He wouldn’t have let it go down like this. Not when Travis could come running home from school and see them standing on the damn front lawn. I needed to get everyone inside. I could only hope Dylan would be so enthralled by his history of fairies book he’d forget about counting to one hundred. Maybe he’d just read the whole damn book while I sorted this shit show out.

I had no such luck. He sang coming down the stairs. It hurt me how happy he sounded. This was going to crush him. I ran up the stairs trying to beat him to the landing so he wouldn’t see them. I linked him, “DO NOT come out here.” Dylan stopped, “Umm ok. I’ll be waiting right here for you. I hear you thundering up the stairs like a herd of zebras. Someone should tell Haley her name is off. You’re not a lion, you’re a whole herd of some type of animal.”

I pulled him into my office. “There’s no easy way to say this so I’m going to rip off the Band-Aid.” Dylan frowned “Must you? It’s been an oddly good day. All I need is to convince Lacy to have naked sexy time, and it will have been a banner day. Gold star next to it and everything.”

I winced, “Yes, I do have to. Your parents are downstairs.” Dylan went rigid with anger. Fang pushed forward, “Davis and Betty are downstairs?” I nodded. Dylan took back over and began to pace. He snarled, “FUCK THEM! OF COURSE, they come back without telling anyone. They left saying it was going to be a three month vacation to make up for all the vacations we never got to take. Bon voyage children. Then three months turned into a year, then BAM four years. They didn’t even come to Travis’ first shift or my mating ceremony. Did Travis see them? Tell me he didn’t get ambushed! I’ll rip their fucking heads off!”

I winced when he cursed but assured him, “He didn’t see them. Emmaline linked me while Lacy went at them like a battering ram.” Dylan smiled, “That’s my woman.” I shrugged. Dylan continued “I need to tell Travis before he finds out from anyone else. Who knows who saw them before you got them inside. I already linked him letting him know we needed to talk. He’s waiting at the tree line by the pack house with Jacqueline. I can’t walk out there and see them right now; I’ll kick my dad’s ass.”

I nodded, “I’ll have Emmaline pop to us.” Emmaline was with us the next second. We popped outside. My anger was swirling when I saw both Frost boys in pain. Dylan was my best friend, but I grew up with Travis too. He was like a little brother to me.

My parents and I had helped Dylan in getting everything Travis needed for school. Dylan went to every parent teacher conference, and every parent night since his parents stayed in Europe. Dylan explained everything, and now both boys wanted to confront their parents.

I linked Lacy, “He will need you. It’s good Jacqueline is here too.” Lacy snarled, “The NERVE of them, Luc! Just to show up like that after what they did. No calls, no advance warning, not even emails! Birthday cards! That’s it!” I sighed, “We know they sent letters to mom and dad. Dylan nor Travis wanted to hear anything from them from those letters.”

Lacy glared at me, “Because they should’ve written them their own letters! I would NEVER abandon my son the way

they abandoned theirs and he's not even born yet. Mom and dad traveled ALL OVER the damn world trying to find me when I ran away. They had every reason to give up on me, but they never did. They also SAW and TALKED to you while they were abroad." She was right.

I sighed, "It's going to be a long night." She retorted, "They might not live until morning." I stared at her in shock. I linked my dad, "Does a pup increase the rage one feels?" My dad answered, "If both parents are upset, then yes. Why?" I sighed, "Lacy is ready to kill Davis and Betty." My dad groaned, "I'll watch her. You focus on Dylan; the boys won't understand their reasons."

I asked, "Do you?" My dad replied, "I wouldn't have made the same choices they have, but they are coming from a place of fear. I understand they are afraid, and I have seen what fear can do to a person." I went on alert, "Do I need border patrols running?" My dad replied, "Not at all, son."

Dylan threw the front door off the frame. I sighed. Once this conversation settled, I'd have Emmaline snap it fixed. Dylan opened the floor for his parents to explain in the most Dylan way. I saw Davis's eyes narrow at his son.

I linked Davis, issuing an Alpha command in my tone, "Don't you dare, you have no right to criticize him. Just explain what you did and why like he wants and deserves to hear." I should've known I would've needed to use my Alpha tone to make him not criticize Dylan.

I drew Emmaline into me trying to remember that there was a time when these people were like family to me. But that was before they left abandoning Dylan and leaving him to raise Travis alone. They'd abandoned Lacy and I as well. My parents didn't say as much, but I knew it hurt them that they'd left and not returned.

Davis and Betty were their best friends. Mom needed Betty when Lacy had run away. Dad had needed Davis just the same. Part of me thought if they'd been here Lacy wouldn't have run away. She might have confided in Betty. She was like the cool aunt you could tell anything to. That wasn't fair, but it was

how I felt. I knew blows would be exchanged tonight. I'd just have to hope they were verbal and not physical.

A Dylan State of Mind

Dylan stared at his parents with a mixture of hope, anger, and the slightest bit of hatred. I hated them for what they'd put Travis through. I had hope they had a good reason that would satisfy my brother. Otherwise, I didn't care about them anymore.

My anger sparked because they'd ruined my fairy fun day. Maybe Haley would tattoo something on my dad's ass. I smirked knowing she'd tattoo it on their forehead if I asked her to. Maybe I would. Shaving their eyebrows and writing the word deserter on their forehead would be the least they deserved.

My dad stepped forward, "We will explain, but please let's sit." I rolled my eyes, "Travis, you may have to explain this my powers of being mute seem to have struck again."

Travis snarled, "We aren't sitting down. Stand there and tell us like the men we are why you left us." My mom spoke, "Travis, who's the girl behind you? Honey, did you find your mate too?" Travis growled, "DO NOT SPEAK TO HER! Don't even look at her! Do you hear me?"

Jacqueline put her arms around Travis' stomach from behind him. She whispered to him, but we all heard it, "It's ok, Travis. I'm fine." I cut my mom's next statement off, "Enough stalling. Travis and I have both asked you questions. Answer us before I find that rabbit to trick you into falling back down a hole for your sequel."

My dad's face darkened, "You're still the funny man, I see." I smiled, "Despite your best efforts, I am still funny. Everyone loves it. In fact, I know the Princess of the fairies now, Davis. She delights in my humor. I'm half tempted to call her to pull fairy hijinks on your ass. Hell, start talking or I'll

ask our Luna. In case you didn't hear yet, she's the Duchess of the fairies."

I turned to my best friend's mate, "Emmaline, you would pull fairy hijinks on them for me, would you not?" Emmaline started to speak. My dad hissed, "You address your Luna by her first name?" I raised an eyebrow, "As did you, yes. Now, you've done it, dear old dad."

Emmaline stepped forward with anger written all over her face. She spat out, "How DARE you! Dylan calls me by my name because I asked him to. He has been nothing but kind to me. My powers might be unstable right now, so I'd suggest you curb your attitude. You know what? NO, as your Luna I DEMAND you speak to your Beta with more respect. Not only is he one of your sons, but his position is also higher ranking than yours. For someone who wants to admonish him for his lack of respect, you are showing a lot of it yourself."

I linked my favorite Omega, "Danver, popcorn please. Main room of the house." Danver replied, "Of course, Beta Dylan." I asked, "How many times must I tell you over link just call me Dylan." Danver replied, "Probably every time." He was a gem.

Shortly popcorn was handed to me. Lucas linked me, "Dylan, are you alright?" I teased, "Must you always try to interrupt my show?" Lucas grinned. I knew what he was trying to do, but I couldn't let those emotions in right now. I needed to stay steady, as myself. Not just for me, but for my brother. I'd do anything for Travis. If he wanted Jackie protected from our parents, then that's what would happen. If he wanted me to banish our parents from this pack, then I'd do it. Lucas would allow that if I asked him to.

My mom spoke, "We didn't mean to be gone so long." I interrupted, "Hey Travis, they didn't mean to. Well, I feel so much better now. I'm practically a butterfly I'm so light and airy feeling. Watch out gravity! I'm about to defy you, spread my wings, and fly!"

Everyone in the room laughed, except our parents. I needed to keep Travis' mood up. My dad admonished me, "It's a

serious moment, Dylan. Can't you just be serious for once in your life?" I replied, "Since you're incapable of answering the ONE question Travis and I want the answer to... I'm going to say... Outlook... not so good. Just a warning tomorrow doesn't look good either on a seriousness scale."

My mom's lips twitched into a small smile, but I refused to let my heart soften to her. Travis yelled, "OH MY GOD! Just tell us why you have been gone so long or I'm leaving. If I leave, I'll never speak to the two of you two again. When I have pups, you'll NEVER be a part of their lives. I'll do everything in my power to convince Dylan and Lacy to do the same with their pups. Based on Lacy's general countenance at the moment; I don't think it would be a hard sell."

My mom's face crumbled, "Travis... sweetheart." I growled, "ENOUGH! Do I need to scrounge up that rabbit? My wolf would be DELIGHTED, you know rabbits are his favorite." Fang perked up, "Can we, Dylan? Please, please, please? I LOVE RABBITS! I don't like these people anymore. They left us and our brother. Let's leave and go hunt rabbits. Rhino is very upset." Of course, he was. Rhino was my brothers wolf.

My wolf was a lot like me, he loved to have fun. I told him, "Calm down, Fang. I'll let you hunt rabbits tonight or tomorrow, I promise." Fang grumbled, "Didn't mate tell you to stop promising about tomorrow? Mate is so pretty. She's so mad, but she's still so beautiful." I agreed, "I know she is."

Fang got quiet but I knew he was listening. He loved my parents and their wolves too once upon a time. He'd felt so hurt when we realized they weren't coming home. Both he and I thought they'd come back for Travis' first shift, but they disappointed us yet again. I was certain that was the day I hated them the most. Travis put off shifting for hours. He was screaming in pain, but just knew they were coming. They broke mine, Fang, and Travis' heart that day. There was no coming back from that.

My dad said, "We really did intend just to go on vacation. At the end of our trip, we came across some texts. On a whim,

we decided to go to Italy.” Texts? No way. They were not on about the Legend of the White Wolf again.

Fang snarled in my mind, “I’ll RIP THEIR THROATS OUT DYLAN! THEY HAVE NO REASON TO FEAR THAT LEGEND!” I gritted my teeth. My parents were obsessed with that particular legend ever since they’d heard it once when Travis was three. How they’d gone that long without hearing it, I’ll never know. Teenagers told that legend at bonfires all the time.

I growled at them, “TELL ME you didn’t abandon your children, one of whom was only fourteen years old, over the goddamn LEGEND of THE WHITE WOLF! TELL ME YOU DIDN’T!” Fang’s voice intertwined with mine.

My dad stepped in front of my mother. Everyone knew Fang was stronger than his wolf. I could take my dad AND my mom if I wanted to. Travis’ broken voice caused me to stop and look over at him. “No... no. Tell Dylan that’s not it! You didn’t miss out on my high school years because of some stupid legend.” They didn’t reply quickly enough.

Travis wiped a tear that had fallen, “You missed my first shift! I just knew you’d come back for it. I put off shifting as long as possible. I pleaded with my wolf because I was adamant that you’d show up. It was agonizing! Dylan had to coach me through it. He and Lucas had to send Gamma Alex to a meeting because Lacy wanted Lucas at her shift. I had to have Dylan there because he’s all I had.”

My dad spoke, “Dylan, you didn’t go to a meeting because your brother was shifting?” Lucas growled, “Watch yourself, Davis.” Dale sighed. I proudly answered my dad, “Damn straight I missed the meeting. Travis had no one but me. Even if my mentor, that I got because you ABANDONED me right when I took over as Beta, had not advised me to take care of Travis; I would have. Did you want him to shift alone? That’s dangerous!”

My mom put a hand on my dad’s chest assuring us, “Of course not. I am so proud of you, sweetie. You took care of your brother just like I knew you would. Travis, honey, what

color is your wolf?” Travis growled and his eyes flickered black, taking even me by surprise.

Jackie rushed in front of him and jumped on him. She wrapped her arms around his neck whispering to him. She was the only thing keeping him from shifting and attacking my parents at this moment.

I commented casually, “Unlike Fang, Travis’ wolf never met yours. His wolf feels abandoned by you two. He doesn’t like you at all, and that’s probably a tame way of putting how he feels. Rhino is a fierce warrior. You know wolves have access to our memories once they join us. Rhino hates you. So, let’s get back to the part where you tell us you didn’t abandon us over some dumb legend.” They continued to stare without saying anything.

I dramatically gestured to myself, “I, for one, need you to say it’s not true. Even though I feel it deep down in my little pinky toe, you’re about to say some stupid shit about how it’s about the white wolf. So go on, tell me you abandoned your two pups over some dumb legend. It will make you feel better.” Lucas frowned. Emmaline was clearly linking him. She probably didn’t know the legend.

My dad cleared his throat, “We did help search for Lacy once she ran away.” I laughed humorlessly, “Yes, let’s ignore for just ONE, and I do mean one, moment that she ran away two years after you left. Let’s all ignore that and sit in a forgiveness circle. We will even join hands and sing kumbaya because you looked for Lacy. Now, something comes to mind about what a bang up job you did finding her because.... where did we find her again Lucas?”

Lucas answered, “Ireland.” I clapped my hands, “Ahh yes, the fighting Irish. Now... where is Ireland again... somewhere.... It’s on the tip of my tongue.” Travis supplied, “It’s in Europe.” I clapped my hands, “Yes. Europe! Good job, little brother. It must have been all the geography homework we worked on together. And you said you’d never use that in real life. Well look at you our shining little geography pupil. I told you it would come in handy one day. Now, look at that big brother was right. Now Europe... That’s where you two were.

Lacy was there for six months and you two bloodhounds had NO CLUE! Really high five you guys, job well done. You were on the same continent and had no clue. So, the reason you left two years prior to Lacy was because....” I trailed off.

My dad sighed, “We found some ancient texts. We had to do more research on the white wolf.” I growled, “There it is! He has seen the light of day Lucas, and his soul is purged. Did you hear the hallelujah chorus, dear old dad?”

My dad growled so I let Fang growl back. My dad cowered away explaining, “You know we didn’t hear about the legend until after Travis was born. Your mother had her tubes tied so we couldn’t have another pup. We were too afraid it would be a girl.”

I looked at Travis, “There you have it, the reason we have to be grateful our parents didn’t abandon us with a younger sibling to care for is because they are superstitious weirdos. I guess that’s the one good thing about this whole fiasco. We didn’t have to put a sibling who was younger than fourteen through this wondrous feeling of emotions. So... there’s a bright side?”

Travis asked, “What are you even talking about? Why is some stupid white wolf legend worth you missing out on such big moments in my life when I NEEDED you? Dylan needed you!” I interjected, “Umm excuse me, Dylan was just fine. I mean who the heck needs help with becoming a Beta and raising a teenager?” Their silence was beginning to annoy me on a deep level.

I continued, “I felt such sympathy for those humans who had a surprise kid pop up in their life. I understood them at that moment. I watched A LOT of tv shows and movies to help me understand the path I should take. Dylan was just fine. I was missing the swell of happy music and the girl, but we made it through.” My dad glared at me, and I glared right back.

My mom put her hand on my dad again, to calm him. She whispered, “This is not how we expected this to go. Travis, the white wolf is born to a Beta blood line.” I cut her off, “Now,

now mother. If you are going to tell the story, you must tell it right.” Because Travis already knew the legend. He’d heard it in high school. Like the rest of us normal people.

I turned to my brother, “Travis, the story begins with the word ALLEGEDLY or once upon a time because no wolf has ever been a pure white wolf. Ever. There’s no recorded pack with one, it’s just some silly story told around fire camps that our parents abandoned us for. I don’t know about you, but I feel so much better about them disappearing for four years.” I didn’t bother to hide my sarcasm.

Travis gaped, “You can’t be serious.” My mom said, “No, we found a wealth of information about it. We met so many people that gave us more pieces to the puzzle. It took time to track them all down. We wanted to be able to best protect our grandpups.” She trailed off.

Fang growled, “I don’t like where this is going.” Him and me both. My mom added, “Or help you see that having pups wasn’t in the cards...” I roared, cutting her off. I let Fang take over, “YOU MEAN TO HARM MY PUP? YOUR GRANDPUP? I WILL KILL YOU!”

Lacy grabbed my arm. I took back over from Fang when Lucas stood in front of me. Emmaline spoke quietly, “I’m sure that’s not what they meant.” My mom was shaking. She cried, “No, of course not! I’s just... do you know what you are having yet?”

I growled, “I do, but I will NOT tell you what we are having. Just so you know, Lacy and I plan to have a litter of pups.” My mom’s eyes filled with tears, “You don’t understand! The white wolf is always mated with an Alpha wolf.”

I rolled my eyes, “Again forgetting that word allegedly in your story, Betty. Also, do you even know who is on our border? God Alpha Prick is going to pop out a PLETHORA of pups. Don’t ya just know his pup would ABSOLUTELY be mated to a legend? He’s a prick like that. Too bad for him, IT IS A LEGEND!”

My dad growled at me so I flipped him off. My mother winced, “The white wolf, she’s powerful. Everyone wants her for her powers, not just wolves; every supernatural group.” Of course, the wolf was powerful, it was a damn legend. Fang paced furiously in my head.

I dramatically stated, “Yes, but now we have partial fairies in the pack. People want them too. We protect them because **IT’S WHAT YOU DO FOR THE PEOPLE YOU LOVE!** Should a legend appear, we will be just fine. Then I’ll have to scour the earth for all the other legends and lore. I’ll find them before GAP, I will.”

My mom’s voice shook, “You don’t understand, just let me tell you what we’ve found.” My hands curled into fists. I gritted out, “Fine.” I linked Lucas, “I will link you my snark.” Lucas replied, “That’s fine. Also, you do that every day.” True.

My mom began, “As I said, the white wolf is always female and born from the Beta line. She is coveted so much that she isn’t safe until she meets her mate. Her mate is always an Alpha. She has to be marked by him, but even then people come for her. She is immune to silver and wolfsbane.”

I linked Lucas, “Sure, special wolf with no vulnerabilities. Why not? It makes for a great... what’s that word... ahh yes, **LEGEND!**” Lucas agreed with me. I could tell.

My mom continued, “She can always heal her mates wolf if he’s been injured. Once trained she can heal those related to her and members of her pack. Untrained, she could manage her mate and one other wolf, probably. She puts off a powerful aura that draws those to her. They want her for her power. The stories of what have happened to those poor girls haunt me.” Legends are sometimes haunting. I glared at her.

She shook herself, “Their mates haven’t always been strong enough to protect them.” I linked Lucas, “Alpha wolves are known to be weak, so sure. There’s no hole in that story. Why would the moon goddess gift a weak Alpha a legendary wolf? Makes sense. I’m tracking with this research.” Lucas bit his lip.

My mom's tale continued, "The white wolves have been taken and turned into breeding machines. Many of the white wolves are killed because they don't produce another white wolf. We found texts that say they would produce weaker wolves with others, but only the strongest pups with their mates. It's the goddesses' punishment for greedy wolves trying to harm the white wolf. They are an extension of the goddess after all. The white wolf can cause any wolf besides an Alpha to bow to them. If trained, they are excellent fighters. There are many other things they can do, but don't you see? Aren't you worried about your future pups?" I stared at her unblinking for several minutes.

I linked Lucas, "Are they serious?" Lucas replied, "Emmaline said their souls is emitting fear and they are genuine in their concern." Well, then. Enter snarky Dylan. I spoke out loud, "Of course I'm scared. That's not my top fear though. Lacy and I have spent nights agonizing over our little pup turning into the wolf that blows the little piggies house down. Then of course there's the wile e coyote fear of mine. What if they chase some little bird around only to be outsmarted?"

I shivered in mock horror, "My pup can't be the butt of a joke. I make the jokes around here, and plan to pass that mantle to them. Then of course the fear of our pup turning into the loch ness monster. We have a lake right outside and everything. Lacy keeps saying we'd just call the pup Nessie. My silly mate, I had to tell her that's no good because *Twilight* already had that nickname." My dad was glowering at me.

I smiled telling them, "The top fear is OF COURSE somehow our pup turning into Bigfoot. Don't worry, we are seeking counseling for these fears. Our poor therapist, now we have to add this to the list Lacy. Our pup could be a super powerful, blessed by the goddess wolf! You know what....? On second thought... I'm going back to original GAP thoughts. THIS would grant me my wish. My daughter WOULD be one of GAP's pup's mates. OH, GODDESS LET THE LEGEND THAT HAS NEVER BEEN RECORDED AS FACT BE REAL! PLEASE, OH PLEASE, OH PLEASE MOON GODDESS!"

Lucas couldn't stop his laugh and Travis was right there with him. My dad yelled, "Can't you ever take ANYTHING seriously?" I glared at him, "Yes. I took all of Travis' parent teacher conferences seriously. Every parent night, play, basketball, baseball, and soccer game. I NEVER missed one."

My dad was stunned, "You were in a play, Travis?" I answered, "Theatre was a required course for freshmen. Travis was in three plays. I saw them both on opening night, and every other single night they performed. My happy little ass watched *Anne of Green Gables*, *Cinderella*, and *Robin Hood*, because the drama teacher had a sense of humor making werewolves play foxes and other various animals, more times than you can count. Travis was revolutionary in his role as Gilbert Blythe."

My mom gasped. I smiled, "I know... I too was stunned he had the lead, but he was captivating. It was a devastating blow when he was simply the goose that turned into the coachman in *Cinderella*. I consoled him every night over the drop from lead to goose. I coached him through his first shift, I assigned our toughest warriors to coach him to be the warrior he wanted to be. I trained with him myself, with Lucas and Dale's help. He's on track to win the fight to be our Lead warrior when he graduates."

I squared up to my dad growling, "I will be DAMNED if you use some legend as a scare tactic to convince him not to have pups. Betty, you stay the away from Lacy with this shit." Lacy snorted, "Lacy has Alpha blood, and is not scared of the white wolf legend."

I kissed her. I pulled back asking, "Is it any wonder I love you so?" Travis stated, "Stay away from me and Jackie. You're so scared of the white wolf legend, then I'll help you. Stay away from my family when I have one."

My mom cried, "No please, we know how to help! We spent all this time learning how to protect them if you end up having a girl." Lucas spoke, "When do people become drawn to the white wolf from your research? It would have to be when she turned sixteen and gained a wolf, right?"

I frowned, “Don’t feed the crazy Lucas, they will only dive deeper.” My dad answered, “No, not necessarily. They will be drawn to her before she shifts, but more so afterwards.”

Lucas pointed out, “Then we would know when they shifted, that we had the first white wolf in history in the pack. We could protect them.” I interjected, “Or in the land of the not crazy people, they wouldn’t be white wolves because there are NO pure white wolves literally in the history of any pack EVER. We’d protect them because they are my pups. I will protect all my pups no matter their gender, OR COLOR, and I will NEVER abandon them as you did yours.” They didn’t even look sorry.

I growled, “Get out of my sight before I let Fang RIP YOU TWO TO PIECES! I always knew your excuse wouldn’t be worth it, but I thought you had a better one than ‘oh this scary legend made me do it.’ Do me a favor and NEVER watch a *Friday the Thirteenth* movie, or you’ll be opposed to summer camps! MORONS!”

I stormed outside shifting into Fang. I could smell that Lacy was behind me. I linked Travis, “Are you ok?” Travis answered, “I’m behind you with Jackie, I’m going to run her home.” I teased, “Can I just say I love this nickname Jackie. Jacqueline is so much more time consuming to say.”

Travis laughed, “You would.” I said, “As stated earlier, I will hereby now and henceforth call her Jackie. It is decreed.” Travis laughed again, “Thanks for the laugh. She likes being called Jackie so it’s all good bro.”

I shifted back after several miles. Lacy did too. She kissed me hard on the mouth. I smiled, “I know that kiss. There is sexy naked time in Dylan’s very near future.” Lacy smirked, “You know me so well.” Yes, I did. Fang purred, “Mate is so sexy.” He was not wrong. I was going to enjoy this and forget the two people who birthed me.

Idiotese Continued

Lucas watched Dylan and Travis leave and howl in anger. Davis said, “We *did* raise them. Dylan was a grown man when we left, he cannot treat us this way.” I disagreed, “You don’t get to choose how he responds to you leaving or returning. You sent them birthday cards. You didn’t even call or send a letter. Nothing.” Emmaline added, “They placed a boundary you need to respect.” I was proud of her.

Davis looked at the floor. Betty said, “It just got away from us. We really wanted to protect our grandpups.” Emmaline spoke, “Can it even affect your kids’ children? You said it was from a Beta line. Technically speaking, Lacy is of Alpha blood. Travis isn’t the Beta of a pack. So, I mean I don’t really know about the legend... but could it affect either of them? Even if it turns out to be true?”

My parents and I shared at her in shock, that was a really good question. Davis sighed, “We aren’t sure. The legends say Beta Blood, but in all the legends they do say a Beta’s daughter. No one would call Travis a Beta, but he does have Beta blood.” So, my mate was likely right.

Davis continued, “As for your question about Lacy and Dylan, that’s why we missed the wedding. We got word someone could answer that question for us. The travel time took longer than we anticipated to reach him.”

After several moments I asked, “And? What did you find that was worth missing your oldest son’s wedding?” Emmaline laid a hand on my shoulder. Betty answered, “It was uncertain.” I scoffed, “I’m shocked something about a legend was uncertain.”

I linked the pack, “I am Alpha commanding everyone: NO ONE tells Davis and Betty Frost the sex of your Beta’s child.” My dad and mom stiffened; Emmaline, however, smiled at me. She linked me, “That’s a good thing. They should have to wait

until Dylan and Lacy are ready to tell them. The baby isn't about them or their legend. It's about a beautiful new life being brought into the world, and until Dylan's parents want to accept that regardless of gender, they shouldn't share in the joy."

I replied to her, "And it's a boy." Everyone answered back confused but said, "Yes, Alpha." Emmaline sighed "It's not about that. Betty and Davis are genuinely scared, but they also know they were wrong not to come back sooner." I led Emmaline away saying, "Come on, we are going to bed."

Betty called, "Lucas, please... are they having a girl?" I whirled, "HOW DARE YOU!" My dad cautiously held up his hand, "Son." I growled, "No, you need to earn that from your own son, Betty. Just so you know I used an Alpha command on the pack. No one will tell you until Lacy and Dylan want you to know the sex of the pup. Emmaline is right, your sons placed a boundary you need to respect. You didn't even wait five damn minutes before trying to cross it. Don't think you will find sympathy here. Dylan and Travis weren't the only kids you ran out on." They had the gall to look confused.

I continued, "Dylan had to go to Beta McAlister's father and ask if he would mentor him. He agreed and it was a combination of him and Beta Ben McAlister helping us, but mostly Dylan because my dad was here. We'd just taken over the pack, not even six months under our belt. You abandoned us both. Not to mention Travis and Lacy. He went through his first shift without you; his wolf truly does hate you."

Davis commented, "That girl with him... that's his mate. It has to be the way he felt the need to defend her, and she was able to calm him down. Why isn't she marked?" I snorted, "Ask your son. No one here will tell you ANY information about them. As I said, you didn't just abandon Dylan and Travis. You abandoned us all. The whole pack felt your absence here, and your excuse is shit. A legend? A LEGEND kept you away? Not even one that we've seen recorded as a possibility."

I turned to my parents. I asked, "Dad, he did ask you to search the council's archives when you were given a seat on

the new council, didn't he? I mean if this legend is this important to him, he had to of the minute he heard you had access."

My dad nodded, "He did, but I didn't find anything. Nathan Conners looked too." I scoffed, "A legendary wolf that has never ever been a part of any pact in recorded werewolf history. It's just a legend, and you lost your sons over it. I hope that was worth it, but I can say knowing them both... It really wasn't."

I glowered at my dad's Beta, "Davis, if you ever disrespect my Beta like that in front of me again, I will have you punished. Dylan's authority will not be undermined in this pack, least of all by you. We worked to build it up, and I won't have you destroy it. You may not like that he makes jokes, but he's the best Beta I could ever ask for. He gets everything done; he has a system and he does everything ever asked of him and a million things that we haven't asked for. People LOVE him, and they feel like they can tell him things because he's a big kid. He will defend this pack, and he's aggressive when he needs to be. Leave him alone about it. Or ask the pack if they want to see Serious Dylan. They will make it VERY clear that NO ONE wants to see that."

With that I stalked off with Emmaline upstairs. I slammed the door shut to our room; Emmaline snapped her fingers. I turned asking, "What did you do? Did I break our door?" Emmaline laughed, "No, Dylan did. I fixed the front door. You should tell Dylan that Haley and I have a support group for parents who suck. Well for us it's our moms, but both his suck so he's welcome to join."

I laughed, "That would cheer him right up. I might have to call Queen Lucinda to have her host her dinner party." Emmaline looked stunned, "Umm what now?" I laughed, "You missed it. The Fairy Queen named Dylan an emissary of the consort to the water Duchess. He is welcome in Faerie. She wants to have a dinner party with all of us because it would be the talk of Faerie for centuries."

She looked confused so I explained, "Apparently, our disastrous Thanksgiving would've been a massive hit in

Faerie.” Emmaline laughed, “That makes sense because me hitting a fairy with a vase was considered making my dad’s dinner.” I agreed, “That’s true.”

Emmaline got in the shower. I sighed and sat on the couch. Emmaline called, “Aren’t you joining my shower to wash me?” I smirked, “If that’s what you want.” Emmaline nodded, “Only that, I miss it. It’s our thing.” I sincerely told her, “I’m more than happy to oblige.”

We got in the shower and washed each other. Emmaline was right, I didn’t even realize how much I had missed this. We had shut big and small doors between us. Any type of intimacy, even little things like this. It made me sad, but I was determined to do better in the future.

The next morning after Emmaline woke me up, I went into my office. Dylan and Davis were there. Davis was asking Dylan, “You live in the main house?” Dylan answered, “Obviously.” Davis growled, “You shouldn’t do that!”

I slammed the door shut. Davis jumped I glared at him, “It was my decision. Lacy is MY sister Dylan is MY Beta. It has NOTHING to do with you. Tell me why you are in my office, and it better not be to harass my Beta. We have work to do, and I warned you last night.”

Dylan linked me, “I love you and your tyrant alpha ways. My heart does little pitter patters when you defend me.” Davis cleared his throat, “Betty and I want to move into our old house after we re-join the pack, and we’d like Travis back there.” Dylan growled at him and jumped to his feet. This day was not starting out well.

Dylan linked me, “I will choke on a pea before that happens, Lucas. A tiny, insignificant little pea. Just one.” I told him, “You can’t choke on just one pea.” Dylan snarked, “Precisely.”

I spoke out loud, “You never left the pack or you’d be rogues, so you are obviously still a part of this pack. Your old house is not currently uninhabited, so I see no problem with that. Travis is eighteen years old. It’s his right to live in the pack house should he so choose. I will link him now to see if

that's where he wants to stay. He's been there with Dylan since you left, so I wouldn't get your hopes up."

I linked Travis, "Your dad has requested you move back with him and your mom in their old house. You are eighteen and if you wish to stay in the pack house, you can." Travis responded, "I want to stay in the pack house. I don't want to live with them, Lucas." I replied, "If that's what you want, then you will stay in the pack house." His relief was instant, "Thank you."

I turned to Davis, "Travis wishes to remain in the pack house." Dylan's face turned smug. Davis growled, "He's my son, I don't much care what he wants. He's moving back in with us until he graduates and that's final." I growled at him. His word was not final around here, mine was.

Dylan had his dad by the throat against a wall when my dad, mom, and Betty walked into the office. Dylan snarled, "You listen here, I don't abide disrespect to my Alpha OR my little brother. You want to say your hateful, spiteful shit to me, go ahead. I'm bulletproof to you, old man. I don't care if you don't like who I am or how I choose to do things. Stay away from Travis. He stays in the pack house. You know damn well that Lucas' word is what is final around here. Let's not forget you couldn't make Travis move if you wanted to. I made him into ten times the fighter you could ever dream of being. Did you miss that yesterday? He's going to be the lead warrior when he graduates. He's THAT good."

He let him go then snarked, "Was that me being serious enough for you, Davis?" Dylan spat out at him. My dad winced. Betty quietly asked, "Travis doesn't want to live with us?" My mom held her arm lightly.

I said, "I'm sorry Betty, but he doesn't. He wishes to remain in the pack house, and I am letting him do so. You had to know this would be a hard adjustment. Neither you nor Davis can force your way back into anyone's lives here, least of all your sons. Even if I was the type of Alpha to force an eighteen year old to move... he would resent you more than he does now. Dylan is not wrong, Travis IS strong and his wolf doesn't like or trust you, so there would likely be incidents.

Travis is not a violent man when there is no need. You'd force his wolf to be angry all the time. Let's all let the dust settle here, I don't want problems. Is that clear?"

Dylan threw Davis over to his mother's feet. Dylan saluted me, "It was crystal clear to me, but you know I'm the one with powers of going mute. They should've heard you just fine." Betty was crying, but Dylan simply turned around, sat down, and started to go through paperwork.

I linked my dad, "Get them settled back in their old house." My dad squeezed my shoulder, "A lot of the people I care about are hurting right now, son." I responded, "They made choices, and hurt doesn't just disappear. Their excuse is flimsy at best. They could've called." My dad agreed, "I know. I told them that too."

Betty turned at the door, "Dylan, sweetie, I'm sorry. I am so sorry we didn't call or write. At first, we just lost track of time. Then so much time had gone on I just convinced myself you would hang up. I did know Travis was in those plays, and that you went to every show. Debbie told me. I'm so proud of the way you took care of your little brother. I know it was a lot for you to take on, but I knew you'd do it really well." I didn't know if that was better or worse.

She continued, "I also knew Dale and Debbie would be there to help you. I know you told them Travis was your brother, and he was your responsibility. That you were going to take care of him. I know it's not much, but your dad and I can reimburse you for his clothes and school supplies. Debbie told me you bought him a car, but he mostly runs to school." Oh, no she didn't.

Dylan shrugged, "Sure, see a problem, throw some money at it. I don't need or want your money. I got Travis those things because I wanted him to have them. I have more than enough money, and this isn't about that."

Betty cried, "I know. I know it's not sweetheart. I just don't know the first step to making this right." Dylan answered, "That's quite simple, find yourself a flux capacitor on your very own DeLorean. Go back in time and don't leave us. Easy

peasy.” Betty left crying with Davis. He glared at Dylan, but Dylan wasn’t looking at him. Davis averted his eyes when he met my hard stare.

I couldn’t take serious Dylan anymore, so I took matters into my own hands. “Emmaline invited you and Travis to join her and Haley’s parents suck club.” Dylan perked up, “Yet another invitation into the world of fairies. I accept wholeheartedly on behalf of Travis and myself into team parents who suck club. I’ll get us t-shirts. Theirs have to say *Our moms are the worst*. Travis’ and mine will say *kids rule parents drool!*”

I smiled, “Good to have you back.” Dylan snorted, “I never left. Those two couldn’t change me when they left, and they can’t change me now that they are back. I’m a full grown man, and I don’t need their approval.” Good.

Dylan snorted, “A legend. Who abandons their pups for a legend? They are the type of people who worry about such ridiculous things. If I had a daughter who possessed goddess-like powers, I’d be leaping for joy. While convincing GAP by biting at his heels to train her personally how to fight. I wouldn’t stop nipping at his GAP like heels until he agreed.” I believed that.

He continued, “Then I’d have her work with Haley too, BAM legend problem solved. Seriously. I could’ve wrapped that up for them in a bow in less than sixty seconds. I must speak to Haley and Emmaline. I want to be on their council when they take over the world. I can put out fires and problem solve like nobody’s business. Can you imagine a goddess like wolf with the fighting abilities of GAP? Awesome sauce. That’s what that would be.” I smiled, “I know you can put out fires, you do it for me all the time.” Dylan snorted, “Damn straight.”

The week flew by. The girls helped us sort through reports. Emmaline flagged one from Alpha Ezra that I sent onto Nick. Alpha Ezra flew into a rage when he discovered that Nick had submitted their treaty to the council. It took several of his pack members to calm him down. My sources couldn’t get his motives behind sending the treaty in the first place.

Emmaline and I had slowly gotten back to our intimacy. We had oral sex, but no penetration. Dominic and I were both being patient waiting for Emmaline to make the move. I wanted her to let me know when she was ready.

Emmaline had called a sibling meeting with her family. She gave Dustin and Aubree their trip to Hawaii. I'd coordinated to get Aubree and Dustin the time off with their work. They left the day after Emmaline's birthday. They were both thrown by the gesture, but grateful. Ryan and Valerie were ecstatic about their Europe trip for the summer.

Emmaline was nervous that Katie wouldn't like her trip. It was a sisters spa weekend set for her first post pregnancy trip when she felt ready. No dates were set, just whenever Katie wanted to go. I told Emmaline not to worry, and I was right; Katie loved it. I'd already gotten Logan's ok. He simply said Katie's guards would be there, and he could create a portal to let her see the baby if she wanted to. I reminded him Emmaline could pop them to the baby too.

Emmaline had decided on the menu for her birthday party. She wanted burgers, fries, and milkshakes of all flavors available. Gemma said it was no problem. The day before her birthday, the cake arrived. It was perfect.

Marcious was coming along with Idel and Beta James. Hexxi said she would try to make it. Sharon was joining us with Garrett. The rest of Emmaline's siblings were coming. Katie had not exaggerated in the slightest. Emmaline loved her birthday. She has been walking on cloud nine all week saying, "It's almost my birthday." Dylan told her it was too cold to be this excited.

The next day, she was bursting at the seams excited because Haley had brought over wedding dresses. The Queen of the Hackura herself had tracked down very dresses Emmaline wanted to try on from her *Pinterest* board dedicated to the wedding. Today, she was practically ecstatic that her birthday was tomorrow. She didn't even care that it was her eighteenth birthday and not her seventeenth like she'd thought earlier this year. She kissed me, then pulled back saying, "Tomorrow is my birthday, and then we get married in two

weeks!” I laughed, “I know, baby girl.” She kissed me again and then went to bed.

Birthday Traditions

Emmaline searched the souls of Betty and Davis Frost now that their sons were in the room. They were nervous and worried. Betty especially was on pins and needles specifically about Lacy. I linked Lucas, “Could they be upset Dylan is mated to Lacy? They are really nervous about her.” Lucas growled, “They better not be.”

When the Frost’s tried to get Jacqueline’s name, Travis lost it. His anger almost choked me. I warned my mate, “Lucas, you may need to hold Travis back, his anger is staggering.” Lucas rubbed the small of my back, “Focus on me, baby girl. Let my calm flow into you.” I nodded and focused on Lucas to drown out Travis’ anger. Thankfully, it worked.

I frowned realizing Dylan’s dad was upset about Dylan made jokes. I felt a deep disappointment flowing between Dylan and his dad. I asked Lucas, “Why is Davis upset that Dylan made a joke?” Lucas sighed, “Davis always wanted to Dylan to grow up.” I frowned, “He did grow up, he’s just funny.” Lucas winced, “Davis believes Beta’s should be serious.”

I disagreed, “I’m glad Dylan’s not, he injects humor into situations that keep people from fighting or crying.” Lucas agreed, “I know.” I decided to remain quiet until Davis’s emotions snapped when Dylan called me by name. Something deep within me was angered at the disrespect he showed for Dylan.

Lacy linked me, “Get em’ girl! I’m behind you all the way. I’m just saying, you could punch him. That would be fine.” I smirked, “We will keep that as an option if he keeps being a jerk.” I saw someone walk in and handed Dylan popcorn. I couldn’t stop my smile. He was always himself, and I admired that about him.

I glanced over at Lucas, and my smile dimmed. His soul was deeply worried for Dylan. I wasn't sure why all a sudden I could tell the direction that people's souls were having an emotion for, but I just knew. I wasn't even questioning it.

Betty's concern for Lacy was growing. Dylan and Travis were becoming more hostile by the moment. Dylan showed it with his snark, but Travis was seething silently. Then his anger snapped and he exploded, though it was calmer than I'd thought it would be.

I told Lucas, "I don't think their answers matter to Travis, his soul is pretty done with them." Lucas sounded hopeful, "They could have a good reason." I warned, "It's not going to be enough. They could've called them. They wrote your parents; they could have written them." Lucas sighed, "I know they could've. They could've explained in the birthday cards, but they didn't."

I changed the subject, "What is Dylan's wolf's name?" Lucas answered, "Fang." I squealed "FANG? THAT IS THE BEST NAME OF ALL TIME! If we get a dog and name him Fang will Dylan be mad?" He snorted, "Probably not, no. He'd think he was an inspiration. He'd make it his mission for our Fang to like his wolf Fang. Also, Dominic is put out you think Dylan's wolf's name is better than his." I cooed, "Aww, Dominic I love your name. I want to name our dog Fang. That has to make it better, right? I would never name our dog Dominic." Lucas laughed, "That does appease him."

The further this conversation progressed the more stunned I became by Dylan's dad's attitude. He was actually proud of Dylan, but he didn't come across that way. I questioned Lucas, "Why is his dad hiding the fact that he's proud of how Dylan took care of Travis?" Lucas was shocked, "He's proud?" I replied, "Very." I jumped when Travis' wolf growled at his parents. The malice behind that growl startled me. Travis wolf not liking his parents seemed like a massive understatement.

I linked Lucas again, "What legend is Dylan talking about?" Lucas sighed, "The Legend of the white wolf." His parents were feeling trepidation and decided to deflect. I gave Lucas a look, "What's the Legend of the White Wolf?"

Lucas sighed, “It’s a campfire story. It’s about a powerful she wolf that’s pure white. She has some powers that the goddess harnesses because she’s an extension of the goddess. There has never been a pure white wolf in recorded history.” I bit my lip, “Maybe they found one?” Lucas shook his head, “It’s just a legend.”

Dylan understandably lost it when his parents confirmed they had stayed away because of the white wolf story. Travis’ soul was in a state of disbelief. I stunned they stopped having kids because of this legend. Betty’s soul was shattered as she looked at her boys. She’d wanted more kids. Why did I know this stuff all a sudden?

Dylan made a good point though; it would’ve been very hard for a younger child to understand being abandoned by their parents. Hell, at fourteen that’s hard to understand. Travis couldn’t have taken care of a younger sibling; he was still in high school. To put that on Dylan while he was the Beta AND didn’t have a mate yet would’ve been cruel; they’d done enough damage.

The hurt in Travis’ soul was killing me, he was so broken by their excuses. A very small part of him had held out hope he’d had a good reason. Betty managed to get the Legend of the White Wolf out there. I linked Lacy, “I don’t even think based on what they are saying you could have a white wolf. With Alpha blood you could command people, right?”

Lacy agreed, “Yes, I have that power within me. Not like Lucas can, but I’m still an Alpha. There logic is crap though because the white wolf would be mated to an Alpha which makes her a Luna. A Luna can command too. They are so... irritating.”

I frowned, “Then how could any of your children be the white wolf? They said only Alpha blood doesn’t bow to the white wolf. Your children will have Alpha blood too.” Lacy said, “My pups can’t be the white wolf because it’s a ridiculous legend. It’s a story passed down every generation. Lucas said they’d heard it at camp in Louisiana. Dylan’s parents heard it from some kids when they came home and

panicked. Some Beta blood they are, they were so scared of a Legend they abandoned their children.”

I had to step in when Dylan thought his parents wanted to hurt his child. I knew it that wasn't the intent because they were genuinely concerned about their grandchild. I also knew they weren't going to be happy if they were getting a granddaughter. That just wasn't fair. They needed to get over this toxic attitude. No kid needs to know their grandparents don't like them.

Lacy linked me, “Screw them, I want a little girl eventually. Plus, Dylan wants like five pups. I haven't given birth yet, but I agreed with the caveat that the number may change post birth.” I laughed, “Always a good idea to keep the options open.” Lacy smiled, “I do want more though.” I smiled, “You'll be a great mom!”

Lacy smiled then frowned. Her eyes filled with tears, “I won't be able to hold myself back if we have a girl, and they don't treat her the same as my boys. I'll kick their butts.” I replied, “I don't think you have to worry. At the moment, Dylan has no plans to let them be part of your life.”

Lacy questioned, “How do you know?” I shrugged, “His soul and Travis' soul are pretty determined on that point right now.” Lacy nodded, “Good. I don't want to be a brat or anything, but don't mess with my pups.” I said, “I think that makes you a good mom not a brat.”

Betty's heart was broken about her sons' attitude, and their future children. She truly believed one of her sons would father the white wolf. I didn't understand why she believed that though. Nothing they'd said gave any indication it would be their sons. It could literally be anyone if a legend was going to be birthed.

I linked Lucas, “Can any wolf be immune to wolfsbane and silver?” Lucas snorted, “Yes, in a legend they can. I've never heard or met of a wolf immune to either.” I frowned, “That does seem a bit fanciful.” Lucas grumbled, “It's beyond a bit.” I winced, “They really are convinced Dylan or Travis will have a white wolf if they have a daughter. I just don't

understand why though.” Lucas sighed, “Nothing they’ve said indicated that.” I frowned.

I couldn’t stop my laugh when Dylan started throwing out his fake fears for their kids. When he begged the moon goddess to give him the white wolf so she could unite his family with Eric’s, I snorted. My lips twitched as I told Lucas, “That would be pretty funny.” Lucas snorted, “If the moon goddess has any sense of humor if Dylan has a daughter, she will be the mate of one of Eric’s kids.”

I replied, “Well, the only current option is Alexander. There’s no guarantee they have more kids.” Lucas shrugged, “Eric has always wanted a lot of kids, and Haley has a lot of brothers. Two fairy brothers, now just the one living I guess, and nine Hackura brothers. I doubt she wants just three pups.”

I thought about it, then agreed, “That’s a good point. How many does Eric want?” Lucas snorted, “Once he said he wanted twelve, but now that we have a longer lifespan; he could want more.” I cautioned, “We are not having twelve kids.” Lucas laughed, “I won’t hold you to that, nor do I currently want twelve pups.”

I focused back on the conversation. It was truly heartbreaking, but Betty and Davis just didn’t have logic on their side. Even if they did, their actions were not justifiable. I linked Lucas, “The solution, should this occur, seems fairly straightforward. Don’t let people know there’s a pure white wolf. Make her train. Davis and Betty clearly know how to train her on whatever powers she’d have. Did I miss something?”

Lucas said, “No, and I’d imagine you or Haley would be more helpful training with powers. Werewolves don’t have powers, so we don’t have experience with it, fairies actually do.” I said, “Umm turning into a giant wolf is an awesome power.” Lucas smirked, “True.”

Lucas proudly told me, “I do believe you are right, baby girl. Once shifted we could worry about a plan. Prior to that it’s absurd to worry about. We have pups that people are possessive of before they shift. Sometimes a scent draws them

to someone.” That was ridiculous, but I guess it was their nature.

Dylan ran outside shredding his clothes and shifted into his wolf. Lacy followed right after him. Travis glared at his parents before following his brother making sure Jacqueline left before he did. Davis was upset with how his sons acted, but his guilt was his strongest emotion.

I asked my questions about Lacy’s Alpha blood. No one knew the answer for sure because it was a legend, but I was pretty dang sure the answer was no. Lacy might not be able to use her Alpha Blood to make Lucas or Eric bow to her, but I’d bet she could do it to the second born Alpha like Sebastian or Christopher.

It wouldn’t make sense in my mind for Travis’ mate to give birth to the white wolf either. He wasn’t the Beta of the pack. In the legend they’d researched it was always a Beta’s daughter. So, to me, that clearly meant Travis was out.

Their reasons for missing Dylan and Lacy’s wedding were pathetic. They missed the wedding for something that was “unclear.” My heart did hurt for these two people. They shunned their real life for a fable, and when they were ready to return to real life; those people they wanted to reconnect with had moved on with their lives. That had to sting but having been abandoned myself, I understood.

Nothing my mom said could make it better either. I’d have clawed her eyes out if she said it was because of a campfire story. I was proud Lucas Alpha commanded everyone not to answer their questions.

Until Betty and Davis could be happy for Dylan and Lacy, I don’t think they should know. This baby was an intended product of two people who loved each other very much. That should be celebrated. Dylan and Lacy were happy and that’s what mattered. Plus, Dylan put up boundaries, that had to be respected.

My disappointment with them was feeding into anger. Her own son didn’t want to tell her, she had NO right to go behind his back. They should do everything in their power to get back

into his good graces. These people really had some audacity. How were Travis and Dylan their kids? Then again, the same could be said for my siblings with our parents.

Lucas pointed out Davis would've asked Dale to research the council records. I could feel Dale's regret and resignation when he said he couldn't find anything. Which meant no white wolf existed. Their council would've documented the crap out of that. Any council would've. I was so proud of Lucas when he stood up to Davis telling him not to disrespect Dylan. My fairy side would pull some hijinks if they didn't back off. My light felt protective of Dylan. I'm sure it's because I like him, and I'd brought him his mate.

When Lucas and I walked into our room I'd remembered that the front door needed to be fixed. I snapped my finger then explained to Lucas what I'd done. I linked Debbie, "Hi mom, did I fix the front door? I snapped and wanted to make sure it worked." Debbie chuckled, "Scared us all for a second, but it did get fixed. Thank you, Emmy." I smiled and answered, "You are welcome."

I didn't understand Dylan's parents. His dad seemed way worse than his mom. I couldn't understand why he was so against telling Dylan he was proud of him. Dylan was a great man, and he'd done a great job being Lucas' Beta. He'd even done a hell of a job being a parent/brother to Travis. Would it have killed him to say thank you?

I was surprised when Lucas mentioned a dinner with the Queen in Faerie. After the war between the fae and wolves, could everyone even come? I mean I guess if the queen said so, they could. I sighed inwardly. Something told me Haley and I would have to be on guard for women looking to hit on our guys. I'd go and bring Lacy because I'd need her as back up. Maybe BA could come too. Maybe if she stands there with her bow locked and loaded those women would take a hint.

I hoped we didn't have an eventful dinner. I could see Haley kicking some butt and taking names if we did. This time though, I'd join her. We showered together then went to bed.

The next morning when my alarm went off, I got up and went to training. I was stunned to see Betty and Debbie there. I linked Lacy, “Your mother-in-law is here.” Lacy growled, “Of course she is. She probably didn’t look hard enough at the schedule to know Dylan didn’t teach this class. Or she hopes Travis will be there.”

I replied, “Travis has never been in our classes. Actually, I’ve never seen him in any class.” Lacy replied, “Travis has a special program that he does. He always has since he told Dylan his goal of being the lead warrior.” That made sense.

Debbie walked over to me commenting, “This sure is early.” Betty sighed, “I was hoping to talk to Lacy.” I raised an eyebrow questioning, “Why?” Betty admitted, “To apologize.” I advised, “You’ll want to keep it at that. I know you want to fix your relationship with your sons, but if you keep trying to go behind their back for information you won’t be able to repair it.”

Betty’s eyes filled with tears, “You don’t understand.” I disagreed, “I understand more than anyone else here. My mom helped her husband throw me out of their home and have me emancipated without my knowledge or consent. I do understand how it feels to be abandoned by your parents.” Betty stammered, “We didn’t...” I cut her off, “Yes, you did abandon your sons.”

Before she could reply Lacy walked over, “Good morning mom, Emmaline.” She turned to face the class and stiffly added, “Betty.” Betty smiled, “Lacy, I am so glad you’re home. I wanted to apologize for just leaving. I know we had plans when I got back, and we never got to have our girl’s day. I’m so happy you are Dylan’s mate.”

Lacy bitterly spat back, “You’re just not happy I’m pregnant.” Betty stammered, “No, I am.” I linked Lacy, “She’s happy but worried, that’s at least true.” Betty continued, “I’m just worried and none of you take this legend seriously.”

Lacy snorted, “Because it’s a LEGEND. Besides that, I have faith in Dylan and our pack to protect our pups no matter the color of their wolf. You missed such big moments in their

lives for something neither of your sons are concerned about. I understand you are clearly scared about this legend coming true. You haven't explained why, but to be frank nothing apart from being held captive is a good enough reason to miss your son's first shift. It's scary and you need your support group. To miss it is just wrong, just admit that already. At least this one detail of skipping out on them, admit that to miss Travis' first shift was shitty."

Betty sniffed, "No... I... you're right. We had planned to come back, but time just got away from us." Lacy sighed, "Since his birthday is two weeks before mine, I snuck off to hear how it went. I heard his screams of agony while Dylan coached him through his shift. He kept whimpering that he was holding off because he knew you would show up. He fought until two in the morning when Dylan finally convinced him to just let it happen. They were both in tears."

Betty gasped, "What? He held off his wolf for two hours?" Lacy nodded, "As Dylan said, Travis' wolf is strong. You should know that, because so is Travis." Betty had tears in her eyes.

Alex cleared his throat, "Beta Female Lacy, I can escort you to your training." He didn't use her title often. Something told me it was to show her support. He held out his arm and shot Betty a warning look. Lacy hooked arms with him and went off to her training.

Debbie looked stunned. She admitted, "I had no idea about Travis holding off his shift that long, Betty. Neither of the boys has ever said anything about it." Betty sniffled and they left the gym.

Alex came back over and assigned me someone to work with. Once we'd finished, I popped back to get ready. I gave Lucas a light kiss and left for school. The week went by quickly, and without more interference from Betty and Davis thank god.

On Wednesday, Haley popped in after school before fairy practice. She told me, "I left your wedding dress options in the remarkably capable hands of my mom, Queen Veronica. I sent

her all the pictures from your Pinterest board. They are all upstairs for you to try on.” I smiled asking, “Really? All of them?”

Haley nodded, “The woman is more magical than I am sometimes.” She led me to the Luna rooms. She’d already snapped a platform with a mirror. The five dresses I’d been salivating over were in front of me. I said, “Is it sad I didn’t even remember I needed a dress?”

Haley laughed, “No, you knew I was handling the wedding details. You’ve had exams, fairy issues, and learning to be a Luna on your plate. You delegated, that’s what Luna’s do according to the book I found.” I smiled studying the dresses. I put my fingers on the first one, a lace mermaid dress with sheer sleeves. It was backless with a sweeping train.

I told her, “I want to try this one on first.” Haley smiled instructing me, “Snap it on then.” I snapped and stared at myself in the mirror. I told her, “I love it.” I twirled then smiled, “I’m really going to get married; I’ll be Mrs. Emmaline Lyons.” Haley smiled, “That you will be.”

I admitted, “I still want to try on the rest.” Haley laughed, “That’s why they are here. WAIT!” She called someone on her phone and spoke in Latin. A portal opened and Katie stepped through. She gasped, “Evie, you look beautiful.” I smiled, “Thanks!”

I snapped the next dress on. It was a ball gown with Lace sleeves. Katie’s eyes filled with tears, “Gosh, that one is so pretty too. You’re stunning, Evie.” I twirled, “I like it, but I like the other one better.”

Next, I snapped on the A-line wedding dress. It had sleeves that wrapped around my shoulders. It was tight then flared out at my waist. I smiled, “I love this one the most so far.” Katie was waving a hand in front of her face.

Haley told me, “You look amazing in all of them, but you look happiest in this one.” I smiled “I need to try on the other to be sure.” I snapped into the next one. It was a corset that had rouching and a sweetheart neckline then had a larger skirt.

I pouted, “These are all great! I don’t know which one to pick.” Haley laughed, “Try on the last one. Then you can decide.” I sighed and snapped on the last dress. It was a mermaid style dress with a sweetheart neckline. It was strapless and had a beaded belt right under the chest area. It had a slight train. It was stunning.

I gasped, “This is it!” Katie clapped, “I love that one!” I was on cloud nine. Haley agreed, “It’s perfect, you look like a goddess.” We all hugged, and they told me how beautiful I looked. I felt like royalty in it. I was really getting married.

Before I knew it, Friday rolled around. I’d confided in Lacy I was upset about Lucas not seeming to want sex. She said we’d talk to the girls. The second I sat down at our usual table for lunch Lacy ordered, “Space unheard.” I spoke my chant quickly while Peter and Drake groaned.

Sam asked first, “What gives?” I sighed, “Lucas hasn’t made a move to have sex. I mean we do oral, but he doesn’t take a step to go any further.” Lacy suggested, “Make the first move then if that’s what you want.” I blushed admitting, “He usually does that, except when I’m a crazy sex fairy. That side of me takes over.” Chelsea shrugged, “Hey, we want it when we want it too. It’s not just a man’s domain in the bedroom.” The girls were right, I could initiate things. I would do that.

Throughout the week, I’d gotten increasingly excited about my birthday. Aside from not having sex, I’d had a lot of fun during my birthday week. Lucas and Dylan had brought Lacy and me into their work. We were helping them get through their reports. He really was monitoring a lot of people.

The only one I thought he should look at was the report of Alpha Ezra losing it about Alpha Kyle submitting their alliance to the council. He attacked the messenger, and it took three people to pull him off the poor man. He was growling for hours apparently. I shivered. I didn’t get good vibes from the man, and I’d never met him. I had even shivered when I’d taken the file and read his name. Something was very off about that guy. I was glad Lucas didn’t agree to be allies. I didn’t want to see him on a regular basis. If I could avoid seeing him ever... I really wanted to.

When I got home from school on Friday, I could barely contain my excitement. I'd asked Katie, Ry and Dusty to come over. I was going to give them their gifts. Ry laughed as we walked inside, "You are really excited to have a sibling meeting." I smiled, "Yes, I'm a little nervous too." Aubree and Dusty walked in next sitting down by Ry and Valerie.

I linked Lucas, "Can you come downstairs? The sibling meeting is about to happen. You also have all the tickets and everything." Lucas laughed, "I'm on the way, baby girl." Lucas joined us next. He put his hand on my leg. It made me realize I was bouncing them up and down. Lucas linked me, "They will love it, you don't need to be nervous." I smiled brightly at him. Katie and Logan came through a portal and sat down.

Dusty nodded to me, "Ok, this is your show, Evie." I cleared my throat, "I know you guys put off doing things you wanted to do to look for me. I talked it over with Lucas, and I really wanted to do something special for you guys." Ry spoke up, "That's not necessary, it's your birthday tomorrow not ours."

I clapped my hands, "I know! I'm so excited this will be my first birthday since they made me leave home where there's actually a celebration. Everyone is coming! It's going to be so fun!" I waved my hands then added, "You're wrong though Ry, this IS necessary."

I turned to Lucas who handed me Dusty and Aubree's trip first. I handed it to my brother, "Dusty, I know you and Aubree didn't get to take a honeymoon because you were funding the find Evie campaign. Lucas worked his magic to get you both the time off work. You leave tomorrow. If you want to you can fly, or I can pop you in. You have tickets to return on the twenty second, but I am popping you back home. I don't want you to get be delayed and possibly miss our wedding."

Dusty and Aubree were staring at me in shock. Eventually Aubree asked, "You got us a honeymoon?" I laughed, "I guess now it's kind of a babymoon too. The original purpose was for your honeymoon though, so whichever you want to say. Oh, I forgot! Haley told me to practice this."

I thought of the clothes they'd need and snapped. I squealed when I opened my eyes adding, "And you're packed. Everyone's spending the night here anyway. For the record, I'm not even asking you; it's just happening."

Ry snorted, "Of course, your tradition." Lucas asked, "Tradition?" I smiled, "You'll see. Any who.... Ry, I know you gave up the money for your Europe trip. Lucas has been there, and he outlined the places you'd likely want to go. We have your tickets, but it's for after graduation. You, Valerie and your little one will be jet setting through Europe. Again, I can pop you all in, or if you need a night to yourself; Lucas and I can pop in to babysit or bring your little one back here."

Ry's eyes lit up as he read through the itinerary. He looked up, "Thank you, guys. I..." His voice trailed off, "It was worth every penny we spent to find you. This is so kind of you both."

Lucas smiled squeezing my leg, "What's important to Emmaline, is important to me." I got really nervous about Katie's gift. I handed her the envelope, "Katie, I know your dream wasn't a trip. It was to be a lawyer. I will totally help you accomplish that goal if you want to. We can study together, I'll help you write entrance exam essays, whatever. Since I can't give you a law degree, I got us a spa getaway. There are no dates set. It's just ready for our use after your little guy is here and you are ready for your first trip away. It doesn't matter when that is. Lucas and Logan worked out security already. Plus, I can pop your little man to us or you to him. If you don't like the weekend getaway though, I can get you something else."

Logan smiled at me, but I couldn't focus on him. I was so nervous I couldn't even search Katie's soul to see if she was excited. Katie smiled with tears in her eyes slapping my arm, "Don't you dare change this, it's perfect. I love it! A sister's weekend!" She hugged me, "We missed you so much, Evie." I smiled, "I missed you guys too."

Dusty said, "This was not what I was thinking. I thought you were going to tell us we were spending the night." I snorted, "You are spending the night." Dusty laughed, "Yes, I know, but I thought that's what the meeting was about." I

questioned, “You like it, though, right? If you don’t, we can change the trip.”

Aubree snorted, “Umm hell no, I’ve never been to Hawaii. She has tickets in here for the Dolphin Quest at Hilton Waikoloa Village here, Dustin. We get to play with a dolphin. We ARE going.” Dusty put his hands in the air, “I am all for going, I have never been to Hawaii either. My parents used to go all the time though.”

I smiled, “I know, I remembered that you got mad when they wouldn’t take us. They told us it was their special get away place.” We all smiled then I had to push those memories away before I got sad. I whispered, “They weren’t all bad times. Just that last little bit, right?”

Ry stood, “We had a lot of fun before the end. I’m so glad we’ve found you now.” I smiled, “Me too.” We talked for a little bit longer than everyone dispersed. Hexxi was the only sister who hadn’t confirmed she was coming to my party. Idel said Hexxi was trying to nail down the right present. I told Idel to tell her I didn’t care about the present. I just wanted her there and Idel had assured me she’d pass the message on.

Lucas and I went to bed, again with no sex. He was killing me. I decided to add to my tradition, and it was sex afterwards. No one can deny the birthday girl, it was one of my birthday rules. Lucas fell asleep a little before ten o’clock.

I smiled at his sleeping form; he had no idea what was coming. It appeared my siblings hadn’t warned him. When the clock struck midnight, I got off the bed, squealed, then jumped on Lucas. He startled awake, “WHAT THE....?” I screamed, “IT’S MY BIRTHDAY!!!” Lucas was sitting up as I ran out of the room. He yelled, “Emmaline, it’s midnight!”

I squealed all throughout the house. I threw Dusty’s door open first. He was sitting up in bed waiting for me. He got up, picked me up and twirled me around as I screamed about my birthday. Lucas was staring at me, bewildered as I ran to Ry’s room and repeated the process.

Dylan was now standing with Lucas bouncing up and down. Dylan clapped happily exclaiming “I love this tradition,

Lucas. We should all do it.” I ran to Katie’s room. I jumped on Logan instead of her because she’s pregnant.

Logan laughed, “I see I get to be included now.” I smiled, “You’re family, so you’re included.” I ran out to Dylan. I asked him, “Is Lacy in your room still?” Dylan grinned, “Why yes, she is. A herd of elephants can’t wake my sweet mate though.”

I ran to their room and inside screaming. Lacy jumped out of bed, “WHAT THE HELL IS WRONG WITH YOU?” I screamed, “IT’S MY BIRTHDAY, LACY!” My siblings were waiting outside their rooms laughing.

I grabbed two of their hands without looking who I’d grabbed. I squealed, “Come on! Let’s go!” Lucas asked, “There’s more to this tradition? Where are we going?” I demanded, “Come on!” I ran downstairs and into the kitchen.

I had asked Gemma to have a chocolate milkshake for Lucas, strawberry for Katie and me, vanilla for Ry, and banana for Dusty. I got everyone’s milkshakes out of the freezer. Lucas asked me, “How did you know chocolate milkshakes are my favorite?” I giggled, “I asked Gemma. Sorry Dylan, I didn’t know you were joining us. What would you like?” He started laughing at me for some reason.

Lacy came charging into the kitchen. She snarled, “OH NO YOU DON’T! I get one first. The pup now demands an Oreo milkshake.” I quickly snapped her one. Dylan said, “I want a chocolate chip cookie dough milkshake.” I snapped his next.

Dale came in rubbing his face, “What in god’s name are we screaming about?” Lucas laughed, “You know exactly what was being screamed about. Emmaline, he wants a vanilla milkshake with M&M’s in it.” Dale sheepishly stated, “Well, I mean... since I’m up. Everyone else has one.” I laughed and snapped him the milkshake.

We stayed up a little bit later. Lacy asked, “I take it you aren’t going to training at four today?” I gasped, “But... it’s my birthday. Don’t I get my birthday off, Lucas?” Lucas laughed, “Of course you do.” I pumped my fist in the air, “So we sleep in!” Lucas muttered, “Thank god.”

Dylan snorted, “Can I ask why none of you Forrester/Bishop jerks warned us she screamed like a banshee running around the house at midnight? I could’ve stayed awake or got noise cancelling headphones. There were choices.”

Dusty laughed, “It’s just Bishop now, but this was way more fun.” Dylan grinned, “Ohhh and there’s that fairy side you rarely show!” Dusty laughed louder. Ry bumped my shoulder, “I missed you screaming around the house running into our rooms. She first started this when she was three. Katie and I had just gotten back from a milkshake run, and it just turned into a thing from there.”

Dylan asked, “Where does one get milkshakes at midnight? And by one, I mean the partial fairies. This is clearly a thing for your people, and I must know where to find them.” We all laughed and responded, “Sonic,” at the same time. Everyone hugged each other and we went back upstairs.

Lucas teased me, “So, can I go to sleep or are you going to wake me up again by jumping on me?” I smirked, “I plan to jump you, Alpha. I’m pretty sure birthday sex is a thing.” I didn’t give him time to react, kissing him and snapping us both naked and slid down on him. He groaned. “Fuck, baby girl.” I whispered, “It’s been too long.”

Lucas shuddered while I rode him. He put his thumb on my clit. I moaned, “Lucas.” I built us and we climaxed quickly. It really had been a long time since we’d done this. Lucas flipped our positions. I looked at him questioningly.

He smirked, “I hope you didn’t think we were done.” We didn’t fall asleep until four in the morning. I laughed, “Good thing I don’t have to train today.” Lucas kissed me gently, “Get some sleep, birthday girl.” I smiled, “It’s my birthday.” Lucas kissed me sweetly, “Happy Birthday, baby girl.”

I didn’t wake up until one in the afternoon. I happily noted Lucas who was still asleep next to me. I rolled on top of him and bit his ear, “It’s my birthday.” Lucas nibbled my neck, “I’ve heard that rumor somewhere.”

We got up and into the shower. We didn't make it downstairs until three o'clock. I snapped myself into a loose sleeved gold sequin mini dress with black panty hose and little black ankle boots. Lucas grumbled, "That's not inspiring me to leave the room."

I laughed and swatted him, "Everyone will be here in thirty minutes, and I want to see my cake!" Lucas grinned and I popped us into the kitchen. It was a flurry of activity and several pack members were startled at our appearance.

One greeted us, "Alpha, Luna, Hello. You look beautiful, Luna." I smiled, "I've seen you giving Dylan his popcorn." The guy blushed, "Yes, Luna." I put my hands out, "Please call me Emmaline. What is your name?" The guy answered, "It's Danver, Luna Emmaline." I laughed, "I will break you of this habit. I just wanted to see the cake Lucas ordered for my birthday." Danver nodded and led me to the table where the cake was set up.

I gasped when I saw it, "Lucas, I love it!" Lucas kissed me. Dylan yelled, "Thank god!" I snorted, "Did you think I wouldn't like the cake?" Dylan shook his head, "Not that, you two had sex again. Excuse me I have to go strike up the band! He has been so grumpy!" Dylan ran off.

A few moments later, I kid you not, I heard a band. I startled, "He has a band?" Dylan came back inside, "Technically, the band is for the small parade Lucas has orchestrated for your party. Semantics." I laughed, "There's a parade?" Lucas smiled, "Just a small one that goes around the lake." I tickled him, "You are too much!"

Haley popped in, "Hello all! Happy Birthday Emmaline!" She gave me a hug, which started the rounds of everyone hugging. I smiled when my dad arrived. I saw Lucas, Eric, Dylan, and the elder Frosts talking. Haley joined briefly then everyone dispersed. I wondered what she said.

My dad popped beside me, "Hello, my beautiful little girl. This is a wonderful party! You look stunning. The belle of the ball. That is the saying here, right?" I assured him, "It is.

Thank you, dad.” He gave me a hug. I excused myself after an hour, popping upstairs to use the restroom.

Once I was done, I came out, and noticed the unknown phone on my nightstand. I hadn’t turned it on in a while. I turned on the phone, and there was a message waiting.

Unknown: Loose lips sink ships, Evelyn. Happy Birthday.

Me: What does that even mean?

Unknown: Enjoy today but get ready. The showdown is coming.

Me: If I need you, how do I get a hold of you?

Unknown: Text or call this phone. You might not need me, but those close to you will.

Me: Thank you for the cryptic help and birthday wishes.

Unknown: You are quite welcome, enjoy your party.

Me: How did you know about my party?

I waited several minutes but nothing else came back in. I threw the phone aside and popped back downstairs to find an all-out brawl going down between Hexxi and Idel. Haley was actually coaching Idel on how to throw a better punch.

I asked, “What’s going on?” All eyes turned to me in horror. Lucas grabbed me, “Come on let’s... go outside for the parade. Pop us out back.” I looked at Lucas and immediately popped outside. Guests filtered outside after us.

Aiden popped next to me, “Lucinda never wants to leave this realm now. She insists she be invited to all yours and Haley’s parties. She actually made an edict as queen.” He handed me a piece of paper. Ok?

Dylan came outside and squealed, “YAY! I love the fairy queen!” Aiden asked, “Who doesn’t? She’s incredible.”

Dylan looped his arm with mine, “Emmaline, I think you should throw more parties. I mean there’s a fairy edict and

everything. More parties! WHOHOO!” I shot a questioned glance at Lucas who winced.

Ry, Dusty, and Katie came outside shaking in anger. I asked them, “Guys? Are you ok? What’s going on?” Lucas said, “Let’s have your party. You’re so excited about your birthday, and none of us want to spoil it. We will tell you everything afterwards, ok?” I nodded, “I dislike the sound of that, so I’m shoving it in the back of mind. Let’s party!”

Lucas and I were on the last little float. I had every belief Haley and Bexley had conjured the floats. I was still so happy Lucas had done this. I had never been in a parade, or a part of a float.

Afterward, we went back inside for presents and cake. I walked inside and squealed, “BA!” She laughed at my reaction. Her soul was radiating happiness. She hugged me back, “Hello, Emmaline. Haley mentioned it was your birthday. I had to come give you your present in person.” She handed me a small box.

I opened it and gasped it was an arrow on a chain. I stammered, “Is this.... Did you give me your calling card?” BA smiled, “Yes, should you find yourself in trouble, simply touch it. I’ll find my way to you. Bjourn’s coming to get me, but I just had to give you this in person.”

I smiled, “You seem really happy, how’s your angel?” I felt a little bad since she was Chase’s mate, but she did deserve to be happy. BA answered, “He left to go back to his realm quite a while ago. I have a new guy.” I laughed, “Oh yeah?” She smiled, “He’s really hot and super nice. He’s great.” She was gushing. I was really happy for her. I was a little worried because she was in love with this guy. Her soul told me so. My soul searcher heart was a little sad for her, but I was happy she was happy. BA left.

I walked over to Haley and quickly said, “Space unheard...” Haley quickly chanted. She teased, “You do know you can do the chant, yes? What’s up, birthday girl? I promised your siblings I wouldn’t explain the fight until after the party, so I can’t answer that question yet.”

I shrugged, “I don’t want to know until after the party. Do you know who BA is dating?” Haley cautiously answered me, “I don’t officially know. I so know it’s a new guy. She’s actually dating him as her true identity. She doesn’t do that often, but they met when she was herself. She likes him. She’s been cagey on the details, but that’s not abnormal.”

I sighed, “She loves this guy.” Haley turned, “Loves him? You’re sure? That’s big for her.” I nodded. Haley shrugged, “Good for her.” I pressed, “What about Alpha Chase?” Haley said, “I’m sure it will all work out. Don’t worry about it too much.” I frowned. Her soul was not worried at all. Her wording was odd too. She said she didn’t officially know who BA was seeing. Did that mean she knew?

I decided to put that aside for now since Haley wasn’t worried and got back to my party. I opened the first present handed to me. My dad had gotten me some sort of enchanted computer mouse looking thing. When I touched it, it showed my animals in the special place he had shown me in Faerie. He’d gotten me my dolphin. I gave him a hug.

Idel had gotten me a gift certificate to the mall. Katie, Ry, and Dusty had gotten a trip to Universal Studios for me and Lucas. I’d always wanted to go. It was for my graduation. I laughed, “Great minds think alike, we all got each other trips.” They laughed but they weren’t their normal laughs. It was a little strained.

I opened Haley and Eric’s present next. I opened the card.

Emmaline,

Eric said I couldn’t make you solve clues to find your present. So, you’ll just have to follow me. Wolves are boring sometimes.

FGM

I stood up, “Let’s go.” Haley sighed, “I maintain it would’ve been fun to have you solve clues.” Eric rubbed her

back, “It’s her birthday.” Haley pouted, “And she’s missing out on the all the fucking fun!”

I laughed and followed them outside. I asked Lucas, “Do you know what it is?” Lucas shrugged, “I don’t, but Eric emailed some questions and I now realize I should’ve asked for more information about.”

There was a new building about a half a mile from the main house. When had that been done? I walked inside and gasped as I looked around. I asked, “You conjured a pool with a lazy river for me as a birthday present?” Haley smiled, “Yes, but if you don’t like it I can...”

I squealed, “NO! You stop that thought right there, I love this!” After everyone marveled over the new addition we went back to the main house. We popped because Haley said it was boring to walk. I opened Lucas’ present last.

Baby girl,

You are my world. I love you so much.

Happy Birthday,

Lucas

He’d gotten me an iPad. He’d loaded a bunch of books onto it. He’d also somehow gotten my fealish dictionary on here AND he’d also gotten a scrapbook for me. I opened it stunned to see pictures of us. I didn’t even know where he’d gotten some of these.

It was all there. The moment we met. Someone must have taken a picture of us when he’d growled mine. There was even a picture of him proposing. I wiped tears away asking, “When did you even...? Who took the pictures?”

Lucas answered, “A combination of people. I can’t take any of the credit for putting pictures in here creatively. I had all the material and pictures, but I gave them to my mom. She put them together beautifully in this book.”

I mouthed “Thank you,” to Debbie, then stood to give Lucas a kiss stating, “I love it.” He smiled, “Good.” Everyone started trickling out. Until it was just my dad, Hexxi, Idel, Haley, Eric, Dylan, Lacy, Dale, Debbie, and my siblings. I sighed and bit the bullet asking, “Ok, what’s going on?”

Hexxi pouted, “They don’t like my present. I thought REALLY hard about it too.” I was stunned. I clarified, “I’m sorry, the all-out fairy fight I saw was about a present?” Lucas said, “Yes. Hexxi... created well...” Dylan sighed. Lucas continued, “Your sister got a doll that looks like your mother and brought it to life. She charmed her to tell David she was going for a spa treatment, which is where the double is, then she popped your mom.... here.”

Everything stopped. After several moments, I lost it, “My mom is here? She’s seen you all which means she knows where I am?” I couldn’t breathe. Hexxi slowly answered, “Not exactly. I’m obviously going to wipe her memories. I thought for your birthday you could say what you wanted to her.”

I gritted my teeth, “Where is she?” Lucas answered, “In the dungeons, where I had Dylan take her.” Dylan slyly stated, “She might need Haley to do her healing thing. She tripped down the stairs.” We all turned to him, and he put his hands up, “She legitimately tripped down the stairs guys. Clumsy thing, your mom. I was thinking about pushing her, so unless I am now GAP who can call the wind because life is unfair... she just tripped. Or my thoughts come true. Choose to believe what you want, but I like this whole my thoughts take action choice.”

I turned on my heel and strode towards the dungeon ready to give that woman a piece of my mind. Lucas called, “Baby girl? Where are you...?” I popped to the dungeons remembering that would be faster before Lucas finished his sentence.

I saw her immediately and spat out, “Hello, mom.” My mom gasped, “Evelyn! Oh, my beautiful baby! This is why your siblings won’t come home. That’s why they want to stay here! It really was your birthday party upstairs. Sweetie, I

missed you so much!” She reached her hands through the bars as everyone else caught up to me.

I slapped her hand away from me shouting, “DON’T touch me. Haley, can you use your power?” Haley instantly answered, “Of course.” Lucas wrapped his arms around me. My mom tilted her head, “Evie, is he your mate? He’s very handsome. You’re a little young to find your mate though. Fate must have thought you needed him.”

I hissed, “Not as young as we all thought though... Am I?” My mom was taken aback. I sneered, “Yeah, I know I’m actually eighteen. You selfish BITCH!” My mom’s hands were shaking, “I understand you’re upset, but I was protecting us all. We had a family this way. David would’ve known you weren’t his instantly. It was selfish of me not to tell you, but I always thought I’d have a chance on your sixteenth birthday. I’d planned to tell you all about it.”

I yelled, “You could’ve told me when you LET him emancipate me without my knowledge then run me out of town. HE WAS TRYING TO KILL ME! HELL, he is STILL trying to kill me. Do you even care?”

My mom had the gall to look surprised. She even sounded offended, “I’m your mother, of course I care! He was going to kill Ryan and Dustin if I left with you. I had an impossible choice, but I gave all of you a chance.”

I cut in, “You could’ve told my dad. At any point you could’ve contacted him. You could’ve given me the presents from him when I left and told me to find him. You left me with NOTHING! I lived outside. I lived in fear until Lucas found me. Then you have the audacity to say I’m a little young to have found my mate. We found out my real age because I went into my concupiscence without knowing or being prepared for it! YOU TRIED TO RUIN MY LIFE! You say David said he would kill Ry and Dusty. Did you believe him?”

My mom’s eye went wide in panic, “Evie...” I yelled, “DID YOU BELIEVE HIM?” My mom answered, “Of course not, they are his sons.” I cried, “Then why? Why did you

abandon me? Why wasn't I enough? Why did you hurt Ry, Dusty, Katie, and me like this? Why?"

My mom ignored those questions, "You're just as beautiful as I'd imagine you to be in my head." I wiped my tears, "I don't care." My mom sighed, "I did what I felt I had to do. I couldn't let Ryan, Dustin, or Katie know about what really happened. As soon as they found out, they turned their back on me like I always feared. I'd already lost one child; I didn't want to lose the other three."

Katie hissed, "You vile bitch!" Logan held her back. I questioned, "Why? Why was I the sacrifice you made?" My mom said, "David is my husband. That's not the..." She trailed off then incredulously asked, "Is that a ring on your finger? You're a bit young for that step. I can't believe your brothers are letting that happen, but..."

I cut her off yelling, "I'm emancipated! They couldn't stop me if they wanted to. Guess whose fault that is? Then there's the fact that I'm now eighteen!" My mom acted as if I didn't yell, "I didn't want to sacrifice you. I thought letting David believe he'd won would give all you kids your best chance." I threw my hands up, "You wanted to give Katie, Dusty, and Ry a fake dead body. How could you even do that?"

My mom said, "Well, witches could do that easily. A face would be hard for the average witch to get right, but a gunshot to the head so that your face would be messed up would've worked. It would've let them move on. Katie became a private investigator for god's sakes. That's a far cry from her dream of being a lawyer."

I pointed out, "That's your fault. Had you been honest with them it wouldn't have happened. All you had to do was get word to my dad. You had almost four years to reach out and you did nothing. I didn't even know he took care of me until I turned one."

My mom sighed, "I didn't just give you to him, I still saw you while you were in Faerie. I couldn't just part with you. Marc brought me to see you frequently." I laughed humorlessly, "Are you serious? You couldn't part with me?"

You did! When David said jump, you asked how high?" My mom frowned, "I protected you; he would've killed you."

I countered, "You could've come with me, all of us could've run. You me, Dusty, Ry, and Katie. They all would've come." My mom disagreed, "I couldn't take them away from their father."

My dad interjected, "You took my daughter from me quite easily to let David raise her, then cast her aside. I knew you were weak, but not to this degree. You know he is using magic against you, but you do nothing to fight it. I cannot accept that. You should've done something to protect our daughter."

Haley gasped, everyone looked over at her. My dad continued harshly, "I, Marcious Walsh, Prince of House of the Water Fairies reject you June Forrester of the earth fairy descent as my mate. Water and Earth will be no more in this soul tie."

Holy crap! My mom fell to the ground in pain. I felt their souls disconnect from each other. I shivered; it was an odd feeling. My mom cried, "I'm sorry, Marc." My dad held his head high, "It is Prince Marcious to you. My baby thought I didn't love her. She didn't even know I took care of her when she was a baby; you took my presents from her! You let our baby get attacked by rogues. Only because she could use her powers instinctually, and she knew a little self-defense, does she live. She should've never known that life. She lived in fear and looked over her shoulder. I will never forgive you for this. You swore you'd take care of our little girl, and you failed spectacularly."

June cried, "He has a hold on me." My dad sadly replied, "If there was any part of you fighting it, I'd have forgiven you. This though, you didn't even try. Not even for our baby. Goodbye, June." He leaned down to kiss my cheek, "I'll be upstairs if you need me." I whispered, "I'm sorry, dad." My dad smiled, "I have you in my life now, I will be just fine."

I searched his soul. He was angry, upset, and hurting. My mom was feeling the same, but neither were devastated like I would be if my soul mate had rejected me. I called, "Dad..."

He turned, “Yes?” I timidly told him, “You have a second chance mate, I can feel it.” He smiled at me, while my mom burst into tears. My dad popped away.

I turned back to my mother, “You should’ve protected me, I was just a kid.” Mom said, “You’re my daughter.” I yelled, “YOU DON’T GET TO SAY THAT! According to a piece of paper you shoved in my face, you’re not anything to me. You’re not my mother, I’m my own person. You let me go, and now I’m letting you go. What’s David planning?”

My mother shrugged, “I don’t know. You need to be careful to make sure that he doesn’t find you. He’s been planning revenge since he found out you weren’t his. Please be careful, Evie. I’m sorry. Just... stay safe here. Whatever game he cooked up; it’s been four years in the making. Don’t play it, please. I’m so sorry.” I shook my head and sneered at her, “Screw your sorry.”

I popped with Lucas to the living room where my dad was. He was crying. I immediately asked, “Are you ok, dad?” He looked up admitting, “I wanted her to have a good reason. I thought she was fighting the spell, but that without training she wasn’t powerful enough. But she just gave in. I can forgive not wanting to be with me at the time we met. I can forgive not wanting to break up her family or letting me be your dad. Not this though. Choosing to let you live the way you did instead of getting word to me.”

I rubbed his back, “I understand. I haven’t met your current girlfriend, but I just know your second chance is out there. I feel it.” My dad wiped his eyes, “You would know. You are my little soul searcher.” Lucas chimed in, “June didn’t accept. I can have one of her other children tell her to accept your rejection if you need her to.” I turned with a question in my eyes. Why would that matter?

My dad just laughed, “That’s a wolf thing. Fairies are far ficker than wolves, angels, etcetera. Our lights move on if we reject someone. We live so long our goddess grants a lot of second chance mates, even third chances. We are freer spirited with mates than any other supernatural group. I do not need her to accept my rejection. My light accepted it as we are one

in the decision. I didn't fight my light to reject her. It's why I was waiting to hear her side. I would've fought my light before then, and I did not want that. Her acceptance isn't relevant to me, but I do appreciate the offer, Emmaline's wolf."

Lucas nodded. My dad hugged me and kissed my forehead, "I am sorry, I should've done better by you." I shook my head, "That's not true. You respected my mom's decision about me. That's not on you. You still tried to stay in my life, until it was too dangerous. I know you would've helped if you knew."

My dad's eyes filled with tears, "I would have. I would never have left you so alone without a roof over your head." I kissed his cheek, "I know. I love you, dad." He choked with emotion. "I love you too." He hugged me again.

Aiden winked at me from the corner. When did he come back? Aiden stepped forward and clapped Marcious on the back. He told him, "There's a water fairy situation I need you for, cousin." Marcious wiped his tears, "Of course there is, let's go home then." He looked directly at Lucas, "You take care of my little girl. I'll be back for the wedding." I smiled, "I can't wait to see you there." They popped away.

I asked, "Werewolves can reject their mates?" Lucas nodded, "It's not done often. When it happens though the other has to accept the decision. If the second party doesn't accept the rejection, their bond doesn't go away. If the wolf who rejected their mate doesn't mark another, they can rescind their rejection."

I nodded taking all that information in. My soul searcher side didn't really like that someone would do this. The way Lucas said it, these weren't mutual decisions. That was awful. How horrible would someone feel if their mate just rejected them with no conversation?

Lucas rubbed my shoulders while asking, "Do you want to say anything else to your mom?" I shook my head, "No, I will probably think of a million things later, but right now I just don't want to see her. I wasn't really prepared to confront her."

Hexxi popped in, “Now for the rest of my gift. Your mother will not remember anything about your life here. She will remember the words you, our father, and your siblings said to her. Well, and the Princess’s words. Haley may have channeled some of her anger at her mother at yours, oh well. Happy Birthday, Emmaline.” She kissed my forehead and popped out.

Idel huffed, “She is the WORST gift giver. I tried to tell her this was inappropriate when she just arrived with your mom.” I shrugged, “It’s fine. It’s probably hardest for Logan.” Beta James snorted. I hadn’t even noticed he was here. I smiled at him, and he waved.

Idel asked, “Prince Logan? Why would it be hard for him?” I explained, “Because he probably wants to kill her for hurting Katie. On second thought, I amend my original statement. It’s hardest for Aubree, Valerie, Lucas, and Logan. All of whom are capable of kicking our mother’s ass for hurting their mates. I’ve fought with Valerie, she’s a really good fighter. Aubree I’ve seen in action, and she’s quite powerful. Lucas is an Alpha and he’s my strong sexy handsome man; enough said. Logan is a Hackura prince. I feel like that explains it.”

Lucas agreed, “It does.” Logan replied, “It definitely does. There were a lot of fairies here today. They are quite lucky Evin and I were the only Princes of the Hackura present.” I asked, “Evin was here?” Katie sniffled, “Evin was with the guards. They, as in the Princes, are all wackadoodles about their mates being pregnant in this realm.” I could live with that. I shot Logan a wink.

Katie continued, “For your wedding, Haley’s whole guard is coming with mine. Even Logan’s is coming to guard me as well. How insane is that? The Princess’ guard is going to watch me.” Logan interjected, “Just the two not on duty, the other two are coming for Haley.” Katie snorted, “Right, that makes it less crazy. PLUS, ALL your brothers are coming to guard the perimeter.” I frowned, “Please tell them they are welcome to join the festivities.”

Dylan dramatically jumped up, “They will absolutely be there. One second you’ll be all I wish they would come inside

and the next BAM they are beside you. Shrugging, like they've been inside the whole time. NINJA SKILLED!"

Logan rolled his eyes, "I have never said the words ninja skilled in my entire life. I'm sure they will come inside to wish you well as you are important to Haley and me. I will tell them they are welcome." I nodded, "Katie, are you ok?" Katie sniffled, "I should ask you that." I pointed out, "I don't have extra hormones raging due to pregnancy."

Ry and Dusty came upstairs crying. Katie cried out, "She had no right. She changed all our lives, and admitted she could've fought David's spells on her; it was just too much work. Too much work! She threw a thirteen-year-old... damn it fourteen... out in the cold, hard world because it was too much effort to use her brain? I know they weren't you, but all those little girls who were out there on their own... the girls we saw the end of their lives. They were Jane Doe's. Some drowned, got hit by cars, and some were murdered... mostly by Johns or pimps probably. I investigated some of them and turned what I found over. They were just little girls; they weren't you, but they could've been. She just let that happen. Any of them could've been you."

She waved her hands saying, "I'm sorry." I went over and hugged her, "They weren't me." Ry whispered, "It could have easily been you if someone collected the bounty. Those girls we saw shot, stabbed, strangled... It's just so wrong. I can't believe that's our mother down there."

I sighed, "Overall this was a great birthday. Let's not let mom ruin the rest of it." I grabbed Katie and led her to Lucas' theater. Dustin asked, "Are we going with the classic pick?" I laughed, "What else would we watch Dusty? It's a tradition."

Dylan said, "And pray tell, what is the movie of choice? Or are we watching some home video of Emmaline screeching at the top of her lungs that it's her birthday at midnight. I need to prepare." I pulled out the cartoon of *Anastasia*. I told him, "This is the movie, Dylan." Dylan grinned, "I accept that."

Haley chimed in, "I've never seen that. What's it about?" I gasped, "OH MY GOSH! This was my absolute FAVORITE

movie!” Dusty wryly added, “It was, I can still quote the entire movie. She watched it incessantly after Ryan played it for her babysitting one day.”

Katie laughed, “We watched this every year on your birthday after you’d gone, and we had milkshakes. We looked through the phot albums from your birthday and always bought an extra strawberry milkshake for you.” I teared up, “You guys!” Dusty waved, “Hey, hey! No more tears, we are watching the *Anastasia* movie that all of us can quote BY HEART.” I told them, “I’m singing all the songs, and no one can judge me. There’s a rule about no judging the birthday girl.”

Ry laughed, “Are you going to dance too? I loved the dances.” I admitted, “I mean, I kinda want to.” Everyone laughed. Lucas encouraged, “I want to see you dance, baby girl.” We all sat down to watch the movie. Katie even got up and danced with me as we sang the songs.

Haley was intently watching the movie. She loved the bat, Bartok. She leaned over and said something to Dylan which he howled about. I told everyone after the movie, “I always wanted that crown she had, it’s beautiful.”

Lucas winked, “I own a jewelry store, say the word and I’ll have them make you one.” I laughed, “We will put a pin in that.” Haley said, “I liked the movie, but that is nothing like what happened to Anastasia.”

I asked a bit surprised, “You know the story of Anastasia?” Haley nodded, “We study Princesses and Princes in Faerie. That is not what happened to her, but it’s a much better story.” I laughed, “Which is why I love it.”

Haley smiled and hugged me, “Happy Birthday!” Everyone gave me hugs and left. Aubree said, “We’d like you to pop us to Hawaii.” I called, “Be right back, Lucas.” I popped and landed them in their holiday house.

Aubree squealed, “We meant tomorrow! Good Lord! What if the owner is here?” I laughed, “The owner are Dale and Debbie Lyons, and they aren’t here. Have fun guys! Your

luggage is in your room.” I hugged Dusty and then Aubree. “Love you guys!” They both laughed, “Love you too.”

I popped back to Lucas and we went to bed. The next day, I woke up and went to train per usual. I got back into bed with Lucas when I was done. I woke up when Dylan coming into the room, “Strangest thing... I didn’t wake up to a squealing fairy this morning. I got a taste of that, and I quite liked it. I want it back. Squealing fairy hour is now mandatory. There were milkshakes, squealing, bed jumping, pajamas. I mean there’s literally nothing else you could ask of a nighttime wakeup call.”

I laughed. Lucas asked, “Do you need something, Dylan?” Dylan shook his head slightly in disbelief, “Yes, obviously. I don’t just walk in here to disturb your sleep. I’m not the schedule tyrant, that’s obviously you.” Lucas sat up, “What’s going on?” Dylan informed him, “We had some warriors injured on patrol duty.” I gasped.

Lucas growled, “Why didn’t you link me?” Dylan frowned, “It just happened, and we have prisoners to interrogate.” I sighed and gave him a kiss, “At least they let me have my birthday.” I didn’t see Lucas until later that day, and he was upset about something.

By Monday, I was pouting because Lucas, Eric, Dylan, and Caleb were taking an overnight trip out of town Thursday and Friday night. Lacy was pouting too. Lucas was trying to say it would be fine. I knew it would be fine, I just didn’t want to be apart from him. I said, “I could pop Lacy and me to you guys.” Lucas laughed, “There will be vampires there. Eric won’t even let Haley pop in. He’s told Cassie quite sternly she can’t either.”

I scoffed, “He couldn’t tell Cassie anything sternly if he tried.” Dylan jumped, “AH HA! You see it’s not just me.” Fairy practices and fighting training were going really well. Thursday the guys asked that we train right after school so they could watch before they left. I thought it was odd that I didn’t see Dylan throughout our entire practice.

After it was over, I asked Lacy, “Where’s Dylan?” She snickered, “He’s... hanging around.” Haley asked, “Huh?” She glanced over at Eric, “What did you do husband of mine?” Eric innocently replied, “Me?” His soul felt quite smug though.

Lucas groaned, “Uh oh. He hasn’t linked me... but you... told me to block my link for the lesson. Great, he’s going to pout the entire drive.” Lucas clearly unlocked his link and started laughing, “Come on, let’s all go see Dylan.”

Haley grabbed Eric, “Let’s just tell the group where we are popping to. Walking doesn’t sound like something I want to do right now. Especially, since you all are going out of fucking town after this without us.” Eric leaned down and whispered in her ear.

We popped into a clearing. Dylan was caught by his leg hanging up in a tree upside down. Dylan yelled, “LUCAS! WHY haven’t you answered me? All the blood has rushed to my head! I’ve been swaying here for hours. Don’t you worry I used my time wisely. Watch this cool trick.”

He gained enough momentum to fling himself between a couple of trees. I laughed when I read his stomach. Eric had written *Don’t mess with Eric Connors*. I asked, “Is that permanent marker?” Dylan answered, “It is, little Luna. If you would be so kind to figure out how to magic it off... I would be grateful.” I assured him, “I will look into it.”

I linked Lacy, “You knew?” Lacy admitted, “I told Dylan to come pick me a flower from out here. Haley’s not the only one who likes to pull pranks.” Haley said, “I am fucking offended I was not included in the prank. This is barely a prank.”

Dylan agreed, “Right you are! I would include you in any prank. The NERVE of these people! Who doesn’t include our fun sized ninja fairy goddess in prank plans? It was even your own husband. You should withhold sex from him for a month.” Eric growled at him.

Haley snapped and Dylan was free. Dylan got up and then fell back down, “Whoa, head rush. Thank you, fun sized ninja fairy goddess. I’m literally on my knees in front of you.

Seriously though guys, I can't stand up. I guess someone has to carry me to the car."

Haley popped away and came back with Beta Caleb, who sighed, "Alright, let's go funny guy." He hauled Dylan over his shoulder. Dylan shouted, "Giddy up, partner!" Then slapped Beta Caleb on the butt. We all laughed.

Beta Caleb shook his head, "You are lucky I like you, Dylan." Dylan said, "I blame all the blood that's rushing back into my extremities. It's making me loopy." Beta Caleb snorted, "Yeah... that's it."

We popped to the car and waited for them to get there. Caleb asked, "You didn't just pop him to the car because?" I shrugged, "No one asked us to." Beta Caleb groaned, "Seriously Eric and Lucas? You guys suck."

Dylan laughed, "Yes, FINALLY someone admits GAP is truly a prick. Now, we have a WHOLE car ride to talk about what workout you all do over in GAP's territory for your glutes. This man has buns of steel, Lucas." We all laughed, and I kissed Lucas goodbye. Haley and Lacy kissed their mates too.

Haley stated, "I could come, and conceal our scents." Eric raised an eyebrow, "You can only do that for two hours at a time." Haley shrugged, "So we pop out and come back. I knew giving you that fucking book would bite me in the ass somehow." Eric laughed, "No popping in, we will be back tomorrow night." They got in the car and drove away.

Haley hung out for a bit before popping back to her territory. Lucas called when they got to their destination. They were about to go into a meeting. My phone rang the second I hung up. I laughed, "Do you miss me already?" There was silence then I heard, "Hello, Evelyn." I sucked in a breath answering, "Hello, David."

Thorn in our side

Lucas woke with a start when he felt Emmaline jump on him. I was disoriented, but I knew it was Emmaline because of the smell and the tingles erupting all over my body. Which was a good thing, or I could've hurt her. No one had ever jumped me screaming about their birthday before.

She was out of the room before I could process much. I checked my phone. Was she serious? It was midnight! She squealed running through the house. I got a link from Dylan, "WHAT'S GOING ON? ARE WE BEING ATTACKED! I'M COMING! Are you even awake?! I was not told I had to be your alarm during a CRISIS! Get up! Find out what's happening! Wait! That's my job. I'm on it! On the double, Dylan!"

I was still rubbing my face trying to wake up as I stumbled after Emmaline. Dylan caught up with me. He was far too happy, "What in GOD'S name is happening? And can we make this a nightly event? Emmaline does know she lives with wolves now, right? The only one she hasn't managed to wake up is your sister. For someone with supernatural hearing, Lacy's is quite a deep sleeper. Not even a herd of elephants could wake that woman up; I swear it to you." I did know that.

We watched Emmaline run into Dustin's room. Dylan said, "Be right back." He ran away. Emmaline came out and ran to Ryan's room. Dylan showed back up with popcorn. He pointed at Dustin's door, "So, her siblings appear to be aware she was going to do this. I've joined team witches suck with Haley. I had JUST gone to sleep. If I knew I'd be woken up by a screaming banshee running through the house; I would've made different choices."

I groaned, "I'm still not really awake." Dylan snorted, "Obviously my eyes deceive me. I do not see you standing here with your eyes open talking to me. That's not a thing Dylan sees." I glared at him, and he winked. I rolled my eyes.

When Emmaline reached Katie's room, she jumped on Logan instead of Katie. Probably because she didn't want to tackle her pregnant sister. Dylan raised an eyebrow at Logan when he came out of the room.

He mocked, "Thanks for the heads-up, creepy ninja assassin." Logan smirked at us. Emmaline ran out to ask Dylan if Lacy was asleep in their room. He was far too happy about what was going on.

Dylan threw popcorn in his mouth as he asked, "What do you think? Herd of elephants or can a screeching fairy actually wake up Lacy?" I shrugged, "We will find out shortly." Dylan said, "I'm placing good odds on the screeching fairy." He shoved more popcorn in his mouth. We heard Lacy scream at Emmaline.

Dylan laughed, "A screeching fairy it is. I'll have to keep that in mind, it could come in handy. I jumped on the bed while she was sleeping and nothing. I'm not talking a mere bounce either, I got momentum. Your truly treated the bed like a trampoline. I've played music, danced a jig, and all I needed was a fairy. I should've known. What WAS I thinking?"

My dad linked me, "Dear god, son. A little warning next time!" I replied, "I didn't know." My dad grumbled, "How's an old wolf supposed to sleep around here?" Dylan nudged me, "Uh... her siblings are still standing outside their rooms. What's part two? Do we go swimming in the lake? I'm too old to stay up until the early hours of the morning. I have a pup coming. I can't become a serious person, so I have to get my sleep. It's all I've got to prepare for Mini Dylan. You just KNOW he's going to be a menace. I'm already so proud of the mischief he will cause." He wiped a fake tear from his eye.

Emmaline re-emerged to yell at everyone. Dylan contemplated, "To go back to bed, or find out what's next?" I snorted, "We all know you are coming to find out. Literally all of us. No one doubts you're coming." Dylan agreed, "You're right. It wasn't a real question. I can't miss any part of my show. Onwards into the fairy madness!" Emmaline practically floated down the stairs; she was so excited.

Dylan linked me, “I’m so tempted to tell her she could pop, but then I’d miss something.” I shrugged. Dylan asked, “Can fairy’s float? I haven’t gotten to that chapter in my precious yet.” I laughed, “You’re ahead of me in the book, by several chapters.”

Dylan declared, “Because I WILL be the resident fairy expert, I deserve that title. I have loved the partial fairy’s since they came into our lives. I have been paying rapt attention to my show. I’m the president of their fan club, and NO ONE WILL TAKE THAT TITLE FROM ME! Not even GAP or any of the wolves with fairy mates. This title is MINE, all mine. I’ll sell part of my soul to the fairy queen to get more books, so I know more than all of you. You all will have to ask me your fairy questions because I WILL KNOW ALL LUCAS! Muhahaha.” He laughed like an evil *Disney* villain.

I rolled my eyes, “Ok, Ursula.” Dylan clapped me on the back, “I’m so proud that you got the reference. I need to write this down. Why don’t I have a pen?” Dylan spoke out loud to Logan, “Creepy Ninja assassin, do you have a pen? I seem to have forgotten one when I stumbled out of bed thinking we were being attacked because none of you could warn a Beta.”

Logan laughed, “Here.” Dylan snorted, “Do you have paper too? He actually had a pen, Lucas! I bow to his preparedness.” I replied, “I heard him.” We walked in the kitchen and Emmaline passed out milkshakes.

I saw Dylan get a piece of paper from a drawer. I asked incredulously, “Are you actually writing it down that I picked up your reference?” Dylan said, “No one will believe me if it’s not documented. I do these things for you, and you don’t even appreciate it. Also, I love this tradition. I will now run around the house on my birthday hollering, and then someone will have to give me a milkshake. I will teach this to my pups and so on. We will live on!” I rolled my eyes. Lacy came in and demanded a milkshake.

My dad linked me, “Did I hear Lacy screaming about a milkshake?” I answered, “Apparently after waking everyone up at midnight for her birthday, everyone drinks milkshakes.” My dad muttered, “I want a damn milkshake.” I laughed and

closed my link with him. I wasn't surprised in the slightest when he showed up.

I linked, "Where's mom?" My dad snorted, "Your sister gets her deep sleeping habits from your mother. She has no idea we are awake." Dylan linked me, "Fairies have the right ideas. Let's never work on our birthdays again. No training, no paperwork. Human's take days off... vacation days. Let's mandate this policy. Just so you know, I will not be working on my birthday going forward. I will now always expect a midnight chocolate chip cookie dough milkshake. Feel free to stand outside my door with it as I run the halls yelling it's my birthday. We need a shadow day in Faerie. I just need to study them, Lucas. Can I do a summer abroad in Faerie? I didn't go to college. PLLLLLEEAASSSE?"

I shook my head, "Dylan, just... go to bed." Dylan nodded, "You need time to think about it, that's cool. We have a whole semester before it's summer. You take your time big man!" Out loud he asked why no one warned us this was coming.

I linked him, "You keep forgetting they have fairy blood. they thought it would be funny." Dylan squealed, "I LOVE THEM! Let's convince them all to move in. We can't have Haley because GAP would never let that fly, but these three... we could accomplish this. I believe in us." I pointed out the flaw, "Logan can't live here, and Ryan already basically does."

Dylan snorted, "The creepy ninja assassin can live here. They have that whole weird time warp in their realm. Don't ruin this for me with your logic, Lucas! Marcus and Bjoorn practically live in GAP's territory. All of them rotate through. We should get one!" There would be no talking him out of this.

They began discussing where you could get a milkshake at this time. Dylan linked me, "I think partial fairies might hang out at this Sonic during the late hours. Don't expect me home on school nights. I'll find the closest Sonic and troll for more partial fairies for my show. I'll just wait for someone to order a milkshake. It's a flawless plan, and don't you even THINK about trying to ruin it!"

I snarked, “Far be it from me to ruin your plans, enjoy Sonic.” Dylan asked, “Do you know what this place is? Have you just been holding out on me?” I admitted, “I have no idea what Sonic is but evidently it has milkshakes.”

Dylan eyed me, “I’ll believe you for now, but I better not find out you’re lying to me.” he turned and went back to his room muttering, “Trying to ruin my fairy fun... I swear that brother of yours, Lacy. He just doesn’t get it.” Lacy laughed, “My poor Dylan, you just love your fairy show.” Dylan complained, “Your brother tries to take it away from me all the time. I think I need cheering up.” Lacy laughed as they turned the corner.

I asked Emmaline if we could go to sleep now, but she had other plans. We were naked in seconds, and sleep was suddenly the last thing on my mind. I’d missed this. Dominic said, “I would like to state for the record we didn’t have to wait so long for this. She was waiting for you to make a move. Let’s make this part of her tradition, screaming, milkshakes, and then sex. OOHHH we could use milkshakes during sexy time.”

I closed our link when he began to picture that. Once she’d finished, I rolled over on top of her and kept us going well into the morning. We both fell asleep after we’d finished. It was beginning to feel like my birthday too. I woke up to Emmaline on top of me again, still naked. I could get used to this. I worshiped her body until she said we needed to shower. I could’ve kept her up here all day.

When she snapped into her outfit for the party my pants tightened. Dominic growled, “Fuck the party. Let’s keep her up here. They can all go home...” Emmaline wanted to see her cake though. Dominic huffed, “Mate will love the cake. Fine...” We popped into the kitchen, and Dylan’s favorite Omega led her to her cake. She loved it just as I knew she would.

Dylan skipped over to us inhaling deeply. He linked me teasingly, “Get it, get it! Is that what you two have been doing all morning? You don’t need to answer, I already know.” He actually ran outside to start up the band. I rolled my eyes. Our

pack mostly made up the band at school, so I'd had them dress up in their uniforms for the mini parade we were having for Emmaline's birthday.

Haley and Bexley had too much fun conjuring floats according to Eric. Emmaline was buzzing with excitement. Haley popped in and Eric came over to me. He didn't look overly happy. He narrowed his eyes asking, "Do you know what you have done to me, Lucas?" I shrugged, "I actually don't."

Dylan showed up with popcorn and threw some in his mouth. He spoke, "Do tell us though, won't you GAP? Leave nothing out. I can't believe he didn't tell me. He knows I live for the details of such things. I'm ever so hurt, Lucas." I shot him a look.

Eric snorted, "You made Haley google parade floats." Dylan started to laugh. Eric continued, "Haley has already started to plan the triplet's birthday party. She's told Bjourn when he's crowned king, they need floats at their parade."

Logan walked over adding, "She has a vision board. She found that on google too. The floats are pretty cool, it's a Viking type feel to Bjourn's coronation parade." Dylan happily asked, "Prince Bjourn is actually going to have a parade?"

Logan shrugged, "Why not? It can take place after the coronation. It will make Haley happy, and it will be something new. If we hate it, when my nephew, Hastein, becomes king we won't do it."

Eric raised an eyebrow adding, "I now know what a spritle looks like, Lucas. Because they will be on the floats for the triplet's birthday. There are unicorns, wolves, and several puppies from a show called *paw patrol*. The cookie monster has a float, and that's just the start."

Dylan laughed, "Good thing you are rich." Eric snorted, "She conjures them, it doesn't cost me money. I just have to hear about every single piece of it because she's so excited. Fuck your parade, Lucas." Dylan couldn't be happier, so of course his parents had to come over.

Eric linked me, “What the fuck?” I replied, “They came back.” Eric snorted, “I know, but I didn’t know they’d come to see Dylan. They are just walking around... Haley will hate them.” I admitted, “The reunion did not go well.” Eric sighed, “Wonderful.”

Davis complimented me, “Beautiful party for the Luna, Lucas. Alpha Eric, it is good to see you.” Dylan smirked, “We changed his name. He’s now God Alpha Prick, GAP for short because his title is getting so long. Did you hear all the way in Europe he’s a prince now? He’s such a prick.” Eric’s lips twitched.

Betty’s jaw dropped. Davis turned red, “Dylan Frost! Alpha Eric, I’m so sorry about him.” Dylan snarked, “You don’t get to apologize for me, and I’m not sorry. Not one little bit of me is sorry, GAP.” Eric replied, “I am aware you are not sorry, nor do I need you to be.” Dylan stuck his tongue out at his dad.

Davis yelled, “WILL YOU GROW UP!” Haley popped over to us, “Who the FUCK are you? And why is your voice raised at my friend Dylan? You dare raise your voice to your Beta? At Emmaline’s birthday party no less? EXPLAIN yourself or I WILL pull fairy hijinks on your ass.”

Davis faltered, “Who are you to speak to me like that?” Dylan laughed, “You done did now.” Eric snarled at Davis, who paled. Haley answered, “I’m Princess Luna Haley Cambridge Connors. Emmaline is my cousin, and you will NOT ruin her birthday. Who the FUCK are you?”

Davis bowed his head, “Apologies, Princess. I am Davis Frost.” Haley stared at him then looked at Dylan asking, “Is he serious? He wants me to believe he’s related to you. Please... he’s dreadfully boring, and I’ve only known him less than thirty seconds. There’s no way you two are related.”

Dylan howled with laughter before I tapped his shoulder. He told Haley, “I think that often, but he is my father.” Haley pursed her lips, “Yes, well... Emmaline did mention you were joining our little club about having terrible parents. I see why now.”

She turned to the Frost's "Ok, Dylan's supposed parents.... We can confirm that, can't we Eric? You all do DNA testing here, yes? That was on a show Miley was watching, it was a big deal." Eric laughed, "Yes."

Haley glanced at the Frosts before adding, "We should steal his hairbrush then. I do not believe Dylan is related to these people. Anyway Mr. and Mrs. Frost, I don't abide disrespect to my family or friends. Dylan is my friend. If you think you can come home and ruin my cousin's first real birthday party in four years, you have another think fucking coming. Google says birthday parties are very important. I myself didn't like them until my past birthday, which Eric made amazing."

She paused then added, "To be fair, my Hackura family would've thrown me parties, but I was traumatized and just wanted family there. I was not in place to have celebrations like this when I was there, but Emmaline is. She deserves this. So, why don't you two run away? I hear you are good at that."

Betty and Davis didn't move, they just stared at her. Haley raised an eyebrow. Dylan linked me, "She stole that move from GAP and perfected it. I love it." He would.

Haley asked, "Did I stutter? Run along before I call upon the wind and trees to hold you up as our pinatas for the party. Something about Travis over there tells me he'd take the first fucking swing." Travis smiled somewhat menacingly. Jacqueline was trying not to laugh. Betty and Davis tucked their tails and left.

Eric kissed her, "That's so you, Angel. I love you." Haley smiled, "That's good. Because I love you too, and we've got these little kids running around. I have plans to have lots of little mini versions of us running around. You have so many rooms in our house. It really does seem like a challenge to fill them." Haley winked at him and popped away.

I laughed, "Eric, just how many pups are you having? You have a lot of rooms in your home." Dylan held his hands in a prayer position, "Tell me it's bucket loads." Eric laughed, "We don't have a set number, but Haley wants a big family. She sneezes out pups, so labor doesn't put her off of having more."

Dylan held up a hand, "I'm sorry. Did you just say sneezes out pups?" Eric nodded. Dylan squealed, "WHAT CHAPTER IS THAT IN? Don't mind me as I SKIP TO IT IMMEDIATELY! LUCAS! Start popping out pups with your fairy! My life needs fairy/wolf pups. Wolvies if you will. Get it? Wolf and Fairies combined. Wolvies."

I smirked, "You may get one next year." Dylan squealed. I looked around and noticed Emmaline had stepped away. Dylan jumped around as he spoke, "Lucas hasn't read the book as much as me, GAP. I know that if a fairy female's first pregnancy is multiples, they will ALWAYS have multiples."

He fell to his knees pleading, "OH, MOON GODDESS LET EMMALINE HAVE TRIPLETS! For me, please. Then there will always be at least twins after." I laughed, "We will just see, Dylan." He was about to answer when we heard gasping.

Then Haley yelled, "WHAT THE FUCK?!" That wasn't good. Dylan sucked in a breath, "Dear sweet baby Jesus. What in the sassafras is happening?!" My breath nearly left my body when I spotted the reason for the confusion. Emmaline's mom was here. I linked Brad, "Get upstairs to my room and guard Emmaline, NOW!" Brad took off.

Hexxi spoke calmly, "No one panic, I obviously have a plan. I thought it would be cathartic for Emmaline to say what she wants to mommy dearest here. Then I will return her with only the memories of what Emmaline said. She will not remember who was here or where here is, not that she knows that anyway. Isn't it the best present?"

Dylan voiced all our thoughts, "NO! It's the worst present ever. She's married to the guy we are trying to keep Emmaline away from. This is the literal worst idea of all time. It blows all my Beta plans out of the water. GAP! Do GAP things about this. Tear June limb from limb and come up with a story about how she was NEVER here. NEVER! Do your worst." Eric looked like he was going to do just that.

Idel yelled, "Get her out of here, Hexxi! You are the worst gift giver!" Dylan agreed, "You kind of are, but on the bright

side you win the worst award. If you're going to be bad at something, go for being the worst. GAP! You are not doing GAP things yet. Activate those powers." Eric glanced at Haley whose eyes were blazing.

Hexxi huffed, "Guys! I thought really hard about this one!" Idel hissed, "Take her home!" Katie was trying to squirm out of Logan's arms. She looked ready to kill her mom. Dustin and Ryan were rigid with anger. Hexxi crossed her arms defiantly.

Idel reiterated, "Hexxi, this is NOT an appropriate present. What happened to the necklace you were talking about? THAT was an appropriate present." Hexxi pouted, "Don't be jealous that my present is better than yours, sister."

Dylan had popcorn again. Idel popped to her sister and threw a punch. To my shock, they began to fight. Dylan screamed, "YESSS!!! GAP, I take back my words. Continue to plot GAP things, don't think I didn't notice your plotting over there. No acting on your plots just yet. Hold on the GAP activities, reach down deep. Link Beta Caleb if you must, to continue plotting."

Dylan started chanting, "GO IDEL! COME ON PEOPLE! IDEL! IDEL! IDEL! She's one of us now. She's a Beta female we MUST choose her righteous side in this fight." Lucinda popped over to Dylan. She told him, "I do so like you, Beta Dylan."

Dylan smiled, "Aww, shucks. It's just Dylan to you, your majesty." Lucinda smiled and turned back to the fight. Beta James was growling but remaining still. Haley's voice cut through the chaos that had erupted, "Nice punch, Idel. Put your weight behind it though. Rotate through your feet."

Idel corrected her stance. Eric and Logan laughed. Dylan squealed, "Fight advice, during a fight! I LOVE HER, LUCAS! GAP can't we rent her for a week or something? Surely she needs a week away from you on occasion." Eric growled at him.

I ordered, "Dylan, get June out of here before Emmaline comes back. Take her to the dungeon." Dylan slammed his popcorn down on a table. He glared at everyone stating, "If

ANYTHING else happens in my fairy show... I'll get you somehow, someday. Especially you, Lucas. Sending me on a warrior's errand away from my show. The nerve. The gumption... THE GALL."

He grabbed June, "Move it or lose it, lady. You're interrupting my show, and I take serious offense to that." June asked, "Will someone tell me what's going on? Katie? Dustin? Ryan? Is this really Evie's party? Did you really find her?"

She spotted Emmaline's dad and screamed, "Marc! Please! I want to see our little girl!" Dylan dragged her away. Marcious looked quite pale. Eric linked, "Damn. Now, I have to feel bad for a fairy. These parties make me question everything in my life. Why am I here? Not to feel bad for a fairy, yet here I am." I knew what he meant.

Idel hissed, "How could you do that to dad, Hexxi?" She attacked her again, and Haley continued to instruct her on how to improve her technique, which King Aiden found quite amusing. When Emmaline popped back in, Haley snapped the living room to its pre-fight state.

I quickly got her outside. I wasn't letting this ruin her party. Haley was right. This was her first party in four years. I'd tell her as soon as everyone cleared out. I linked Dylan, "The queen passed an edict that she has to be invited to every party Haley and Emmaline have."

Dylan responded, "Me too! I have to be invited too! THINK of how much that would annoy GAP." Dylan came outside skipping. He wanted Emmaline to throw a lot more parties so he could see the fairy queen more often. Aiden wasn't even remotely perturbed. A wolf would've been at my Beta's throat, but Aiden simply smiled and agreed.

Emmaline agreed to have her party first. Her happiness was infectious and bouncing between our bonds. Dylan linked me, "Hexxi isn't the worst at setting up alibis. June Forrester is checked into a spa in California. She's even been seen there. It's some creepy life like doll or something. David doesn't know she's here."

I sighed in relief, “Thank you for finding that.” Dylan replied, “So ends Serious Dylan. Welcome the return of thoroughly enjoying his fairy show Dylan. He was missed in those brief moments, but he’s back baby!” I rolled my eyes.

When we went back inside the Black Arrow was waiting with a birthday present. Dylan linked me, “Ok, how do I join their girl gang so I can get a birthday present from the black arrow? Is that... LUCAS IT’S AN ARROW NECKLACE... IT’S AN ARROW NECKLACE!!!! TELL ME YOUR MATE JUST GOT BA’S CALLING CARD! TELL ME... TELL ME... TELLLLL MEEEE!”

Dylan was prancing behind me jumping back and forth. BA confirmed it was her calling card. Dylan shouted, “I LOVE OUR LIVES, LUCAS! We know someone with a BA calling card. What am I saying? We know two! There’s no way Haley doesn’t have one. GOD our lives were so boring PPF.”

I sighed, “I regret asking this already. What is PPF?” Dylan said, “Obviously it’s Pre-Partial Fairies. I’m never going back. EVER! AWWW the black arrow is in love. SQUEAL! Maybe he can join our man group of mates. I bet he’s awesome. I wonder if it’s her string.” I shrugged, “I’m sure we will find out.”

Emmaline went to talk to Haley. I tensed. Surely, Emmaline wouldn’t ask her what was wrong. Katie quickly said, “We had Haley promise not to tell Emmaline until after the party. It wasn’t even hard. She is on a no one ruins the party kick. It’s a little funny how an actual fight doesn’t ruin the party in her mind. Fairies have weird qualifications for things.”

Dylan interjected, “Glorious qualifications. They have GLORIOUS qualifications, and no one should try to change them.” Logan actually smiled.

Emmaline opened her presents. Dylan linked me, “When you get back from your trip, you have to send Lacy and I somewhere. I feel left out now of the trip present group.” I replied, “Have a birthday then.” Dylan retorted, “My birthday is in the summer, and I want to be sent to the Atlantis resort in

the Bahamas.” I simply replied, “I know when your birthday is.”

Haley started to lead us outside. I linked Eric, “I feel like I should’ve paid more attention to your email.” Dylan pointed to something in front of me, “Umm, how did we miss this giant building the last few days? Did she do that after the parade? GOD, I need to be a fairy. They are over like I forgot to get someone a present, forgot an anniversary let me conjure something.”

I linked Eric, “Did she do this when we went inside?” Eric snorted, “It’s been here for a week under an enchantment so you couldn’t see it.” I explained that to Dylan. He asked, “What if we ran into it? Like just running in wolf form then BAM hit a building. That would’ve hurt while simultaneously being hilarious. I’m very sad that didn’t happen. She needs to tell me these things, so I have people run laps then sit and watch them all hit an invisible wall. I would’ve been howling.” Of course, he would’ve.

Emmaline loved my present. I linked my mom, “You did a great job with the picture’s, it looks amazing.” She replied, “Of course I did. I’m crafty!” Everyone slowly filtered out after that. Once we got down to our group of people Emmaline wanted to know what was going on.

Hexxi pouted about us not liking her gift. I linked Dylan, “Didn’t like her present? As if bringing her mother here is a present.” Dylan shrugged, “She seems to think it is.” I could feel her panic in my chest when I explained the situation. For a brief moment, her emotions spiraled so hard I couldn’t decipher them. Hexxi explained her logic. There were too many ways this plan could go wrong.

Eric linked me, “Haley is going to have Aiden make sure June truly can’t remember anything about where Emmaline is.” I asked, “Why doesn’t Haley do it?” Eric seemed confused about that as well, “Haley said Aiden has the strongest ability for the charm. Whatever that means. She knows June couldn’t break her own charm, but she wants to be certain since this is so important.” I agreed, “Alright.”

Emmaline stalked off and popped to the dungeon. I yelled, “FUCK!” and ran after her. I didn’t want her to face this alone. I could hear everyone running behind me, except the fairies who simply popped. I quickly made it down to Emmaline’s side.

Emmaline confronted her mother. To no one’s surprise her reasons for not protecting her daughter were shitty. Dylan linked me, “Seriously, it was too hard? That’s what we are going with? Let’s have my parents meet her, they will be besties.” I responded, “I can’t believe she just said that.” I bit back several growls.

Dylan linked, “Can’t we hurt her just a little? Let’s convince David she finally left his him and keep her for ourselves.” I growled, “Don’t tempt me. Besides, Marcious might not let us seeing as she’s his mate.”

Dylan sighed, “True, but the creepy ninja assassin is on our side. We can do it.” I looked over at Logan. He was mad. Dylan continued, “He’s terrifying when he’s angry. I would piss my pants if he turned that stare my way. Never tell GAP I said that. That was supposed to be in my internal running monologue.” I promised, “Your secret is safe with me, Dylan.”

Eric linked me, “Our mates won the medals for worst mother ever.” I gritted out, “Can you think of a way we can keep her here?” Eric said, “Of course I can. Do you want to keep her?” I sighed, “Yes, but this is about what Emmaline wants.”

June walked us through her thought process of giving up Emmaline. Dylan linked, “This is the worst explanation of all time. This coming from the man whose parents disappeared off the face of the earth for the white wolf legend. It’s like parents are competing for the world’s worst parent. Just when you think someone is the sure-fire winner someone else ZOOMS into the lead.”

We were all stunned. Emmaline’s anger snapped so hard within me when her mother mentioned she was young to be engaged. My teeth elongated and Dominic took over.

Emmaline yelled at her, but June stood her ground until she glanced at me. She quickly paled and backed away.

Dylan nudged me, “Hey there, Dominic. No need to compete with our resident creepy ninja assassin for the scariest face. Let’s let Lucas come back so we don’t shift all wrapped around Emmaline.” Dominic snarled, “Fine.”

Dylan cooed, “Who’s a good boy? Dominic is a good boy! I’ll get you a nice treat.” Dominic growled at him, and I took back over. I glared, “Dylan... really?” Dylan shrugged, “I know, I didn’t have a treat. It was mean. Next time, I’ll have a treat for my good buddy and pal, Dominic.”

I huffed and listened to Emmaline. Dylan linked, “Witches can make us see dead bodies that aren’t really someone’s dead body? I will now have NIGHTMARES that any enemy with a gunshot wound to the face is going to pop back up. I WILL go through our files for those suspects. Consider me paranoid for the rest of time.”

I sighed trying to focus on remaining calm for Emmaline to tap into me if she needed to. We all gaped at Marcious when he rejected June. Dylan whispered, “I have never seen a rejection before.” I admitted, “Me either.” Marcious turned to leave.

Dylan raised his hand jumping up and down, “Wait! She didn’t accept. We can’t just let the man hang in the abyss like that! She has to accept. He’s not wrong, she did let his daughter flounder. She’s a shit mom and mate.”

I assured him, “We will get her to accept, I won’t let Emmaline’s dad suffer.” Dylan screamed in our link when Emmaline told her dad he had a second chance, “SHE CAN TELL WHEN MATES ARE COMING NOW? GOD BLESS THE FAIRIES! I need to skip to the soul searcher chapter in my book.”

June in turn warned Emmaline about David. I linked Dylan, “This pains me, but June is right. David has known Emmaline is a fairy for four years now. He’s had a lot of time to plan.” Dylan agreed “True, but we will handle what he’s

got. We have a King, a Prince, and a Princess on our side. Plus, the ninja assassins. We got this.”

I reminded him, “He was feared for a reason. We can obviously beat him, but he’s had years of prep we haven’t had.” Dylan sighed, “Annoyingly that’s right. Despite not being a fairy, David is known for playing games.” He was right. Emmaline popped us upstairs, and she comforted her father.

I was relieved Marcious didn’t need June to accept his rejection. I linked Dylan, “We don’t need June to accept. Marcious and his light agreed on the rejection; the bond is gone.” Dylan slowly replied, “Well... that’s good... I guess.” I pointed out, “We don’t have to worry about it at least.”

Dylan told me, “I’m ignoring all feelings about that. Just so you know, Haley eviscerated June with her words. You missed an excellent Haley rant. I actually applauded. I want her to give my parents a speech. She can be my filter. I’ll say what I want then she says the unfiltered better version.”

I teased, “Dylan, when are you ever unfiltered?” Dylan laughed, “You’re right. When you’re right, you’re right. Aiden is doing his shoomey whooey forget you know where you are spiel charm deal.” I questioned, “Shoomey whooey?” Dylan retorted, “What would you call it?” I replied, “Not that.”

After Emmaline’s dad left, we talked about werewolves rejecting their mates. I could tell her soul searcher side hated the thought of that. It hurt me to think about it now that I had Emmaline. Eric had talked about rejecting his mate because there was a time when he thought he could.

I knew he loved being the Ribbon because now he knows no matter how young he was when he saw Haley, that was it for him. He wasn’t going to reject her. The mate bond was powerful, more powerful than unmated wolves believed it to be. He only thought about it because he’d made so many enemies he didn’t know if it was fair to put his mate in their line of fire. Rejection is rare but occurs with abuse among werewolves.

Hexxi popped in and told Emmaline everything was taken care of. She was the worst giver I'd ever come across. Emmaline had done better with seeing her mother than I thought she would though. I linked Dylan, "Hexxi might not be invited to future birthday parties. I don't want to know what else she comes up with."

Dylan snorted, "No joke. Haley is the Queen of presents apparently. I thought fairy's liked giving presents." I replied, "They do, Hexxi just isn't good at it." Emmaline shrugged of her mom being here. She even added who she felt bad for, me and her sibling's mates. She confounded me.

Dylan commented, "Very astute observation. Seeing your mate in pain like all you mates were... I don't envy any of you. Your control is better than mine. I'd have ripped her head off for saying those things to Lacy. It was too hard. Then don't be a parent. Jeez, adoption is a choice. Giving up custody is another choice." He wasn't wrong.

Dylan linked me about Logan's wedding day security measure, "The Creepy ninja needs to calm down as T. Swift would say." I sighed, "It does seem to be bordering on overkill." Dylan linked, "BORDERING? Two of his brother's is overkill. They just listed fifteen guards for Katie alone. At least I think it's fifteen. Who am I kidding? It's probably more. Our dude needs a Zen Garden."

Dylan grinned before telling me, "I'll buy him one." I cautioned, "Dylan, I don't think you want to start messing with a Hackura Prince. Eric is bad enough." Dylan shrugged "GAP loves it. Not to mention technically speaking GAP is a Hackura prince now. Because he is the prick of all races. Our creepy ninja probably feels left out."

I sighed, "Dylan..." Dylan answered, "Dylan is not listening right now because he's on his phone purchasing the perfect Zen Garden for a creepy ninja assassin." I sighed knowing there was no stopping him at this point.

The Bishop brothers came back upstairs. They were talking about their journey to find Emmaline. Lacy linked me, "Did you ever think I was dead? Did you look for me like they did?"

At morgues?” I replied, “No, we knew you weren’t dead. We were following your trail, thank god.” Lacy nodded and I could tell she was a little relieved.

Emmaline pushed everything aside, and said it was time for her final birthday tradition. Dylan linked me, “Yes! There’s more to the tradition! WHO’S PUMPED?” I chuckled, “Evidently, you are.” Dylan elbowed me, “Darn tootin!”

Dylan linked, “Aren’t you going to ask what movie we are watching?” I shook my head no, “We will find out.” Dylan snorted, “Lame!” Naturally, he asked. I’d actually love to watch videos of Emmaline as a child. I winced when Haley hadn’t seen the movie.

Dylan asked, “Can we bring her back and bitch slap the fuck out of Alania? I’m pretty sure she’s still living somewhere, but we know people who could hold a séance if needed. I just don’t think it is. What kid her age didn’t see a Princess movie?” I snorted, “I think Eric will take care of it either way.” Dylan said, “Of course he will. I’m just saying, I’d slap her for *Disney* in revenge. Clearly, *Disney* needs me.”

Emmaline’s siblings told her they watched this movie with milkshakes in her honor every year. Lacy linked me, “That’s kind of beautiful... sad... but beautiful. They have a very strong sibling bond.” I agreed, “Yes, they do.”

We all smiled watching Emmaline practically perform the movie. Katie actually got up and joined her. Dustin whispered, “She made us all do this. We can all do the dances. She would rewind the tape until she perfected each dance.” I laughed.

Haley was deeply entertained by the bat in the movie. She leaned over to Dylan, “Dylan, they captured you on camera. At least you have a more appreciative boss than Bartok does.” Dylan howled, “You’re right! I knew I liked that bat, it’s because he’s a kindred spirit. Poor little Beta bat.”

I saw Haley’s eyes light up when Emmaline told us she’d always wanted that crown. I linked Eric, “I feel like her fairy godmother is on the case.” Eric replied, “Emmaline will absolutely get that crown.” I laughed, “Her birthday is already taken care of for next year then.” Eric laughed, “If you think

my wife will wait until next year to get her that crown, you don't know her very well." I smiled. You just had to love Haley.

Emmaline popped Aubree and Dustin to Hawaii. Dylan squealed, "Who would travel by plane? Hop on the fairy express. That's ten times better. Honestly, regular traveling sucks so much now. I never knew how much it sucked until I caught a ride on a fairy."

Lacy agreed, "He's not wrong, traveling like normal people now stinks." When Emmaline popped back, I took her upstairs. I woke to Dylan ranting. What the hell? We had warriors down. We were out the front door seconds later. I went to the hospital wing to check on my men.

Alex was already there assessing the situation. I asked, "What happened?" Alex replied, "It sounds like witches appeared out of nowhere. We had pups out there, and they had to shield them." I sighed realizing why they were there, "The pups were learning about borders?" The warrior we were standing in front of nodded.

I hissed, "Fuck!" The warrior laughed and held his side, "That's what we said, Alpha. We contained it quickly by calling in other warriors. Travis Frost took the prisoners to the dungeons. He's an amazing fighter." I agreed, "He is." The warrior said, "May can't come fast enough, he will be a strong lead warrior." Our lead warrior snorted, "Hey! But agreed. I'm old enough to enjoy retirement. I've got a grandpup." We all laughed.

Dylan smiled proudly. I agreed, "It does seem to be where that's heading, he will do a great job." I confirmed with Hector that everyone was going to be ok. One witch had died, but the rest were with Travis. All our men would be fine, and the pups nor the teacher were injured.

I stalked into the dungeons. Travis was standing guard. Dylan looked him over and briefly showed his relief. He teased, "So little brother, you just couldn't wait to let everyone know you'll be gunning for lead warrior come May. I told you not to let them sniff that out."

Travis snorted, “You’ve been telling everyone since I was fifteen that I’d be the lead warrior one day.” Dylan tisked, “Do as I say not as I do, little brother. I’ve been telling you that since you could walk.” Travis laughed.

We questioned the witches. They were left over from Hammond’s group. They had a group in Knoxville that was gathering forces to attack. Dylan and I coordinated with our allies. We were going to pay these witches a visit. We decided it would be Thursday night. Eric and Caleb were coming with Dylan and me.

Jackson, Darrin, Harold, and Beta McAlister were going the night before to scope out the area. Sharon was going to pop Nick in. I’d sent warriors ahead along with some of Eric’s to scope out the situation to be ready to report to Jackson when he arrived.

Everyone wanted to know what we were doing if Grayson was there. I simply shrugged, “We will have to see.” Dylan grumbled, “It’s not a genie in a box you are thinking about what wish you want it to grant. It’s an obnoxious little annoying wiccan who is making our lives more difficult. Have you NEVER seen a movie ever? We let him get away last time, and now he’s the proverbial thorn in our side. If we keep letting him go, he will keep doing bad things. It will become so obnoxious then he will hurt or kill someone we love all because we didn’t JUST KILL HIM!”

I shrugged. Dylan slammed his hands down, “Fine, don’t listen to me. Lacy wants some flower I need to go pick for her. She’s been VERY testy about me going on an overnight trip.” I frowned, “Emmaline is too. I had to explain the witches are in an area where vampires live. I’m not trying to cause problems. We have a good thing going with King Arthur in charge of the vampires in our area.”

Dylan left shortly afterwards, and Haley and Eric popped in. Eric’s smugness was wafting around the room, but I brushed it off. Dylan hadn’t made it back for Haley and Emmaline’s practice.

I was about to link him when Eric said, “Block out your link.” I asked, “What’s going on?” Eric said, “My warriors reported the vampires don’t seem to be protecting the witches. If anything, they seem more annoyed that they are in the area. King Arthur reiterated that the vampires won’t fight if it comes to that.” I sighed in relief, “That’s great. I thought with all the raiding we did when Haley was taken; they could see it as their chance to get even.”

Eric shrugged, “We killed the ones who supported King Damon. They all know we had every right to go to war for my mate, wife, and Luna. Vampires are smart, most of them anyway, they don’t want to bother us. Generally speaking, we don’t want to bother them. They aren’t going to fight with us, but they won’t fight against us. It’s a win.”

Dylan didn’t show up for the practice. I frowned, “I’m beginning to get worried about Dylan. He would never miss his show. Lacy, where was the flower you wanted Dylan to get you?” Lacy assured me, “He’s fine.” I shrugged. If Lacy wasn’t worried, then it was fine.

After the lesson Emmaline asked where Dylan was. Lacy finally laughed and everything clicked. Eric was smug when Haley popped them in, he had me block my link, then Lacy was assuring me he was fine.

I linked Eric, “You chose the time before we all take a long car ride together to get Dylan back?” Eric shrugged, “You said I couldn’t do anything at your wedding, as did my wife. I already had this planned when the trip popped up. No fairy pun intended.”

I rolled my eyes, “Great, now you’re taking his jokes. I already regret this overnight trip.” Eric admitted, “I regretted it when I had to tell Cassie she couldn’t pop to me. She cried; it was horrible.” Since she was a serious daddy’s girl, I’d bet it was.

Haley frowned and mentioned she hadn’t known there was a prank going on. I linked Eric, “You didn’t tell Haley?” Eric rubbed his face, “Yeah... that’s going to bite me in the ass.” I stared at him, “Especially since you involved my sister. That

was a terrible move on your part.” Eric winced, “That’s a valid point.”

I unlocked my link with Dylan. I instantly heard him, “Lucccaasssss... OHHHH LUUUUCCASSS!” I answered, “Dylan?” Dylan said, “Gosh, now I’m imagining you’re answering me. I’ve lost it.” I said, “I am answering you.”

Dylan asked, “Is this werewolf’s version of the sixth sense? I’m dead and now I am hearing links.” I sighed, “You aren’t dead, we are coming to get you.” Dylan chuckled, “No rush, I’m just hanging around. Like a sloth. It’s moderately obnoxious since I’m a wolf.”

When we caught up to Dylan he was literally hanging in a tree. He linked me, “Good, that wasn’t the werewolf version of the sixth sense. WHERE HAVE YOU BEEN? GET ME DOWN FROM HERE! Somehow the whole pack couldn’t link me. Travis will be getting coal for Christmas, blocking out his big brother. How rude.”

I reminded him, “I did tell you not to mess with Eric so much.” Dylan rolled his eyes, “He’s only encouraged me to double my efforts. After I can feel my legs again, and that buzzing sound in my ears stops.” I laughed.

Haley got Dylan down. I was a little scared for Eric based on her tone. I told him, “She does seem put out you didn’t include her. You may be the next victim of Haley’s epic pranks.” Eric mused, “Maybe. It’s bound to be my turn eventually.”

I glanced at my Beta then linked him, “He wrote on you in sharpie?” Dylan smiled, “It just shows that he cares.” I rolled my eyes linking Eric, “You’ve practically confirmed your undying love for Dylan in his mind.”

Eric rolled his eyes. Haley popped Beta Caleb in. We all started towards the car, and the girls popped away. Caleb growled, “FUCK you two! What did you do to piss the fairy’s off? Dylan is heavy. They could’ve popped him to the car.”

Dylan gasped, “Now, now Beta Caleb. I’m carrying some winter weight. That’s just not nice to comment on.” I snorted.

Eric explained, "I pranked Dylan without Haley's help." Beta Caleb groaned.

Dylan laughed, "Good to know your Alpha does these things to you too. Let's get to the car, I want to see Lacy. Run like the wind, Beta Caleb." Caleb retorted, "You'll get there when you get there. I've got a new pup at home. My wife is BEYOND annoyed I'm not going to be home tonight."

I laughed asking, "Boy or girl?" Caleb smiled, "A girl." Dylan snorted, "Stay away from my wacked out parents. They will tell you all about how she could be a white wolf." Beta Caleb laughed.

Eric linked me, "He's joking, right? They wouldn't dare waltz into my territory and say that to my Beta." I winced, "He is not joking." Eric groaned, "Oh for god's sake."

Beta Caleb's head shot towards Eric. He cautiously asked, "You're serious, Dylan?" Dylan sighed, "I know it's hard to grasp, but sadly I was serious. They are whacked out. I've told Lucas to just put them out to pasture to graze, but you know how Alpha's are with the whole taking their Beta's advice thing. I think my powers of being mute kicked in again."

Beta Caleb laughed, "I'll let you know if she turns into the white wolf, Beta Dylan." Dylan laughed, "I'll be waiting with bated breath. Consider me on pins and needles... for the next sixteen years. It will fly by. Has she met GAP's pups yet?" Beta Caleb laughed, "She did. Alexander didn't pop to her. He didn't when Luce was pregnant either, so it wasn't surprising."

Dylan happily replied, "Stay away from Alpha Tucker's little boy just in case you're gun shy about it. Poor Alpha Tucker shit his pants when Brooke popped to Christopher Kyle. They are so adorable. She melts people's skin off for him, and he growls at his brother for talking loudly. It's adorable."

We walked up to the car, and all said bye to the girls. We got in the car and Dylan closed his eyes and then opened them a second later He asked, "Are we there yet?" I groaned, "Dylan, don't start." Dylan muttered, "A fairy would've been

there already.” Beta Caleb laughed, “If we weren’t going to a place with vampires; we could’ve had a fairy ride.”

Dylan snorted, “You haven’t been reading my precious. Haley and Emmaline could’ve concealed her scents to pop us in and out. Sharon is popping Alpha Kyle in. Does anyone think your fairies will not find that fair? Because... Dylan does, but no one listens to Dylan.”

Beta Caleb said, “Two things. One, your precious? Say it creepier, Beta Dylan. Two, Eric is understandably touchy about Haley being around vampires.” Dylan gasped, “Have you not seen *Lord of the Rings*?” Beta Caleb replied, “I’ve seen it.”

Dylan nodded, “My precious is the history of the fairy’s book that I am now in possession of. Our resident creepy ninja is getting me a secret lair for it.” I asked, “Is he really?” Dylan nodded, “King fire hands could take it. I have made copies just in case and hidden them all over the house.” I shook my head, “Of course you have.”

The rest of the car ride passed just like that. We arrived and Jackson told us the vampire in charge of this area, King Arthur’s Lord, had set up a meeting. Eric said, “I guess we have a meeting to get to.” Dylan sarcastically asked, “Who doesn’t want to go to a meeting after a long car ride? I for one, find it charming. Not smelly or rude... not one bit.”

I called Emmaline once we arrived at the meeting location before we went inside. Everyone had laughed when we shifted seeing Dylan’s chest, which he was touting as some kind of badge of honor. Dylan came over then cursed, “Damn it Lacy!” I frowned, “What?” Dylan frowned, “She was doing homework, and realized she forgot her book at school. She SWORE it was there, so now she’s going to school to get it.”

I pointed, “The school will be locked.” Dylan said, “I told her that. She said where there’s a will there’s a way.” My phone buzzed twenty minutes into the meeting. I let it go to voicemail. It rang three more times which gave me pause. I stood, “Excuse me, I need to get this.” The Lord of the area nodded.

Jackson burst in, "We have been surrounded!" The Lord stood hissing, "By whom?" Jackson answered, "A lot of witches and warlocks." Eric grimly stated, "I can't link anyone back home." Jackson said, "Apparently witches can interfere with the distance. It's what they told one of our warriors. Molly called before you got here, Haley is in the Ribbon." Eric asked, "Is it sad that I'm not even slightly upset?"

Dylan snorted, "Since you about channeled your terrifying murderous GAP self in close proximity with me thinking of the last time you couldn't link people at home? I vote no, I'm too pretty and young to die."

I checked my phone. It was a number I didn't recognize. I listened to my messages; my blood ran cold. I yelled, "FUCK! This is David! Dylan, get Lacy on the goddamn phone!" Dylan frowned and dialed, "She's not answering. I'll call Travis."

Travis answered breathing hard calling out orders, "FIND HER NOW!" Dylan immediately tensed, "Find who, little brother? You sound so tense." Travis sounded contrite, "I'm so sorry, Dylan. We WILL find her. NO ONE WILL LEAVE UNTIL WE DO!" Dylan yelled, "WHAT THE HELL HAPPENED?"

Jackson urged, "Hurry up and get details. We need to get outside and kill some witches." Travis explained, "Emmaline linked me and a bunch of warriors to come get to Lacy. She said there was a trap at the school. I ran as fast as I could Dylan... I swear... Dad... dad even came. We heard her scream, but we can't find her. I'm sorry."

Dylan howled in anger. Travis continued, "Debbie just linked Dale that Grayson is dead in the house in yours and Lacy's room. They can't find Emmaline." I found my voice. "David got Lacy and Aubree. He gave Emmaline a timeline. She called Haley and left a message with Molly. Emmaline told us to hurry, and that she'd stall the game."

Dylan threw a table, "WHAT FUCKING GAME? THAT'S MY MATE AND PUP! WHERE ARE RYAN AND DUSTIN?" I gulped, "In a game of their own. Emmaline said they will get out soon and help us. She said the unknown caller

is in play, and he's coming to help. She gave me a word I'm supposed to say when Logan shows up to tell Katie to stay put because of the baby."

Dominic was howling in my mind. Dylan was losing it. I yelled, "DYLAN!" He turned and I instructed, "Channel that into killing witches. Don't you fucking die on me because you're worried. Do you hear me? We will get Lacy and..." My voice broke.

Eric clapped me on the back. I continued, "Emmaline back. Let's kill them all." I linked my men outside, "You show them no mercy, kill every last one of them." Dylan and I shifted and tore through witches and warlocks left and right.

Suddenly, in a burst of light, a man appeared with Ryan. They began to fight with us, we destroyed everyone quickly. I shifted back yelling, "Ryan! You're alright. Who the hell is this guy? Where is Dustin?"

Ryan cringed, "Dustin is in a hospital in Hawaii. We need Haley. He got hit by a car on the street in a hit and run." Ryan looked at his phone, "Correction, he's now in the Hackura realm in their hospital. We need Haley, he's hurt really bad." Eric told him, "Haley is in the Ribbon. The Hackura will keep him alive until she can get back."

I growled, "Who the FUCK is that guy?" The guy laughed, "You know me as the unknown caller, or the reason Emmaline could call and leave you a message. David had her phone bugged. She used the phone I got her to call you and the Princess. She didn't have her father's number memorized. Once Lacy Frost was taken, and she found out Aubree was as well... there was no stopping her. She told me to be helpful. So, here I am... being helpful."

Dylan grabbed him by the throat, "LACY FROST IS MINE! WHERE IS SHE? ANSWER MY ALPHA'S QUESTION BEFORE I RIP OUT YOUR THROAT!" Ryan asked, "Uhh what happened to the happy go lucky guy?" Dylan snarled, "Angry, Serious, out for blood Dylan is here. Happy go lucky Dylan will NOT return until his mate, unborn pup, and Luna are returned." Fair enough.

The guy put his hands up, "I'll tell you who I am." Ryan assure dime, "He's fine Lucas, I promise." Dylan growled, "Do I LOOK like Lucas?! I'm the one who has him." Eric snorted.

Dylan told him, "Don't you start over there. You don't get to find me funny when I'm serious. Go find someone for me to kill. Do GAP things and get them back!" Eric took out his phone. Dylan commented, "That's more like it."

Nick got to us, "What the hell just happened? We got jumped out of nowhere!" I sank to the ground, "David got Emmaline and my sister. I think Lacy was holoported to California, and Emmaline popped to her. We need Bexley, Eric."

Liam shifted back, "She's in Faerie, and she didn't take her phone. With whatever barrier the witches put up... I can't reach her." I turned asking, "Sharon?" Nick winced, "Our pack was attacked. Sharon is fighting rogues with my son, Drake, and Garrett." I growled, "HOW THE FUCK DID DAVID PUT THIS TOGETHER?!"

Dylan gathered himself, "Grayson. It HAS to be Grayson. The not so proverbial thorn in our sides. I told you if we didn't kill him, he'd do something annoying. I TOLD YOU THUSLY!"

The unknown caller spoke, "It was Grayson. He and his group talked loudly about Emmaline and you. David was already interested in her. Grayson's loose lips sunk all your ships. It was only confirmed for David when his wife was brought here. That man is obsessed with how everything appears. He has his wife watched at all times. He thought the fairy brought her because Emmaline wanted to see her."

I asked, "How do you know that?" The man said, "There is NOTHING about David Forrester I do not know. I have been waiting for over twenty-six years to get revenge." I threw my hands in the air, "What are you even talking about?" Dylan jumped in, "If you know everything, you know where he has them in California." The man smiled, "I do."

A portal opened and Logan charged through with Katie close behind him. Katie cried, “RYAN! You’re alright! Dustin woke up and said you and Evie were in danger. He saw the sycophant of David’s driving the car that hit him! We can’t find Aubree!”

I glanced at Logan then told her, “David has Aubree, Lacy and...” Katie wailed, “NO!” Logan pulled her to him, “I’ll get her back, I swear it to you. I will get them all back.” Katie straightened, “I’m coming. I will slit his throat myself.” I sighed stating, “Turtle doves.”

Katie whirled and her eyes filled with tears. “No... NO! She can’t turtle dove in this situation!” Ryan asked, “Huh?” Katie wiped her tears, “When my first boyfriend broke up with me for that other girl... I was so upset. Evie took the turtle doves he got me and threw them through his window. I told her that I could handle this situation on my own. I told her...”

Her voice broke, “Whenever we had a situation, we needed to handle alone we’d say turtle doves. Oh Evie... Dustin is going to die, Ryan. Haley’s in the Ribbon. I heard them say they can’t stop the bleeding. Oh god... Logan!” She started to sob uncontrollably. Logan’s relief was palpable as he rubbed her back. He didn’t have to keep her out of the fight. She’d respect Emmaline’s request to handle it alone.

Eric sighed and pulled out his phone, “Titus, take Alexander to your realm. Actually, take all three of them. They won’t let Dustin Bishop die.” We couldn’t hear the response, but Ryan and Katie hugged him.

Dylan growled, “I AM SO UPSET RIGHT NOW! My mate and pup have been taken, and now I am not ready again for this kodak moment of GAP getting hugged. AGAIN! WHY IS THE UNIVERSE SO CRUEL TO ME!”

I hugged him, “We will get them back. At least they are together. We’ve seen them fight; they can do this. I know they can. Our women are fierce.” Dylan cried, “I want her back, Lucas. I need her back.” I had tears in my eyes, “I know.” We held onto each other.

After what felt like hours but in reality was only minutes Logan took out his phone. He rubbed Katie's back, "Dustin is fine, my witch. He's coming here now." Katie wiped her tears. Logan turned to Eric, "Mom has the triplets in the nursery. Alexander is the healer. Dad said the other two gave him the juice to heal Dustin, but that he did it alone."

A portal opened and Dustin strode through it. His hard eyes met Ryan, "He took Aubree, didn't he?" Ryan nodded. Dustin said, "GOD DAMN IT! I FELT IT! I FELT SOMETHING WAS OFF! He's got Evie to come to him, right?" Ryan rubbed his temples, "He took Lacy Frost too." Both brothers exchanged a weary glance. Dustin ground out, "He will be sorely disappointed then."

Dylan asked, "What the actual SASSIFRASS does that mean?" Dustin spat out, "My dad enjoys games. Evie would've come to him for Aubree alone. He took Lacy to make her choose." Dylan pressed, "Choose what? Speak in English FOR THE LOVE OF GOD MAN!" I did not like where this was going.

Ryan explained, "To choose between who lives or dies." Dylan clutched his chest. Beta Caleb caught him. I yelled, "Emmaline won't do that." Dustin agreed, "She won't, and that will piss him off. We need to move. He'll have strong spells up and an army waiting for us. Mom was right, he's had years to plan this. That FUCKER PLANNED to use Aubree this whole time. I will TEAR HIM TO PIECES."

Dylan stood, "I say this with nothing but love Dustin Bishop, GET IN FUCKING LINE! I have cut to the front, even in front of GAP. Do you know how hard it is to cut in front of him? But I have done it. So, you will not pass me in this line to get to the man who took my mate, unborn pup, and Luna. You just won't. I'm faster than you, I can shift and then I have four legs. It's just science." He threw his head back and howled.

The warriors in our group howled with him. Dylan looked crazed, "Let's get in the fucking cars. We don't have a fairy ride, and I will TEST the limits of said vehicle. Consider me

Dominic Toretto.” Logan asked, “Did you forget I can create a portal? I just need to know where we are going.”

Dylan faltered for a brief moment, “I blame the enormous amount of stress I am in for forgetting our resident ninja assassin could create a portal. Now you’re stepping on my Dominic Toretto dreams, but I find I’m not upset; I’ll find another time channel his way. Go on, portal please.”

Eric cautioned, “We need a plan, Lucas.” I growled at him, “She’s in his clutches!” Eric reiterated, “We need a plan. We had plans for weeks about the targets to hit the vampires. Dustin is right. David will have an army waiting. He’s going to think we will charge right in.”

Logan took out his phone and grinned. He told us, “BA is in play.” Katie yelled, “Thank FUCKING GOD!” Dylan raised his hand, “Umm, did anyone else get that vibe?” Katie rolled her eyes. Beta Caleb said, “Let’s not talk about the vibe.” Eric asked, “What fucking vibe?” I growled, “WHO CARES?!”

Then it clicked, “Her necklace. BA gave Emmaline that necklace and she took it. HER RING! Logan, locate her ring.” Logan said, “Gunner just got the location. She’s in Fresno, California.” Dylan pumped his fist into the air, “LET’S FOLLOW QUEEN ELSA INTO THE UNKNOWN!!!!!!” LET’S GO, LUCAS!”

Eric got in his face, “Dylan, we need a plan.” Dylan growled, “FUCK your plan. I’m getting Lacy.” Eric grabbed his shoulders, “You are no good to Lacy dead, Dylan. I watched her grow up, she’s like the little sister I never had. Her mate can’t die because I let him run off to do so. Unfortunately, for me you are her mate. I’m not walking into another god damn trap. Your Luna and mate will have their own plan. They are smart and resourceful. I will NOT have you watch your mate suffer for weeks on end like I did. We will get her back; I’m just saying take a beat to plan.” Dylan blinked at him.

Eric turned, “Jackson, get dad to reach out to the pack closest to the location Logan is sending out. We need eyes, and

we are coming to them. We mean them no harm and wish to peacefully enter their territory.”

I closed my eyes gritting out, “Dylan, he’s right. If we charge off without letting the pack in the area know, they will attack us too.” Dylan growled, “THEN SOMEONE MAKE THE CALL.” I frowned, “You’re panicking.”

Dylan yelled in exasperation, “YES! WILL SOMEONE JOIN ME! She’s pregnant, Lucas. Emmaline... they have our Luna and my Lacy. I can’t... I can’t think. I cannot be calm. There is no calm. Fang is FURIOUS, I am furious. I am offended and enraged. I’ve channeled GAP. There is no arguing with angry GAP; therefore, people must stop arguing with me. Those are the rules of GAP. Abide by the rules people!”

Jackson suddenly said, “I heard your parents are tripped out about the white wolf.” Dylan looked confused, “Yes, that’s already established that. Keep up, Jackson.” Jackson threw his arm around his shoulder, “Walk with me, and tell me all about it. If you so much as miss one classic Dylanism, I’ll punch you in the nuts. Eric tells me you want more pups. So, I’d suggest you get in touch with your inner funny man.”

Dylan started to walk away with him. He told him, “Dylanism... I like it. I will write Webster immediately. That needs to be added to the dictionary. Maybe it should be a drink instead. I bet it would be a kick ass drink.” Their voices faded.

Eric tilted his head, “Walk with me, Lucas.” I nodded. We got away from the group and he shoved me, “Snap out of it. We are going to fight our way in. We will slaughter every witch and warlock in the state of California if we have to do it.” I nodded, “I know. I just can’t focus.”

Eric nodded, “I know you can’t. I know exactly what you feel. I swear to you, you won’t be without her for two weeks. We will get them both back, actually all three of them.” I took a deep breath, “I feel weak. How the HELL did you do this?” Eric answered, “For Haley. You can do this for Emmaline. We are surrounding you, and we will get through this.”

I nodded, "Let's get them back Eric." Eric nodded and we walked back over the group. Eric shivered, "Haley is back." I was relieved, "That's great!" He took out his phone then yelled, "FUCK!" Logan laughed, "She's already taken off, hasn't she?" Eric nodded, "She doesn't need pack permission to enter, there's a partial fairy in danger." I grumbled, "Where the fuck is our permission?"

Eric announced, "We just got it. Let's go, Logan." I looked at my watch, somehow between the meeting, the fighting, getting everyone together, and waiting on permission; it had already been eight hours. Keep fighting baby girl, I'm coming.

I knew she was still fighting because I could feel her in my chest. I was holding onto that feeling like it was a lifeline. She had to make it. We were supposed to have pups together, and a long, beautiful life. She just had to be ok. My sister was going to have my nephew. They had to be ok.

Logan opened a portal, and just like the first time I didn't care to look around the Hackura realm. We stepped through onto a pack land in Fresno. An Alpha and Beta stood to greet us. Dustin looked around our group for the first time. He stalled, "Ryan, what the FUCK is Ben Price doing with you?"

Dylan gasped, "NOOOOO!" I asked, "As in David Forrester's dead mate's brother? That Ben Price? The assumed dead Ben Price alongside his sister Ben Price?" Ben grinned, "One in the very same. David Forrester killed my sister, and I will have my revenge.

Maze

Emmaline took a deep breath when she heard David's voice for the first time since that fateful day when he kicked her out of her home. He warned, "Do not bother to text anyone. I am monitoring your phone, and there will be consequences. You have caused my children to abandon me."

I snorted, "You did that all on your own. A better man wouldn't have taken his anger out on a child. My mom was the one who wronged you, not me." David laughed, "I take my anger out on her often for what she did." I asked, "Excuse me? You hit her?" David answered, "Where no one can see the bruises. She tore my family apart."

I disagreed, "You did that. You can't blame her for the choices you made. You have so much hate in your heart that you told Katie, Ry, and Dusty I ran away. You could've divorced her, but instead you hit her. I can't believe there was ever a time I looked up to you." David grumbled, "I should've known they would have looked for you. I should've said you'd died."

He'd ignored everything I had said. I snorted, "Well, you know what they say about hindsight. How did you find me? How did you even get this number?" David sounded angry, "I'm a powerful warlock. Did you forget that these past few years?" I retorted, "No, but you didn't find me because you're a powerful warlock."

David hissed, "Be respectful." I honestly told him, "I have no respect for you, David. You held me accountable for my mother's sins. I'm done paying for them. I had no say in what happened back then, and deep down even you know it wasn't my fault." David didn't say anything for several moments.

He told me, "I have plans for you, Evie." I informed him, "You don't get to call me that, it's not even my name now."

What a coincidence though because I have plans for you as well.” David laughed, “Maybe you are my child. You and Katie always did have that point where you stopped taking crap.”

I got mad, “You know who my father is.” David spat, “The water fairy Prince, yes I know.” I knew something he didn’t. I told him, “Mom’s mate Prince Marcious Walsh. Congratulations on using your magic to separate a fated pair. You officially suck.”

David yelled, “HER MATE? I knew she could produce powerful children, but I had no idea.... interesting. She could have fought me then.” I bitterly replied, “I’m aware, she sucks too. You guys are perfect for each other.” David laughed, “You shouldn’t have invited her to your birthday party then. It just confirmed who you were.”

I sighed admitting, “I didn’t invite her, I didn’t want her here.” David sounded amused, “Odd.” I asked, “How did you find out who I was? My identity wasn’t easy to figure out.” David laughed, “Yes, for a thirteen-year-old you were quite resourceful and smart. Never staying in places too long, but especially not swimming. Very smart, Evelyn.”

I wanted to reach through the phone and strangle him. I spat back, “I don’t care if you think it’s smart. I want to know how you figured it out.” David complained, “You always were impatient. It won’t ruin my game to tell you though. Seems a particularly smitten young man was running with some witches. I was already planning to use you to get back at the Princess. Their group of warlocks and witches were looking for help against yours. I had an ear to the ground for any word coming about you. I offered my assistance. He had a picture of you, another way you were smart. There’s nothing, not even a school yearbook picture of you anywhere. He sent me the picture. I was shocked to be honest, but it aligned both of my plans.”

I groaned, “Are you serious? Grayson and I went to ONE dance! He didn’t even talk to me afterwards. He’s not smitten. He’s pissed that someone else showed interest in me.” David

laughed humorlessly, “Does that really matter? How are you the mate of Lucas Lyons?”

I cut him off, “It’s Alpha Lyons to you.” David gritted his teeth, “Whatever. Do you have any idea what you did to me? Katie is mated to a Hackura prince for god’s sake. I could’ve had the world, but you always ruin it for me.”

I stared at the phone before I responded, “Again, I ruined nothing. Katie, Dusty, and Ry are adults, and they made their choices. Logan and Katie met because of me. He will never let you near her again. Even if your game succeeds, Logan WILL kill you.”

David thought about what I’d said for a second before he said, “Katie wouldn’t let him kill me.” I snorted, “Katie wants to kill you herself. The only reason she hasn’t killed you is because I didn’t want to deal with you or mom yet. You said it yourself. Logan is a Hackura prince. He will kill you. Really, it’s going to be a race, but something tells me with this phone call, I just gained the lead.”

David laughed again, mocking me, “You? You think you can kill me?” I stated, “I know I can. Let’s get the point of this chat. You didn’t call to say hi and you know who I am now.” David admitted, “I can’t deny that I have missed your quick wit. You were always such a smart little thing. I called because I want you to come to me.”

I snorted, “Are you insane? I’m not doing that.” Not without a plan anyway. David laughed, “Oh but see... I think you will. Aubree dear, say hello to Evelyn. Though I suppose you call her Emmaline.” The blood drained from my face. Haley was right; he went after Aubree first.

Aubree said, “Emmaline, I’m fine. Don’t do it. Find Dustin!” He cut her off, “Now, won’t you come pop on over here and join us, Evelyn?” I paused so my voice wouldn’t shake, “A fake voice? Do you think I’d come without you proving that’s actually her? Ry was right. You have lost it.”

David yelled, “I HAVE NOT LOST IT!” My phone beeped, “There. There’s your proof.” I opened the picture he’d

sent. It was him with a knife to Aubree's throat. Her mouth was bleeding, but other than that she looked fine.

I stalled, "She's pregnant with your grandchild. Have you no shame?" David laughed, "Yes, that must have been the work of the fairy princess. It was one of the reasons I didn't want her to be with Dustin. I got a hold of her medical records. I've asked our Aubree how she got the Princess to like her. The Princess openly distained me before she even knew what happened to you. Though... I do suppose that had to do with Axel Price and his coven."

I was surprised, "You knew Axel Price?" David laughed, "Yes, I did. I suppose there's no harm in telling you this, you'll be dead soon. I helped Axel get witches and warlocks for Fabian in exchange for him leaving my wife and children alone. It was going on long before your cousin was born. Luckily for me, I was a middleman. The Princess has no idea I played a part in her hell because she never saw me. The spell that wouldn't allow her to move but feel was something I supplied their group. I added my twist to it of course, it amplified her pain. Fabian didn't want just a regular spell."

I yelled, "YOU ARE A MONSTER!" David laughed, "And now for part two Evelyn. Don't you want to save Lacy Frost?" I asked, "Huh?" I linked Lacy, "Where are you?" Lacy replied, "Almost to school. I forgot my book."

I linked, "Get out of there! It's a trap! RUN LACY!" I linked the pack, "Warriors get to Beta Lacy! She's at the school. This is a kidnapping attempt she needs help now!" I heard growls fill the air. I told David, "You won't get Lacy." David laughed, "Oh, but I will. My people have already seen her. The holoport is set. She will be here soon."

I linked Lacy, "Did you get out of there?" Lacy replied, "I'm fighting witches can't talk now." I warned her, "They are trying to back you to a holoport. Keep moving forward." Lacy said, "They do keep trying to tackle me. Noted."

I asked David, "What game do you want to play?" David chuckled evilly, "Now that's more like it. I have a maze set up." I shivered. David's mazes were not fun. Aubree yelled,

“NO! She’s your children’s sister! She’s the mate of a powerful Alpha and a Duchess of the water fairies! They will declare war on witches and warlocks. They will win too.”

David mockingly retorted, “That’s not a very positive outlook on those who practice the same craft you do.” Aubree replied, “I’ve seen the fairy’s fight. No, I’ve seen fairies of all elements fight together. They are united now, David. Even your children can use Fae magic. Katie can pop and cause an earthquake. The partial fairy’s ADORE the Princess. The Princess adores Emmaline.” David snorted, “Of course she does. Ahh and here’s Mrs. Frost.”

My heart dropped. I linked her, “LACY!” Nothing. I heard a whimper, “Don’t do it, Emmaline.” I closed my eyes in defeat. David stated, “I’m not a fair man, Evelyn.” I snorted, “I am aware.” He laughed, “Sine we had thirteen good years together, I’ll give you ten minutes to write a note to your Alpha. As I said, you cannot call him. You will find your brothers are in a game of their own.” Aubree screamed, “NO!”

David sighed, “She’s very dramatic. I’m monitoring your phone. No calls or Lacy will pay. If you make another call, it will be Aubree. The clock starts now.” I hung up the phone and screamed in frustration.

I ran to my nightstand. David didn’t know about the unknown phone. I called the number. A male voice answered, “Hello, I guess David called you.” I panicked, “He has Aubree and Lacy. I have to go to him. You need to be helpful. Get to Ryan and Dustin. Gather everyone. I’ll stall my game as long as possible. Thank you for the phone, David is monitoring mine. I’m calling Haley and Lucas next. Round up the troops and get ready for whatever revenge it is you want.”

The caller laughed, “You aren’t going to ask who I am?” I yelled, “I HAVE A DEADLINE!” The caller told me, “I’m Ben Price.” I shook my head, “I don’t have time to process that. Good to know your name, Ben. I have to go.”

I called Haley, but someone else answered, “Hello?” I wanted to scream, that wasn’t Haley’s voice. I quickly asked, “Where’s Haley?” The voice replied, “She’s in the Ribbon,

this is Molly.” I groaned, “Tell her factors came into play. Rally the troops.” I hung up before Molly could say anything else.

I called Lucas next, but he didn’t answer. I called two more times and left a message, “Lucas, this isn’t how I wanted to do this. David has my brothers in some twisted game. He took Aubree and then got Lacy through a holoport at school. I have to go to him. I have a deadline or Lacy will be hurt first. I love you, Lucas. I can do this. I’ll save Lacy and Aubree. I know you’ll come, and so does David. Be prepared and bring everyone. We can do this. I can’t wait to be your wife.”

I paused then added, “Oh, and tell Katie I said turtle doves. She needs to stay out of this fight with her little nugget. We have enough pregnant women in play as it is. David is unhinged, and he’s already put Ryan and Dustin into a game. We can’t risk him putting Katie in one. Logan would go on a killing spree. I love you so much.” I hung up the phone.

I said out loud to no one in particular, “Happy wedding week to me.” I grabbed my arrow necklace from BA and put it on quickly. I had five minutes left. I popped to Lacy and Dylan’s room to see if I could find any sort of clue.

I heard a strangled scream. I turned then yelled, “GRAYSON? ARE YOU KIDDING ME?” Grayson said, “I didn’t think I’d run into you, but this is our chance, Emmaline. We need to run!” I asked, “Are you dense? David has Lacy and Aubree. Two pregnant women in his clutches, both of whom I will be related to shortly. He gave me a timeline. You HANDED me onto him on a SILVER platter! He wants to kill me.”

Grayson shook his head, “No, that was a misunderstanding. He loves you. Let’s just go. You and me, let’s just run away. They killed my mom.” I hissed, “He RAN me out of town. He emancipated me without my knowledge. He HELPED torture my cousin while she was in Faerie. I am sorry your mom died, but she intended to attack the Princess of the Hackura. If that wasn’t crazy enough, she did it IN FRONT OF the Princess’s guard.”

Grayson was in denial, “No, we can just run. Just take my hand, and we will go. We can forget all of this world. I know you are a fairy, but you don’t need to be a part of this.” I punched him. I didn’t even think about it.

He looked stunned “What was that for?” I glared at him, “If you don’t know that then no one can help you. Lucas is my mate. I AM a part of this world even if he wasn’t. I’m a freaking fairy Duchess!”

A laugh came from behind me. I whirled around as a man stepped forward, “You really are not too bright, Grayson.” I sighed, “Goodie, another unknown warlock. What do you want? My guess is you don’t want to help me like the unknown caller. I have three minutes left before I have to go. Make it snappy.”

The witch smirked, “I’m just here to tie up loose ends.” Before I could react, the warlock slit Grayson’s throat. I screamed, “GRAYSON!” Grayson’s hands immediately went to his neck. He stared up at the warlock in shock. I quickly grabbed a shirt on the floor to help Grayson stop the bleeding, but it wasn’t working. The cut was too deep. He gurgled, choking on his blood, and then he was gone.

I sat back in shock. I stood and yelled, “WHY would you do that?” The warlock shrugged and put a book on Lacy’s desk. He taunted, “Should your she wolf friend make it back, she will probably want her book back. Don’t be too upset with her, I influenced her to think she could get into the school to get it.”

I clenched my fists, “You’ve made three mistakes that are going to cost you. I’d wait for you to ask what they were; but I just don’t have the time. One, you killed Grayson when he thought you were helping him. Two, you got Lacy to David. Three, you stayed around to brag.” I hit him in the head with hail. I was on top of him with hands glowing blue in a fraction of a second. I angrily spat out, “Enjoying drowning, you jerk!” I put my hands on his chest. He started to choke as I popped to David.

I saw the iron dart fired at me. I thought of turning it to water. I didn't have to pretend it hurt when the needle pierced my skin. It stung. I could feel I'd successfully turned the iron to water because there was no pain. I was too focused on the needle iron situation to hear anyone behind me.

Lacy and Aubree simultaneously screamed, "EMMALINE, WATCH OUT!" I turned just in time to see the bat right before it hit me in the head. I was unconscious before I hit the floor. I opened my eyes and saw a beautiful woman. She had long blonde hair and wings.

I touched my head, but it didn't even hurt. I asked, "Are you... the fairy goddess?" The woman smiled, "You are such a smart little thing. You didn't even grow up knowing I was your goddess. Yet, you know me."

I managed not to sound annoyed, "The wings and the glow do give it away. Am I dead? Did that hit to the head kill me?" The fairy goddess assured me, "You are very much alive. You have a long time with your wolf ahead of you. I am coming to you now because you need me." I pursed my lips, "I might have needed you more when I was living outside. A portal to my dad would've been great."

The fairy goddess smiled, "I watched over you, my child. You and the other partial fairies are quite talented. I am so proud of all of my children, and your cousin for gathering them. She has blossomed into the woman she was always meant to be. She was always to be their champion. Schemes of others tried to ruin that plan, just as they tried to ruin plans for you. You and cousin never give up. I love that about both of you. I knew you and your wolf would be great together. The moon goddess had to be convinced, but I just knew."

I didn't think she was very good at her job, but I did agree about Lucas. I replied, "I love him." She smiled, "I know you do. He is a protector, but you my child, just as your cousin, need a partner. He will be that man for you. It will take work, but you already know that. I knew you were the right choice to be the soul searcher. As will your daughter."

I gasped and put my hands on my stomach. She smiled, “You are not pregnant, but you will be soon. The child with your soul-searching power will not be in your first pregnancy. She is coming though. Learn all you can, so she can learn from you. It’s not easy to be the soul searcher, as you well know.”

I nodded, “I will, I promise.” The fairy goddess smiled, “Like your cousin, your children will have wolves at birth. That was something the moon goddess and I thought would be so special about joining the partial fairies with wolves. It’s the fairy magic within them that brings their wolf to them before they are sixteen. I am still sad Bexley had her first set of triplets without being declared royal. They will get their wolves at sixteen, but once declared royal her children will have wolves at birth as well.”

That didn’t seem fair at all. I said, “This is a lot of information.” The fairy goddess giggled, “I only get so much time. You must face David. Trust your light when it comes time. Stand with those who love you, and you will not be defeated. Don’t let what happens cloud your mind, or your journey will be a bit more complicated to win the fight ahead.” I said, “I have no idea what that means.” The fairy goddess smiled, “You will.”

She turned, “One more thing, what’s coming years from now, will not be your fault. Don’t take it that way. People make choices, and communication is always key. When it breaks down, we are all to blame.” I asked, “What?” I thought about it. At first, I thought she meant Lucas and I, but then it clicked, “Is this about what the moon goddess told Lucas?”

The fairy goddess frowned, “She’s always faster than me. I have so much to do, you see. So many fairies to watch over. I get distracted watching my children sometimes. She’s always one step ahead of me. The world is such a beautiful place, and she doesn’t stop to admire its beauty as I do. Yes, his goddess did warn him too. I’m not warning you though, my child. I see the path is set. The moon goddess thinks she can change her child’s anger, but it is vast. It is poisonous and his hatred will spark more hatred in others. Hate sparks hate just as love sparks love. Many will suffer because of his hatred. Paths have

been altered for many; it is a sad thing to see. Many wolves will suffer, but one most of all.”

It was on the tip of my tongue to tell her to interfere. She was a goddess. She could save that child and us the pain. Before I could say anything, she shook her head sadly, “The poor child. She does not deserve it, help her where you can. She will trust only a few people; your cousin can reach her. Along with another. Another special little girl.”

I asked, “Charlie Rose?” The fairy goddess laughed, “She is a special one, but no not for this.” I took a stab in the dark naming the babies I knew, “Elise then?” The fairy goddess smiled, “You are so smart, my child. It does sadden me for my child the suffering the she wolf will go through. He’s so unique, my child. It angers me the hard road one of my children will have to her.”

I said, “The she wolf’s... you mean the girl... her mate is a fairy?” The fairy goddess looked away, “FINE! So testy. It seems I can tell you no more. You’ll put it all together one day my child. Your friends need you now. Wake up Emmaline Richards. Show that David Forrester who the Duchess of Faerie truly is.”

I woke up and groaned. I touched my head. My other hand went to my arrow necklace. I rubbed it, smiling as it warmed under my touch. BA was coming. I just knew she was. I tucked my necklace under my shirt before David could see it. Not that he would think anything of the necklace. That was the point of it.

David sounded cheerful, “Good you’re up. Sorry about hitting you with the bat. My anger at seeing you got the best of me.” I turned. My light was telling me to wait. I rolled my eyes, “Don’t lie, David. I think you and I are past that.”

David laughed, “That’s fair, it felt good hitting you. You weren’t out for too long. I thought between the head injury and the iron, we would have some time before our game began. Oh well, choose your partner for the game.”

I immediately questioned, “What’s the catch?” David smiled, “You choose your partner, and the one not chosen

meets the end of the line.” I snorted, “Were you not listening earlier when I said Aubree is carrying your grandchild?” David smirked, “Which makes her the obvious choice for you to pick.” I said, “I won’t pick. You may be a monster, but you can’t make me one.”

David shrugged, “Then they both die.” I said, “You and I both know you won’t do that.” David punched me then screamed, “PICK ONE!” I laughed and picked myself up, “Ironic, I believe when I threw a temper tantrum when I was three you picked me up and told me that was no way to express myself. You should take your own advice.”

David started a timer on the wall. “If that hits zero and you haven’t picked, you’ll be thrust into the maze alone. I’ll kill them before you can get out. That’s a promise, Evelyn.” I sighed. I turned to Lacy and Aubree. I asked, “Are you guys ok?” They nodded.

I said, “I assume this is a magical timer?” David smirked, “Yes, you and whoever is holding your hand is taken into the maze.” I nodded, “Ok.” David haughtily told me, “Which is why Aubree and Lacy are on opposite sides of the room.”

Aubree, Lacy, and I looked at each other confused. David chanted a spell, and their chairs flew across the room. Aubree pleaded, “Pick Lacy, Emmaline.” David yelled, “FOR ONCE IN YOUR LIFE, BE QUIET! You’re just like your saint mother.” I commented, “Whom you murdered.”

David waved his hand, “Murdered is a strong word. More like I was involved in a conspiracy to commit murder. I planned her mother’s murder, but I didn’t actually commit the crime.” Aubree started to cry. I watched the clock count down.

David taunted, “You better make your choice, Evelyn. You have fifteen seconds left.” I kned him in the junk then punched him in the face. I admitted, “Huh, I do feel better.” I popped to Lacy then Aubree. The clock hit zero as David screamed in rage. We were sucked into the maze a second later.

Aubree asked, “How the heck did you pop?” I said, “I turned the iron to water.” Lacy laughed. Aubree asked, “Why

didn't you kill him?" I said, "I think he must have something protecting him. I trusted my light." Aubree whispered, "The guy who took me said Dustin would die." I shook my head, "David would never actually let Ryan, Katie, or Dustin die. I sent them help... I think. Hopefully."

Aubree asked, "Help?" I admitted, "Ben Price. I sent them Ben Price." Aubree's jaw dropped. Lacy raised her hand, "Can I buy a vowel? WHO is Ben Price?" Aubree said, "Someone who is supposed to be dead. Right alongside his sister, Alexa Price, David's fated wick."

Lacy gasped, "No way! Your unknown caller is Ben Price?" I nodded, "Yup." Lacy pointed at my chest, "What's glowing under your shirt?" I smiled and took out my necklace. Lacy said, "YES! BA IS COMING! Is Haley already here? I know you didn't have much time, but..."

I winced, "Haley is in the ribbon, I left her a message. I sent Travis and some warriors after you Lacy. Dylan and Lucas have to know you are missing. I left Lucas a message too. They should all be coming." Aubree cautioned, "Don't get too excited, they can't get into the maze without Ryan, Dustin, or Katie."

I was determined, "We can get out of the maze, we just have to beat it. David wants me to beat it. He wants to kill me himself." Lacy said, "Before we charge off into the creepy maze that's going to try to kill us... What's the story with David and his mate? I thought some coven killed his mate and he killed the coven leaders and took over said coven in retaliation. He brutalized anyone that took part in it."

Aubree sighed, "That's the story that circulated." I interjected, "I hear a 'but' lurking somewhere." Aubree laughed a little, "But there are those who believed his wick found out something, and she couldn't stand beside him anymore."

I mumbled, "Fabian's ring..." Aubree agreed, "That has to be it. I'd turn against anyone who could take part in that." Lacy asked, "Excuse me, what?" We filled her in on what we'd thought out.

Lacy said, “So, how is Ben Price related to Axel Price? Because if Eric knows Ben’s name... As someone who’s known him their whole life... Eric will kill him even if they need his help.” Aubree argued, “Ben Price is a good man. He’s Axel’s Nephew, but Ben’s father disowned Axel. Ben never knew him, and Axel killed his father. I’m sure Axel was on his list to kill before Eric got to him first.”

I sighed, “Seems like a bloody family feud.” Aubree nodded, “The Price line of witches was powerful. Everyone was surprised that coven was able to kill the Price children. There was only one family more powerful. They were basically our royalty, but the Cromwell’s are in hiding or dead. Their own family has turned into a messy family feud.”

I actually did know about the Cromwell’s. David was jealous of their power. I said, “David would’ve used their relationship to his advantage. He probably injured Ben first so he couldn’t help Alexa.” Aubree frowned, “Alexa wasn’t weak. Whatever David did, it was powerful dark magic. It had to be. She was good friends with my mother. I’ve seen pictures of them together.”

Before I could reply, we were pushed forward by the back of the maze. Lacy snorted, “It seems the maze is impatient to throw its horrors at us.” I asked, “Did he hurt you and Aubree? Can you use your magic?”

Aubree rubbed her wrists, “Now that I’m out of those magical bonds I can.” I asked, “Lacy, can you shift?” Lacy answered, “I can shift. I was only shoved through a holoport. No silver or wolfsbane. I’m kind of offended that they clearly didn’t see me as a threat.” I said, “I guess that’s something. We all have powers.”

I tried to pop us out, but we were slammed back onto the ground. I groaned, “I guess we can’t pop out. I was hoping they wouldn’t have thought of that since they planned to hit me with iron.” I bent down to the ground and began to chant. I was hoping there was water nearby. I felt it when the water responded. That was a serious mistake on their part to be near water. We heard yells as the water came in. I told my light I

wanted it to take down the maze walls. The water ripped through the maze, but it couldn't take the walls down.

I sighed, "It was worth a shot, but the water can't take the walls down." Lacy shivered, "There are animals in here that you just pissed off." I shrugged, "Or I killed them, that's an option." Lacy frowned, "That would devastate you if you were an earth fairy." I did have earth fairy blood, and I did feel a little bad. This was about survival though.

Lacy added, "Since today is clearly none of our lucky day... I'm going with whatever made those noises are not dead." We took a tentative step forward. The maze moved around us, altering the course. Lacy growled, "YOU ARE KIDDING ME! He's such a cheater! We were going the right way, so it switched on us."

Laughter came from behind us, I turned and shrieked. Aubree assured me, "Emmaline, it's just a clown." I shrieked, "I HATE CLOWNS!" Lacy groaned, "You have got to be kidding me." I hissed, "Not kidding! I hate them!"

The clown laughed then mocked me, "You are terrified of us you mean. One almost kidnapped her as a child, and she holds a grudge." I shivered asking, "Are you a real clown, or did David bring you to life?" The clown said, "I'm not actually a clown in my real life, but I am very real."

Aubree grumbled, "Sure, throw in real people in the maze. Real but crazy people." The clown laughed, "I'm not crazy." I tried to reason with him, "David knows I'll kill you, or that one of them will. He doesn't care about you. You're just a part of his sick game like we are."

The clown lunged. I shrieked and fell over. Lacy smacked me on the arm, "We don't have time for repressed childhood memories to surface; I'm hungry." I laughed, "You've been hanging around Dylan too long." Lacy ignored me, "Do you know what happens to stupid clowns who stand in the way of the hangry pregnant she wolf?"

The clown shrugged, "Nothing." Lacy growled, "They get eaten." She shifted and lunged at the clown, she had him by

the throat in seconds. He wasn't a fighter, nor was he ready. Lacy shifted back and I snapped her clothes.

Lacy pouted, "I really am hungry." I snapped her a burger. She smiled, "You are the best sister-in-law ever." I snorted, "If we get out of this hell before the wedding. Does anyone know how long we've been here?" Both shook their heads no.

Lacy winced, "You were out for several hours." I gritted my teeth, "Perfect and my head still hurts. Hopefully, Haley is around somewhere now." I was starting to get a splitting headache. Lacy lamented, "Ok, childhood trauma one conquered. He couldn't have just made her swim the English Channel or we'd be out of here in no time."

She stood and we went a little farther into the maze, hearing more hissing by the step. Lacy said, "Tell me you aren't scared of bats, Emmaline. Because those sound like bats." I winced, "Umm... I wandered into a cave and a colony of bats flew out. I got a lot of scratches." Aubree sighed, "So, you are scared of bats."

I asked, "How do we even fight bats? You guys can't get bitten by bats right now, you're pregnant. What if they have rabies?" We heard the bats start to move. I screamed and threw my hands out, putting a wall of ice between us and the bats. Aubree tilted her head, "That will work if we don't need to go that way."

I slapped myself on the forehead. I conjured a hedge trimmer. I revved it, "Let's see what his warlock magic can do against a hedge trimmer." Lacy kissed my cheek, "I love you." I started cutting through the hedges that made up the maze.

We stepped through and heard, "Hi, I'm Chucky. Want to play?" Lacy snorted, "Now he's just getting lines wrong. It's wanna play? Dylan will be beside himself when he hears that. He'll call it a travesty." I shivered, "WORST MAZE EVER!"

The chucky doll charged without warning, knocking Lacy down who yelled, "Stupid doll!" He came at me, and I wielded the hedge trimmer. I took his head off. Blood spurted everywhere. I screamed, "IT WAS AN ACTUAL PERSON!"

Aubree sounded stunned, “You decapitated him.” Lacy shrugged, “Haley would be proud, that’s her move.” I yelled, “I thought it was a doll!” Aubree pointed out, “Everything coming at us in this maze has to die so we can get out. We aren’t friends with them, and they are here by choice.” I winced but accepted her logic and agreed, “You’re right.”

I took aim at another part of the maze with my hedge trimmer. I heard a scream and turned. A man hissed, “Put the hedge trimmer down.” I said, “You’d probably rather face me with it as opposed to without it to be honest.” The man smiled, grabbing Aubree before we could stop him, he held a knife to her throat.

Aubree was clearly surprised. She appealed to him, “Everett. What the HELL are you doing with David Forrester?” Lacy and I began to advance on Everett. Everett said, “I’m sorry Aubree, but he made a good argument.”

I disagreed, “That seems unlikely since he’s insane.” Lacy linked me, “Haley and her wind would be super handy right about now.” I stopped walking, “Why am I walking? I blame the hit to the head.” I popped to Aubree and grabbed her hand, then popped us back to Lacy.

Everett gaped, “You weren’t supposed to have powers.” I pointed at him, “See what happens when you trust a crazy person?” Aubree whispered, “He had my mother killed, Everett.” Everett looked away. Lacy linked me, “Uh oh. He knew that.”

Aubree sucked in a breath, “You knew?!” Everett said, “I only found out recently, but it was so long ago! David is going to train me to take over his coven since Dustin went off on his own. I can’t turn down David as a teacher. His coven is huge.”

I pointed out, “His coven barely exists anymore after everyone found out he put a bounty on me.” Everett regurgitated something he clearly heard before, “Once everyone knows your true parentage they will understand.” Lacy threw in, “I think he and David belong together, they are both insane. No one will agree with putting out a contract on a thirteen-year-old.”

I linked her, “Technically speaking, I was fourteen.” Lacy replied, “God, now I’m getting a headache.” Aubree started chanting. She and Everett seemed fairly evenly matched. Except his soul was feeling deceitful. He was going to switch to dark magic, just like David would. My mind was racing.

There was a thought I was trying to grab onto. Aubree screamed as a cut appeared on her cheek and it hit me. I called, “Aubree! Call the shadows!” Everett paused, “What?! The shadows?” Aubree said, “I can’t control the shadows, I’ve tried.”

I shook my head, “Dustin can though. You’re pregnant with his child. The odds that the shadows will allow his child to use them too are pretty high. Just try it! Everett is feeling deceitful! I think he’s going to use dark magic.”

Aubree closed her eyes. Dark tentacles appeared and pierced Everett through the heart. Lacy gasped, “It worked!” Aubree opened her eyes. She put a hand on her chest, “Oh god, my child can control the shadows; just like her daddy.” Lacy and I gaped at her.

I asked, “It’s a girl?” Aubree sighed, “We weren’t going to tell, but we did that blood test to make sure everything was ok. Dustin can’t get mad that I spilled the beans. It was an emotional moment. The shadows. Our lives just keep getting crazier.”

I pushed, “Ask if they will take us out of the maze of my childhood fears. Call me crazy, but I really don’t want to be here.” Aubree closed her eyes and suddenly we were picked up and then put back down on the other side of the maze. Aubree smiled then called, “Thank you!” The shadows seemed to laugh as they disappeared. Aubree told us, “Dustin is calling them, I can tell somehow.”

We all turned hearing a strangled scream, “THE SHADOWS! I didn’t know you could call the shadows, Aubree. I was wrong, you are worthy of my son. For the sake of my grandchild, we should all try to mend fences.” He could not be serious.

Aubree rolled her eyes, “As if I want the approval of the man who killed my mother. Some fences can never be mended.” David laughed, “The clown in the maze killed your mother, not me.” Aubree’s hands went into fists. She spat back, “Well he’s dead now.”

David stopped laughing, “You... killed him?” Lacy raised her hand, “I did. He mocked me for being hungry. He had to go, the pup said so. At least in my head he did.” I bit my lip. Lacy whipped her head towards the left. I heard someone scream, “NO!” I knew that scream. It was my mother.

David’s eyes widened. He yelled, “YOU STUPID WOMAN! WHY DID YOU DO THAT?” I turned and saw my mother had dove in front of me. She had a bolt sticking out of her chest. I looked up to see a really pale man holding a crossbow. David marched over to him; I knew he was going to kill him.

I leaned down and gathered my mother in my arms. I felt tears form even though I was mad at her. I cried, “Mom... I could’ve gotten out of the way.” My mom gasped, “It was all I had... to ... prove... I do... Love you. This time.... I choose.... right.... you...are...my bab... y...”

Tears pricked my eyes, “Hang on, mom. Please. Don’t go. Not this way.” Her breath was coming quickly, “It’s my time... It has to be...you ...Kill him, Evie... You can do it... I... love... you... sweetie....” She took one last labored breath and her chest stopped moving.

I screamed, “NO! MOM NO!” I laid her down and began to chest compressions. I yelled, “One... two.... three... BREATHE! DAMN IT, MOM!” Lacy put her hand on my back, “She’s gone, Emmaline.”

I shook my head, “NO! She’s going to be fine. She can’t die saving me. That’s not how this ends. I get to be mad at her for YEARS to come. DO NOT DIE! DO YOU HEAR ME, MOM? You are NOT allowed to die this way.”

Tears were flowing down my cheeks. Aubree put her hand on my back above Lacy’s, “Emmaline... she’s gone.” I stood. David had the audacity to have tears flowing down his face, I

screamed, “YOU!” He turned to me startled. I ranted at him, “YOU TURNED HER AGAINST ME! YOU MADE HER CHOOSE! THIS IS YOUR FAULT!”

Another dart hit my skin. I turned it to water, and let it fuel my anger. I pelted David with my hail. He used his powers to deflect them. Lacy dove on top me as another one of David’s followers raised a crossbow. We both sat straight up when an arrow pierced his heart. Arrows flew all around us, then the wind came.

I smirked at David, “Looks like more members of my bad ass girl gang have arrived. Would you care to meet them?” David looked around, “Women can’t beat me.” I heard a laugh I knew. I motioned towards her, “Welcome the soon to be Queen of the Hackura, Astrid.” Astrid snapped one of David’s followers’ necks and strode forward.

She smiled informing us, “I brought all but Torvi and Katie with me.” The other Hackura princes’ mates came into the clearing after killing their own warlock. I held out my hand, “Meet Ariel, Calista...” David cut me off, “Everyone knows their names, Evelyn. They are the mates of the Hackura Princes’. I make it my business to know about those in positions of power.”

I shrugged, “Sorry guys, he’s rude. I hope you are wondering who’s using the arrows. That’s my friend, BA. I guess you would call her the Black Arrow.” Another arrow pierced a member of David’s group. BA stepped out from the tree line. She nodded to me.

I continued, “You really shouldn’t wonder who is bringing the wind and that tornado that’s destroying your magic maze. If you are, it’s my cousin, the Princess of the both the Hackura and Faerie.” Haley popped next to me. She told me, “Molly is here too.”

A wolf came out of the tree line. Haley laughed, “She linked me to tell you to be a little vaguer in your message next time. It was super helpful. Everyone’s got fucking jokes today. I’m certain she is being sarcastic.” She held out her hand and touched my head. It felt like seconds passed. I opened my

eyes, “Thanks, that headache was getting intense.” Haley rubbed my head, “Miley is here too.”

I grinned then taunted David, “Duchess Miley of the Hackura is here too.” Miley was covered in blood from head to toe when she faded in. She smiled at David, “Thanks for the scraps of warlock meat. I needed to brush up on my skills. I haven’t killed a large group of people in SUCH a long time.”

David yelled, “A BUNCH OF WOMEN CAN’T BEAT ME AND MY COVEN!” Haley rolled her eyes, “It’s a fucking pathetic coven, that our bad ass girl gang has cut through like cake.” David said, “Is she serious? It’s butter!”

Haley groaned, “Seriously? Butter from where? Not the fridge, that shit is hard to cut through.” She paused then asked, “Is that your mom, Emmaline?” My anger came back into me. I glared at David, “She jumped in front of me.” Haley whistled, “Damn. I didn’t see that coming. I’d heal her Emmaline, but...” I cut her off, “She’s gone. I know. Where are the guys? Aubree said Dustin called the shadows to him.”

Haley shrugged, “I don’t know. It’s technically bad form that I brought Molly with us. They need permission to be on another werewolves’ land, and we crossed states. I plan to say oops. Then point out Eric obviously got permission. They just don’t need to know when I brought Molly here. That seems like a detail that should not be talked about.”

Molly snorted, “Eric hates it when you say oops.” Haley bit her lip, “Eric can ... shove it. That’s what Eric can fucking do. Oops is the best reason of all time.” Molly smiled, “The guys are here.” David angrily yelled, “They can’t get in. I don’t even know how you got in!”

BA laughed, “You warded them out, not me.” Haley’s witch friends from before came into the clearing. One spoke, “We weakened the ward. Haley being Haley made the Black Arrow pull her through.”

Haley introduced, “That’s my sister in law Megan, Arion’s mate, and her friend Lisa. A witch I like. Fuck it we are friends.” Arion’s mate?! Megan seemed touched she’d introduced her that way.

David frowned, “She would be injured, burned severely actually if she was dragged inside.” Haley glared at him, “You are a fucking moron, and I can’t handle anymore idiots today. Someone kill him.” I hissed, “Me. He’s mine!” Haley shrugged, “Fine by me.” I asked, “Is he telling the truth? Did you have to heal yourself?”

Megan glared at Haley, “Yes, because waiting the extra fifteen minutes for us to create a hole for us to come through was too long.” Haley agreed, “It really was. I’m glad you’ve come around to my side of things. BA and I took out A LOT of witches and warlocks before you all got in.” BA tried not to laugh but didn’t manage it.

Lacy sounded relieved, “Then the guys will get in quickly.” Miley interjected, “It closed behind us.” Lisa said, “It’s pretty powerful, we couldn’t keep it open indefinitely.” David mocked her, “Women are weak.” I countered, “Yet they were strong enough to get inside whatever protection spell you had up. They are also strong enough to kill most of your forces.” David ground out, “Your wolf won’t get in.”

Aubree snorted, “Her wolf is with MY husband and brother-in-law, they will get in.” A man snorted, “Dustin is likely dead.” David and I whirled around. Both of us simultaneously screamed, “WHAT?!” Aubree clutched her stomach, “No... no... He can’t be. I would know.”

Haley put her arms around Aubree whispering to her. I couldn’t focus. I threw out my questions, “What do you mean? Why would you think my brother is dead?” David said, “That’s an excellent question. Why would my son be dead? His maze is nothing he couldn’t handle.”

The man fidgeted. I looked back pain clear in my voice, “Haley.” Haley nodded, “I’m in his head ask him again, he will not be able to lie.” I turned and repeated, “Why do you think my brother is dead?”

The man answered, “As long as Dustin is alive, David will always want for him to return to the fold. Dustin is the prodigal son. He is not in his maze. I ran him down in the

street with a car and used the holoport to get back here with Aubree.”

I felt pain in my chest, not my big brother. I screamed, “YOU WHAT?” My hands began to glow. I called to my light. The man began to scream as David cast a spell. He yelled at him, “I told you to PUT HIM IN THE MAZE! The Princess BETTER have saved my son.”

I screamed, “SHUT UP! This is all your fault! If Dusty is dead, I’ll make you BEG for death. The men in our lives will ask me for a turn with you and I won’t let them have you! HOW COULD YOU TRUST HIM WITH DUSTY’S LIFE! YOU ARE DIGUSTING!”

I called all the water in the area to me. We were actually right by a lake, which was unfortunate for David and his warlock. Neither of them had noticed I had called the water until it wrapped around the man who hit my brother with his car, dragging him to the lake.

I watched him flounder trying to get around the water’s rage, my rage. It wasn’t going to happen. I asked, “Haley, is my brother dead?” Haley assured me, “No, he’s with Eric and Lucas, along with Ryan. They will get in here soon. Eric assured me Dustin is with them, Emmaline. He would not lie about that. Alexander was taken to him, he healed Dustin.”

David snorted, “My son would stand against me. Those kids have her genes and are weak like she was.” He pointed at my mother. I drowned the man in the lake and screamed in a rage. She wasn’t the best, but we had thirteen good years. She was still my mother. I yelled, “SHE WAS WEAK BECAUSE OF YOU! YOU BASTARD!” I ran at David.

All hell broke loose, and everyone started fighting. Arrows were flying, but nothing could keep me from my target. I saw a wolf in my peripheral before realizing it was Lacy. She charged at the men surrounding David. Haley popped over.

I heard Blade, “Is always trouble. Hello, Fairy.” I laughed and mocked the man I once called dad, “David, meet my friend Blade.” Blade smiled. David sounded like a petulant child when he replied, “I thought it was a girl gang.”

Blade simply said, “Princess come. Blade comes.” David asked, “What’s wrong with him?” Blade’s eyes blazed and David shrank back. I charged him, and we began to fight. He wasn’t letting me get close enough to touch him.

Haley and Blade were cutting through anyone who was trying to protect David from me. He was good but I’d managed to hit him several times with my hail. I heard a howl I recognized, and I couldn’t stop my smile. The pride I felt for my mate knew no bounds.

David paled, “Your wolf will be met with rogues.” I shrugged, “He’s dealt with them before. He’s coming for you, ya know?” David proudly stated, “I won’t go down at the hands of wolves.” I laughed, “You’re right. You’re going down at the hand of a fairy and the girl gang of bad asses.” Haley yelled, “FUCK YES HE IS!”

Arrows flew through the air reigning down on enemies. David screamed in irritation, “How the HELL is she firing so many arrows?” Haley proudly stated, “She’s the fucking Black Arrow, that’s how. Do you live in a cave?” David smirked. I searched his soul. He was feeling malicious and calculating.

Before I could warn her David taunted her, “No, but I do wonder how you are even alive. My spell...” He trailed off. Haley tilted her head, “Exfuckingcuse me?” I told David, “Wow, the heat of the moment got you and now you’re screwed.” David stammered, “I was just talking about...”

I cut him off telling Haley, “He helped Axel Price. It’s what cost him his wick before he killed her. The ring has been going on longer than we thought. David changed the spell so you wouldn’t just be unable to move and not feel pain; he made you feel more.”

Haley’s eyes blazed, “You fucking SON OF A BITCH!” Her soul was calculating, but the one soul that terrified me was Blade’s. His murderous intent was solely focused on David, which would not be a problem if I didn’t want to be the one to kill him.

Haley stared deeply into David’s eyes, “Of these people here, who are the most important to you?” Well, that person

was so dead. David answered, “Emmaline, I need revenge. She is the most important to me. Aubree is next. She can call the shadows so until she gives birth to my grandchild, she is important. I’ll find a way to take their child and raise it myself.” Ok, that’s not what Haley meant. She’d never kill me or Aubree. She meant in his coven, jeez. How did I idolize this man for so long?

Haley said, “Not fucking happening. Dustin and Aubree will raise their child. Are you really making me defend a warlock right now? God damn it... I hate you so much. Dustin will raise his child WITH Aubree. You will NEVER see that child; I promise you that.” Several people gasped. Seriously? Did anyone think he was leaving alive?

Haley shrugged, “I meant from your coven. Who is the most important to you? Seriously, do I have to spell every fucking thing out for everyone all the damn time?” David answered, “The two fighting on my right. The one who Emmaline drowned in the lake was, but he harmed Dustin. I am glad he is dead. He was never to harm my son. He didn’t even use his powers because Dustin would’ve defeated him.”

Haley popped to the men on his right. She took the air of one of the men. David yelled, “STOP!” I sarcastically replied, “Sure, that will do it.” I hit him with my hail. Blade said, “Fairy mess with kill. Do not play. Bites ass.”

I laughed, “I don’t intend to let it bite me in the ass, Blade. I do intend to mess with him though.” Blade said, “You kill or Blade does.” I knew that too. His soul had already told me that. David screamed in anger when Haley killed both his favorites from the group.

David yelled at her, “How are you EVEN alive to annoy me?” She whirled, “Because I am Princess Haley Cambridge FUCKING Conners. How MANY times must I answer that damn question? I am NOT weak or powerless! Seriously! FUCK YOU!” Agreed.

David and I engaged again. I smirked knowing I had him where I wanted him. I was about to end the whole thing. My hands turned blue. Aubree yelled, “EMMALINE, POP

AWAY!” I wasn’t about to do that. I was shoved from behind. I saw David sneering at me as he dodged my hands. He quickly frowned as I felt two people grab onto each of my arms.

I heard Lucas yell, “EMMALINE!” I heard Eric yelling in a panic, “HALEY, NO!” I wasn’t even surprised Haley was with me, but I was surprised at how concerned Eric sounded. We fell in a heap through a holoport onto a concrete floor.

BA grunted, “We did not stick that landing. Not our worst landing though, Hales.” I rubbed my butt that I’d landed on, “You move really fast. Like... the flash fast.” BA laughed, “It’s a skill of mine. I can’t pop around places, but I am faster than a werewolf with my speed.”

I was impressed. I questioned, “WOW. Can all members of the hood move that fast?” BA shrugged, “Most are faster if not as fast as werewolves. My brother and I are significantly faster than most of our people.” Then they were leaders. Holy crap. Was she a Princess?

Haley teased her, “Did you just say fast? You were on the other side of the damn field. It gets me every time. It’s so awesome.” We turned as we heard steel being dragged on the cement floor. Someone sounded annoyed, “A price was only paid for one, it seems it’s my lucky day.”

We all turned and saw a man with a hood up over his head. Haley jeered, “It’s sad he doesn’t know it’s his unfucking lucky day.” BA agreed, “So very unlucky.” The man laughed, and raised his sword asking, “How’s that?”

Haley conjured her swords, “Because I’m REALLY fucking proficient with swords. One on three is nowhere near the worst odds this little group has been up against.” BA said, “Uhh... Haley. There is more than just him. A lot more.”

Men began to step up out of the shadows. Haley said, “I know. He’s just the only one who will be a challenge, and that’s questionable.” BA laughed. I asked, “Is this some weird cult? Where the hell are we?”

The man informed us, “You are in Hell.” Haley snorted, “You’re fucking joking. Hell is in a basement? Please lie better or I’ll do my thing, and make you tell me the truth.” She scoffed, “Hell. As if we would believe that.”

The man frowned, “We are devil worshipers.” It clicked for me, “You are Satan’s coven. David has been fighting against you for years. Why would you help him?” Everyone laughed at me. The man stated, “David circulated that he fought against us to gain power. In truth, we’ve worked together for years. Do you not find it odd anyone who opposes him ends up slaughtered?”

I confidently stated, “David doesn’t want you to kill me.” Because he wanted to kill me himself. The man laughed, “He said you were smart, but we aren’t going to kill you. We just torture people. There’s another part to your hell before it all ends.” I sighed, “Of course there is.”

Haley flicked her fingers, “I’m fucking bored.” She killed two people before the man could raise his sword. His eyes widened as he yelled, “HOW DARE YOU!” Haley shrugged, “I know but to be fair... you are REALLY boring.” Arrows flew into the coven surrounding us.

Haley let her eyes blaze, and I started throwing my hail and icicles. Some yelled, “David lied to us! She still has powers! He said she was the only one being sent. Yet the Princess and the Black Arrow are here too! I don’t want to die for his lies!” So, someone had some brains... but neither Haley nor BA would ever let them live.

The main guy tried to calm them down, “We just need to get a few shots in on the girl.” One came at me. I winked at Haley who just smiled and kept tearing through the room. I took the knife from the man coming at me, just like Haley showed me. I dug the knife into his side and twisted it before I removed it.

BA said, “Damn, our little fairy has skills. I’ve seen that move, Hales. You two have been practicing together.” Someone yelled, “OH COME ON!” I winked at BA, “We have

every Thursday.” BA laughed and slammed her bow into a guy’s face and got down on one knee.

She told them “You fuckers made me leave a date early, and I really like this guy. Sex was absolutely on the menu after the date, and I missed it.” I smiled, “You are so cute when you are happy.” She really was. I was just worried about her entire situation. Haley agreed, “She really is. Do I get to meet this one?” I glanced at her. I was certain she knew who the guys was, so why was she asking? I searched her soul. She felt hopeful but resigned.

BA smiled, “I think you have to. He needs Haley’s stamp of approval.” Haley was surprised, “Oh really? It’s getting serious?” BA nodded, “Really serious.” Haley was now resigned and happy. What the hell? It hit me. Was the guy Alpha Chase? Holy crap how would that have happened? I pushed that aside. It couldn’t be... could it? No, that was a problem for another day. I did not have time to solve that right now.

Someone said, “Not to break up this moment, but you have killed too many of my people for me to let you go now. You all must pay. I’m afraid you won’t get to reschedule your precious date.” Haley pondered, “How do we decide who gets to kill him?” BA loaded an arrow, “He said I couldn’t make my date; I think I win.”

Haley shrugged, “I’m cool with it. Emmaline?” I laughed, “By all means.” The man said, “You can’t take me I’m...” He trailed off when BA sunk her arrow directly through his heart. BA mocked, “What was that? I couldn’t quite make it out. If there was going to be a next time for you, I’d say sometimes just say no when someone asks you a favor.” The man said, “You can’t.... go... with.... her.... this... time.” Huh?

An invisible force grabbed me. I screamed, “HALEY!” As I disappeared from the room and her grasp. I heard her yell, “What the fuck?! I will fucking kill all of you for this! Emmaline, call on me for....” Her voice faded.

I felt like I was falling. Is this how Alice felt in Wonderland? Suddenly I hit a wall and gasped. An older

woman was in the corner of what appeared to be a cell. I quickly asked, "What's your role? I won't fall for it."

The woman laughed. "I won't hurt you; I'm stuck here just as you are. You are Evie, right?" I frowned, "You seem to have me at a disadvantage." She smiled, "I have been at a disadvantage for quite some time. So, all David's plans have come together. You and I are here, and he has his June." She spat my mother's name.

Tears filled my eyes. The woman snapped at me, "You can't love her! Come on! She chose his weak ass over you!" I wiped at the corners of my eyes, "She's dead. I would agree that I didn't like her, but she was my mom. I did love her. She dove in front of a crossbow's bolt to save me. I could've just popped away. Speaking of. Bye."

She looked panicked when she yelled, "WAIT!" I closed my eyes and thought of Lucas. I hit a wall that burned me. I screamed in pain as I slammed down on my butt. The woman came over to me, "I did try to warn you. The cell has magical protections. We can use magic inside, but not to get out. He had an iron base added recently in preparation for you joining me."

I sighed, "Fine. Who am I joining for a brief time until my fiancé gets here? I swear if David makes me miss my wedding... I will do HORRIBLE things to him." The woman smiled, "When's your wedding?" I answered hopefully, "Christmas Eve." She winced, "Then I hope your wolf finds you quickly. They know you aren't dead right?" I frowned, "Of course they do. Why would they think I was dead?"

She smiled, "This is good then." I honestly told her, "The suspense is driving me insane. What's your name?" She answered, "Alexa Price." I gaped, "I'm about to quote my cousin, EXFUCKINGCUSE ME? You're dead." Alexa snorted, "I wish."

I figured it out, "David couldn't kill you, could he? Because you were his wick? I guess that makes sense." Alexa laughed, "You are so young and adorable. No, when I found out what he was doing, helping Fabian with that awful ring..."

the little girls and boys... the things they were doing. It's been around much longer than your cousin knew. Fabian was hunting down partial fairy's his entire life. He just treated your cousin the worst because she always lived, and she was his niece. I heard stories about her. My Uncle," she spat the word, "And David would talk here. I felt quite bad for her. There were so many others before she was even born. I couldn't stand the sight of David when I found out he'd been helping my uncle."

I shook my head, "I don't understand. If it's not because he is your wick, why has he kept you alive all this time?" She smiled, "He wants to know where our daughter is." I couldn't form a coherent sentence for several moments.

I chanted my space unheard chant just in case. If I knew David, he had microphones around. Alexa smiled, "You can do Fae magic, impressive." I said, "I don't know if he has mics in here or anything." Alexa laughed, "No, it's not that sophisticated of an operation, but David could've added them for your arrival without my knowledge. He did know you were coming."

I asked, "Who is your daughter?" Alexa replied carefully, "I'll tell you if you tell me your new name. You have to have one since you evaded David for so long. I honestly have wanted to give you a hug for so long for making him so angry."

I answered, "My name is Emmaline Richards." She gasped, "That's her name." My heart stopped, "No... it can't be.... You're Emmeline Ryder's mother?" She nodded and her eyes filled with tears, "You know my little girl? Once I found out who David really was, I put her into hiding, and had her name changed. David and I always knew we were mates. I had her when I was sixteen. We didn't want to tell anyone until I was eighteen about her. We hid her for two years, but then I found out who he really was behind his mask. My friend helped us, but David killed her too."

I didn't think it could be, but I asked, "Aubree's mom?" Alexa cringed, "It was such a cruel twist of fate that Aubree was David's son's mate." I whispered, "I'm so sorry, but Dusty

is a good man.” Alexa shrugged, “I don’t really care that they are mates. From what David says Dustin is nothing like him. You are a fairy and you cannot lie which mean you believe what you said. Based on what I’ve heard, that accurate. Anyway, I got my Emmeline out of David’s grasp. I had planned to go after her once the dust settled. I never thought David would kill Ben. I never thought Axel would help him imprison me here.”

I grabbed her hand, “Ben isn’t dead, he’s been helping me. He’s out for revenge on David... For your death. He’s been hiding.” Alexa smiled wistfully, “That sounds like my brother. Tell me about my little girl. How is she?” I winced, “She came to me.”

Alexa frowned then shook her head, “Oh no. No, no, no no!” I sighed, “Her mate’s enemies took her. They didn’t know she was pregnant, and she gave birth around vampires.” Alexa cried, “Oh my baby! The... baby. My grandchild. Did her child live?” I nodded, “Charlie Rose, she’s being raised in our pack. When we get out of here, you could come see her. Emmeline’s wishes were for her to be raised by a couple in our pack. It’s why she came to me, they are related. I guess they are your relatives too somehow. This is all getting confusing. I’m sure she would’ve wanted you in Charlie’s life.”

Alexa laughed, “Emmeline ended up with distant relatives of mine. So, I’m sure we are related to the wolves in your pack. I have a granddaughter. Wow.” I sighed, “I’m team never tell David. Charlie Rose deserves better than him in her life.”

Alexa agreed, “I wouldn’t betray my daughter, and I certainly won’t betray my granddaughter. You have just reignited my hatred of him. I could’ve helped our little girl. I could’ve saved her, but he kept me here. He kept me away from her, and now it’s too late. She is gone from this plane. I will move to where you are when this is done. I will not take my granddaughter from those my daughter wished to raise her. I would just love to be her grandmother. Mother earth always knows what is best. I have always honored mother earth in all moments of my life, except rejecting the one meant for me.

That is the only time I went against her, but it was necessary. I would do it time and time again.”

David’s voice entered our conversation, “Interesting. I cannot hear a single word you’re saying. You two have met though fabulous. Welcome to the rest of your life, Evelyn.” I gulped but I knew he was wrong. Lucas was coming, and we would end this once and for all.

Fairy Prophecy

Lucas stared at the Alpha and Beta before him. Eric was focused on other things. He growled, “Ben Price as in the nephew of Axel Price who was presumed dead? Be a different Ben Price for your own sake.” Dylan whispered, “Be that Ben Price for me, I’m having such a bad day.” No joke.

Ben cautiously answered, “Yes, but before you get too upset, I have nothing to do with my uncle. He was on my kill list after David. He killed my father, and he helped David kill my sister. He thought he killed me. I couldn’t go for Axel first or David would know I was alive. David works with too many covens; including Satan’s coven.”

Ryan spoke, “My dad has worked against Satan’s coven for years.” Ben shook his head, “No, he works with them; they have a symbiotic relationship. They benefit from each other, and David benefits from people thinking he doesn’t work with them. I have been looking for your sister for years because she is the key. She is David’s lynchpin. The one factor that can cause him to descend into madness.”

I growled, “You intended to use her all along which means originally you were going to kill her.” Ben begrudgingly admitted, “Yes, at first that was my plan. Then I found out she wasn’t really David’s daughter. I was going to train her on her powers. I had a water fairy that was going to help me. She was hard to track down though. Since I was in hiding myself, I couldn’t use all the means I normally would’ve.”

Eric was clearly suspicious. He asked, “And you figured out who Emmaline was... how?” Ben smiled, “The fairy working with me told me Prince Marcious’ mate was June Forrester. When it was circulated the Water Fairy Duchess was Alpha Lyons’ mate, I knew it was her.”

Ryan asked, “Who is the water fairy that told you?” Ben shrugged, “It doesn’t matter. I had to kill him. He posed a

danger to Emmaline and all my plans. He knew who she really was, and he clearly had no qualms about telling people.”

I had no problem with that. I linked Eric, “We need Ben.” Eric replied, “If I find out he had ONE thing to do with what was done to Haley; I will kill him. We do not in any way, shape, or form need him when we have the Bishop siblings.” I sighed.

Dylan spoke, “Blah, blah, blah GAP I know the look on your face. Plan Ben’s murder later. We NEED to get to Lacy.” Terror gripped me. I clutched my chest, “Emmaline.” Dylan said, “Lacy is irate and Emmaline is whatever has Lucas gripping his chest. What the HELL is going on? Oh yeah, we have no idea because we are still chatting amongst ourselves. WHO CARES ABOUT BEN PRICE’S BACKSTORY? We can decide if he needs to die later. Preferably when my mate is back with me.”

He paused then added, “Now Lacy has killed someone. Her wolf told mine. Fang is ridiculously proud of her.” He started laughing. Eric sighed, “I regret this, what is so funny?” Dylan laughed, “Lacy killed someone because she was hungry and he made fun of her. You guys... We HAVE to get in there. I need to see Lacy killing people because she’s hungry. THE HANGRY SHE WOLF IS ON THE LOOSE AND WE ARE MISSING IT! IT’S OUR VERSION OF BIGFOOT!”

I gaped, “Lacy killed someone because she was hungry?” Dylan shrugged, “She’s hungry and he mocked her. By the by, your mate is deathly afraid of clowns...” he trailed off then got angry, “And my link to Lacy’s wolf is gone. Seriously, can we talk less? That’s coming from me of all people. Do you see what you people are doing to me? Never in MY LIFE did I think I would cut off a conversation. I’m becoming someone I don’t recognize. I’m channeling my inner GAP. YOU GUYS THE WORST HAS HAPPENED! Lacy not being with me is breaking me. WE HAVE TO GO!”

The Alpha laughed, “You must be Beta Dylan then. I was told you are the funny one of the group.” Dylan made a prayer motion, “FINALLY someone understands me. Who are you again?” The Beta snorted.

The Alpha put his hand out to me. I greeted, “Alpha Johnson, good to see you again.” Dylan shrieked, “WE KNOW THEM? Why did we wait for permission? Why didn’t you just call him? What HAVE I told you about asking the right questions Lucas? We are HAVING our asking Beta questions class over our lunch breaks now. No ifs, ands, or buts about it. I WILL get through that thick Alpha skull of yours, and I will hear no more about it. Subject closed it’s happening.”

The Beta laughed again then announced, “I am Beta Bond.” Dylan was quiet for a second. Eric told him, “You will regret that with every fiber of your being, Beta Bond.” Dylan squealed, “BOND? BETA BOND!” I sighed, “Here we go.”

Dylan rounded on me, “You have known there is a Beta Bond this whole time and you told me NOTHING?” I shrugged. He turned to face Beta Bond, “Hello, Beta James Bond. It’s nice to meet you.” The Beta grinned, “My first name isn’t James.” Dylan said, “Of course it’s not double o seven. Your identity is safe with me. So, Beta James Bond, can we go get my mate and my Luna? Surely you’ve done some recon being that you are Beta Bond.”

Ben Price laughed then told him, “I know where your mates are. They are in the area surrounding Lost Lake.” Dylan sarcastically stated, “Well, thank you for not sharing that immediately. Super helpful Unknown Ben. Someone literally named a Lake, Lost Lake? Do they just want people to wander off and send out search parties? Do they always start searches at Lost Lake? Because if they don’t, they are doing it wrong.”

I chimed in, “David has miscalculated taking a water fairy near a lake.” Eric agreed, “Yes, he did. Haley is there now too.” I asked, “You’ve linked her?” Jackson answered, “Molly linked me. Alpha Johnson, I do apologize. My wife is here with my sister-in-law. We’ve told Haley she has to take one of us with her when she charges off; she’s quite literal.”

Alpha Johnson shrugged, “What’s one more wolf? I have reports that several Hackura women came through a portal. I’ve got witches, Hackura, fairies, and one of my people SWEARS, on their life, they saw the Black Arrow pass them

in a flash of blazing black. He's hyperventilating with excitement."

I glanced at Eric who nodded. I admitted, "Your man did see the Black Arrow. She's friends with my mate and Eric's. My mate activated the calling card BA gave her." Alpha Johnson laughed, "We need to become better friends, Alpha Lucas and Alpha Eric."

Dylan shouted, "PLEASE, LUCAS! Let us be better friends with Beta James Bond FOR ME!" Beta Bond said, "That's still not my first name, Beta Dylan." Dylan said, "Whatever you say Bond, Beta Bond."

Eric rolled his eyes asking, "What happened to not wasting time, Dylan?" Dylan snorted, "Lacy still has her wolf. We have Queen Elsa, a pissed off pregnant witch, and a hangry pregnant she wolf. Not to mention Hackura women, Haley, and the Black Arrow. It's like the start of the best joke EVER. I don't want to cross that group of women, and they like me. I am no longer worried. I have confidence in their girl gang of bad asses. I hope they make me an honorary member one day. I had a shirt made and everything, and it's even pink. GAP's mate loves me. I just KNOW she will let me in." Several people snickered.

Dylan turned and threw his arm over Beta Bond's shoulder continuing, "Now, let's focus on my new best friend. Beta James Bond. Tell me would you like a martini, shaken not stirred? I can make that happen." Beta Bond asked, "Is he always like this?"

I answered, "Yes, he is. I need to get my Luna back. So, if we could move this along that would be great." Alpha Johnson said, "We know there are rogues on our land near the Lost Lake location. They have been concealed by magic for weeks. We get just a hint of them. According to the council, David Forrester is likely behind this. I must admit, that makes me feel better. I have berated my men many times for not being able to contain this threat of rogues."

Dylan commented, "I mean if Beta James Bond couldn't get it done then it simply wasn't possible." Eric sighed, "There

will be no dealing with him after this.” Dylan led Beta Bond towards the pack house, “Come on new bestie! Let’s get inside. I need coffee. So much coffee. How long have we been awake, Lucas?” I snorted, “Too damn long, Dylan.”

Alpha Johnson said, “Grab a couple hours of sleep in the pack house. We will scout out the location at Lost Lake.” I disagreed, “I can’t sleep. We need to help them. That’s my mate and little sister.” Dylan faked a cough, “Aubree.” I added, “As well as my soon to be sister-in-law. My mate keeps getting really scared too. I can feel her terror in my chest.”

Ryan angrily informed me, “It’s her maze. I’d imagine it’s things she’s afraid of.” Dustin angrily gestured with his hands, “That son of a bitch probably has bats in it.” Ryan tilted his head, “Chucky will be there too.” I asked, “Chucky?”

Eric sounded shocked, “The creepy murderous doll from the movies? That Chucky?” Ryan nodded. Dylan whirled, “HOLD ON! GAP, are you afraid of Chucky?” Eric responded, “No, but he’s still creepy.”

Dylan sighed, “For one brief shining moment, there was a sliver of light. Of course, you had to snuff it out GAP. Beta James Bond, you wouldn’t BELIEVE this guy. Nor all the things he has done to me, and yet somehow we are still friends.”

Eric retorted, “We are allies.” Dylan waved his hand, “You see? He even pretends we aren’t friends. All because before I knew Lacy was my mate, I worshipped at his wife’s feet. I still worship at her feet. WAIT until you meet her Beta James Bond.”

Dylan stiffened, “LUCAS! We could have both Haley and Beta Bond on missions with us! NO! EVEN BETTER! CREEPY NINJA FRONT AND CENTER!” Logan complained, “You have got to be kidding me.”

Dylan said, “Yet you knew who I was talking to you. Beta James Bond this is our resident creepy ninja assassin. Talk amongst yourselves and form the dream team. THE START OF OUR GUY GANG BEGINS!”

I put my hand over my face, “DYLAN! Focus!” Dylan retorted, “I am focused. I am starting our super awesome guy gang. Our mates have a bad ass girl gang. We have to form a guy gang, so our goddesses know we are worthy of the mates they gave us. Obviously, you, me, GAP, and all the Alpha Conners brothers are in. GAP can convince the Hackura princes to join. We MUST find out who BA is in love with. It has to be her string, he’s a shoe in to join our newly formed group. Which means, all our group needs is Beta James Bond, Lucas. I NEED HIM!”

Eric groaned, “Beta Bond, please tell Beta Dylan you will be in his dumb guy gang so we can all move on with our lives.” Beta Bond laughed, “Sure, why not?” Dylan jumped and clicked his heels together, “Onwards into the lair of David Forrester! Where the girl gang of bad asses has likely killed the vast majority of the bad guys. We all know our heroine, and my personal superhero, our special fun sized ninja fairy goddess, hates witches and warlocks. She’s probably having a field day with them all.” He had a point.

Dylan gestured to Eric, “Do you see Beta James Bond why GAP over there is the God Alpha of the Pricks? His mate is amazing. Seriously, when she takes over the world, I’ll be by her side. You all mark my words, it’s coming. Say GAP, where are you pups? I need more proof you are the GAP for my new friend Beta James Bond. Them popping in would do the trick.”

Eric stared at him then said, “You need sleep, Dylan. My pups are asleep because they had to heal Dustin since Haley was in the Ribbon. Remember?” Dylan turned, “Beta James Bond, you may need clarification, but I tell you that ENTIRE sentence is why he is the GOD Alpha Prick, or GAP as I’ve been saying. I’m so sorry I did not explain his acronym. They might be right; sleep is a thing Dylan needs.”

I ordered, “Ok, now I’m saying the chit chat needs to end. I want my mate back, and I want David’s head in my hands.” Ben Price happily stated, “Alpha Eric will want his head as well because David played a part your mate’s torture.” Everyone whirled around.

Alpha Johnson's jaw dropped and Logan's eyes blazed. He demanded, "Say that again. Speak clearly and concisely, or those may be your last words." I heard a crunch. I linked Dylan, "How on EARTH DO YOU HAVE POPCORN?" Dylan replied, "Something about a magician and secrets. I can't recall the full saying, I'm really tired. I'm not firing on all cylinders."

Ben gulped, "Umm... That's why my sister rejected David before he killed our coven with our uncle. Fabian has been hunting partial fairy's basically his entire life. He got the idea to experiment on them until they died before I was born. It's why my dad disowned my Uncle Axel; he was helping him. David was their middleman. It's why no one knew he was involved. He had a deal to keep his children safe. It should've been a clue to me that he had a partial fairy in mind to have children with. He never planned to stay faithful to my sister even though they were childhood sweethearts. Something about June called to him, I guess."

Eric gritted out, "David Forrester helped Axel Price hurt my wife? DID HE RAPE MY WIFE?" Ben denied that accusation, "No, David never went down that particular road. He never even met your wife. He would meet with Axel every so often though, so I'd imagine he knows quite a bit of what happened to her. David is the one who enhanced the spell where Princess Haley couldn't move but could feel every part of the torture put upon her."

Logan questioned, "Enhanced how?" Ben answered, "He made her feel more pain than she would've with the normal spell." Marcus spoke from behind us, "He will know the depravity of Hell before we send him there."

Dylan jumped, "HOW DO THEY DO THAT? Seriously, ONE of you tell me how. It is a matter of pride now people! Werewolf senses! I have them, and yet you skulk and pop up without so much as a WHIFF of a smell or crunch of leaf. I'm getting you all bells, like a cat."

Marcus ignored him asking, "Is that all David did?" Ben cautiously stated, "No, but that is all he did to the Princess." Eric sighed, "I miss my Angel and the ability she has to make

people just tell me what I want to know. WE DO NOT HAVE TIME FOR THIS!”

Dylan cautioned, “Now, now GAP, calm down. Beta James Bond, Beta Caleb and I are all here for you. I got this.” He patted Eric on the head. Eric growled, baring his teeth at Dylan, who ignored him and turned to the warlock who may die soon.

He spoke in a friendly tone, “Ben, lovely dear old Ben, my chap, GAP is not one to wait for answers. Your name has already put him on edge. As someone who knew him in his PHD... you’re going to want to answer my simple clarifying question. If you don’t, he’s going to go full PHD on your ass. I’ve seen it. It’s terrifying.”

Ben looked confused. He asked, “PHD? He has a doctorate? What does that have to do with anything?” Dylan snorted, “God, no. He doesn’t have a doctorate. PHD is Pre-Haley Days. He was quite bloodthirsty and ruthless before she showed up. It’s why I avoided him LIKE THE PLAGUE when she was kidnapped. He was worse somehow than he was in those PHD. As someone who saw him slaughter a ROOM full of people about two years before he met Haley; we can all say with confidence GAP was terrifying when the former now very dead King Damon took Haley from him. Now, your uncle...”

Dylan paused and looked at Eric before he continued, “Seems to have helped torture and possibly raped GAP’s wife... if my needs sleep brain is picking it up right. For shame Beta Caleb on your sparse memo on Axel Price.”

Eric growled, “He did, and pretended she was her mother.” Dylan said, “Oookkkk.... this just got creepy times one thousand. What that means Ben, is your DNA is not doing you favors here. Your very creepy messed up uncle is doing you a disservice. Answer my question in full, and maybe we can keep GAP from killing you. You’ll need his brothers; that would be the intimidating group of three men beside him that look like each other. The glowing eyed ninja’s over there must also be on your side, and you’ll also need my Alpha in your corner as well.”

Ben rolled his eyes. Dylan smiled, “You could think I’m exaggerating when I say it would take all those men to hold back the terrifying hunk of mass that is the GAP, but I’m not. We needed all these people in the days before he had pups who could melt people’s brains. If he doesn’t like you, the pups won’t like you. While they are adorable, they tend to pop wherever they want. Which is a whole other basket of crazy. It’s also why he’s our resident GAP. You need to quickly get him back on the not killing you before pops sound in the area and your brain leaks out of your nose.”

Ben blinked. Dylan continued, “Now, I feel like you and I have an understanding thing going on now. What else did David do for Fabian to the partial fairies? Keep in mind I will soon be the resident expert on partial fairies for the werewolves, and I’m their biggest fan. I love them, as we all should. They are the best thing to happen to our realm in...”

Eric snarled, “FOR THE LOVE OF FUCKING GOD, DYLAN! LET HIM ANSWER THE FUCKING QUESTION BEFORE I TEAR HIM TO SHREDS!” I linked Dylan, “It’s not the time to push Eric.” Dylan winked at me.

He told Ben, “See what I mean? I didn’t want to push him, but you needed to know I’m serious as a heart attack. The only thing standing between you and death is me, my new best friend Beta James Bond, and Beta Caleb.”

Ben stared wide eyed at Eric, “I just want revenge.” Dylan prodded him, “Now, now. I told you to answer my question. We know you want to kill David because he killed your sister. That’s very tragic, and I am sorry about that. If someone managed to kill my brother, I’d get revenge too. I’d be more direct using my wind up GAP toy back there. I digress, back to the you not dying portion of our day, what did David do for Fabian? And who would be upset about it?”

Ben said, “Prince Marcious would be upset about it.” Eric guessed, “Maribella. David handed over Maribella?” Ben nodded, “Yes, Fabian wanted someone of royal blood. Haley was taking beatings at the time. He said her royal blood might be key. His subjects kept dying from his experiments. Haley wasn’t old enough according to his data. David found a partial

fairy with royal blood for him. He killed Maribella's aunt, uncle, and her brother along with their coven. The little boy was killed because he wasn't Marcious' child. Evelyn was with him that day."

Dustin yelled, "NO! That family she said she saw our dad kill? She was there when Maribella was taken?" Ben said, "No, the family was still looking for her. Her mother was tracking down a lead and left her son with her sister and her sister's wick. Fabian wanted them quieted because they were beginning to go to supernatural council's for help."

Eric asked, "Maribella is part witch? Why doesn't she know that?" Ben explained, "Maribella's mother had about an eighth witch blood in her. She was mostly human. She did have a little water fairy blood though. Witch blood isn't like fairy blood. I doubt Maribella can do more than cast simple spells and maybe not even that. Her brother would've been a talented warlock. His father is."

I said, "Maribella would've looked for her brother." Ben said, "She was taken before he was born. Her parents didn't know they were pregnant. She probably doesn't even remember them. Fabian cast a spell on her that her young mind couldn't battle."

Eric said, "I'm sure my mate fixed that because Maribella ran back to her mother and stepfather when she was saved. Why did David wait that long to kill them after he took her to kill her family?" Ben said, "At first the family thought she had been taken by humans. I tried to stop it, but someone leaked the information that it was supernatural's. I found out too late, and they'd already made inquiries."

Eric growled, "You knew all this the entire time. You knew before my mate was born what would be done to her by Fabian. You did NOTHING!" Dylan sighed, "Alas, this is not going well." Ben argued his case, "I couldn't do anything for your mate, Alpha Eric. I hid as many partial fairy's as I could. I risked being found out for them. I had no proof, only what I was monitoring and the surveillance I did. I was supposed to be dead. I did what I could. Your wife was born in Faerie. I couldn't keep her from them. Had I known who her father

was, I would've gotten word to him. My sister died because of this ring. My goal has been to take them all down. I am one man; I couldn't take them all on."

Eric growled, "My wife did as a child." Dylan defended Ben, "Well, let's be fair. He is no special fun sized ninja fairy goddess. Your wife is a force of nature. Seriously. I have a petition to get her goddess status. It has one hundred signatures already. Will you sign it, Benny boy?"

Ben started to answer, but I cut him off. I said, "As informative as this is, I want a portal to Lost Lake." Logan admitted, "We cannot open one. David knew we would come, and he was prepared." Dustin said, "Then I'll ask the shadows to take us there." He closed his eyes. It took several moments but black tentacles appeared around us.

I blinked and suddenly we were all taken to a barrier outside Lost Lake. The smell of rogues was permeating the air. Dylan bristled, "There are definitely rogues present." Alpha Johnson said, "Now you know why I've been so hard on my men. Alpha Lucas, your mate's brother can control the shadows?"

Ryan snorted, "Both her brothers can." Dustin announced, "The shadows said they came from Aubree. They helped her." Dylan yelled, "OH MY GOD! NOW all FOUR of you can control the shadows counting Katie? Wait... NOOOOOO! OH MY GOD I LOVE OUR LIVES! It's the baby! I'm right, aren't I? Go ahead... tell me I'm right Dustin my man."

I was so tired. I just wanted Emmaline safe in my arms. Dustin nodded, "The shadows said the baby is worthy." Ryan whispered, "Holy shit." I ordered, "Get on taking this ward down. We have to get in there." Ryan and Dustin stepped forward and touched the barrier.

Growls filled the area. Eric flatly stated, "That seems to have gotten the rogue's attention." Alpha Johnson clapped, "Wonderful. They've been polluting the area with that stench, and I'd like to get rid of them." I shifted. Dominic howled and took on three rogues. I was unstoppable. Wave after wave came at us while we protected Ryan and Dustin as a group.

Dylan linked me, “Dustin didn’t think to ask the shadows to get us inside there... because?” I theorized, “I don’t know, maybe they have a limited ask per day? Maybe he’s in shock his baby can control the shadows.” Dylan grumbled, “Everyone needs to get on my wavelength. I ask the right damn questions, and none of you are capable.” I disagreed, “That would be terrifying., there can only be one Dylan.”

Dylan teased, “Umm I’m about to have a mini Dylan running around.” I snorted, “Goddess help us all.” Dylan said, “The goddess knows there needs to be more of me in this world. I am the blessing you all don’t want to admit graces your lives.” I stared at him, “Dylan, you are my best friend.” Dylan jumped around me, “Aww shucks. Let’s not get all sentimental right now though, Lucas. There are rogues to kill.” He pounced on a rogue.

Eric linked me, “He may be the most obnoxious wolf I’ve ever met, but he’s a decent fighter.” I added, “And he gets answers.” Eric growled, “I like my way of getting answers, it makes me feel better. Dylan talks to get more answers, I hit people to get answers.” I snorted, “It is fun to hit people on occasion for answers.”

Eric responded, “And effective. Damn your Beta for being able to talk his way into more details. He is stealing my fun. It’s a bit insulting he uses the threat of me to actually GET his damn answers.” I said, “Sometimes his way is faster.”

Eric snorted, “A good punch or torture technique gets answers quickly as well. Haley and Emmaline are inside there.” I frowned, “At least they are together, and they have a lot of back up.” Eric said, “I know they can handle this. I just want to be beside them.” I agreed wholeheartedly, “Me too, Eric. Me too.”

We killed the last of the rogues. Dustin yelled, “We’ve got it down! LET’S GO!” I turned and howled. Eric and I charged through. We were met with hundreds more rogues. I linked Dylan, “FUCK DAVID FORRESTER!” Dylan replied, “Mehh, he’s not my type.”

He could not be serious. I yelled, “For the love of god, how did I not see that coming?” Dylan’s wolf smirked at me. I linked, “You’re one of the faster wolves here besides Eric and me. If you see a hole in the rogues line of defense... you get through and get to my sister and your Luna.”

Dylan turned, “You want me to leave you? I can’t do that.” I ordered, “Dylan, IF you see a hole you go to our mates. You run faster than you ever have before, but by god you get to our women.” Dylan glared at me, “Link GAP that he can’t leave you behind.” I snorted, “Just kill rogues.”

Dylan shifted back to his human form. I linked him, “WHAT ARE YOU DOING?” Dylan retorted, “Ignoring you.” Out loud he said, “OHHH GOODDD ALPHA PRICK! I need your attention.” Eric linked me, “WHAT THE FUCK IS HE DOING NOW?” Eric’s wolf turned to Dylan and growled.

Dylan smiled as I killed a rogue about to jump on him. He dramatically bowed, “Good. I will take that growl as I have your full attention, GAP. I have my own orders, and now I have a memo for you. Don’t you dare leave Lucas’ side if I have to. That’s my brother right there along with the one who’s not here. We should’ve brought Travis. WHAT were we thinking? We were not thinking, that’s what we were doing. Promise me that you stick with him.” Eric wolf nodded and I killed another rogue.

Eric linked me, “He’s insane. He’s a good friend, but he’s insane.” I linked Dylan, “SHIFT BACK!” Dylan shifted into Fang and began fighting once more. He linked me, “This is why Beta’s should be able to link Alpha’s outside our pack. That’s on your list of things to ask the moon goddess when and if you see her again. I need the ability to communicate with other Alpha’s besides my own. It’s only fair!”

I took down two rogues while Eric and Jackson took down four. It made a hole and I ordered, “DYLAN, GO!” Dylan took off. He linked me, “If you get hurt, I’ll have Haley heal you before I punch you repeatedly in the face! Don’t you dare get stabbed again. My heart can’t take that.”

I mocked, “Yes, werewolves do have weak hearts... Oh wait, no we don’t.” Dylan grumbled, “You took ten years off my life getting stabbed last time. I had everyone right where I wanted them, and you and your white knight complex sailed in and got stabbed. No getting stabbed.”

I replied, “Sure, you definitely had everyone where you wanted them.” Dylan sarcastically spat back, “I’m glad you can admit it. I see Lacy. HOLY SHIT! It’s going down up here! You guys have to see this! I am in literal awe of these. Where is my phone? This moment should be recorded.”

I linked Eric, “Dylan can see them, and he reports shit is going down.” Eric took down more rogues, “Let’s go join him.” I looked up. Eric and his brothers had created us another hole. We took off. Haley’s brothers were literally on our tails.

I commented in my link with Eric, “They are fast.” Eric replied, “Bjourn sees everything as a challenge.” I admitted, “I didn’t even know he was here.” Eric answered, “They are like that.” I snorted, “Dylan would say BAM and BAM they appeared.” Eric chuckled.

We came in to see a massive battle going down. All of our mates were fighting furiously. Dylan had just made it Lacy. He tore a witch to shreds that was about to cast a spell on her. Eric linked, “He is so annoying that he’s lucky he’s incredibly helpful on occasion.”

Lacy linked me, “IT’S ABOUT DAMN TIME!” I searched the field asking her, “Where is Emmaline?” Lacy answered, “With Haley.” Arrows reigned down. I stared around the field astonished at their numbers. I asked Eric, “How does David still have thousands of followers?” Eric growled, “Because he’s powerful, and people covet power.”

My eyes rested on a body in the center of the field. I asked, “Is that June Forrester’s dead body down there?” Eric replied evenly, “Yes, it is.” I was stunned, “David wouldn’t kill her after all this time.” Dustin’s strangled scream at the sight of his mother’s dead body hit the air.

Ryan sucked in a breath, “No.... MOM!” Dustin shook himself, “She’s gone, Ryan. Get to Aubree and Evie.” He

looked around. Dustin yelled, “Where the FUCK is Evie?” Ryan sounded like he was still in shock, “Wherever dad is I’d bet.”

Dustin’s hands started to glow. He looked over at Aubree and yelled “ARE YOU OK?” She chided, “There’s no need to shout, I’m fine. You’re in trouble because I heard you got hit BY A CAR! There’s no getting hit by cars Dustin Bishop! As you can see, I’m very well guarded by these lovely future Princesses of the Hackura. I think they don’t realize I noticed that they are protecting the pregnant lady. Go find Evie!”

Dustin said, “Ryan, end these miserable pieces of shit who followed our father in battle. Anyone who gets in my way will regret it.” Ryan looked at his mom with sorrow in his eyes, “Gladly, big brother.” Dustin stalked off and killed anyone who got in his path.

I saw a streak of black fly by us. Eric took off after the Black Arrow, and I followed him. We were a mile away from the group when I finally saw Haley and Emmaline. My mate had dried blood all over her outfit, but what made my blood run hot was the blood on her face. That was most definitely her blood.

Eric warned, “He’s tricking Emmaline!” I shifted back as Aubree warned Emmaline. My mate didn’t see what everyone else could. A witch had been concealed in the area she was now in. David had planned to get Emmaline over there. I shifted and yelled her name. Haley and the Black Arrow each grabbed onto Emmaline’s arms. Eric shifted back to human form to warn them, but it was too late. Blade tried to follow them, but he didn’t go through the holoport.

David laughed, “The holoport was only for Evelyn.” Blade jumped up. He killed the witch that had pushed Emmaline. He yelled, “Princess go. Blade go. SEND BLADE TO PRINCESS!” David backed away from Blade who advanced quickly.

David smiled wickedly, “Sorry, I can’t stay. I have to make Evelyn pay.” Blade yelled, “Hurt fairy. Blade hurt you. TAKE BLADE TO PRINCESS!” I shifted back into Dominic and

took off running. David was going to go through a holoport. The warlocks had placed holoport all over the damn place. Several of David's members were crawling to them to get away from Dustin and Ryan.

Dustin yelled, "DAD! I'm coming for you! I'll get you too. If ONE hair on Evie's head is hurt, you will know the pain of everyone who has suffered at your hands you sick piece of shit!" Aubree cried, "He wants to steal our baby, Dustin."

Dustin screamed in anger and threw a spell at his dad. David winced and started to crawl away. I had never stopped running. I scratched David's back as he fell through a holoport. I tried to go after him, but nothing happened.

Blade started to use his sword on the trees. Eric shifted back, "Blade it's not your fault." Blade turned, "PRINCESS GOES, BLADE GOES! PRINCESS RIGHT! WITCHES DIE!" Bjourn and Logan joined us. Marcus did as well after he'd killed several more warlocks. Bjourn spoke in Latin. Blade answered him back.

I linked Eric, "What's wrong?" Eric raised an eyebrow answering, "Blade is pissed." I glared at him, "I got that. What is he saying?" Eric loosely translated, "He knows Haley didn't try to leave him this time. She was trying to protect Emmaline. Bjourn told him it's not his fault. Blade wants to research how he can always be where Haley is."

I spoke out loud, "Can Gunner track their rings?" Logan said, "Haley has her phone. They are in Louisiana." A pop sounded, "My Pookie bear said you needed a fairy express ride. Aren't you all lucky I'm not a magnet for chaos like my dear cousins?" Thank god for Bexley.

Dylan said, "We are so very lucky to have you to pop us all over the country tonight." He had Lacy tucked into his side. He smiled, "I need an extra special fairy favor first though. Take Lacy and Aubree home, please." Neither woman was happy with that request.

Dylan assured them, "This isn't about your abilities, it's about the pups. Any other day or time Lacy you are by my side. It physically hurts me to let you out of my direct line of

sight right now. I NEED you to stay in our home with Tavis. I NEED you both to get checked out by our pack OB. I need you safe so I can bring our Luna home.”

Eric linked me, “Holy shit, he just gave a serious speech. A whole speech with no Dylanisms.” I questioned, “Now you are calling it Dylanisms?” Eric shrugged, “It’s a perfect description.”

Dylan continued, “Besides, someone has to clean up the dead body of Grayson. I personally wouldn’t touch him with a ten-foot pole. He’s lying on our bedroom floor, deader than a doornail. My pillow is crying in anguish. The bed is terrified, Lacy. The sheets are crying because we have to burn them. His blood got all over them according to my brother. Someone has to start the bonfire and burn those sheets. They deserve a Viking pyre. We have been through some things with them. We conceived this little guy there. They need a proper send off. I can only trust you, my Lacy, to coordinate all those efforts in my absence.”

Eric replied, “And he’s back. I was a little worried just for one brief moment.” I replied, “He can be serious.” Eric disagreed, “No he can’t, it’s unsettling. Even when he’s serious he’s playful. I can’t do serious Dylan. I need playfully serious Dylan.”

Haley and BA popped back in. Haley’s eyes were blazing gold. She was furious and carrying the head of some guy. She asked, “Who here is alive from David’s group?” Dread began to fill me. I quietly asked, “Haley, where’s Emmaline?” Haley clenched her fist, “That’s a DAMN good question Lucas. FIND ME A FUCKING WARLOCK TO INTERROGATE AND I’LL GET YOU A DAMN ANSWER!”

BA looked sad as she spoke “Emmaline just disappeared. We were fighting together; she was there one second then the next she just was gone.” Bexley cleared her throat, “Well, I’ll just pop the preggos out. Cousin, please calm down.” Haley ignored her, “SOMEONE BRING ME A WARLOCK NOW!”

I heard leaves crunch as Bexley popped away. I was on that person in seconds. I pulled him from behind the tree he was

desperately trying to hide in. I snarled, “WHERE IS MY MATE?” He tried to squirm away, “I don’t know, man. She was supposed to be with Satan’s coven, but... But that crazy chick is holding their leader’s head in her hands!”

I heard the crunch of food. I yelled, “DYLAN, FOR GOD’S SAKE!” Dylan asked, “Do you want some? He just called Haley crazy. This moment DEMANDS popcorn. It’s about to go down.” Haley popped away from Eric who had her wrapped up in his arms. She grabbed my arm and popped me and warlock back to our group.

She stomped her foot, “I AM NOT CRAZY! ERIC! He called me crazy! ME!” She reared her arm back and hit the warlock with the dead man’s head in her hand. Dylan linked me, “OH MY GOD! That was amazing. I need her to do it again. I have my video recording going now.” She actually hit someone with a severed head. Damn.

Haley demanded to know, “WHERE is Emmaline? I swear to GOD if you ask who that is, I’m going to have my husband and Lucas do terrible things to you. Bjourn has been working on a new torture technique, something with skin peeling. He can do that to you.”

Bjourn teased, “Something with skin peeling, sister?” Haley yelled, “IT WAS A LONG ASS EXPLANATION! I was doing fifteen other things. I got the important details skin and peeling. That’s not the point right now. WHERE THE FUCK IS MY COUSIN?”

The warlock answered, “With David.” Haley yelled, “FUCKER! BA!” An arrow pierced through the man’s leg. He screamed in pain. Haley snapped her fingers in front of the man’s face. “Look at me you worthless whimpering warlock.”

The man looked her in the eyes. She asked again, “WHERE is Emmaline?” The man told her, “David has a special hiding place. It was always his goal to get her there with his other prisoner.” Haley tilted her head, “Other prisoner?” The warlock winced, “I’m not high level yet, I don’t know all the secrets. If Jaron is still alive, he knows.”

Haley took a deep breath then asked, “And what pray tell, whimpering warlock, does Jaron look like?” The man actually smiled at her, “Red hair, tall guy, always wears a green shirt.” Dustin took off running yelling over his shoulder, “Ryan has him. I’ll be right back.”

Haley looked at me, “He’s all yours, my lion.” I punched the man. He screamed, “WAIT! I told you what I know!” I asked, “Do I look like I care? You helped take my mate from me!” I hit him and he flew into a tree. It broke his spine and his breathing labored.

Dylan chastised me, “He may be a warlock Lucas, but you still have to treat their bodies like fragile humans... You broke that one. He’s as good as dead. Next time, don’t throw them into a tree.” I growled.

Dylan assured me, “There’s plenty more around here for you to torture. Don’t you worry.” He threw popcorn at me, “Who’s a good boy? Dominic is a good boy. Dylan brought treats for you this time.” Dominic growled at him.

Haley broke our conversation, “Ben, how certain are you your sister is dead?” Ben was astonished, “You know me?” Haley brushed his surprise off, “I know everything about Axel Price. That includes members of his fucking family. You are obviously not dead. Are you positive Alexa is?” Ben answered, “I held her body in my arms.”

Haley pointed out, “A stasis spell could let you do that while she was still alive. How long did you hold her body? Were you always with said body until you buried it?” Ben stammered, “No... I woke up and she was dead next to me. No... I’m sorry I can’t hope she’s alive. I’ve been searching for my niece this whole time, but I didn’t know what name Alexa chose for her.”

Haley looked up at the sky, “Fairy goddess Azoney please don’t let this be going where I think it is. JUST ONE TIME could something not get twisty curvy fucking sideways. Just this once.” Blade said, “Is twisty. Is fairy side. Princess knows. Princess tells.”

Eric questioned, “Angel, what do you think?” Haley sighed, “It’s just a theory, but it just feels right.” Dylan linked me, “It’s about to get so good. I already have tears in my eyes from whatever beautiful theory she’s about to spit out.” Ryan walked over with Jaron.

Bjourn commented, “Sister, tell us what you think.” Haley theorized, “Alexa is the other prisoner of David’s. It makes sense. Ben said he has a niece. David’s mate gave birth to their daughter. She discovered David’s depraved nature and did what any good fucking mother would do. She hid her daughter from her father. David kept Alexa alive in the hopes that she would tell him where their child is. Because he’s a complete moron who thinks mothers are like my mom and Emmaline’s. Now, that means that the child is older than Dustin. How many years older than Dustin is she, Ben?”

Ben frowned but answered, “She’s twenty-eight. My sister had her when she was sixteen.” Haley yelled, “OH FOR GOD’S SAKE THIS FUCKING REALM! Twenty-eight. What witch recently showed up in our lives that was twenty fucking eight years old.”

Ben startled, “Was?” I was astonished, “No way.” Dylan gasped, “OH MY GOD, YES!” Dustin said, “Emmeline Ryder.” Ben’s head snapped, “NO! No, my niece isn’t dead! Not after everything my sister did to protect her! I’ll wring David’s neck with my bare hands!”

Haley turned to the prisoner Ryan had, “Jaron, is Alexa Price David’s other prisoner?” Jaron answered, “Yes, the bitch won’t tell David where his true child is. She is the child from his wick. She belongs with David.” Ryan put the pieces together, “Emmeline Ryder was our half-sister. Charlie Rose....” Dustin finished his thought, “Is our niece.”

Ben had tears in his eyes, “I’m a great uncle?” Haley answered, “Yes, but Charlie Rose stays where she fucking is. You will NOT take her. She is where Emmeline wanted her. Don’t be a dick, Ben.” Ben shook his head, “No, of course not. I just want to be in her life.” Haley shrugged, “That’s not my call. I’m not her parent, and she’s not in my pack. Jaron, where is this prison?”

Dylan linked me, “She asks such good questions. You just have to love her.” Jaron answered, “I don’t know. I’ve only been there through a holoport.” Haley sighed, “Jaron, Jaron, don’t hold back on me. What DO you know about the place Alexa and Emmaline are being held in?”

Jaron ground out, “It’s below ground, and surrounded by magic. Alexa almost escaped a few times. Now she can’t do magic outside the cells. Recently, David reinforced the cage with iron so no fairy could pop in or out.” Haley paled, “No fairy except...”

Haley started speaking in Latin to her brothers. I linked Eric. “What’s going on?” Eric sounded concerned, “Haley is afraid one of our pups will go to Emmaline. They get feelings like she does.” Bjourn got out his phone after several moments he paled.

Dylan shook his head, “I do not have a good feeling. ABORT! ABORT! EVERYONE RUN FOR YOUR LIVES!” Bjourn confirmed, “Alexander popped out.” Haley started to cry. Eric went to her, “He’s fine. We will get him. He’s probably just with my parents.” Haley shook her head, “He’s not. I know he’s not. I’m his mother. I should’ve known.” Eric wrapped her into his arms assuring her, “No Angel, this isn’t your fault.”

Haley took out her phone and spoke in rapid fealish. Aiden popped in. He looked worried. I didn’t like that at all. He asked, “Sister? You are sure?” Haley yelled, “PERFORM THE FUCKING CHARM, AIDEN!” She cut open her hand with a dagger. Eric growled.

Jackson announced, “Alexander isn’t at home with mom or dad.” Aiden looked at Haley with caution, “We can do the locator spell, he’s your son.” Haley agreed, “You’re right. He is MY son, and you will do the damn charm I asked for. Right now! That MONSTER will NOT TOUCH MY SON! If Alexander is gone, Cassie and EJ will follow him. None of us can stop them. He sensed something and went to Emmaline. I KNOW he did. I can feel it in my very core. DO THE CHARM!”

He looked conflicted. Haley begged, “Aiden, please brother. I beg this of you. I can’t do it. You know that and so do I. YOU are the only fairy powerful enough to make it work. We have NO idea where they are. He’s my little boy, and he is in the depraved clutches of a man who helped witches torture partial fairies. Alexander is a partial fairy and an untrained baby. Help me, brother. Please. I will do ANYTHING.”

I didn’t understand what was going on. I told her, “Haley, Gunner can track Emmaline’s ring.” Haley waved me off, “David is too smart. Gunner’s not going to be able to get a lock. Brother... send me to my child.” Bjourn begrudgingly stated, “Cassie and EJ are gone now too.” Eric growled.

Haley had tears streaming down her face. She fell to her knees pleading, “Brother, please.” Aiden cautioned, “Haley it’s old and ancient magic, it could hurt you.” She stated, “I don’t fucking care. That is my cousin and my children that are in danger.”

Bexley popped back in. She looked around frowning. She huffed, “I was gone for ten minutes. What the hell happened?” Dylan answered, “So much Bexley. So damn much.” Eric spoke cautiously, “Wait, what are you doing, Angel?”

Haley never took her eyes off Aiden when she answered, “Saving our family.” Aiden locked eyes with his sister. “I will help you. I will do this for you and OUR family. Everyone in danger is my family too. Only IF you agree to call upon my protection when you arrive where I send you.”

Haley shook her head, “Jaron over there said it’s reinforced by iron, you could get hurt.” Aiden frowned, “I will live. We will be brought to the area you are in if not directly to you. A call to protection would never take me to iron. It takes you to the closet point you can safely be.” Something Haley was probably never taught. Haley huffed, “Fine.”

She turned, “BA, go for your romantic weekend with your new lover man friend.” BA had tears in her eyes, “No, I go where you go.” Haley shook her head, “No, you’re going to do this for you. You deserve to have fun. I will get Emmaline; I promise you that. You go.”

BA declined to leave, “I’m staying and fighting with you. The trip isn’t until tomorrow. My man lover friend said he wouldn’t leave without me. He has a plane, I guess. It doesn’t leave if he doesn’t want it to.”

Dylan linked, “THE CLUES. We have a rich lover. I’m on it.” Of course, he was. Haley sighed, “Fine, but you will be on that plane with lover man. I’ve never seen you this happy. You light up when you talk about him. Don’t mess it up with our crazy lives.”

BA hugged Haley. She whispered, “You are the little sister I always wanted but never had. Where you go, I go. If you concoct some crazy plan, I will be there by your side putting it into play. My brother already knows the SHIT he’s in for not telling me you were taken. If anything, ever happens to you again, I’ll be there. Any man who doesn’t understand that can take a hike. My man lover friend won’t be the man I think he is if he doesn’t understand that.” Haley wiped her tears.

Haley turned around and hugged Eric. He asked her again, “Angel, what are you doing?” Haley explained, “Using my blood and Aiden’s powers to take me to our children.” Aiden snorted, “Wow, make an ancient special fairy ritual sound a bit more basic, little sister.” Haley snapped back, “I’m running low on patience and time, brother. Explain it after I’m gone.”

Dylan linked, “Mmm that’s no good. She doesn’t want GAP to know because... it’s bad. UGH! To say something or not. Whose bad side do I want to be on? His. I’m always on his. She loves me and wouldn’t stay mad too long.” I was about to reply when movement caught my eye. More of Haley’s brothers had shown up. Dominic huffed in my head, “At least we saw it.” Only because they didn’t care to hide.

Aiden retorted, “I won’t have time to explain because you will call upon my protection, and I will bring this group with me.” Haley looked right at him, “Right, there’s that. We can explain later then.” Haley conjured three blankets to her. She wiped her blood on all of them and gave them to Aiden.

Eric’s voice was hard when he spoke, “Aiden, do not hurt my wife.” Aiden rolled his eyes, “Or you’ll kill me blah, blah,

blah. I'm immune to your threats, wolf. They are so boring to me now."

Dylan linked me, "Let's keep him too. He makes that little vein in Eric's forehead pop out." I pleaded, "Please for the love of all that's good in this world... do not say that out loud." Dylan raised an eyebrow in my direction, "Do I look like an idiot to you? I time my comments to perfection. GAP over there can't handle my hilarity right now."

I thought about it then asked, "Have you read what ritual they are talking about?" Dylan pouted, "Oddly this ritual is not in the book about the history of fairies. I know their blood calls to itself. The strongest tie is that of a child or sibling. The basic blood one finds their blood. It can only be used for one family member. Once it's decided and used they can always find that person using their blood. Haley's not going with that one though. Bexley is getting paler by the second though as they gather these odd supplies. Seriously, blades of grass? I love this so much. You have been fairy experted. You're welcome." I rolled my eyes.

I linked Jackson, "Dylan pointed out Bexley is getting pale." Jackson replied, "As is Aiden. Lucinda just popped in behind that tree." I turned as did Eric. Bjourn wasn't in the mood, "Whatever fairy just popped in, you might as well come out. We all know you are there."

Dylan disagreed, "Haley didn't know." He got several glares that he smiled at. Lucinda stepped out and questioned, "Sister-in-law, are you certain?" Haley whispered, "If it was Aiylee or Fenilton, what would you do?" Lucinda evaluated Haley for several moments. She turned to her mate, "Send her if you can, Aiden." Aiden spoke to her in fealish and she snapped back at him.

Dylan linked me, "OHHHHH Relationship fight! She sided with his sister. I NEED TO KNOW FEALISH!" I remembered, "Eric does." Dylan huffed, "OF COURSE he does. He better get me a fealish book."

I smirked, "Maybe someone got a copy for you for your birthday. Maybe when we get Emmaline back, I'll give it to

you as a best man gift instead.” Dylan winked at me, “I love you, Lucas. There are no other words. Wait... yes there are. BEST FRIEND EVER! I will never say anything bad about you again. Not even about you being a schedule tyrant. Now, be a good boy and get GAP to tell you what they said to each other and I’ll give you a treat.”

I sighed but still asked my friend, “Eric, what did they say?” Eric replied tersely, “Aiden said, Lucinda you were supposed to be on my side. Lucinda said you are not a mother; you do not understand... She needs to get to her children. Aiden said David cannot harm them; they are too powerful. Lucinda said those are not the thoughts of a mother. She needs to go to them because they are her babies.”

I asked, “Are you ok?” Eric glared at the sky, “No, I can’t tell her not to go. Those are my pups, but she’s my Angel. The four of them are my world and I can’t go with her. There’s a war within me. This will hurt her, that much we all know. Her Hackura brothers are trying every possible way to track down Emmaline and the triplets, but Gunner is hitting walls. He’s moving mountains, but he’s not going to be faster than Aiden and Haley. I don’t know what to do. It is not a feeling I experience often.”

I sympathized, “I know. Emmaline is in David’s clutches, and I feel exhausted. She won’t let anything happen to your children before Haley gets there.” Eric agreed, “I know. I’m sorry we didn’t get to her in time.” I winced, “I failed her again. I even sent Dylan ahead. He’s the fastest outside of you and me.” Eric stated, “You didn’t fail her.” I admitted, “It feels like I did. He has her, and I am here.”

Ben broke the silence in the field, “Princess, Alexa is with Emmaline. Neither of whom would let harm come to your children. I studied Evelyn and before I knew she was Emmaline, I studied her too. Both my sister and your cousin will protect your children with everything they have.”

Haley turned and glared at him. If looks could kill, he’d be dead. Haley stated, “I don’t have any sense of decorum right now, Ben Price. Don’t push me.” Dylan whispered, “Push her. DO IT BEN FOR ME!” Ben wisely remained silent.

Dylan linked me, “He’s cruel, and I don’t like him. Let’s give him to GAP. He looks murderous again.” Bjourn tried reasoning with her, “Haley, Gunner just needs more time.” Haley wasn’t having it, “I’m sorry, brother, but I can’t do that. I would pop to them if they weren’t surrounded by iron. I tried to pop to Emmaline when she was taken from BA and me. I was forcefully thrown back. I couldn’t even get near the area she’s in. Emmaline hasn’t called upon my protection, so I can’t use that magic to their location. I need to get to my children.”

I asked cautiously, “What if they aren’t with Emmaline?” Haley snarked, “Then the grass is purple, and the leaves are pink. The land I envisioned living in as a child is real. I will throw a parade and name myself queen of the land.” Several people’s jaws dropped. Lucinda and Bexley laughed softly.

Dylan snapped his fingers, “OHHH SNAP! She did warn us not to push her. Well, she warned Ben.” Eric linked me, “She doesn’t mean anything by it. She’s just worried.” I replied, “I’m not offended.”

Marcus addressed Haley, “Don’t get hurt, little one.” Blade spoke in Latin to Bjourn. Bjourn asked, “Aiden, can you send Blade with her?” Aiden haughtily responded, “Aiden doesn’t know if Aiden can send Haley.”

Haley emphatically stated, “Yes you fucking can! I know you can.” Aiden stared at her. Haley turned to her guard, “Blade, you can come with Aiden when I call him. I promise you all that when I get there, I’ll call on him for his help.” I noticed she didn’t say right when she got there. The narrowing of several eyes told me I was not alone in that.

Aiden sighed, “Well, let’s get this show on the road.” Dylan clapped, “You got that saying right, King Fire Hands.” Aiden half smiled, “This Google has been helping me with sayings here. Our realm is a buzz about this Google.” Eric groaned, “Great now fairies are using Google. What’s fucking next?” Dylan whispered, “Something else amazing.” Eric glared at him.

Lucinda surrounded Aiden and Haley in a ring of sugar. Jaron sneered, “You fairies act so much better than everyone,

and you use salt too.” Haley hissed. Bexley chimed in, “It’s sugar.” Haley popped over to Jaron. She picked him up and threw him into a tree. He groaned in pain but didn’t die like the man I’d thrown.

Haley pursed her lips, “DAMN IT! Eric, please throw him into something and crush his bones since I apparently can’t.” Eric walked over to her and kissed her. He pulled back, “I’ll take care of it, Angel. You take care of yourself and our pups. When I get there, I want you all to be fine.” Haley smiled, “I’ll do my best.”

Eric picked up the man and threw him roughly into a tree. Dylan winced, “Ouch. Sympathy pains. Now Jaron is very dead. Dead, dead, dead.” Marcious popped in, “I heard this ritual would be happening. I missed the last one, so I wanted to see if this one worked.”

Haley waved her hand towards Ben, “Talk to Ben Price about how much you’re going to want to join team kill David Fucking Forrester.” Marcious said, “Dear cousin, I have wanted to kill the man for years...” He tailed off looked across the field, “Is... that... June?”

He popped and cradled June’s dead body in his arms. He rocked her back and forth, “Not like this. You weren’t supposed to die, June.” He cried. Aiden softly commanded, “Lucinda.” Lucinda squeezed his shoulders, “I will take care of Marcious sorrow.”

Haley instructed “Ben, go tell him about Maribella. That will bring his anger forward so he can focus.” Ben and Lucinda walked away. I noticed another fairy following Lucinda. He nodded to Aiden. Dylan linked, “Queens Guard. He’s a member of the fairy queen’s guard. If this was not such a serious situation, I would be living my best life. I was already team kill David, but now he’s messing with such epic moments. RELEASE GAP EVERYONE!” I snorted.

Haley laid out the triplet’s blankets with her blood inside the circle. Our group got closer together. Dylan nudged Eric, “You could’ve stopped her.” Everyone stared at him. He

shrugged, "I'm not saying you should have. I'm saying any one of you could've stopped her and you didn't."

Bjourn spoke, "We could not have stopped her." Astrid agreed with her mate, "He's right. They couldn't stop her from going after Torvi, even though Titus commanded the royal family to stay put. She still went. She could've popped away to Aiden instead of calling him to come here. This way we are going right after her. This is her including us."

Dylan sighed, "Alright fine. You and your accurate, annoying logic couldn't have stopped her. GAP could've stopped her." Eric growled, "What would you have me do? They are my pups! She is my mate! TELL me Dylan, what would you do?"

Dylan smirked, "The same thing you are. I just wanted you back to your murderous rage stage. Your silent brooding 'what do I do' complex you had going on is unsettling, and I didn't like it. I decided murderous GAP is better. It's comforting, you know? We all know him. I can't say I love him, but I do respect murderous GAP."

Jackson huffed, "Really, Dylan?" Dylan smiled, "You can ask around. We took a vote. I am but the people's vessel to bring GAP back to his natural state of being. It's not a fun job, but someone has to do it."

He only stopped because the circle around Aiden and Haley began to glow purple. Bexley spoke in wonder, "It's going to work. Oh... my... gosh..." Haley started to chant, and the blades of grass began to float around them. Aiden chanted louder and the grass began to swirl around Haley. She cut her hand again. Eric growled when Haley began to glow red.

Dylan voiced everyone thoughts, "Umm... red does NOT seem like a good color to glow." Eric glowered at him. Dylan frowned, "What? You were thinking it too. Besides, there's a fairy here who can tell us I'm right."

Bexley answered evasively, "Red means it's working." Dylan wasn't having that, "Ah, evasive. But it's not a good

color to glow, is it?” Bexley finally admitted, “It’s painful.” Eric gritted his teeth, “So we can all tell.”

I looked over. All the Hackura’s eyes were blazing gold. Bjourn’s phone rang. He answered, “We couldn’t stop her, dad. I know. I know. Okay.” He hung up. It was still weird I couldn’t hear the other side of that conversation.

Logan never took his eyes off Haley but asked, “Dad’s coming, isn’t he?” Bjourn replied, “What do you think?” Dylan shouted, “OH MY GOD! The King of the Hackura is coming. Bexley, we need clothes. We can’t meet him naked! I’m covered in blood. Please help me, oh fairy with the powers of snap.” Bexley laughed and snapped us all into clothes and clear of blood.

Bjourn raised an eyebrow, “My dad would give a shit less about your state of dress.” Dylan gasped as if scandalized, “Bite your tongue, creepy ninja. I care. Presentation matters when a king is present.” I pointed out, “Bjourn is the future King.”

Dylan said, “I did not think of that... Future king is not the king. When he’s king I’ll make sure to be well kept in his presence.” Bjourn evenly replied, “Good, I was worried. It keeps me up at night.” Dylan linked me, “He cracked a joke. The future king of the Hackura cracked a joke in our presence. OUR LIVES ARE AMAZING!”

The blankets began to glow next. A pulsating swirl appeared in the middle of the area then King Titus stepped through the portal. Eric asked, “Was Gunner able to track Emmaline yet?” King Titus frowned, “No, Gunner is cursing up a storm at a computer telling it and I quote ‘David you fucker I will get you. I’m better.’ Harper is rubbing his shoulders telling him he can do it.” Bjourn acknowledged, “He will.”

King Titus agreed, “I know. My poor baby is in so much pain.” Dylan commented, “Then her poker face is out of this world.” I admitted, “It is.” I linked my friend, “Eric?” Eric brokenly replied, “It’s like when she was being tortured.”

Lucinda explained quietly, “Her blood is pulling her to the children. The further they are the harder the pull.” Titus surmised, “I’d imagine it’s far then.” Lucinda said, “I would imagine you are right. Dustin, could your father have them in another realm?”

Dustin looked pissed, “Apparently he worked with fairies.” Eric growled. Lucinda shook her head, “No, they can’t be in Faerie. Aiden revoked all protections Fabian had in place. He placed an enchantment in Faerie. Those seeking shelter that Fabian granted in our realm were brought to us or will be if they try to enter with a traitor to the crown. David is absolutely not in Faerie.”

I speculated, “They could be in Hell. He could be working with demons.” Lucinda winced, “I hope not.” Eric quickly asked, “Why?” Lucinda said, “That will be a rough journey for my sister-in-law. Hopefully, David is somewhere in this realm.”

Haley was pulled off the ground and she began to spin in a circle until she was several feet above Aiden. Red started to shoot out of her fingertips, even her eyes. Eric grabbed onto Jackson’s shoulder with one arm. He winced.

Dylan said, “I officially hate this plan.” Titus closed his eyes, gritting his teeth. Dylan yelled, “WORST PLAN EVER!” Suddenly, Haley disappeared with a pop that sounded like an explosion. The purple force shot out from the sugar circle. Aiden’s eyes shot open in shock. He looked around and blinked, then whispered in disbelief, “It worked.”

He jumped up yelling, “LUCINDA! IT WORKED! Haley was right!” He picked up his mate and spun her in a circle. Eric growled at them. Bexley put her hand on his shoulder, “Kujo, this is big deal. This means he’s the strongest King to sit on the throne of Faerie in over five hundred years. He’s actually stronger than that king, and Haley knew it would work. I...”

Eric interrupted her, “Why don’t I like the sound of that last part?” Aiden joyously called, “Because you will not like it. Not one bit.”

Dylan gasped then yelled, "OH MY GOD!" He clapped a hand over his mouth. Aiden asked, "What is it, Beta Dylan?" Dylan quickly said, "I left the stove on, and I just remembered. I need to link someone before I burn our house down." Aiden laughed. If I wasn't watching him, I wouldn't have known he wasn't telling the truth.

I linked Dylan, "Liar." Dylan scolded, "I can't let him know I know what that means! He'd know I have my precious and would take it from me. It's not in my secret lair yet."

Eric linked me, "What does Dylan know?" I replied, "He's read the fairy book cover to cover five times. He knows what it means." Eric growled, "What does it mean?" I sighed, "One second."

Aiden and Lucinda were beside themselves, and even Bexley seemed happy. Marcious was clearly in a state of shock. I linked Dylan again, "What does that mean? Why are they so happy?" Dylan explained, "That means Aiden is like... crazy powerful. There's a passage that speaks of a prophecy about siblings. One will possess the ancient powers of the Fae." I surmised, "Which obviously, Aiden just did."

Dylan agreed, "Yes, I think he did." I asked, "What is Haley in the prophecy besides one of the siblings?" Dylan instructed me, "Ask GAP if Haley can sense if other partial fairies can do magic?" I snorted, "You just want him to hit you then? Fine, I'll do it."

I linked Eric, "Dylan said there's a prophecy about siblings. Can Haley sense magic within other partial fairies?" Eric answered, "Yes, can't all fairy's do that?" I replied, "I'm getting the sense that they cannot. Hold please." I was a damn middleman because we couldn't talk out loud with Aiden here.

I linked Dylan, "Haley can in fact sense magic in partial fairies." Dylan winced, "She's not just sensing it." Eric linked me, "Why did he wince? WHAT IS GOING ON?" I ordered, "Dylan, explain quickly."

Dylan nudged me, "Bottom line, and keep in mind I have SO MUCH MORE information about this. The siblings and their family will rule Faerie forever. They are powerful, but

people try to hurt them. They have enemies everywhere, but when they stand together they cannot be defeated. Literally Lucas. Haley can take their powers, that's part of what the other siblings does. She's sensing magic in partial fairies." I was getting a headache.

Dylan continued, "They can all do magic because she's unknowingly calling it forth in their blood. Being in her presence and her desire for them to do magic if they want to is pushing their Fae sides forward. If she wanted to, she could remove it. The sibling with that power is said to be pure of heart. For others would abuse it if they possessed the power. The sibling who is pure of heart will be determined worthy by ALL the goddesses and gods. Not just the fairy goddess. It sounds just like Haley. How did I not see that? I will chastise myself thusly after some much needed sleep."

I pointed out, "Haley knew then. When she told Aiden, he could do it. She knew he'd know too once she was gone." Dylan said, "She's a mom. It was more important to get to her pups than to hide that this was their destiny. GAP will shit bricks. His pups are a part of that prophecy. So are Aiden's for that matter. One of Eric and Haley's kids will have the power of sight. The strongest power of sight that Faerie has ever seen..." Shit.

I linked Eric, "You're going to hate this." Eric growled sarcastically stating, "Great. I love sentences that start that way." I explained it to him. He was shaking in anger. He closed his eyes for several minutes.

Eventually he yelled out loud, "Aiden, tell me why you are FUCKING DANCING NOW!" Eric's anger shook the trees. Dylan linked me, "Does he not believe me? I AM THE RESIDENT FAIRY EXPERT!" I assured him, "He believes you. He wants to see what Aiden will tell him." Dylan started crunching on popcorn satisfied with that answer.

Aiden said, "Be of good cheer, wolf of my sisters! Haley and your children will be fine. So will Emmaline. We all have a part to play in this our destiny. Marcious! Celebrations must ring out in Faerie! Our houses will be around forever, dear cousin!"

I asked, “What does Emmaline have to do with your circle of sugar and light show?” I linked Dylan, “What is he saying?” Dylan admitted, “I don’t know. The book said there was more detail in another book, and I don’t have that book. I only know about the siblings in more detail and their kids. Despite my best efforts, the plan to sell my soul for more fairy information has not gotten off the ground yet. I’ve been busy running around looking for my pregnant mate and our Luna.” I knew he’d still try when we got home.

Aiden told me, “Haley and I are the promised siblings. Arion....well....he was too. I can’t... believe it. If I had not gotten over myself and repaired my relationship with Haley, this might’ve taken centuries to realize. She told me how to unlock my power which paved the way to here. She herself didn’t even realize what we were until her children were in perceived danger. This moment pushed her to realize who we are.”

I glanced at Eric and knew Aiden was wrong. Haley knew long before this moment. Jackson’s face briefly showed it. I didn’t know how long she’d known, but it was before now. Her children being in danger just made her tell her brother.

Aiden continued, “Emmaline is the soul searcher of Marcious line. She is my cousin, and her line will continue and be a powerful group. One of your own daughters will also be a soul searcher wolf. Possibly more than one. You have a son coming that is quite important to the water Fae as well.” I yelled, “Excuse me?”

Marcious spoke, “Once the promised siblings come into play whatever line carries the soul searcher, is the chosen line. Haley is the pure of heart sibling. Emmaline is the pure of soul and mind soul searcher. My baby.... Is the pure of soul and mind promised one. My line.... I never thought...”

Aiden laughed, “Now that I think about it, OF COURSE we are the promised family. My sister is the truth seeker, we have a cousin who’s the soul searcher, and another cousin is the chameleon.” Bexley gasped “ME? You’re talking about me?”

Aiden nodded, “No one but you possess that power in all of Faerie, Bexley. You are in the prophecy as well cousin, as are YOUR children.” Bexley wiped a tear away at his praise. He stepped towards her and extended a hand, “As King of Faerie, I grant you the title you were owed since birth. You are of the royal Sky and Earth houses, Bexley Fagan. You will now be known as Duchess Bexley Fagan Holloran.” A golden light flowed from Aiden to Bexley. He spoke in Fealish to her. Tears coursed down Bexley’s cheeks.

I linked Eric, “What the fuck is happening?” Eric explained, “He’s blessing her as a Royal.” Bexley wiped her tears, “If only my favorite cousin was here to see this.” I linked Eric, “Why didn’t Haley grant it to her?” Eric answered, “Only the King or Queen can.” He’d clearly asked the same question.

Bjourn’s phone rang again Eric questioned, “What does that mean, pure of heart?” Aiden was all too happy to tell him, “Haley can take people’s magic away, it’s rare.” Eric snorted, “Of fucking course it is. How rare?”

Marcious answered, “No other fairy has been pure enough of heart to be deemed worthy to possess it. Nor has any fairy been deemed worthy to continue the line of soul searchers. It passes from family to family among the water Fae. Emmaline’s power is going to keep growing. Her daughter will be the strongest soul searcher our people have ever seen next to my daughter. I should’ve known when she told me that my second chance mate was out there.”

Eric recapped, “So Haley, Emmaline, Aiden, and Bexley are now incredibly rare fairies. Is that what we are saying?” Aiden laughed, “Essentially.” Bjourn commented, “Wonderful.” Blade said, “Is trouble. Need Serion. Will help. Why King still here?” Bjourn agreed, “We can assign Serion to help. Excellent question Blade. Aiden why hasn’t Haley called on you?”

Aiden waved his hands dismissively, “She’s probably still traveling to the children. All is well my friends. Actually, all is more than well.”

Dylan cut in, “Ok I’ll be the first to ask. Who is Serion? Is another creepy ninja going to pop up behind me and make me jump five feet? I’ve got to tell you all... it’s getting embarrassing. I’m a Beta wolf. I can’t be jumping up like a scaredy cat every fifteen minutes.”

Bjourn answered, “Serion is Blade’s mate. Blade has worked with him to be a guard. His evaluation with me is next week to join Haley’s guard. It’s going to have to get bumped up now that my sister is some super fucking rare fairy who can take people’s powers, should she so choose. I can already imagine the efforts that will come out of the woodwork to take her.”

Dylan tilted his head, “But... this problem solved then, right? Haley can just take David’s power away. If anyone deserves it... he does.” Marcious tapped his chin, “She’s untrained, but her children are threatened along with her cousin. She loves all four of those people. It’s intense enough of an emotion for her to use an unknown power.”

BA spoke, “Oh my god. She’s already done it.” We all turned. Aiden asked, “Is that the Black Arrow? I did hear you were friends with my sister.” Evasive. He definitely knew who BA was, and that she was friends with Haley. Lucinda squealed, “WE ARE GOING TO HAVE THE BEST DINNER PARTY, AIDEN!”

Dylan said, “Were you guys not in the kitchen when they tumbled in at Thanksgiving?” Aiden glared at me, “I’d stepped out for a moment to come up with a plan with Bexley and Lucinda to keep Emmaline’s sorrow from spiraling. I missed my sister’s entrance.”

Eric ignored them, “BA, what are you talking about?” Lucinda squealed, “YOU CALL HER BA? Aiden! We will have the party of the century!” BA explained, “On thanksgiving, we were in a jam. A mintor was about to cut me with her nails.” I winced.

Dustin asked, “A what now? What the fuck is that?” Dylan giddily answered him, “Mintor’s look like humans, but they have long poisonous nails. They are something like a sorcerer.

Their nails inject a poison into the skin. It is lethal to the hood specifically. Mintor's are their mortal enemies."

BA agreed, "Basically, yes Beta Dylan is right. We've been fighting against them for years. Haley screamed when the lady mintor was about to scratch me. A gold mist came out of her hands. The mintor scratched me, I thought I didn't feel the pain of the poison because Haley healed me seconds after I'd been scratched. It didn't click until now."

Aiden clapped his hands together, "She's marvelous, my little sister. Even without training! It's pure instinct. It's because she's embracing her fairy side. Fully accepting it now instead of fighting it." Bjourn sneered, "Yes, I do wonder why she wouldn't have been embracing it all these years." Several fairies winced.

Bjourn turned back, "BA you're saying Haley took the mintor's power?" BA considered, "I'm saying she took away the mintor's poisonous nails from her. The mintor still cast a spell before Haley killed her." Eric looked pissed. I'm sure I looked similarly at this point.

Titus' phone rang. He answered, "Gunner, we need good news. It's been a wealth of... wonderful information... on this end." Titus was quiet for a moment then said, "Well done, Gunner."

Aiden looked towards the east, "We have to go, Haley is calling to me." Eric growled, "Where are they? WHERE IS MY FAMILY?" I echoed him "Where is my mate?" Titus said, "Rostov-on-Don, Russia."

We all gaped. Dylan spoke first, "I didn't even think to bring my passport. I will tie it to my ankle from now on. Dasvidaniya!" We all stared at him, "What? It's the only Russian word I know from the *Anastasia* movie Emmaline just made us watch for her birthday."

I grabbed Dylan then grabbed onto Aiden. Eric did the same with everyone else. I spoke, "Let's go bring our mates home, and end David Forrester once and for all." Because by god, that man was going to die when I saw him.

Unexpected visitors

Emmaline glared at David as he stepped into the light right next to the cell. Alexa spoke, “How long will he not be able to hear us?” I smiled admitting, “Until I uncharm the area.” Alexa said, “If you don’t mind, I would like to taunt him about his precious June being dead.” I winced.

Her eyes softened, “I’m sorry.” I bit my lip, “I’ve been pissed at her for years. I never thought she’d die protecting me though. You’ve been trapped here for twenty-six years. You’re owed a taunt or two.”

I spoke my chant so David could hear us again. I nodded to Alexa who smirked, “So David, I hear your precious June is no more. She even died saving her lovechild, how poetic.” David hissed, “DO NOT SPEAK HER NAME!”

Alexa got angry, “YOU WASTED my entire life! I have been stuck here for twenty-six years! I was your wick, David! I loved you since I was twelve years old. WHY wasn’t I enough? Why did you need June? You always planned to have us both, I know you did!”

I searched David’s soul, “She’s right. Your soul feels slightly guilty because of words, but you always planned to have them both.” David hissed, “Stay out of my soul!” I taunted, “Make me. Oh wait, you can’t.”

David chanted under his breath. Rattlesnakes appeared in the cage... angry rattlesnakes. Alexa sounded bored, “How original, snakes again.” I held out my hands and froze them all. I winced, “I did not want to do that. Why did you put snakes in here that could kill us?” David hissed, “HOW do you still have your powers?”

I sighed. I couldn’t lie, but my power to turn iron to water was cool. I evaded, “I’m awesome. Answer Alexa’s question David, it’s only fair.” David yelled, “BECAUSE I LOVED HER, OK! I loved June! Why do you think I was so upset she

cheated on me and conceived you? You ruined EVERYTHING FOR ME!”

Alexa nudged me, “Let’s be best friends Emmaline, my dear. I do so LOVE anyone who ruins something for David.” I rolled my eyes, “So you wanted to have my mother and your mate. But my mother couldn’t have her mate too? Hypocrite.”

David grabbed onto the bars yelling, “I SHOULD HAVE BEEN EVERYTHING TO HER!” I sighed, “So in answer to my question, that would be a yes. She couldn’t have you and my dad, but you wanted Alexa and my mom. How was that going to work?” David frowned, “They would’ve accepted it eventually.”

Alexa snorted, “We have known each other our whole lives, you don’t truly believe that.” I searched his soul then agreed, “He doesn’t.” David glared at me, “Evelyn, I told you to stay out of my soul.” I countered, “And I told you to make me.”

I studied Alexa then told her, “Your second chance mate is out there. A warlock. He’s a good man, and he will love you.” I don’t know how I knew that, but I did. David hissed, “SHE’S MINE!” Alexa stared at me, wide eyed.

Finally, she angrily told our captor, “I am NOT yours David. I haven’t been for twenty-six years. Fairies are quite adept at keeping secrets. I did not know the soul searcher could get all those details about mates.” I frowned, “It just came to me, and it’s relatively new. I did it with my dad too. His mate is a fairy.”

David asked, “How did you do it with your dad? June JUST died protecting you!” Anger swirled in his eyes and he grabbed my shirt, yanking me to the bars. I hit my head on them. Taking advantage David wrapped his hands around my neck. He screamed at me, “YOU TOOK HER FROM ME!”

I couldn’t breathe. I braced my feet and pushed back in the opposite direction of David with all my might. David’s head hit the bars and he yelled in pain, but his hands released my neck. I took a deep breath and Alexa dragged me away from

the bars to the middle of the cell. She whispered, “He’s officially lost it. June was his last tether to sanity. Be careful.”

I rubbed my neck rasping out, “Your man killed mom, not me. My dad rejected my mom when he heard her reasons for letting me go and choosing you at my birthday party.” David was stunned, “How could he do that? June is perfect!”

Alexa snorted. I said, “You rejected your childhood sweetheart. I don’t think you can throw a rock at that glass house about rejection.” Alex added, “Was not is. June is dead.” David said, “I only rejected Alexa because she rejected me first!” I rolled my eyes, “You are an overgrown child.”

Alexa spat at him, “You were hurting innocent children! What did you expect me to do David? Blindly accept that? You planned to take June as yours all along!” They’d clearly had this argument before.

David yelled, “I’VE LOVED HER SINCE SHE WAS A CHILD! I kept her safe from Fabian since she was ten. She was always to be mine since I helped Fabian. I helped him only to SAVE JUNE!” I was confused, “What?” David said, “When I was fifteen...” Alexa hissed, “ASS!”

David ignored her, “I saw June when she was ten years old. I was captivated immediately. A man was trying to take her. I recognized him as a fairy. She had such spirit and fight within her. She was fighting the man every step the way. My instincts took over, and I killed him. She hugged me.”

He paused smiling softly to himself, “She called me her savior. I watched over her from then on. When another fairy came to take her, I spoke to him. I made a deal that I would give them other children with fairy blood. In exchange June and any of her future children would be left alone. Fabian showed up and agreed. It was then I discovered Axel has been working with Fabian all along. I always had to have June; I just did. I did love you though, Alexa. Tell me where our daughter is, and I’ll bring her to see you.”

Alexa rolled her eyes, “Sure you will. You’d slit my throat the second I told you anything about her. She’s better off

without you in her life. Even your precious children from June hate you, and the man you've become now."

I cut in, "That is SO not the story you and mom told us about how you met. You said it was AFTER your wick died tragically, but... mom never told the story. Because she couldn't lie UGH! My entire childhood feels like one big lie." David wiped his forehead. "I'M BLEEDING! YOU WILL PAY, EVELYN!" He stormed off. I called after him, "You keep saying that."

I sat down and did my space unheard chant, "Ok, so there's iron around us. I don't want to call on Haley's protection. That could hurt her. I'll communicate with my light, maybe it has an idea." Alexa pointed out, "That could call to Haley as well. Your light can communicate with your family." I thought about it, "Maybe it will call my dad...still with the iron thing. Ok... Let's think about this."

I quieted my mind and told my light what I was feeling. I was concerned about the iron hurting a member of my family. My light embraced me and then I felt it... begin to plan? My light could plan... good to know.

I smiled, "My light seems to have come up with a plan. A burst of white light flew out of me into the air. Alexa warned, "It's calling someone in your family. I used to have fairy friends." She smiled clearly remembering them. I sighed in relief then stood straight up.

Horror filled me. I yelled, "NO! NO! NO! NO! OH NO!" I began to pace. Alexa asked, "What on earth is wrong?" I whirled, "The last time someone was trapped behind iron my baby cousins popped in." A pop sounded and Alexander squealed at me.

I yelled, "OH COME ON! This is my light's plan? I'm never asking it to plan something ever again." Alexa cooed, "He's adorable, but I'm not sure why your light thinks he can help us though. He's just a baby. Though I supposed he could pop me out of the cell, but I don't have a key to let you out."

I sighed, "He's a pusher." Alexa stepped back, "Do tell him we are friends then. I like my brain all put together on the

inside of my head.” Another flash of light appeared and we both ran to the other corner of the cell as far away as we could get.

I held Alexander protectively, then smiled, “Haley! Oh, thank god...” I trailed off when Haley stood up. She was taller than me. How the hell? Alexander giggled and popped to Haley. He yelled, “MOMMA!” He put his hand on her chest, then pulled back like she’d shocked him. He popped back to me. He looked directly into my eyes, “Not Momma.”

I figured it out, “Oh my god! Bexley?” Haley frowned, “No... I am Haley. Who are you?” Umm what? I frowned, “But you’re like 5’10. Our Haley is 5’3... OH MY GOD YOU’RE A RIBBON HALEY!” Haley agreed, “Yes, it would appear I am in the Ribbon. Damn. Eric is going to flip out, along with all of Faerie. HA! They will be so jealous.”

I couldn’t stop myself from saying, “You are so tall!” Haley frowned, “I’d probably be taller, but my legs were broken once.” I muttered, “Be glad it was just once.” Haley smiled at Alexander who was regarding her cautiously.

She talked to him, “Aww, you look just like your daddy! Damn, Eric and I make cute babies.” Two more pops sounded. Haley squeaked, “TRIPLETS! I better give birth like a fairy or Eric is cut off from sex.” I assured her, “I’m pretty sure you do give birth like a fairy. What’s your story?”

EJ regarded the other Haley then declared, “Not MOMMA!” Cassie started to cry. I assured them, “Guys, it’s ok. She is a different version of your mom. She’s not a bad guy.” Cassie’s crying softened to sniffles, but EJ and Alexander were still eyeing the taller Haley with caution.

Alexa said, “I never thought it was real, but this really isn’t your version of Haley. Even her children know this isn’t her. Wow...” I said, “This is probably not what I should be doing at this moment, but I’ve got to ask again; what’s your story?”

I couldn’t hold all three of the triplets. I told them, “One of you has to pop to not momma or Alexa. Both are safe, I promise.” Cassie popped into Haley’s arms. Haley laughed,

“Not Momma, I like it. My story? Jeez. Where does one even start their story?”

I asked some questions to help get her going, “How old are you? How did you escape Fabian?” Haley’s eyes narrowed, “You know of my uncle? I suppose I do need to know this me’s reality. As for me, I’m eighteen and I was raised in Faerie for five years.” I interrupted, “So you were never experimented on or raped? That’s amazing! Our Haley will love that! What happened? How did you escape?”

Haley’s eyes blazed, “Fabian did that to me? I mean her? UGH! This is confusing already. Sorry you guys, this is my first Ribbon experience.” I shrugged, “Take your time, we are in a cell after all.” Haley looked around, “Yes, we will have to get out here soon. I don’t like it here. Anyway, Masium, Fabian, and Hexxus had beaten me really badly on my fifth birthday. They broke both my legs. I had FINALLY gotten my casts off several weeks later. Aiden took me to my appointment.”

I interrupted, “Wait, how was it explained that you got hurt? Fairies can’t lie.” Haley explained, “They didn’t lie, they evaded. Masium told Aiden I fell down the stairs, which was true. He left out that he pushed me and that was only how ONE of my legs got broken. Aiden took me to get my casts removed and told me to be careful going down the stairs. I was happy because he was teasing me. I decided I want to go catch a sprittle. Everyone else always did with their friends, but no one ever wanted to go with me.”

She sighed, “I was gone for hours. I reached a portal after I’d finally caught it. Two men came through with a very excited fairy. The two men with him weren’t fairies. Hexxus didn’t see the men enter the portal, but he did see me. He screamed at me. He called me an abomination and he went to hit me. The two men came over, their eyes were blazing gold. One grabbed me and the other killed Hexxus.”

She paused to nuzzle Cassie then continued, “The fairy who’d brought them through was smirking. I realized he was a fire fairy. He was one of my brother’s cousins. I asked him what was going on. This was when I realized I was the Truth

Seeker because he told me that he'd known Fabian had killed his cousin, who was my mother's mate, the fire fairy king. He ran into the two Hackura men he'd brought back to our realm because they'd asked about me. He asked why and they said they were my brothers. He brought them to see how I was treated. He knew it would end poorly since I was never treated well. I turned to the two men asking if it was true." Dang. I liked that reality.

Haley continued, "They confirmed it, they were my brothers. They said the man who was supposed to go on their mission got sick. They volunteered because they hoped they could run into a fairy who could tell them about me. They didn't think one would bring them to Faerie. They asked if this was an everyday occurrence or a one off. I told them bad things happen to little girls who tell."

I asked the first thing that came to mind, "Which brothers?" Haley answered, "Marcus and Evin. They asked if I wanted to go home and meet our other brothers and my dad. I asked if people would be nice to me there. They said anyone who wasn't nice to me would die. I laughed but turns out they were serious. They took me home to our realm. My dad declared war immediately. When it was circulated who murdered the King of Faerie, my mother could not handle it. Aiden took the crown. He sought peace with my dad. He came and talked to me. Marcus told me I should tell him everything that happened to me in Faerie. He promised nothing bad would happen. I told Aiden everything. Aiden agreed to turn over the offending fairy's over to my dad for peace. The war ended."

I thought about it, "Wow, so someone getting sick and your brothers going on a mission changed so much. Is your mom still alive?" Haley's eyes widened, "Yes, Is she not here?" I shook my head, "No, she's dead." Haley asked, "Who are you again?"

I dismissed that for now, "I'll answer that, you actually probably need to find your version of me. I just have one more question first." Haley smiled, "We are related. I know that from the level of comfort I feel in your presence." I nodded, "We are related." Haley giggled, "I already told you I know

that silly fairy relative of mine. What's your question? The one before I get to who you are."

I asked, "How did you meet Eric?" Haley explained, "I met Eric two weeks ago actually on my eighteenth birthday. Bjourn, he's my brother." I interjected, "I know, I've met him." Haley smiled, "Well his mate Astrid." I interjected, "Love her."

Haley laughed, "Me too! She's practically my big sister. The only one of my brothers without a mate is Logan. He's quite put out I found mine before he found his." I smirked, "I know who his mate is." Haley clapped, "OH MY FUCKING GOD! That's awesome. I love the Ribbon; we have to get to that. I can bring his mate to him as a present. His birthday is tomorrow. Anyway, Astrid's brother's son, little Cayden, wanted to meet a werewolf. Cayden's a funny little guy. I babysit him, and I'm his favorite person." That was sweet.

She waved, "That's not important. The important part is Bjourn had met a werewolf that he had wanted me to meet for the last two years. Bjourn set up a meeting with said werewolf so that Cayden could meet a wolf. Cayden demanded that I come with them. We opened a portal to Eric's backyard where he and all his brothers were on the lawn waiting to meet little Cayden. Eric growled well... he yelled too Mate. He ran to me, and we are obviously twice light bound since I am here in the Ribbon. Which concludes how Eric and I met. Now, who are you? And who is Logan's mate?"

I smiled, "I am Emmaline Richards." Haley frowned, "I don't have a cousin named Emmaline Richards." I said, "My birth name is Evelyn Forrester." Haley gasped, "They said you were dead!" I hissed, "They actually did that in your reality? Jerks! David emancipated me without my knowledge. My mom didn't choose me, she chose him. They talked about giving my siblings a body so they would stop looking for me."

Haley yelled, "OH THAT SON OF A BITCH! You had no face! Gunshot to the head. WARLOCKS! What a bunch of assholes. Now I have to get back so I can find you!" I assured her, "You can do it. My dad will help. I'm probably in Tennessee anyway. In Red Run."

Haley's jaw dropped "You're kidding me!" She paused and studied me, "You have a mark on your neck. Let me see it please!" I turned my head and Haley squealed, "YOU ARE LUCAS LYONS MATE! HE WILL DIE!"

I remembered something, "Oh god! Is Lacy Lyons sixteen yet?" Haley said, "Lacy Loo? She turned sixteen a few days ago. We have become fast friends." I advised, "Get her away from Christy! She's going to make her run away!"

Haley frowned, "Lacy did text me something was up with her friends. Lacy can't run away from me. I would just pop to her. What did Christy do?" A red glow started to form in the cell. Haley shrieked, "Oh my god!"

I asked, "What is that?" Haley said, "I'd imagine it's your me. Someone very powerful sent her here. This magic hasn't been around for many centuries, well no one who could perform it has anyway. Her blood is coming to her children." I panicked, "But this has an iron shield to it."

Haley shrugged, "Turn it to water then. You have that power, yes? You are a water fairy duchess." I said, "It works on protective wards?" Haley nodded, "Yes, talk to your light." I muttered, "I need a manual. My light and I were NOT on the same page earlier."

I sat down and thought about the iron around me turning to water. I knew the moment it worked because we all got drenched. Cassie made a sound of annoyance while Alexander and EJ giggled.

Our Haley appeared on the floor. The other Haley put her healing hands on her. When she backed away from our Haley I said, "I thought I took the iron down successfully so she wouldn't get hurt." Haley told me, "You did. I was healing her from the effects of her blood being pulled; it's painful."

Alexander popped to our Haley cooing, "MOMMA!" Her eyes snapped open, "Alexander! Do you have ANY idea how worried mommy and daddy were?" Haley sat up and looked at the other two, "You three are in BIG trouble! Big!" I admitted, "My light called to them. I didn't mean to Haley. I'm so sorry."

My Haley yanked me into a hug, “You should’ve called on me.” I said, “There was iron so we couldn’t pop out.” Haley sighed, “Apparently, the magic that pulls me to your call of protection would just bring me as close to you as possible.” I admitted, “I did not know that. I’m so sorry!” Haley shrugged, “Aiden just told me so...”

She turned and saw herself. She screamed, “HOLY FUCKING HELL! Look at how fucking tall I am! I knew it! I was supposed to be tall.” She ran over to the other her, “Quick! Someone take a picture with my phone.” She threw it at me.

She greeted my prison mate, “Hello, Alexa Price. Your brother is really excited you aren’t dead.” I took the Haley’s picture together. Our Haley caught up on the other Haley’s life quickly. The Tall Haley said, “Wait, we didn’t get to who Logan’s mate is.”

Our Haley answered, “In our reality it’s Katie Forrester who is now a Bishop.” Tall Haley grinned, “I might as well test that in mine. Do you have a Cayden in your reality?” Our Haley tilted her head, “Astrid’s brother’s son? Yeah, I used to babysit him. I tell people I babysat the future army commander frequently.” Tall Haley smiled, “Me too. Anyway, what did Christy Jenkins do to Lacy?”

Our Haley said, “First of all her name is Chrisassty.” Then we both explained what happened. Tall Haley’s eyes blazed. She promised, “I WILL find out if that’s happening, and she will be dealt with.” I smiled, “In our reality Lacy is Dylan’s mate.” Tall Haley laughed, “I LOVE HIM! Is he here too?” Our Haley said, “He will be shortly. I call upon the earth, sky, and fire to bring the protections of my brother the King of Faerie to my side.”

Tall Haley said, “Let’s pop out of here, and deal with... wait. Why are we here?” I spoke with malice in my tone, “David Forrester.” Tall Haley said, “Hmm, I already planned to ask Bjourn to kill him when I got back while I searched for our you.” I nodded, “That works for me.”

Alexa chimed in, “If you could also get me the HELL out of here in your reality... that would be great.” Tall Haley said, “When we figure out where here is, sure.” Our Haley asked her kids, “Will you three pop to Grandpa Titus?” All three babies laughed at her.

Our Haley sighed, “Fine, but if it starts to go bad, you WILL go to Grandpa Titus.” Her tone held no room for an argument. Tall Haley snorted, “Grandpa Titus is probably beside himself.” Our Haley confirmed, “He is.” I grabbed Alexa and we popped outside the cell.

I asked, “Why didn’t the bars turn to water?” Our Haley told me, “It’s steel not iron.” I smacked my own head, “Of course it is.” Tall Haley yelled, “WAIT! Who sent you here other me? That’s a powerful fairy!” Our Haley frowned, “Aiden.” Tall Haley gaped, “But... that means.... The prophecy is us?! It’s our family?” Haley nodded, “Yup.”

She didn’t seem happy about it. I asked, “Prophecy?” Our Haley shook her head, “I’ll explain later. If Aiden didn’t pop directly to me there’s still iron around us. The guys have to be here now. Hey tall version of myself, is Arion still alive in your reality?”

Tall Haley snorted, “He’s alive. Obnoxious but alive...” It clicked for her. She gulped, “Is he dead here too? Mother and Arion? What the hell happened here?” Haley quickly summarized it for her. Both had tears in their eyes.

We got up to the door. Our Haley blew it off the hinges. Alexa started to cry, “I’ve never gotten this far before.” I comforted her, “You’re going to get out this time.” Our Haley announced, “We are surrounded by iron in this cave.” I shivered, “Is that why I feel so weird?”

Now that she’d said it my body wanted to get far away from the walls. Tall Haley said, “Yes. If we stay it will weaken us.” I asked, “Alexa, can you run?” Our Haley waved one arm, “Not necessary. Everyone grab my arms. Emmaline this will hurt afuckinglot, hold on tight to me. Alexander, Cassie, and EJ, pop us to the top of the cave.”

The babies giggled and then all a sudden we were gone. I felt my skin blistering. I felt my light want to stop the pain. I kept a firm hold on Haley though. This was the first time I'd felt my popping journey. It seemed to take forever before we were in a house above the cave.

A euphoric sensation came over me. I looked over my shoulder realizing Tall Haley healed me, while our Haley healed Alexa. They actually healed each other at the same time. I went to look out a window, "This isn't a house, we are in a castle. Oh my gosh! Oh my gosh! The structure!! We are in Russia!"

Alexa looked around in awe, "We are. I actually did know that. Good thing there are fairies around because I'd never get out of this place. Not only am I supposed to be dead, but I don't have a passport. I don't think going to the US consulate saying I lost my passport is an option when you are supposed to be dead."

I laughed, "Sorry, that's just a little funny." A bottle smashed against the wall. David yelled, "How did you get out! Evelyn, you ruin everything!" Seriously? Because I was pretty sure he did. He was just unable to take accountability.

Both Haley's called their swords then laughed. They simultaneously complimented each other, "Nice!" David asked, "Why are there two of you?" Alexa shook her head, "You know exactly why, David." David indignantly retorted, "Fine, I'll just kill the short one! Get them! Do not harm Alexa, and make sure Evelyn is not too damaged. She is mine to kill."

Before anyone could move, arrow's shot through the window. Tall Haley laughed "My girl BA is here. You are so screwed in this reality, David Forrester." David yelled, "I forgot to add her to the ward. She came in alone without other forces."

I pointed out, "My brothers will get in again." Tall Haley ordered, "Emmaline, remove the iron on the ward. Aiden will be able to get in and help while your brothers bring the rest of the ward down." David snorted, "She can't do that."

Our Haley said, “Of course, she can do that! We will guard you while you get it done.” I asked, “Will Aiden know when the iron is dropped?” Our Haley laughed, “Yes, he will see water fall down all around inside the ward.”

I sat down and communicated with my light. I closed my eyes. I heard things breaking and people dying all around me. I heard glass shattering then both Haley’s shouted, “BA!” BA gasped, “Holy shit! You really are supposed to be tall!” Our Haley yelled back, “I FUCKING KNOW, RIGHT?”

I tuned them out. This ward was much larger with the iron, it was taking me longer. My light told me to focus, and that I could do this. I pictured the ward, and the iron in it. I had seen David cast wards, so I knew what his looked like. I imagined the iron turning to water.

After several moments, I heard a huge whoosh. I opened my eyes when water came rushing in surrounding me. Our Haley cheered, “You did it!” I smirked, “And now I have water to use.” I turned to see Alexa trading spells with a warlock, smiling. She killed him then told me, “I forgot how amazing it was to use my magic.”

Pops sounded. Bexley, Lucinda, and Aiden had come to us. Aiden complimented, “Well done, Emmaline. We are the prophesized family. Who knew?” Our Haley mumbled, “Me.” Aiden chuckled, “You just figured it out recently.” Haley made a face that told me that wasn’t true. For a brief second guilt flashed on her face before her cool mask slipped back on. Her soul told me she was in great distress about this prophecy.

I stared at her in confusion. Her soul told me she felt selfish we knew, and she didn’t think it was a good thing. I studied Aiden’s soul and it was quite a contrast from hers. He was excited, practically thriving. No part of him felt this was bad. What did he know that Haley didn’t?

Aiden gasped, “You’re... tall...” He’d spotted the other Haley. Tall Haley sighed, “Could one more person say that? I want to know how tall I would be if I’d never broken my legs.” Our Haley informed her, “I took a baby version of me to

our dad. Maybe one day we will both meet her. Then we will know. I'll just be the shortest, most bitter one of us all."

The Tall Haley laughed, "At least you know now. You were always supposed to be tall. Besides, all fairies are tall. Everyone has to know you were meant to be." Aiden turned red. His soul was deeply embarrassed and contrite.

I pushed that aside and used the water to create my riptide. Both Haley's used their wind to knock the rest of David's forces into it. Aiden set a few on fire. Bexley started to hit those in the riptide with her sunlight killing them instantly as they were electrocuted in water.

David came down the stairs holding a gun. He stated, "If you want something done right, you have to do it yourself." He pointed the gun at me. Alexa screamed, "DAVID, NO!" He fired. I froze the bullet. I looked around. I had actually frozen everyone except my family.

I popped to David and popped him back, into the path of the bullet. Everything unfroze. David yelled in surprise and in pain when the bullet went through his collar bone. Both Haley's evaluated him simultaneously saying, "Shattered collarbone. That hurts like a bitch."

The taller Haley yelled, "JINX! You owe me a soda." Our Haley frowned, "The fuck? What is a jinx?" Tall Haley said, "It's..." I yelled, "NO! We don't need that right now." A jinxing Haley was the last thing we all needed.

I turned to my cellmate for all of an hour at most, "Alexa, I assume you have some spell you want to cast on David here. You have to have one." Alexa nodded, "I do. I'm going to use the spell he used on... the short Haley, who is from our reality. First though, could the pusher baby melt his brain a little? That would be fabulous."

David grabbed his head screaming as Alexander laughed in our Haley's arms. I teased him, "We don't want him to die yet, Alexander." Our Haley assured me, "He only sent him a few images. He's just starting. He's not pushing anything at the moment, he's giving him a break. The pain just lingers since pushing images to the brain is painful."

Alexa clapped and sat down, “That’s just amazing.” We let Alexander continue for several moments. We heard growls outside. David rasped, “I have rogues here too.” Aiden sounded jazzed, “Let’s pop to the battle!” He and Lucinda popped out.

Tall Haley asked, “Can I freak out this realities Eric? I want to see him. I miss my Eric already.” Our Haley said, “Go ahead. You’ll most likely freak out Dylan the most.” Tall Haley clapped, “He’s here? Popping into battle!” She popped away next.

Alexander had tuckered himself out. Our Haley spoke softly to her kids, “EJ, Cassie, pop your brother to Grandma Veronica.” I asked, “Why not your dad?” Haley smiled at me, “He is here, fighting. I can feel him nearby.” EJ and Cassie popped to Haley and put hands on Alexander then popped away. Our Haley sighed, “Finally, they are safe.”

We heard a howl of what sounded like joy. I laughed, “That sounded like Dylan.” Our Haley agreed, “It probably was. Alright BA, let’s go I’m popping you back to your apartment for you to get ready for your getaway with your lover man.” BA’s soul felt guilty, “If you didn’t have to get back right away, you could stick around and meet him. Well, I’ll probably go to him, but you could’ve come with me.”

Haley assured her, “I’ll see him soon. Anyone who makes you smile like this is someone I need to know.” That was an odd way to phrase it. She’d see him soon, not meet. I wanted to wince at how happy BA’s soul was. I decided to worry about that later. Haley popped out with BA.

David was still whimpering in pain from what Alexander had done to him. Alexa said, “I hope the pusher showed him all the suffering the partial fairy children he turned over went through.” I pointed out, “Alexander had a lot of material to choose from.” Haley popped back to us.

David had regained enough of his senses for me. I created my riptide again. I treated him like the witch who had stabbed Lucas. I sat in a chair and let him up for air long enough for him to get a breath and then dragged him back down.

Haley touched my shoulder, “You seem conflicted.” I agreed, “I am. On another note, I’m glad Tall Haley is outside fighting. I’m glad that she’s not as short as you or this would be confusing. Should we go help the guys?” Haley laughed, “They have plenty of help. Eric told me everything was fine before I popped BA out.”

I admitted, “I’m worried BA is going to get her heart broken. We know who her mate is, but she’s so happy with this guy.” Haley shrugged, “It will all be fine, but that’s not what’s bothering you.” She believed that. I sighed and let it go.

I said, “David deserves to suffer. Alexa, cast your spell so he can’t use his arms to try to get up for air.” Alexa smirked, “I love fairies.” Haley shrugged, “We are partial fairy’s, but point taken.” Alexa chanted her spell.

David’s eyes went wide in terror. His arms wouldn’t move nor his feet. He sank the bottom of my rip tide. He was being thrown around. I kept bringing him up for air so he wouldn’t die. I continued talking to Haley, “I know Lucas wants to torture David but my mother’s dying wish was for me to kill David.”

Haley was quiet then said, “Fuck what your mom wants. That’s not her decision it’s yours. David is not Lucas’ boogeyman he’s yours. This is about you, and what you need. Only you can decide that.”

I agreed, “I know. I also know why my mom wanted me to kill him. I’ve thought a lot about it, and now I know.” Haley sounded weary, “Alright, I’m sure this is a fucking fabulous reason. Why did June want you to kill David?”

I explained, “She doesn’t want any of my siblings to do it. She didn’t want her children to kill their father, and she... loved David and she doesn’t want him to suffer. Despite his flaws and all that shit. She loved him. She knows I don’t have it in me to make him suffer as long as he should.”

Haley was quiet then admitted, “I won’t say I understand fully. I don’t think my mother would’ve jumped in front of a crossbow bolt for me. Putting all that aside, what do your instincts and light tell you to do about this situation? Not what

me, Lucas, or any of your siblings would do. Not what any of us want, and CERTAINLY not what your mother wanted. What do YOU want to happen to David?"

I thought about it for several moments. I searched down in my very soul for the answer. It came to me as if it had been there all along. I suppose it truly had. I spoke with complete clarity, "I don't want him to be alive anymore. For Charlie Rose, for me, for my future children, for my siblings, and future nieces and nephews. I don't want him to have a chance to escape. I want him dead. I want to know he's dead, and never going to hurt anyone I love ever again. I want to talk to him first though."

Haley nodded, "Then that's what will happen. Bring him up for air, and I'll do my thing. Get your answers and end this. For yourself." I nodded. I asked her quietly, "Does this make me weak? That I don't want him tortured for years?"

Haley snorted, "No, I told Eric I wanted Fabian dead before our children were born. I said what I wanted to say to that terrible excuse of a person as well. Your soul is more sensitive than mine, and you didn't have the same journey I did. Saying what you want doesn't make you weak. Not wanting to torture someone doesn't make you weak. You are a fierce, powerful, bad ass partial fairy duchess." She really could give one hell of a pep talk.

She continued, "He is merely a warlock. He's weak because he views women and children as weak tools who can be molded to his use. HE is weak, you are not. You are strong, brave, and fierce. He tried to take that from you, but you didn't let him. That is why you will NEVER be weak because you are a fighter. You got knocked down, but you got the fuck back up to fight another day."

I nodded and I brought David up for air. He sputtered, "You are quite powerful, Evelyn." I took a shot at him, "More powerful than you, yes. I am a Duchess of the Water Fae. Why did you turn me away? I would've never known you weren't my father. I loved you. I would've done anything for you. I was such a daddy's girl."

David admitted, “I loved you most of all. It’s why I turned you away when I found out you weren’t mine. Not all water fairies could turn those stones to water. Only a very powerful one could. You were going to be stronger than me, and I hated you for it. I hated that my June was with someone who wasn’t me.”

I questioned, “Why did you hold all your children back? All of my siblings can control the shadows.” David gasped, “They can? I had... no idea. I didn’t want them to be better than me. I always had to keep a lid on Dustin. I knew he was powerful, far more than I was.” I shook my head, “You’re a horrible man.”

David didn’t care, “I am what I am. Power was always something I craved. I clawed my way to the man I am, and I wasn’t going to let anyone destroy it. Not even your precious cousin, and certainly not you.” I pointed out, “But you did lose it. You lost your children, your wick, my mother, and you lost the respect you had within the community.”

David laughed, “I did not lose my followers. In fact, I gained several hundred when the information about the bounty on you came out. Yes, the goodie goodies of the world turned their back on me. Yes, my followers did so in public out of fear of King Titus; however, I had followers privately. Obviously, you have faced many of them.”

I shook my head, “You still don’t see it, David. Katie, Ry, and Dusty are amazing people. You missed out on them. You missed out on knowing their children. You missed out on being part of the Hackura family. Not just any family either; the royal family.”

David glared at me, “I’ll get out of here, and I’ll start over. All three of my kids are having babies. I’ll take their children, and they will be mine.” Haley snorted, “You won’t touch my nephew, but continue.” David frowned, “That one may be hard.”

Now I was getting pissed. I yelled, “THAT ONE? HE IS NOT A THAT! He’s just a baby, and you want to use him. You want Aubree’s child because of the shadows. It’s why you

want Ry's child as well, right?" David said, "Of course it is. With those three babies... I could get revenge one day on the Princess and you."

I disagreed, "No you couldn't. I won't let you leave here alive David, I can't. I may not be able to stop all the revenge plots in the world, but I won't let you turn three beautiful souls that are everything good and pure into something horrible and twisted with hate. Goodbye, David." His eyes filled with panic.

I continued, "For the record, I am doing this for me, and no one else. You abandoned me because of stones that I turned to water. Now, I will turn you to water." David began to scream. I released him out of the riptide and let the water flow back flooding the floor of the room. I walked over to him and placed my glowing blue hands on him. I told my light I didn't want it to be quick.

I felt Lucas enter the room. I heard the two Haley's talking about their Eric's. I heard Dylan giddily taking it all in. I watched David struggle. Arms encircled me as Lucas put his hands around my waist. I was home in this moment in his arms.

Dusty and Ry put their hands on my shoulders. I heard the strangled cry of Ben Price, my unknown caller, as he saw his sister for the first time in twenty-six years, alive. I heard Alexa say to David, "Our daughter's name was Emmeline Ryder, and she died because you kept me here. She died at the hands of vampires after giving birth to our grandchild. I will be a part of our grandchild's life, and I will never utter one word about you to her."

Dusty agreed, "Nor will we. Charlie Rose will never know of you, David." A portal opened and Katie stepped through. She walked over and stood beside Ry. She looked at David. He looked hopeful for a second. Katie crossed her arms, "I had to come to say this to you. I hate you. I hate that any part of you lives in me. You are sick and demented. Have fun with mom in Hell where you both belong."

Ry snorted. Katie told him, “He wrote down the plans he had for our children.” I gasped. Dustin and Ry went rigid. The shadows appeared. Katie spoke, “I asked them to show you in your last moments what could have been if you’d never sent Evie away. I also asked them to show you the suffering you caused. You won’t die for several hours, David.”

David began to cry. I turned into Lucas’ chest and cried myself. I managed to tell him, “I missed you.” Lucas pulled my chin up and smashed his lips into mine. When he pulled back he rested his forehead on mine, He whispered, “Never part from me like this again, it was horrible. I have been a wreck.”

Dylan said, “That’s true. He’s practically insufferable without you now, Emmaline. We met a wolf named Beta James Bond, and he had no sense of humor about it. Not one single bit. My jokes have gone unappreciated since your departure. You can’t do that to me. My genius needs to be appreciated by my Alpha and best friend. It’s how our dynamic works. I’m the ebb to his flow. The yin to his yang...”

Our Haley asked, “Does anyone know what the fuck that means?” Tall Haley laughed, “You don’t know this realms sayings, do you?” Our Haley grumbled, “I know they are fucking ridiculous and wrong. Mine are better.” Tall Haley laughed, “I’m sure they are.”

Aiden asked the Tall Haley, “Do we get along in your reality?” Tall Haley laughed, “You are my favorite fairy brother. Of course, we get along. After I was taken home to the Hackura realm, you trained me on my fairy powers every week. Arion is... annoying, but at least he’s not like your realities Arion.”

Aiden’s eyes filled with tears, “He’s alive where you are?” Tall Haley nodded, “He’s your right hand in my reality; he’s very much alive.” Aiden nodded, “That is good. You must bond with him...” She replied, “I know. He may be annoying, but he’s *my* annoying fairy brother. I won’t let anything happen to him.” They shared some sort of knowing look. What was that?

I heard a pop beside me. My dad asked, "Can I have a hug, daughter?" I turned and wiggled my way from Lucas to my dad. Lucas was really reluctant to let me go. I jumped and put my arms around my dad's neck.

I could feel his sorrow. I whispered, "I'm sorry about mom. She saved me." My dad tearfully said, "I never wanted her to die." I assured him, "I know." My dad pulled back, "I need to go. My mate will handle my sorrow." I smiled, "You already met her?"

My dad rubbed my cheek with his thumb, "Remember when I told you about my lover who I will soon have your brother with?" I nodded, "Yes." My dad said, "It's her, and we are both very happy. I found out right after your birthday party when I popped home. She can't wait to officially meet you." I smiled, "I can't wait to meet her either." He kissed my cheek, "I'm so very proud of you. I told you that you were much stronger than David Forrester ever thought about being." I acknowledged, "You did say that."

For a brief second I met David's eyes after my dad popped out. He was still suffering; the shadows were not done showing him what could have been. Lucas wrapped me in his arms again. He whispered in my ear, "If you think you'll be away from me between now and the wedding you're crazy."

I gasped. Oh no. Our wedding! I yelled, "I don't even know what day it is!" Lucas assured me, "It's the nineteenth. We will make it down the aisle on our wedding date." I raised an eyebrow, "Did you really meet a Beta James Bond?" Dylan squealed, "WE DID!"

At the same time Lucas said, "His first name isn't James." Dylan waved his arm, "Ignore him, Emmaline. He's sleep deprived. God, I miss sleep. You're lucky we are supernatural's. I have had so much coffee. We should get more coffee. How do Russians do coffee?"

Haley snapped him a mug. He reverently declared, "I love you special fun sized ninja fairy goddess, from the very bottom of my soul." He raised his mug to her, "Hopefully one

day our pups will be mates so I can call you family for realies.” Haley laughed.

The Tall Haley commented, “Dylan, I love that you are the same as my Dylan back home where I came from. I have to get back and make sure my new friend Lacy doesn’t run off, and I have to find Emmaline. Then unite our Katie and Logan. It’s all about to get so interesting.” She sat down on the chair directly behind her, then she faded from view in the same light she appeared in.

Dylan excitedly chattered, “Can I just say HOW FREAKING AWESOME THAT WAS? I want to be a part of all Ribbon visits. Promise me, oh goddess Haley, send the ribboners to me. I’ll catch them all up so you don’t have to explain every time and get bored.”

Haley laughed, “I’ll do my best to make sure you get to meet any Ribbon visitors. Can we just talk about how FUCKING TALL I AM?” Eric laughed, “Our pups will likely be tall too. We will just have to tell them you were supposed to be tall.” Haley snorted, “Tell them? Hell no, I will fucking SHOW them. I took a picture with that me. I can’t believe I just said that sentence.” I laughed.

We all heard a splash hit the wall, and we turned to realize David had finally turned to water. Katie checked her watch as the shadow’s disappeared. She said, “Three hours, it took them three hours.” Alexa murmured, “Then they went at warp speed. He could’ve been like that for months to understand all the havoc and pain he caused in people’s lives.”

Dusty stepped forward, “Alexa, I know you don’t have reason to trust David’s son, but I swear my siblings and I are nothing like him. I want to be part of Charlie Rose’s life just as you and Ben do. I’d like it if we could at minimum be kind to one another for her sake.”

To his surprise, Alexa engulfed Dusty in a hug. She told him, “You are nothing like you father. I have heard him talk about you. I just love Aubree to pieces; her mother was my best friend. I’ve heard people saying she’s pregnant. Her mother would’ve been so happy. I’d love for us all to have

dinner and get to know each other. I don't know if we can be more than members of the same coven; however, for Charlie Rose and Aubree's sake... I'd like to try."

Dustin smiled, "You guys want to join my coven?" Ben shrugged, "I guess we do. I'm not leaving Alexa's side ever again. Sister, I am so sorry, I never knew." Alexa held up her hands, "After spending twenty-six years here I will tell you one thing I know; do not waste time on regret. Give yourself a break, brother. You did what you could with the information you had. I am not upset with you, and I never was. Axel though.... Before we join a coven; he's got to die."

Haley informed her, "He's dead, Eric killed him." Eric kissed Haley before saying, "It was a team effort. Technically, though I did kill him." Alexa smiled, "Fabulous! Then I have a grandchild to start spoiling." Ben rubbed her head, "We will get you a new identity. We can't explain to the human authorities how you are not truly dead."

Alexa waved her hands, "I do not care about the identity the humans think I have. I just want to dedicate the rest of my time on this earth to being the best grandmother I can be. I missed out on my baby's whole life. I won't miss out on one more second of Charlie Rose's." Ben took her hands, "Neither of us will."

Dusty declared, "You are both accepted in my coven. We meet on Tuesday evenings. This week's meeting is our last until after the holidays. If you both want to come, I'll introduce you around. If you want to wait until after the holidays, that's fine too."

Alexa said, "No, I want to get settled in the coven and the area. I won't put things on hold again. You never know when a crazy person will show up and imprison you and force you to think about all the things you put on hold. After twenty-six years, it can drive a person crazy."

I cringed. Her soul was being honest. She'd thought about everything she should've done. She was also in pain from never being there for her child. I wished I could ease the pain

in her soul. I reached my hand to take hers and squeezed it for comfort.

A pink glow went into her. Lucinda squealed, “I can’t WAIT to get home. Faerie will be aflutter with the news.” Alexa’s eyes snapped to mine. “You... you eased my soul.” I blinked several times, “I did what now?”

Haley explained, “Due to the prophecy we need to talk about, your soul searcher powers are getting stronger. Your soul called out to you to ease the pain in Alexa’s soul and you did. She is now at peace.”

Alexa earnestly told me, “Best therapist ever and free.” I admitted, “I can’t even begin to process that. Let’s go home.” Dylan clapped, “GOD YES! To my pillow we go! It’s going to require sweet talking. At this point it’s not going to listen to my excuses about how I’m not cheating on it. If it throws me out my room, you have to find me one to stay in until I convince my pillow it’s the only one for me, Lucas.” I laughed, “I missed you, Dylan.” Dylan patted my head, “I missed you too.”

Aiden instructed the group, “Everyone grab onto a fairy.” He laughed then added, “We are the strongest fairy family in all of Faerie and we are several supernatural group’s rides home.” Lucinda laughing so hard she snorted.

She stopped and looked at me and my cousin, “The celebrations will be ongoing in Faerie.” She said pointing at Haley and me. She continued, “We will have our big party with my friend Beta Dylan, and all of you on New Year’s Eve. You both MUST be there.”

I asked, “Strongest family?” Haley sighed, “We have to chat when we get home.” Dylan squealed like a teenage girl at a Taylor Swift concert, “NEW YEARS IN FAERIE! LUCAS I AM SO EXCITED! In all seriousness Haley and Emmaline, we can all chat after sleep. I don’t want to miss that chat, and Dylan needs sleep. So much sleep.”

Haley agreed, “So do the fairies. Not as much sleep but we should get a few hours.” I yawned suddenly feeling quite tired, “Agreed.” We made sure everyone had a hold of each other

based on where they wanted to go. I popped my group home, and Haley's came with us.

Dale, Debbie, Lacy, and Aubree greeted us. Debbie started crying, "Thank the goddess. Both my girls are home now, Dale! Thank you, Emmy, for going after our Lacy to help her with that madman. I just don't know what she was thinking running off the school at that time of night."

Lacy sighed, "I told you, I'm sorry. I don't know what got into me. I found the book on my desk when Bexley popped us back." I winced, "That wasn't her fault." Lacy gratefully expressed, "THANK GOD! Please tell her how this wasn't my fault." I told her, "A warlock influenced you after hiding your book to go to school and get it." Lucas tensed.

Dylan said, "If no one will say it... I will. That does not explain how Grayson ended up dead in our room. With blood all over the place looking like a TV crime scene. Lacy had to burn our sheets. The very sheets this was created on." He touched Lacy's stomach before he asked, "Why couldn't we just turn him to water, little Luna?"

Haley asked, "Grayson is dead? DAMN IT! I had plans for him!" I winced, "You might need new carpet in there too, Dylan. OH WAIT! I'll just snap it before you get mildew." I closed my eyes and snapped them the same carpet in their room but new.

Dylan nodded, "Well that's clear as mud now, isn't it? I can't think of a single question to ask. Oh wait, WHAT THE HELL HAPPENED IN OUR ROOM? I am now more confused than I was before." I sighed, "I went to see if I could find a clue or something..."

Dylan interrupted, "And somehow found the thorn in our side that was Grayson. Continue." I winced, "Well yeah, he was there with his 'let's run away' speech. So, I punched him." Dylan looked at Lucas and complained, "It's like pulling teeth. I'm so tired right now. I can't pull any more teeth. I had to activate GAP to prove to Ben his life was in danger, and no one laughed at my jokes. I have been TRAUMATIZED!"

I rolled my eyes and continued, “This warlock stepped out and said he made Lacy leave. He said he was taking care of loose ends.” Dylan interjected, “Naturally.” I ignored him, “The warlock slit Grayson’s throat. I grabbed a shirt to try and stop the bleeding, but it didn’t work.”

Dylan stiffened, “What shirt?” I frowned, “Umm a shirt on the floor?” Dylan growled, “Lacy...” Lacy was trying not to laugh. She said, “I’m sorry, Dylan.” Dylan went to his knees, “NOOOOOO! DAMN YOU GRAYSON! Why universe? I told EVERYONE we should kill him! Why did I suffer?!”

I asked, “What is happening right now?” Lucas snorted, “Dylan’s lucky shirt is no more.” Dale clapped Lucas on the back and Debbie yanked me into a hug. Howls of joy rang out seemingly from nowhere. I looked at Lacy then noticed Travis and Jacqueline were both here. I gave them a quick wave.

Lacy answered my unspoken question, “The pack is happy their Luna is back safely. They did it when I was popped back too. Travis here has refused to leave my side.” Dylan complimented Travis, “Like the good brother he is. I even have a treat for him.”

Lacy admitted, “I had to ban your father from the house. I was tripping over him every five seconds.” Dylan tapped his chin, “Him, I did not tell to be your shadow.” Lacy said, “I know, or I would’ve dealt with it. The pup is fine. As is Aubree’s. Everyone got a clean bill of health. Why has no one snapped Emmaline clean?” Haley laughed and snapped. I told her, “There were so many other priorities.”

Dylan stood, “Haley, tell me the plans you had for the thorn in my side. I need to feel better.” Haley bit her lip, “I was going to let Alexander and EJ practice their pushing skills on him.” Dylan clapped, “Yes, tell me more.” Haley smiled, “Cassie was going to practice getting him to tell the truth then practice with her sunlight hands.”

Dylan put out his hands and made a ‘come on’ motion, “Bring it home for me, my fun sized ninja fairy Goddess.” Haley laughed, “Then I was going to erase his memory and charm him into believing it was his lifelong dream to move to

Antarctica and become an ice fisherman. Google said it's cold there."

Dylan howled, "It IS cold there." Haley held out her hands and conjured a bloody shirt. She asked him, "Is this your shirt?" Dylan started to cry, "You left me too soon little buddy! I would've avenged you!" Haley laughed again then snapped her fingers. His shirt was now devoid of blood.

Dylan grabbed her from Eric for an air hug. He literally didn't touch her then yelled, "Don't kill me, GAP. This is a moment! My lucky shirt is back. IT LIVES!" He ran and hid behind Lacy. He said, "Luna, you are forgiven for using my lucky shirt to try to save Grayson." I raised an eyebrow, "I didn't ask for your forgiveness but ok." Dylan acted like I stuck him with a dagger to the heart, "Hurtful."

I suddenly felt gross. I hadn't showered since I got Grayson's blood all over me. I said, "I know Haley snapped me clean, but I'd love a hot shower. Then I just want to go to bed." Dylan cheered, "Amen! The Luna has spoken. We can gather to share information later."

Aiden laughed and he and Lucinda popped out. I didn't realize they'd come with us. Eric said, "Lucas, call us when everyone is awake." Dylan teased, "That's right, GAP. Everyone means Dylan too. I AM the resident fairy expert for the werewolves. I must be part of the conversation." Eric rolled his eyes.

Lucas agreed, "I'll call you, thank you for everything." He shook his hand. Dylan chimed in, "Yes, thank you for the look into the Ribbon. It's beautiful and it's not fair that you of all people are in it. Such is our life ever since you came into it. A lesson in life is not fair but mine kicks ass, should be the title of your autobiography, GAP."

Eric shook his head, "Dylan, I've known you your entire life." Dylan waved his hands at the ceiling, "I know. The moon goddess has blessed me while simultaneously being oh so cruel." We all laughed. Eric managed not to, but his soul told me he was relieved, amused, and content. Haley popped their group away.

Lucas led me upstairs. I led us to the bathroom and turned on the shower. I kissed Lucas, "I know I said it earlier, but I really missed you." Lucas whispered, "God, baby girl. You have no idea how I missed you." We got into the shower after I snapped us naked. We washed each other several times until I felt the grime was gone.

Lucas seemed unable to let go of me. I smiled up at him, "I won't disappear on you." He laughed, "I know because you will be by my side until the morning of the wedding. Then Haley, Blade, and possibly Blade's mate will be by your side. Along with Brad, and several of our warriors." I sighed, "That's serious overkill." Lucas nipped my ear with his teeth, "Impossible." We both got under the covers of our bed, and we fell asleep.

I woke up feeling completely rested. Lucas was still sleeping though. I popped out from under his arms and went into the bathroom. I squealed when his arms wrapped around me. Lucas nipped my shoulder, "I do believe I told you that you'd have to be by my side until the wedding." I pointed out, "You were sleeping."

He bit my neck, "And you got out of bed without me." He threw me over his shoulder in one swift move and spanked me. He growled, "Bad fairy." I laughed as he threw me back down onto our bed. Lucas whispered in my ear "I have so many plans for you in this bed."

He pulled my sweatpants off along with my underwear. His tongue lightly flicked my clit. I jerked my hips. His hands gripped onto my hips tightly. His tongue attacked, and I felt a finger enter me. I jerked and moaned.

He linked me, "Let me hear you, baby girl." I couldn't hold back. He worked me over quickly. I came within minutes. He climbed up my body and kissed me deeply. He pulled back and flipped me onto all fours and entered me. I gripped the sheets between my fingers and rocked back into him. I shrieked in surprise as his hand slapped my butt before he slammed into me.

I moaned, “Lucas!” He began to slam into me. I pleaded, “Harder Alpha, please!” Lucas growled and gave me exactly what I asked for. We didn’t stop until our stomachs growled. Lucas laughed, “I suppose we should get lunch, and gather the troops.”

Troops? My brain needed a minute to catch up. It came to me, “Right, what’s this most powerful family thing?” Lucas sighed, “I actually want to hear what Haley has to say about it, but you are apparently quite a powerful soul searcher.” I told him, “The fairy goddess said that our daughter would be one too.” Lucas asked, “You met the fairy goddess?”

I nodded, “Yup, David hit me with a bat when I showed up to rescue Lacy and Aubree.” Lucas growled. “I very much would’ve enjoyed torturing him.” I cringed, “I know, I just needed it to be over.” Lucas hugged me, “I know you did. It’s fine, it’s not about me.” I timidly said, “Haley said it was my show.” Lucas agreed, “Haley was right.”

I snapped us dressed and popped to the kitchen. Haley and Eric popped in a second later. Haley smiled, “Good afternoon, everyone.” I groaned, “Gosh, what day is it? Haley answered, “The twenty-first.” I gaped, “We slept that long? Holy crap! We are getting married in three days! I have... nothing to do, never mind. I can snap it all done with my cousins.”

Haley laughed, “Exactly, all is well.” Dylan came running in, “This meeting wasn’t about to start without me, was it? Cause that would be crazy talk.” I reassured him, “No, we were just getting food.” Dylan announced, “There is pizza in Lucas’ office. On warmers. I woke up this morning and planned everything. Let’s go. Pizza is waiting. Along with my story.”

I asked, “Your story?” Dylan said, “Yes, little Luna. Haley is going to tell us a fairy story. I have my notebook ready to go to take notes in.” Lucas snorted. I pressed, “Do you really?” Dylan nodded emphatically, “Of course I do. There’s popcorn, pizza, and notebooks. I even have multiple pens, and a recorder to capture everything she says.” Haley laughed.

I linked Lucas, “Is he serious?” Lucas answered, “He definitely is.” I bit my lip as we walked upstairs. I took several boxes of pizza. Lucas took a whole box himself, and we sat down at the table together. Dylan really had his place at the table set up and ready to go. He even had an old school popcorn machine ready to make him more popcorn.

We all ate in comfortable silence. Haley broke it, “Since I’m done eating, I’ll start.” Dylan yelled, “WAIT!” He turned on the reorder and smiled, “Proceed my fun sized ninja fairy goddess.” Haley smiled while Eric rolled his eyes.

Haley sighed, “Since I’m not sure what everyone knows about the prophecy, I’ll just start at the beginning. There’s a prophecy taught to all Fae children when they are young. It tells the story of a family that will bring notoriety back to Faerie among supernatural’s. A family that will be our ruling houses for the rest of time. Ruling houses, of course, fall and rise in Faerie. Marcious could tell you the water fairy’s along with fire fairy’s, would have risen up against the Holloran reign if Aiden hadn’t taken over when he did. None of them had any love for Fabian.” I wondered which family would’ve ruled then.

Haley shook herself, “Anyway, this promised family would be realized because of the siblings and their ascent to power. The oldest sibling would be the leader of Faerie and possesses ancient powers. There is no Fae charm the eldest sibling cannot cast once their full potential is reached. With the younger sibling by the eldest side, they cannot be defeated because the youngest can take people’s powers away. It’s unclear but the option for another sibling is there with other powers. Which was obviously in case Arion was still around.” Haley looked away.

She cleared her throat, “Anyway the prophecy talks about more than the siblings. It mentions all the relatives of the houses, and our children. The soul searcher will now always be in your bloodline, Emmaline. It will be passed from you to your children, then their children, and so on. Your powers will continue to grow. You will be able to tell when someone’s mate is coming. You’ll be able to tell them what their mate is,

be it fairy, partial fairy, human, werewolf, demon, angel, hood, you get the point. You'll know if someone is deemed worthy of a second chance mate. You can actually grant them a second chance mate. Not who their mate will be, but if someone loses their mate and you know them; you can determine if they get another mate. You already know you can ease the pain of their souls."

I put my hands up, "This seems like it's getting more complicated. What if someone, like BA, doesn't want to know who their mate is? We have to do that ritual all the time with this wealth of information I now know?" Haley shook her head, "Actually, no. Now that our family has realized we are in fact the family in the prophecy our powers are amplifying."

I mumbled, "Yup, I noticed that." Haley explained, "Well, you will be able to withhold information without the ritual unlike past soul searchers. Unlike you were before one of us realized it was our family." I said, "But... I told my dad at my birthday his second chance mate was out there. Was that just a natural progression of my soul searching power?"

Haley sighed then admitted, "No, I had started to suspect we were the family in the prophecy. I re-read the history of fairy's when I conjured the book for everyone. I wasn't certain we were the family or not, but everyone started developing their powers more... probably right before thanksgiving. The more convinced I became, the more we developed. It peaked when Bexley, WITHOUT ME THERE!" Eric put his hand on Haley.

She had tears in her eyes, "I have asked for Bexley to be made Royal for YEARS! Aiden declared Bexley Royal withfuckingout me. He's in trouble. That action progressed us even farther and solidified us as the family that was prophesied. You now possess the ability to not tell someone without causing yourself pain. Since you did this before you had kids your line will have that ability as well."

I nodded then yelled, "HOLD ON! That means... You are the youngest sibling. You can take people's magic away? You said power? That's magic right?" Haley sighed, "Yes, you and I are... kind of important in this prophecy. You are pure of

soul and mind that's why you and your line are being blessed as the soul searchers for the rest of time. I am pure of fucking heart apparently."

Eric said, "Angel, you really are." Haley shrugged, "Sure. Why not? Because now people are going to want the two of us because goddesses blessed us. The Fairy and Angel goddess blessed you, Emmaline" Lucas stiffened.

I asked, "The Angel goddess?" Haley nodded, "Yes, the Fairy and Angel goddesses had to agree on who was pure of soul and mind. The mind is from the Fairy goddess. The soul you had to pass some Angel goddess fucking test. Yay us. Anyway, all the goddesses and gods had to agree I was pure of fucking heart. Because the fairy that possessed your power and my power could abuse it. Mates are a big deal, and you can now determine who is worthy of a second chance."

I asked, "So... could you take a werewolves wolf from them?" Everyone stiffened. Haley nodded, "Yes, I could, but I wouldn't do that without a very good reason. To take someone's wolf would be to take half of them. At MOST I would just make it so they couldn't shift into their wolf, but that seems mean to the wolf. I'd probably just kill them, so their wolf could go to someone else. Fuck, I don't know. I don't want this power."

I connected some pieces myself, "So, you are why the partial fairies are so good at magic then." Haley frowned, "Yes and no. I'm why they can do it so quickly. I brought their magic to the surface. With training they all could still do that magic they have been performing. For example, Katie probably would've taken longer to master the skills she already has."

I put my head in my hands, "So, people will come for the two of us." Haley pursed her lips, "Yes, but we are formidable on our own. If you called me to you, and we fought together; we cannot be defeated. If two members of our family fight together, we can get hurt but even if we have iron in our systems you and I could not lose. That's not something that's widely known outside of Faerie, for obvious reasons. You and I are the logical ones to take from the family and try to use.

We live close together, and we are not just cousins in name. We are close to each other. People will absolutely come to try to take the both of us. Our call to our family's protection will now pull everyone in our connection."

I gaped, "So if I call you... it calls Aiden too?" Haley nodded, "It will call your father the strongest, but everyone will feel it. They will know who called. Same with our children." I whispered, "Wow... just wow."

Haley sighed, "There's more, but for now I think that's a lot to take in. Damn it! One more thing needs to be said now. One of your sons will be the strongest water fairy in our history. He will possess multiple talents that no single water fairy has possessed."

I gulped, "That's not good." Haley blew out a breath, "Believe me, I know exactly how you feel. Our kids are going to be best friends, that's also in the prophecy. That our children and Aiden's are close along with Bexley's. We are basically now a powerhouse." I sat back in my chair, "Holy mother of pearl."

Lucas rubbed my back. He assured me, "We will protect our pups. I swear it to you." I sighed, "At least I don't have to worry about telling someone who doesn't want to know their mate. Or you having to take my pain again or bind me not to tell someone's mate. Does that mean the other thing doesn't hurt you now?" Haley snorted, "No, that would be convenient. Until that's resolved I'm still bound to that ritual." Darn. Haley grumbled, "And we still can't lie." I laughed, "Dang it! Couldn't they let us tell white lies? We are this super powerful family now."

Haley frowned, "Well, no one tells lies that are white. Lies don't have a color." I snorted, "I meant small lies," Haley shrugged, "You'd think for the shit they just threw into our lives they'd have given us that but no. Assholes." I said, "Ok then... we are super desirable as are our children, and our powers are going to get stronger." Haley nodded, "Basically, yes." I groaned, "I feel like I need to go back to bed." Haley laughed, "You and me both."

We talked a little bit longer before everyone stood up. Haley smiled, “Well, we will see you on Christmas Eve to get you down that aisle, soon to be Emmaline Lyons.” I pointed my index finger, “About that, I was wondering if you thought my dad would mind if I did my last name like yours. I want to go with Emmaline Walsh Lyons.”

Lucas smiled at me. Haley said, “He’d love that.” She gave me a hug. “Call or text if you have questions. You are of course welcome at the celebrations in Faerie should you choose to go to any of them. They are literally everyday all day.”

Dylan chimed in, “We are all going New Year’s Eve, right?” Haley nodded, “We have to, Dylan. The queen and king decreed it. Happy fucking New Year.” Dylan squealed, “YESSS! HAPPY NEW YEAR TO DYLAN!” I laughed and Haley popped her and Eric away.

I leaned into Lucas, “It sounds like we have some powerful kids.” Lucas agreed, “Yes, it does seem that way.” I whispered, “We have to protect them.” Lucas leaned down and kissed me, “We will.” I could feel the seriousness of his soul, and I knew I felt the same. We would do this, together.

Life isn't fair

Lucas opened his eyes and took in the beauty surrounding him. Russia was a very picturesque place. Dylan spoke first of course, "They are in a castle? Maybe David even got them maids. What if they are sitting in there eating beef stroganoff? Meanwhile, we are out here working hard to get inside, and they are just fine." I rolled my eyes.

Aiden announced, "This ward has an iron base to it. That couldn't have felt great for Haley to pass through. I hope they aren't in an iron cage." I frowned, "That would weaken them, wouldn't it?" Aiden nodded, "Yes, it would."

The Hackura groaned. Eric asked, "What?" King Titus spoke, "We feel two connections where Haley would be." Eric laughed, "That's good then." Dylan rubbed his face, "Right. That's obviously good. WHAT THE HELL DOES THAT MEAN? Why are you and the creepy ninja's so cryptic? Would it kill any of you to spell it out for those of us who haven't slept in days?"

Eric laughed, "I couldn't possibly ruin the moment when you find out for yourself." Dylan said, "Now, now GAP... Did you miss the part where I said I haven't slept in days? A pink turtle could pop up, and I would think it was normal. An everyday occurrence even."

Marcus started to laugh, "We actually have some pink turtles in our realm. Haley snapped them pink." Dylan gasped, "She can do that? I want a purple pig." I asked, "Dear god, why do you want a purple pig?" Dylan snorted, "Why wouldn't I? Wilber had people coming to see him from all around. THINK of the money we could charge for people to see a purple pig. We would be RICH I TELL YOU!"

I raised an eyebrow, "We are rich." Dylan sighed, "Someone get us inside before I decide to be deeply insulted no one is laughing at my hilarity. None of you appreciate me."

Dustin and Ryan looked at each other. Ryan said, “It’s going to take time to take this ward down. It’s stronger than the one at Lost Lake.” Ben offered, “I’ll help you.” Dylan clapped, “There you go, Unknown Caller Ben, make yourself useful so GAP doesn’t kill you because he has nothing else to do right now.” Ben gulped.

Dylan turned to Lucinda, “Oh, lovely, beautiful fairy queen. Would you be so kind as to snap me pumpkin spice latte three extra pumps of espresso please and thank you.” I snorted, “Maybe just one extra shot.” Eric interjected, “Or none. He doesn’t need an espresso shot.”

Lucinda smiled and winked at Dylan. She told him, “Anything for my friend Dylan. One pumpkin spice latte with three extra espresso shots coming up because you are my favorite.” Dylan jumped up and down, “YIPEE! I’m the fairy queen’s favorite, Lucas. That deserves later reflection once I am buzzing with energy.”

He chugged the latte Lucinda handed him. Eric linked me, “Fucking hell.” I sighed. Aiden snapped the rest of us coffee while grinning mischievously. Dylan finished his drink then fist pumped into the air, “AHHH I AM READY TO GO! Put me in coach. Let me at ‘em, let me at ‘em.” He started jumping back and forth.

He told me, “I feel like I could do a backflip. In fact, I’m going to do a backflip.” He took off running, I cautioned, “Dylan, you don’t know how...” I trailed off when he did a backflip.

He taunted, “You were saying something you doubting Thomas?” I said, “Evidently, you can do a backflip.” Dylan started to dance, “Of course I can. Let’s give the witches a latte. I could bring that ward down now. I CAN DO EVERYTHING!” Eric disagreed, “No, just no Dylan.” Dylan turned, “GAP, do tell me how you got so lucky? I mean really did you sacrifice virgins to the gods? What did you do? The WORLD needs to know.”

Eric growled, “I have NEVER hurt a woman who did not pose a threat to pack or family.” Dylan said, “That’s not what I

meant. GOD! You all are so serious. Lighten up, Francis.” I rolled my eyes. “Now he’s quoting movies.”

Dylan turned, “Lucas... I often quote movies. Hey... where did Beta James Bond go?” Aiden said, “He did not hop on the super powerful fairy family express.” Dylan glared at the sky, “WHY MOON GODDESS? Queen Lucinda would’ve snapped him a martini!” Lucinda smirked, “Shaken not stirred even.”

Dylan continued to yell at the sky, “It’s because I’m not GAP, isn’t it? If Beta James Bond amused him, he would be here.” Eric said, “Dylan, my wife, pups, and her cousin are behind this barrier. They are with a man who hates my mate and your Luna.” Dylan waited several moments then asked, “Was there more to that statement? We all know that already.”

Eric was about to yell at Dylan when BA said, “Good lord, you all are worse than women. I’d bet I can get through this.” Molly mused, “You did get through the other one.” BA wiggled her eyebrows. Dylan clapped, “Right, you have a weekend getaway to get to according to the goddess that is our fun sized ninja fairy. Who is that with? Your string perhaps?”

BA laughed, “I can’t tell you his name before I tell Haley. That’s like breaking so many girl code rules.” Dylan said, “Awww come on now, just between us gals.” BA laughed, “I can’t actually tell you. I’m not dating him as the Black Arrow.”

Dylan’s eyes lit up, “It’s so your string!” BA blushed. Eric raised an eyebrow. BA avoided answering, “I don’t really talk about my real identity.” Dylan happily asked, “So it’s like fight club? GAP, WE ONLY HAVE ONE RULE!” Eric rubbed his face.

Dylan told BA, “He has to join our guy gang though. So, I need someone to talk about it.” BA laughed, “I’m sure Haley can get a group of guys for your gang without you knowing directly which one I’m dating.” Dylan said, “Well, if he’s not your string we don’t want him.” BA laughed, “Then I suppose you’ll have to wait and find out.”

Dylan pouted, “Tired Dylan is not a patient man! You look too happy for him not to be your string. TRUST ME. I am THE expert. I watched GAP and Lucas date women who weren’t their mate. I dated women who weren’t my mate. The only one who could make me smile like that is my mate. Where is your weekend getaway?” BA shrugged, “I don’t know, he’s surprising me.”

Dylan sighed dramatically, “Then I hope he is your string, or he could be a killer ferreting you off to commit your murder.” Eric punched Dylan in the arm. Dylan yelled, “OW! I’m not saying he would be successful! She’s crazy fast and amazing with arrows.”

BA laughed again. “That being said, I’m going to get in there and get to my girls.” Eric cautioned, “Haley will kick our asses if that ward hurts you.” BA winked, “All the more reason for me to try to get through. You two are ridiculously cute together, Eric. I’ve never seen her so happy.”

Dylan clapped and pointed at BA, “That’s three... three women who can him Eric and he doesn’t so much as growl. Never in all my years has that gone down like this. I have seen it all now. Nothing can surprise me.” BA laughed, “I like you Dylan Frost, call me BA.”

Dylan squealed, “LUCAS!” I winced, “I know.” Dylan asked, “Do you? Do you really? The Black Arrow... I’m sorry BA said I can call her BA. Not you, or you, or even you.” He pointed at different people. He stopped on Eric.

Eric smirked, “I’ve been calling her BA since she stayed at my house.” Dylan threw his hands in the air, “OF COURSE YOU HAVE, YOU PRICK!” BA laughed, “As fun as this is, I’m going to join the action. If I don’t see you before Haley pops me out, I hope to see you again soon.”

Dylan said, “The wedding. You’re coming to the wedding, right? It’s on Christmas Eve.” BA sighed, “Sadly, I have a mission.” Dylan complained, “AWWW come on! I heard a birdy say the Scott’s were in charge... cozy on up to miss Lexi Scott. Sisters can make their brothers do things from my observations.”

BA laughed, “Rumors are not fact. You don’t know the Scott family leads us.” Dylan pursed his lips, “True. Give me the number of the Hood himself. I’ll charm him, it’s my superpower.” Eric scoffed. Dylan stuck his tongue out at him.

BA told Dylan, “Ever since the Hood lost his string... he’s been on a mission to be the best leader we’ve had. He doesn’t take a break. I take my missions so he can relax, and so I stay busy.” Dylan thought about it then said, “AWWW, the poor guy. My mated heart twitterpated with sympathy for him. We can have Emmaline meet him. She can figure out his second chance string. We can get him to lighten up.”

BA smiled, “I hope he does, he’s a great guy. He’s one of the best men I know.” Dylan said, “That’s adorable. Such interesting affection you have for your leader. Familial even, possibly.” I linked him, “You cannot think the Hood and Black Arrow are related.” He snorted, “The saying it runs in the family comes to mind.” Maybe but the Hood generally only had one moniker per family.

BA didn’t answer him and instead stepped into the ward. Molly clicked her tongue, “The man doesn’t learn.” BA gave her a thumbs up and took off running. Dylan asked the group, “Do we even need to do anything? Did you see how fast she is?” Molly laughed, “You wait until you see her smash people’s skulls in with her bow. Her upper body workout must be intense.”

Dylan yelled, “I MISSED THAT! OH, CRUEL UNKNOWING WORLD!” Eric breathed a sigh of relief. I asked, “Eric? Eric smiled, “BA got to them. Haley linked me that they are kicking ass. Emmaline is working on something with the ward.”

Logan voiced my question, “How can she do that? She’s not a witch.” Aiden happily explained, “She’s going to take the iron part down so we can get in. Rest assured wolves, our family will be victorious. Marcious stay back with the wolves to help on this side.” Marcious nodded sadly, “Yes, cousin. I will do that.”

I took a stab at getting him to clarify that, “Take down the iron?” Aiden smiled, “She is going to turn the iron to water.” We all gaped at him. Dylan said, “Sure... that... The whole thing? Can she do that? What am I saying? Of course, she can, she’s Queen Elsa. She just uses love to thaw things.”

Aiden frowned, “The ward is not frozen, I do not understand this reference.” Dylan shrugged, “I’m tired. So very tired King Fire Hands.” All of a sudden the ward looked like it was sweating. The warlocks all paused. Aiden laughed, “Here we go!”

After a few minutes it was as if it had been popped like a balloon; water rained down on the inside of the ward. Aiden winked at us, “See you on the other side, wolves. Fairies assemble!” Aiden, Lucinda, and Bexley popped away.

Dylan asked, “Did he just imply they were the Avengers? Because... I’m so on the fairy avengers’ team.” I responded, “I think he did.” Eric grumbled, “Google is the worst thing for fairies to get a hold of.” Dylan disagreed, “I think you mean the best thing ever. I love everything about it. Hey warlocks, the fairies are kicking your ass.”

Dustin snarked, “Thanks Dylan, that’s very helpful.” Dylan smiled gleefully, “Just doing my part, man. I’m just a Beta hoping I could jump start your competitive fairy blood.” Marcious asked, “How do you know fairies are competitive?”

Dylan linked me, “I forgot he stayed behind. DRAT! He can’t know about my precious.” Out loud Dylan said, “Duh, I live with one. Remember? It’s your daughter. I have spent my time dedicated to learning about the partial fairy’s since I met your cousin Haley. Ever since the very first moment I spoke to her on the phone, I have been captivated by her. She already had me in the palm of her hand after their wedding. So much pink. Did you know he hates pink? Loathes it. Yet his mating ceremony was chock full of pink. I bow to her amazingness. Have you heard about our first conversation? It was glorious. Followed by our second conversation, then the amazingness that was the video of her taking our council to task that she later killed.”

Marcious laughed, “I did hear about that.” Dylan asked, “Which part?” Marcious smirked, “All of it. The wolves did not appear to know that while fairy women are quite pleasant during pregnancy if you push them... they are vicious.”

Jackson snorted, “Why haven’t we watched this tape?” Dylan shrieked, “YOU HAVEN’T SEEN IT? I watch it whenever I need to cheer myself up.” I asked, “Eric, you haven’t seen it?” Eric shrugged, “No.” I laughed, “I have. He made me watch it when I got home. It’s... something.”

Dylan berated them, “BLASPHEMERS! All of you! Heretics! You do not deserve her. WHY MOON GODDESS?” Eric growled, “Because she’s fucking mine, Dylan.” Dylan bemoaned, “BUT WHY? Dear goddess WHY is she yours?”

Marcious laughed, “That is a popular question in Faerie, Beta Dylan.” Dylan said, “Now, now, none of them deserve her either. I won’t lie to you Marcious, I don’t know who does. I’m glad Haley is GAP’s because she is so close by. My fairy show is on twenty-four seven thanks to these two Alpha males.” He pointed at Eric and me.

Bjourn spoke, “Had Eric not been her mate, we would’ve killed hers. We wanted Eric for her. She needs someone like him as her partner.” Dylan said, “What? You were going to kill her mate?” Bjourn glanced at Marcious before answering, “Yes, especially if it was a fairy.” Dylan said, “Damn. She was always going to get to be Eric’s in this reality?” All the Hackura nodded. Dylan turned to Eric, “PRICK!” Eric smirked.

Dylan yelled, “WAIT! He said someone like him... OHHHH THERE WERE OTHER CHOICES! Tell me who.” He smiled. Ryan and Dustin turned briefly with smirks on their face. Eric growled, “DYLAN!” Dylan smirked, “You know I’m right, don’t you? You feel it in your perfect, knows everything head.” Eric growled, “She’s mine.” Dylan sighed, “I’ll get the list, I will. I might have to arrange visits... It will be glorious.” Eric snarled and started to move towards Dylan.

He stopped when the stench of rogues hit us. We whirled around. They had come to the barrier, ready to attack the

second the ward came down. Dylan cleared his throat, “Not to rock the boat, but Dustin and Ryan; Is there any reason why you couldn’t just ask the shadows to get you inside?” Dustin said, “The shadows aren’t a genie. You can’t ask them to break wards. They respect that magic they present.”

Dylan snorted, “The shadows have rules? God, can we get the fairy’s back? They are far more fun.” He scoffed, “Rules.” Marcious roared with laughter. He turned commenting, “Beta Dylan, you will have to come to dinner at my home sometime. You would be a hit.”

Dylan whirled, “I would be popular in Faerie?” Marcious said, “Very. Your mate would dislike it, but you would be quite the hit.” Dylan clapped, “Did you hear that, Lucas?” I rubbed my face, “Yes, I imagine I will hear all about it for the rest of our lives.” Dylan smirked, “Damn straight you will! Marcious, I want to be the resident wolf expert on partial fairies. Can you help me with that?”

Marcious laughed, “I could tell you stories about fairies I suppose. Here is my card.” Dylan squealed like a teenage girl, “A fairy card Lucas. I have a fairy card WITH A FAIRY ON THE OTHER END! I don’t recall ever being more excited than in this moment.” I casually replied, “When you married my sister, found out you’d be a dad, moments like that come to mind.” Dylan wasn’t even listening to me; he was holding up the card and singing.

Eric groaned, “Really, Marcious? Why?” Marcious answered, “He amuses me.” Dylan gleefully exclaimed, “FINALLY! Someone who gets me. I appreciate them and they appreciate me. NONE of you can take that from me.”

Dustin yelled, “GET READY!” Dylan took off his pants and put the card in them. He tied them to his ankle. We all looked at him. Dylan explained, “I’m not leaving this card in the dirt in Russia you guys. This WILL be on my person at all times. I already memorized the number.” Eric rolled his eyes, “Of course you did. I have his number, Dylan; I could text it to you.”

Dylan snorted, “This is my card GAP. You have a number in a phone. I have a physical card handed to me by the Prince of the water fairy’s himself. Obviously, he likes me more than he likes you.” Eric said, “Sure, whatever helps you sleep at night. Go ahead and think he didn’t give me a card too.”

Dylan started to dance again. “Alright, I’m ready.” Eric said, “Good, we were waiting on you to be ready. It’s why we’ve been FUCKING STANDING HERE THIS WHOLE TIME!” Dylan smiled, “There’s no need to shout. You could’ve just told me to get ready.” Eric pinched the bridge of his nose, “Lucas, I’m five seconds away from muzzling him.”

Dylan gasped, “You said you’d never do that again!” Eric corrected him, “No, I said I would TRY not to do it again.” Dylan said, “I’d just link Lucas all my thoughts until he told you.” I changed the topic, “We need to shift.”

Dylan looked at Eric, “HAHAHA I win.” He shifted into Fang. Eric shifted into Thor and growled at Dylan. Dylan jumped in a circle around Thor. I shifted into Dominic. We all growled as the barrier came down. I jumped on the rogue who was going for Ryan’s throat. Eric and Dylan were right beside me. Ryan blew out a breath, “Thanks.”

Dylan linked, “Ummm... who knew Russia had this big of a rogue problem? We are massively outnumbered.” I turned linking my friend, “Eric.” Eric growled, “Tell me that’s not five hundred rogues.” I agreed with his assessment, “That does seem about right.” Eric charged forward.

Dylan linked me, “WHERE IS THE GOD OF THUNDER GOING?” I took off after Eric. Dylan asked me, “Where are we going?!” We rushed the line with Eric. His brothers were right behind us. A pop sounded when Aiden and Lucinda joined us again with Bexley. Lucinda held out her hands and the wolves started to explode.

Dylan linked me, “SHE CAN BLOW UP ROGUES? I LOVE HER!” Bexley was throwing sunlight around, going for the kill. Eric howled when another pop sounded. I howled too. Haley had joined us. Dylan linked me, “How did she get

taller? Is that a charm?" I looked over, and nearly staggered. Haley was now taller than Emmaline.

Haley smiled, "Hey there, Thor. She leaned down and the ground began to open. Several rogues fell into the crack once it was wide enough and Haley closed it. Dylan said, "Ummm... that's new and amazing. Have I asked how is she taller now because... how? I have so many questions."

Haley looked over at us. "Hey Dominic, Hi Fang." Dylan jumped up and down, "She knows Fang's name? OH MY GOD! RIBBON HALEY!!! WE HAVE A RIBBON HALEY!!!! LUCAS OUR LIVES ARE AMAZING! ALERT EVERYONE! RIBBON HALEY IS TALL AND AMAZING AND SHE KNOWS US LUCAS!" He howled in joy.

Haley laughed, "I guess you figured out I'm not your Haley. Emmaline was calling me not momma because the triplets called me not momma." Dylan was too excited, "The triplets knew she wasn't their mom? This gets better. DAMN these rogues for ruining the beauty of this moment. Tall Haley, we have a TALL Haley."

Haley popped beside her Hackura brothers and fought with them for several minutes before she popped to Aiden. They fought with each other just as easily as she fought with her other brothers. Dylan linked me, "This Haley is not only tall she has a good relationship with Aiden." I agreed, "So it seems." Dylan nudged me in wolf form, "It's too fun."

Aiden happily ordered, "End this little sister of mine from another reality." She smiled and held out her hands then curled her fingers. She took down all the remaining one hundred and fifty wolves. Dylan pleaded with me, "OH MY GOD! Can we keep her too? She's amazing. There's two of them. GAP could keep Short Haley and Tall Haley can live with us. Then we can get the two of them together. I will never be bored again." I pointed out, "She belongs to an Eric in a different reality."

Dylan shifted back and untied his pants from his legs, "Screw alternate reality GAP. I want that one for our home!" I shifted back, "Argue with her and Eric about it. I'm going to find Emmaline." As I was running towards the castle, I was

snapped clothes. I could hear Dylan bickering with Eric, who told Dylan Tall Haley would eventually leave.

I turned to see her give Eric a quick hug. She told him, “I know you aren’t mine, but I miss you.” Dylan huffed, “OF course you do. GAP everyone! He’s here all the DAMN TIME!” Tall Haley laughed, “You’re just as fun here, Dylan.” Dylan smirked, “Of course I am. I’m fabulous spanning all realities.”

Eric said, “I’d like to go see my Haley and... I can tell the triplets just popped out.” Titus looked at his phone. “They are with Veronica. I’ll leave you all here and go give them a stern talking to.” He opened a portal leaving as I reached the castle.

The second I stepped inside and was ankle deep in water, I followed the smell of jasmine knowing it was leading me to Emmaline. I needed to see her. I heard Emmaline talking to David. She was going to kill him. I sighed. I REALLY wanted to torture him, but if this is what Emmaline needed; I was beyond caring. I just wanted to get her home. I wanted to be her husband. I wanted our life together.

I entered the room in time to see her put her hands on David’s chest. I couldn’t take my eyes off her. My feet were frozen. My brain was screaming at me to go to her, but I couldn’t move. I was just drinking her in.

Dylan bumped me from behind. He linked me, “She’s really there, and she’s ok. Move your sleep tyrant self to your woman.” I rushed to her and put my arms around her. I felt lighter. She was in my arms. I wasn’t going to be able to let her go anytime soon.

Emmaline’s siblings joined me. Dylan said, “So many fairies, so little time. How long have we been friends, Tall Haley?” The Tall Haley laughed, “A week and a half. I met Eric two weeks ago, and you and Lucas came for a meeting with him. Jackson said Eric and I had to put on clothes and stop being naked.” Dylan snorted.

Eric smirked, “You’re such a killjoy, Jackson.” Dylan shrieked, “JACKSON IS THE KILLJOY? Uhh no, that would be you. Don’t try to give your mantle away. He’s the

reasonable one.” Dylan scoffed, “Jackson a killjoy. It’s just backwards and opposite day here in Russia.” Eric rolled his eyes.

All of David’s kids got their last words into their dad. Dylan linked me, “Slowest drowning EVER!” I replied, “I’m sure that was Emmaline’s intention.” Dylan stated, “Don’t piss off the Luna.” I added on, “Never piss off Katie Bishop.” Dylan smiled, “Her fairy blood makes her so fun. I just know it. That was a drop mic moment. I can’t believe I don’t have one to give her.”

Emmaline turned into my chest and started to cry. I kissed her, pouring all my feelings into that kiss. I linked Eric, “I can’t have this happen again.” Eric responded, “I know.” I emphasized, “I can’t be apart from her like this again. What do we do? They are a part of this powerful family, but they don’t live in Faerie. They are the targets people will come for.”

Eric agreed, “I know that too. Those who come will be sorely disappointed because they will come against us every time. I won’t lose Haley again. I will fucking destroy anyone who tries to take her from my side.” I assured him, “I’ll help you. We need a plan.” Eric curtly stated, “We will have one.” I nodded.

Tall Haley was surprised our Haley didn’t know many human sayings. Her Hackura family shrugged. I linked Eric, “They do seem to know our sayings. Why doesn’t our Haley?” Eric winced, “Because they didn’t raise her. Their focus was on her physical and mental health by the time she came to them. They trained her and focused on getting her to open up to them. They didn’t train her about our realm. She didn’t do missions where her knowing the sayings were necessary. That’s why they know our sayings. So, they blend in when they go on missions. None of them wanted her gone for long periods of time like they can be. Most of her missions were silently getting in and out or helping BA. That’s how they became friends.”

I thought about it then nodded, “That makes sense.” Aiden was visibly relieved about the state of that realities relationship with her fairy family. Dylan linked me, “That’s gotta suck that

knowing that a small decision here or there and his brother would be by his side. I don't even know how I would handle it if Travis betrayed me. No that's a lie, I do know. I'd kick Travis' ass. Then I'd make him go bobbing for apples."

What in the actual fuck? I asked, "What?" Dylan explained, "Travis hates bobbing for apples. He's very bad at it. I'd make him keep bobbing until he got one. He could be bobbing for days, he's that bad." I shook my head. "That's... so you Dylan." Dylan smiled, "Isn't it? People should do things my way. The world would be a better place." I laughed, "It would certainly be a more interesting place."

I turned my attention to Marcious when he asked Emmaline for a hug. I frowned. Dylan linked, "You will have to let go of her for him to hug her." I growled, "Not necessarily." Dylan said, "Sure, if you want an Emmaline sandwich it is not necessary."

I admitted, "I can't let go of her." Dylan said, "We all see that. She's shimmying her way towards her dad. Come on, you can do this. I believe in you. Deep breaths and relax your hands. Come on. There you go. Who's a good boy?" He threw a piece of popcorn at me. I batted it away. He frowned and shook his index finger, "Now, now, we don't waste our snacks! BAD Lucas!" I stared at him for several seconds.

As soon as Marcious and Emmaline finished talking and he popped away, I had Emmaline back in my arms. Dylan sounded so happy to inform me, "You lasted a whole forty-five seconds without her in your arms. I see we are going to have to work on this. The good news is you can only improve from here. Maybe by the end of the week we can get it sixty seconds."

I growled. He held up his hands, "I know. It's a lofty goal, but I think if we put our heads together, we can accomplish it." Emmaline panicked over the date. I assured her our wedding was still on. Dylan asked, "Can we sleep until Christmas Eve? I'm asking for a friend who's very tired." I didn't answer.

Emmaline brought up Beta James Bond. Dylan linked me, "Stop trying to take Beta James Bond from me! Just because

he's my new best friend doesn't mean I have no love for my old bestie! I still love you, man. Don't be jealous of the newcomer, it's very mean and petty." I replied, "I simply stated his first name isn't James." He huffed at me.

Dylan asked Haley for more coffee. I linked him, "I think you need decaf." Dylan hissed, "You shush. I NEED coffee. I am one cup away from falling flat on my face. Then I'd drown in the water because it's ankle deep. My pillow would never know how much I truly love it."

I sighed, "You and this pillow." Dylan retorted, "It's MY pillow not this pillow. Don't insult my pillow. It's the best pillow there is around. It's the one thing that I didn't have to change from my bachelor days. We have been through things that pillow and me. I can't die without it knowing of my undying love for it." I gave up, "Sure, Dylan."

Dylan said, "You will have to do some talking because you are my witness. I have not slept on another pillow. No cheating is happening. GAP will have to attest to that as well." I said, "Let's not tell him that just yet." Dylan sighed, "Only because my ability to run away is dampened. Under duress, I agree to not telling him right now."

He then talked about his pups being mated to Eric and Haley's. I linked him, "Didn't we just cover your inability to run away?" Dylan smirked this time, "Worth it!" Eric linked me, "Why do I just have this sinking feeling a pup of mine will be the mate of one of his pups?" I said, "Because that's how our lives go now."

Eric groaned, "I do not have enough alcohol in my house." I bit my lip, "Hopefully it's Alexander, or at least another son of yours to come." Eric said, "If one of his sons is mated to Cassie or any future daughter I have... I'm going to kick his ass." I frowned, "That doesn't seem fair." Eric seemed nonplussed, "He's already admitted life isn't fucking fair."

I linked Dylan, "You'd better hope one of your little girls or boys is mates with one of his boys. He already plans to kick your ass if one of your pups is mated to any of his girls." Dylan yelled, "WORTH IT! Moon goddess I don't even care."

Either one will work for me. I'll throw a parade in my pups honor. It will be a pack holiday. There will be celebrations!" I believed he meant every single word.

We both watched the Tall Haley sit and simply fade from view. Dylan hit me in the arm, "THAT... IS... THE COOLEST THING I HAVE EVER SEEN!" He begged Haley to let him be a part of Ribbon visits. I linked Eric, "There will be no living with him after this." Eric snorted, "There was no living with him before. Now he's seen a Ribbon visitor, and he's met Beta Bond." Crap.

Dylan faltered when Haley talked about the other Tall her. He linked me, "That's actually sad. I don't want to dwell on them robbing her of seven plus inches of height. That's... cruel, dastardly, pure evil. I have more adjectives let me know if you need them." I replied, "I'm good."

We all turned in time to see David turn to water. Dylan repeated, "Longest... drowning.... ever. I know you didn't get to torture him, but he was basically waterboarded for several hours. With no break. I mean who needs to torture people? We just make them regret all their life choices while we get on with our lives. It's perfect! It also gives me time back in my life, and I NEED time back in my life."

I admitted, "I still wanted to torture him, but I don't care right now. Other things are more important." Dylan agreed, "Yes, like sleep. We need sleep. So much sleep." Dustin started to talk to Alexa. Dylan grumbled, "OH FOR THE LOVE OF GOD! Can he try to make her like him when we've had sleep? Seriously sleep deprivation is a thing. My brain isn't as fast as it should be. I'm missing key Dylanism moments, I can feel it."

Eric tilted his head when I looked at him. He actually agreed, but he wasn't going to say it. Dylan said, "Great everyone is going to try to get along for Charlie Rose's sake. LA TI FREAKING DAH. Let's go. Vamoose. Go on and git! Let's get the heck out of dodge. What saying will be my ticket home? Silly Dylan! Click your heels three times!" He smacked himself in the head. "Do you see what is happening to me,

Lucas? I am broken!” Eric agreed, “He is.” Dylan stuck his tongue out at him.

We paused when Emmaline grabbed Alexa’s hand. A pink glow transferred from Emmaline to Alexa. Dylan asked me, “Ummm... that’s new. Right? I haven’t missed that?” I answered him, “No, that’s new. Do you know what it was?” Dylan retorted, “Of course I do, you sleep deprived man. She eased the pain in Alexa’s soul. I’m pretty sure...No, I’m fairly positive.... maybe.”

Alexa confirmed his assumption. Dylan said, “BAM! Fairy experted. I should never doubt myself. Of course, I was right.” Emmaline was overwhelmed. Dylan was all over her plan to go home, lamenting some more about his pillow.

Eric linked me, “Lucas, I am one more comment away from setting his pillow on fire.” I admitted, “We might all need some sleep.” Aiden told everyone to hop on a fairy. Eric linked me, “He may be powerful, but I am not above killing him either.”

I linked Jackson, “Eric wants to kill everyone and set Dylan’s pillow on fire. He’s reached that level of exhaustion.” Jackson winced, “Aiden is excited and not realizing the ramifications. Haley and Emmaline will be the first targets of everyone. You can’t get to Faerie without a fairy to escort you. A willing escort even. Maribella, Emmaline, Haley and even Sharon will be much easier targets.” I agreed, “Yes, I know.”

We all snapped our heads to Lucinda when she said we had to be in Faerie for New Years. Dylan was beyond excited. He squealed, “LUCAS! MY DREAMS COME TRUE! I want a popcorn fairy too, moon goddess. It’s my dearest wish.” I asked, “What on earth is a popcorn fairy?”

Dylan looked at me like I was insane, “Obviously, it’s a fairy whose sole purpose is to snap me popcorn when the situation calls for it.” I raised an eyebrow, “Don’t you use Danver for that?” Dylan winked, “Mostly. He could get a break though if I had a popcorn fairy. He wants to try his hand at fighting training. We have a meeting with him. At some point, I can’t remember when because Dylan is broken.”

I was surprised, “Does he really?” Dylan nodded, “Yes, I think he will be good. You know he’s my favorite Omega. I want to give him a chance.” I replied, “You know I have no problem with our Omega’s training to fight. We have them all in basic self-defense. If he wants to continue his skills that’s fine. He doesn’t need my permission.” Dylan shrugged, “He still wants to meet with us.” I sighed, “Fine.”

I linked my dad, “We are coming home.” My dad immediately replied, “Thank god! Did you get Emmy? Is she alright? Do you have David?” I replied, “Of course we have Emmaline. She’s fine and David is dead. Emmaline killed him.” My dad sighed in relief, “Good, we are waiting for you here.”

We were popped into our living room. Mom was a mess. Her face was puffy, and even Lacy had red rimmed eyes. My dad linked, “They have been going out of their mind with worry. Lacy lost it on Davis and kicked him out of the house.” I asked, “Why?” My dad replied, “He was always where she was, and trying to make sure she was ok. It was driving her nuts.” I tilted my head, “As long as she didn’t kick Travis out.”

Before he could answer I spotted the man in question myself. Dylan linked me, “Travis is now going to have to make sure Lacy has all her books before she leaves school.” I empathized, “Poor Travis.” Dylan mocked, “POOR TRAVIS? I have AGED TWENTY years since... What day is it? I don’t even know. It’s been like six years since we left for an overnight trip. THAT HAS BEEN SO MUCH LONGER THAN OVERNIGHT TRIP! Never again will I believe you when you say we are going on an overnight trip. You have burned the bridge. It’s ashes. Overnight MY TUCHUS!”

The conversation turned to Grayson. Dylan linked me, “We need to have to rule. When there has been no sleep and I asked how something happened, I need to know you got out of your car and changed the tire because you had a flat. I don’t need to know about the construction site where you probably picked up the nail and the weather that day. I need a bottom line here.” I snorted, “I’ve never heard a fairy tell a story that way.”

I linked Eric, “Haley had plans for Grayson? What was she going to do?” Eric admitted, “I don’t know, but she’s had plans since she first heard his name. She said he was an obnoxious human who had to go.” I sighed, “I have mixed feelings about it. He was just a kid, but he was annoying. I wanted to kill him for being the other man Emmaline had kissed. He was just a pawn though.” Eric shrugged, “We all know you’re better than me. I’d have killed Grayson long before now.”

Dylan linked me, “I just want to go to bed. I need to know how Grayson died so I accomplish this goal. Make her explain it to me, she’s your mate.” I pointed out, “She is telling you what happened.” Dylan complained, “She’s telling the longest story in the history of stories for the demise of Grayson, the thorn in my side.” Dylan froze when Emmaline said she tried to stop Grayson’s neck wound from bleeding.

Eric linked me, “Tell me she used his lucky shirt to mop up the blood. Just tell me, Lucas. It will make my whole day.” I linked Lacy, “Is it his lucky shirt?” Lacy was trying not to laugh, “It is.” Dylan linked me, “Lucas... if my lucky shirt is gone because of Grayson, I will curse something... somehow... NO, I will get Katie to curse someone for me.”

I linked Eric, “It is his lucky shirt. Can Haley fix it?” Eric admitted, “Probably. Let’s not tell him that.” Dylan was on his knees. He linked me, “That’s the shirt I first kissed Lacy in. I lost my virginity wearing that shirt. It’s just gone! Someone needs to bring me Grayson’s body so I can kick him... repeatedly.” Of course, that’s what he wanted.

My dad hugged me. I linked the pack, “Your Luna is home. She killed David Forrester and fought her way back to us.” I heard the howls of joy erupt from all around us. Lacy explained to Emmaline what was going on.

Travis linked me, “How tired is my brother? He just threw popcorn at me.” I winced, “We haven’t slept since we left.” Travis whistled, “Oh boy... you know how he gets.” I wryly informed him, “You missed the triple espresso shots latte Dylan had.” Travis nearly snorted, “I’m not even sad I missed that.”

Haley explained to Dylan her plans for Grayson. Dylan linked me, “ICE FISHING IN ANTARCTICA because it’s cold there. I love her, I do. It’s a deep, unabating love that will never end.”

Haley conjured his shirt and Dylan actually cried. Travis linked me, “He needs sleep.” Haley snapped the shirt clear of blood. Dylan yanked her in for an air hug then ran to hide behind Lacy. Travis was shaking with laughter.

Eric linked me, “A very large part of me wants to lunge towards him to see if he would yelp.” I’d imagine he would. I watched Haley closely. She seemed ok with Dylan’s hug since he didn’t touch her.

Emmaline wanted to shower and sleep. Dylan was about to make a break for it but reminded us he wanted to be in the conversation about the prophecy. I linked him, “I wouldn’t let you miss that conversation.” Dylan mockingly replied, “Puh-lease, I’d sniff it out like a bloodhound even if you tried not to include me. I will be ready, like our creepy ninja ready to jump out at every moment.”

Dylan and Eric goaded each other some more before they popped out. Dylan shot from the room with Lacy in his arms. He linked the pack, “Don’t ANY of you THINK of having an issue that needs me for twenty-four hours. If you see the Luna at a training session you send her BACK TO BED! Do not let her pass go, she does not collect two hundred dollars, directly back to jail, which is her bed, for the Luna.”

I bit my lip as the pack link echoed with laughter and, “Yes Beta Dylan.” He responded, “I am so serious. If any of you let her train and she gets hurt, I will never be nice to you again. Twenty-four hours of your punishment of no Dylan begins. I know it’s not fair, and you’ll miss me. We all have to make sacrifices for the greater good.” I snorted in reply.

Emmaline and I took a quick shower and we slid into bed. I shot off the bed when Emmaline popped out of my arms. Dominic was not ready for her to be out of our eyesight. He linked me, “Neither are you. Don’t lie. Move your human legs. Get mate.”

I grabbed Emmaline and threw her back on the bed. We spent hours reacquainting ourselves with each other's bodies, only stopping when our stomachs reminded us we needed food. I wanted to slap myself. I didn't even know the last time she'd had food was. Come to think of it, I wasn't sure when I last ate. Emmaline asked me about the prophecy, but I wasn't really sure. Oddly, we needed Dylan but Haley would be able to explain it more fully.

I paused our walk to the kitchen when Emmaline said she met the fairy goddess. That was pretty big. The fairy goddess was rumored to be quite flighty. She told me she'd met her when she got hit by a bat. That FUCKER! If he was alive, I would've done LOTS of things to him before handing him over to Logan. That was fine by me.

I pulled out my phone and texted Eric that we were up. Haley and Eric popped in a second later. I frowned looking at his expression. I linked him, "You look pissed." Eric responded, "I am pissed. This prophecy shit is insane. Apparently, I'll have another daughter at some point. SHE will be the one with the most powerful gift of sight Faerie has ever seen."

I questioned, "Why not Cassie?" Eric linked, "Because Cassie is the Truth Seeker. Apparently, the gift of truth seeking, and sight cannot go to the same person." I responded, "At least you know you'll have another girl. That's exciting." Eric growled, "I am so pissed the fairies are going to be watching for her. Not just fairies... everyone wants a pup that hasn't been conceived." I admitted, "That is... strange."

Dylan ran into the kitchen whisper hissing, "I KNOW you weren't starting without me." I stared at him, "I'm just trying to get food." Dylan replied, "I got you food. I have been ready for hours! Hours, Lucas. I am the BEST BETA OF ALL TIME. I am so ready for this moment." That was probably the least surprising piece of information I was going to get today.

Emmaline asked if Dylan was serious about the equipment he had to hear about this prophecy. I didn't even have to ask Dylan to tell her the answer. Dylan was more serious than he

had ever been in his entire life. Even Davis might be impressed.

Emmaline grabbed a ton of pizza and sat by Lacy. I got mine and joined the table, between my Dad and Emmaline. We ate in silence until Haley was done eating and ready to share. Haley went into how the ruling house of Faerie has changed over the years. It was only the fire fairy prince and the Queen being mates that had stopped the houses facing war. Her declaring Fenilton as King kept the Holloran family in power. Fenilton was loved prior to his death.

I linked Eric, “Does the prophecy change because Arion isn’t in it?” Eric answered, “No, he just would’ve stood with them. They aren’t weakened without him from what I know. They would’ve been a little stronger with him though. Tell Dylan I got him a conjured copy of every book Haley knew about that had this prophecy in it.”

I was actually stunned. I replied, “You what now?” Eric shrugged, “You and I don’t have time to read the books. Clearly, he does. He can give us pertinent information that we need to know, while we up our security and training. Now, Dylan can’t say I never did anything for him now.”

I linked Dylan, “Eric has fairy books for you.” Dylan sounded shocked, “Our link is broken. You just said GAP has fairy books for me.” I winced as I said it knowing he was about to scream in my head in excitement, “Eric does have fairy books for you. He had Haley conjure copies of all the books she knew of containing information about this prophecy. He wants you to read them and tell us what we need to know.”

Dylan yelled, “Oh my god. MY DREAMS REALLY DO COME TRUE! Even GAP will recognize me as the fairy expert. I don’t have enough popcorn; Danver needs to bring me champagne!” I sighed. Sure enough, during Haley’s story, Danver brought two flutes of champagne to Dylan. He raised a glass to Eric then downed it. He raised the second to Eric and downed that one too.

Eric linked me, “I already regret this.” I didn’t even focus on that, “So we have the purest of soul, mind, and heart fairies

between you and me. My line will always be soul searchers along with a powerful little boy, and you've got the strongest fairy with sight coming who will also be a wolf. Do you have a headache?"

Eric responded, "I have a fucking migraine. I've upped my warrior's training, all the way down to Omega's. I'm having them take basic warrior classes other than self-defense now." I thought about it, "That's not a bad idea. They always know they have the option for those classes in both our packs."

Eric shrugged, "It's not an option anymore. We all need to be prepared because people are going to come for them, and they would kill anyone they thought was in their way." A piece of information that did actually make me happy was that Emmaline could now keep someone's mate to herself without pain. I'd known that had weighed on her.

I linked Eric, "How much trouble did Aiden get in for making Bexley royal without Haley?" Eric snorted, "She yelled at him for hours. She cried, and then he cried." I listened to Haley for a bit. I linked Eric again, "Blessed by Goddesses and Gods as in multiple?" Eric curtly replied, "Yup."

Dylan linked me, "I love today. Nothing can bring me down so don't you dare tell me anything bad today." I sighed, "Fine." Emmaline asked Haley if she could take someone's wolf. We all stiffened. I linked Eric, "No way." Eric replied, "She could." I was repulsed at the thought.

I cringed, "To lose your wolf..." Eric tilted his head, "I know. She wouldn't do it without a good reason." I said, "Then... people won't come for her. She could take their powers, and no one wants to lose that." Eric frowned looking at his mate, "If they could get her though, they could use her as a weapon to take people's power. I'm sure there are plans to wipe her memory or some kind of shit so they can do just that." That was a terrifying thought because I was certain it would hurt Haley, but even a Haley with no memory would not hurt someone else without a reason. We all knew that.

Haley explained their call to protection would now pull every member of their family to their side. I frowned linking Eric, “Hopefully no one injures their voice boxes then.” Eric said, “It’s what I would do if I wanted to take them.” Hopefully since he was smarter than most about tactical strategies no one else thought about that.

Dylan linked me, “GAP has plans, doesn’t he? I sense his vicious mind swirling.” I said, “We need plans, Dylan. We need his mind in this situation. If you knew about the prophecy and wanted to take them... what would your first move be?”

Dylan immediately answered, “Knocking them unconscious and injecting them with iron.” I tilted my head, “Not bad. Apparently, part of that is what David did with a bat.” Dylan growled, “I am not sad he’s dead. Not one bit. What an absolute jerk! Hitting my Luna with a bat! I’d make him regret the day he was born.” I smirked. I knew my friend had that side to him. Dylan was vicious for those he loved.

Emmaline was overwhelmed by the prophecy. My dad linked me, “Son, we need better... Everything.” I responded, “I know.” My dad said, “They will come for her and your pups.” I said, “I know, and we will protect them.”

Haley and Emmaline were put out they still couldn’t lie. Dylan agreed with them, “It does seem crappy with this massive destiny placed at their feet. A little white lie would be helpful. For example, if someone asked, ‘are you Emmaline Lyons?’ She could just say no. That would be helpful.”

I wasn’t surprised Emmaline wanted to be known by her fairy name as well as mine. I knew that would make her father quite happy. Dylan linked, “Aww but that’s a dead giveaway for being part of the fairy version of the avenger’s family. Like you just know a Thanos is coming because he doesn’t know he won’t be successful because they can’t lose.”

I grimly stated, “Many will come for them. To know her lineage and to come against Faerie and be considered an act of war. I find I accept their support in such situations.” Dylan said, “Yeah, I can’t worry about that today because I have

more books to add to my lair.” I asked, “You actually have a lair?” Dylan smirked, “I do. It’s glorious, and by the way Logan thought his Zen garden was funny.” If he didn’t my Beta would have a black eye.

Dylan was still beyond excited about New Year’s Eve in Faerie. Emmaline was worried about our pups. We would protect them. Dylan asked, “Protect them? I will worship them. Can I just say I’m excited for all your pups? Especially the super awesome one that’s going to do all this cool water stuff. I can’t wait. Hopefully, he can bring acid rain because I missed that when Brooke did it. I feel very left out on that front, and I feel my nephew could fix that for me.” Emmaline laughed, “It was a little funny.”

Dylan gasped, “A little funny, she says. A PUP brought acid rain to put a witch in her place for touching her mate.” A knock halted that conversation. Eric and Haley taking that as their cue to pop out.

It was Danver. I smiled, “Come in, Danver.” My dad nodded at Danver on his way out of the office. Danver took his seat at the table with Dylan, Lacy, Emmaline, and me.

He spoke somewhat nervously, “Dylan said your meeting was over, and that we could meet now.” I nodded, “Yes. Dylan told me you wanted to do more training. You know you don’t need permission for that Danver. You are welcome to train as much as you want.” Danver nodded, “I know, but I wanted to tell you my goals.” I sat back, nodding, “Alright.”

Danver took a deep breath, “I want to be your last line of defense for the Beta pups.” Dylan and I both stiffened. I asked, “What?” Danver explained, “Beta Dylan has always been so kind to me. I want to protect his family. I know I won’t ever be a warrior assigned to them, but when they are young; I want to be the one getting them to safety. I want to know how to protect them if someone reaches them. That’s why I want to train more.”

Dylan stood, “Thank you, Danver. I would trust my pups to your care.” Danver smiled, “Thank you, Beta Dylan! I won’t

let you down! One thing... I hope that's not out of bounds, but I've noticed you are leery of your parents since they returned."

He looked at me worriedly and continued, "I do not mean to speak ill of the former Beta and Beta female, but I followed them. They keep leaving every day at the same time. They are meeting with a witch. Not one from around here. I think she practices dark magic... No, I know she does. She has the look. Honestly, she's terrifying. I had one of our warriors pull the plates from her car. She's from Nashville. I couldn't get close enough to hear what they were saying, but... may I speak freely?" I nodded.

Danver began to wring his hands. Emmaline reached across and touched his hands, "Danver, no action will be taken against you if you are wrong. We want people to share their concerns with us. We want to have good relationships with other supernatural's in the area too. There are witches in this area the Frost's could have met with. To meet with one outside my brother's coven... does seem suspicious. You are safe in this space."

Danver blurted, "I think they want to do something to Beta Lacy or the pup. Given their obsession with the white wolf... I think it's the pup." Dylan growled. "Thank you, Danver. I'll handle it from here. We will get to the bottom of this." Danver nodded and left.

I spoke quietly, "Dylan..." Travis ran into the room, "What's going on? What's the emergency, Dylan?" Dylan linked me, "Get my so-called parents in here." I linked Davis and Betty and my parents. They all shuffled into the room several minutes later.

Lacy glared at them. Davis sighed dramatically, "What now?" I stood using my Alpha command, "You WILL tell me why you are meeting with a dark witch from Nashville." Betty paled. Davis sighed, "To see if she could help us." Dylan growled, "With what?" Betty whispered, "If you're having a girl. We wanted to know if... if her wolf could be suppressed until she meets her mate." Dylan growled.

Lacy leaped across the table, and punched Betty in the face. Jacqueline pulled Lacy off Betty, but only because Lacy let her. My sister screamed, "MAKE THEM LEAVE, LUCAS!" My dad sounded sad, "Davis... you can't mean this." Davis sighed, "Just until she meets her mate. She'd be safer. We just want our grandpup to be safe."

Everyone was waiting on me to say something. Eventually I spoke, "Is that even possible? Can a witch suppress a wolf?" Davis begrudgingly answered, "An unshifted wolf, yes. It has to be done on their sixteenth birthday." That was not good. We didn't need people knowing that.

I announced, "You are stripped of your former Beta titles. You will stay here under my watch, and you will NEVER try to suppress anyone's wolf in this pack. Is that clear?" Betty and Davis shivered under my Alpha Command.

I growled, "I SAID IS THAT CLEAR?" They both answered, "Yes, Alpha." Dylan followed me up, "You are not my parents, and I don't recognize who you even are." Travis agreed, "What he said. You stay the FUCK away from Jackie. I'll kill you both if you go near her."

Betty cried, "It's not like it would be forever. When she meets her mate, her wolf would come out. They just have to look into each other's eyes." I snarled, "How cruel of you to let a werewolf think she doesn't have a wolf." Davis denied the accusation, "No, she'd know. After she didn't shift, we'd tell her."

Lacy snarled, "YOU ARE NOT THE PARENTS! YOU DON'T GET TO MAKE THOSE DECISIONS!" Emmaline softly asked, "It hurts the wolf and human, doesn't it? To have their wolf blocked from them when they are supposed to shift. What happens to their wolf?"

Betty explained, "It's... well it's never been done. The witch said it would be quite painful, but the wolf is just locked away inside the human. They will be able to access memories, and they will know what's happening in the present. They just can't come out."

Emmaline pressed, “So, this could be done to any sixteen-year-old?” Betty frowned, “I don’t know why anyone would do this unless they were concerned about the white wolf. We made sure that as soon as she met her mate her wolf would come out.”

I sneered, “How kind of you. Because any nefarious type would give a damn about having a ‘legitimate’ reason for such an atrocity. Get the fuck out of my sight.” I linked Alex, “Set up surveillance on the former Beta’s. They don’t fart without you knowing about it, Understand?” Alex replied, “Sure, Lucas. What happened?” I quickly explained. He was pissed.

Davis yelled, “You gave us no choice, son! You wouldn’t tell us what you were having! We needed to protect her.” Dylan grabbed his dad by the shirt and threw him into a wall. He growled, “Listen here old man, you will NEVER know any of your grandpups. IF I have a little girl, you’ll never get within a hundred feet of her. Ever. I hope to GOD she’s one of GAP’s pup’s mates. That way they would do something AWFUL to you two sick fucks for thinking of hurting her.”

Betty cried, “It’s to protect her, not to hurt her!” Travis snarked, “By hiding someone’s wolf from them? That’s horrible. How is that safe? Alpha Eric met his mate at thirty-two. Lucas was in his late twenties. What the fuck is wrong with you two?! It’s just a LEGEND!”

Betty whispered, “Legends often come from the truth.” Dylan spat out, “Which is why I look for bigfoot every DAMN WHERE I GO! Here’s your truth, you have no sons. You have no family, and you’ll never have a damn granddaughter. The ONLY reason I won’t ask Lucas to banish you is because I want to keep my eyes on you. I won’t have you hurt my pups in that way or Travis’. Understand and hear me this one time old man, you mean nothing to me. You are an enemy of my family, and I will do whatever I have to do to protect them. Don’t you EVER meet with some witch to take my pups’ wolf EVER AGAIN!”

The warriors came into the room. I ordered, “Take the Frost’s to the dungeons. They will be there for a month before we re-evaluate their stay down there. They get regular meals.”

Betty begged, “Luna, please! You know our souls. We mean them no harm.”

Emmaline frowned, “I do know your souls. You do mean well, but the road to Hell is paved with good intentions. Lacy is my Beta Female, soon to be sister-in-law, and my best friend. You were plotting to hurt her child. As someone who has a wolf yourself, I don’t know how you could even think of this. I worry you have just set things in motion that…” She trailed off.

I frowned. Dylan linked me, “I hate that unfinished though. I hate everything about it.” I asked, “Emmaline?” Emmaline asked, “Did the witch have to research this?” Davis shrugged, “Yes, what does that matter?” Emmaline said, “I hope it doesn’t, I truly do. I hope some wolf doesn’t suffer from this discovery you’ve forced into the light. I fear it will though.”

I motioned to the warriors to take them away. I wrapped my arms around her, “Baby girl?” Emmaline sighed, “Think about it. A dark witch knows this is a possibility now. I’m sure they would charge a heavy price, but there are David’s of the world out there. This is going to hurt someone.”

I frowned. She felt such misery that I felt it in my chest. I reminded her, “Only for a time, at least it’s not permanent.” Emmaline frowned, “You’re right.” I studied her, “You still don’t feel good about it.” Emmaline agreed, “I don’t. That is cruel, and… I’m just worried.” I told her, “That will not happen to our pups. They will have their wolves their whole lives. I’ll be damned if it happens to Dylan or Travis’ pups either. I’ll have Dustin start looking into ways to reverse this. Ok, baby girl?” She nodded.

I closed my eyes. I didn’t want to leave Emmaline, but I was an Alpha. My best friend needed a run. I ordered, “Dad, stay with Emmaline. She doesn’t get out of your eyesight.” He nodded. I called, “Brad.” He stepped in the door, “She is never out of your sight either.” He nodded.

I turned to Emmaline, “Baby girl, if you pop somewhere, Brad and my dad go with you. Do you understand?” Emmaline acknowledged me with a nod then asked, “Where are you

going?” I looked at Dylan, “I’m taking Dylan and Travis on a run.” Dylan was shaking he was so angry and Travis was barely containing himself. I jerked my head, “Let’s go.”

We ran to the front door. Dylan shifted the second his feet reached the landing. He howled in agony and anger. The pack looked worried as we took off. I linked everyone, “It’s alright.” Everyone nodded but stared at Fang with worry.

We ran for an hour before Dylan shifted back. He punched a tree. Travis spoke shakily, “Dylan.” Dylan turned, “I want them DEAD!” I agreed, “We can do that.” Dylan punched another tree. Travis had tears in his eyes, “Brother.”

Dylan turned, “Our pups. Our unborn little girls we don’t even know if we are blessed with. How could they?! I hope to GOD our pups are GAP’s pups’ mates! DO YOU HEAR ME MOON GODDESS! YOU GAVE US THOSE SHITS AS PARENTS, GIVE OUR LITTLE GIRLS THIS! PROTECT THEM! GOD DAMN IT!”

I put my hand on Dylan, “If you want them dead Dylan...” Dylan screamed, “AHHHHHHHHHHH!” Travis put his arms around Dylan. Both started to cry. Travis told him, “You’re my brother and my dad, Dylan. Whatever you want, I support.” Dylan blew out a deep breath, “I’m an idiot, but I can’t... I can’t give the order to kill them.” I shrugged, “I can.”

He thought about it for several minutes. Finally, Dylan said, “No, we will watch them. They step one toe out of line, and they are done for. They so much as BREATHE in the direction of a witch, I’ll kill them. How are they the same people who raised me? I need to know that answer. She cut the crusts off my peanut butter and jelly sandwiches. She nursed my scrapes after training. He wanted me to be more serious, but he wasn’t cruel.”

I sighed, “They are scared.” He growled, “THEY ARE FUCKED UP! To take a teenager’s wolf from them! To suppress them! To even have the thought! I didn’t think I would ever be winning the ‘whose parents sucks the most’

pool. I think I did though. We just shot into the lead by a mile. The whole thing is sadistic.” I agreed, “I know.”

Dylan rubbed his face, “Emmaline is right.” I said, “I know that too. I’ll get Dustin working on a solution to see if there’s anything that can be done.” Dylan sighed and hugged Travis again. He promised his brother, “We will protect our little girls.”

Eric linked me, “All of us will protect them.” I turned, stunned. We were on the border of his territory. I asked, “How long have you been there?” Eric smirked, “Long enough. I was told you guys were here, and that Dylan was angry. I heard him yelling from a mile back.”

Eric spoke out loud, “Dylan nothing will happen to your daughter’s, should you have them.” Dylan wiped his tears, “Oh moon goddess you give so much. GAP, in case you were wondering this only confirms it for me. One of your kids will be my daughter’s mate should I have one.” Eric snorted, “Whatever.”

Dylan smiled weakly, “No no, your presence here is my light. My guiding sense that... your overprotective pups will protect my future little girl. I feel it, GAP, deep down inside me.” Eric rolled his eyes, “Regardless... we will protect your little girls. Yours and Travis’, should you have them.” Dylan smiled, “Aww GAP has gone soft for the ladies. Little Cassie is a miracle worker.”

A pop sounded. Haley smiled, “Hello, my friend Dylan.” I asked, “Haley, can you take someone’s wolf and give them back?” Haley recoiled, “What?” Eric raised an eyebrow. Dylan clapped “YES! Lucas that is devious and cutthroat. Please my fun sized ninja fairy goddess.”

I told Haley what happened. Her eyes blazed. She admitted, “I don’t know if I could give them their wolves back.” Dylan shrugged, “Who cares?” Haley closed her eyes. She took out her phone and spoke in Fealish. She ended the call. “Aiden seems to believe I can give them their wolf back.”

Travis assured her, “We don’t care.” Haley whispered, “I do. Taking someone’s wolf would be like taking part of their

soul.” I pleaded, “It’s for a week. Just to give them a taste of what they wanted to do to a sixteen-year-old child.” Haley’s eyes blazed again. “Fine.” She popped us to the dungeons.

I linked Emmaline, “Bring Lacy to the dungeons.” A pop sounded and Lacy was there with Brad and my dad. Haley held up her hands. My dad linked me, “Son...” I assured him “She’s only taking their wolves for a week.” My dad sighed. “Alright.”

A glow began between Haley and the Frosts. It took twenty minutes. Haley backed into the wall and lowered her hands. Eric linked me, “Haley said Aiden is right she can give them back. Call me when you want her to do it.” They popped out.

Davis questioned, “What happened? What did she do?” Betty cried, “Where’s... Dayla?” Dylan explained, “Technically, she’s gone. We can’t suppress her, but my special fun sized ninja fairy goddess can TAKE your wolf. She’s a super powerful goddess basically, and I already told you she’s my friend.” Davis cried, “That’s cruel!” Dylan nodded, “Good, then we are the same page.” He turned and left with Travis without another word.

We followed them out of the dungeons. Emmaline told me, “Haley hated every second of doing that.” I sighed, “She’s giving them back in a week.” Emmaline frowned, “It hurt her to do that, though. I understand why you did it, and I think they deserved it. I’m just telling you; you can’t ask her to do things like that lightly.”

I hugged her, “I swear I didn’t, baby girl.” Emmaline kissed me. “Eric wouldn’t have let her if you did.” I snorted. Dylan said, “No, he would not. I feel like we need an evil laugh going here. Or a heroine laugh, because the dungeon dwellers are the bad guys. We thwarted their plan, thanks to Danver.”

Danver came in, “Alpha... Beta, Luna, Beta Female. Beta Dylan, you linked me to come see you.” Emmaline smiled, “It’s still just Emmaline.” Dylan threw his arm around Danver, “Danver, Travis and I are going to take you out. It’s a steak

dinner night for you. Let's go true Frost family. Those turncoat's downstairs don't count."

He started to leave then turned, "Uhh come on Jackie." Jackie blushed, "But you said the true Frost family." Dylan grabbed her arm and dragged her to their group, "Which are a part of, little Jackie. You are Travis' mate, therefore a true Frost. Danver here is an honorary Frost. We should adopt him." I snorted.

He kept talking as he walked out the door. Emmaline smiled, "You just have to admire that he may take some shots but he's always Dylan." I agreed, "You do." My dad said, "It just... I can't believe they would do this."

Emmaline put a hand on his shoulder, "Fear makes people do weird, crazy things. They truly believed they were helping." My dad argued, "It doesn't matter. To... just lock someone's wolf away from them... It's such a big part of you. It's as if half of you is missing."

I commented, "Because it is. Dominic is a part of me. They are trying to take half of someone's very soul from them, like Haley said." Emmaline sighed. I nodded to my dad. I took her to the kitchen, and we ate more food.

The days flew by and before I knew it, it was my wedding day. I woke up to Dylan dragging me out of bed. He linked, "Lacy said you had to get moving because she wants to wake up Emmaline." I snorted, "Fuck that."

I leaned down and kissed Emmaline awake, "Happy wedding day, baby girl. I'll see you at the end of that aisle." Emmaline laughed, "I'll be the one in white." I looked out the window. Then told her, "It's snowing."

Emmaline squealed and ran to the window. She waved at Aiden who winked at her. He popped into our bedroom, "Congratulations, cousin. Haley said you wanted snow. So, I give you snow." Emmaline hugged him, "Thank you, Aiden. It's perfect!" Aiden laughed, "I'll see you in the chapel. Haley has arranged the Fae ceremony with me. I'll see you up there." He smiled and kissed her on the head, then popped out.

Emmaline squealed and hugged me. “We are getting married today.” I smiled, “Damn right we are.” Lacy came in, “Ok, it’s time for the guys to get out. The girls are all arriving.” I smiled and kissed Emmaline one more time before I left the room.

Dylan clapped me on the back, “My little boy is getting married today. I just never thought I’d see the day.” I laughed and he led me out to the kitchen where Eric was waiting, along with my dad, Nick, Beta McAlister, Drake, Peter, Tucker, and their kids. Christopher already had Brooke in his arms.

I laughed, “God, are we getting mates day part two?” Nick laughed, “Christ. Let’s just get you married today, Lucas. If it is part two though, I need Sebastian in that group. He’s pouting.” I smiled, “Let’s get me married today.” It was finally my turn to marry my mate.

For you

Emmaline put her head on Lucas' shoulder as Dylan talked about how excited he was for my children. A part of me was afraid because I didn't want my children to be sought after for their powers. When I looked into Lucas' eyes, I knew we could do this. We could create a shelter of peace and love with Haley and Eric for our kids. I knew Eric and Lucas would already be planning how to keep us all safe. We could do this, together. We were family, and that's what a real family did.

I looked at Lacy and smiled. I knew Dylan would defend my family just as he would his own. Dylan was still put out that he'd missed Brooke's acid rain. Lacy linked me, "You'd think that we won't have a chance to see it ever again." I snorted, "No joke. There hasn't been a dull moment since I met Lucas. I'd say we're all going to see Brooke's acid rain again. I say that with extreme confidence too."

Lacy sighed, "Tell me about it. It's been one thing after another. I am putting this out into the universe, I declare your wedding has to be drama free." I bit my lip, "From your lips to the goddess's ears." Lacy said, "I'll make it so. Anyone who thinks about drama.... I'll sic Haley on their asses for some fairy hijinks."

I smirked, "She'd do it." Lacy said, "Heck yes she will! I might have mentioned to her what a stressful time weddings can be. I also slid it casually into the conversation that not upsetting the bride is an actual rule." My eyes widened, "You didn't." Lacy smiled, "Oh... but I did." Eric and Haley popped, and Dale made his way out of the office passing Danver as he walked in.

He seemed really nervous. Lacy linked me, "Say something funny or I'm going to cry about him wanting to protect my pups." I responded, "You're pregnant and he wants to put his life on the line for your kids if necessary. I might cry and I don't have an excuse." Lacy wiped tears, "You're right."

She leaned forward and squeezed Danvers's hand in thanks. Danver actually seemed surprised Dylan accepted his offer. His soul told me he was a sweet man, but also he was worried. I linked Lacy, "He's worried about something about you." Lacy frowned, "What? Me?" I nodded, "I'm pretty sure it's about you."

He started to talk about Dylan's parents. Lacy linked me, "Davis wouldn't do anything to me. He was INSANELY obnoxious when I was brought home from our David fiasco. Seriously, he was just there telling me he would be keeping an eye on me until Dylan came home. He was outside the window when I kicked him out. I hate to say it, but... they are trying."

I said, "Well, Danver is very worried about something they are doing. He's worried Dylan won't like him anymore if he tells him." Lacy snorted, "Dylan loves him, but I don't even need to be a fairy to have a bad feeling about my in laws meeting with witches."

I winced, "Haley gets the bad feelings not me, but Danver is so worried.... I'm going to agree with you. Bad feelings on this one. He's scared Lucas and Dylan are going to be mad. I'm going to try to ease his soul with my words and by touching his hand. Poor thing, he was so nervous about this."

I felt the moment I eased his soul. Plus, I knew it made more sense for them to talk to Dustin about any witch questions. He was here a lot. Lacy linked me, "Damn it! You're right. They could just talk with your brother or a coven closer. Why did they go all the way to Nashville to find a witch? They had to pay for her to stay in the area. That's expensive. I was even about to talk to Dylan about having coffee with them, to see if we could start to repair the damage. Why do I feel like they are about to take a stick of dynamite to my plans?"

She was right. With his soul at ease Danver blurted out his theory. Dylan was the first to react to the news. Travis and Jacqueline came running in. Lacy linked me, "If they were going to hurt my pup, I will rip their throats out." I frowned, "Based on everything I've felt from them, that doesn't seem

right. Besides, Davis would've tried something with you while Dylan was gone. Davis truly doesn't see the strong warrior Travis has become. He thinks Dylan is boasting about his little brother. He really doesn't get it."

Lacy snorted, "Travis could put his dad down easily. He is that good." Jacqueline sat and wrote a note to Lacy. Lacy read it and smirked, "Jackie said she can't wait until she's eighteen so she can link with us when she joins our pack. She can tell we are talking and wants in on the silent conversation we are having."

I winked at her, "Another recruit for our bad ass girl gang." Lacy sighed, "Yeah, she and I will never have awkward moments trying to find common ground because we have the worst in laws to gossip about." I bit my lip, "Eric would probably say he wins because of the fairy connection."

Lacy laughed, "He's wrong. He has Haley's Hackura side of the family and they are amazing. Plus, Haley's mom is dead. He has to deal with Aiden and that's not so bad." I shrugged, "I think he disagrees." Lacy reasoned, "Only sometimes." I shrugged, "That's true."

The Frost's filed into the room, with Dale and Debbie right behind them. I frowned. Lacy asked, "What are they feeling?" I sighed, "Annoyance, fear, with a tinge of regret, and resignation." Lacy grumbled, "Great. That's just great. It's like when you know there's going to be a crash, but you can't look away. I really was going to talk to Dylan about them." I squeezed her hand, "I believe you."

Lacy sighed, "They were like family to me before they left." I said, "I'm sorry, but their guilty feelings surround you and Dylan." Lacy sighed, "As long as it's me, and not little man. If it's little man... I can't be held responsible for my actions."

I was surprised when Lucas used his Alpha command on the Frost's. He didn't even try to start the conversation off by asking them what had happened. He wasn't messing around. Dale was worried. Debbie though, she was resigned. She

suspected something was amiss. She was feeling quite suspicious of Betty.

When the Frost's answered Lucas' question, I was stunned. I hadn't suspected in any way this was about suppressing a wolf. Lucas' face was contorted in rage. Lacy flew at the Frost's. I made a mental note that Jacqueline preferred being called Jackie. She looked at me and motioned to Lacy. I shrugged. I was content to let Lacy beat the crap out of Betty.

Jackie sighed and dragged Lacy off Betty. I searched Lacy's soul, and nearly flinched. This shattered her. Part of her still loved Betty deeply and saw her as family. This betrayal cut her deep. None of them were thinking about the implications of this entire thing. This witch that practiced dark magic now knew they could do this. Dale was honestly shocked. Debbie was just pissed. She was not surprised in the slightest.

Lucas finally asked if it was possible to suppress someone's wolf. My heart broke when they said an unshifted wolf. This was bad. There were bad apples everywhere. The fairy goddess' warnings about a wolf who goes down a bad path sent me into a thought spiral. What if this guides their path of hatred? Just because Davis and Betty planned to tell their granddaughter she had a wolf didn't mean someone with far worse plans would do the same.

What if someone did this and didn't tell them? How would that mess them up? I linked Lacy, "If you turned sixteen went through a massive amount of pain but you didn't shift; then you couldn't hear your wolf... How devastating is that?"

Lacy frowned, "To be wolf less without it being thought of as possible prior to the shift... Not in this pack, but the wolf less are often bullied in other packs. Rumors of infidelity are spread about the parents in question, which is absurd since a mate would know if they were cheated on. Some people say the goddess forsook the wolf less and deemed them unworthy. Not here because we protect our wolf less. They aren't treated differently, we train them. It's not common. Now we know the thing about fairy's needing their mate's mark to get their wolf... there are many that will now realize that their wolf is

still coming to them. Sometimes a parent isn't a wolf, and they don't get one. It's not painful though. They just don't shift." Suppressing a wolf sounded painful.

Lacy commented, "You have a look on your face." I said, "I think they've started a dark path in motion. Something the goddess warned me about." Lacy gasped, "HOLD ON! The goddess? You met the fairy goddess?"

I explained, "When David knocked me out. That's not the point. She warned me that a wolf's anger was going to set them and several others down a dark path. We need to watch this area's wolves. If someone doesn't get a wolf... We need to talk to Dusty. I won't let this happen to our friends." Lacy agreed, "Heck no we won't! That's so cruel."

The Frost's were genuinely worried. They thought this was their last hope, and now they couldn't use it. They didn't understand what they had just done. Dylan was vibrating with anger and betrayal. Travis wasn't quite on Dylan's level, but he was in the same place. Lucas was enraged. He was in full Alpha mode. He felt very protective of both Dylan and Travis. Dylan disowned his parents and Travis immediately did the same. Betty and Davis's sorrow almost knocked me out of the chair. Still, there was a part of both of them that felt one day their sons would understand.

I looked at both Travis and Dylan, and I knew that Betty and Davis were wrong. Lacy was right. They'd taken a stick of dynamic and lit it. Not only did they blow it up, but they also gathered the ashes and set them on fire too. I couldn't decide what was more heartbreaking. Seeing a family destroyed before my very eyes or knowing Davis and Betty truly had no idea they'd done it themselves. They were so lost in this legend they didn't even seem to be aware of what they were doing.

Betty tried to argue her point, but it didn't help. Instead, the souls of every single wolf in the room were enraged. I was startled to realize it was both the human and their wolf counterpart that were getting upset. I tried to help them by asking pointed questions, but they brushed them off saying they didn't know the answers. Not wanting to know and not

knowing were different though. Their guilt told me they knew that it would hurt both the wolf and human.

When they said the wolf would know what was happening while they were locked away, I felt the wolves, not the humans, anger mount. The thought of being locked away when they were supposed to be bonding with their human and getting to know their other half enraged them.

Betty truly didn't understand my questions. She was confused thinking no one would use this spell unless they were afraid of the white wolf legend. It was sad how wrong she was. I had seen some pretty bad people, and lord knows Haley had seen the worst of humanity. She and I were aware that people existed who would use that spell. David would've for a price and the power that came along with it. Fabian would've done it for fun. Those people existed.

My own sorrow overtook me in a way I didn't understand. I just knew deep down that someone I loved would be hurt by what Davis and Betty had uncovered. I wasn't surprised when Dylan threw his dad into a wall. When Davis got back up, I snapped the wall back in place.

It was a testament to how upset Dylan was that he didn't notice that I used my powers. Normally he'd be squealing about how handy I was. Lacy linked me, "We went down a bad rabbit hole." I agreed, "I know, he didn't even notice I used fairy magic." Lacy sighed, "I can't believe they would do this to all of us. They don't even know Jackie, but she's a sweetie."

I admitted, "I can't believe they don't realize the ramifications of what they have brought into the light." Davis didn't think Dylan was serious about disowning him. He thought Dylan was being dramatic and would get over it. I knew that Dylan had never been more serious about anything in his entire life. He was going to treat Betty and Davis as enemies of himself and Travis. He had no intention of letting them know his kids or Travis' no matter what Travis wanted.

I linked Lacy, "I'm actually team your daughter being one of Eric and Haley's kids' mates. Betty and Davis would be

insane to cross them.” Lacy snorted, “We can only hope they’d try. I bet even if only Alexander and EJ are pushers, whichever child was my pup’s mate; they’d have their older brothers melt Betty and Davis’s brains. You never know with Eric’s kids though. The man has torture techniques down pat, and that was before he started palling around with his Hackura in laws. I so hope my little girls does get one of their pups as a mate. If I have a girl.”

I smiled at her, “I think you will. I can just see you with a little girl.” Lacy happily daydreamed, “Then our little girls can be best friends. We already know you’re having at least one girl.” I sighed, “I think we have more than one. The fairy goddess told me the soul searcher wouldn’t be in our first set of kids.” Lacy bit her lip, “SET? Oh god... I’m sorry. Dylan will be a spaz if you give birth to more than one pup.” I shrugged, “I’ll live.”

Betty was beginning to realize that she and her husband had irreparably damaged their relationship with her sons. She was desperate to convince them that this wasn’t to hurt anyone. It was about protecting them. She believed that down to her very soul, but it wasn’t enough.

Travis had excellent points ready to go. I shivered realizing how long a wolf could wait for their mate to come. Living without half their soul physically hurt me. I couldn’t let this happen.

I linked Lacy, “But... legends don’t come from the truth. Prophecies tend to come true, but legends are legends.” Lacy snorted, “Preach sister. Even if we come across a damn white wolf, she’s going to be a bad ass who wouldn’t need their protection.” I added, “A guaranteed lock in for membership in our gang.” Lacy smirked, “Yes, she would be. We’d have to harass her until she joined. Legends and legacies are vital members.”

I laughed teasing her, “Legacies! Are we in a sorority?” Lacy said, “No, just a group of women who are bad asses. All bad ass women are welcome, but seriously if there was a white wolf I wouldn’t rest until she joined our group.”

Lucas was throwing around words like banishment. That sounded bad. Lacy winced, “Banishing is a big deal, but I agree. I’d be more worried about them if I didn’t know where they were. Is it bad that a part of me wishes they’d stayed where they were? If they’d never come back, then they wouldn’t have put Lucas, Dylan, and Travis through this. Travis and I have really bonded lately. He just doesn’t deserve this.” I sighed agreeing, “None of them do.”

Warriors I recognized from training filed into the room. Lacy linked, “One way trip to the dungeon for them.” I looked over at Dale. I winced searching his soul. I let Lacy know, “Your dad is devastated.” Lacy sighed, “Davis was his best friend since they were little kids. They’ve gone through life together.”

I reached over and squeezed Dale’s hand. I couldn’t let my father-in-law be in this pain. Well, my soon to be father-in-law. It was close enough; Dale was my family. It took more work to ease his soul.

He leaned down and kissed my forehead. He linked me, “Thank you, Emmy.” I told him, “I am sorry you are in pain.” Dale shrugged, “He’s been my friend my whole life. I just don’t understand how he could try to harm my little girl and Dylan... Dylan’s like my son too.”

I winced, “If it helps, he truly doesn’t see it that way.” Dale cringed, “It does but it also doesn’t.” Debbie smiled at me quickly and took Dale’s hand. When the Frost’s heard they were going to dungeons they grew even more desperate, appealing to me directly.

Lacy was astonished, “They can’t be serious.” I sighed, “They really are.” I tried to explain that intentions don’t always matter. Your actions do. They were adults who should know that. My heart sank when I realized there was a witch who had done research about suppressing a wolf. Even if we killed the witch, this was out there. I couldn’t stop it. Deep down in my soul I knew this was going to happen to some poor teenager. My light was telling me there would be a lot of pain and suffering from this. For a brief moment, Alexander’s face flashed in my head.

I frowned and shook myself. Alexander had his wolf already. I'd talk to Haley anyway and tell her my feelings. She'd make sure Alexander would be fine. Lucas tried to ease my sorrow telling me that it's not permanent, a mate can bring it out. Fear gripped me. I'm the soul searcher. I got that flash of Alexander... what if... No, that was silly. I was being silly. I brushed that aside.

Lucas thought I was worried about our kids, but that wasn't it. I wasn't really even worried about Alexander. It was his mate... no this was silly. I needed to push it aside. Lucas said he'd talk to Dusty. Lacy linked me, "You guys now share a brain. Good thing you're getting married because you think alike already." I smirked, "That's true. Maybe we really are figuring out this unit thing."

Lucas' soul was conflicted then I felt his Alpha persona take back over. He ordered Dale to stay with me and called Brad into the room. Poor Brad, he'd just heard all the Frost family drama. I searched his soul and realized this hurt him too.

I wondered if the Frost's had any idea how much they'd just hurt the pack. Their former Beta's plotting against their own sons was going to ripple through the pack. I'd be here for all of them when the news reached them. Lacy and I both would. Lucas, Dylan, and Travis all took off on a run. My heart broke when Dylan's heart wrenching howl pierced the air.

Lacy's hand went to her belly and she started to sob. She cried, "How could they do that to him? He's such a good person!" Debbie comforted her, "Sweetie, Dylan will be ok, I promise. We can't know their motivations, well Emmy can, but to be frank I don't care. Betty is dead to me. No one hurts my pups in this way. I have four of you hurting right now." I smiled at her. She meant that.

Jackie said, "That would mean so much to Travis that you consider him yours." Debbie straightened, "That counts you too dear. You are Travis' mate, which makes you one of mine. Of course, I see Travis as my own. I changed that boy's

diapers. He played with my son, but especially Lacy as they were the same age.”

Jackie smiled, “I’m honored the goddess has seen fit for me to be a part of this pack.” I asked, “You already plan to move here?” Jackie nodded, “The second after I see Travis on my eighteenth birthday, I’ll be here. My wolf knows he’s our mate, but the bond won’t snap into place until my birthday. Everything in me is drawn to him. His wolf feels the pull to me, and my wolf feels a pull too. She said because I’m not eighteen she’s not allowed to tell me about what that means. I know though. He’s going to be the male lead warrior here. It makes the most sense that I come to this pack.”

I asked, “I’m sorry. The male lead warrior? Isn’t there just a lead warrior?” Jackie smiled, “The news came to our pack house about the change right before I came to see Travis.” Dale chuckled, then explained, “I’d forgotten that went through. This afternoon part of Eric’s new proposal passed. The idea of unmarried female Alpha’s taking over their packs if a daughter is the firstborn and wants the title is taking more time, along with the Beta role; however, there will now be male and female lead warriors. Eric fought strongly for it not to matter, man or woman he wanted them to be allowed to compete for the title against each other. The supernatural council was only willing to take a small step. The werewolf council passed it, but the supernatural council felt that was too large of a chance for werewolves to accept.”

I frowned, “Eric is right, it should be who’s stronger, but it’s a step.” I stood continuing, “Let’s go to the pack house.” Lacy asked, “What are we doing?” I looked at Brad then asked, “The pack already knows about the former Beta’s, don’t they?” Brad cringed, “It wasn’t a quiet conversation, and we have excellent hearing.” I nodded, “Then I think good news is needed.”

I led our group to the pack house. When we walked in, we were greeted with tear stained faces. I sighed, “I know you know heard what happened a few moments ago. Even though I haven’t been here that long; it stings. I can’t imagine how you all feel. Beta Lacy and I want you to know that we are here for

you.” I paused to look around the room at all of the pack members.

I continued, “Anyone who wishes to talk about their feelings about this with us are more than welcome. If you are not comfortable with us, we can get you in touch with someone. Talking through this is important, it’s how we move forward and eventually heal. We came over with good news though.”

Valerie and Ry filtered into the room. I winked at both of them. I announced, “This afternoon the werewolf and supernatural council agreed to part of a new proposal our own Alpha along with Alpha Eric Connors put forward. I’m pleased to tell you from now on there will be a lead male AND female warrior positions in the pack.”

Excited whispers began. I let them know, “This is just the first step in our Alpha and Alpha Eric’s plan. My cousin and I both fully support this action on our mate’s parts. We are very excited about what this means for packs.”

A little girl raised her hand. I smiled telling her, “You don’t need to raise your hand. What is it?” She jumped up, “Can we howl in celebration now? My daddy is the lead male warrior now. He’s waiting for Travis to graduate so he can retire. Now, I have a chance to honor my father’s position. I can train to be the female lead warrior and be just like my dad.” She ran up and gave me a hug.

I linked lacy, “I don’t know how to lead a howl.” Lacy laughed in our link. Out loud she said, “Let’s howl in appreciation for this step for the future pups of our pack. For more equality coming down through the packs. For the little girl who has dreams, and no one can tell her she can’t be exactly what she wants. For having an Alpha and Luna who look out for their people. HOWL WITH ME!”

She howled as everyone in the pack house joined her. I looked at Ry who shrugged and then did his best howl. I laughed and joined them. Lacy linked me, “We can work on that.” Several teenagers came up wanting to know when they could try out for the female lead warrior.

Dale stepped in, “This policy goes into effect after the New Year. Lucas and Dylan will put together a tournament just like the men go through. There will be no differences in the process.” I linked Lacy, “I thought Travis was going to challenge the lead warrior for the position.” Lacy nodded, “He does. He issues the challenge, then anyone else of age interested enters the tournament. The winner faces the lead warrior, the winner gets the title.” I nodded.

I spotted Tessa talking to some other girls. I walked up to her. I put a hand on her arm, “Tessa, I know you are transferring and leaving our pack for Haley and Eric’s. I hope you participate in their tournament. I just think you’d be a great female lead warrior.” Tessa smiled, “I won’t have graduated by the time the challenge happens.” I shrugged, “I think this one time we could make an exception. Plus, you’re going to Haley’s pack. Haley won’t understand what graduating has to do with anything. You’re eighteen, that’s all that Haley will care about. I bet their tournament will be different from everyone else’s”

Tessa’s eyes brightened, “I guess we will see.” I smiled and hit her shoulder with mine, “That’s one hell of a clean slate too. Being the first female lead warrior of the Black Mountain Pack.” Tessa gaped. “When you say it like that...” I smiled, “Good luck.” She looked excited, “Thanks!”

I grabbed our group and headed back for the main house. Lucas linked me that we needed to meet them in the dungeons. I frowned, “Everyone grab on. For some reason we are going to dungeons.” Dale sighed, “Goodie. That sounds like more good news.” Lacy kissed her dad on the cheek, “I love you, daddy.” He smiled, “I love you, Princess.”

I popped us to the dungeon, surprised to see Eric and Haley were here. She was wearing her typical expression, but her soul was a mess. Eric was worried about her, but he agreed with whatever was about to happen.

I was confused. I linked Lacy, “Did he ask Haley to kill the Frost’s?” Lacy instantly said, “No way, they could do that themselves.” I frowned, “Haley’s a mess.” Lacy said, “We

have GOT to teach her how to play poker. We'd kill in Vegas with her."

Haley held up her hands and a golden mist came out of them. I felt the magic leaving Davis and Betty going into her. Lacy linked me asking, "Is this what I think it is?" I winced, "If you think they asked her to take their wolves, then yes it's absolutely what you think it is. I feel the magic leaving them." Lacy asked, "Are their wolves ok?"

I let my soul look into theirs, "They agree because they are mad at their human halves. They fear the white wolf, but they did not agree with suppressing a wolf." Lacy sighed, "Well, no wolf would agree. Anyone who goes against their wolf like that is in for a headache."

Haley felt a swirl of emotions. I knew she didn't want to have that power. She felt bad, but she also felt they'd deserved it. It was their wolves she felt bad for.

I linked Lacy, "What happens to a wolf if their human dies?" Lacy smiled, "Wolves are around for a long time. The goddess pairs us up based on personality. If a wolf's human dies, they go back to her and wait for their next human." I asked, "So, you can get a wolf who's had multiple partners?" Lacy linked, "Yup, my wolf has had two other humans. She says she likes me best, and she LOVES Fang."

I smiled. I'd have to tell Haley that. That would make her feel better. She and Eric popped out without a word. We all left, and I took out my phone to text Haley Lacy's explanation. She texted back immediately that had made her feel a lot better about it. No one could ever ask her to do that lightly, that I knew.

Lacy linked me, "Their wolves deserve better, and to move on." I didn't know how to solve that problem, but something told me Haley would figure it out. Dylan gathered his little family to take Denver out for dinner. Denver was elated Dylan didn't hate him for being the bearer of bad news. I smiled at him. He beamed back. Jackie was astounded Dylan already considered her family. Travis threw his arm around her, and they all left to go eat.

Lucas took me to the kitchen. It had somehow been an incredibly exhausting day. I knew when I looked into Lucas' eyes, we would handle the crazy days thrown at us. I couldn't wait to be his wife. I couldn't wait to have my rightful title of Duchess Luna Emmaline Walsh Lyons. It was always meant to be my name. I was going to own it and honor my fairy family the way they should've always been.

Time flew by, and before I knew it Lucas was kissing me to wake me up on our wedding day. I squealed. He told me it was snowing, and I saw Aiden standing there holding his hands out. He popped in to talk to me before telling me he'd be back. I couldn't believe we were really getting married today. Lucas' soul was beyond excited.

Lacy came in to break up the moment. Haley popped in right after the guys left. She smiled, "Since it's your wedding day, there is no working for you..." She snapped and the room was again a spa. The girls trickled in.

Katie came in through a portal, "I don't know how I traveled before portals. Also, bless you for having a flowy dress, I'm a freaking whale." I disagreed, "You're not a whale, you're pregnant. Do we have any clue on the little man's arrival date?" Katie sighed, "Doris said anytime or a few months." I said, "So no." Katie said, "He could come now, that would be fine with his momma. Well not now. Tomorrow, he has permission to come tomorrow."

I laughed and spoke to her stomach, "Little man, whenever your moment comes you come on out. You are so loved." Katie hugged me, "I'm so glad we found you, and that you'll be a part of his life." Maribella and Sharon came over to me. Maribella handed me a package, "Dad gave me this. He said it would honor him if it was your something old and blue."

I opened the package and a small diamond shaped object with sparkling blue that lit up and moved around started back at me. I picked it up asking, "What is it?" Haley laughed before she explained, "It's actually an honor." I raised an eyebrow, "Then why did you laugh?" Haley answered, "If you accept, you'll go into your concupiscence tomorrow or the day after. It's the fertility stone among the water fairies." I said,

“Well... I... still have my IUD. We were going to try on my next concupiscence.” Haley said, “That’s easy enough to fix if you accept the gift.”

I smiled, “It’s from my dad, and I’m ready; I want to accept.” Haley announced the group, “We will be right back.” Katie was fanning herself crying, “Our kids will be close in age. This is amazing. If you give birth before me, I might not speak to you for a few days.” I laughed.

Haley popped us to her pack’s OB who screamed, “LUNA! I have told you I need a warning!” Haley said, “Catherine, I told you it’s fine to call me Haley. I couldn’t give you a fucking warning because I didn’t know we were coming until a few moments ago. I need you to remove my cousin’s IUD so I can heal her, and we can get her all kinds of married.”

Catherine frowned, “I don’t have her chart.” Haley said, “I’m told upsetting the bride is bad. Google says the bride gets what she wants on her special day. She wants her IUD removed. It’s not open-heart surgery.”

Both Catherine and I laughed. Catherine agreed and Haley healed me once it was removed. I asked, “What was damaged?” Haley explained, “Nothing, it’s just because you can bleed after it’s removed. Bleeding and cramping doesn’t make for a sexy wedding night.” I wholeheartedly agreed, “That’s true.”

She popped us back to the Luna rooms. I looked around then asked, “Where’s Bexley?” Haley mischievously answered, “Bexley is always in charge of last minute party details. She makes sure everything is placed just right.” I’m sure she enjoyed that.

Three ladies I didn’t recognized came into the room. They handed me a note that I opened.

Emmaline,

I got you a present too, but these three girls are the best there is at hair, makeup, and nails. I sent them to take care of you on your day. I better see a million pictures of this the

next time I see you. I hope you love every second of today soon to be Mrs. Walsh Lyons.

BA

I looked up, “You ladies are part of a present?” They nodded and got to work. I’d decided to have a red lip look, which seemed to decide my nails should match the girl’s dresses. Haley snapped herself ready. I complimented her, “You look amazing.” She smiled, “Thanks!” I asked, “Do we have a photographer?” Haley smiled, “Of course you do. One day we will have to look through my wedding album.” I agreed, “We will. I’ve heard a lot about it.”

I went with my hair half up with a fishnet style braid pulling it back. Haley studied me, “A few more things and you’ll be ready.” I teased, “What did you do?” Haley smiled, “I had to get you shoes.” I opened the package. I looked up smiling, “Haley.” She immediately said, “I can change them if you don’t like them.” I emphatically told her, “I love them.”

I took them out of the box. Everyone loved them. Poor Haley had seemed so nervous. Katie said, “I told you she would love them, Haley. You fret about the weirdest things.” Haley had gotten me red ankle high boots with white fur on the side and a bow around them. I assured her, “They are perfect, thank you.”

Haley nervously said, “Your hair is missing one thing.” She handed me a box. I laughed then opened the box. I gasped in astonishment, “HALEY!” Haley shrugged, “You said you always wanted one, and you my dear are royalty. You have to have a crown.”

I lifted the crown from *Anastasia* out of the box. The woman that did my hair smiled and added it to my hair. Tears filled my eyes as I whispered, “I can’t believe you did that.” Haley conjured then waved a wand around, “It was my fairy godmother duty.” I hugged her, “You are an amazing person! Thank you, thank you, thank you!” I twirled exclaiming, “I feel like a princess.”

Katie stepped forward with a gift. She told me, “Ryan, Dustin, and I wanted to get you your jewelry.” I opened the box and my eyes filled with tears. I looked up, “You got me real pearls with a snowflake.” Katie wiped her own eyes. “You always wanted real pearls.” I turned around so she could put them on me.

All the girls were fanning their faces. Lacy said, “You look beautiful.” I smiled, “I guess I should get into my dress.” Lacy squealed, “I’m dying to see it.” Haley and Katie took me into the closet where my dress was hanging. Haley said, “I can snap you into it.” I told her, “I actually want to put it on the old fashioned way.” She nodded and they helped me into it.

Katie said, “Thank goodness I’m wearing waterproof mascara. Evie, you look beautiful.” Haley added the veil under my hair, then she conjured the water fairy trinket my dad gave me. She asked, “Are you sure about this?” I nodded, “Lucas will be so surprised. I was thinking it would be after the New Year’s Eve party, but now I won’t ruin Lucinda’s party. I could even find out before, or would that steal Lucinda’s moment?”

Haley laughed, “The Water Fairy Duchess walking into her New Year’s Eve party glowing? You’d make her party. You can’t hide a pregnancy from fairies. In fact, let’s not tell Lucinda that Marcious gave you this. She’ll light incense and shit.” I laughed, “Incense?” Haley nodded, “Fairies are very into incense and the powers it holds. She’d light it all over the castle praying to the fairy goddess you’d be glowing are her party.”

I chuckled, “Alrighty, so we don’t tell her.” Haley winked, “Plus, she will freak the fuck out if you walk in glowing. Everyone would talk about it all night.” I questioned, “And that would make her party... better?” Haley nodded emphatically, “Hell yes it would. Especially since we are the prophesied family. You, me, Sharon, Hexxi, Idel, Maribella, Lucinda, and one day Aiylee and Fenilton’s children will all be celebrated for weeks in Faerie.”

I gulped, “That’s terrifying. Katie, you are coming to this party, right?” Katie laughed, “Heck yes I am! Logan is NOT happy about it, but we are coming.” I frowned, “Why isn’t he

happy about it?” Haley sighed, “My Hackura brothers hate fairies. It’s a thing; nothing will sway them.” I thought about it, then admitted, “I can’t say I blame them.”

Haley tucked the trinket into the top of my dress. She and Katie exited the closet, and I gave myself a minute before I walked out. Debbie had joined the group. She burst into tears as soon as she saw me. “I can’t believe it’s Lucas’ wedding. I can’t believe he finally found you.” She walked over and gave me a hug. She held both my hands and sincerely told me, “You look stunning.”

My dad arrived with a dramatic pop. His eyes filled with tears, “Look at my little girl, you are all grown up. You are the epitome of beauty, Emmaline.” I smiled, “Thanks, dad.” He happily stated, “I’m very glad to be a part of your ceremony today.” He kissed me on the head and said, “I must be off to confer with the King.” He popped out.

I asked my cousin, “What did you come up for him to do?” Haley explained, “The water fairy ceremony is different from the sky. He’s helping Aiden with it and giving the blessing at the end.” I nodded, “Thank you for finding something for him.” Haley said, “All in a day’s work for the fairy godmother.” I sincerely told her, “I’m just glad you’re mine.”

Idel popped in. She squealed, “Sister, you look beautiful!” I couldn’t stop myself, “You look glowingly happy.” Idel said, “Why thank you! I am so happy! My Jamsey wamsey is the best.” Haley laughed, “Idel, she meant you are actually glowing.”

Idel rolled her eyes, “I know, Haley. I just said James makes me happy. You might be confused because of my pet name for him. He’s just so handsome that he needed a pet name.” I bit my lip. Haley said, “Idel... you’re glowing... as in you are pregnant.” I laughed as Idel gasped.

She squealed so loud we all covered our ears. She demanded, “For real? Like for real for real? No jokes?” Haley asked, “Who the FUCK jokes about that? I’ll kick their fucking ass. We can’t lie and you know that cousin.”

Idel waved her hand, “You can joke. It’s just you know all the stories about how it takes us fairy’s so long.... I never expected my first concupiscence with James. Who lasted the whole time by the way, wolves? WHO KNEW? They get so put out when you offer to get a toy. It’s very fairy of them to be so competitive with a toy.”

Haley frowned, “Yes, Aiden is already trying to change the barbaric mindset that pain and blood equal a child. You, me, Bexley, Maribella, and one day Emmaline and Trixie, prove it’s the opposite.” Idel wiped her tears then reiterated, “You look beautiful, Emmaline.”

I smiled, “Thank you. Is Hexxi coming?” Idel rolled her eyes, “Let’s hope not. She’ll complain about me being pregnant the whole time, and she’ll have come up with some off the wall horrid gift.” I admitted, “I hope she pops in.” Idel grumbled, “That makes one of us.”

Sam and Chelsea came up to me. Sam complimented me, “You look stunning, like royalty.” I laughed, “Thanks guys! How are your little ones?” Chelsea practically cooed, “EJ pops in to see Elise fairly often. It’s so cute, and she pouts when he leaves.” Sam said, “Tristian is doing great! He’s our world.” I squeezed both their hands, “That’s so great!”

They moved to the side when Lacy walked up. She handed me my bouquet. It had red roses with small little pinecones, some white flowers, and some green too. I complimented my cousin, “Haley, you just don’t miss a trick.” Haley stated, “I take my fairy godmother duties quite seriously.” I laughed, “Believe me, we all know that.”

There was a knock on the door. Haley snapped me a muffin before nodding to it, “Eat that please.” I laughed, “You don’t have to tell me twice.” Haley waited until I ate my muffin to get the door. She smiled and stepped aside to let Dusty and Ry into the room. They had tuxes on.

Ry kissed Valerie and Dusty kissed Aubree. I felt bad I hadn’t talked to them yet. Both my brothers turned to face me. Tears filled both of their eyes. Dusty hugged me, “You are a vision, Evie.” I smiled, “Thanks, Dusty.” Ry wipes his eyes,

“You are just... all grown up. You look so beautiful. Don’t think I don’t see the tiara on your head. I can only assume this is the work of Haley.”

Dusty laughed, “Oh my god... she didn’t.” Haley snorted, “She fucking did because she’s awesome.” Ry whispered, “So literal that one.” I laughed then noticed their lapels. I asked, “You guys have pinecone boutonnières?” They nodded. I giggled, “That was on my Pinterest board.”

Dusty informed me, “The entire venue is a Pinterest board.” I smiled, “I can’t wait to see it.” Ry said, “That’s actually why we came up here. It’s time for everyone to get a move on.” Everyone filed out. Dusty and Ry asked simultaneously, “Are you ready?” I nodded.

I grabbed them both and popped down to the girls. Haley said, “All right, let’s pop to the barn.” We all grabbed on. I’d told Haley I wanted to walk down the aisle to a guitar playing only. I wanted the song to be *Thinking out loud* by Ed Sheeran.

The girls walked in with guys. So far, there was no drama for me. I told Lucas that Eric was walking with Haley, which was fine because Beta James was walking with Idel. Chelsea was walking with Alpha Kyle and Sam was walking with Brad who was mated. Katie was walking with Dylan. Lacy was walking with her dad and Travis was walking Valerie. No one could be upset over the pairings.

The door closed once Katie and Dylan had walked in. I turned, catching something out of the corner of my eye. I pointed to a group of four men, “Aren’t those Haley’s brothers over there?” Ry answered, “Uh, yeah.” I asked, “What are they doing all the way over there? I told them to come in.” Dusty said, “It’s our turn to walk. Let’s get you married. That’s so weird, little Evie is getting married.”

I laughed forgetting my question, “I’m glad you guys are here.” They both smiled at me. Ry kissed the side of my head, “So are we. I certainly didn’t see this day coming with us present. Here we are all back together again.”

When the doors opened, I peeked inside. There were little Christmas trees on every table. There were Christmas trees

everywhere. Some were white, some were red, but most were green. The stairs leading up to where Lucas and I would do our ceremony was adorned in garlands and red, silver, and white ornaments. It was everything I could've wanted.

I smiled at the guests as I passed them. I glanced at a very unhappy Alpha Chase sitting as far away in his chair from Alpha Sophia as he possibly could get. Her soul was confused, and his soul was very angry with her. Then I realized his wolf was angrier with her than he was. Awesome.

I took my eyes off them and found my mother in law. I smiled at Debbie when I caught her eye. Then I looked up at the top of the stairs and saw Lucas. My eyes couldn't look anywhere else. He had tears in eyes. My brothers walked me up the stairs. They shook hands with Lucas and went to go sit down.

Lucas leaned down, "You looked amazing, baby girl." I smiled, "You look very handsome yourself." He was in a black tux that fit him perfectly. Jackson cleared his throat.

I linked Lucas asking, "Is Jackson doing our ceremony?" Lucas answered, "Eric is in the wedding and so is my dad. Jackson and I are close too, so I wanted him to be involved." I squeezed his hand, "Fine by me."

I saw the knife in Jackson's hand and started getting nervous. I'd completely forgotten about the blood sharing piece. Lucas linked me, "Haley is going to heal you afterwards. You're not going to run out of here screaming, are you? We aren't married yet." His voice was tinged with humor and a little bit of worry.

I rolled my eyes, "No, but I am nervous about cutting my hand." Lucas smiled, "We have reached that moment." He cut his hand and handed me the knife. Gosh, this was so unsanitary. I cut my hand wincing in pain and being mindful not to touch my white dress. I had no doubt that a man came up with this blood sharing thing. White dress plus blood do not mix, any woman would've known that.

Lucas grabbed my hand as Jackson boomed about our blood joining and us becoming one. Lucas linked me, "We are

married, baby girl.” I asked, “Then aren’t you supposed to kiss me?” I felt someone’s hand on my back and felt a euphoric sense. I opened my eyes and Lucas kissed me. Everyone howled in appreciation.

We only broke apart when Aiden cleared his throat. He smirked, “I’d let you keep going, but I still have my piece to get done.” I blushed crimson red. He brought out some pole that had blue strands all around it.

He handed Lucas and I a strand and told us to walk in a circle. My dad surrounded us in a ring of water that never touched us. Lucas linked me, “That did not happen at Eric and Haley’s wedding.” I pointed out, “She’s not a water fairy.” Aiden spoke in Fealish, alternating with my dad. I was going to have to learn what they were saying. It was crazy, but it all sounded really beautiful.

We reached the end of the strands, we’d interwoven them. My dad boomed in Fealish. Every fairy present yelled in cheers. The water around us disappeared never having touched us.

Jackson came back up and announced we were now Mr. and Mrs. Lucas Lyons. He told Lucas to kiss me again. Lucas put his hand on my hip and pulled me into him. He dipped me backwards, and the place went crazy.

He pulled back up and led me up off the platform to a room upstairs. He backed me against the wall, his lips descending on mine in a hungry demanded kiss. Dylan chastised my husband, “Seriously, Lucas? MUST you always want to mate with Emmaline at inappropriate times. First, there was the school classroom. Second, outside by that tree at said school. Third, there was the floor of Al’s. Fourth, who could forget the whole tent debacle, and fifth of course the dock incident. I could list more, but you knew the whole wedding party was following you in here.”

Haley was of course on my side, “Let’s leave them alone.” Lucas agreed, “Yes, Dylan. Leave us alone.” Dylan smiled, “No can do. If we leave them alone then we will listen to them

mate during the reception. Like we did at the barbeque.” I turned beat red.

I whisper yelled, “They HEARD us? I thought they just knew we had sex because the pack felt me get marked.” Dylan said, “Uhh Emmaline... you are what we here in this realm call a screamer.” I gasped, “I am not!” Dylan laughed, “We have werewolf senses, you basically are a screamer.”

I buried my head in Lucas’ jacket. Haley asked, “So the fuck what? Women enjoy sex too guys. You should be glad we are vocal; everyone knows you are doing something right.” Dylan shrugged, “She could be faking it.” Haley frowned, “Faking what?”

Dylan turned red and I laughed. I knew what he meant. Dylan was flustered. Jackson teased, “Yeah, Dylan. What could be faked?” Eric smirked. Dylan seemed stumped. Haley asked, “Eric, what is he talking about?” Eric said, “I don’t know, it’s never happened to me, Angel.” Dylan snorted, “OF COURSE it hasn’t. GOD YOU ARE SUCH A PRICK! Haley, women can fake an orgasm.”

Haley frowned and thought about it. Finally, she asked, “Why the fuck would they do that? If I didn’t get off, we aren’t fucking done.” Dylan laughed, “Humans can’t keep going as supernatural’s can.” Haley raised an eyebrow, “Humans have tongues, do they not? Their mouths and fingers can keep fucking going until their partner has their moment.”

Dylan roared with laughter. Eric was shaking with his silent laughter, and all the girls were in hysterics. I said, “That’s actually true.” Dylan declared, “She should hold seminars. You got yours, but you’re not done until I get mine.”

Haley questioned, “How is that not a thing? That’s just fucking unfair! Eric!” Eric laughed, “We do not have this problem.” Haley agreed, “Fuck no we don’t. You’d take it as a personal insult and challenge to get me off. I swear just getting me off one time would be an off day for us. There are some poor girls having to help themselves every time after having sex. Poor things. They need a support group. Or some of Miley’s toys.”

Everyone was howling with laughter. Haley didn't understand, "I'm completely serious. Is no one as concerned about the women of the world as I am? Fuck it, those women should just say me." I asked, "Just say me?" Haley said, "Yeah, get themselves a toy, and just say all I need is me." Eric bit her ear, "I'm in if I get to watch." Haley laughed, "You please me all the time, but that could be fun."

Jackson commented, "We are all aware that you please each other." Haley sighed, "Yes, it's only concerning when you say things like the whole pack hears us. It's a very large territory." Jackson challenged, "Then stop fucking OUTSIDE!"

Dylan was happily munching on popcorn. Haley frowned, "But it's so much fun, and my earth side loves it. When we manage it during the day, my sky side loves it too." Eric smirked "Eric loves it too." Jackson shook his head, "You guys are crazy." Eric kissed Haley.

Lucas turned my chin and started kissing me too. Dylan said, "Ok you two crazy Alpha's. We know you've seen each other naked, and with girls at the same time. For the rest of us, we have innocent little eyes. Lacy's got a bun in the oven. My pup doesn't need to be a part of this. Think of the trauma of hearing his aunt and uncle doing it from the womb will cause him."

Lucas growled, "DYLAN!" Dylan said, "Yes, I know. I make excellent points. You know how I love to bask in your praise, but we should really get to your reception." I sighed. Lucas led us all back out to the main area. Everyone cheered as we came to the stairs.

I grabbed Lucas and popped us to our seat. Haley did the same. She had popped with Katie. Katie said, "Thank god. I have to pee, and I couldn't make it up and down the stairs again." Logan appeared by her side.

Haley rolled her eyes, "Sit down, brother. I'll go with her to the bathroom. Honestly, it's like you all took a page out of Eric's my mate is pregnant handbook. Did you guys make one? You did, didn't you?" Eric growled, "You were taken

from me.” Haley sighed, “I couldn’t pee alone. At some point we have to admit that was overkill.” Eric pointed out, “You popped away from them so you could.”

Haley smiled, “And poor Katie doesn’t have that option available to her. She can only pop a few feet away; it’s not fair.” She led Katie away as everyone began to eat the food served. I picked steak and potatoes for the meal; chicken could be requested. Glasses started clinking and I leaned over to kiss Lucas. Haley and Katie came back.

After we finished eating, Lucas led me to the dance floor. I’d picked the song *For You*. He twirled me around the dance floor. I smiled at him. I picked it because it fit us. I wasn’t looking for love until I found him. He is my home. He kissed me as the dance ended.

My dad came up next and we danced to *Butterfly Kisses*. My dad smiled, “I told Haley I always wanted to dance to this song with my girls. She told me you said you didn’t have a preference.” I was touched, “I’m glad this is something you wanted, dad.” He lovingly told me, “You shine just as I always knew you would.”

I laughed asking, “Have you seen Idel?” My dad’s face lit up, “My second baby to have a baby. Little Brooke and Blake are adorable, and I can’t wait for your brother to come. I’m so happy our family is growing. Haley explained my gift to you, yes?” I nodded.

My dad was hopeful, “Did you accept it?” I smiled and nodded again. My dad brightened, “Then hopefully soon we will have even more to celebrate.” I agreed, “Hopefully.”

The song ended and Ry grabbed me next. He led us around the floor. He smiled at me, “I can’t believe my little sister is married.” I teased, “When are you getting Valerie down the aisle?” Ry winked, “She always wanted a Valentine’s Day wedding.” I kissed his cheek, “That sounds like a plan.”

Dusty was the next one to grab a dance. He told me, “He’s really a good man.” I agreed “He really is.” Dusty laughed, “It wasn’t a question, or I’d have carried you out of here kicking

and screaming. I can't believe you're all grown up. I was sure Ryan or Katie would be next getting married."

I laughed, "Really? Katie didn't want to get married until she was at least thirty." Dusty admitted, "That's true." Aubree came up to us when the dance ended. She was winded, complaining, "You know what's not fair? All these women with their three to five month pregnancies windows. I'm a supernatural too. Do I have a shorter timeline? NOOOO! I have to go nine whole months. If Emmaline gets pregnant, she'll deliver before me. It's not fair."

Dusty smiled and gave her a kiss. He tried to appease her, "You'd deliver close to the same time." Aubree glared at him, "Sure, that makes it better." I smiled, "How about I grab my husband, and we cut the cake? The first slice is yours." Aubree smiled, "You see, Dustin? SHE gets it. That is an actual helpful solution and comment."

Dustin rubbed his face, "Yes, dear. Would you like to go sit down while I get your piece of cake?" Aubree kissed his cheek, "Thank you." She walked away. Dusty pleaded, "If you guys plan to get pregnant do me a favor and tell my little niece or nephew if they could just let Aubree deliver first... that would be great... thanks!"

I laughed, "I don't think it works that way, but I can give it a try. I'm glad you've come around on everything." Dusty kissed my forehead, "I just had envisioned everything about you coming back into our life would be. Suffice to say, it went nothing like I'd planned." I put my hand on his arm, "I know, but I'm glad you are all back in my life." Dusty squeezed my hands, "I wouldn't change it for the world." I replied, "Me either."

Arms wrapped around me. I leaned into the tingles. Lucas commented, "I've shared as much as I'm capable of, wife of mine." I laughed, "We need to cut the cake." He led me over to it and we fed each other little bits of cake. I smeared the icing around his lips and then kissed it off.

Dylan yelled, "I was afraid this would happen. He broke her when he married her, and now they both want to mate at

the wrong time. It is not the appropriate moment you two. I knew I should've hired someone to follow you around to announce this. Alas, the mantle falls to me." Everyone laughed.

I pulled away from Lucas. He playfully growled at Dylan. I laughed and handed two plates with cake to a grateful Dusty. I snagged one for Katie too. I sat down next to her while Lucas made his way to me with our pieces of cake.

Katie dug in the second I set her plate down. She spoke with her mouth full, "Bless you, Evie. Oh my god! Who made this cake? This is the best cake I've ever had. LOGAN! I NEED to know who made this cake."

Logan looked at Haley who took out her phone. "Logan has the woman who made the cake's number. She's in the Hood." Katie giggled, "I'm so glad the Hackura already consider me family. Because that means you're my sister-in-law. I love her, Evie she knows the cake secrets." I laughed, "I love her too."

I turned to Haley asking, "Are your other brothers coming inside?" Logan answered, "We will see, they are having fun." I asked, "How? It's cold." Logan laughed, "Not unlike your wolf, we don't get cold."

Lucas set down the cake in front of me, and we ate. Afterwards, I danced with the girls for a few songs. I looked around realizing I didn't see Lucas. I went in search, finding him with Eric, Dylan, Dale, and Alpha Kyle. Their souls told me they were worried. I knew it had been too drama free.

I asked, "Is something wrong?" Lucas smiled when he saw me and wrapped his arms around me. He kissed my head, "Nothing that can't wait until tomorrow. Are you ready to leave?" I smiled, "I could be persuaded."

Dylan agreed, "Yes, for the love of god please go mate outside the barn." I teased, "You might want to get some noise cancelling headphone, Dylan." Haley popped over and started to cackle. She teased, "He has no idea. He thinks you are loud now."

Dylan looked back and forth between Haley and me, then he glared at the group of guys. He pointed his finger at them, “You have kept me over here in guy land, and I have OBVIOUSLY missed fairy hijinks. This is not ok, and I will never forgive any of you.”

Lucas bit my ear huskily asking, “What does Haley mean?” I shivered, “My dad gave me my something old and blue.” Dylan poked Lucas on the chest, “And now they are being EVASIVE! Tell me more about this something old and blue thing that means I need to get noise canceling headphones.”

Haley answered, “Fairy relics are quite powerful, my friend Dylan.” I blushed shyly stating, “Let’s go, Lucas.” Dylan yelled, “OH NO! I don’t think so little miss! I need to know if I have to mass order these noise cancelling headphones.”

I spoke really fast and quietly, “My dad gave me this thing that will make me go into my concupiscence tomorrow or the day after.” Lucas froze for a second. Dylan groaned, “Lucas, it pains me when you join team GAP. It really does. Hurts me way down deep.”

Lucas laughed and spun me around. He picked me up bridal style and ran us back to the house. He led me to his car. He hit the gas as soon as I was buckled in. I asked, “Where are we going?” Lucas smiled, “To your surprise.”

We were in the car only ten minutes when he pulled up to a gorgeous cute little house. I asked, “Did you rent this?” Lucas laughed, “No, it’s ours. I had it built for us. I know you wouldn’t be comfortable with everyone hearing your concupiscence. I was planning to bring us here just for the night, but if we need to stay it’s ours.”

My eyes filled with tears, “You built a house... so I’d be comfortable.” Lucas kissed me, “I’ll do anything for you, baby girl.” I pulled his lips back to mine curling my fingers into his hair. I pulled back, “Carry me over the threshold before we have sex on your car.”

Lucas laughed, “On the car, in that dress? I don’t think so.” I smiled, “I can snap it off.” Lucas shook his head, “Oh no, wife of mine; I’m taking you out of that dress.” I shivered,

“Well then husband, carry me inside.” Lucas picked me up and carried me into our getaway little home.

Goblins are Coming

Eric smiled and handed Lucas a shot of whiskey, “I can’t believe it’s your wedding day. You and I finally joined the married Alpha’s club.” Eric laughed. Dylan joked, “Yes, it feels like just yesterday you two left me with mountains of paperwork to make the beast with two backs with each other. Now, you have brought the wonderful partial fairies into our lives. In a way, I feel the paperwork I stayed up all night doing contributed to this amazing life we all lead now.”

Eric growled at him asking, “Are you ever going to let that go?” Dylan snorted, “That would be a negative, GAP. You had to go all I’m a better man than you Alpha Prater. Then Lucas being Lucas had to agree with you. So many Alpha’s followed, which you knew would happen. Then you two had to go all let’s get it on all night long. So much paperwork. Can I just say how much I could’ve used Haley in my life at the time? She probably would’ve showed up like the goddess she is and killed Alpha Max then Alpha Prater.”

Eric laughed, “She might have done that, yes.” Jackson snorted, “Might have? You have a head in a glass case in your office.” Nick choked, “He has a what?” Eric smiled, “I thought everyone knew by now.” I raised my hand, “I have one too.” Peter started laughing.

My dad walked in smiling. He clapped me on the back, “I was beginning to think this day wasn’t coming. I’m glad you wised up and asked our Emmy to marry you.” I rolled my eyes, “I was waiting for her to be ready.” My dad said, “Regardless, you have wised up and soon I will have a wonderful daughter in law. Your mom is so happy. When your mom is happy, everyone wins.”

Logan came in next. He announced, “We have a minor problem.” I sighed, “Of course we do. What is it?” Logan said,

“Goblins are planning to attack the wedding to take Emmaline and Haley.” Eric and I growled.

Dylan interjected, “Do tell us youngest creepy ninja assassin how it is we consider that a minor problem.” Logan continued, “My brothers did a perimeter sweep. Javi and Thomas were already here since Blade sticks with Haley. They were waiting for Evin and me with two captured goblins. After Bjourn spent some quality time with them; they revealed their plans. It’s a minor problem because we can handle goblins. Easily.”

Dylan was fully on board now, “GOBLINS? Oh my god... this is amazing. Are zombies coming too? What about Frost Giants? King Aiden was here earlier. I MUST ask him if Frost Giants are real.” Eric replied, “They are. I have been looking to who is most likely to make a move first. Goblins, Frost Giants, and possibly even gremlins are on my list.”

Dylan gasped horrified, “A list?! You have a list. Excuse a me that’s my thing. Beta’s have lists. Go away with your lists or admit Beta Caleb compiled the list while you talked.” Eric rolled his eyes, “Oh my god. Fine. Caleb compiled a list while I talked.”

Dylan nodded accepting that, “I knew it. I’m just saying... you should add zombies. Let’s not forget mogwai’s. We can’t let those little guys go all crazy and wet after midnight. Also, I should be our resident zombie and partial fairy expert.”

I looked Logan dead in the eyes, “Take me to the goblins, Logan.” Dylan said, “Umm his name is youngest creepy ninja assassin. Are we telling the women?” Jackson spoke, “If you so much as attempt to upset the bride you will be in a world of hurt.”

Eric laughed explaining, “Google is on our side on this one. Haley is determined to not let anything upset Emmaline today. She told us that was the rule before we left the house. We can tell them tomorrow. Well, I can tell Haley tonight, and you can tell Emmaline tomorrow.” I turned to Dylan, “Call our allies to see if they can get here early.”

Dylan saluted, “Yes, boss man.” He began to sing “Going to chapel and we’re going to get married. Going to the chapel and the goblins are trying to attack.” Eric rolled his eyes. We all walked outside toward the edge of my territory with Red Run.

Nick spoke, “At least this isn’t like our rouge problem where they were just running around. goblins can teleport, so no one was actively not doing their jobs.” Dylan smiled at him, “Yes, and at least you aren’t still bitter about it.” Nick snorted, “It hasn’t even been a year.” Dylan just skipped away.

Bjourn came into view with Prince Evin, Javi, Thomas, and Prince Drake. Prince Drake smiled, “Which one of you handsome men is the other Drake? It’s gotta be you.” He pointed at Red Run Drake. Dylan linked me, “Now he’s magic? Is he a magic creepy ninja? Dear sweet baby Jesus, what is in the water in their realm?”

Red Run Drake answered, “I am.” Prince Drake smiled, “I knew it. A Drake can just sense another Drake. My sister said you just had a baby. I had a son myself a few months ago. Well, another one. We should have a playdate with them. His name is Levi. I feel he and your new little one will be best friends.” Red Run Drake was startled but agreed, “Sure, that would be great.” Drake and Peter obviously started linking.

Dylan spoke up, “I’m going to have a pup here soon. I want in on the play date. PICK ME DRAKE’S PLEASE! My pup is guaranteed to be fun.” Prince Drake laughed, “I’m sure you can come with your little guy too.” Dylan yelled triumphantly, “YES! This is why you have pups, Lucas. To have play dates with a Prince and his little Duke baby. I would’ve had one sooner, somehow, had someone clued me in to this magical secret of daddy prince playdates.”

Alpha Chase and Alpha Cameron came running towards our group. Dylan said, “They got here... fast. Does anyone else think that?” No one said anything. Dylan asked, “Just me? Ok, that’s cool.” Alpha Chase and Alpha Cameron shifted and grabbed clothes we had around the area.

I greeted them, “Thanks for coming so quickly.” Dylan supplied, “Yes, freakishly quick. Given that I only called one of you.” Alpha Chase admitted, “We were together.” Dylan tilted his head, “Well, doesn’t someone seem awfully chipper and tan? Actually, in a far better mood than the last time I saw you. Quite the one hundred and eighty degree turn you’ve done.”

Alpha Chase actually blushed. Dylan linked me, “Color me intrigued. I’m on the case have you no fear.” I replied, “I literally never doubted that.” Dylan asked out loud, “Did you take the wife of yours on a trip?”

Alpha Chase’s expression darkened, “It’s an arrangement, not a marriage. Don’t call her my wife.” Dylan was not alone in being taken aback. Dylan didn’t falter, “Right... trouble in paradise I see. Let’s call her the woman that you’re arranged to... not your wife. I’m talking crazy over here. Everyone knows that’s what I do. They call me talking crazy Dylan.” Eric snorted, “I will have Caleb send that memo immediately.”

Dylan stuck his tongue out. He said, “Anyway.... Goblins... Let’s talk about that, and not Alpha Chase’s man period. It’s awkward, and he’s embarrassed by it.” Dylan linked me, “What just happened? Since when does he care that people call Alpha Sophia his wife? Because... she is.”

I watched Alpha Cameron put a hand on Alpha Chase who was closing his eyes. I reminded Dylan, “His wolf has to be going crazy. He knew his mate was nearby. Haley and Emmaline know who his mate is, and it’s probably driving the poor guy insane.” Dylan shrugged.

Bjourn said, “So, goblins, can I just say... this is getting crazier all the time? Fun but crazy.” I glared at the goblins asking them, “What are you doing in my territory?” The male goblin smirked, “You FOOLS have the Soul Searcher and Truth Seeker from the prophesied fairy family. Did you know that it does not have to be your children that are the line of soul searches, wolf? It’s HER. If we have the soul searcher our bloodline can be blessed. The fairies could not look down on us any longer.”

I growled and grabbed him by the throat. I snarled, “You mean to RAPE MY MATE?!” Dustin and Ryan muttered under their breath. Both goblins seized in pain curling into a ball. Dylan mused, “Fairies, what can you do? You’ve upset them and they have witchy warlock powers. It was ill advised. Alas, no one asked me my opinion. I could save the world if only people would listen to me.” He shoveled popcorn into his mouth.

Eric said, “The Truth Seeker, and the Soul Searcher have been here all along. They have been together this whole time. Why come now?” The female goblin recovered first, “The Truth Seeker is the sibling who can take power. If we get her, we can turn her to our side. Did you know she can take her brother’s power from him? The King, the all-powerful King, would be reduced to nothing by his own sister.”

Bjourn groaned, “Of course that makes sense to you. Because you have NEVER met my sister. She would never hurt Aiden.” The male goblin said, “We could take her memories. Then she wouldn’t know him.”

I frowned. Dylan waved his popcorn bag, “Flag on your not thought out plan. You all need Beta’s, I’m just saying. I see your flaws miles away. My special fun sized ninja fairy goddess would know GAP was her mate the second she saw him. You can bet your happy little goblin tushy he’d get himself in front of her the SECOND she reappeared. Right before he tore your realm to pieces. We’d unleash his full fury on you. It’s a specialty of mine. I have the talent to be the winder of GAP. I excel at it, and I take great pride in that.”

Eric shrugged. The goblins shrank back from him. Dylan continued, “She’d also know her children were hers. They like to explode heads and shoot sunlight at people they don’t like. Something tells me they would not like a group of people who didn’t want her to remember them. Then your brain is just going to be on the outside of your head. Then you are no more.”

He continued, “She’d know her creepy ninja assassin brothers from their bond. She’d also know she was related to King Fire Hands because of her light. She would feel comfort

in his presences. All these things would give her pause. I mean, if I'm picking things to give one with no memories pause; I'd pick the infants melting someone's brain and making their heads explode. That's just me though, and I'm smart."

Aiden popped in, glaring at the men in front of us, "Goblins need to poke their head out of their realm every once in a while. You cannot make my sister forget her wolf." The female goblin laughed, "He's right. I wouldn't forget him either, he's hot." Eric growled at her.

Dylan groaned, "Not you too. Even goblins think GAP is hot? Why moon goddess? WHY?" The female goblin shrugged, "He's terrifying, but hot." Dylan added, "You forgot taken, he's taken. By a princess who would rip your head off for calling him hot. My fun sized ninja fairy goddess isn't the bride... Can't we get her out here for my show? I am team rip the goblins heads off in a fun fairy way."

The male goblin ignored Dylan arguing, "NO! The Princess would forget. We are powerful magical beings too, King Aiden Holloran. You forget that you elitist fairy."

Aiden laughed, "Yes, you are magical. My sister is twice light bound to her wolf. Everyone knows that except you apparently. My cousin Emmaline is soul tied to her wolf. Something about the partials and their lack of selfishness bring them to share their lights and do such things."

Both goblins were silent. Tears started falling. The male sounded dejected when he stated, "Then there is no hope." Aiden agreed, "No, there is not." He held out his hands and set them on fire.

Dylan said, "Ok, we all need lessons on asking questions. We did NOT have all the answers." Aiden laughed, "I have the answers. The goblins are attacking the wedding. My forces will assist the Hackura that are here along with your wolves. My sister and Lucinda have been collaborating about what this Google says about Brides having their day. Haley wants to punish all the fairies who attacked her reception. She told me that according to Google they weren't supposed to upset her."

Dylan sounded all too happy, “I’m sorry are we saying Google... convinced her being attacked at her own wedding was... out of bounds?” Aiden nodded. Dylan pressed, “Not the fact that attacking one’s wedding is rude? Google was her first inclination?” Aiden nodded again.

Dylan yelled, “GAP, I hope you try to convince her of something that Google tells her is wrong. I really do. She’ll argue against you saying GOOGLE SAYS! I need to be there when this happens because you are you. Google is wrong sometimes, and I need to hear this argument.”

I asked, “Why did they say there was no hope?” Aiden smiled, “Emmaline’s line has to be through you because you are soul tied. In doing so she protected herself as well as your love. Even if they took her for breeding purposes, she would not give birth to the Soul Searcher with anyone except her soul tied mate. As for my sister, she cannot have children with anyone else but her wolf. Her light and her body would reject the concept.” Eric raised an eyebrow.

Aiden waved his hands, “Also as Prince Bjourn told the goblins, they do not know our sister well. Erasing her memory of me could only improve our relationship, to be quite honest. She would not know that I didn’t defend her publicly as a child. She would know we are related. With her memory or without Haley doesn’t kill people for fun. She does so when she or those she loves are threatened. She wouldn’t understand why she wasn’t with Eric and her children. That would confuse her. She would know her memories were missing. It would backfire on anyone who tried it. She would get angry. Angrier than they want, and it would be directed at them not us.”

I questioned, “And if they erase Emmaline’s memory?” Dylan linked me, “Look at you asking the right question. I’m so proud. On your wedding day even, you shine my friend. I will step back into the shadow. For this moment only, I was BORN for the spotlight.”

Aiden informed me, “She’d remember you the second she saw you. Her soul would know something was missing. Erasing her memory does nothing and serves no purpose. Plus,

it would be quite hard. Emmaline has been working on her mental shields. Haley has a lock on hers. They'd have to severely injure Haley to accomplish it. With the work Emmaline's been doing I'd say the same about her."

Bjourn stated, "They have fifty people coming to attack as the wedding starts." I sighed. Aiden inclined his head, "As I said, my army will be here. Lucinda would skin me alive if something happened to ruin the wedding."

Eric glared at him, "You wouldn't consider a goblin attack fun?" Aiden said, "A wedding being broken up with the intent to use my sister to harm us all after injuring her severely along with my cousin being raped in an attempt to breed her? No, we would not consider that fun, brother-in-law of mine."

I linked the fifteen warriors who were on border patrol tonight, "Come to the clearing on the other side of the lake immediately." They answered, "Yes, Alpha."

I linked Brad, "Be on alert. We have goblins who want to take Emmaline." Brad replied, "Not on my watch, Alpha." Alex linked me, "Goblins are on the loose and I don't rate a link?" I answered, "I would've told you later." He joined our group and shot me a look. I'd apologize later.

Bjourn said, "We are here as well. This will be fun. I have not fought a goblins since I was a teenager." Dylan joked, "As we all do in our youth... why did you fight the goblin as a teenager?" Bjourn laughed, "I needed its head to impress my mate. Goblins are hard to find. I wanted to show her how much I loved her, and he threatened our family. He had to die."

Dylan said, "I'd have gone with chocolates or flowers. Maybe even some jewelry. I can see why you chose a goblin's head. It's the language of love." Bjourn laughed, "Astrid is not a fairy nor is she human." Dylan said, "Yes, because wanting a goblin's head over chocolate is practical. Thank GOD Lacy loves chocolate and flowers."

Dylan turned to me, "Lucas, do you know how often I'd have to kill a freaking goblin with the amount of crap we get into? I'd need a goblin guy. My head hurts thinking of how to

go about finding a goblin guy.” I agreed, “At this point, you’d have need at least five goblins’ heads.”

Dylan said, “Yes, well now we all know the future King needs a goblin head to be impressive. I, for one, am not at all impressed he will be King one day. I’m going to need you to bring me a pet unicorn, Prince Bjour. Then I will accept you as the Future King of Hackura.”

Prince Drake laughed, “You guys were right, he is funny. That Zen garden he got Logan was gold.” Dylan preened. He linked me, “You see? They love me.” Eric snorted, “He’s a regular court jester.” Dylan jumped up and down, “You say that sarcastically, but now I know you think I’m funny.” Eric covered his face.

Alpha Chase chimed in, “We can have warriors on our border as well.” Dylan clapped, “Ahh the not husband speaks again.” Alpha Chase winced, “I’m sorry, Beta Dylan. It’s a sensitive subject right now.” Dylan asked, “Is that why you have a tan? You had to get away and collect your thoughts and figure out how to get your super-hot wife to divorce you? GAP, I do believe I have found one of your followers.”

Alpha Chase growled, “You know that’s not how it is with Sophia and me.” Dylan agreed, “I do. She’s still pretty.” Alpha Chase shrugged, “She’s like a sister to me.” Dylan argued, “Ehhh, I’m going to have to disagree here. I don’t have a sister, so I’m going to have to defer to our creepy ninja assassin brigade we have here... Would any of you have married my super fun sized ninja fairy goddess?”

They all shook their heads no. Dylan said, “I thought they might say that. They have lots of love for her too. Who could blame them? I myself am the president of her fan club. I bow to her amazingness.” Eric growled.

Dylan didn’t stop talking, “You don’t marry your sister. Now, I understand our test group doesn’t get married for... a long time. When did your daddy dearest, the King of the Hackura, marry the Queen?” Bjour answered, “After Evin was born.”

Dylan gasped, “She popped out seven of you before he put a ring on it? Mad respect. So, let’s go with wolf Drake, not to be confused with creepy ninja assassin Drake. Wolf Drake, would you marry your sister?” Drake shivered, “No.” Dylan acknowledged, “The ayes have it. Marrying your sister is not cool, Alpha Chase.”

Alpha Chase growled, “I don’t like her like that, I respect her.” Dylan smirked, “You don’t marry everyone you respect, Alpha Chase, or we’d all be polygamists. GAP over there would be married to hundreds of people, me included. Then the world would know of our love, and he’d up his insults towards me to balance it out.”

Eric smirked, “You respect me, Dylan?” Dylan said, “No, you must have heard me wrong.” Eric said, “Oh, but I didn’t.” Dylan said, “Moving on from my momentary lapse of filter moment. We all need to know what your tan is about, Alpha Chase. It will plague my nights. My cold nights where I couldn’t get a tan because it’s snowing here. It’s winter.”

Alpha Chase said, “I went somewhere with sun, Beta Dylan.” Dylan smiled, “Progress. Pray tell, with whom?” Alpha Chase ignored him, “I’ll have my men on our border, Alpha Lucas.” Dylan squealed, “Ohhh how fairy of him, Lucas. He’s evading.”

I shook my head, “I appreciate it, Alpha Chase.” Alpha Cameron said, “I will as well.” Dylan asked, “And how did you get here speedily, Alpha Cameron? Were you perhaps in your brother’s territory? Or has lightning hit you recently and become the flash? Our border is an hour and change from you.”

I linked Dylan, “Why?” Dylan retorted, “I’m formulating a theory. LET ME HAVE THIS!” I responded, “So long as you keep your theory from Eric and me.” Dylan smirked, “You already have the same theory then.” I argued, “He could’ve found his mate, or he could be dating someone else. I don’t care. I don’t want to know. I can’t tell anyone what I don’t know.”

Dylan linked me, “Me thinks you are forgetting some VERY important details we recently learned.” I shook my head, “Dylan, I don’t want to know.” Dylan said, “Fine. When it turns out I’m right... I’m going to remind you that I knew, and you didn’t. Look at GAP’s face, he’s thinking what I’m thinking.”

I glanced at Eric; he looked pretty angry. He was linking Jackson by the looks of it. I told Dylan, “I still don’t want to know.”

Alpha Cameron admitted, “I was with Chase when you called, Beta Dylan.” Dylan leaped forward, “AH HA! I knew it. I know things. that... I will keep to myself until another time. This will be a test of my abilities, but I WILL rise to the challenge. I will also have to stockpile popcorn. GOD, I love our lives.”

Alpha Chase and Alpha Cameron looked at him like he was crazy. Eric complained, “Only you, Dylan. Speaking of, here, his is for you.” He took out an envelope. Dylan reached for it and tore open the envelope.

Dylan gaped, “You... you bought me a popcorn company?” Eric quickly corrected him, “No. No, I did not. Haley and Lucinda did. I told them not to do it, but they didn’t listen.” Dylan waved a hand in front of his face, “She does so much. You see, Alpha Chase? If her brothers won’t marry her when she does things like this; Alpha Sophia cannot be a sister to you. No one can touch me right now. I’m unstable. A popcorn company, Lucas. It’s called Fang’s Popcorn Company. I love her so much. I do. If I wouldn’t die trying, I’d kiss her.”

Eric growled. Prince Drake spoke, “I like you Dylan, so I say this as a warning; Do not EVER try to do that. You will not like what follows from us or our brother-in-law.” Dylan backtracked, “It was a joke.” Bjourn said, “Haley doesn’t do well with things like that unless she initiates it.”

Dylan frowned, “In all seriousness, I would never hurt my fun sized ninja fairy goddess.” I added, “She did turn green when the Asher thing happened.” Eric growled, “He grabbed her and licked her face.”

All the Hackura's eyes blazed. Dylan concluded, "Which is just gross. That whole family was a bunch of bad apples, am I right? Because my creepy ninja assassins totally exterminated the rest that were left." I shook my head.

Alpha Chase and Cameron took a step back. Prince Drake ignored his question and said, "We've never seen her touch anyone outside of Eric without a meltdown. Bjourn said she hugged Lucas once. I know you have hugged her too, Dylan. That is a big deal for her. She'd have a breakdown if you kissed her."

I assured them, "He knows. He won't hurt her. That would hurt him and ruin his show." Dylan added, "My GLORIOUS show that now has popcorn courtesy of Moi. I can't wait to try my very own popcorn."

We walked back to the house after confirming the plans with our warriors and the Hackura. Alpha Chase and Alpha Cameron left to get ready for the wedding. Dylan said, "For the record, this was NOT the plan I had for the before your wedding stuff. Goblins have ruined all my plans. There was whiskey and muffins, waffles, pancakes, sharing fun single Lucas stories. There was a whole thing. I had a speech prepared."

I sat on the bed in the guest room where my tux was. I winced, "They are already coming for them." Eric said, "And we were already prepared. We already had the area is well insulated with our warriors. We knew the wedding would likely be a target." I sighed, "Could the fairy's not have announced they were this special family? Why didn't they keep it a secret?"

Eric rubbed his head, "They believe themselves untouchable now." I snorted, "No one is untouchable." Eric agreed, "Yes, and now you and I get to try to make them untouchable. Because no one will touch what is ours."

Dylan's eyes were bouncing between Eric and me. He bemoaned, "You guys are harshing my humor flow. It's time to get dressed anyway. We gotta get the Alpha married, and make sure no goblins or zombies storm the barn. I'll have guns

stored around the barn just in case we have a zombie attack. Don't you worry, Lucas. I WILL be prepared for the apocalypse zombie attack." Alex laughed, "He's not kidding. He already ordered warriors to do just that."

I said, "Good. I'm glad that's what I worried about, the zombies." Dylan shivered, "We all should be, they eat brains. That's just terrifying. Can you IMAGINE if they turned GAP? We would all have to run for our lives."

I actually laughed, which started Eric laughing. Eric winked at him, "You would have to run, Dylan. You'd be my first target." Dylan gasped, "You want me on team zombie? YES! I was picked first by GAP. TAKE THAT everyone else!" Jackson joined us laughing. Eric sighed.

We all got changed into our tuxes. Dylan asked, "Who's walking with Haley today?" Eric growled, "Me." Dylan shook his head at me, "Lucas, that's just no fun." I said, "We have enough fun going on, with goblins attacking and all." Dylan chastised me, "There can always be more fun."

Dustin and Ryan stopped in. Dustin told me, "We have a few of our stronger coven members helping the fight as well." I asked, "Did Alexa and Ben get settled ok?" Dustin snorted, "She met her second chance mate. A member of our coven, Leonardo. We have to introduce her again next week. Ben met his mate too. Esther, Leonardo's cousin. It was without a doubt the strangest coven meeting that has ever happened." I laughed, "You are a fairy." Dylan clapped, "Yes! A fairy with a coven. GOD, that's going to provide hours of entertainment. HOURS I tell you!" Dustin and Ryan left.

We walked towards the barn. Dylan said, "GAP, you picked up what I was throwing down with Alpha Chase didn't you?" Eric said, "Dylan, for your sake and mine... I hope we are not right in our suspicions."

Dylan laughed, "Are you serious? This is going to be great!" Eric reiterated, "Again, it's a suspicion NOT a fact." Dylan sighed dreamily, "It would be great if we were right." Eric disagreed, "It really wouldn't be. It would be very, VERY

bad.” I caught on, “No.” BA went on a trip with a guy. Alpha Chase was tan. Lord help us all.

Dylan asked, “Did you just catch up? Honestly Lucas, I worry about you sometimes.” I said, “NO. No, I did not. I’m with Eric. It’s a suspicion. A hunch that is one hundred percent unverified.” Dylan said, “Fuddy duddy’s, both of you. It’s also not as bad as you think. It’s one hundred and twenty percent awesome. I’ll have to like Alpha Chase more than I do now. He’ll be top three ally status in my mind.”

We made it to the barn while I thought about Dylan’s theories. BA and Alpha Chase. God help us all. Hopefully, he was her string. Haley would go scorched earth if he hurt her friend. Eric pulled me into a hug. He told Jackson and me, “Get in there you two.”

Jackson and I walked in. Our pack was bursting with happiness. We all heard the screams of goblins dying. I spoke quickly and quietly, “An attempt to kidnap our Luna and the Luna of Black Mountain Pack’s was just thwarted because we were prepared. I will tell your Luna tomorrow. Let’s just enjoy today. It’s been a long time coming for us all.” Howls of victory and agreement rang out. I smiled, “Thank you all.”

I looked around then linked Eric, “Haley just doesn’t do things halfway. It’s a winter wonderland here. They did a great job.” Eric laughed, “She does not do things halfway. Wait until you see Emmaline’s crown.” I questioned, “Crown? She got her a crown?” Eric chuckled, “A big one.” I laughed.

Jackson raised an eyebrow. I linked him, “Eric told me Haley got Emmaline a big crown.” Jackson said, “She did. She was worried Emmaline wouldn’t like the shoes she got her. It’s cute. She’s always so concerned with the shoes.” I assured him, “Emmaline will love them.” I knew she would.

Our wedding party started to filter in. Once Katie and Dylan reached us, Dylan linked me, “She looks stunning. I’m hopefully only temporarily blinded from the reflection off her crown, but before the lights went out; I saw the beauty of our Luna.” I laughed, “I heard it’s a large crown.” Dylan said, “Blinding. It’s a BLINDING crown.”

Alex linked me, “All the goblins are dead. Fighting for our Luna was an honor. To do so beside the Hackura was amazing. The fairy army is not half bad either.” I replied “Thank you, Alex. Get your ass inside to my wedding.” He snorted, “A fairy agreed to snap me clean, so I’ll be there shortly.” Good.

The doors opened and I saw her. I almost went to my knees. Dylan linked me, “Dear lord! Did you just swoon? I’ve never actually seen a person swoon, but I think you did.” I answered, “She looks stunning.” I wiped a tear out of the corner of my eye. Then I saw her crown. Haley had gotten her the crown from *Anastasia*.

I linked Eric, “Thank Haley for me. Having that crown will mean the world to Emmaline.” Eric replied, “I’ll do that.” I couldn’t look anywhere but Emmaline. Dylan linked me, “Alpha Chase is sitting as far away from Alpha Sophia as he possibly can, considering they’re seated next to each other he’s accomplishing quite the feat. She looks ready to burst into tears at any moment... and not happy ones.”

I replied, “I don’t care. That’s not a today problem for me to worry about.” Dylan admonished, “It’s not a problem at all. It’s entertaining. WHAT HAPPENED? I MUST know if I’m right.” I sighed, “Not now, Dylan.” Dylan replied, “Right because now we are swooning.” Whatever got him off that train of thought would do.

Emmaline finally reached me. The ceremony started. Emmaline was so nervous it was bouncing around in my chest. Then she began to feel dread. I noticed her eyes were on the blade that would bind our blood. I was worried she was going to run right off the stairs. She could run, but I’d catch her. We could do this in private if we needed to.

She assured me she was ok. I quickly cut my hand and gave her the blade. After staring at it as if it was going to murder her, she cut her hand, wincing. Dylan linked me, “It’s adorable how much she didn’t want to do that. She loves you so much. You two crazy kids!” I rolled my eyes and grabbed Emmaline’s hand. I felt our mate bond grow stronger as our blood united.

I nodded at Haley. She put her hands on Emmaline's back healing her. I linked Eric, "Haley is getting faster." Eric agreed, "She is. She does it more often and eats more." I noticed Aiden beaming at Haley. We completed the fairy portion of our ceremony. It was different from Eric's.

Dylan linked me, "You were inside a swirling vortex of water, and you didn't get wet. FAIRY'S ARE THE BEST!" I kissed Emmaline and led her to the back room. I didn't care that everyone could hear us. I wanted her. Dominic agreed. Dylan, of course, had to interrupt.

Dylan linked me, "At least have her pop you to the house, Jesus." I growled at him. He said, "Yes, I know. You're the Alpha blah, blah, blah. I'm your Beta here to tell you to have her pop your happy butt to the house if you want to screw her before the reception."

Dylan let Emmaline know they all heard us have sex at the barbeque. I linked him, "SERIOUSLY? I didn't cock block you at your wedding! I even had my dad take over so you could go have sex... with my sister might I add." Dylan frowned, "I thought she knew we heard that! You were SO LOUD!" I snarled, "You didn't just call her a screamer." Dylan was nonplussed, "With our senses she basically is!"

Haley and Dylan got into it over women not having an orgasm and faking it. Haley did not understand the concept at all. Jackson linked me, "Seriously, tell Dylan he's lucky you guys aren't rabbits. These two are. If she wasn't on birth control, she'd be popping out pups left and right. If Dylan wants loud; he can come to our territory. Haley DOES scream." I laughed, "Emmaline screams sometimes, but I wouldn't classify her as a screamer."

Jackson teased Eric and Haley. Haley actually pouted. I linked Eric, "You guys." Eric wiggled his eyebrows. Dylan linked me, "He's a prick. Just admit it... Come on. One time, between us." I laughed, "I have my own fairy, Dylan."

I kissed Emmaline and heard Eric do the same with Haley. Dylan broke up the party telling us his child shouldn't hear us have sex. I forced myself to walk out of the room with

Emmaline. I wanted to peel her out of her dress. Her boobs were calling to me, and the dress was accentuating her ass. Hopefully, we didn't have to stay long.

Emmaline popped us down to our seats. I linked Dylan, "Get an update from our warriors, and make sure we have no casualties. I got a brief link about it." Dylan nodded and headed outside.

Lacy linked me, "Where is he going?" I quickly answered, "Not today." Lacy sighed, "Then tomorrow." I told her, "Dylan can tell you as soon as we leave. I will tell Emmaline tomorrow." Lacy sighed, "Alright. She's so happy. Actually, you both look so happy." Lacy came up and gave me a hug. "I'm so happy for you, Luc." I smiled, "I never thought I'd meet her. I can't believe she's sitting beside me as my mate and wife."

My dad slapped me on the back, "Congratulations, son." I smiled, "Thanks dad." Everyone started hitting their silverware on their glasses. I linked Lacy, "What does that mean?" Lacy rolled her eyes, "Kiss the bride, dummy!" Emmaline kissed me first.

Once we'd eaten, I led her in a dance around the floor. I kissed her. I really wanted to get her out of here, but her dad came over and they danced to a song. Eric was up talking to Dylan and Jackson. I walked over to them.

Eric cursed, "Fuck this song." Dylan smiled broadly, "Are you thinking of little Cassie?" Eric warned, "Dylan, do not go there." I changed the subject, "What did you find out from our warriors, Dylan?" Dylan replied, "There were no casualties or even any injuries. All bad guys are dead. The creepy ninja assassins gathered up all the heads and are sending them in some sort of arrangement to the goblin king... because we know people that do that. Then we have Alpha Chase, who is on his phone every few minutes."

I asked, "What does that have to do with anything?" Dylan rolled his eyes, "It's interesting." Just then we saw Alpha Chase and Alpha Sophia arguing outside the window. Dylan clapped gleefully, "Lucas... COME ON! We have to go see

what that's about." I sighed, "Sadly, as they are our allies in our territory, you are right."

Dylan cheered, "YES!" He ran out the door. I grabbed him by the back of his tux. Alpha Cameron popped up out of nowhere. He put a hand on Alpha Chase cautioning him, "Brother, calm down." Alpha Chase growled, "NO! I won't. This is over Sophia. We aren't even anything to each other. I WILL help you keep control of your pack, but I can't do this anymore!"

Alpha Sophia cried, "We can all make this work!" Alpha Chase disagreed, "No, we can't. We have mates, Sophia. This was supposed to be a simple transaction. You consolidate power while I'm gone, and we end the farce. You have run your pack without me. I want the annulment! That was the plan all along! I have been more than patient."

Dylan linked me, "Oh. My. God." I asked out loud, "Is there anything we can help with?" Alpha Sophia wiped her tears, "No, thank you we are just having a friendly chat." Alpha Chase growled, "I helped you. I have ALWAYS been your friend, and you won't do this for me. You were supposed to be MY friend, and you swore you would end this. You are punishing me for helping you. I can't do this. I can't be here anymore. Congratulations, Alpha Lucas. Your Luna is beautiful. I have to go, I'm sorry." He shifted and took off.

Alpha Cameron sighed. Luna Reagan came running out. She stared at Alpha Chase's retreating wolf form then at Sophia. She sighed sadly, "I see." Dylan asked, "Do you? Care to share? Inquiring minds have questions."

Alpha Cameron shrugged it off, "We will figure it out." I begrudgingly said, "If you need us, we are here." Eric agreed, "So are we." Alpha Cameron laughed, "I fear that will not be a happy place for you two to be. Chase told me about your mates and their feelings."

Before anyone could say anything, Luna Reagan spoke, "You know I love Chase like my brother. Sophia you are family to me, but you all are being idiots. Willful ignorance is a thing, Sophia. You're being selfish and you know it. I say

that as a friend. Alpha Eric and Alpha Lucas' mates are right. Come on Cameron, let's go after Chase. Alpha Lucas it was a beautiful ceremony. Fairy ceremonies are so interesting. I was at your wedding too, Alpha Eric. We didn't get a chance to say hi before things went south. It was a beautiful wedding as well." They left.

Alpha Sophia went off with her Beta. We could hear her crying before she hit the boundary line. I cautioned, "Dylan, don't say anything." Dylan asked, "Why would I say anything? Other than I felt like I was just on the Jerry Springer show! I thought I held in my Jerry chant admirably." Eric snorted, "Alpha Chase would've punched you." Dylan retorted, "Which is why I only said it in my head."

We walked back inside. I grabbed Emmaline. I was over the drama and sharing her with everyone else. I'd watch her dance with several people from outside the window while mitigating whatever the hell had just happened outside.

Dylan linked me. "You've got her doing this whole inappropriate time thing. In the middle of the barn in front of all your allies and your pack is not the moment to mate. I CANNOT believe I have to tell you this. It's like we never had the birds and bees talk." I responded, "I wouldn't let all these people see her naked. Calm down." Dylan snorted, "Me calm down? I was about to get a bucket of ice water and pour it on you both."

I was getting our cake, but I heard Emmaline ask Haley about her brothers. Logan's answer had Haley looking around the barn confused. Then her eyes narrowed. I linked Eric, "Your jig is up." Eric laughed, "I'm safe on this one. It was her rule, AND I planned to tell her when you and Emmaline left."

Eric motioned me over to him as soon as Emmaline got up to dance with her friends. Nick and my dad joined us. Nick announced, "Something is up with Alpha Chase. That boy is wound tighter than a tick. Ben said he..."

Dylan interrupted him, "Beta McAlister, continue." Nick laughed, "I call him Ben, Beta Dylan. I always have, and I always will. Ben saw him staring at his phone waiting for it to

go off. Whatever he found out he must not have liked. Ben heard him outside getting upset with a pack member for losing someone they were watching. Do we need to be concerned?"

Dylan jumped up and down, "SOMEONE PICK ME! I SO KNOW! I know that I do know. I'm so right." I growled, "No, Dylan. You do not know, and you will say NOTHING in front of Eric or me. Got it?"

Dylan huffed, "Fine." I nodded continuing, "Nick, I don't think we have anything to worry about. Alpha Chase will let us know if we do." Nick sighed, "So, it's women issues?" Dylan said, "You have no idea how..." He trailed off looking at Eric's face.

Dylan sighed before continuing, "Apparently, I have nothing to say in present company. If I did your mind would be blown." My dad and Nick laughed at his antics. Dylan's countenance changed on a dime. He grinned broadly, "Who's your best friend in the whole wide world, Lucas?" I answered, "You."

Dylan smirked, "You hear that GAP! I beat you at something! I AM ON TOP OF THE WORLD!" Eric rolled his eyes. Dylan continued, "Your sex house is ready oh Alpha my Alpha. The last of the furniture was delivered by one of GAP's MANY companies."

I laughed, "Thanks, Eric. I know Christmas Eve wasn't something your workers wanted to work on." Eric shrugged, "We had some pack members more than willing, wanting to avoid the in-laws on the Alpha's orders. I actually had to turn people away."

Dylan shrugged, "See, the good thing about disowning your parents is I never have to worry about this problem. Lacy has no in-laws to deal with on my side. I've been your parents' third child for years. Lacy and Jackie get along. Everything's coming up roses for Dylan."

Emmaline walked over concerned something was wrong. I couldn't keep my hands off her any longer. I linked Dylan, "Do you just want us to go so you can gossip about Alpha Chase and his problems?" Dylan said, "Now, now Lucas you

know that's exactly the reason. Go on! Get out of here! You've wanted to leave from the moment Jackson pronounced you two husband and wife. Go have your fun and let me have mine!"

I was surprised when Emmaline teased Dylan about needing noise cancelling headphones. Haley joined our group. The mischievous look on both their faces told me there was something I didn't know. I linked Eric, "Do you know what that's about?" Eric smirked, "I do. You're going to have a very Merry Christmas my friend."

Before I could respond Dylan linked me, "NEVERMIND! Stay! You both MUST stay until I find out what fairy hijinks are afoot." I teased, "But don't you want to dissect Alpha Chase?" Dylan said, "Who? FAIRY HIJINKS!"

I asked a question. My Beta did not appreciate my attempt, "ASK BETTER QUESTIONS FOR THE LOVE OF GOD! YOU SUCK AT THIS! Put me in coach I'M READY! I was BORN ready for questioning people."

Except for Eric, the curiosity of the rest of our group was mounting. Dylan linked me, "GAP knows, doesn't he?" I admitted, "He does." Dylan said, "Say it with me, Lucas. HE. IS. A. PRICK!" I laughed. Emmaline was embarrassed and wanted to leave.

Dylan snorted, "Over my dead body will you two leave before I have this answer. Before you get any let's kill Dylan ideas; I'll handcuff myself to you. I'll do it. Then if I died, you'd have to drag around my dead weight with you. That would not be a fun honeymoon." Not being able to talk about Alpha Chase had clearly pushed him over the edge.

Fortunately, Emmaline answered Dylan. Her fairy relic was going to send her into her concupiscence sooner than we were planning. Dylan linked me, "That's so unfair. You guys have to have sex outside so Lacy goes into heat again after she heals from giving birth. Fair is fair."

I couldn't stop myself from picking up Emmaline and carrying her out of the barn. Every wolf had heard her responses to Dylan. They were excitedly chattering, "The

Luna might come back pregnant!” Howls were echoing all around.

The excitement in the pack was reaching an all-time high. I linked Dylan, “Do we have enough alcohol?” Dylan snorted, “We do because you have the world’s most amazing Beta. Or it could be the fairies could just snap me more. You’ll never know because you left the party. Every party has a pooper and that’s why we invited you.” I laughed, “Have fun, Dylan.” Dylan joyously replied, “While the Alpha is away, Dylan will play!”

I rolled my eyes and drove Emmaline to the smaller house I had built for us. Her excitement when I told her it was ours made me smile. She kissed me, meanwhile the smell of her arousal was driving me mad. I didn’t want to have sex outside on my car because I wanted to take her out of her dress.

I picked her up bridal style and ran us into the house. I was going to give her a tour, but I couldn’t hold myself back anymore. I took us directly to the master bedroom. It was just a one floor house. I put her down in the bedroom. She said, “Lucas... this is beautiful. I love it.” I smiled and tilted her head to me, “I’ll give you a tour later. You said you might go into your concupiscence?”

Emmaline smiled, “Yes, I will go into it tomorrow or the day after. Haley popped me to her pack to get my IUD removed.” I couldn’t stop my smile. She laughed, “You’re overwhelming joy is practically choking me.”

I swung her around gently tracing my fingers over her stomach, “There could be a pup in here by the time we leave this house. You just go ahead and TRY to make me tone that joy down.” She laughed. I kissed her softly, trailing kisses down her neck and turned her around.

She conjured some type of hook for me. She told me, “If you insist on taking me out of this dress, you have to use this to get me out of it if I’m not snapping.” I took the hook, emphatically stating, “I’m taking this dress off of you.”

It took several minutes, but I was successful. She snapped and it was on a hanger. She smiled, “One day our daughter

might want to wear it or use the material for something on her dress.” I growled, “You have no idea how hot that sentence is to me right now.”

She snapped me naked. She looked down then teased, “I think I do.” She put her hands on my length, continuing, “This seems like that’s a clear indicator.” She dropped to her knees, taking me in her mouth, swirling her tongue around my tip.

A groan escaped my lips. She began to take me all the way into her mouth. It still surprised me she could do that. I moaned, “Fuck, Emmaline.” She began to move. I tried to pull away once I got close, but she gripped my butt digging her fingers in. I shot my load into her mouth.

I grabbed her arm and yanked her up to me. I carried her over to a chair. I set her down and spread her legs. I pulled her all the way forward so her butt was on the edge of the chair. I blew on her center. She whimpered. I bit the inside of her thigh before flicking my tongue across her clit. She jerked in the chair. I laughed and brought her back to the edge.

I teased, “You’re so jumpy. Stay right here, wife.” Emmaline smiled, “Are you going to say that a lot?” I smiled, “Yes, I am, my wife.” She laughed until I attacked her clit again. Her laughter quickly turned into breathless moans. I made her come three times before picking her up.

I threw her onto the bed. I grabbed both her legs pulling her back to the edge. I put her legs up around my shoulders. I slowly entered her, once I was fully inside her she gasped. I told her, “I love that you still do that every time.” She smiled and I lost all sense. We were both frenzied.

Suddenly, Emmaline was panting. I could feel her need in my chest. I linked Dylan, “Tomorrow or the next day MY ASS! She just entered her concupiscence.” Emmaline flipped us and she was riding me like there was no tomorrow.

Dylan responded, “Sorry, you have reached intoxicated Dylan. The Alpha is away, and Dylan is playing. Intoxicated Dylan has no sympathy for the soon to be sexed up Alpha. I stocked your sex house with the necessary supplies. Dylan is

going to keep having fun because he is the best at anticipating the needs of his Alpha.”

I smirked and flipped us over. We destroyed the room. I smiled asking, “Would my fairy want to try our catch the fairy game in reverse? Catch the wolf?” Emmaline hissed and jumped on me, “No! You can’t go anywhere. YOU ARE MINE!” I laughed, “Alright then.”

I dragged her to the shower. I looked at a clock along the way. We were going to miss Christmas. I’d have to thank Dylan for putting a mini fridge in our room with energy drinks. Emmaline jumped me the second I turned on the water. I pushed her against the wall and let Dominic take over.

We stayed in the shower until the water ran cold. Her eyes drifted shut a little bit before the twenty hour mark. I dried us both off and managed to get to the bed before my eyes closed. Emmaline was fast asleep the second we left the bathroom. I closed my eyes and faded into a blissful state of sleep.

I woke up to the smell of waffles. I went into the kitchen and gaped. Emmaline had snapped pancakes, waffles, muffins, biscuits, bacon, and eggs. I asked, “Is any of this mine?” Emmaline snapped a plateful of food into my hands. I teased, “Was any of this from the counter?” Emmaline answered briskly, “No, this is mine.” I smirked, “Ok, my wife.” She smiled and kept eating.

I put some coffee on for myself. When I sat down, I ate my food while Emmaline devoured all the food she’d conjured. I had been done eating for quite some time since I wasn’t eating for an army. She popped into my lap.

She ground into me, “You appear to be ready to go.” I smirked, “Always for you.” She slid down onto me. She used the bars of the chair to gain momentum. She pulled my hair lightly. I growled, “Fuck, Emmaline.” She was like the energizer bunny.

When we finally slept again, I was pretty sure she was done. I leaned down and kissed her stomach. I looked at the clock noting we had slept for eight hours this time. I looked at my phone. It was the twenty-eighth of December.

I whispered to her stomach, "I hope there's someone in here, I love you so much already." I heard a giggle, "You are already talking to my stomach. I'll have to pop to Haley when we get home." I growled, "I don't want you going anywhere." Emmaline laughed, "Just to Haley and back. I'll take Lacy."

I sighed, "We didn't get to talk before this hit, I wasn't prepared. I had planned to tell you." Emmaline sat up, "Tell me what?" I explained, "There's a threat. Goblins tried to attack the wedding. The Hackura guards captured the scouts. Dustin and Ryan had coven members there to help us. The fairy army was there, along with our warriors, Eric's, Alpha Chase's, and Alpha Cameron's."

Emmaline's voice sounded so small when she whispered, "Goblins? But... they are enemies of fairies... they wanted me and Haley, didn't they?" I nodded, "Yes, they did. But they won't get you. Dylan's preparing the pack for zombies to attack next." Emmaline laughed, "He would. I'm sorry, I didn't want our wedding to be stressful for you." She started to cry.

I pulled her to me somewhat bewildered. I comforted her, "Hey, none of this. I loved our wedding." Emmaline sobbed, "That's why Haley's brothers didn't come inside. Because they were killing goblins." I said, "No, they didn't come inside because they were gathering the heads of all the goblins and arranging them just so to send to the goblin king."

That brought Emmaline up short. She laughed a little, "Did they really?" I nodded, "They really did. They were incredibly entertained." She sighed, "It's already starting." I said, "We will protect you, but I don't want you out of my eyesight for too long." She smiled, "Just to Haley then. Like I said, I'll take Lacy with me." I sighed, "Alright."

She winced, "We missed Christmas, didn't we?" I nodded, "We did, but no one will be upset." She smiled at me. I asked, "Do you want to head back to our house?" Emmaline nodded. We got distracted in the shower for a while longer before she snapped us clothes and we headed back.

I linked Dylan, “We are on the way back.” Dylan said, “Good. I was going to hurt you if you missed the Fairy New Year’s Eve party. That would not be cool, Lucas. Not one bit. Is Emmaline pregnant?” I told him, “We haven’t seen a fairy yet. I feel like she is.” Dylan snorted, “If she’s not I don’t know what else you could do. That house is not soundproofed. The warriors that run the patrols are in awe of you and your Alpha stamina.”

I replied, “Let’s not let Emmaline know that. You embarrassed her enough. I’ll get it sound proofed before her next concupiscence.” Dylan agreed, “Aye, aye, captain!” I parked the car and hurried over to Emmaline’s side of the car. I picked her up out of the car.

Emmaline laughed, “What’s this?” I carried her over the threshold. “It’s a tradition.” I put her down. She smiled, “You carried me over the threshold at our other house.” I smiled, “This is the main house though.”

My dad came in with my mom, who ran straight to Emmaline, “Emmy! The wedding was beautiful! We want to do family Christmas tonight. We waited for you guys.” Dylan dramatically stated, “We did. It was horrible. My presents have been sitting under the tree MOCKING me. I can hear them cry at night because they aren’t getting used. All the other Christmas presents are making fun of them.”

Emmaline gasped, “I’m so sorry! You guys didn’t have to do that.” My dad assured her, “There’s nothing to be sorry about, Emmy. We can do Christmas dinner tonight, and then presents.” Dylan screamed, “LACY PRESENTS!”

Lacy came walking in. “I heard my dad. Presents tonight, I got it.” Dylan twirled her around, “Aren’t you excited? I’m on cloud nine! My presents will finally be appreciated as they should’ve been several days ago.” Lacy smiled, “I love you, Dylan Frost.” Dylan kissed her, “I love you too, Lacy Frost.” She giggled.

Emmaline walked over and grabbed my sister. She announced, “I’m borrowing Lacy. You talk to Lucas.” Dylan said, “Right, you’ve had him as a captivated sex audience for

four days. Now it's my turn." Emmaline laughed and she popped away with Lacy.

My dad asked, "So, are we getting another grandpup?" I said, "I don't know yet. Haley is the only fairy who can see her own glow. That's who they popped to. Emmaline wants to know if she's glowing." Dylan told me, "We've had some stray goblins." I growled.

Dylan put his hands up, "They were handled. The goblin king is unhappy so many of his forces died in their first attempt. Aiden has spread the word Emmaline is soul tied to you. He reiterated Haley and Eric are twice light bound. We've had some drunk fairy's pop in. GAP is... less than happy about the ones that have popped up there. Garrett killed one in Red Run, and Alpha Tucker killed three in his territory. How they thought popping anywhere near him was a good idea...? I'll never know. He's... testy about full blooded fairies. Which seems more than fair, given they tortured him and all."

I asked, "Eric didn't kill any?" Dylan laughed, "Lucas, I'm going to give you a chance to ponder that question. Then I will graciously forget you asked." I rolled my eyes, "How many did Eric kill?" Dylan said, "There ya go. GAP killed seven because he's a possessive overachiever. Aiden declared Haley and Emmaline off limits again blah, blah, blah."

I frowned, "Why are the fairy's going against the king?" Dylan sighed, "There's apparently a group of earth fairies that live in Northern Ireland; oddly not the ones Lacy was with, that reject the realm of Faerie and do not recognize Aiden as King. He told them they could respect his family or die at the hands of wolves. So far, they have chosen the latter." I groaned, "So we are fixing the fairy King's problem for him?" Dylan nodded, "While they party it up. I was meant to be a fairy; they live the right way."

I sighed, "Why aren't the girls back yet? How hard is it to ask am I glowing? Yes or No. End of conversation." Dylan raised an eyebrow, "It's only been an hour. They are probably doing fairy things. Plus, no girl has ever had a conversation like that in the history of womankind. Have no fear, they are

with the possessive overachieving fairy killer, also known as GAP.”

My dad teased, “You are going to drive her batty while she’s pregnant.” I sighed, “I should’ve made her take Brad with her.” Dylan said, “The important thing is they WILL be back in time for Christmas Dinner and presents. Your mom wouldn’t even let me open one! Not even ONE measly little present. Not even my stocking, Lucas. MY STOCKING!”

I laughed, “Yes I know you love your stocking candy.” Dylan’s phone rang. “Ah see, it’s Lacy.” Dylan answered his phone. We all heard Lacy crying. We couldn’t understand her. I opened my phone and called Eric.

He answered, “Lucas, how was the honeymoon?” I said, “Later. Why is my sister sobbing incoherently to Dylan? Is Emmaline ok?” Eric assured me, “She was fine when she left.” My heart dropped, “Left?” Eric asked, “Angel, why is Lacy upset?” Haley answered, “Upset? I don’t know. They were popping to Al’s to grab a light lunch.”

I heard a phone ring and Haley said, “Uh oh.” I growled, “Do not say that!” Eric replied, “We are coming to you.” Eric popped in with Haley seconds later. I instantly questioned, “Haley, why did you say uh oh?” Haley held up her phone and I heard Lacy crying. Haley had called Emmaline. My heart was racing.

I asked, “Is she pregnant, Haley?” Haley said, “I don’t answer that question for anyone who is not a woman asking specifically if she is pregnant. Let’s go.” I grabbed onto Eric as did my dad and Dylan. Eric was holding Haley’s hand.

We popped to Al’s office, and quickly filed out. Haley ran over to Al and Frank. She dragged Liz over and began to collectively heal them. Dylan looked Lacy over head to toe. I looked around seeing a pile of water and Emmaline’s clothes. I surmised, “Emmaline turned to water?” Lacy nodded, “She just wanted a burger.”

Al sat up first and grabbed for Liz, “LIZ! Are you alright?” Liz startled, “I might be deaf now, but somehow I’m fine.”

Haley sat down, “That would be me. You had a brain hemorrhage. What happened?” Liz frowned, “I don’t know.”

Lacy told us, “A goblin made her fall. She hit her head on the table.” Haley popped away. Eric growled. “FUCKING SERIOUSLY? How can this not be the moment to take me with her!” Frank sat up last. He said, “I’ll get us all burgers. Emmaline really wanted one. She’ll be hungry when they come back.” He took off to the kitchen.

Al said, “He needs something to do. That’s just his who he is.” I nodded and took out my phone to call Nick. He answered, “Lucas, I was just about to call. I have two fairies that aren’t mine. One is yours, who is... a mess for lack of a better word. The other is Eric’s. There is also a very dead group of goblins. For the record, when you see Emmaline, I had NOTHING to do with this. Call me later, Haley is popping back with your wife. Goodbye, Lucas.”

Haley popped a second later. I yanked Emmaline out of her arms. She was sobbing, “My... powers... I.... can’t.... pop. Haley... The...” Haley rubbed her back, “That’s normal.” I asked, “What?” Haley said, “It’s only for an hour. I’ll explain it later, I promise.” I growled, “Explain it now.” Haley raised an eyebrow at me, “When she calms down.” I stroked her back and her sobs became whimpers.

Dylan said, “I deserve a medal for how long I have been quiet, but WHAT THE HELL HAPPENED HERE?” Emmaline took a deep breath and stepped back. When she did, I got a whiff of her scent. I growled menacingly, “WHO THE FUCK’S CLOTHES ARE YOU WEARING?”

My wife smelled like another man. Dylan groaned, “Oh joy. FRANK! I need popcorn with my burger and fries. Can I get a milkshake too?” I growled, “DYLAN!” Dylan said, “Don’t you worry. Dylan is here for you.”

He dramatically bowed, “Emmaline, the floor is yours. Quickly explain why you are wearing another male werewolf’s clothes. Just so you know.... that’s a big no no. BIG.” Emmaline started to sob. She choked out, “Would you

rather I be naked? There were Red Run wolves all over the place!”

I growled, “WHOSE CLOTHES ARE THOSE?” Dylan said, “You should answer before he replaces that scent with his own. That’s going to happen by the way, but let’s have the reason first.”

Emmaline wiped her eyes and opened her mouth to explain. I was barely holding Dominic back from claiming her right there on the floor of Al’s. I linked, “Buddy, explanation then claiming.” He snarled, “Fine, it better be a hell of explanation.” I was certain it was going to be.

I'm Yours

Lucas ran Emmaline into their new house. I briefly glanced around. It had a kitchen, living room, a hall bathroom, and two bedrooms. Lucas ran us into what I assumed was the master bedroom. It had a walk-in closet and a bathroom. I loved it. It was an adorable little house.

I quickly told Lucas about my IUD. The joy that overtook him in that moment swept into my chest. Lucas really wanted our child to come into this world. At least he wasn't upset about the prospect of it being a reality.

We were together before an intense need to be with Lucas hit. The last coherent thought I had for the next several days was I guess the fairy relic is more powerful than I thought. At least it didn't kick in at the reception.

The next several days were motivated by lust, food, and some sleep. Mostly sex. Lots of sex. I woke up feeling refreshed. Lucas was talking to my stomach. He was going to be an amazing father. I also had a feeling he was going to go the route Eric had during Haley's pregnancy. I was going to have to pop away from people to pee. I wanted to pop to Haley right now and find out if I was glowing. I remembered Bexley said I wouldn't be able to see my own glow. Haley was unique in that aspect.

When we went into the bathroom, I peeked in the mirror hoping Bexley could be wrong. I was a little disappointed I couldn't see any glow. It wasn't full blown disappointment because there was still hope. I could be like every other fairy who couldn't see their glow. Lucas didn't want me to pop to Haley. That was odd. We didn't even know I was pregnant yet and he didn't want me out of his eyesight. My heart sank when he told me about the goblin threat.

David had taught me about goblins. They would trade spells with witches, but they didn't often leave their own

realm. They hated fairies. They thought fairies looked down on them as not being as magical as fairies were themselves. Based on what I knew about fairies, they were probably right. Fairies did probably discount the magic that goblins possessed, but I didn't. I understood they were magical. Why would they want me? I'm a partial fairy, not a full blooded one. The partial fairy group had been ignored until recently.

Realization filled me. It was about me and Haley. Goblins can't get into Faerie, but Haley and I were a part of that super powerful family. In a realm they want access to. I had to take deep breaths hoping I didn't have a panic attack. I could feel fear overtaking me. That was odd. I knew it was taken care of. What was wrong with me?

I focused on Lucas' words. I felt bad that he had dealt with this alone at our wedding. Everyone was put in a jam because of my fairy side. Tears filled my eyes. Before I knew what was happening, I was full blown sobbing.

I really hoped Haley said I was glowing because this was a new emotional level for me. I sobbed even harder when I realized the goblins were the reason that Haley's brothers hadn't come inside to enjoy everything. They were dealing with goblins; they couldn't relax with the rest of us. They protected Haley and me.

Lucas was trying to assure me that it was fine because the Hackura Prince's had fun gathering heads to send to the goblin King. That stopped my tears. A laugh was trying to bubble up. Inwardly I told myself, "There better be a baby in here, and you need to stop making mommy's emotional go haywire; or this will be a LONG four months."

I don't know what I was expecting but nothing happened in response. I knew my siblings would celebrate our first Christmas together even if it wasn't on the day. We'd had revolving holidays throughout the years due to competitions, and David's schedule.

I could invite them over for dinner and give them their presents. I took a deep breath. If I wasn't pregnant, I was going to have to ask my dad if this made me super emotional.

After our shower, I snapped us clothes. I didn't know if Lucas had clothes for us here. Come to think of it, he probably did. I started to get misty eyed again over the fact that he'd had a house built for my concupiscence. DANG! I needed to get it together.

We got into his car to head back to the main house. Lucas actually drove the speed limit this time, so it took us a little longer to reach our home than it had the night of our wedding. I smiled to myself as we pulled into our driveway. I was officially Emmaline Walsh Lyons. It felt so right.

Lucas carried me out of the car over the threshold again. I had to laugh at his antics. Debbie ran up to me as quickly as she could. She was going to be giving birth to Landon any day now. I felt really bad and almost started crying again when I found out they'd waited for us to have Christmas.

Dale seemed to sense I might cry and immediately assured me it was fine. Dylan though... his soul felt mischievous while also a little put out over the fact that he hadn't opened his presents yet. I had to hide a smirk. His kids would have so much fun on Christmas morning.

Lacy linked me, "Thank god you guys are back. He has been WHINING about not even getting to open his stocking. He looks forward to the candy every year. Travis has been reminding him he's supposed to be the older brother who's responsible. Dylan told him on Christmas he was the resident little kid."

I laughed as she came around the corner. She was getting pretty close to being due with her little man too. I walked over to Lacy and grabbed her announcing, "We are popping to Haley." Lacy linked back, "To see if you have a glow or not?" I nodded. She ordered, "Pop away! I hope you are. I want my little man to have cousins to play with." I smiled at Lucas and popped to Haley.

We were greeted with noises I couldn't unhear. I yelled, "OH MY GOD! I'M SO SORRY!" I covered my eyes. Haley was half naked with Eric. Haley immediately snapped them

dressed. Haley sounded amused when she told me, “It’s safe to look now, Emmaline.”

Eric groaned, “You’re going to talk to them, aren’t you Angel?” Haley trailed her fingers up his chest, “I’ll make it up to later.” Eric smiled at her and kissed her passionately, “It better be good, my wife. You’ve been teasing me all morning.” Haley smiled, “You fucking love it when I tease you.” Eric bit her neck, “I do, especially when I get to fuck you senseless later.”

He greeted us, “Hello Lacy and Emmaline.” Lacy teased, “I’d like to say this is the first time I’ve seen this, but it’s not. At least Lucas isn’t with you this time.” Eric laughed, “We only traumatized you that one time. You weren’t supposed to be home until later.”

Lacy shivered, “Yes, lesson learned. NEVER surprise your brother by coming home from camp early. You will regret it for the rest of your life.” Eric laughed and left the room.

I turned to Haley who was beaming at me. She asked knowingly, “What brings you here?” I tried to sound casual, “I want to know if I’m glowing.” Haley smiled, “You are. Congratulations.” Lacy squealed and hugged me. She looked at Haley, “GET IN HERE!”

Haley popped to us and joined our hug. “With this new taking power from people deal, and getting in touch with my fairy side I can sense how many children you’re having. Do you want to know?” I shrieked, “CHILDREN? There’s more than one in there? Oh gosh. Am I having triplets too?” Haley bit her lip, “No....”

Lacy squealed, “TWINS!” Haley laughed, “Still no.” I sat down in shock asking somewhat afraid, “What?” Haley said, “I should’ve warned you; I didn’t think about it though. There was the powerful water fairy relic, plus my healing combined.... it made you.... VERY fertile.” I asked, “How many are in there? Is that why I’ve been ready to cry every five seconds?”

Haley laughed, “Water fairies tend to cry a lot, they are the more emotional pregnant fairies. Make sure you get around

water more often to center yourself. Idel might be able to help more with this than I can.”

I nodded getting her back on track, “I’ll call her, how many babies can you sense in here?” Haley smiled, “You can do this too, feel for your light.” I nodded and did as she said. Haley said, “Now, sense how many other lights you feel within you. Only royals can do that, and you are royal. I’d have done it myself the first go round but it was complicated, and my mind wasn’t in a good space. Shit was fucking sideways my first pregnancy.”

I felt around and stared up at her in shock. I yelled, “I AM HAVING QUADRUPLETS?” Lacy gasped. Haley smiled, “That’s what I sense, yes.” I threw my hands in the air, “Lucas is in SUCH trouble!” Lacy laughed, “That was all your genes, girlfriend! We don’t even have twins in our family.” I said, “Yeah, well... I hope he doesn’t want more for like four years. Holy crap! Thank GOODNESS they can conjure themselves a bottle.” Haley smiled, “I’ll heal you after you give birth, have no fear.”

Haley grabbed her phone and smiled. I asked, “Who’s that?” Haley answered, “BA. She had a great time on her trip. She’s in the area so we are going to meet up for lunch before the New Year’s Eve party. She’s really excited to share all about her lover man friend.”

I asked, “She’s coming to New Year’s Eve?” Haley nodded, “Yes, she is coming. We usually do New Year’s Eve together...” I squealed, “I’m glad she’s coming.” Haley agreed, “Me too.”

Lacy asked, “What do you guys usually do?” Haley laughed, “I was never big on having someone to kiss at midnight. It’s a horrible tradition for those uncomfortable with other people touching them. The first time my mom sent me out, but after that my dad sent us on missions together. We were usually killing someone. It feels strange to know I’m not going to be killing someone on New Year’s Eve, but New Year and all, I guess. Google says New Year’s Resolutions are made on New Year’s. I guess not killing someone to start the year is on my list.”

Lacy gaped, “Your New Year’s Eve tradition was to kill someone?” Haley said, “Well not random people, just bad people. Usually someone who had made a credible threat against one of my brothers.” I raised an eyebrow, “Do your brothers know that?” Haley shrugged, “I don’t know. They haven’t said anything, so... they might not. The first guy threatened Harper’s boytoy lover. He got full fairy hijinks and BA badassery. She loves him too. They know about that one though.”

I laughed, “Who doesn’t love Gunner? He’s fun. This is surreal. I was just thinking we would have one baby.” Haley admitted, “Fairies usually have multiples. Well, fairies who have not been introduced to sex in a brutal way. It’s actually strange that both my mother and aunt only had one baby. They had only been with lovers before their mates. Fenilton was not rough with my mother at all. She had Aiden her first concupiscence with him.”

I grumbled “Lucky us.” Haley smiled, “A fairy’s first pregnancy determines if you have singles or multiples. So, it will never be just the one baby for you.” I huffed, “Great. I’ll hope for twins for us the rest of our lives. I need to get a number in my head of how many kids we are having.”

Haley laughed, “If that makes you feel better then you go for it.” I asked, “Do you guys have a set number?” Haley shrugged, “I have a big family on my dad’s side, and I want a big family. I want my children to have the relationships I would’ve with my Hackura brothers from birth.”

Lacy inched forward, “What’s a big family to you?” Haley shrugged, “More than fifteen.” I yelled, “WHAT?” Haley shrugged again, “My pregnancy was easy once I was home. I only got snappy when bitches were bitches. My labor was simple. I had a tickle up my back and then I sneezed out the triplets. I healed myself after birth and I was back to pre-baby Haley as soon as I did that. We are going to live for hundreds of years. We will look this young for centuries before we get older. My uncle looked old, but he was a few centuries old. He also used dark magic he wasn’t meant to, which blackened his soul.”

She shrugged recalling, “During my childhood, he looked a lot like his sons. Young. I wondered if it was his experiments that made him age. Maybe a punishment for going against magic and the fairy goddess. Emmaline, your dad is older than Fabian was, and he still looks like he’s in late thirties.”

I agreed, “Yes, he does.” Haley said, “My mom looked pretty young too. No one would believe she’s a mother let alone a grandmother. We could’ve passed as twins.” I shook my head, “Surreal. This entire conversation is surreal.”

Lacy said, “When you said we are going to live for a long time. You mean we, as in..?” Haley laughed, “I gave Eric’s pack and family my lifespan by being twice light bound to him, as Emmaline gave her lifespan to your pack by being soul tied with Lucas. Sharon, Idel and Maribella have all shared their lights with their mates, which grants them the same lifespan. Lacy asked, “Is anyone else twice light bound?” Haley shook her head, “No, only Eric and me. Emmaline and Lucas are the only soul tied ones too.”

Lacy laughed, “Oh gosh. Dylan’s going to want more than two pups in that case.” Haley laughed, “If you only want two, have two.” I asked, “Is that why Hackura have so many children? Because they live a long time?” Haley nodded, “Yup, and it’s normal for us to have a lot of kids. Someone who has five kids is on the smaller end.”

Lacy yelled, “THE SMALLER END?! Crazy Hackura realm.” Haley laughed, “My mom and dad are in the midrange. They have eight sons that are theirs, then my dad has me. My mom adopted me though so technically they have nine. Bjourn has a lot of kids, and they aren’t done. Marcus and Torvi are working on it too. They have six right now. Torvi wants at least ten on her own. They have three of Marcus’ kids from other relationships too.”

I soaked in that information, “Wow... just wow.” Haley smiled, “Logan has the least amount of kids at the moment, but he’s working on kid number two.” I squealed, “Due soon.” Haley smiled, “They are both being super cute about it. I think she’s going to have a New Year’s Baby.”

I quickly asked, “Are they still coming to the party?” Haley nodded, “Katie is insistent. Logan is not happy. I promised him no one would harm her.” I was stunned, “He’s not coming?”

Haley laughed, “He’s coming, but he can’t bring the guard he usually does. He’s happy Blade will be there. Marcus and Bjourn are bringing Torvi and Astrid too. Logan relaxed when Aiden agreed Serion could come as well. I’m sure all my Hackura brothers will come.”

I frowned, “Who’s Serion?” Haley smiled, “Blade’s mate, and a new member of my guard. Because this whole fairy prophecy means my dad wants me to have five guards instead of four.” I started to cry, “The goblins at the wedding.”

Lacy stared at me wide eyed. Haley assured her, “It’s normal, Lacy. Water fairies are weepy, especially the first month.” I cried harder, “That’s not fair!” Haley rubbed my back, “I mean, you are water fairy, tears are water. I guess the fairy goddess thought it was fair.”

I wiped my tears, “It doesn’t feel fair.” Haley sighed, “I’m sorry, Emmaline.” I shrugged, “It’s not your fault, you don’t make the rules. By the way, I went into my concupiscence on our wedding night. Not the next day.”

Haley thought about, “That was probably the relic plus my healing that did that. Maybe even your soul tie to Lucas. Did you tell him you’d gotten your IUD removed?” I nodded, “Yes, before everything started.” Haley smirked, “Was he excited?” I nodded, “I almost choked on his joy.” Haley told me, “Then you hit the trifecta. Your soul wanted to make him happy, he’s your other half.” I nodded, “That makes sense.”

I started to cry again. Lacy asked, “Emmaline? Are you ok?” I cried, “I want a burger.” Haley told me, “I can conjure you one.” I cried harder, “I want one from Al’s, with a Frank’s twist.” Haley reminded me, “You can pop there, Emmaline.” I stopped crying and smiled, “You’re right! Let’s go Lacy.”

Lacy put her hands up, “Maybe we should get Lucas.” I started to cry again. Lacy stared at me wide eyed then said, “Never mind, it’s just a burger.” Haley offered, “I can come.”

Just then one of the triplets started crying over the monitor. I said, “No, you take care of that.” Haley laughed, “Someone probably told Cassie she couldn’t pop to Eric. Why Cassandra keeps telling her that, I have no idea. She’ll do it anyway.” Haley gave me a hug before I popped into Al’s office with Lacy.

Al clutched his chest, “Emmaline, you’ve got to give a guy a warning.” I teared up and sniffled. He looked startled, assuring me, “It’s fine. No, don’t cry. Pop to my office anytime.” Lacy explained, “She wants a burger.” I corrected her, “NEEDS. I need a burger Frank style... maybe five.”

Al laughed and walked out to go tell Frank. We followed him. The second she spotted me Liz gave me a hug. She told me, “We were at the wedding! It was just beautiful!” I smiled, “Thank you, Liz! It was crazy, I’m sorry I didn’t get to say hi.” Liz waved her hands, “Don’t you worry one bit about that.”

Frank yelled, “Do you really want five burgers, Emmaline? Al linked you wanted five. That seems like a lot.” I started to cry. Frank awkwardly said, “Umm five burgers coming up... I’ll make more than five. Please make her stop crying, Beta Lacy.”

Lacy rubbed my back, “It’s fine, Emmaline. He’s making your burgers.” Suddenly, Lacy was encased in a glowing purple bubble. I screamed. Liz fell and slammed her head on the table. I yelled, “LIZ!” Al and Frank came running from the kitchen and were immediately rendered unconscious after being slammed to the ground.

I turned and saw five goblins. The female smiled, “Hello, Soul Searcher.” I sighed, “What’s happening to Lacy and my friends? Why did you hurt them? I just want a FREAKING burger! WHY DOESN’T ANYONE WANT ME TO HAVE A BURGER!” I started sobbing.

The female goblin stared at me in shock, “The she wolf who you called Lacy is clearly pregnant... we wouldn’t hurt a pregnant woman.” I cried, “I’m pregnant, but you clearly intend to hurt me.” They all hissed. The female spoke, “Well,

we will have to fix that.” I screamed, “WHAT?” Now, I was pissed and my hands glowed blue.

All of a sudden, I was gone. I was treading water. I turned quickly in a circle, realizing I was in the lake in Red Run. Peter yelled, “EMMALINE?” I tried to cover myself. I told him, “Don’t come any closer!” Peter stopped coming towards me.

A wolf ran behind a tree, and a second later Drake came out wearing clothes. RIGHT! They had clothes stashed around all over the place. I tried to pop to the tree line, but it didn’t work. I began to thrash in the water.

Peter started coming towards me again. He calmly called, “Emmaline let us help you.” I started to cry, “I don’t know why I turned to water, and now I can’t pop! I’m naked!” Peter stopped walking. I ordered, “Turn around so I can run and grab some clothes! Where is your closet stash?”

Drake advised, “That’s not a good idea.” I started to cry, “I need clothes! Goblins are coming.” Peter and Drake stiffened. Drake sighed, “Over to right.” Peter complained, “Drake...” Drake said, “She’s right and she’s hysterical. Alpha Lucas would rather she be wearing clothes when we get her back to him.”

They turned around and I ran to the tree line. I grabbed the first pair of shorts and t-shirt I found. I heard Peter and Drake growl, then I heard them shift. Wolves ran past me. I recognized Alpha Kyle and Beta McAlister as two of the wolves. I heard a pop and peeked from behind the tree. I cried in relief that Haley was here now. She and the wolves killed the goblins quickly.

I screamed, “I WANT LUCAS!” Because now I was just totally irrational. Part of my brain knew that, but it didn’t stop me from sobbing. All the wolves shifted back and grabbed clothes. Haley popped to me and grabbed my hand. She popped us back to the group.

I hiccupped, “Thank... you... Drake.... and Pe.... ter...” They both stared at me astonished. Drake assured me, “It’s no problem, Emmaline. Please stop crying.” Haley sighed,

“Emmaline, can you take a deep breath please? Focus on my presence, let it calm you down.”

I calmed down a little reiterating, “I want Lucas.” Haley rubbed my arms assuring me, “I’ll pop you to him.” I cried, “I don’t even know why I turned to water! I was ready to fight.” Alpha Kyle said, “She should probably change.” Haley frowned, “Why? We need to get her Lucas quickly, and Eric is going to flip out because I popped away.”

Peter snorted, “Going to? He has to be already. Seriously, she should wear other clothes.” Haley asked, “What the fuck is wrong with you all today? She needs to calm down, and we need Lucas for that. It was good to see you weirdos. Goodbye.” Haley grabbed me and popped us back to Al’s diner.

I had one second to see my friends were ok before Lucas yanked me to him. Lacy linked me, “Umm... whose clothes are those?” I couldn’t answer her. I was really worried about the babies especially since I turned to water and couldn’t pop. Haley immediately told me it was normal. Great. Was this another water fairy pregnancy thing? I turn to water then I can’t pop for an hour! That’s bullshit! I don’t even know why I turned to water.

The angrier I got the more I cried. My soul eased when Lucas stroked my back. I inhaled his scent and it helped me calm down. Once I’d calmed down, Dylan asked what happened. Lacy linked, “Emmaline... Seriously, whose clothes are those?” I answered, “I don’t know.” Lacy winced, “This is bad.” I frowned, “Why?”

Lucas exploded, demanding to know why I was wearing someone else’s clothes. I glanced at Haley confused, but her soul told me she was confused too. She turned to Eric. His jaw was set and hard, and his eyes narrowed. He only glanced at Haley when she clearly linked him. His stance relaxed marginally but he groaned.

Dylan asked Frank for fries. That sounded really good. Now I wanted Frank’s fries, and I REALLY wanted my

burger. Stupid goblins popping up and keeping me from my burger. This was THEIR FAULT!

Dylan asked me to explain my clothes and smelling like another werewolf. Did they want me to come back naked? Did they want Peter and Drake to see me naked? Dylan was pleading with me to explain. Lacy linked, “Just tell us what happened.”

I yelled at them, “I don’t know, ok? I don’t know whose clothes they are!” Lucas growled, “What THE FUCK does that mean? Haley? I don’t recognize the scent!” Haley asked, “Can we all just take a deep breath?” Lucas growled in response.

I started to sob uncontrollably. Haley sighed and whispered in Fealish and touched my back. I immediately calmed down. Eric said, “Now, you understand what happened when Haley came back smelling like Dylan. Except I know his scent.”

Dylan turned red and Lucas’ chest rumbled softly. What the heck was his problem? Haley said, “Ok you fucking weirdos. There needs to be quiet, calm voices asking about this situation. Yelling is going to make her cry again.”

Dylan snorted, “The water fairy period strikes again. Wonderful. I mean... no sarcasm here. Emmaline sweetheart, lovely flower fairy of ours. Pretty please tell us the events that transpired leading from after you left GAP’s territory that led to you being in an unknown male’s clothes.” He clapped a hand on Lucas’ shoulder. Eric came over and stood in front of Lucas.

I cried, “Please don’t be mad at me, Lucas.” Lucas’ features softened instantly. He took off his shirt and handed it to me. “Please put this on, baby girl. They will turn around so you can change.” I nodded and switched the shirts. Lucas immediately calmed down.

He pulled me into his arms explaining, “I’m not mad at you, baby girl. Neither is Dominic. It’s very important to him that you know that. Just know that our mate wearing another man’s clothes and smelling like him is driving us insane.”

Ok. I guess that made sense. He had heightened senses. I wiped my tears, “These goblins showed up. They put Lacy in some purple shield saying they wouldn’t hurt her, because she was obviously pregnant. They hurt Liz though. I’m so sorry Liz.” I started to cry again.

Haley consoled me, “They are fine, Emmaline. I healed all of them.” Al said, “Emmaline, sweetie it’s alright.” I cried harder, “I just wanted a burger. Frank’s burger.” Frank came out with a plateful of burgers. I immediately stopped crying and squealed. I grabbed the plate and kissed Frank on the cheek, “YOU are an amazing man, Frank. Thank you! Best. Burgers. Ever.”

Everyone was startled. Lacy bit her lip while Haley laughed outright. Lacy linked me, “Hello mood swing. Isn’t pregnancy grand?” I ignored her and ate my five burgers. Dylan said, “Ok, now our little Luna had eaten while I have lost what has felt like six years off my life restraining my best friend with GAP here... Please water fairy period emotions let Emmaline tell us the REST of the story. For me. Please, dear goddess let there be explanations.”

I pouted, “Can I get fries, Frank?” Dylan threw his hands in the air, “Of course. No, let’s eat fries first. Dylan’s talking crazy over here again.” Frank smirked, “They have about ten minutes left in the fryer.” Dylan clapped, “Goodie. Emmaline, that gives us ten minutes for story time. Notice the calmness of my tone.”

I laughed, “I did notice that. I got ready to fight the goblins, and then... I was just water. I was in the lake in Red Run for some reason. Peter and Drake were there. I couldn’t pop and I panicked. I asked where the closest clothes they had stashed around were. They REALLY didn’t want to tell me, but I yelled at them that I was naked. Begrudgingly, practically against their will, I was informed where some clothes were. I ran to get them and heard the goblins get there.”

I took a drink of the water on the table and continued, “Alpha Kyle and Beta McAlister showed up with more wolves. Haley popped in and killed the goblins. We came right back here. She thought Eric would be upset, and I needed you,

Lucas. I don't know whose clothes they are. I just didn't want everyone to see me naked."

Lucas said, "Haley..." Haley yelled, "Oh come the fuck on!" Dylan interjected, "I feel the need to note, that was not a calm tone." Haley sighed, "She needed you to calm down, Lucas. Here." Haley snapped, and I was in different clothes. Still Lucas' shirt, but she'd added a hoodie, and sweatpants that were Lucas'.

She asked, "Are the wolves calm now?" I read their souls and started crying. Dylan stated, "For the record, I was calm." I pointed at them, "Your souls are all mad! What did I do wrong?" Lucas said, "Nothing. Baby girl, you did nothing wrong. It's just hard for me for you to smell like another man. Eric and Dylan are thinking about how they'd feel if their mates smelled like another man. I'm holding Dominic back from hunting down the smell of that man in Red Run and kicking his ass."

I cried, "That's not his fault! He wasn't even there; they were just spare clothes laying around. I was naked!" Lucas nodded, "I understand that, and I am glad you found clothes." I accused, "No you aren't!"

Lucas pulled me to him, "Yes, I am. I wish it had been a women's scent. It's just part of my nature, baby girl. You're mine, and I don't like you smelling like another man." I nodded, "Ok." Dylan clapped, "Look fries and the man of the hour, Frank. He's doing the lord's work. Do the fries make the water fairy period emotions happier?"

I giggled and grabbed the fries. Dylan sighed in relief. Haley said, "I'll pop us to your home before Eric and I leave." I blushed, "Sorry about earlier, Eric." Eric smirked, "It's fine. I'm sure my mate has a creative way to make up for it."

Dylan bemoaned, "No... No... Lucas... HE'S A PRICK!" Lucas rolled his eyes. We all got up. I looked at Al, "I'm so sorry guys." Al said, "It's not your fault. You pop by and see us anytime." Lacy had grabbed my clothes off the floor. I sighed, "My phone's ruined, isn't it?" Lacy frowned, "We can put it in rice. It did ring when Haley called though."

I started to cry, “It was a present from Lucas.” Dylan jumped in, “Lucas can buy you ten more. That’s on the low side. He’s so rich it’s crazy. Please stop crying.” Haley snapped, “There is no need for tears or rice. Fairy godmother is here.” I looked at my phone and it wasn’t wet anymore. I smiled, “Thank you, Haley.” She smiled, “Of course.”

We popped back to the house. Haley said, “I already know everyone is going to hate the fuck out of the words I’m about to say, but I need to talk to Emmaline.” Lucas gritted his teeth, “Space unheard then. She’s not leaving my eyesight.” Eric agreed, “Ditto. I believe we have discussed you popping out to fight without me.”

Haley’s jaw dropped, “It was an EMERGENCY! A fairy relative emergency!” Eric said, “They would’ve taken you too if they could’ve. Next time, bring Lucas and me.” Haley stomped her foot and glared at Eric, “Fine!” Eric smirked, “Now seems to be a good time to point out you didn’t bring Blade.” Haley groaned, “FUCK! He’s going to be pissed.” Eric winked at her.

She grabbed me and spoke her space unheard chant. Haley turned her back to Eric, “He’s gotten really good at reading my lips.” I looked over her shoulder at Eric who was frowning. I laughed, “He knows that you know that.”

Haley said, “He already knew I knew that. It wasn’t a secret, he told me. Anyway, here’s the deal. You’ll be more prone to turning to water for the first month of your pregnancy. It’s your overprotective children. Go figure. There is definitely a boy in the group who’s like his daddy. You should talk to your little guy about being able to fight. Overprotective Alpha males from the womb, I swear. How fast did you turn to water?”

I winced, “Pretty quick.” Haley laughed, “More than one boy then, probably. You can’t pop for an hour afterwards because it’s supposed to help a fairy find their emotional, pregnant mate. It’s not helpful when your mate can’t pop to you because he’s a wolf. You panicked but your other powers will work just not popping. When the babies are bigger, you’ll be able to use their powers too. Once they are bigger and

understand more, it's likely they won't turn you water. They will just pop you to Lucas."

I groaned, "Great. Just great. Mommy can fight guys." I didn't even get a kick in acknowledgement, or a feeling. I sighed, "I get nothing from them." Haley smiled, "You will when they get bigger. It won't even be long. Days probably. How are you going to tell Lucas?" I admitted, "I don't know yet." Haley smiled, "If you need fairy godmother assistance you call me." I smiled, "I will." Haley asked, "Is there anything else you have questions about?" I asked, "So the babies are ok?" Haley nodded, "They are fine. I'd have told you immediately if they weren't." I exhaled in relief. "Of course, you would have. Thank you, Haley."

Haley nodded and made it so everyone could hear us again. Lucas immediately grabbed me. He searched my eyes, "Is everything ok?" I nodded, "Yes." Lucas said, "We will see you all for dinner then." Eric smirked. Dylan said, "You'd better! I'll barge in your room and drag you both down here. By your hair if necessary!" Haley laughed, "Goodbye everyone." She grabbed Eric and popped out.

Lucas grabbed me and pulled me towards the stairs. Lacy smirked linking me, "Have fun!" I asked, "Have fun with what?" Lacy smirked, "Lucas replacing that scent you smell of with his own." I don't know that my eyebrows could lift any higher on my face, "Really?" Lacy nodded.

Lucas walked into our room, dragging me to the shower. He turned it on and pushed me under it. I squealed, "LUCAS! THAT'S COLD! We are still dressed. At least let me get out of your clothes." His lips were immediately on mine. He bit my lip and when I gasped, he slid his tongue into my mouth. He was acting as if was possessed.

He pulled back when the water warmed up. He declared, "MINE!" He threw his hoodie off me and ripped his shirt off. He bit my neck where my mark was. I screamed, "LUCAS!" He switched sides of my neck. I could tell he was going to leave a hickey, but I didn't care. My hormones were now fully on board with having sex. I snapped us both naked the rest of the way.

I bit Lucas' ear. He growled, "You're mine, Emmaline. MY mate, MY wife, MINE! My fairy! Say it!" I whispered in his ear, "I'm yours, Lucas. Only yours." He slid a finger into me, "FUCK! You're so wet." I bit his ear and said, "Because I'm yours."

Lucas pumped his finger inside me, then added another. He backed us up against the wall of the shower. I leaned my head against the wall and whispered, "Lucas, please." Lucas smirked, "Please what?" I pleaded, "I want to come, Lucas." He started moving his hand faster and then without warning bit my mark hard. I came apart at the seams screaming his name.

He didn't give me a second to come down from my high, entering me in the next breath. I moaned. He pounded into me growling furiously. He came and we stood panting in the shower for several moments before he pulled out. He washed me from head to toe. He even washed my hair. We stepped out of the shower, and I snapped my hair dry.

Lucas picked me up and carried me to the bed. I laughed teasing him, "Are you not satisfied? You scrubbed every inch of my skin." Lucas kissed me deeply, "Your scent is still off. I'm not stopping until you smell like me." I giggled, "Or until Dylan drags us downstairs by our hair. That does not sound like the fun hair pulling you do during sexy time. That sounds painful."

Lucas smiled, "He could try. He'd never hurt you baby girl, I promise." He entered me. I gasped. He grinned at me, "You're my wife." I laughed, "You're my husband." He slowly moved inside me. "That I am." He made love to me until Dylan banged on the door.

He yelled, "IT IS DINNER TIME! GET OUT HERE LUCAS! I AM NOT MESSING AROUND. I'LL COME IN THERE, I'LL DO IT." I laughed as Lucas pulled out of me. He kissed me deeply. I snapped us clothes as Dylan walked in.

Dylan said, "Come on, we gotta eat dinner man! Then we get PRESENTS." I laughed and walked into the closet. I pulled out my phone, running a quick google search on how to

tell your husband you're having quads. I found four onesies; One said, I was planned, the next said I wasn't, the third said, me either and the last one said I definitely wasn't. I laughed and conjured those onesies in red and green for Christmas colors. I walked out with my present.

Dylan said, "She's been hiding a present in the closet. I didn't even think to look there! Get it together Dylan!" I laughed and we all went downstairs. I gasped in surprise then started crying when I saw Dusty, Ry, Valerie, Logan, Katie, and Aubree sitting at the table.

Katie smiled and Logan helped her stand. Dusty and Ry wrapped me into a hug that Katie joined. I cried, "You guys are here!" Katie laughed, "Of course we are. It's our first Christmas since we found you. We all waited to have it with you." Dusty wiped my tears, "None of that now. We are together as we should've been."

I wiped a few more tears that escaped, "I'm just so happy we are all together again." Dylan said, "She turned to water earlier today. So, we can all just expect the water works to flow from our little Luna for the next few days." Dusty laughed, "Did you?" I sighed "There was a whole goblins keeping me away from my burger and hurting my friends wearing random clothes thing going on."

Dusty stiffened, "What?" Lucas sighed, "Goblins attacked Al's because Emmaline wanted a burger. They injured the staff, and Emmaline turned to water in the stress of it all. She ended up in Red Run. We have clothes all over the territories for anyone to grab after they shift."

Ry laughed, "You didn't, Evie." I said, "Again, did anyone want me to be walking around naked?" Katie said, "Conjure clothes? Or snap?" I admitted, "I panicked. I tried to pop, and I couldn't." Dusty frowned, "Are you alright?"

Lucas frowned, "Haley said it was normal. You can pop now right, baby girl? We can get Haley back if you can't." Dylan said, "Say no, Emmaline for me. Then Haley will come back. We will have five fairies at dinner!" I laughed and popped next to Lacy and back to Lucas.

I shrugged, "Sorry, Dylan." Dylan pouted, "That's ok, we still get presents!" I laughed, "I'm going to put this one under the tree. I have to go grab my siblings presents too." Dylan sighed, "There are MORE presents in your closet?" I smiled, "The Luna closet."

Dylan hit his head with his palm, "The Luna closet. GENIUS! No one looks there!" I laughed and popped to the living room putting Lucas' present down. I popped upstairs to get my siblings and their significant other's presents, then popped back to the tree, then to the dining room.

Lucas instantly grabbed me and kissed me. He told me, "I love you, Emmaline." I smiled, "I love you too." I sat down at the table and tears filled my eyes. Dylan sighed, "Dear water fairy period, you vex me." I waved my hands, "No, these are happy tears. I haven't had a family Christmas since I left. The fact that Katie, Dusty, and Ry are here... I never thought I'd get that again. I didn't think I'd get to see them again. I thought they'd all find their wick's and get married without me."

I waved, "Sorry, I just... We are all here." Lucas grabbed my hand and kissed the side of my head. Katie started to cry, "She's right. We never thought we'd find her again. We thought she could've been dead somewhere that we weren't searching with no one to claim her. We were all basket cases around our birthday's hoping for a present. Ryan's and my gifts were late the second year she was gone. None of us could leave Dustin's apartment until they came."

I told them, "My bus broke down. We had to spend the night in some random town." Katie wiped her eyes. She snorted, "Well screw them and their broken bus. We were a wreck. Logan, kill the maintenance people of that bus company or something." Logan smiled, "If you want me to." I laughed and everyone else did too. His soul told me he was serious though. He shot me a wink.

We all sat around sharing past Christmas stories. My eyes misted over several times. I couldn't believe this was truly my life now. I took Lucas' hand and stared into his eyes. He kissed me lightly on the lips. I smiled, enjoying our little

family. I looked down at my stomach knowing we would need a larger table for next year.

Lacy linked me, “When are you telling Lucas about the pups? He’s going crazy. He thinks you aren’t pregnant because you haven’t said anything.” I snorted, “Does Dylan think I am?” Lacy snickered, “He said if you’re not we aren’t prepared for the monsoon of tears for when you are.”

He was right. I told her, “I conjured onesies for Lucas, so he can open his present and be surprised.” Lacy smiled, “Then he has to open presents first.” I smiled. Debbie got up and started to clear plates. I snapped and had them all in the kitchen.

All the girls went into the kitchen. I winked at them then snapped them all clean and had them put away. Debbie sat down, “Normally the cleanup takes longer. I LOVE having a fairy daughter in law.” I smiled, “Thank you for inviting my family to dinner, mom.” Debbie smiled, “It’s not a problem. I love having lots of people here.”

She bent over and took a deep breath. She groaned, “Not now baby boy.” I raised my eyebrows as did Lacy. I asked her, “Is Landon coming?” Debbie said, “We have time. Besides, It could be a Braxton hicks’ contractions. Let’s keep it quiet for now.” I pointed out, “You know I literally can’t if someone asks me. Actually, neither can Katie.” Katie snorted, “I’m sitting next to her hoping that her labor kickstarts mine. I’ll evade the question to keep that hope alive.” I laughed and we all walked into the living room.

Dylan had already separated out the presents into groups. He directed us to our pile, and we sat down. Dale was studying Debbie. He asked, “Woman, what is wrong with you?” She frowned, “Why would something be wrong?” Dale snorted, “You have been by my side since I was twenty years old. I know you.” I laughed.

Dale turned and narrowed his eyes, “You can’t lie.” I agreed, “That’s true.” Dale smirked, “What’s wrong with Debbie?” I smiled, “Wrong? Nothing is actually wrong.” Lacy linked me, “NICE! Nothing about labor is wrong, it’s natural.”

Dylan interjected, “Goodie. I’m opening my stocking first because I sense something is happening and I won’t be denied any longer.” He ran and pulled his stocking off the fireplace. He dumped it out and squealed seeing all the candy.

Dale revised his question, “Emmy, what’s going on with my wife?” I said, “Ummm...” Debbie sighed, “It’s just a Braxton hicks’ contractions.” Everyone stopped. Dylan sighed, “Well, damn.” Debbie laughed, “I’ve had two of these little ones before. Even if this is real labor, we have time.” Dale teased, “Was that so hard to explain?”

Lucas asked, “Dad, how are you so calm?” Dale shrugged, “I know the drill. I was calm for Lacy too. You though, I was a mess for. Your mother almost kicked me out of the delivery room.” Debbie rolled her eyes, “He was the worst! He was fussing over every little detail. The doctor would have thrown him out if he wasn’t the Alpha, I just know it.” Dale smirked, “Perks of being the Alpha. No one would dare try to make me leave besides my Luna.” Debbie laughed and he kissed her.

Lacy announced, “Lucas first!” Dylan put a hand up to his chest as if he was stabbed, “I have been stabbed through the heart! Your brother over your mate. I see how it is.” Lacy rolled her eyes. “Come on, Luc! You are first.”

Lucas smiled at me asking, “Which one is from you, baby girl?” I laughed, “There are three from me, but you should open this one first.” Dylan said, “OHHH his gifts have an order. I LOVE THOSE! Guessing games. I love it, I love it! It’s so fairy of her! Are all our guessing order games?”

I laughed, “No.” Dylan shrugged, “Darn... Next year.” I said, “I’ll get you presents next year with an order Dylan; I promise.” Dylan pumped his fist in the air, “YES!” Lucas laughed and opened his present. He lifted the lid off the box and just stared at the onesies. I’d made sure they were arranged so he could see all four of them at once.

Dylan teased hm, “You’re killing me man! What is clue one?” Lacy smacked him on the arm. Lucas turned to me with tears in his eyes. That made me tear up. He asked, “Are you serious?” I smiled, “One could hardly joke about that.” Lucas

dropped the present and stood quickly, pulling me up with him as he twirled me around. I laughed as he spun me.

Dylan guessed, “So she IS pregnant? That’s what’s happening, right? Lacy Frost! You said you didn’t know! You knew the WHOLE time! THE LIES!” Lacy smirked, “Wait for it!” Dylan squealed, “WHAT? WAIT FOR WHAT? OH MY GOD! IT’S TWINS! BLESS YOU MOON GODDESS!”

Lucas laughed and kissed me. He told me, “I love you. Is this why you’ve been so quick to tears?” I nodded, “I guess it’s a water fairy thing.” Dylan evenly said, “Yay for us. Seriously you two! Just tell us.” Lucas looked at me, “Say the words to me, baby girl.”

I smiled announcing, “I’m pregnant with quadruplets.” Lucas grinned. Everyone was silent for several moments, then they were hollering with joy. Howls rang out around the pack. I laughed, “Did you already link the pack?” Lucas twirled me again, “You bet your pregnant ass I did.” He kissed me again. I pulled back, “We’re pregnant, Lucas.” Lucas laughed, “I love you so damn much!” I smiled, “I love you too.”

Epilogue

3 years later

Emmaline smiled watching Lucas play with their two boys, Jayden, and Jacob. Lacy and Dylan's oldest, Finn, was playing with them too. Dylan had worn Lacy down that Finn Frost would be a fabulous future Beta name. Jade and Julianna were sitting on the blanket with me.

Jade said, "Momma, I want to go see Aunt Lacy, Uncle Dylan, and the pup." I smiled, "We are just waiting for Cousin Haley and Eric to get here." Jade sighed, "Ok, I love Cousin Haley." I smiled, "I do too."

Haley and Eric popped in seconds later. She had her one-year-old twin boys, Max, and Wesley, one on each hip. Apparently, Haley was a big fan of *The Princess Bride*. The triplets popped in next. Jade squealed, "CASSIE!"

Julianna jumped up with her sister and they ran to Cassie. Jayden and Jacob both gave EJ and Alexander hugs. EJ asked, "I can go see Elise after this, right dad?" Alexander laughed, "You LOVEEEE her." EJ puffed up his chest, "I do, she's MINE!" Lucas and Eric laughed at the boys.

Haley had put Wesley and Max down, and they came toddling over with Haley. She spoke her space unheard chant. I smiled at her, "You look great!" She smiled, "You look... like you're glowing." I teased, "So do you."

Haley shrugged, "Through a series of events, my IUD came out during my concupiscence." I laughed, "Didn't you notice?" Haley nodded, "I definitely noticed, I just didn't care. I needed to climb back on Eric mountain." I laughed, "Do I even want to know how it fell out? Did Eric notice?" Haley laughed, "Eric did not notice because it fell out when I went to pee."

I smirked, "So he doesn't know?" Haley smiled, "He has no fucking clue." I studied her soul, "You seem happy." Haley nodded, "I am happy. I want a big family. It's sooner than I

would've planned, but such is life. Does Lucas know about you?"

I shook my head, "No, not yet. He thinks we didn't conceive because I haven't said anything. He's trying not to be disappointed, but he is." Haley laughed this time, "When are you going to tell him?" I shrugged, "Later. You?" Haley laughed, "I am actually surprised the kids haven't told him." I laughed, "You're right! I forgot about them being able to see the glow. Jade told me, but I told her it was our little secret."

Just then Alexander said, "Daddy, momma has pups in her belly again." Eric froze and turned to stare at Haley in astonishment. Haley did her chant so they could hear the area again. Haley teased, "Alexander, you little tattletale." Alexander giggled and popped into Haley's arms. He stated, "Momma needs to have more boys! We need to protect you and Cassie!"

Cassie yelled, "NO! I want a sister this time." EJ said, "Cousin Emmaline has pups in her belly too." Lucas actually fell over when Jayden yanked his arm. I couldn't contain my laughter this time. Eric and Lucas walked over to join us. Eric questioned, "Angel?" Haley shrugged, "My IUD fell out after the sex swing escapades. I couldn't be bothered to care." Eric laughed and rubbed her stomach.

Lucas asked, "Baby girl?" I smiled, "This was not how I was going to tell you, but kids. What can you do? You sir are lucky because it's twins this time." Lucas kissed me hard. He told me, "You make me so happy."

He looked over at Eric and asked, "How many for you two this time?" Haley smiled, "Triplets again." Eric laughed and spun her around, "I can't believe you. You give me everything, my Angel." Haley smiled, "We finally have an even number." Eric laughed, "I'll do my best to give you twins from here on out." Haley shrugged, "That's no fun. There's gotta be some mystery to it all!"

Eric laughed, "Let's go see Dylan. Did they ever find out what they were having?" I shook my head, "No, so you know it's a girl." Lucas laughed, "As giddy as Dylan was when he

linked the pup had arrived; I have to go with my wife on this one. It's definitely a little girl this time."

We walked to the hospital with all our kids following us. Dylan was in the hall waiting. He pounced the second he saw us, "GAP! I have such high hopes we will finally be family. I even named..." Lacy called, "Dylan let them get in here before you tell the whole story." I laughed and walked in. I saw the pink blanket, "I KNEW IT! It's a girl!" Lacy smiled announcing, "It's a girl."

We all heard a baby growl behind us. Eric groaned as Wesley popped to the bed beside Lacy. He growled, "MINE!" I said, "That's adorable." Dylan jumped and clicked his heels, "YESSS!!!! I KNEW IT! I told you, Lacy her name it just SEALED the deal. AHFFFH GAP." Dylan started to sing, "WE ARE FAMILY YEAH YEAH I GOT MY ALPHA WITH ME. SING IT WITH ME GAP! WE ARE FAMILY!"

Eric was rubbing his temples. Haley laughed then asked, "What's her name?" Wesley stroked the baby's face gently. Dylan said, "That's the beautiful part. I'm telling you; I am a genius. I made this happen." Lacy said, "Her name is Buttercup Frost." Eric groaned, "Oh my god." Haley squealed, "That's so cute! Eric! It's Wesley and Buttercup!"

Dylan clapped, "I just KNEW you'd love it my little fun sized ninja fairy goddess. It took MONTHS of convincing Lacy, but then she saw her and said Buttercup just fit her." Wesley said, "Hi, Buttercup. I'll protect you always." Haley's hand went to her heart.

Dylan said, "I'm getting all twitterpated over here. Come on GAP admit it, that tugged at your heartstrings admit it." Alexander rubbed his little brother on the back congratulating him, then left the room. Haley frowned and followed him out. I gave Lacy a hug then followed behind them.

Alexander had tears in his eyes, "I'm happy for Wesley, momma." Haley hugged him, "I know you are." Alexander said, "I want to find my mate too. I'll love my mate lots and lots momma. I will." Haley smiled, "You will meet your mate,

Alexander. Your perfect person is out there. Daddy didn't meet me until he was thirty-two."

Alexander snorted, "That's SO old!" Eric came into the hallway teasing, "Hey, your dad isn't old." Dylan snorted, "Yes, he is. I can say that now because... We are family yeah yeah yeah!" He danced down the hallway.

Eric kissed Haley, "I've got this." She nodded and gave Alexander a hug. Cassie came out and sat next to him. She nudged him, "He beat us both Alexander." Alexander laughed, "We'd all better beat you. That poor guy." Cassie smirked, "You guys will be nice to him." Alexander shrugged, "Sure."

Haley and I walked away then shivered. We both looked at each other simultaneously stating, "Frost Giants." Haley spoke in Latin and Blade and Serion appeared beside us. Haley yelled, "ERIC GET THE KIDS SOMEWHERE SAFE!" I yelled, "LUCAS, THE KIDS!"

Haley and I popped to the border of our territories. Blade said, "Wolves mad." Haley shrugged, "What's new?" She conjured her swords. A portal opened and Marcus and Bjourn stepped through. Bjourn chided, "Fighting a giant without me, little one? You know a Frost Giant is what I lack for my collection." Haley smiled, "I told Serion to call you, clearly he did."

We heard Lucas and Eric howling while running towards us. Eric shifted back, "You knew they were coming. DAMN Aiden and his training." Haley laughed, "we told you to get the kids to safety. We told you something was happening AND we brought Blade and Serion."

Two Frost Giants appeared. Before we did anything arrows flew around. I called, "Hey, BA!" Lucas stared at me, "Let's greet her later!" BA laughed, "I was on my way to see Lacy and her new little one." Haley squealed, "She's Wesley's mate." BA said, "NO WAY! The baby is a girl? Adorable!"

Haley called the wind. One of the giants was unprepared and fell over. I popped onto its chest and drowned it. Lucas growled and jumped over me taking the hand of the giant that

was about to grab me. I popped back to Haley. Bjourn and Eric killed the other Frost Giant quickly.

Eric shifted back, “WHAT have we said about fighting when you’re pregnant Angel?” Haley shrugged, “Not to fight if I’m showing.” Blade and Serion laughed. Lucas wrapped his arms around me, “No more fighting.” I smiled and kissed him, “Only if I have to.”

Marcus held up his hands, “Wait just a second. You are BOTH pregnant?” Haley and I nodded. We popped our groups back to the hospital. Dylan sighed, “Gosh GAP and Lucas, you made it sound so serious. It’s been ten whole minutes. I was worried for NOTHING! This is NOT how you treat family, GAP. My heartrate is through the roof!”

My children ran to me, and Haley’s popped to her. Except Wesley who was growling guarding Buttercup. He relaxed when Eric walked over to him, calming him down. I smiled at our group. BA had popped with us. She winked at Haley and I and walked into a room. Haley popped to her and then popped her away.

I hugged my kiddos, “Mommy and daddy are fine.” Jacob growled, “Momma needs to stay safe. Jayden, me, and daddy can protect you!” I smiled, “I know you can, sweetie. Mommy, Jade, and Julianna can protect you guys too.”

Jacob huffed, “I know.” Jade bumped her brother. He smiled and gave her a hug. Lucas came over and gave me a hug, “I love you, Lucas Lyons.” Lucas kissed me deeply. When he pulled back, he told me, “I love you, Emmaline Walsh Lyons. We are a growing family again.” I smiled, “Onto the next adventure in our lives.” Lucas smiled, “I can’t wait.”

The End

Sneak peek: The married Alpha and His Arrow

Lexi Scott smiled at her brother as he explained the string ceremony to all of us who were turning eighteen. Ironically, our group had twenty people in it. My birthday was actually on string ceremony day. Everyone else was already eighteen. We secluded ourselves from our people the month we turned eighteen to celebrate together if our string was in our group.

We were the Hood. My moniker was the Black Arrow. My brother, Heath Scott, was known as the Hood himself. I could see the sadness in his eyes as he talked about strings and how they were our other half. He'd lost his string a year ago. She got sick, and by the time they caught it, it was too late. She had cancer stage four. She wasn't even able to communicate after the diagnosis.

I knew Heath blamed himself for not calling me and my friend Haley out of our mission. He was going to wait until we finished and ask Haley to heal his string. His string passed in her sleep hours after her diagnosis. Haley and I completed our mission two days later. I felt bad because I'd fully accepted my brother's string, Dani. People thought we wouldn't because she was human, but I didn't care.

Truthfully, I'd wished that my brother would be Princess Haley's string. Then I found out fairies knew their entire lives, so it was not to be. I got over it quickly. She was a little younger than me, and quite skittish around people, but my heart went out to her. The first time we went out together we bonded. I think it's why her dad asked my brother to send me out with her. You had to be careful with Haley. Through the years she saved my ass, and I'd saved hers. She'd seen the most depraved side of life.

I sighed. She wasn't my brother's string, and now all he did was work. Nothing, not even me, could pull him out. He was determined to be our best leader. Our parents had died in an attack. We'd yet to find out who was behind it, but my brother was still determined to solve the crime a decade later. I saw my brother's eyes narrow on mine, and I straightened. He knew I wasn't paying attention. He was explaining how we would walk in the ceremony space, and we'd immediately know if our string was in the room. They'd come to us, and we were allowed to leave with them. If we didn't find our string, there were drinks afterwards.

He continued on, saying we'd be welcome to try and find our string for a few months before going on a mission again. After that, we'd just have to keep trying to cross paths with new people. I hoped my string was my boyfriend that I'd been dating for two years. We'd done everything except have sex. Noah Calvert, known by his moniker the spear, was my brother's best friend.

Honestly, I was excited because I just knew he was my string. I loved him with everything I had, and he loved me. He was a rock for my brother and I when our parents died. We grew up together. He'd always protected me. He was my first kiss when I was fourteen years old.

I'd been asked on a date by another guy my age. Noah had been in a bad mood all day. When the boy dropped me home, Noah stepped out of the shadows of my porch. He yanked me into a searing kiss and told me every first date should end with a kiss. I couldn't think about anyone but him from then on.

When I turned sixteen, he asked Heath for permission to date me. Heath was all too happy to agree, as Noah hadn't found his string when he turned eighteen. With his interest in me everyone in the Hood was hoping I was his string. Now he was twenty-one, and with how overprotective he was of me, we all just knew.

(Have no fear NYE is in this book. We will see Dylan in Faerie on NYE.)

Outtake: Her Thor Eric Conners POV

After Eric and Haley popped home from Lacy's wedding, Eric grabbed Haley and pulled her to him. I told him, "Pop us upstairs now, Angel." Jackson laughed, "You egg him on by popping away from him in battle and after, sister-in-law of mine." Haley said, "But... I had to go get everyone back from the Hackura realm." I growled, "Our room. Now." Haley sighed, "Fine, but I didn't do anything wrong."

She popped and I had her against the wall. "You popped away from the group." Haley pointed out, "You would pop away too if you could. You know as well as I do If you kill the leader; you kill the fucking fight out of all of their followers."

I kissed her hard. She was panting with need already. I growled, "You popped out of my arms when I needed to claim you." Haley smirked, "The same way you need to claim me right now?" I ground into her asking, "What do you think?" She giggled, "It seems like you need some relief, Thor."

I made a mental note to ask her about the nickname in the morning. She tilted her head, "I hope you can catch the fairy then, husband of mine." She popped out of my arms. Again.

I whirled warning her, "Haley Cambridge Conners, don't you dare." She giggled and popped away. I followed our Hackura connection and found her talking to Jackson in the main room. She smiled when she saw me and popped away. I growled.

Jackson said, "Neither of you ever learn. She enjoys working you up like this." Haley popped back, "I learn, Jackson. I have learned when he catches me it's totally fucking worth it," She popped again and she was gone. Jackson questioned, "Where did she pop that she could still hear me?"

I snorted, “She was in the kitchen. She’s in the garage now I believe.”

Jackson shrugged, “Go on. Get all worked up and fuck her into tomorrow morning. By the way, I WANT to know why she calls you Thor though. Remember to get that answer. Molly is teasing me with the fact that she knows, and I don’t. No amount of coercion will get me the answer.” I laughed, “You’re not using the right techniques then, brother.”

I followed my connection with Haley. I frowned when I reached the garage, her car was gone. Why would she take her car? I shifted into Thor. I followed our bond and her scent. I couldn’t help my grin when I found her sitting on the trunk of her car. Just as she had the first night I met her.

She smiled, “Hey there Thor, you caught me quickly tonight.” I shifted back, “I think my little fairy wanted me to catch her quickly.” She shivered in anticipation. I grabbed her hips, “I can smell your arousal, Angel.” I bit her ear whispering, “Back to where it all began.” Haley smiled, “We haven’t had sex here yet.” I laughed, “An oversight that will be soon corrected.”

I bit her mark, and she moaned. I linked the men on border patrol, “Get out of this area until further notice.” They replied, “Yes, Alpha.” I waited until I couldn’t smell anyone before I ripped the top of her dress off. She laughed, “I could’ve snapped it off.”

I assured her, “I can buy you anything you want, Angel. I’ll keep ripping things off of you because we can afford it. Your dress has teased me all night long.” I covered her mouth with mine cutting off her protest.

I slid my hand up her back. I linked her, “No bra, Angel? You kill me.” She laughed, “Did you see this dress? How was I supposed to wear a bra?” I growled, “I absolutely saw it, and this hair...” I tugged on it, exposing her neck to me. I bit her lightly. She moaned my name. I smirked and pinched her nipple lightly, “You are still so responsive, my little mate.” I kissed down her jaw and chest until her nipple was in my

mouth. She moaned, “Fuck.... Eric!” I flicked her other nipple with my fingers.

I slid my hand in between the slit in her dress. I was met with her wetness dripping down her inner thigh. I growled, “Are you fucking kidding me? You’ve been walking around all damn night and fighting with no panties on?!”

Haley giggled, “You would’ve seen the panty lines! That ruins the whole fucking look!” I growled kissing her mouth. I slid a finger into her. She linked me, “I’ve been so wet for you all night long, Eric.” I bit her lip, “I know. I could smell it.” She hiked her leg around my waist and wrapped her arms around my neck, forcing my finger deeper inside her. She linked back, “Watching you fight is so hot. You made me want to fuck you in the middle of battle.”

I increased the speed of my finger adding another. She threw her head back and moaned. Out loud I asked, “Is that the end of the dirty talk, Angel?” I pushed us against her car so she could feel how hard I was. I nuzzled her neck, “You know what that does to me.” Haley leaned forward and nibbled on my ear. She admitted, “I snap your clothes because if you stayed naked, I’d fuck you right there. I want you all the time, Eric. You consume me, and all my thoughts. You and your damn eight pack and chiseled biceps. I can barely think about anything else but your hard, aching dick inside me pounding away.”

I pulled on her long hair and put my mouth back on hers. “Fuck, Angel. That’s so fucking hot.” She whimpered as I pulled my fingers out of her. I smirked, “You didn’t snap my clothes when I shifted back earlier.” Haley whispered, “I know. That was intentional. It would’ve been a waste with the sexy fun plans in my head.”

She hadn’t noticed that I’d moved the front of her dress while she’d answered me. I slammed into her. She screamed my name, “ERIC!” Jackson linked me, “I’ll just be getting ready for a pack heat again. Can you two just stay inside?” I blocked him out.

Her legs instinctually wrapped around me. I used her car to keep us upright as I slammed in and out of her. Her screams were echoing all around us. We fucked on every inch of her car. She had to have some magical charm on it, because we didn't cave in the roof, and we would have on any other car.

I fucked her hardest on the trunk where I'd first seen her sitting. Perched like the angel she is. She rode me in her passenger seat. It wasn't easy, but we pushed the seat all the way back. I had a lot of fun with her long hair. We started to see the rays of light coming over the sky. I shot my last load into her as we both came.

I said, "You should pop us back so we can grab a few hours of sleep before we the triplets wake up." Haley yawned, "Ok, Thor." She popped us back to the garage from inside the car. I sleepily commented, "I didn't know you could do that." I was astonished she managed to bring the car back with us.

Haley giggled then popped us to our room. She gently touched my face, "It's good that I can still surprise you. It keeps things fun and interesting."

I kissed her, "You are my world, Haley Connors. You could do the same damn thing every day for the rest of our lives and you'd still be the most interesting person to me." I kissed her forehead pulling her into me.

When her eyes closed, her hair returned to its natural state before my very eyes. Fairy's. You just had to love some of the things they could do. I loved everything about my Angel though. I closed my eyes feeling perfectly content with everything in my life.

Three hours later, Haley and I woke up together. It was just after nine in the morning. I kissed her, "Can I just say I love that neither of us need much sleep? Is there a reason I seem to do better with less and less?"

Haley smirked, "Our Hackura bond. You feed off of that as well, and that side of me doesn't need much sleep." I tickled her, "This Hackura bond gets handier the more I learn about it." Haley smiled, "It's also being twice light bound I'm sure. My fairy side doesn't need much sleep either combined with

your own supernatural side. We can live on little to no sleep.” I kissed her again, “Whatever it is, I love it.”

Haley snapped us dressed then popped us to the Hackura realm. The triplets were just waking up. Alexander immediately popped to Haley wanting her to feed him. EJ sighed and conjured himself a bottle. Cassie popped to me giggling.

I greeted my daughter, “Hello, Princess.” I looked at my boys, “Good morning to both of my sons.” EJ popped onto my other side. Veronica and Titus walked in. She smiled richly, “I told you that was a pop on the monitor, Titus. Good morning you two. That reception ended with quite the bang.”

Haley snorted as she switched Alexander to her other breast. She agreed, “I’ll fucking say. At least Alpha Hammond is dead.” I asked, “Speak of, how was Blade there?” Haley shrugged, “I popped him there earlier in the day. Dad made a decree that Blade has to go where I go. Expect to see more of Serion in our territory.”

I laughed. I had met the man. He was smaller than Blade, but somehow just as deadly. I admitted, “I wouldn’t mind seeing them both guarding you, Angel.” Haley rolled her eyes, “Of course you wouldn’t. I meant to tell you about the decree then forgot, with all the mate finding that happened yesterday. I’m sorry.” I shrugged, “It’s fine, I know now.”

I kissed her forehead and switched her EJ for Alexander. Cassie conjured herself a bottle. Once Haley was done feeding the triplets, we hugged Titus and Veronica. Haley said, “Thanks mom and dad for putting them down and keeping them overnight.”

Titus smiled, “Anytime you want to leave them with us, you know we are more than happy to watch them. They are a dream to babysit.” Veronica laughed, “Yes, no guessing game with these three. They just conjure what they want, and they are so adorable.” I smiled, nodding in agreement, “That they are.” I grabbed onto Haley and she popped our family home.

We ended up in the main room. Mrs. Blanch came out of nowhere, “Little miss Luna, I know you meant to pop to the

kitchen to feed yourself after feeding your pups.” Haley sighed, “I’m coming.” I laughed, “Thank you, Mrs. Blanch.”

We walked into the kitchen as a family. Bjourn smiled when Alexander popped to him. Bjourn said, “Hello little man.” Alexander cooed at him. EJ popped to Jackson. I looked around spotting Molly, Marcus, Torvi, and Astrid.

Jackson linked me, “I’m dying. Tell me the damn story.” I replied, “I’ll just ask her now.” Jackson rolled his eyes, “You fucked her all night long, didn’t you?” I smirked, “Technically into the morning.” Jackson looked up at the ceiling shaking his head.

I cleared my throat, “Angel, why do you call me Thor?” Haley’s fork paused halfway to her mouth. I felt her embarrassment in our bond. Her voice was in a high octave when she answered, “Umm... because?”

I laughed, “Because why? I know you’ve already told some people the reason. I just never knew there was one.” Haley glanced at Molly who raised her hands in protest. She assured her, “It wasn’t me. Jackson asked me to confirm after Lucas spilled the beans.” Haley sighed, “Because you’re Thor.”

Marcus laughed. Bjourn stared at her with interest. He asked, “Why are you embarrassed, little one?” Haley sighed, “It’s silly.” Molly disagreed, “It’s beautiful.” Haley’s cheeks were flush with embarrassment.

I looked directly at my mate, “Angel, we promise we won’t laugh.” Haley said, “Everyone fucking cries when I tell them!” I questioned, “Why does that embarrass you?” She looked at her plate. Mrs. Blanch cleared her throat, “Stop playing with your food and eat it, little miss.”

Haley told me, “It’s silly. It was a silly little girl’s dream, or escape, whichever it’s one of those... or maybe both.” Marcus frowned, “You have us all on the edge of our seat now, little one.” Astrid said, “Quit teasing her.”

Bjourn narrowed his eyes, “You know.” Astrid smirked, “Torvi and I both know.” Haley sighed, “They cried too.” Jackson and I both stared at them in shock. Jackson linked me,

“We have never needed Dylan more in our whole lives.” I did not agree, “I can get her to tell me.” Jackson countered, “Dylan would be shouting at her, begging for her to tell him on his hands and knees. She’d laugh and tell us.” I growled, “I can get her to tell us. I don’t need Dylan fucking Frost.”

Marcus was astonished, “You two.... The two of you.” He pointed at Astrid and Torvi, “Cried over a pet name my little sister calls her mate? That she is embarrassed to tell... is it all the guys, or are you embarrassed to tell Eric, sister?”

Haley picked at her food until Mrs. Blanch cleared her throat again. Haley sighed reiterating, “It’s silly.” I stood handing Cassie to Marcus and went over to her. I picked her up out of her chair and sat down sitting her in my lap. I wrapped my arms around her waist.

I tilted her chin, so she looked into my eyes, “I really want to know, Angel. We can even make it fair. I call you Angel because it was the first word that came to mind the moment I laid eyes on you. You were sitting on the trunk of your car. You looked incredibly beautiful highlighted by the moonlight with the wind lightly blowing your hair. I knew right then and there; the moon goddess had sent me my own Angel after decades of waiting.”

I kissed her then put my forehead on hers. Harper said, “Oh, god. Now he gives great speeches. I need to remember that for Gunner and Cali.” Astrid teased, “You just wait until you hear Haley’s story.” Haley sighed, “Why can’t any of you remember his name is Harper’s boytoy lover? Harper laughed, “I do remember that you call him that, sister.”

Blade spoke, “Princess tell. Wolf cry. Brothers cry. Blade cried.” Jackson gaped. Bjour said what we were all thinking, “I’m sorry... **BLADE CRIED?! Tell us the DAMN story. Right. Fucking. Now.**” I saw my dad ease into the room. My mom, Shana, and Jessica were standing behind the wall in the main room. I rolled my eyes. It’s not like Haley wouldn’t tell the story if they came inside the kitchen.

Haley sighed, “I told you guys, everyone cries. How can it be a good story if everyone fucking cries?” Astrid explained,

“Because it’s emotional... poignant and sweet. We cried because it’s a touching story.” Haley looked into my eyes, “You really want to know?” I nodded, “I do.” Marcus muttered, “We all want to know at this point.”

Haley sighed and closed her eyes, “Because fairy’s study Norse mythology as children.” Harper interrupted, “That can’t be all there is. I don’t even have a tear in my eye. Not even a mist going on.” Haley’s eyes snapped open, “I wasn’t done. I practiced my powers in secret, but I’d figured out I could call the wind and make it rain.”

Ok, so far I was not understanding the nickname at all. Haley continued, “When we studied Thor, he’s the god of thunder and lightning. He’s the god you think of when you need strength, and he can cause a storm. I could cause a storm, but I didn’t see myself as strong. Thor is known as the protector of all the realms. Not much is known about his wife Sif. She’s only in a few poems, and I just really resonated with her. She’s thought to be the goddess of the field and crops. I have earth blood, and no one knew much about me. Everyone heard rumors but that was it.”

Haley took a deep breath before explaining, “Loki cuts Sif’s hair off as a prank, and she was devastated. Thor becomes enraged when he finds out and tracks down his brother with the intent to get even. Loki convinced Thor not to kill him, but he made Loki find Dwarfs to spin Sif’s golden hair back.”

She paused, “I just... when Hexxus shaved my hair off and carved in my head with an iron knife...” I tightened my hold on her. She kissed my forehead, “I just started to form my Thor in my head. Someone who would love me and cherish me. Someone who would avenge the things that had happened to me throughout my time in Faerie. Then I started to see him in my dreams. This manifestation of my thoughts.”

My eyes started to fill with tears. Haley “After every new beating or experiment, or rape; I just knew my Thor would make it ok one day.” Tears escaped my eyes. I looked over at Jackson and he was crying too. I looked around. Everyone had wet cheeks.

She wasn't done, "It was an escape in my mind when something horrible happened to me. In my head I'd tell my Thor what happened to me. He was enraged on my behalf, and always made them pay. In my dreams we had so many conversations. He had blue eyes, but he didn't have red hair like the Norse Thor. I always thought of him with blonde hair. I desperately clung to the idea that one day, I'd meet my Thor. Because my Thor had a black wolf that was with him all the time. I thought that was strange, but they were the dreams of a child."

No fucking way. Haley smiled at me, "That day when I saw you... When I saw your wolf, I knew you were my Thor. It just felt right. When you shifted back into your human form... Eric, you were the Thor from my dreams. I don't know if the fairy goddess just knew I'd needed to see you, but you and Thor were who I dreamt of as a child escaping the horrors of my life."

I linked Jackson, "If only they'd put the real me in her damn dreams. Where was my version of this? I needed to see her too. I would've saved her." Jackson replied, "No one doubts that. Haley knows if you'd had some sort of dream of her, you'd have come. It was something her goddess gave her. I wish like hell it had been the real you too, but that she saw you and Thor... it's beautiful." It was, I just wished it was the real us.

She grabbed onto my face and wiped the tears that had fallen, "You are more than I ever imagined. You're always there for me. You are an amazing man, and I know you'll never let anything go unavenged that happens to me or our family."

I kissed her hard. I pulled back, "Nothing will happen to you ever again, Angel." She smiled, "I also know you'll move heaven and earth to make sure that is true. I call you Thor because you are literally My Thor. The man of my dreams."

I cradled her in my arms as I stood. "Jackson, don't expect to see us for a while." Jackson said, "I'm not even upset." As I left, I heard Harper say, "So, not only does our sister give epic

rants, but she can also give one hell of a moving speech. I need a tissue people!”

I laughed as I carried Haley up the stairs. I told her, “That’s easily one of the most moving things anyone has ever said about me, Angel. I love you so damn much, and I’ll always try to be that man for you.” Haley smiled, “You always are, Eric. I love you.”

I kissed her as we walked into our room. I was always going to remember this story, and I would strive to be that man for the woman before me who dreamed of her Thor as a child.

** I hope you enjoyed these extra outtakes and insights. There is more content like this on my Patreon page. Amanda K

Outtake: Beta Chat: Punch Drunk Fairy Dylan POV

Me: Beta Blood activate! We have a fairy fun Luna on the loose. Fairies are like drunk girls that can teleport people. LOOK ALIVE! Text your favorite Beta with your sightings. One must keep the Alpha's calm with some information on occasion. Help me, help you ;) Also, enjoy our punch drunk fairy Luna.

Beta McAlister: She popped away with Nick and my son's mate's. Drake's not happy. Peter is furious.

Me: Alpha's what can you do? Even the future one's are so serious. Any leads on their location?

Beta Matt: Are you guys serious? You lost a bunch of teenagers? Really?

Me: Don't judge for one day you may be in our shoes with a fairy all your own. Then the Beta Chat won't help you.

Beta James: They aren't in our territory.

Me: No one thought they were LOL. Your Alpha would hate her because he hates my Alpha. Let's just hope she stays out of your area.

Beta James: Theo wouldn't do anything to Luna Emmaline

Me: *coughs* Alpha Theo

Me: Beta McAlister you are such a slacker. They are in your territory at some secret pond your men know about. Hup to my good man.

Me: She also thinks you're coming to join her fun times. My advice is do so. Live on the fun side of life.

Beta McAlister: I do not have swim trunks with me.

Me: Well, I for one have so much information. The memo writes itself. BETA MCALISTER GOES COMMANDO

EVERYONE

Beta McAlister: NO! That's not what I said!

Me: I bet Beta Female Esther LOVES that. Lacy likes it when I do ;)

Beta James: DYLAN!

Beta Matt: Why is this chat always full of things I didn't need to know!

Gamma Marshall: Why on GOD's green earth am I on this chat?

Me: First of all, you are welcome. Second, someone has to keep you up to date. I started a new Beta chat with you in it so you are aware what your Luna will be like on drugs. One must keep the Gamma of Black Mountain up to date on the happenings of things whilst he looks for his mate. You're welcome.

Me: You also act like I did not do this when your Luna was kidnapped. We all remember. Some have screenshots. Jackson commanded you to stay on your search. Someone had to do the lords work of keeping people apprised of that situation with pizzaz. Which I did.

Beta Caleb: Hey Marshall.

Me: You can just text him yourself, you know? He's the Gamma or your pack.

Beta Caleb: I do text him myself. I was just saying hi.

Me: You heard it here first, people. I am the people's gateway. Even those in the same pack. I connect all!

Beta McAlister: She popped away, and I can safely say none of you are prepared.

Beta James: I am. She's not coming here.

Beta Caleb: She'll definitely be here at some point.

Me: We are so smart.

Beta Matt: Did you tell Lucas that?

Me: That we are smart? He knows that. Did I tell him my Luna will go to Black Mountain? And ruin the fun LOL? Do you know how boring all the paperwork back at home is?

Beta Matt: Why do I ask these things?

Me: I have no idea.

Me: Beta McAlister you sly dog! You told her she was supposed to be in school. You kept my show going. I see you Beta McAlister, I see you.

Beta McAlister: ;)

Me: AN EMOJI!!!! HE USED AN EMOJI RIGHT!!!! You are all welcome. I've sent him memo's Did you send the eggplant to Esther??? The people need to know.

Beta McAlister: If you must know, yes.

Me: She knew what it meant, didn't she?

Beta McAlister: She did.

Me: Bow-chicka-wow-wow

Me: Update on my Luna: She's a sewing master. If we want to take over the world, we just need to point our drugged up fairies at something. I have a fun new way to do our paperwork people!

Beta Matt: I mean.... if they agree... and they would... it's fun.... What's the harm?

Me: YESSSSSS!!!!

Beta Caleb: DO NOT DO THAT TO OUR LUNA!

Me: He thinks it would be fun, he just has the most prickish sensitive Alpha of all of us.

Gamma Marshall: Our Alpha isn't a prick.

Me: His nickname is God Alpha Prick, GAP for short.... So.... the rest of us disagree. She makes him likable. Wait until you get back and see that terrifying thing he does with his face around her.

Beta Matt: Do you mean his smile?

Me: It's like someone cracked his face open

Gamma Marshall: Eric is... smiling?

Beta Caleb: I sent you several pics Marshall.

Me: FOR SHAME! I added him in our group chat, and you sent separate messages. I am hurt! I am ignoring this chat while I keep my show on track. Lucas is trying to be serious (THE HORROR) Text if you spot a punch drunk fairy Luna!

** I hope you enjoyed these extra outtakes and insights.
There is more content like this on my Patreon page. Amanda
K

Outtake: Coming Home Lacy POV

Lacy Lyons paced the length of the room she was in after her phone call with Emmaline. I'd been working around the house here for some fairies. There was a bigger faction here that didn't follow King Aiden, but that had died down a lot. They mostly didn't like his uncle. The fairies I was with wasn't that particular group, but they were nearby. They weren't mean to me really. They just gave me my list of tasks. They commented a few times that it wasn't fair I was working off another she wolves debts.

They had a point. I mean honestly, what could Claudia have done or gotten from them that required ten years of servitude? My wolf Kiara growled, "I want my mate." I started to cry, "I do too, Kiara... I'm so sorry." Kiara sighed, "You didn't run from him. We didn't know." I sighed, "We both thought he smelled good. That kiss..."

Kiara purred, "Our first kiss. It was so much better than that fairy a few weeks ago." I blushed, "I was just lonely. He's nice." Kiara laughed, "He wants more than a kiss." I shrugged, "It doesn't matter. I don't, and now we know about Dylan." She purred again.

I laid back on the pillow thinking about Dylan Frost. He was ridiculously hot, or he was the last time I saw him. He was everything. He was smart, funny, strong, and sweet. He practically raised Travis. Even though he made jokes, you wanted Dylan by your side if anything was going down. He was incredibly loyal.

Kiara purred, "He's a good fighter too." I smiled. He was. I'd sparred with him a few times. I knew he took it easy on me because I'd seen him fight Lucas. Dylan got really mad when he'd seen me fighting with some other guys. He'd wake up early to train me himself and I had my cardio days with Travis.

Travis joked that Dylan must be soft on me. He didn't get up early for just anyone. I whispered, "I'm so sorry, Dylan." I heard a pop. I leaned my head to the side. Before me stood the shortest fairy I'd ever seen. I asked, "Princess?" She smiled, "Please call me Haley. Eric sees you as the sister he didn't have, so you are family. So... what's going on here? Where is this contract?" I took it out of my bag and handed it to her.

She read it really fast, cursing several times. She grabbed my arm and popped to the office where Claudia had first brought me. The secretary looked up, surprised. She frowned, "Can I help you?" Haley hissed, "You forgot the end of that sentence. It's can I help you, Princess. Can you remove your head from your ass for five seconds and go get your superior... or will that be too hard for you?"

My jaw dropped. The secretary frowned, "I do not appreciate your tone, Princess." I was not an expert in people, but that did not seem to be the way to go. I was right. Haley tilted her head, "I do not appreciate you addressing me without my title. I've had enough disrespect from fairies to last me a lifetime. Maybe you have heard of me, my name is now Princess Luna Haley Cambridge Conners. As in Alpha Eric Conners mate. As in King Titus Cambridge's daughter. I am DONE with fairy shit today. I had plans, you know? They involved naked horizontal time with my mate. Getting to know my new cousin plans."

She did sound like she had a full day. I nearly laughed aloud. She continued, "I need to make sure my cousin continues to like me, which means I need to research ways to make someone like you. The teenagers in the pack have LOTS of ideas, and you're stopping me from planning. I fucking love to plan shit. So, pop your happy ass to your boss and tell him I'm here. If you don't... I WILL call Aiden. You know... the King."

The fairy flushed and popped away. Haley smiled at me, "I'll take care of this. We will get home and we can both have our naked horizontal time. I'm so excited for my friend Dylan." I smiled, "You know that Dylan teases Eric... a lot." Haley nodded, "Yes, I do. Eric likes my friend Dylan. He's

ecstatic that you're his mate." I bit my lip, "Dylan teased Eric about you, didn't he?" Haley shrugged, "I'm not sure. He did give me his hoodie once to mess with Eric. I was a fucking FAN of what that brought on. Do you have another guy's hoodie around? That will make your night CRAZY."

I gaped at her. Fairies enjoyed playing games with people, but no one ever messed with Eric Connors. I asked her, "Do you mess with Eric?" She smiled, "He's fun to rile up. Trust me, Lacy Lyons riling up the wolf is totally worth it. Eric gets all growly and dominating."

I gaped at her, "You rile up... Eric Connors... for fun?" She nodded. I shook my head, "I have seen him kill people for much less." She smiled, "He would never hurt me. He says he punishes me, but it's definitely not punishment I have to say. He's clearly never been punished. The orgasms Lacy Lyons. The orgasms." I flushed scarlet red.

When two pops sounded, her face immediately flipped to an emotionless mask. I stared at her, astounded. I'd never seen a fairy expressionless before and I'd met a lot of them around here. Mr. F said, "Princess, we were not expecting you. Please sit. I am Mr. F." Haley snorted, "You are Mr. Fucked up alright. WHAT were you thinking? Taking the sister of the second strongest Alpha in servitude! Are you OUT OF YOUR FUCKING MIND?!"

Mr. F opened his mouth. Haley hissed, "Don't you even say one fucking word! Her name is LACY LYONS! Alpha Lucas Lyons little sister! Are you TRYING to plunge us into war with the werewolves again? Aiden would shun you. He'd kill you himself. Everyone you knew would ERASE you from the memories in seconds. I'm not even going to address that you are making her pay off a debt for CLAUDZILLA!"

I snorted, "Claudzilla? That's... the most perfect nickname of all time." Haley's gaze narrowed on the fairies. She asked, "What did she do? Because if you had ANYTHING to do with Torvi being hurt, or Marcus, Lucas or Eric being charmed by her, the contract will be null and void BECAUSE YOU WILL BE FUCKING DEAD!"

They were shaking in fear. Her eyes were blazing gold. I had new aspirations when I grew up. I wanted to be her. She tapped her fingers on her arms. Finally, she said, “Now Mr. Fucked up, this is where you speak.” Mr. F gulped, “She signed the paperwork.” Haley snorted, “She signed under duress and blackmail. That’s not what I asked you. I asked WHAT did Claudzilla do?”

Mr. F sighed, “She tried to kill one of our girls. She wanted the fairy’s mate for herself. Her mate did not want, as you call her, Claudzilla. Obviously it didn’t work, we are Fae after all. We are far wiler than the she wolf could dream of being.” My eyes went wide. That’s what she did? I really should’ve asked.

Haley said, “So, you’re trying to tell me instead of calling oh gee... what’s his name... oh yes, AIDEN. You know, THE KING? You played the part of court jester and doled out a punishment.... FOR THE ATTEMPTED MURDER OF A FAIRY?!”

Mr. F was losing color at a rapid pace. Haley took out her phone and spoke in rapid Fealish. A pop sounded. I gaped asking, “Is that...?” Haley smiled, “Aiden, this is my friend Dylan’s mate, Lacy. You know my friend Dylan.” Aiden kissed her head, “Yes, I do know your friend Dylan. He is quite amusing.” Haley added, “She’s also my lion’s little sister.” Aiden smirked, “Yes, I know. What I did not know is that Lacy Lyons was in a contract for servitude. I have Farrin looking in my files for court, but I just don’t think he’s going to find it.”

That was bad. They’d skipped protocol then. I cleared my throat, “Your lion?” There’s no way Eric would share her. Aiden started laughing, picking up the direction where I was going. Haley did not. She smiled, “Yes, that’s what I call your brother. He’s in BIG trouble right now because he hid my cousin from me. She’s his mate. I still need to figure out how to make her like me.”

Aiden laughed, “She does like you, little sister.” He turned to me explaining, “She calls him her lion because there were SIMS and confusion involved. Since your last name is Lyons...” I nodded in understanding. SIMS were talked about

over here a lot. I knew the princess was kidnapped by King Damon, but I didn't know at the time that she was Eric's mate. I felt really bad for her. I'd heard she was pregnant when they tortured her and put her through SIMS. The people here seemed scandalized by that fact. Apparently, it was a big no no.

Aiden smiled, "So Mr. F, I hear you have a problem that you solved without me. I do not find that I like that. I could've had one up on my sister's wolf, and it does please me so to have him all twitchy when he owes me." Haley rolled her eyes.

Mr. F said, "She signed a contract, King Aiden." He nodded, "I heard it was under duress and blackmail. You circumvented my authority, a fact I will overlook in exchange the favor owed to you is now to me." Mr. F actually sighed in relief.

Aiden turned to Haley, "Sister, I have someone coming to Faerie from the faction of Fae who oppose my rule. I wish for you to join me and use your truth seeking power." I frowned, "Lucas would owe you the favor." Haley agreed, "He would."

Aiden laughed, "Miss Lyons, your brother has nothing I want. My sister does." He was deeply amused. The fairies Haley had been yelling at seemed smug. Haley still wore her emotionless mask, so I couldn't tell if she was upset or not. She nodded, "Of course, brother. If they let Lacy Lyons go home to my lion and my friend Dylan, Eric and I will come for your meeting." Aiden smiled, "Marvelous."

He turned angry on a dime as he looked at Mr. F, "This will never happen again. I will not stumble upon the fact that you are hiding a barely of age she wolf with powerful ties and using her as a slave no less. I will NOT find out a different she wolf attempted to kill a fairy this way. Most importantly, I'd better not find a single contract you have that I don't know about. Are we clear, Mr. F?" Mr. F visibly flinched and stuttered, "Of... of course... your majesty." Aiden smiled. We walked out of the office.

I frowned, "What kind of relationship do you guys have? If Lucas asked me for something I would do it." Haley snorted, "Aiden knows I'd have come without haggling for it." Aiden smiled, "I do know that. My little sister is not your typical fairy. She's not selfish at all, and she understood that this favor was a way to show that I am a ruler who should be respected. This will also make her wolf twitch and that delights me."

I gaped, "Ok... she winds him up and so do you?! The Holloran's are crazy." Haley smiled, "I dropped that last name from mine." Aiden sighed, "I wished you hadn't." Haley kissed his cheek, "Take the name from Fabian and I'll consider putting it back." Aiden smiled, "He would deserve that."

I changed the topic, "Thank you both so much. I really..." Haley interrupted, "Don't say it." I laughed, "I was going to say I appreciate it." I knew better than to say I owed them. Aiden laughed, "She will do well for the amusing wolf. She is also fun. I just don't know what happened to your wolf, sister."

Haley smiled, "Eric is fun." Aiden snorted, "When he's around you. He's tediously serious and growly around others." Haley squeezed his hand, "Thank you for coming when I called, brother. That's twice." Aiden kissed her forehead, "I will always come when you call. I always would've. You didn't actually used to call me."

She shrugged, "I didn't know what to say. You did always go over my homework. You were more my teacher than... well, most of my tutors." Aiden flushed, "I am sorry about that, Haley." She frowned "Why? I loved that you looked over my homework." Aiden looked away. Haley pressed, "I really did, Aiden. I was always really fucking happy when you said I was smart." Aiden nodded, "I will see you soon." He popped away.

Haley grabbed my hand and popped me back to my room. She smiled, "Let's get you packed." She snapped her fingers, and I was ready to leave. It still amazed me that they could do that with just a click of their fingers. I grabbed my suitcase. Haley said, "Let's get you home, Lacy Lyons." I started to cry. Home. I was going home.

** I hope you enjoyed these extra outtakes and insights.
There is more content like this on my Patreon page. Amanda
K

Outtake: Zombie Attack Dylan POV

Dylan was waiting for Lacy to text him about her anniversary surprise. I smiled. We'd been married for a whole year. I heard a groan. I looked outside and snorted. Some people had decided to dress up as zombies. I frowned. I didn't recognize a single person out there. It could be makeup, but I decided to watch the group closely.

I linked Lucas, "Do we have trick or treaters already?" Lucas said, "About a million. Can your mate give mine back now? Everyone wants to see the Luna. Mom and dad took the quads to our escape house for the night. I want to enjoy this whole window of kid free time."

I snidely replied, "Naturally. I myself want to get laid on MY anniversary. Do you recognize any of the zombies?" Lucas complained, "God, why Dylan? That's still my sister. Zombies?" I said, "They are all over the backyard, Lucas. Honestly, what would you do without me?"

One grabbed one of our teenagers from behind. I growled. I linked Lucas, "Those dressed up as zombies are toast. Our sexual harassment classes did not take. They will reassigned said classes." Then I watched in horror as he bit her and threw her into the sea of a crowd.

I yelled, "LUCAS! ZOMBIES! ZOMBIE ATTACK! THIS IS NOT A DRILL! CALL..... EVERYONE!" I ran downstairs. Lucas rolled his eyes but stiffened when he saw me. He complained, "Dylan, that's not funny." I shrieked, "WHO WAS BEING FUNNY? THEY TOOK A TEENAGER ALREADY!"

I pulled out my phone and called Beta Caleb's cell. If ever there was a moment for the God Alpha Prick bat signal it was now. He answered, "Beta Dylan, you're on speaker. What can I do for you on Halloween night? Happy anniversary by the way."

I heard GAP say, “Yes, what can we do for you besides, you giving me my back. I swear you do these things on purpose, Beta Dylan.” I panicked, “GOD ALPHA PRICK THIS IS YOUR SHINING MOMENT! Your dreams have come true! The moment you’ve trained for is here!”

Lucas and I ran to the backyard. Lucas yelled, “HOLY SHIT! YOU WERE SERIOUS!” Lucas yelled to the pack, “EVERYONE GET TO THEIR SAFE PLACES NOW! WARRIORS ON ME! NOW!”

I heard a growl. GAP yelled, “WHAT IS HAPPENING?” I snorted, “You aren’t going to believe me if I tell you.” Beta Caleb informed me, “We are running out of the room. We are coming!” I heard a pop, “You need a fairy ride and my cousin is MIA?”

Alpha Jackson ordered, “Get us to Blue Moon, then pop out!” A pop sounded. I heard a gasp. Bexley asked, “Are... those...” I answered, “Zombies...why yes Bexley they are... WAIT! YES! FAIRY SUNLIGHT HANDS IS HERE! Help us out! Come on GAP! This is what you’ve been waiting for! A chance to kill hundreds of people and save us all! It’s molding your two favorite things together, killing people and being a SUPER obnoxious good guy. RIP THERE HEADS OFF AND MOVE PEOPLE!”

Suddenly music started playing from the event space the fairies had conjured for my wedding and Lucas’. The zombies turned and started towards that. I screamed, “LACY! YOU DO NOT PLAY LOUD MUSIC WHEN ZOMBIES ATTACK! WE ARE GOING TO HAVE TO GO OVER OUR ZOMBIE PROTOCOL AGAIN!”

GAP growled, “THAT’S WHERE THEY ARE?!” I yelled, “YES! RUN LIKE THE WIND GOD ALPHA PRICK! Make a path to them for me! This is your destiny!” He shifted and began to fight. I tried to link my mate, “Lacy! I’m not kidding, zombies are coming! Turn off the music!”

She didn’t respond. I growled and shifted myself. I linked Lucas, “Lacy’s link is blocked.” Lucas growled, “I know so is Emmaline’s. I can’t even get it open.” I heard a pop. I turned

back. I linked Lucas, “Seriously? Sunlight hands has left us in our hour of need? THE TRIPLETS! WE NEED THE TRIPLETS! AND THE QUADS!” Lucas disagreed, “We can’t summon pups! We are absolutely not bringing my kids here, Dylan!”

Everyone was being so unreasonable. This was life and death! I ordered my wolf, “FANG GET TO LACY NOW!” Fang snarled and jumped on a zombie. They were appearing from everywhere. I linked Lucas, “I’m getting the guns!” I ran to where we kept the weapons just in case.

I barked out instructions, “WARRIORS! BULLETS SHOOT FASTER THAN YOU CAN RIP HEADS OFF! WE WILL WORK ON THAT TOMORROW! BECAUSE WE ARE LIVING DAMMIT! NO ONE CAN ARGUE ABOUT MY ZOMBIE PROTOCOL TRAINING CLASSES BEING MANDATORY! THEY ARE GOING FOR YOUR LUNA AND BETA FEMALE! I SWEAR TO GOD IF MY MATE TURNS INTO A ZOMBIE YOU WILL RUE THE DAY YOU WERE NOT SHAUN OF THE DEAD RIGHT NOW!” I threw guns at people.

I tried to link Lacy again, “LACY!” Nothing. Did they not hear this? Lucas yelled, “We need more guns, Dylan!” I threw him one. I asked, “How the HELL have they not heard this?” Alpha Jackson grunted, “I’ll give you three guess partial fairy expert.” I sighed, “Space unheard. Can’t GAP link his precious fun sized ninja fairy goddess?”

GAP joined us covered in blood. He informed me, “It’s blocked.” I asked, “WHERE are your creepy ninja assassin in laws? You know the protectors of the realms?” GAP answered, “Outside killing zombies.” I sighed in relief, “We will get to the girls in time then.”

I heard a scream I knew well. It was Lacy screaming, “HALEY! OH MY GOD! SOMEONE HELP! HE BIT HER NECK! SHE’S BLEEDING!” GAP snarled and ran out of the room. Next we heard, “EMMALINE! NO! WHY DID YOU DO THAT? ARE THESE ZOMBIES?!”

Lucas screamed, “EMMALINE!” Lacy cried, “SOMEONE HELP ME!” I yelled, “I’M COMING, LACY!” I ran into the kitchen and grabbed pots and pans. I ran outside and began banging them together.

I yelled, “COME GET ME YOU FUCKERS! YOU LEAVE LACY ALONE!”

They began to turn back to our group. I said, “THAT’S RIGHT ZOMBIES! YOU DANCE WHEN BETA DYLAN SAYS DANCE!” Harper made it to the event space. I heard Lacy’s relief, “Harper, please...OH MY GOD LOOK OUT!”

I heard Harper grunt in pain. I heard Haley faintly scream, “No! Harper!” Bjourne yelled, “HARPER!” Nothing. Bjourne screamed, “HARPER CAMBRIDGE YOU ANSWER ME DAMN IT! HALEY! WHAT IS HAPPENING?!”

We were surrounded. Which to be fair had been the goal. I asked, “What do you feel in your connections with your mates?” GAP and Lucas looked worriedly at each other. Lucas admitted, “I don’t understand what I feel.” Eric growled, “Haley pulled her feelings back.” I winced, “That doesn’t sound good.”

Marcus yelled, “IT’S FUCKING NOT! HARPER FUCKING CAMBRIDGE ANSWER ME NOW DAMN IT!” An eerie silence greeted their cries. A portal opened beside the venue and a girl ran inside. Bjourne called, “CALISTA!” We heard a piercing cry. She wailed, “HARPER!”

I pulled the trigger and began shooting zombies in the head. I turned to stare incredulously at a warrior who shot one in the arm. I said, “Blue Moon! You DO NOT shoot zombies in the arm! They get shot in the head! Head shots ONLY! SERIOUSLY! HAVE NONE OF YOU NEVER WATCHED A ZOMBIE MOVIE ALEX WHAT HAVE YOU BEEN TEACHING OUR WARRIORS! HONESTLY, I AM ASHAMED! ZOMBIE MARATHON TOMORROW! FOR SHAME ALL OF YOU!”

I turned back to the zombies, “Hey, my parents live in that house over there. Please do me a solid and eat them for me. It

would be greatly appreciated...mmm thanks!" I heard a shot and something dropped behind me.

I turned to see my brother, the lead warrior, Travis Frost, had shot a zombie sneaking up behind me. He growled, "Hey! Watch your damn back!" I snorted, "Please! I had like ten minutes before he reached me. Zombies are slow, Travis! DUH! Where is Jackie?"

Travis answered, "She better be in the damn safe room. She's pregnant!" I retorted, "I am aware that my niece or nephew will be arriving soon..." Just then Lacy yelled, "WE NEED A DOCTOR! JACKIE IS IN LABOR!" Travis growled. I ordered, "Warriors! A new urgency has been placed at our feet. The lead warrior's pup is coming and pups are so very loud! Zombies go to noise. Also, women in labor.....terrifyingly loud!"

GAP yelled, "HALEY ANSWER ME, DAMN IT!" I reiterated, "YEAH SPECIAL FUN SIZED NINJA FAIRY GODDESS! ANSWER GOD ALPHA PRICK DAMN IT! BETTER YET LACY ANSWER ME!"

We heard Jackie cry out. Travis snarled. The zombies turned back towards the women. I put my gun down and banged my pots and pans again. I called, "OHHH JACKIE DEAR! Favorite sister in law of mine....I'm going to need you to be silent and like....clamp your legs closed so the pup doesn't come until we have resolved this."

I heard truck horns blaring. Peter Kyle, Drake McAlister, Beta McAlister, and Alpha Kyle jumped out of SUVs shooting. I pumped my fist in the air, "YES! GO TEAM WEREWOLF!" I turned to GAP taunting, "THEY were helpful and brought guns! WHERE are your guns?" GAP yelled, "You didn't tell us what was happening! We got here as soon as we could."

Marcus yelled, "HARPER YOU FUCKING ANSWER ME RIGHT NOW OR I SWEAR..." I heard a grunt. I asked, "Is he already a zombie? I don't think we can kill a Hackura Prince....even if he's a zombie, Lucas. It's official we are doomed."

Bjourn ordered, "NO ONE WILL KILL MY BROTHER!" I pressed, "What if he is now a brain eating zombie?" Marcus hissed, "Haley will heal him." I squealed, "OHHHH my special fun sized ninja fairy goddess can heal zombies by turning them back to humans...that's fascinating. Why are we worried again, Lucas? Oh yes...quite possibly because my fun sized ninja fairy goddess NOR MY LUNA are out here fighting with us. We ALL know if they were capable of fighting.....the zombies would be dead."

No one commented on what that meant. Likely Haley was healing herself. GOD help us all if she couldn't heal the bite she'd taken. I stated, "If that bite turns Haley into a zombie, I'm surrendering and falling in line behind her to serve and say...Dylan eats brains now."

GAP growled, "SHE IS NOT DEAD!" I asked, "Can we get a fairy to call on King fire hands?! He would be SUPER helpful right now!" Alpha Kyle yelled, "I'll link Sharon!" I was dumbfounded, "Why didn't you bring her?" Garrett answered, "She's with her mother!" I snorted, "Oh...well....if only she could POP TO YOU IN A SECOND! WHERE HAS EVERYONE'S CRITICAL THINKING GONE IN THIS CRISIS!"

A pop sounded. I heard a laugh, "What...is going on?" I shouted, "KING FIRE HANDS IS HERE! WE ARE SAVED!" I banged my pots and pans. I instructed, "Set them on fire! Haley and my Luna are hurt! Prince Harper is possibly dying....no one can handle a creepy ninja assassin zombie! The supernatural's and humans would be DOOMED!"

Aiden snorted, "I'll just pop to my little sister then." I chastised him, "NO! BAD KING FIRE HANDS! SET THE ZOMBIES ON FIRE!" He popped away. I gaped, "Least helpful fire hands fairy OF ALL TIME! WHERE IS YELLOW HILLS? I NEED MY FIRE FAIRY BUDDY THAT LIVES THERE ASSISTANCE!"

We made our way to the venue. I was the best at killing zombies....Well, besides GAP....maybe the creepy ninja assassins too...they weren't bad. We made it inside. I ran to

Lacy ignoring everything. I laid the mother of all kisses on her. We'd survived a zombie attack.

I was beyond relieved, "Thank the moon goddess you're ok! You should've seen me! I am the best zombie killer of all time!" Lacy smiled, "Happy Anniversary Dylan!" Lucas snarled, "WHAT?! Where is Emmaline?"

We heard laughter before Aiden, Emmaline, Jackie, Harper, Calista, and Haley appeared. GAP and Lucas ran to their mates and snatched their mates up. Bjourn groaned, "OH MY GOD! THIS WAS A PRANK!"

When GAP allowed our special fun sized ninja fairy goddess to breath she winked at Bjourn, "One of my better ones, big brother. Emmaline and I had to conjure zombie dolls and bring them to life. I would do more and Emmaline would pop them around the territory so they would keep coming. You guys are too fucking efficient at killing zombies."

Marcus yelled, "HARPER!" Harper smirked, "Payback is a bitch, Marcus!" Marcus threw his hands in the air, "Fake zombie attack and thinking you could be dying IS NOT the same as short sheeting your bed!" Haley sighed, "After all this time with me you guys still suck ass at pulling pranks. You should really only plan them with me. It's sad on your own."

I turned to Lacy, "THIS was your anniversary surprise? You let me think we could die? That YOU were going to die? That my niece or nephew was going to be born while we had to try to protect Jackie?" Lacy stammered, "Well...you always wanted zombies to show up and I just..." I said, "This is WITHOUT a doubt the...BEST ANNIVERSARY PRESENT OF ALL TIME! I expect you to up your game next year. I just don't know how you top this. Surprise me. I know I'll be stunned. You'll have to go stealth mode because now...I'm on the lookout!"

Lucas barked out, "Next time ONE of you has to TELL me there's a prank going on!" Aiden laughed, "You'd give it away if you weren't worried." GAP growled at him. Our special fun sized ninja fairy goddess pouted, "Aww please don't be mad

Eric! This was SUCH an epic fucking prank! Google said spooky pranks are a Halloween necessity!”

I taunted, “Yeah...GAP...Google says...” He glared at me. Aiden concurred, “I mean....it was epic. This is genius.” Haley said, “The Bad ass girl gang think tank wins again! BE AFRAID EVERYONE!”

Bjourn snorted and pulled Harper into a hug. He said, “Calista....you don’t normally get in on these.” Haley pointed out, “Without her, you would’ve thought it was a prank.”

Marcus snorted, “She’s right. We did think it was a prank until Harper stopped answering.” I said, “And thank you creepy ninja assassins for the heads up on suspecting fairy hijinks were happening.” They all shrugged and filtered out.

I hoisted Lacy up on my shoulder and walked outside singing, “OHHHHH For she’s the best mate ever....Oh for she’s the best mate EVVVERRRRRRR which nobody can deny! Which nobody can deny! Seriously...try me people!”

I grabbed her hips and took her off my shoulders and ran to our wing in the main house. I threw her on the bed. I wiggled my eyebrows, “We survived zombies that demands post battle sex.” Lacy unzipped her coat. I growled in appreciation. She was wearing a pumpkin bikini. She smiled seductively, “I was ready to reward my man for saving me from zombies.” I jumped on top of her, attacking her lips. Best Anniversary EVER!

** I hope you enjoyed these extra outtakes and insights. There is more content like this on my Patreon page. Amanda K